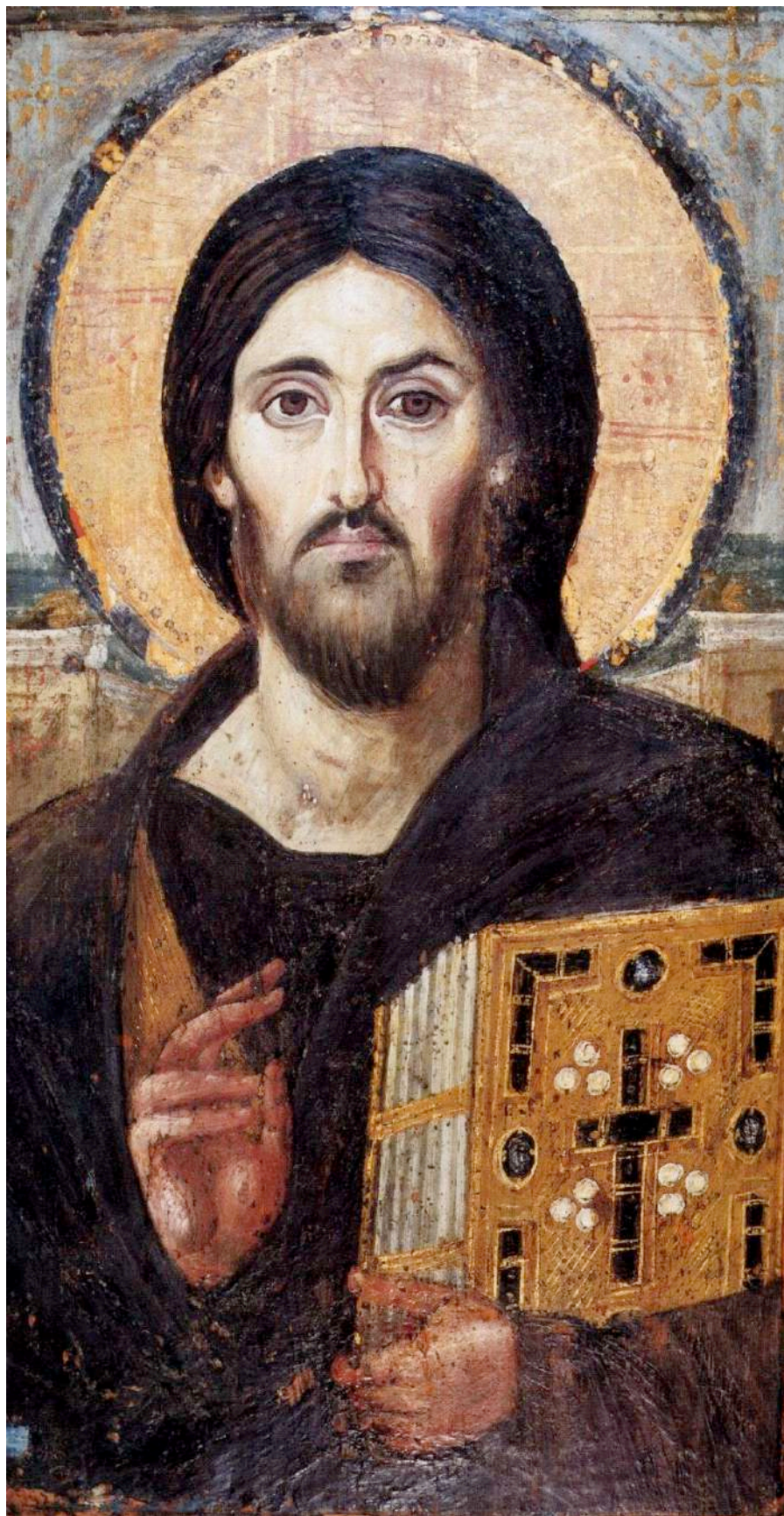


**THAT WAS
THE
WARNING
FROM GOD
THIS IS THE
MESSAGE
FROM GOD**



Galante 2

**ENTER
THROUGH
THE DOOR
OF CHRIST'S
MERCY**



**The Feast emerged from
the very depths of My
mercy, and it is
confirmed in the vast
depths of My tender
mercies. Every soul
believing and trusting in
My mercy will obtain it.**

**- St. Faustina Kowalska
(Diary 420)**

**FLEE ROME
BEFORE IT
IS
DESTROYED**

**THE WRATH
FOR SIN IS
FALLING**

**PRAYER TO
SAINT MICHAEL
THE ARCHANGEL**

St. Michael the Archangel,
defend us in battle.

Be our defense against the wickedness and snares of the
Devil.

May God rebuke him, we humbly pray,
and do thou,

O Prince of the heavenly hosts,
by the power of God,
thrust into hell Satan,
and all the evil spirits,
who prowl about the world
seeking the ruin of souls.

Amen.

From **St. Patrick's Breastplate**

I arise today

Through a mighty strength, the invocation of the Trinity,
Through belief in the Threeness,
Through confession of the Oneness
of the Creator of creation.

I arise today

Through the strength of Christ's birth with His baptism,
Through the strength of His crucifixion with His burial,
Through the strength of His resurrection with His ascension,
Through the strength of His descent for the judgment of
doom.

Christ with me,

Christ before me,

Christ behind me,

Christ in me,

Christ beneath me,

Christ above me,

Christ on my right,

Christ on my left,

Christ when I lie down,

Christ when I sit down,

Christ when I arise,

Christ in the heart of every man who thinks of me,

Christ in the mouth of everyone who speaks of me,

Christ in every eye that sees me,

Christ in every ear that hears me.

Commentaries on the Gospel

A Homiletic Approach

by Matthew A. Galante

For Father Robert S. Smith, a gift.

“Jesus, I trust in you!!!”

Introduction

A homily is delivered during the Liturgy of the Word, after readings from the Scriptures, and precedes the Liturgy of the Eucharist. Which is to say that the Word of God is presented to the faithful Assembly, expounded upon by the representative of the Word of God, and eaten by the Assembly such that they, one and all, become the Word of God. The Word proceeds from the mouth of God, as prophecy proceeds from His mouth, and returns to God effective and fulfilled, as the fulfillment of prophecy verifies the promises of the Lord. The gift proceeds from the Father through the Son and culminates in the return of the gifts through the Son back to the Father.

The homiletic approach I intend to take in this book should be distinguished from other approaches, all valid and necessary, that a writer might use in commenting on the Scriptures, or in any other religious or spiritual writing. One could write in the tenor of theology, in which the goal of the writing is to evaluate data (from Scripture, Tradition, authoritative ecclesiastical documents, other writings, and the experience of contemplatives and mystics) as premises to which the faculty of our (hopefully enlightened and obedient) human reason is applied in order to form epistemic conclusions which add to the sum total of scientific knowledge of the Divine.

Again, one could take a doctrinal approach, using the same sources mentioned above as commands and injunctions of the Divine Will, again using a suitably chaste reason to build up a doctrine, a “doctrina” in Latin, meaning teaching or learning, derived from the Latin “doctor” which meant “teacher”, from docere “to teach”. Such an approach, useful to prelates and those in the community who assist them, promulgates a teaching that instructs Christians on how to live their lives in a way that will be pleasing to God and secure their salvation. Doctrine, like law, uses the authoritative sources of the past and applies them to the situations of everyday life, and attempts to mold faithful and authentic applications of such sources to new problems and situations as they arise.

A homiletic approach, at least in my usage and understanding, is also not a pastoral approach. A pastor seeks to shepherd the flock entrusted to him, responding to their needs,

possibilities, and problems in light of and with fidelity to the theology and doctrines of the Church. That is, the people come to the Church, and the Church responds.

The essence of a homily is to assist the proclamation of the Word of God. The Word of God is not limited to Scripture, since the Word of God is most fully the Son of God, the Christ, and the Christ is present to and in and through all things, as the Father is likewise omnipresent. So, truly, the Word of God in the fullness of that term is present also in the sacraments, the members of the Church, the workings of the natural world, the arts, culture, politics, anything and everything that contains the power of God, which is all things. But as I am not present to all things, except in the most mystical and veiled way as a member of the Body of Christ, I will limit myself to the Scriptures. And, indeed, the core of the Word of God is the Bible, the public proclamation to the world that is universal in scope, valid for all times, and wholly sufficient for the Christian believer to receive the faith that merits salvation.

A homily is not the Word of God, but what we might call the preparation of the Word of God. As Jesus replied to Satan during his temptation, quoting Deuteronomy, “One does not live by bread alone, but by every word that comes forth from the mouth of God” (Matthew 4:4; Deuteronomy 8:3). St. John writes of the crowd and Jesus:

So they said to him, ‘What sign can you do, that we may see and believe in you? What can you do? Our ancestors ate manna in the desert, as it is written: ‘He gave them bread from heaven to eat.’ So Jesus said to them, “Amen, amen, I say to you, it was not Moses who gave the bread from heaven; my Father gives you the true bread from heaven. For the bread of God is that which comes down from heaven and gives life to the world. So they said to him, ‘Sir, give us this bread always.’ Jesus said to them, ‘I am the bread of life; whoever comes to me will never hunger, and whoever believes in me will never thirst. But I told you that although you have seen [me], you do not believe. Everything that the Father gives me will come to me, and I will not reject anyone who comes to me, because I came down from heaven not to do my own will but the will of the one who sent me. And this is the will of the one who sent me, that I should not lose anything of what he gave me, but that I should raise it [on] the last day. For this is the will of my Father, that everyone who sees the Son and believes in him may have eternal life, and I shall raise him [on] the last day.

(John 6:30-40)

Jesus is the Word of God that is the Bread of Life. His Spirit, present in His Flesh broken for us, sustains us, for while the bread of this world may fail and our physical bodies will die, God can and will raise us up again at the Resurrection, which will be made publicly and undeniably manifest at the Apocalypse, and then all that will matter is whether our spirits are charged, fed, with the grace of Christ’s Spirit, or finally bereft of it.

The perfect image of the homiletic act is the appearance of Jesus to the disciples on the road to Emmaus. Unlike with the pastoral approach, where the believer comes to the Church, here the two disciples are leaving Jerusalem, they are leaving the community that Jesus had founded and returning to their former way of life. As St. Luke recounts (Luke 24:13-35), the two disciples are conversing and debating and Jesus draws near to them and walks with them. Jesus catches up to them and interjects Himself into the midst of their lives. It is the Word of God breaking into human life, like light cast down through the clouds. The disciples do not recognize the Risen Christ, similar to other Resurrection narratives. Christ takes the initiative and begins a

conversation asking, “What are you discussing as you walk along?” Cleopas, one of the disciples, answers, “Are you the only visitor to Jerusalem who does not know of the things that have taken place there in these days?” Jesus, being the central actor in that cosmic drama, the Lamb sacrificed in that slaughter, would have been justified in responding, “Actually, I know of those things very well, thank you very much.” But Jesus simply asks, “What sort of things?” After drawing near to us, He seeks to draw out the disciple, entering into dialogue. The two disciples then relate the whole of the divine revelation - Jesus was a mighty prophet of God, they and their community had hoped that he was the liberator promised by the prophets, but the rulers executed him, and he was really good and dead, this being the third day since his death; Women from their community (considered unreliable witnesses in antiquity) had gone to the tomb and found it empty, and they reported that angels had announced that he was alive, and then men from their community confirmed the women’s story, although they had not themselves seen the living Jesus. They know everything, they even should have some hope that Jesus is alive and that, thereby, the movement of their community remains valid and worth living out. But they aren’t sticking around to investigate these mysterious, perhaps unbelievable, claims. They’re gone, back to their old life. In response to this spiritual blindness, this failure of belief and endurance, this hardness of heart, the Word (Jesus) now finally proclaims truth, rather than simply probing and drawing out responses. Jesus exclaims how foolish they are, attributing that foolishness to their being “slow of heart to believe all that the prophets spoke”. In Greek, the word translated as “foolishness” is “anoetos” which means foolish in the sense of not being understanding, and to understand is to see. They are blind. The disciples know everything about the revelation, and yet can’t see it for what it really is, and so they leave Jerusalem for their former lives rather than remain in the City of Destiny. The phrase translated “slow of heart” is the Greek “bradeis te cardia”, bradeis meaning slow as in stupid, dull in mind, slow to believe and cardia meaning heart. For the ancients, the heart was the seat of sensation and intelligence; it was not distinguished from the brain, soul, or spirit, but was understood as the seat of those things. The ancients lacked any clear understanding of the role that the brain played in cognition.

So “slow of heart” is a rather charitable rendering of slow-witted. Jesus is calling the disciples nitwits. They are spiritually blind, unable and unwilling to see the truth of God or place their trust in it. Only the light of the world, Christ, as the Word (for light, word, bread, blood, flesh are all capacities, metaphors, modes of the Son’s presence and truth) can cure the blindness and make them see the revelatory truth that will save their lives. And they have to see what the prophets actually spoke, which is why Jesus says, “Was it not necessary that the Messiah should suffer these things and enter into his glory?” Then Jesus goes on to interpret to them everything that foretold of him in the Scriptures. (Just imagine how bracing such an experience would have been). The necessity of the Messiah, the Anointed One of God, the chosen one, to suffer humiliation, torture, and death as a despised, mocked criminal to enter into the glory of His eternal Kingship is the one substantive piece of content related by Jesus in the Scripture passage, because it is the central point that explains the disciples’ failure. The disciples fail to remain in Jerusalem with the community, even after hearing multiple reports of a resurrection, which should at least have been intriguing and merited some investigation, because they fail to see the connection between suffering and glory. It is a stumbling block that was obscure to these two

disciples, that was not expected, much less hoped for. They had erroneous, incomplete preconceptions about the nature of God and the nature of God's plan of action in the world that made it impossible for them to remain with the Body of Christ, the community of God. As they approach the village of Emmaus, Jesus gives the impression that he is going on farther. The disciples urge him to stay with them for the night. While God makes the first move, he cannot cure a spiritual blindness, give sight, give grace, act in any way in a person's life without receptivity to His action and, ultimately, an appropriate embrace of God's action. Jesus agrees to stay with them, and at table reenacts the substance of the Last Supper, taking the bread, speaking the blessing over it, breaking it, and giving it to the disciples.

With that their eyes were opened and they recognized him, but he vanished from their sight. They said to each other, "Were not our hearts burning [within us] while he spoke to us on the way and opened the scriptures to us?" So they set out at once and returned to Jerusalem where they found gathered together the eleven and those with them who were saying, "The Lord has truly been raised and has appeared to Simon!" Then the two recounted what had taken place on the way and how he was made known to them in the breaking of the bread.

(Luke 24:31-35)

Whereas before the disciples could not recognize the Risen Christ as Jesus, they finally recognize him in the breaking of the bread. Jesus is the bread, the same bread that He teaches is His Flesh and that is the bread of life, the same Bread that is the Word and that is the Light. When Jesus breaks the bread He is breaking open Himself, opening the riches of his interior grace to the chaos and hell within each sinner, cleansing and nourishing each spirit that comes unto him for life. Now given the grace of understanding, the disciples "set out at once and returned to Jerusalem" - they immediately turn around and return to their community. Whereas absent the Word-Bread-Light of Christ they were turned away from the salvation of God, now invited and instructed by the Word and nourished by the Bread and enlightened by the Light they *turn* back to God - they have a change of heart, a metanoia, a repentance towards God. It is Jesus that accomplishes the salvific act of turning each soul away from the pit and back towards the Father. And once turned back, the disciples arrive back at the heart of the community to discover and be encouraged by the revelation given to the whole community as a public proclamation, represented in the person of Simon-Peter.

Like all Scripture, this scene pulses with the infinitely deep power of Divine Wisdom, pregnant with a treasure trove of theological, Christological, soteriological, and eschatological insight. For our purposes, in illuminating the passage's paradigmatic role in the practice of homiletics, we can clearly discern the rich ecclesiological dimension of St. Luke's narrative. We cannot fully exhaust the high ecclesiology contained in St. Luke's Resurrection narrative, for, as St. John said of the acts of the Risen Christ, "...[I]f these were to be described individually, I do not think the whole world would contain the books that would be written" (John 21:25b). Even a sustained analysis and exposition would take us far afield. But a brief sketch can easily note the winding threads -- the broken community, fractured by sin, death, blindness and failure, the role of the broken flesh of Christ in opening the eyes, the minds, of the flock so that they can be gathered together, healed, and reconciled, the nature of that broken flesh as the healing medicine for sinful human flesh --- broken in the Crucifixion and given in the Resurrection, present as

Word broken open - that is, interpreted authentically and authoritatively, present as the Light breaking over the darkened land at dawn (Luke 24:1), present as the bread of thanksgiving, transformed and ordained by the blessing of the High Priest offered upon the sacrificial altar and given as food to the disciples, who, in eating of it like the priests of the order of Aaron, partake of the universal priesthood of all Christian believers, the radical change of life that hearing the Word and eating the bread entails, and the call to mission such a change of life inaugurates, the ways in which such individual calls to mission necessarily lead back to and integrate intimately into the whole life and action of the community.

Let us state it simply and directly and then round out the picture: Faith in the Risen Christ is a prerequisite to enter eternal life, but it is insufficient without the flourishing of that faith in community and communion with the whole, universal Church. At the breaking of the bread, the two disciples finally recognize Jesus, and thus now have the conviction of belief in His Resurrection that eluded them despite their knowledge that such a Resurrection had reportedly occurred. But upon their recognition, Jesus “vanished from their sight”. Jesus does not disappear in the sense that He is no longer present. He remains present to the disciples, as He remains present to all creation as the Risen Christ, Lord of the Universe. But He is no longer visible, His presence becomes implicit rather than explicit, pregnant, promised, rather than fulfilled. Individual belief, even a belief shared on a small scale between intimates like the two disciples, does not obtain the fullness of Christ’s real Risen presence, the fulfillment of eternal life. That individual belief, more than just a factual acknowledgement, causes action flowing from devotion -- “Were not our hearts burning [within us] while he spoke to us on the way and opened the scriptures to us?” (Luke 24:32) --, and it is an action that requires the sharing of that faith in communion with other believers.

Naturally, when I say that faith is necessary, but not sufficient, I do not mean to dispute that justification is by faith; it is simply to expound that real faith necessarily causes a person to share that faith with other believers. The disciples state that Jesus’ gift of faith, of spiritual sight, graciously given to them causes their hearts to burn -- their *cardia* to “*kaiomene*”, to be set on fire, set alight, burning, consumed with fire. If your spirit is so inflamed that it is totally consumed by some truth, some reality, it will necessarily proclaim that truth to others and seek to share it with them. If you claimed to have a really good friend, but never called them or visited with them, without any good reason, you would have to question the validity of that so-called friendship. The same is true of faith in Christ.

Just as God Himself has different personae, realities of being, in the Father, Son, and Spirit, and just as the Son has modes as Word, Bread, Flesh, Wine, Blood, Light, and Lamb, and the Father has modes as Creator, Light, Love, Presence, Wisdom, Power, LORD, and just as the Spirit shares in and activates all these modes as Wind, Fire, Water, Sound-Voice-Speech, Advocate (as opposed to Satan, the Accuser), so too the Church has modes - in the heart of the individual believer, in the small groups of intimate friends, in the family, in the nation, in the community, in the authority of ecclesiastical hierarchies, in the Universal Church. As none of the realities and modes of the Triune God are at variance with one another, as none clash in antinomy, but all rush together in an ineffable harmony, so too one mode of the Church must not be set over and against any other mode. Of course, the whole history of the Church has been marred by such clashing antinomies; along with harmony and grace, for millennia the Church

has been violated by schism, heresy, arrogance, blindness, paranoia, bigotry, corruption, fanaticism, relativism, authoritarianism, and every kind of filth, wretchedness and wickedness. Yet that only makes true brothers in Christ cry out as St. John the Baptist did at the inauguration of Christ's royal mission, "Prepare the Way of the Lord, make straight his paths. Every valley shall be filled and every mountain and hill shall be made low. The winding roads shall be made straight, and the rough ways made smooth, and all flesh shall see the salvation of God" (Luke 3:4b-6). The chronic, catastrophic, spectacular failures of Christian unity, of a real shared understanding of and search for what the Church truly is and must become, only necessitates and makes possible an ever greater outpouring of the Spirit upon the Church, which will cleanse every filth and heal every wound.

We can see the Church in the mode of small groups, in St. Matthew, where Jesus teaches, "Again, [amen,] I say to you, if two of you agree on earth about anything for which they are to pray, it shall be granted to them by my heavenly Father. For where two or three are gathered together in my name, there am I in the midst of them" (18:19-20). Even here, at the smallest scale of the Church, the Church is expressed in terms greater than that of the individual believer's mind -- the Church is necessarily a "gathering" of at least two brothers or sisters, it is something shared, it is fellowship -- it is not merely ideology, self-help, mantra, self-expression, entertainment, individual empowerment, personal psychodrama. Again, we see another mode, the dimension of authority expressed by Jesus in response to St. Peter's confession that He was the Messiah, the Son of the living God:

Jesus said to him in reply, "Blessed are you, Simon son of Jonah. For flesh and blood has not revealed this to you, but my heavenly Father. And so I say to you, you are Peter, and upon this rock I will build my church, and the gates of the netherworld shall not prevail against it. I will give you the keys to the kingdom of heaven. Whatever you bind on earth shall be bound in heaven; and whatever you loose on earth shall be loosed in heaven."

(Matthew 16:17-19)

The Rock the Church is built on is clearly St. Peter, since Jesus is conferring a commission upon Simon, providing him with a new name, a promise of victory (similar to the promise of victory made to Eve's offspring), and authority, represented by the keys, which can lock and unlock, bind and loose. *You* are Peter, I will give *you* the keys to the kingdom of heaven, whatever *you* bind on earth shall be bound in heaven. The Rock cannot sensibly mean Christ Himself, to the exclusion of Peter, since Peter is an anglicized form of the Greek Petros which means "stone" or "rock", and Peter also went by the Aramaic "Kefa", latinized as "Cephas", which means "stone". One might then ask, how is it that Jesus is the stone rejected by the builders (the Jewish religious authorities) that has become the cornerstone? That fails to see the fundamental ecclesiological insight at the heart of the Christian faith: Jesus is the Church, the Church is Jesus. That is why Jesus says to Saul, "Saul, Saul why are you persecuting me?" and not, "Why are you persecuting my followers?" Jesus is indeed the rock the Church is built on, as is St. Peter; not that Jesus and Peter reign together as some kind of polytheistic pantheon, say, Jesus as Zeus and Peter as Ares, or, better, a kind of divinized human regent like Heracles, or some such nonsense.

St. Peter is the Rock precisely because *he is in* the Rock that is Jesus Christ. St. Peter is only the Rock *in* the Church, as incorporated into the Body of Christ, as shown by Jesus saying

“*And so I say to you*” after Peter’s confession of faith in Jesus as the messias, the christos, the anointed, the Son. Peter receives the commission to be the Rock because of, and retains the commission so long as he maintains, his profession of faith, a faith that can only exist so long as one remains in Christ. As Jesus said in Matthew, “...there am I in the midst of them.” Peter is the Rock because, as his prime profession shows, he is in the midst of them, of the disciples. The Petrine commission, and the authority stemming from it, is not like the office of the U.S. president, or like being the King of England, or like owning a piece of property or having money in the bank. It is not something the commissioned person possesses, not even as an office of a public servant, as when a politician or potentate will claim to work only for the public good. It does not exist above the community, but, like a rock, beneath the community, providing support, holding the edifice, the structure, of the Church together. The authority is granted precisely because, and only to the extent that, the commissioned person is *within* the Church. The authority is not an office external to the Church, to the Assembly of disciples, but a function, capacity, commission, mysterious focal presence concentrated and made manifest in one disciple in the midst of all the disciples, that most exists, only exists truly, insofar as it is intrinsic, even endemic, to the life of the community.

We can clearly see the interpenetration of these different dimensions, of the mode of the small group and the mode of universal authority, in St. Luke’s narrative. Cleopas and his companion, who never appear in the New Testament texts before or later and who appear reasonably obscure, and thus suitable representatives for most of us in the Church, are like the “two or three gathered together in my name” spoken of in Matthew. The two are gathered together, conversing and debating about Christ, and, as promised, Christ manifests in the midst of them. Christ turns them away from the country back to the City of Destiny, Jerusalem, where they find “...gathered together the eleven and those with them who were saying, ‘The Lord has truly been raised and has appeared to Simon!’” Urgently needing to share their newfound faith, they encounter not just “the disciples”, not some homogenous, abstract, amorphous Church without structure or concrete reality, but “the eleven and those with them”. The Eleven, the apostles, have a preeminent place, as the Twelve had throughout Jesus’ earthly ministry; so much so that it becomes necessary in Acts of the Apostles to choose another, ultimately Matthias, to restore the Eleven back to Twelve, the same number as the tribes of Israel. Again, “those with them” are not marginal or irrelevant, but joined together with the Eleven, both proclaiming the Resurrection (He is truly Risen!). Inflamed with the Spirit, the disciples return to the Church, and those invested with authority proclaim the public revelation to them. Finally, we see the significance of Simon, as attested throughout the Gospels and Acts of the Apostles. In the same breath as the miraculous, stunning “He is truly Risen!” the Church proclaims, “He has appeared to Simon!” Simon-Peter remains the focal point of the disciples-as-disciples, not lording it over the disciples, but gathering the disciples together in Christ’s name so that Jesus might be totally, jubilantly, eschatologically in the midst of them. Then, the Eleven and those with them listen to Cleopas and his companion recount their testimony. Those with authority in the Church do not simply expound, but truly *listen* to the testimony of all its members.

And, right on cue, “While they were still speaking about this, he stood in their midst and said to them, ‘Peace be with you.’” The effect of the individual and small group inhering within the dimensions of authority, and the whole church, (including those in authority), dialoguing

together, sharing their testimonies, with all individuals and groups is the presence of the Risen Christ, in the flesh. And the presence of the Risen Christ proclaims PEACE, for that is the fruit of salvation, extrication from the shadows, miseries, fears, and despairs of this mortal life. With the two disciples on the road to Emmaus, Christ appeared, preached, then disappeared. With the whole Church, Christ is present, to be looked at and touched. He eats a piece of baked fish, proving that he is alive, and not a mere ghost or vision. Within the whole Church, he proves his living presence. And again, in the whole Church, Christ opens the minds of all to understand the Scriptures, which does not simply, as in the case of Cleopas and his companion, result in the conviction of faith, but the sending of the Spirit, not just personal belief but the fullness of the Divine Life immanent in the world.

In the scene of the individual and the small gathering (“where two or three are gathered together in my name”), Christ prepares a meal for his followers; in the scene of the whole Church, Christ shares a meal with his brothers. The granting of the gift of faith sets the table and distributes the food, the return of that gift to the communion is the banquet, the feast, the new creation of ultimate communion of which the Church in time is the partial, implicit, and incomplete manifestation and the Kingdom at the Apocalypse is the total, explicit, and complete fulfillment.

It bears noting that the dimension of authority is not itself unidimensional. It contains multiple dimensions, axes, around which the mystery of the Church takes its shape through time, like threads winding around in warp and weft. Let us consider two critical dimensions: that of doctrine and that of wisdom. We might, for illustrative purposes, term doctrine, and doctrinal authority, the Petrine dimension, and wisdom the Pauline dimension, yet neither mode is exclusively the province of either the figure of Peter or the figure of Paul. It is striking that while in the Gospels Jesus names St. Peter to a position of preeminent authority in the community, it is St. Paul who authors the lion’s share of the epistles, that first sacred theology of the Gospel which itself makes up, and has the authority of, Scripture. From a purely secular historical or sociological perspective we might find this uninteresting, a simple accident of this religious group’s development: Paul was a great and prolific writer, Peter incomparably less so. But for those of us who hold faith in Divine Providence, nothing is really an accident. It was God’s holy Will that St. Peter lead the Church while St. Paul formulate the elaboration of its faith. In the Wisdom of God, the grace of authority is not uniform with the grace of wisdom, Peter is not Paul, and Paul is not Peter. Again, we are speaking of dimensions, modes, and not hermetically sealed compartments: Paul exercised authority in his communities and Peter wrote epistles himself, but St. Peter ruled the whole Church while St. Paul’s epistles form the backbone of New Testament theology.

As noted above, doctrine is teaching. Wisdom in Greek is “sophia”, which is a word derived from “sophos”, meaning skilled or clever in one’s craft. The Proto-Indo-European (PIE) root of our English “wisdom” is “weid-”, which means “to see”. Weid- also forms the basis of the Greek word “idea”, which means form, and also of the Greek word “idein”, meaning “to see”. (I believe that the use of Proto-Indo-European is a valid etymological tool in theological discourse since it is the progenitor of Greek, a sacred language, and helps clarify the depths of the word’s meaning.) Shouldn’t the one who teaches be the most skilled, the one who sees the truth most clearly and readily?

Why not just empower one great earthly leader to be both Peter and Paul, to both exercise authority and speak the divine wisdom? Certainly, Divine Providence ordained to grant the authority of doctrine and the charism of wisdom to different disciples in the Church for many reasons. (Not that those who exercise authority never have wisdom, nor that those who channel wisdom never exercise authority, but that, in the main, the most powerful hierarchs are rarely the foremost theologians and the foremost theologians are rarely the most powerful hierarchs.) We can speculate at least as to one cause: that the cleverest speculators often, like Narcissus, fall too deeply in love with the reflection of their own raging energies, thus running far out of bounds of sound teaching, and that the firmest rulers rarely have the speculative imagination necessary to birth the new and deeper insights necessary for the growth of the Church through time. The firmness required of a great ruler too often produces, (in a finite human nature), a dullness, and the swiftness required of a theologian too often produces a celerity that spirals beyond the dictates of stolid good sense. Even in the Old Testament, we see the same pattern: the kings wield authority while the prophets speak the truth.

Of course, the person of Christ fully unifies the dimensions of teaching and of wisdom in one person. The crucial insight is that none of us should attempt to be Christ Himself in the life of the Church. Not that the teacher shouldn't be enlightened with wisdom, nor that the wise shouldn't exercise authority, but that no disciple should aspire to rule the Church and simultaneously remold the whole Church's doctrines, theology, and worldview. A prelate who strove to be too like unto the Christ in regard to His omniscience would only succeed in making himself a good candidate for the Anti-Christ. (Be wary of those who combine all the attributes of shocking charisma, virtuosity in attaining and wielding power, spellbinding answers to previously insoluble questions, and seeming blamelessness in their personal virtue. Someone who seems too perfect to be authentic, probably is.) Teaching and wisdom are only fully present as one unity in the Whole Church, not in any one disciple, for teaching and wisdom are a unity only in Christ, whose whole Body is the Church.

As St. Paul teaches in 1 Corinthians 12:12-31:

As a body is one though it has many parts, and all the parts of the body, though many, are one body, so also Christ. For in one Spirit we were all baptized into one body, whether Jews or Greeks, slaves or free persons, and we were all given to drink of one Spirit.

Now the body is not a single part, but many. If a foot should say, "Because I am not a hand I do not belong to the body," it does not for this reason belong any less to the body. Or if an ear should say, "Because I am not an eye I do not belong to the body," it does not for this reason belong any less to the body. If the whole body were an eye, where would the hearing be? If the whole body were hearing, where would the sense of smell be? But as it is, there are many parts, yet one body. The eye cannot say to the hand, "I do not need you," nor again the head to the feet, "I do not need you." Indeed, the parts of the body that seem to be weaker are all the more necessary, and those parts of the body that we consider less honorable we surround with greater honor, and our less presentable parts are treated with greater propriety, whereas our more presentable parts do not need this. But God has so constructed the body as to give greater honor to a part that is without it, so that there may be no division in the body, but that the parts may have the same concern for one another. If [one] part suffers, all the parts suffer with it; if one part is honored, all the parts share its joy.

Now you are Christ's body, and individually parts of it. Some people God has designated in the church to be, first, apostles; second, prophets; third teachers; then, mighty deeds; then gifts of healing, assistance, administration, and varieties of tongues. Are all apostles? Are all

prophets? Are all teachers? Do all work mighty deeds? Do all have gifts of healing? Do all speak in tongues? Do all interpret? Strive eagerly for the greatest spiritual gifts.

We can see this pattern of grasping at divine omniscience - of being the source of all truth and the standard of all behavior, and its terrible toll, in the sorry lineage of Pharaohs and Great Kings and Emperors and of revolutionary (and counter-revolutionary) dictators. Even when a person, movement, or regime claims that religion is the greatest evil, and must be purged like filth from all cultures, and that it will raise the standard of scientific, secular, humane, humanistic, rational progress, we see that the urge to omniscience cannot be suppressed, that, in fact, it is in the most atheistic that the compulsion to (false) messianism becomes the most apparent. In the absence of a genuine God, man seeks to make himself God; indeed, it is the coveting of divine status that made such men abandon God in the first place. Marxism-Leninism provides the most stupefying example of this in our times. A movement claiming to represent universal brotherhood and promising to usher in a millennial paradise that would end history as we knew it only succeeded in ending any tolerable form of human society and human life. It is a spectacle how regimes insatiable in their violent hatred of religion, of the presence of God in human life, vomit up such ersatz “god-men” as the dictators Enver Hoxha (of Albania), Mao Tse-tung, and Kim Il-sung (of North Korea). Such leaders claim to unite in themselves all power, all virtue, all wisdom, setting themselves up as the indispensable saviors of their peoples, and then prove only supreme in murder, lies, and terror. Hoxha banned all religion, ruled through daily, random murder, and called himself the nation’s “Sole Force”, posturing as the preeminent expert in all things relevant to the national life. Mao inaugurated a “cultural revolution” aimed at uprooting all prior social influences and replacing them with the contents of his Quotations (known more popularly as the *Little Red Book*). Kim Il-sung made his subjects call him “Heavenly Leader”, the “Sun”, and “Great Chairman”, propagating endless litanies of his theories and thoughts throughout all published material and teaching that his grace alone sustained the country. One begins to forget that these false messiahs, these ruined monstrosities, might have become human beings.

And yet, of course, teaching must be penetrated by understanding, as understanding must be widely taught. The dimension of ecclesiastical leadership can only truly be itself when its own constitutive modes, teaching and understanding, interpenetrate each other to their depths.

Likewise, the Whole Church is most itself, most full of grace, most pregnant with the Word of God made Flesh in the world, when each and every one of its dimensions truly penetrates all the others -- when authority is firm in fidelity without arrogance, and when wisdom is obedient without cowering or diluting itself; when leadership is responsive without equivocating and righteous without dominating and when each disciple is obedient without blank slavishness or fanaticism and filled with the spirit of prophecy without impudence or imprudence. Wisdom that does not obey authority produces the impatient, willful rebellion of schism, and authority deaf to wisdom produces the insufferably arrogant intransigence that sparks the resort to schism. Leadership either too firm or not firm enough produces either a Satanic dictatorship of pious drivel and constipated contempt or (an equally Satanic) free-for-all of lukewarm relativism, rich in good vibes and destitute in Christ, respectively. Followers too submissive or too willful produce either a flock too brainwashed and complacent to actually hear

the authentic voice of the Shepherd or a riot of would-be popes and armchair theologians, all red and hot and aghast that their points of view, their opinions, their tastes aren't bowed before.

God is present everywhere, and can manifest in a drop of water or a storm, a whisper or a thunderclap, a pope or a peasant. But remember that Satan loves costumes and can appear in a thundering nun or an understanding hippie, a scowling cleric or a smiling pastor, a businessman or a beggar, an atheist green-shirted Communist fighter or an ultra-pious black-shirted Fascist thug. Satan needs costumes, for if he tried to twist you off from God in his true form, he would be as repellent as a vermin-ridden mountain of manure set ablaze; you would run from him as from a mass shooting. God can always appear as Himself, for He is beautiful, *is* the beautiful itself. God is truth in all things, Satan tries to deceive in all things.

Just as the Church does not invest any one disciple with the omniscience of the Christ Himself, neither can the Church seek to divest the Petrine authority of its key role in being the focal point that holds the Church together. The universal priesthood of all believers and the Petrine office are united by the mystical cord of Christ's Spirit, and to sever that link is as diabolical and disastrous to the life of the Church as to twist off text from Scripture.

The Church, then, is an organic whole, a diversity in unity and a unity in diversity; neither a free-for-all of relativism, impiety and wickedness, nor a grouchy dictatorship of the most anally retentive. The Church is the Body of Christ, the Flesh of Christ: the immanence of God's Transcendence in the world, especially in the flesh and spirits of every faithful Christian.

Thus it is not the task of the member of the Church to draw attention to himself or herself. Neither the teacher nor the theologian, neither the ruler nor the speculator, exists for himself or herself, but only for the sake of Christ, for His Flesh and His Spirit. So, all teaching and all speculation, all authority and all wisdom, exist only for the sake of those *in* His Flesh and united in His Spirit.

No Pope exists for his own pontificate, nor does any priest exist for his own priesthood, nor does any valid minister minister solely to his own needs and for the sake of his own gain, much less worldly gain. The papacy, the priesthood, and all ministry exist *for* the People of God, for the Church of Christ, for the presence of Christ's Flesh and Spirit in the world.

So too the homilist and his homily, for the priest acts *in persona Christi*, and thus the priest-homilist, in delivering his homily, must imitate the humility and servanthood of Christ.

Just as Jesus immediately vanished from the sight of the disciples upon the breaking of the bread, so too the homilist must, so to speak, "disappear" upon expounding the Word. The focus is never to be on the exponent, but solely on what is expounded: the Kingdom of God present and growing in the Church, the Body of Christ of the Assembly of God.

Let us take to heart the etymological origin of the word "homily", which ultimately indicates *as one, together*. The perfect homily gathers all Christians as *one people together*.

homily (n.)

late 14c., *omelye*, from Old French *omelie* "homily" (12c., Modern French *homélie*), from Church Latin *homilia* "a homily, sermon," from Greek *homilia* "conversation, discourse," used in New Testament Greek for "sermon," from *homilos* "an assembled crowd," from *homou* "together" (from PIE **somalo-*, suffixed form of root **sem-* (1) "one; as one, together with") + *ile* "troop, band, crowd" (cognate with Sanskrit *melah* "assembly," Latin *miles* "soldier"). Latinate form restored in English 16c. A collection of them is a *homiliary* (1844).¹

In the Emmaus account, the bread had to be baked beforehand by others; whereupon, at the critical moment, Jesus takes the bread, blesses the bread, breaks the bread, and gives the bread to others, to his disciples, (at which point the disciples *recognize* the reality of Jesus and His Presence). Then Jesus disappears. The whole goal of a homily is to make the intention of the Sacred Author, who is always ultimately God, accessible to each human believer in that moment of his or her life's pilgrimage back to God. The homilist never reveals himself, but only God; and if he reveals himself, it is only ever to better reveal God. It is a humble calling. The word humble derives from hummus which means ground, or earth -- in constructing and delivering a homily, we embrace our creatureliness and dependence upon God, who must breathe His Spirit into us for us to have any life whatsoever. The homilist reveals the unity of God in the many, the presence of the Christ in the Flesh of Christ, thereby bringing all Christians together, *as one*.

The telos of a homily -- the goal of a homily -- must not be *primarily* theological, doctrinal, or even pastoral, much less political, social, or economic, yet it cannot flourish and accomplish the Will of God without the concurrence of theology, doctrine, or the exigencies of pastoral care, nor have any meaning without a deep awareness of the sharply felt, radically urgent political, social, and economic realities suffered daily and hourly by the flock of the Great Shepherd. And when those political, social, and economic realities directly attack the Church, seeking to destroy the Will of God, the Church must forthrightly stand against those political, social, and economic forces.

So a homilist is *not* foremost a theologian, teacher, or pastor, much less a politician, activist, or businessman.

A homilist is foremost a midwife for the Word of God.

The homilist midwifes the Word (Jesus) from the Scriptural text (Mary), the text of the Scripture being pregnant with the Word of God. But the text is not the Scripture: the Spirit

¹ http://www.etymonline.com/index.php?term=homily&allowed_in_frame=0

sweeps over the text in a creative act, like the Spirit swept over the formless wasteland, submerged under the abyss covered in darkness. (Genesis 1:2)

The breaking of the bread which is the breaking open of the Word is also the birth of Jesus into the world, into the flesh of the human community, in the Incarnation. The Crucifixion is the Eucharist is the Resurrection is the Incarnation is the Crucifixion is the Resurrection. The word the disciples use in St. Luke's Gospel to describe Jesus' "breaking" open of the Scriptures to them is "dianoigen", which also means for a first-born male to open the womb. Jesus breaking open the Word, which is Himself, is the same thing as the Word made Flesh breaking open the womb of the Theotokos, the God-Bearer, the Blessed Virgin Mary. The proper interpretation of the Sacred Text as Sacred Scripture is not merely some sterile, mechanical application of logical principles, but the God-Man, the only Son beloved of the Father, quite literally breaking the womb and entering the world. The womb is the text, the Word is the Scripture, and the homilist, assisted by the Great Homilist, our great High Priest, Christ Jesus, acts a midwife for the miraculous birth.

The text can only give birth to the Scripture if God is present in the hearer of the Word. The text must be *listened* to as Word. When contorted, abused, wrung out, played with, the text does not give birth to the Word, cannot. One is left not with a text-formed-by-the-Maker, Scripture, but a ruined mass of refuse, suitable only for Gehenna. When the text of the Scripture is misinterpreted, what is left is an abortion, not a baby; an apocalyptic nuclear wasteland, not a Garden of Delight (Eden); a demon, a spirit whose existence is shorn of grace, not an angel, who is a faithful messenger of God's proclamation to the world. The text is the existence, the Spirit is the grace; with the Spirit the text of the Scripture becomes salvation and Paradise. Without the Spirit, the text becomes a snare of the devil, a trap through which the willful or unwary fall into ruination.

Satan does not shy from using the text of the Scriptures, as he did in tempting Jesus to misuse his power and authority (Matthew 4:1-11). Satan tempted Jesus at many times thereafter, the temptation always (as it is with us) to disobey the Will of the Father in order to satisfy some need or desire of our own. Satan was present in Peter when Peter rebuked Jesus for predicting, and embracing, His own death, rather than pursuing and grasping an earthly kingship and all its temporal glory. Satan was present in the priests, Pharisees, and Roman occupation forces who arrested, convicted and tortured Him. The foul spirit no doubt raised the pitch of its cacophony to its maximum as the Christ suffered each of the Hells that we deserved for our sins as He was crucified and descended into the depths of Hell. As Satan does not wince at the total sacrilege of attempting to turn the Son from the Father, so he relishes twisting the Sacred Text from the Sacred Scripture till, for each believer laboring under a false interpretation, it snaps the two in twain, leaving the believer bereft of the Spirit and captive to the dark powers. The tragic, woefully sad and dismal farce of such a situation is that the believer laboring under a false interpretation thinks himself gifted with understanding, while he is actually blind and abused.

Which is all to reiterate: Satan doesn't play fair. He's the devil! He will use any stratagem to devour you -- immoral sex for the lustful, food for the gluttonous, money for the greedy, fame for the vain, the occult for the overly curious, yes. If that's your thing, he'll set before you a smorgasbord of orgasms, seven-course tasting menus paired with a wine flight,

bonuses, stock options, pentagrams and occultist literature. But Satan revels in, just as much and if not more, twisting Christianity to his purposes. He will attempt to turn your religiosity and search for righteousness into self-righteousness, your moral goodness into pride through goading you to peek in the mental mirror too often, and cause you to see yourself as God, rather than worship the True God as your Lord and Redeemer.

Satan attempts to be God and ends up parodying him. God made man in His image; likewise Satan seeks to make the children of darkness in his image. Satan was not brought down by sex, food, stock options or, ironically, *The Satanic Bible*. Satan wanted to be God -- the Great Spirit of Light, Truth, and Blinding Holiness. He coveted the spiritual perfect so much that he rebelled against, turned from, the Spirit - for he was a murderer and liar from the beginning, and though made spiritually perfect, the Lucifer, the Light-bearer, God's prime attendant in the holy realm, his will never understood the true inner nature of the spiritual. For Lucifer-Satan, the spiritual was all omnipotence, omniscience, omnipresence, perfection, and a caustic holiness that could burn the enamel right off your teeth. God is all those things, and more, and the more is the inner meaning of that spiritual perfection, that towering holiness - which is meekness, gentleness, the passion for others that could leave one truly grief-stricken, truly broken, at the loss of another, forgiveness, and self-sacrificial love. God created this material, temporal, limited world of ours, and made the spiritual world subject to it, with the angels as ministers and servants to human beings and the Son of God as the suffering Servant, as a testament to the interiority of His spiritual perfection. The human race is the ultimate testament to the fact that His abounding Abundance does not exist for itself, for its own magnification, but radiates, surges like a tremendous wave outward to the furthest infinity.

Satan finds our material, temporal, limited existence a mockery of the spiritual, an abomination cooked up by a twisted old crone of a man, an enigmatic monstrosity that delights in perversity. Satan finds our fornications, greeds, idolatries, and sorceries just as contemptible as God does, which is why the moment the Tempter succeeds in causing us to fall to sin, he instantly becomes an Accuser, damning us for our transgressions. One moment he plies us with lies, the next he embroils us in guilt. Satan enjoys showing the Father that His beloved dirt-toys, we human beings, are the wretched, filthy jokes he always knew we were. But Satan also, even after the calamity of his ruination and distance from the only source of grace, still seeks to set himself up as God - another God, an alternative God, a superior God. His exceeding specialty - his piece de resistance as the supreme chef of iniquity - is to teach his children his own ways, not to have sex we shouldn't have - Satan, being a spirit, has never felt the urge to copulate; nor to accumulate unseemly amounts of money while others starve and suffer - for a spirit our hard-won currency is no more real or meaningful than play money. His great work is to make us every bit as rigid, heavy-handed, self-righteous, self-adoring, constipated, perfectionistic, strident, and unyielding as he is, and every bit as uncaring, cruel, hard, merciless, and cold as he is too. Satan seeks to subvert the calm, open grace demanded of our souls by our Creator and supplant it with his own special brand: the ruthless tirade of condemnation. As C.S. Lewis writes, the demons find a Pharisee, all white perfection on the outside, all emptiness of grace on the inside, far more delectable than a soul felled by sordid lust.

As St. Paul says in Ephesians:

Finally, draw your strength from the Lord and from his mighty power. Put on the armor of God so that you may be able to stand firm against the tactics of the devil. For our struggle is not with flesh and blood but with the principalities, with the powers, with the world rulers of this present darkness, with the evil spirits in the heavens. Therefore, put on the armor of God, that you may be able to resist on the evil day and, having done everything, to hold your ground. So stand fast with your loins girded in truth, clothed with righteousness as a breastplate, and your feet shod in readiness for the gospel of peace. In all circumstances, hold faith as a shield, to quench all [the] flaming arrows of the evil one. And take the helmet of salvation and the sword of the Spirit, which is the word of God.

(6:10-17)

The word of God is the sword of the Spirit -- it is the weapon gifted to us from God with which we vanquish the tactics of the devil. We do not create it, add to it, embellish it, perfect it, reinterpret it, revise it, restore it, supplement it, or do any such thing to it. We do not forge it or reforge it; God alone is its Author, its Maker. It is handed to us, perfect and whole. We simply learn to use it, wield it, fight with it, conquer with it in the army of the Lord -- which is task enough, sufficient to occupy the whole of a human lifetime.

The interpreter of Scripture is the Church. The Church is not merely any hierarchy; it is the Body of Christ, of which the Risen Christ is the head. But the Body of Christ is not complete without the pastoral and teaching authority given to the apostles (Matthew 16:13-20). The Church is the Kingdom of the Son; it is not a dictatorship of human authority, nor is it an anarchy of individual opinion.

Thus, let us strive to all be true midwives to the Word of God, assisting the birth of the Scripture from the text not according to our own lights, turning our spirit inwards towards ourselves, our own desires and preferences, but strenuously turning towards the true Light of the world, Christ and His Father, holding steadfast to a faith that is orthodox, catholic, and biblical, that obeys the magisterium of Petrine authority and respects the liberty of every Christian brother and sister, and that scrupulously adheres to Sacred Tradition, while looking forward to the emerging Church as it must and will become till it fulfills itself as the perfected, final, ultimate, cosmic Body of Christ at the end of the age.

In doing so, we spurn the solicitations of Lucifer, the Light-Bearer, refusing to substitute our own lights - our own intellects - for the revealed Word as it has been handed down to us, but rather we act as handmaidens to the Theotokos, the God-Bearer, the Blessed Virgin Mary, Mother of God and Queen of Heaven, helping give birth to a Word that is living, active, and sovereign - an Uncreated but eternally Begotten Word that reigns over us rather than one that we futilely attempt to subject to our created will, a mock-Word that we create, stitched together from our own fetid delusions and vanities.

As Pope Pius XII said, "To desire grace without recourse to the Virgin Mother is to desire to fly without wings." Saint Maximilian Kolbe, the heroic martyr of charity, enjoins us, "The conflict with hell cannot be engaged by men, even the most clever. The Immaculata alone has from God the promise of victory over Satan." This is the promise of that first prophecy of salvation announced by the Father, "I will put enmity between you and the woman, and between

your offspring and hers; He will strike at your head, while you strike at his heel” (Genesis 3:15). Jesus wisely and lovingly entrusts to us his own Mother, perfect in love and ceaseless in compassion, enfolding us within her boundless maternal care.

As St. John writes:

When Jesus saw his mother and the disciple there whom he loved, he said to his mother, ‘Woman, behold, your son.’ Then he said to the disciple, ‘Behold your mother’. And from that hour the disciple took her into his home.’ After this, aware that everything was now finished, in order that the scripture might be fulfilled, Jesus said, ‘I thirst’.

(John 19:26-28)

We can see from the phrase, “After this, aware that everything was now finished,” that this dedication of Mother to son and son to Mother was no mere act of housekeeping, of tidying up one’s final affairs, of executing a guardianship for the care and feeding of his bereft mother.

It was the final act of Jesus’ mission and ministry as the Christ, the anointed of the Father, the crowning triumph of his exuberant deluge of total self-gift. The Christ who abundantly and miraculously shares the bread of Himself with all his brothers also shares his Mother. For as we are His brothers, so she becomes our Mother. And as we are wise to eat of the bread of Christ’s flesh in the Eucharist with an open heart, so too we are wise to take His Mother into the home of our hearts. (And, of course, necessarily, we do so with a proper understanding of Christ’s sole divinity and lordship, and without any stain of worship of anything save the Trinity - Father, Son, Spirit.) So long as we entrust ourselves to the intercession of Mary and the Lordship of her Son, present in the Church, the whole People of God, we shall certainly obliterate the power of Satan and, through the Word of the Word of God (the reality of the Christ encountered in Scripture) obtain the gift of salvation promised to those who say YES to God’s plan for them.

The homilist must also strive to point only to the Christ, our leader and perfecter in faith. The true homilist does not seek to enhance himself, praise himself, or seek the praise of others. As Christ disappears upon the breaking of the bread, so too the homilist must disappear, leaving only the Word, a banquet prepared for the invited guests. The Word broken by the homilist is not the homilist’s word, as the bread of the Eucharist broken by the priest is not the priest’s flesh, nor is the wine poured the shedding of the priest’s blood. The Word, the Flesh, and the Blood are all Jesus’; the homilist-priest is merely a brother, a sinner saved by grace and brought to communion in the Body of Christ by the Savior -- the one true Kohen ha-Gadol, Nabi, and Melekh - High Priest, Prophet, and King.

Which is to gently and politely note that the pieties, and an author could only hope, glimpses of holiness, contained in this book are not based on, (justified by), my sorry moral record and string of limitations (of which I could write volumes many times the length of this one), but stand and fall alone on what I hope is an accurate and faithful interpretation of Sacred Scripture, justified solely by the Christ, present in His Church and the Sacred Tradition it has handed down through the ages.

Matthew 19

Marriage & Divorce, The Blessing of the Children & The Rich Young Man

Marriage and Divorce.

1 When Jesus finished these words, he left Galilee and went to the district of Judea across the Jordan. 2 Great crowds followed him, and he cured them there. 3 Some Pharisees approached him, and tested him, saying, “Is it lawful for a man to divorce his wife for any cause whatever?”

4 He said in reply, “Have you not read that from the beginning the Creator ‘made them male and female’ 5 and said, ‘For this reason a man shall leave his father and mother and be joined to his wife, and the two shall become one flesh’? 6 So they are no longer two, but one flesh. Therefore, what God has joined together, no human being must separate.” 7

They said to him, “Then why did Moses command that the man give the woman a bill of divorce and dismiss [her]?”

8 He said to them, “Because of the hardness of your hearts Moses allowed you to divorce your wives, but from the beginning it was not so. 9 I say to you, whoever divorces his wife (unless the marriage is unlawful) and marries another commits adultery.”

10 [His] disciples said to him, “If that is the case of a man with his wife, it is better not to marry.” 11 He answered, “Not all can accept [this] word, but only those to whom that is granted. 12 Some are incapable of marriage because they were born so; some, because they were made so by others; some, because they have renounced marriage for the sake of the kingdom of heaven. Whoever can accept this ought to accept it.”

Blessing of the Children.

13 Then children were brought to him that he might lay his hands on them and pray. The disciples rebuked them, 14 but Jesus said, “Let the children come to me, and do not prevent them; for the kingdom of heaven belongs to such as these.” 15 After he placed his hands on them, he went away.

The Rich Young Man.

16 Now someone approached him and said, “Teacher, what good must I do to gain eternal life?”

17 He answered him, “Why do you ask me about the good? There is only One who is good. If you wish to enter into life, keep the commandments.”

18 He asked him, “Which ones?” And Jesus replied, “ ‘You shall not kill; you shall not commit adultery; you shall not steal; you shall not bear false witness; 19 honor your father and your mother’; and ‘you shall love your neighbor as yourself.’”

20 The young man said to him, “All of these I have observed. What do I still lack?”

21 Jesus said to him, “If you wish to be perfect, go, sell what you have and give to [the] poor, and you will have treasure in heaven. Then come, follow me.”

22 When the young man heard this statement, he went away sad, for he had many possessions.

23 Then Jesus said to his disciples, “Amen, I say to you, it will be hard for one who is rich to enter the kingdom of heaven. 24 Again I say to you, it is easier for a camel to pass through the eye of a needle than for one who is rich to enter the kingdom of God.”

25 When the disciples heard this, they were greatly astonished and said, “Who then can be saved?”

26 Jesus looked at them and said, “For human beings this is impossible, but for God all things are possible.”

27 Then Peter said to him in reply, “We have given up everything and followed you. What will there be for us?”

28 Jesus said to them, “Amen, I say to you that you who have followed me, in the new age, when the Son of Man is seated on his throne of glory, will yourselves sit on twelve thrones, judging the twelve tribes of Israel. 29 And everyone who has given up houses or brothers or sisters or father or mother or children or lands for the sake of my name will receive a hundred times more, and will inherit eternal life. 30 But many who are first will be last, and the last will be first.

These passages revolve around the concept of sklerocardia, the Greek word which is commonly translated as “hardness of heart”. In each of the three situations (Jesus’ teaching on marriage, Jesus’ reception and blessing of the children, and Jesus’ invitation to the rich young man), Jesus is confronted with people’s activity - accusation, testing, misunderstanding, mishandling, mis-serving, and appeal for insight, assistance in pursuing God, and, plainly, help. In each confrontation, Jesus, the living Water and gushing Spirit of the Father’s infinite Truth, encounters people gripped by sklerocardia, whose questions and actions betray their fundamental allegiance to some (false, sham, inauthentic, defective, insufficient) truth other than the Father, the authentic Truth.

Sklerocardia is composed of the morphemes “sklero” and “cardia”, cardia naturally meaning heart and skleros meaning hard. Skleros is related to the verb skellein, meaning “to dry up, parch”. The Greek here derives from the Proto-Indo-European (PIE) root skele- “to parch, wither”. So, this “hardness of heart”, to which Jesus attributes the Torah’s permission for a man to divorce his wife, is a hardness caused by being dry, by lacking the necessary liquid, moisture, wetness, water without which the plant of one’s soul, the living vine of one’s inward being, planted and tended and grown by the Father, cannot help but wither.

In Greco-Roman antiquity, the heart was not simply a pump that distributed oxygen-carrying red blood cells to other cells around the body for cellular respiration. Indeed, the ancients knew nothing of biochemistry, nor at all anticipated the complex microscopic material-molecular functioning of the organic mechanism that we take for granted. Rather, the blood was the vital principle of life, the wet, vigorous hot substance that sustained the living being. And the heart was understood as the seat of the soul, not simply a pump for this vital substance, blood, but the organ responsible for sensation and intelligence. In essence, for the ancient mind, the heart was the brain - the source of the mind, the psyche, the spirit, the self, the soul. (To highlight this historical conception, Aristotle believed that the brain simply existed as, essentially, a refrigerator, whose cooling element prevented the heating element of the heart from overheating the human body.)

This withering of the heart, then, was the spirit’s inability to be itself; an inability caused by its reliance on its own spirit rather than the Spirit, the Great Spirit that creates and sustains the heavens and the earth, the Father - Jesus’ Father.

Jesus indicates that such a withered heart is useless, like salt that had lost its flavor, good for nothing but to be thrown out and destroyed - a ruined monstrosity. Like totally parched soil, useless for cultivation, the fruit that the Vine-grower expects to issue forth from the earth of each human person cannot grow, ripen, and be nourishment for oneself and others without water, without the living Spirit accessible only from, granted only from, the Father. For our physical selves are formed from the soil -- that is, the particulate matter of the universe, whereas our souls are breathed into us by our Maker (Genesis 2:7).

This withered heart, this self-caused deprivation of the life-giving Spirit, is the bitter fruit of sin and parallels the (eternal and final, rather than, in the case of the elect, temporary and reversible, redeemable) ruination eternally experienced by the rebel, damned angels, the demons. Just as the ruination of Satan and his angels is caused by their turning from the Spirit to their own spirits, in stubborn, ridiculous distrust, disobedience, and self-preference, our myriad pursuits -- such as for marital and familial happiness and worldly success and security -- cut us off from the life-giving Water with which the Father endlessly seeks to water our souls, so that they may not be infertile and incapable of producing fruit, but richly provided with every good gift.

These passages also serve as a frank, even pointed, critique of the Torah. They clearly teach that the Torah, in and by itself, is insufficient to guide a human life (at least the human life of a sinner) to salvation in the inner and eternal life of the Father. For the people of Israel, the Torah was the treaty covenant between YHWH and the people, mediated by Moses, the man of

God. By its terms, God became Israel's king -- the only nation on earth to have the eternal Lord of the Universe directly as its king. This treaty provided the terms (the commandments) by which the people of Israel would conduct their entire national life - their religious practice, their dietary restrictions, their social relations, their sexual lives, their legal system, their economic life, and the structure and rights of their monarchy -- the whole array of what constitutes a human life in all its varied experience. In sum, it provided a blueprint that taught the parameters by which this people of God could hope to conduct righteous lives in the presence of an uncompromisingly, even caustically, Holy God, a God whose Holiness towers above human propensities as the sky towers above the earth.

In these passages Jesus, God in the flesh, not merely the man of God, but the Son of God and the Son of Man, declares, forcefully and yet in a somewhat hidden, almost casual way, that the Torah falls short. Not that the Torah fell short for regulating what God wanted the nation, the earthly kingdom, of Israel to become, but rather that it fell short as a Way to enter a new Kingdom of the Father's intimate, ultimate, and eternal Love. Realize that Jesus' coming into the world in the first century not only presages the Apocalypse to come at the end of time, but was in fact -- is in fact -- the Apocalypse. We who live within this old age of the world, within the heavens and the earth as first created by God, and not only that, but fallen from contact with God's grace, at an unbearable, incommensurable distance from the fullness of his Presence, live in time. We experience all the phenomena of our lives and our very selves temporally, sequentially, chronologically, inexorably bound up in past, present, and future. What was past is not present and what is present is not past, nor is what is future present. But, for God, the angels, and the demons, this is not so. They live in eternity. They understand according to and live in an eternal frame of reference, and it is the eternal that acts as the standard for the temporal, not the temporal that acts as the standard for the eternal. What is really real, what is real at bottom and in the end, is true and only fully understandable from an eternal frame of reference, most emphatically not from a temporal one. We must constantly remind ourselves of this because we are intimately bound within time - and mired within the sordid muck of a fallen time at that!

We think of the creation in Genesis as "long ago" and the Apocalypse in Revelation as "far off", and the Incarnation, Crucifixion, and Resurrection as two thousand years ago, and the times of the patriarchs, kings, and prophets as centuries and millennia before that. But from God's and Satan's perspectives it is all happening at once, all happening in the Great and Endless Now of eternity. From the eternal frame of reference, the creation, the Old Covenant, the New Covenant, and the Apocalypse are essentially all the same eternal creative act of the Father, Son, and Holy Spirit, the Triune Unity. They don't happen this one, then that one, here and there, yesterday and today and tomorrow, but NOW, HERE, ONE.

To clarify this discussion of the eternal frame of reference, this brief note on the nature of eternity, it is important to say that eternity's absence of time, its absence of chronology, of chrono-logic, chrono-logos, time-structure, does emphatically not mean that eternity lacks any kind of structure at all. Eternity is deeply structured, deeply logical, in myriad ways that I do not claim to understand and about which other writers would surely provide better guidance. Surely, the structure of eternity is not adequately understandable to finite temporal beings living in this present age of the world, and, truly, eternity is only completely understandable to the Trinity itself. Eternity is not a monistic realm or reality, homogenous in form, content, context, and

structure. The internal structure and dynamic of the Trinity itself, the deepest truth of eternity, in Father, Son, and Spirit, assures us of that, as do the hierarchical choirs of angels, and indeed the stark separation of Heaven and Hell, light from dark. Nor are the actions of the Trinity in creating, redeeming, sanctifying and judging the world structurally, logically, identical. They are not the same actions, the *same things*, as such.

Rather, it is merely the case that from the perspective of an eternal spiritual being -- one not, by its nature, bound up in time, space, and matter -- these events, these actions, do not have a temporal sequence as an integral part of their formal reality. They have a logical sequence, as the rational forms of a line, an angle, a triangle, a quadrangle, a pentagon, a hexagon and so forth proceed in a logical sequence, but that logical sequence does not necessitate the integral importance of a time sequence. To put it pithily, eternity lacks time but abounds in order, structure.

Naturally, the spirits, being superior in nature and intellect to and more powerful than temporal beings such as ourselves, can and do understand the nature of time and our experience of it and coordinate their actions in ways that anticipate and respond to our temporal nature, experience, and mode of being. Satan may not experience reality sequentially, but he is an expert in using time as an instrument, playing the chords of our frailties one by one in his tempting, hoping each pluck, properly ordered, might finally provoke us to sin, to rebellion against God's Will. And then, clearly, we can add that not all eternal beings experience the order of eternity in the same way. The Personae of the Godhead experience it differently from the angels, each rank of angels experiencing it differently from the other ranks, and, certainly, there exists an unbridgeable gap between the texture of the eternity enjoyed by the obedient angels and that suffered by the damned angels.

It bears noting that for a spirit *not* to experience reality in such a way that a time sequence is integral to that spirit's consciousness and conscious experience emphatically does *not* imply that such a spirit is omniscient, omnipresent or omnipotent. Not having one's consciousness immersed in the stream and texture of time does *not* necessitate that the spirit possesses total knowledge, total presence, or, much less, total power. It is impossible for temporal beings to really understand (see something for what it actually is) or comprehend (grasp the width and the length of, the beginning and the end of, touch the texture of) what it means to have a consciousness not immersed in, or bound by, time. On the one hand, our lack of understanding does not make the conscious experience of those spirits who do experience that eternal reality directly any less real, and, on the other hand, once we accept its reality and attempt to enter into some (limited) understanding of it, we should not make the coordinate mistake of overestimating the faculties and powers of such a spirit. Truly, only God possesses total knowledge, presence, and power. Any knowledge, presence, or power enjoyed or experienced by any other being, spiritual or corporeal, is, ultimately, possessed solely through a dispensation of the Divine Will, for the sole aim of accomplishing its eternal design. As St. John writes, "So Pilate said to him, 'Do you not speak to me? Do you not know that I have power to release you and I have power to crucify you?' Jesus answered him, 'You would have no power over me if it had not been given to you from above'" (John 19:10-11a).

All reality -- knowledge, presence, and power -- comes from above, save those distorted, ruined aspects of reality that result from sin, which is distance from God. Every gift of the

Father that constitutes every aspect of our living being is given in accordance with the Divine Will. No aspect of the universe or ourselves, our faculties or strengths, exists apart from the Divine Will nor exists (or originates) through the creative or sustaining power of our own will or existence or that of any other created being. The knowledge and power of angels, who exist in a state of perpetual grace, is given, circumscribed and adapted, by God, to the tasks to which they are assigned. The knowledge and power of demons is somehow stolen through the diabolical intellect from God. The nature of how demons can know or exert power, being irrevocably separated from Divine Grace, is bound up in the mystery of iniquity. God does not revoke the existence (consciousness, intellect, capacity) of his creatures, even those fallen from His grace, and yet He can and does revoke the enjoyment of the gift of His grace.

To possess the weight of a spiritual existence bereft of the sustenance and support of divine grace is to bear the burden of damnation. Existence without grace is the precise technical formula of Hell, of the diabolical condition. In this in-between-time, in the interval between the present age and the fulfillment of the Apocalypse in the new creation, God suffers the demons to steal what knowledge and power they can through the infernal workings of the ruined apparatus of their damned spirits. In doing so, they torment the elect and clutch the damned. Yet the beautiful irony of this cosmic drama rests in the truth that the ultimate outcome of all that the demons scheme has, in fact, been designed by eternal Providence. Every machination spun by evil to thwart the design of the Good only works to fulfill the triumph of the Holy Will.

As Jesus attests of His own deliverance unto Pilate, every evil act ultimately exists under the authority of, and serves the benevolent purposes of, the Lord. The knowledge and power that the demons steal is not total by any means, but, in parallel to that of the angelic capacities, circumscribed and adapted to the divine purpose. And, in the end, after the Apocalypse, the demons will have no further power of intellect or action over and against any soul God has willed to Himself. Their intellect will only serve to magnify the horror of their damnation, and their actions against the damned souls will not please them or serve their ends, but only fulfill the edict of Divine Justice: mercy for the righteous, wrath for the wicked. Human beings know and act on the battlefield of this spiritual war, possessed of intellectual and physical capacities -- an existence -- created by God, yet free to turn their wills either to obedience unto the Divine Will in allegiance to Christ and in concert with the armies of His holy angels or away from the divine presence, to be embroiled in a futile rebellion against Providence that only serves to effectuate God's provident purpose.

The Apocalypse is the Greek Apokaluptein, from apo- (in this case, un-) and kaluptein (to cover). The Apocalypse is the great Uncovering, when the hidden, shadowy, unknown, uncertain, grey morass of our temporal world, and each of our temporal lives, will be uncovered, unmasked, shown for what it truly is -- and thus, necessarily, what it always truly was and always truly would be. We float blindly through the corridors of our everyday lives, beset by shadows and intimations of we know not what, hardly knowing ourselves and all but entirely ignorant of the truth of others. Yet at the Apocalypse, the Great Uncovering, when the blinding, uncompromising Light of Eternal Truth will righteously, majestically, irresistibly shine into the dark cloud of this present age, all will be known clearly, simply, inevitably -- God as God, evil as evil, damned as damned, elect as elect. There will be nowhere left to hide, no crevice, no corner,

no covering, no pack of lies, no stratagem, no deal to be cut, no bargain to be made that will protect us from the searching, invincible Light that will find out all wrongdoing and infidelity, that will validate all righteousness and fidelity, from which no soul can escape its truth and its destiny, its Judgment, final and eternal and irrevocable.

It is the great Unveiling, the great verdict of the eternal Judge of the Universe, the Christ.

Jesus is the Light of the world, and his coming into the world was the Light of the Father breaking into human existence, this fallen heavens and earth. As St. John teaches, “The true light, which enlightens everyone, was coming into the world” (John 1:9). Jesus’ life, ministry, atonement, and Resurrection do not presage the Apocalypse -- it is what the Apocalypse looks like in time, at the moment of circa A.D. 33. As St. Matthew teaches:

And behold, the veil of the sanctuary was torn in two from top to bottom. The earth quaked, rocks were split, tombs were opened, and the bodies of many saints who had fallen asleep were raised. And coming forth from their tombs after his resurrection, they entered the holy city and appeared to many. The centurion and the men with him who were keeping watch over Jesus feared greatly when they saw the earthquake and all that was happening, and they said, “Truly, this was the Son of God!”

(27:51-54)

An apocalyptic scene, to put it mildly. The veil that cordoned off the Holy of Holies from the rest of the Temple, that is, the veil that separated God from the world, was split, sundered, rendered ineffective, useless, over, done, passed away. The transient temporal had met the eternal immovable. The physical earth broke and the dead rose in the flesh. For God and Satan and all their armies it was the Judgment. For us and our nations, our ancestors and our cultures, those in time and who experience reality temporally, the dark shadows scudded back over the scene of our history and many continued to putter and falter and knock around in the darkness of the everyday and mundane - while the Church, the Body of Christ, advanced, as a beam of light shot through a dense cloud, proceeding along its predestined course till the consummation of time, till not only the eternal spirits, but we human beings, will see the Great Unveiling for what it was, is, and always will be.

In these three passages, we see Jesus, the God-Man, teaching that to enter that eternal Kingdom of the Father, and not simply rule an earthly kingdom justly, it is not sufficient to live according to the mere instructions of God, but, rather, we must live according to God Himself. It is not sufficient to live by the words of God, but, rather, the Word of God must live within us. The Torah and the kingdom for which it was the law was a compromise between the people of Israel and the Lord, adapted to human weaknesses and sufficient for the regulation of everyday life in this world in time. For eternal life, a life that does not end, that does not die, that is not bound by time, that is fixed forever in perfection and sees God face-to-face, we must go beyond.

That is why, in explaining that divorce is impermissible and marriage irrevocable, Jesus appeals to the arche, translated as “the beginning”, saying, “Have you not read that from the beginning the Creator ‘made them male and female’ and said, ‘For this reason a man shall leave his father and mother and be joined to his wife, and the two shall become one flesh?’” (Matthew

19:4-5). As it was in Greek philosophy, the arche is not just the chronological beginning of the world, but the first principle of the world, the primordial foundation of its existence. For living a simple human life in this fallen world in this disordered time, this wicked age, born to die, condemned to toil, fraught with worry and fear, embroiled in loss and failure, divorce is permissible.

If one woman does not please you or serve your happiness, dismiss her and find another. It is all very well and good, for you shall soon be dead anyway, and so will your dismissed ex-wife, dead in Sheol for all eternity, no more, bereft of breath and life and spirit, forgotten, alone, a pallid, blank shade in the dismal shadows of the underworld. As Scripture states, “Cursed be the ground because of you! In toil shall you eat its yield all the days of your life. Thorns and thistles shall it bring forth to you, as you eat of the plants of the field. By the sweat of your face shall you get bread to eat, until you return to the ground, from which you were taken; For you are dirt, and to dirt you shall return” (Genesis 3:17b-19). We live dirty lives, brief, ignoble, rotten, and soon enough justly consigned to oblivion.

But look at Jesus’ frame of reference. It is the arche - the beginning. The world before the fall, before original sin. The world that God created for man unstained by the distance between divinity and humanity, in which the dirt of our being is expertly shaped and lovingly crafted by the infinitely wise and loving Creator, and given life by the spirit of the Great Spirit Himself. For, in the Kingdom of Heaven at the end of the age, as in Eden at the creation, human beings will stand before God in His full presence, face-to-face. To enter that eternal Kingdom, it is not sufficient to conduct ourselves according to our temporal frame of reference. We must conduct our lives as if we are already in the Presence of God, for, in fact, we *are* already in the Presence of God, since Christ has torn the Veil asunder. We turn our mind, our heart, to the eternal truth, in which we drink the blood and eat the flesh of the Lamb, in which we do not live to die, but we die to live.² Living in that way, it is an absurdity to posit that what God has made one flesh, the male and the female in marriage, could be torn asunder by merely human authority. In this present age, human kingdoms reign and human beings pass from birth to the grave fully subject to their authority. In the life of the eternal Kingdom of God to which we are presently called in this earthly pilgrimage, the significance of human authority (at least to contradict, contravene, the Will of the Father) is no more effective, no more meaningful or relevant, no more real, than the shadows cast aside by the Sun at dawn each morning.

The Torah regulates the everyday life of a temporal existence doomed to die. Christ flings open the gate to an eternal life in which the action and call of God is irrevocable.

The Law may permit divorce, but Prophecy hates divorce; and prophecy is the announcement of God’s special presence, not simply what he begrudges our mortal infirmity. All the prophets attest to the Lord’s intense marital devotion to Israel. If we are to become like unto the Lord, should we be of a different mind, of a different heart, than He? As the Prophet Malachi specifically said:

This also you do: the altar of the LORD you
cover
with tears, weeping and groaning,

² Yes, that is a reference to a Stevie Wonder song. Sue me. (Please don’t sue me.)

Because he no longer regards your sacrifice
 nor accepts it favorably from your hand;
 And you say, "Why is it?" --
 Because the LORD is witness
 between you and the wife of your youth,
 With whom you have broken faith
 though she is your companion, your
 betrothed wife.
 Did he not make one being, with flesh and
 spirit:
 and what does that one require but godly
 offspring?
 You must then safeguard life that is your
 own,
 and not break faith with the wife of your
 youth.
For I hate divorce,
says the LORD, the God of Israel,
 And covering one's garment with injustice,
 says the LORD of hosts;
 You must then safeguard life that is your
 own,
 and not break faith.

(Malachi 2:13-16)

And yet we proceed from the teaching on marriage to the disciples' somewhat snide retort that it would be better not to marry at all than be irrevocably bound to your wife. Jesus subverts the sklerocardia displayed by this self-centered and self-concerned response by actually agreeing with their position, but, as ever, turning that position from the self to the Father.

Marriage *will* pass away in the Kingdom of Heaven. "At the resurrection they neither marry nor are given in marriage but are like the angels in heaven." (Matthew 22:30) Living as a Christian means living in full embrace of the Will of God, and if one chooses to marry in this world in time, that means obeying the design of becoming one flesh enunciated by the command of God before the fall. But even as the old heavens and the old earth created by God in the beginning will pass away and be replaced by the new heavens and the new earth, even the un-fallen institution of marriage, ordained by God Himself, will pass away.

In light of that truth, Jesus points to an even better way. It is good and pleasing to God if you marry and hallow that marriage as God designed. It is better if even in this present age you, "...have renounced marriage for the sake of the kingdom of heaven," (Matthew 19:12) -- that is, if you live as you will in the eternal Kingdom, like an angel totally present to, totally in service to, totally absorbed in the Essence of the Father. In essence, rather than your flesh becoming one flesh with that of another, and all the difficulties that presents and effort it involves, your spirit seeks Spirit alone and in singleminded purpose.

The Pharisees and the disciples (all men) expect marriage to serve themselves. Jesus teaches that marriage serves the Will of God, and in his Design the powerful do not use the weak for their pleasure and benefit, to be disposed of at will, but rather the weak are to be served by the powerful, for their mutual benefit in fulfillment of the Plan of God. The disciples, brilliant as

ever, immediately reject the wisdom expertly and authoritatively handed down to them by the Son of God for their spiritual edification, and crack, “Better not to get hitched at all then, am I right, Boss?” And Jesus, ever in command and never at a loss, teaches, yes, actually, you’re right, if you’re strong enough, you shouldn’t get married to a woman at all -- you should remain celibate and marry God.

The position of the world (the Pharisees and the disciples) begins at “Marriage exists for my happiness.” Jesus turns their mind to the truth that “Marriage exists for the Will of God, which is the irrevocable communion of male and female, in which the more powerful male may not dispose of the less powerful female.” The Pharisees, those outside even the Church in the world, disappear from the picture at this point, leaving only those who at least attempt to listen to Jesus’ words, his disciples. And the disciples’ sklerocardia in response to this teaching prompts Jesus’ deeper teaching, that “Marriage is not even a part of the highest design for human beings; if you really want to enter the deepest intimacy of God that is your final destiny in the New Jerusalem, you will remain celibate and serve God alone.” Which, presumably, would not make the Pharisees, nor apparently the disciples, very happy at all. We pass from “I am to be served” to “You are to serve human beings in light of God’s Will” to “If you are able, serve God alone.” We pass from the “I will not serve” of Satan to the “I will serve God alone” of the angels and the saints.

In the blessing of the children, Jesus declares again that the Kingdom of Heaven belongs to such as these, to children who, in the absence of adult protection and power, are totally powerless before every other group - before male, female, powerful, poor, free and even slave. They lack the height, physical power, and intellectual knowledge and clarity to have any effect in the world, even to defend themselves. Here, the myriad hierarchies of the Torah - the priests may only be sons of Aaron, only the tribesmen of Levi may serve in the Temple, there shall be a king to whom all the sons of Israel must be in military and economic service, males have more rights than females (all of this represented in the stratified tiers of the courts of the Temple), slavery is permitted, the rich have more rights than the poor -- the state of the world “as it really is” - the realpolitik of ‘I got mine, and you’re on your own.’ -- is blasted apart.

In this world, as in Hell, there is an anarchy, a power vacuum, in which the more powerful prey on the weaker, those without power serve and are sacrificed to those with power. In the presence of the Holiness that is God, now breaking like light over the world in the Great Unveiling, those with power serve those without power and sacrifice themselves even unto death. Again, the disciples do not understand. They are important members of an important movement. Jesus will be crowned king, establish his earthly rule, and they will be his ministers and generals, triumphantly vanquishing the pagan, disgusting, violent, nasty, filthy Romans, driving them into the sea, and making Israel great again for proud, nationalistic, God-fearing Jewish men like themselves. These children are just a nuisance, insignificant people getting in the way of their important destiny. Jesus teaches that the service of “insignificant” people is the destiny of all those who hope to have any part of his actual mission, the establishment of the eternal Kingdom.

Again, in the encounter with the rich young man, the Torah proves insufficient to attain perfection, the eternal Kingdom. The rich young man asks, “Teacher, what good must I do to gain eternal life?” Jesus responds that if you wish to enter into life, keep the commandments, listing the familiar commandments of the Decalogue and adding Leviticus’ “you shall love your neighbor as yourself” (Leviticus 19:18). The young man claims to have observed all of these and asks what he still lacks. Jesus states that if the young man wishes to be perfect, he should sell all he has, give to the poor, and follow Jesus.

Jesus does not indicate whether he agrees with the young man’s claim to have observed the whole law. In any event, as ever, there is an interesting complexity to the relationship between the Torah and Jesus. Jesus clearly states that if you wish to enter into life, enter into the eternal Kingdom, keep the commandments. So, clearly, the Torah can give life, even eternal life. And yet, no one can keep the whole law perfectly -- its demands are too stringent and our sinfulness is too great. Only Jesus, the God-Man free from sin, can and does keep the whole Torah, the whole Will of God, and not merely the instructions of Moses on Sinai, filled with compromises like divorce that had no place prior to the fall, but the eternal Command of the Father in Heaven.

Jesus passes over whether the young man has observed the whole law. He hasn’t. However punctilious he might have been, he remains a sinner, with an imperfect moral record, with times of disobedience to the full requirements of God’s instructions. Jesus attains to his kingship, his *basileia*, through steadfast and total obedience to the Command of the Father, the Father’s Torah, in His Way to the Cross. The young man’s decent-by-worldly-standards, partial but naturally imperfect following of the Torah, like that of even righteous kings like David, Hezekiah, and Josiah, can never attain to eternal life. For the young man, as for all human beings, to attempt to keep the Torah as a path to eternal life is to attempt to jump a wide chasm -- only Jesus has, will, or could jump the chasm, keep the whole Torah perfectly. And it is only by following Jesus, by becoming incorporated into the Body of Christ, that the saving righteousness of Christ in observing the whole Torah can be imputed to us and serve as justification to enter eternal life.

As Father Robert S. Smith preaches, the whole career of Jesus is to live one authentic human life. That one authentic human life, conceived free from sin and lived free of sin, by the dynamic force of its very deepest nature, by the truth of the structure of its substance, necessarily fulfills the promises of the Lord in Scripture, in Moses and the prophets. The Son is eternally begotten of the Father and heir not only to every spiritual gift contained within (because consequent to) the Divine Nature but heir to the Spirit of the Father Himself -- *what the Father really is at bottom, inside, within the deepest inner room of His ineffably profound interiority*. That Son -- the one and only Son of God -- condescends to abandon the purely spiritual, and, like the son who “abandons his father and mother and cleaves to his wife and the two of them become one flesh,” (Genesis 2:24), abandons the Temple of Heaven and the consortium of His Singular and wholly sufficient Parent and their abode within the transcendent Holy of Holies, the Father, and cleaves to the material, the physical, becoming flesh and thereby becoming one flesh with the whole race of man, of all humanity.

The Son takes on human form, becomes absorbed in human nature and subject to the human condition, which is not some abstraction but truly makes Him *one flesh* with each human being who accepts Him. Thus the Bridegroom, the Anointed One of God, cleaves unto the Bride of the human race, spiritually marrying all of humanity, *human flesh* (human nature), just as the Lord had specially and specifically married the nation of Israel in the desert at Sinai. Both marriages are covenants, the Old and the New Covenants. Yet this is not all abstraction, but, in truth, the very opposite of abstraction, the most concrete of realities, by comparison with which all our material certainties are but vain and fleeting shadows. And the Son is not just *some* Deity, *some* Divine Essence, some free-floating spiritual force, but the Son is the Son *of the Father*. As Son of the Father, the Son inherits all that the Father has, and, unlike a human father whose life fails and leaves but possessions, the eternally Living Father gives what is most His. He does not merely give spiritual powers -- magic powers, *flight!*, *telekinesis!*, *clairvoyance!* -- but THE SPIRIT which is the source of all power.

Thus, necessarily sharing the same Spirit as the Father, the Son becomes subject to the marriage commitment of the Father, as, in the Resurrection and ultimate validation of the Son, the Father becomes subject to the marriage commitment of the Son. In His incarnation, the Son enters into the vows of the Father's marriage, that is, becomes bound to the promises of the Father to Israel. The core of the Father's promise to Israel is the blessing of a Davidic King, sent by God, with power and authority, who will bring salvation: rest and freedom from all Israel's enemies, an authentic and blessed national life governed by the Torah, and the filling of the whole world with the acceptance of the presence and wisdom of the Lord.

Those who attempt to refute Christianity simply on the basis of that last sentence still don't get the whole "eternal frame of reference" thing. God's promises aren't fulfilled in the point of view of human beings, but, naturally, in the point of view of God, and of Him alone. By becoming bound to the promise of the Father, the Son *becomes* the promise of the Father, and necessarily becomes the *promised one, the chosen one, the anointed one, the Messiah*, the Christ. Thus the authentic human life that the Son must live is that of the Christ, which is not some general, vague, maybe New Agey, maybe philosophical kind of wisdom teacher interchangeable with Zoroaster, Buddha, Plato, Marcus Aurelius, Kant, Hegel, Schopenhauer, Nietzsche, or Freud, much less Deepak Chopra or Oprah.

(For all of you who love Oprah, read this: "Are you ready to create the life you've always dreamed of? All you can imagine or desire is available to you, right here and now. Join Oprah & Deepak to tap into your true power to co-create your best and most meaningful life. In this transformative 3-week journey, Oprah & Deepak reveal the secrets to attracting all the love, success, and happiness you desire. Your transformation begins on 11/3/14 in Oprah & Deepak's all-new 21-Day Meditation Experience, Energy of Attraction. It's easy and free to embark on this life-changing journey! Register now at <http://www.oprah.com/own/first-look-deepak-chopras-21-day-meditation-challenge-video#ixzz4hBSlvGjv>.

Or don't do that. Really, *don't do things like that!*)

The life that the Christ must live is the life of the Messianic King that the Father had preordained according to His most perfect set Plan and foreknowledge. For reasons known to

the Father alone, that meant that the Son incarnated as the man, the infant, Jesus, Yeshua, Joshua, “God Saves”, son of the woman Mary and entrusted to the care of Joseph, son of David.

The three barriers to entering into the mystery, and truth, of Christ’s Apocalypse, his saving love for us, are (1) Disbelief, (2) Failure of Discipline, and (3) Sklerocardia.

Christ, the revelation of the mystery of God, never fails to believe, never fails to maintain discipline, and never has any taint of a withered heart.

Yet Christ Jesus was tempted to all those things. Jesus was tempted to disbelieve that the Father loved him and would raise him from the dead. Jesus was tempted to go his own way, using his charisma and supernatural power for his own pleasure and satisfaction, rather than going the mournful way of death that is the Way of the Cross. Jesus was tempted to hardness of heart, to have a withered heart that beat only for himself, that was a coffin in which his own self could rest easy and undisturbed, untouched by the unyielding, stringent demands of his All-Holy Father.

The mystery of Jesus is that he entered the mystery of God. To enter God, who is Holiness, one must be totally holy. Sin is distance from God, the absence of holiness. So Jesus could only enter the mystery of God by living without sin. Yet Jesus could only save the human race by becoming one with human flesh. And to become one with human flesh in this fallen world means to be subject to sin. It does not mean that you will necessarily sin; for if you sinned necessarily, you would not be freely sinning, and if you did not sin freely, it would not be sin in the first place. To be subject to sin simply means to be tempted to sin. Each day of Jesus’ life was a temptation to sin, and His Crucifixion and His Descent into Hell were the ultimate temptations to sin. For Jesus on the Cross was most tempted to use his power to turn his pain and mockery upside down into revenge and triumph. Jesus was no masochist. He is the King of Israel and is forever the Son of God. The rebuke of the Cross seared his just self-regard, inflicting a mammoth spiritual wound that cried out for redress. Yet Jesus vindicated His Sonship through calling to God alone for redress, rather than using His power, in disobedience to the Will of God, to set things straight.

Likewise, in Hell, as Jesus vanquished every sin, Jesus was tempted to disobey the Father in order to regain the Felicity that was rightly his as the Son of God, rather than suffer the Hells of sinners when he himself had never sinned. Yet again, to the very end, and to the utmost, Jesus never gives in to pain or indignation or fear or despair. Jesus’ trust in the Father is indomitable, and it ensures that Jesus will perfectly enter the mystery of God, on His own merits. Jesus was justified on the basis of good works. Jesus justified Himself and vindicated Himself through his own native and inherent grace, which was never lost through sin. That grace is the gift of the Father, and Jesus’ faith in the Father ensured that Jesus never lost that grace through sin. But Jesus’ faith in the Father only ensured that Jesus would remain righteous (totally obedient to the Father). Jesus’ righteousness justified Him as the Son of the Father. And Jesus’ righteousness glorifies the Father, for it reveals and verifies the Father’s inner nature: His total and eternal Love. As Jesus says in prayer before his arrest:

Father, the hour has come. Give glory to your son, so that your son may glorify you, just as you gave him authority over all people, so that he may give eternal life to all you gave him.

Now this is eternal life, that they should know you, the only true God, and the one whom you sent, Jesus Christ. I glorified you on earth by accomplishing the work that you gave me to do. Now glorify me, Father, with you, with the glory that I had with you before the world began.

(John 17:1b-5)

Jesus' work is to obey the Father, which is the sum and summit of Righteousness. The Father's Will for Jesus is to offer the gift of grace to sinners, to those trapped by sin, death, and damnation. The salvation afforded by Jesus glorifies God's nature as Love. Jesus then asks that the Father glorify him in return, raising Jesus from an undeserved death, sin, and Hell to new and eternal life.

Glory is the English word used to translate the Greek word "doxa" which means "favor". Jesus' work of obedience gives favor to the Father by validating the Father's inner nature, His Truth as God, who is Love. Likewise, Jesus asks that the Father be faithful to him in return, by validating His Sonship.

The mystery of the Incarnation, Crucifixion and Resurrection is the mystery of the Trinity. It is the mystery of how the Son inheres within the Father and the Father inheres within the Son. It is the mystery of their common Spirit, their shared Inner Life of Total Love, Complete Self-Gift. Specifically, the mystery of Jesus' life and ministry and death in this world is the mystery of how the Trinity responds to iniquity, to the mystery of evil. The depths of the mystery of the Trinity is the mystery of God: the mystery of love. And the heart of love is gratitude: the giving of the gift and the return of the gift.

The Father gives Jesus the gift of His Sonship, and the Son returns that gift in His obedience unto death, even death on a cross. That cycle of gift and return of the gift is the bond of gratitude that makes up the substance of love.

Only life can vanquish death, and only love can conquer hate. Only the Son's obedience and the Father's fidelity can create the gratitude that is the core of the Spirit. And only the Spirit of the Father and the Son, the Spirit of Christ, can save sinners from damnation.

The other-directedness of the Father and the Son alone can save a sinner from the vortex of selfishness that makes up the matrix of sin.

Turning sinners (i.e. the whole human race) from their selfishness *to* the self-gift of the Son is the *only* way to come to the Father, for the Father is Holy Love, and nothing tainted by any failure of self-gift, any whiff of selfishness, can ascend unto Him.

Like Jesus, sinners must walk the Way of the Cross. Yet now they have the Risen Christ Himself to walk with them, with the Spirit as their indomitable Advocate. Those who *turn* to walk that Way of the Cross become Jesus' disciples: students and imitators of Jesus.

The first disciples that Jesus called in His earthly ministry were subjected to the same temptations that Jesus was subjected to. Yet, as sinners, they stumbled, and sinned.

The disciples succumbed to disbelief, lack of discipline, and sklerocardia again and again and again over the course of Jesus' earthly ministry.

Peter displayed the disbelief that prevents any life of faith, hope, and love when he fell into the water. Peter saw Jesus walking on the water, asked to be given the power to imitate Jesus, and, after Jesus called him, took a couple steps on the water, and then promptly fell in after a gust of wind frightened him. After rescuing Peter, Jesus asks, “O you of little faith, why did you doubt?” (Matthew 14:31b)

Yet, even after confessing that Jesus is the messiah, the son of God, Peter is not freed from disbelief. This confession of belief by Peter is immediately followed by Peter rebuking Jesus for making the first prediction of the Passion (Jesus’ way to death). Peter believes to some extent, but the heart of that “belief” is disbelief. Peter does not believe the way God desires him to do so, and thus his belief is futile. Jesus rebukes Peter, “Get behind me, Satan! You are an obstacle to me. You are thinking not as God does, but as human beings do” (Matthew 16:23).

Totally failing to believe results in falling away. You simply pack your things and go home.

The disciples kept on following Jesus, yet they did not follow in the right way. Their belief was tainted with fundamental disbelief: a fundamental failure to understand what was going on. Such a failure to understand -- to have the truth touch your heart -- will necessarily result in a failure of discipline. You will follow, but without effect, because you will not follow in the right way.

Peter displayed this continuing failure to understand in his reaction to the Transfiguration of Jesus. St. Matthew writes:

After six days Jesus took Peter, James, and John his brother, and led them up a high mountain by themselves.

And he was transfigured before them; his face shone like the sun and his clothes became white as light.

And behold, Moses and Elijah appeared to them, conversing with him.

Then Peter said to Jesus in reply, “Lord, it is good that we are here. If you wish, I will make three tents here, one for you, one for Moses, and one for Elijah.”

While he was still speaking, behold, a bright cloud cast a shadow over them, then from the cloud came a voice that said, “This is my beloved Son, with whom I am well pleased; listen to him.”

When the disciples heard this, they fell prostrate and were very much afraid.

But Jesus came and touched them, saying, “Rise, and do not be afraid.”

And when the disciples raised their eyes, they saw no one else but Jesus alone.

(17:1-8)

Peter shows precisely zero understanding in this great moment of revelation, in which Jesus’ Divine Nature is announced, and His Kingship, which is the fulfillment of Law and Prophecy, is affirmed.

Peter's contribution to this drama was to offer to build Jesus, Moses, and Elijah tents to celebrate the Feast of Tabernacles. Peter is looking backward and superficially. Jesus is doing something new, not reenacting old victories, but accomplishing a final victory over sin and death.

Peter, like all the disciples, are blind: they cannot see what is set right before their eyes.

Jesus indicates this after he healed the boy afflicted with a demon in Matthew 17:14-21. The disciples fail to thrust the demon from this afflicted child. They ask Jesus why they failed. He responds very simply, "Because of your little faith. Amen, I say to you, if you have faith the size of a mustard seed, you will say to this mountain, 'Move from here to there,' and it will move. Nothing will be impossible for you" (20).

Yet even an exorcism is impossible for these disciples. These disciples cannot even be said to be half-believers, because Jesus says that their faith is smaller than a mustard seed, the smallest of all the seeds. They quite simply have no faith worth speaking of. Their belief is useless. Worthless. Tinier than a speck.

All the devotion of human flesh, absent the saving power of the Resurrection, is devoid of any power whatsoever.

Not only is the flesh, of itself, unable to save itself from death and Hell, it is unable to understand. The corrupted human flesh cannot see the most basic truth of anything.

The passage immediately following the healing of a boy with a demon is the second prediction of the Passion (Matthew 17:22-23). St. Matthew writes:

As they were gathering in Galilee, Jesus said to them, "The Son of Man is to be handed over to men, and they will kill him, and he will be raised on the third day." And they were overwhelmed with grief.

The disciples do not merely mourn the fact that Jesus will have to suffer a trial and torment beyond all recognition. The disciples fear (and mourn) the total destruction of their project, of their life together. Yet Jesus' condemnation and atonement are the entire reason He is with them in the first place. The disciples are totally blind. They are completely bereft of understanding. Their flawed belief -- their non-believing "belief" -- has not only rendered them impotent, but foolish.

We can see the sharp contrast between Jesus' course and the disciples' course. Jesus walks the way of faith *because he can see*, because he has faith, because he is without sin, and, thus, there is no distance between him and God.

The disciples blunder because they are blind, because their faith is dead, because they are in the death of their sins, and, thus, there is a chasm between them and God.

Only Jesus can bridge that chasm, only Jesus can go that distance.

The Greeks had their mythical heroes, their strongmen and daring warriors.

Jesus is the truth beyond their lies. He is the Hercules of faith, the Atlas of obedience to the Will of the Father. Jesus does not shrug. He does not shirk His duty to the world, His calling by the Father.

Jesus believes, and perseveres.

The disciples have no belief worth speaking of, and so they meander, wandering in blindness, and, ultimately, abandon Jesus at his darkest hour.

Jesus' belief becomes perseverance, and His perseverance becomes the love necessary to endure the Way of the Cross and suffer the Place of the Skull, Golgotha.

The disciples' pseudo-belief, their less-than-almost-nothing belief, collapses into impotence, and shows itself in all its wretchedness when the disciples run for their lives at Jesus' arrest.

To believe and persevere leads to life, for belief and perseverance well up from within the spirit, rising to the Spirit, the Father of all, the source of life.

St. John writes:

Jesus answered and said to her [the woman at the well], "Everyone who drinks this water will be thirsty again; but whoever drinks the water I shall give will never thirst; the water I shall give will become in him a spring of water welling up to eternal life."

(4:13-14)

The water that Jesus *shall* give is the water that springs from his side when he is lanced by the Roman soldier (John 19:34). That water is the baptism of Jesus' death and Resurrection. Just as the Spirit descended on Jesus in His baptism, so too the Spirit descends on each Christian in his or her baptism.

And so too, in the waters of that baptism, each Christian is joined to Jesus' death, so that in the Christian's death, he or she is born to new and eternal life in Christ, which can and will be raised by the Father on the Last Day.

That water of the Spirit -- of eternal life -- waters the spirit, giving life to the heart, to the soul, so that human life can be all the Father intended it to become.

Only those who bathe in the water of baptism can have their sins washed away, and only those whose sins have been forgiven can believe and persevere. And only those who believe and persevere can drink of the water of eternal life.

St. John in Revelation writes:

Then the angel showed me the river of life-giving water, sparkling like crystal, flowing from the throne of God and of the Lamb down the middle of the street. On either side of the river grew the tree of life that produces fruit twelve times a year, once each month; the leaves of the trees serve as medicine for the nations. Nothing accursed will be found there anymore. The throne of God and of the Lamb will be in it, and his servants will worship him. They will look upon his face, and his name will be on their foreheads. Night will be no more, nor will they need light from lamp or sun, for the Lord God shall give them light, and they shall reign forever and ever.

(22:1-4)

Belief and perseverance attain salvation. Salvation attains the life-giving water. The life-giving water nourishes the tree of life, whose fruit brings eternal life, the eternal life lost in the Garden of Eden. The Tree of Life's leaves are a medicine, which restores and sustains health. Watered, fed, and healed, human nature can finally look upon the face of God, and, in looking on His Face, each Christian has the name of the Lord upon his forehead: each Christian is adopted by God as son and daughter.

So adopted, God is the Light of each son and daughter, each brother and sister of Christ, and in Christ. God's Light is His Presence -- His Truth. And those named as sons and daughters, enlightened with the true Light of God's Truth, reign with God forever and ever.

Water brings fruit and wholeness, and that fruit and wholeness sustain an eternal life lived in intimacy with God.

Human flesh is dirt -- it is soil molded by God, into which God breathed His Spirit. That dirt cannot be molded if it cannot cohere. Dirt can only cohere if it is wet.

The wetness of human flesh is the water of God, which is the Spirit of God.

Sin is the distance from God, that cuts human life off from being watered by the Spirit of God.

Sin desiccates the soil of human flesh. Deprived of the wetness of God's spirit, the flesh cannot help falling apart, suffering the corruption of death.

Only the Spirit of Christ, born within the spirit of each Christian, can water human flesh with the Spirit of God, giving life. This mortal flesh, stained by sin, must still die. But the spirit saved by the Spirit of Christ will be saved, and joined to a new and eternal and glorified flesh that cannot die.

Sin leads to infidelity to God and an inability to be nourished by the life that is God.

The Risen Christ offers us a way out: the life-giving water of his eternal Spirit.

Those whose hearts are receptive can be watered with the Spirit of the Risen Christ. Such receptive hearts are porous, like soil, ready to receive life-giving water from Heaven.

Hearts that are hardened are like stones, which cannot be watered. Water simply rolls off them, and the stone remains as hard as ever.

The Pharisees who ask Jesus about marriage and divorce do not really care about what Jesus has to say. They are just trying to trip him up. They want to pose a question that he is not able to answer, or can't answer well. They want to embroil him in the politics of feuding schools of rabbis. They have no interest in *listening* to his words attentively.

The rich young man *does* want to listen to Jesus. He *does* want to be attentive. And Jesus responds with attention to the young man's question. But the rich young man cannot --

will not -- *do* what Jesus tells him to do. The rich young man cannot give up his possessions. His possessions define him. They are what make him his father and mother's son. They are what bond him to his wife. The rich young man can no more give up his possessions than leave his father, mother, or wife behind. He thinks that if he gives up his wealth, mother, father, and wife, he will give up his life: all that he has, all that matters.

The rich young man wants to hear, but his heart is oriented towards things that are not God. He has placed his trust in creatures and not the Creator. He has made an idolatrous worship of the things of this world, even the best things: father, mother, and wife. Yet such idolatry, even of the best and most noble of created things, renders one's heart withered, dried up, impermeable to God's Spirit: *God's Love*.

Jesus proclaims the truth: God alone is all that matters. The Kingdom means giving up the world to obtain God. God is the pearl of great price. God is the treasure in the field, for which one sells everything one owns to buy that field (Matthew 13:44-46).

Peter displays his usual dullness in asking what will there be for those who *have* given up everything for Jesus, like him and the other disciples, who *have* just picked up and followed him.

Peter fails to understand that what they will have is God Himself, the source of all true Life.

So Jesus must enlighten them:

Jesus said to them, "Amen, I say to you that you who have followed me, in the new age, when the Son of Man is seated on his throne of glory, will yourselves sit on twelve thrones, judging the twelve tribes of Israel.

And everyone who has given up houses or brothers or sisters or father or mother or children or lands for the sake of my name will receive a hundred times more, and will inherit eternal life.

But many who are first will be last, and the last will be first.

(Matthew 19:28-30)

Those who are first in this world, those who have, will, through having the things of the world, deprive themselves of God. And those who do not have the things of the world will be empty enough to receive the gift of the Spirit, the life-giving water.

Those with position or wealth, like the Pharisees and the rich young man, imperil themselves, by being unreceptive to the Word of God, the Spirit of Christ.

Those without position or wealth, like Peter and the disciples, are free enough to take a chance on Jesus, and to have the possibility that their hearts might, eventually, become receptive to the life-giving water that Jesus shall give.

Belief and perseverance lead to a receptive heart.

Disbelief and waywardness and idolatry of anything but God lead to sklerocardia. Sklerocardia leads to dying in one's sins: and that leads to eternal Hell.

As the Prophet Ezekiel prophesied, "A new heart also will I give you, and a new spirit will I put within you: and I will take away the stony heart out of your flesh, and I will give you a heart of flesh" (36:26, KJV).

The withered heart, afflicted by sklerocardia, is a stone that is useless and dead, dead to God and dead to God's Love. It is good for nothing, other than to be flung into the abyss.

In order to give us life, and save us from Hell, God must rip out the heart of stone and place within us a new heart of flesh, fashioned after the pattern of the Sacred Heart of Jesus.

Only then can we hear God, believe in God, persevere in God's ways, and attain the life-giving water of God's Spirit.

If we fail to hear God -- if we refuse to surrender our hearts of stone, our wayward and rebellious intransigence -- then God will destroy us.

God puts before us DEATH and LIFE.

CHOOSE LIFE.

After the disciples display their sklerocardia -- their inability to truly hear and internalize God's message, even though they are listening to Him every day -- Jesus makes the third and final prediction of the Passion (Matthew 20:17-19).

Again, despite Jesus straightforwardly telling them that he is going to die and be resurrected, the disciples are still as blind as ever. They are still focused on an earthly kingdom, rather than the Kingdom of God. So, true to form, James and John, who are indeed preeminent members of the community, ask Jesus (through their mother) to sit at his right and his life when Jesus is enthroned as King of Israel (Matthew 20:20-28). Jesus assures his disciples: You have everything backwards. In the kingdoms of the world, the great rule arrogantly over the lowly. But in the Kingdom of God, the greatest -- even and especially God Himself -- is the servant of all.

The disciples' sinfulness cannot be cured through teaching or any actions. No amount of doctrine and no amount of good works will save them. They persist in their blindness. Their disbelief, their fatally flawed belief, is the blindness that makes them undisciplined, impotent, and unreceptive to the *meaning* of Jesus' words -- so they cannot have the Word within them.

Curing spiritual blindness will require Jesus' sacrifice. Only the Atonement can bridge the chasm between God's Holiness and the human race's sinfulness.

That is why just before Jesus enters Jerusalem to embrace His destiny, he heals the two blind men. St. Matthew writes:

As they left Jericho, a great crowd followed him.

Two blind men were sitting by the roadside, and when they heard that Jesus was passing by, they cried out, "[Lord,] Son of David, have pity on us!"

The crowd warned them to be silent, but they called out all the more, "Lord, Son of David, have pity on us!"

Jesus stopped and called them and said, "What do you want me to do for you?"

They answered him, "Lord, let our eyes be opened."

Moved with pity, Jesus touched their eyes. Immediately they received their sight, and followed him.

(20:29-34)

The disciples will only have their eyes opened spiritually *after* the Resurrection.

But Jesus has endured in belief, perseverance, and total receptivity to the Will of the Father. So, now, at last, Jesus can enter into Jerusalem. Jesus' fidelity to the Father sets the stage for the coming of the King into the Holy City, the City of Destiny, the coming of the Christ into the heart of the believer.

The Mystery at the heart of the Christian Faith is the mystery of Christ's Destiny, which is only finally fulfilled in the Resurrection.

And the heart of the mystery of the Resurrection is how the Transcendence of the Father is squared within the immanence of human reality, through the medium of the Son, the Christ, Jesus' Sacred Heart.

As Dante wrote in his *Paradiso*, the third part of his *Commedia*, in Canto XXXIII:

O how pale now is language and how paltry
For my conception! And for what I saw
My words are not enough to call them meager.

125 O everlasting Light, you dwell alone
In yourself, know yourself alone, and known
And knowing, love and smile upon yourself!

That middle circle which appeared in you
To be conceived as a reflected light,
After my eyes had studied it a while,

130 Within itself and in its coloring
Seemed to be painted with our human likeness
So that my eyes were wholly focused on it.

As the geometer who sets himself
To square the circle and who cannot find,
135 For all his thought, the principle he needs,

Just so was I on seeing this new vision
I wanted to see how our image fuses
Into the circle and finds its place in it,

The Mystery of the Gospel is the Mystery of Jesus, and the Mystery of Jesus is the Mystery of how the human race inheres within the Divine Life, or doesn't.

Mystery is not woo-woo stuff. It doesn't mean: this isn't real, not like science, but just go with it....go with it because it'll make you feel good, or it's fun, or interesting. It is an acknowledgment that finite -- and *sinful!* - people like ourselves *cannot* understand the truth of the Father's inner life. We can only access it through faith, and not by sight; "we walk by faith and not by sight" (2 Corinthians 5:7). What for us in this world is mystery, for the Father, and His Son, in their Spirit, is as clear and plain as arithmetic.

The most inveterate atheist - all hot and itchy with how nonsensical and obscurantist and silly religion is, how it is all a welter of hogwash, fairy tales, and baseless blarney, not like the cool, steady, necessary, demonstrable, firm, fixed certainties of the latest laboratory report - will stand in the Day of the Lord's perpetual Light in a quite locked gloom and give a mournful, "Oh..." as it beholds the obviousness of the Divine Design.

Mystery is not a Deepak Chopra seminar or book. It is not an Oprah Winfrey television show or magazine article. It is not a smiling Joel Osteen promising to make all your dreams come true. It is not Donald Trump promising to make America great again. It is not the sacraments of abortion or sodomy held dear by the atheistical left. It is not the sacraments of greed and selfishness held dear by the hypocritical right. It is not Rob Bell's derangement of Christianity into "anything you would like it to mean". It is not a world gone mad, drunk on its own arrogance, deaf in the confines of its raging and deluded pride.

Mystery is the Will of God, breaking into human life, like light through the darkness, illuminating souls so that they can finally *see* themselves the way that *God* sees them.

THE RESURRECTION

The Resurrection is the deepest mystery of Christian faith. As the Resurrection is the supreme act of the glory of Divine Love, and is eternal, perfect, and endless, this homiletic exegesis of the Resurrection, to put it mildly, cannot explicate the depths of the mystery. But I hope that it sheds some light for those who seek the way to its depths.

At the outset, we can note that in the Crucifixion-Resurrection, Jesus fulfills the Our Father, the prayer he taught his disciples to pray to the Father. (I say “Crucifixion-Resurrection”, because, as Father Smith has expounded, the Resurrection is the inner meaning of the Crucifixion.)

To pray is to ask, and to ask is to reveal the intentions of one’s will, one’s heart, one’s inward spirit. Jesus fulfills the prayer of the disciples by identifying His Will with the Will of the Father. (Though, to be sure, as Jesus is the Master and Teacher, He is not Himself a disciple.) What the Father speaks, Jesus listens to and obeys. By entering into the terms of the prayer, he identifies Himself with his disciples and thus makes it possible for the disciples to become incorporated into His Body, which is the Church. Jesus acknowledges God as His Father, the One who begot Him, and thus the One from whom everything He has is given.

God is Jesus’ inheritance, and, as such, like Isaac and Jacob did in regard to their inheritance in Abraham, must live out the blessing at the core of that inheritance. It is an inheritance, a blessing, a treasure, in Heaven, not one on Earth, not one filled with human power, wealth, comfort, success, and human praise.

It is an inheritance in which the only bequest is God Himself, nothing more and nothing less. Jesus then blesses this blessing, He says YES to the Father in response to the YES (the favor, the affirmation of His chosen-ness) that the Father had spoken over Him. The blessing is the Father’s Name - it is His identity, His Spirit, in Aristotelian terms the what-it-is, the form, the definition, the differentia, what makes God God, the deepest, most ineffable core of the Divine Reality. That uncreated Blessing, that essential Reality, necessarily radiates outward in a total Kingdom, in total Lordship over all creation. That Kingdom subjects all creation to the Uncreated, thus causing the Divine Presence to penetrate the depths of all created being.

That leads to the second part of the Our Father, where the Divine Reality acknowledged in the first part now breaks into human life in this captive world, captive to Satan. The first part of the prayer glorifies God and expresses obedience to that glory. In the second part that glory manifests as the City of God, the New Jerusalem come down from heaven to the human race.

Jesus instructs us to ask for our “daily bread”. In Greek the line is Τὸν ἄρτον ἡμῶν τὸν ἐπιούσιον δὸς ἡμῖν σήμερον, which is really translated, “Give us today our ‘epiousion’ bread”. The word ‘epiousion’ is found in no other Greek text than in St. Matthew’s and St. Luke’s gospels, so its meaning must be reconstructed by scholars from context. No consensus exists on the meaning of the word: some think it means supersubstantial or supernatural, others abundant or perpetual; Catholics see a reference to the Eucharist, Protestants generally do not, some see it as referring to spiritual subsistence, others as simply a request for physical bread.

Hmm, a mysterious word at the center of the meaning of the Lord's Prayer that is a puzzle that could only conceivably be solved through the common energies of the Whole Church. Funny how that works.

First, some background on epiousion. It is a word found nowhere else in all of literature; it is not found anywhere in any Greek manuscripts, sacred or secular, other than the Gospels of Matthew and Luke. That has led most scholars and churchmen to believe that it is a neologism, a coined word invented by the author. The consensus of textual criticism has argued that the Lord's Prayer in both *Matthew* and *Luke* derives from a now lost document, a collection of Jesus' sayings, which scholars have termed Q, from the German *Quelle*, or "source". Thus this one author must have coined the word used in both the Gospels of Matthew and Luke. The continuity of the apostolic faith also supports the conclusion that one author coined the word: that one Author being God. Epiousion is an adjective form, so the noun form would be epiousios. It is a joining of the preposition "epi" as a prefix to "ousios", *epi* generally meaning "upon or fitting" and *ousios* generally translated as "substance" (it can also mean property, as in economic property or wealth). *Epi* can be defined as:

epi (a preposition) – properly, *on (upon)*, implying what "*fits*" given the "*apt* contact," building *on* the verbal idea. [1909](#) /*epi*("upon") naturally looks to the response (effect) that goes with the envisioned *contact*, i.e. its apt result ("spin-offs," effects). The precise nuance of [1909](#) (*epi*) is only determined by the *context*, and by the *grammatical case* following it – i.e. *genitive*, *dative*, or *accusative* case.³

Epiousios has traditionally been translated as "daily", but, as the consensus of biblical scholarship finds, this is a radically deficient translation. So, as a very rough beginning, we can see that transliterated the word means "aptly substantive" or "fittingly substantive".

We can remark that the common word "ousia" is not without its own ambiguities. *Ousia* is a noun formed from the verb *eimi*, which means "to be". Thus, Aristotle used the word in his analysis of "being" in his *Categories*. So, substance here does not necessarily mean material substance, like a drug or a brick, as our modern minds hear the word, but the substance or being meant is much closer to how we use the word "reality" to describe the most general category of what does or can exist.

Parousia is a Greek word that belonged to the language prior to the writing of the Gospels, and it primarily means presence (as in the literal presence of a person or thing), arrival, or an official visit by some important dignitary, like a king or the Roman Emperor. The word is a compound of "para" and "ousia", "para" in Greek meaning, variously, "beside, near, issuing from, against, contrary to", originating from the PIE root *per-* "forward".⁴ It is also defined as:

3844 *pará* (a preposition) – properly, *close beside*. [3844](#) /*pará*("from closely alongside") introduces someone (something) as very "*close beside*."

³ <http://biblehub.com/greek/1909.htm>

⁴ See the Online Etymology Dictionary

3844 (*pará*) an *emphatic* "from," means "from *close* beside" ("alongside"). It stresses *nearness* (closeness) which is often not conveyed in translation. 3844 (*pará*) is typically theologically significant, even when used as a *prefix* (i.e. in *composition*). 3844 (*pará*) usually adds the overtone, "from *close beside*" (implying *intimate* participation) and can be followed by the *genitive, dative, or accusative* case – each one conveying a distinct nuance.⁵

So, as the coined word *epiousios* indicates "fitting reality", so the common word *parousia* indicates a "near reality", as in "right beside you", "with you".

The arrival of Roman Emperors traveling through various locales within the empire were celebrated with advent coins, marking the entrance of the Emperor as a propitious and wondrous event, in which the divinity of the Emperor's reality penetrated the everyday needs and concerns of the people. The Emperor was considered a god, and his advent meant that a god was with his people. Advent meant god was with you, just as the Hebrew name Emmanuel means "God is with us".

Jesus is talking about manna when he refers to the "epiousion" bread. The Israelites, while wandering in the desert, traveled towards the Promised Land, which was told to be filled with the satisfaction of milk and honey. Yet each hard day the people suffered the deprivation of hunger, toil, and uncertainty. It is an apt type, or symbol, of each of our earthly lives, distanced from the totality and fullness of the Divine Life. Responsive to the Israelites' plight, the Lord provided a supernatural food to assuage their hunger: manna. Manna was bread from heaven, which appeared to the Israelites and could be gathered up for that particular day's needs, but which could not be stored. It could not be accumulated and lived upon like assets in a bank or collectibles or one's reputation and notoriety. Manna satisfied that particular day's needs, but no person could gather up an abundance of it such that their hoard could become their security: the Lord alone was to be Israel's security.

We can see an allusion to Exodus 16:4, "Then the Lord said to Moses, 'I will now rain down bread from heaven for you. Each day the people are to go out and gather their daily portion; thus will I test them, to see whether they follow my instructions or not.'"⁶ In the Lord's Prayer, *epiousion* is an adjective modifying the noun "arton", translated as bread, more exactly a loaf of bread, something baked, (constituted), and then broken apart to be consumed. Jesus tells us what kind of *arton*, what kind of meal, we must pray for. When Jesus says "give us this day our 'epiousion' bread", he means (one of His meanings) "give us whatever we really need today" -- whatever physical things we might need, food or shelter, etc., whatever emotional support or people we might really need, whatever spiritual support, whatever inspiration from or connection to God that is required to get through the day without despair or sin.

Jesus means that we should ask the Father to sustain us in our journey back to the Father. But sustain us with only just enough, with only what we really need, and not so much that we will take the gifts given to us from God and make them our actual foundation *instead* of God. Jesus implicitly warns us not to covet so much physical, emotional, and spiritual abundance that

⁵ <http://biblehub.com/greek/3844.htm>

⁶ See Evans, Craig A., *Matthew* (2012), 147.

we engage in the idolatry of placing our real trust in the gifts rather than the Giver (God). God is to be our Abundance, not the things of this world.

Jesus knows, as he says during the Sermon on the Mount, that human beings require certain basic necessities, but he also knows that those things cannot give life. Without the Kingdom of God and His righteousness every benefit, security, and satisfaction, however much they may be enjoyed today, can only lead to ruination in the end. “Do not worry about tomorrow; tomorrow will take care of itself. Sufficient for a day is its own evil” (Matthew 6:34). The greatest challenge facing every human being each day is not to fill your belly, as horrific as it is not to be full, but to avoid the daily ruination of everyday sin, because the flesh (sarx) can be raised up, but a spirit without Christ and His righteousness will be condemned to eternal ruination, where not only will you suffer the pains of starvation, but the pains of spiritual obliteration.

As St. Paul says, “No trial has come to you but what is human. God is faithful and will not let you be tried beyond your strength; but with the trial he will also provide a way out, so that you may be able to bear it” (1 Corinthians 10:13). Every day in the world, every day of human life, is a trial, is a temptation to sin. God knows that we cannot be totally without any consolation or grace or just satisfaction and hope to avoid sin, especially the sin of despair. One translation for the “epi” that forms part of “epiousion” means “apt”, as in apt to a situation, fitted to an occasion or purpose, thus making epiousion “aptly substantive” or “appropriate”. Jesus teaches us to pray that God give us the bread -- the circumstances in the world, material, social, and spiritual -- that make it most possible to resist sin. We pray that the trials in our lives do not make it truly impossible to access God, either through having so little that we abandon God through despair or so much that we abandon God through pride.

As St. Cyprian wrote on the subject in his *Treatise on the Lord's Prayer*:

Thus also the blessed apostle [St. Paul] admonishes us, giving substance and strength to the steadfastness of our hope and [faith](#): “*We brought nothing,*” says he, “*into this world, nor indeed can we carry anything out. Having therefore food and raiment, let us be herewith content. But they that will be rich fall into [temptation](#) and a snare, and into many and hurtful [lusts](#), which drown men in perdition and destruction. For the love of money is the root of all [evil](#); which while some [coveted](#) after, they have made shipwreck from the [faith](#), and have pierced themselves through with many sorrows.*” [1 Timothy 6:7](#)⁷

This insight about epiousion referring to a manna-like aspect to “our daily bread” helps act as a prism through which we can see the unity of the different possible translations. Our epiousion bread is “bread for today”, “daily”, “needful bread”, “supersubstantial”, “superessential”, Eucharistic, “necessary for existence”, “lasting”, “perpetual”, “abundant”. It is just enough of whatever we might need today in this world -- whether that is a slice of bread, a cup of water, a job, a healed relationship, insight, inspiration, the Word Himself -- that will make it possible for us to arrive at the Apocalypse ready for the Resurrection of the righteous rather than that of the damned, ready to enter into the supernatural and eternal Feast in which Jesus, the

⁷ <http://www.newadvent.org/fathers/050704.htm>

Logos, the Word, feeds us in overflowing abundance forever. What is just enough today, is, seen from the perspective of eternity, just the flip side of perpetual abundance in Christ.

The earthly pilgrimage is a journey from the epiousia to the Parousia. The “epiousia” is our experience of Jesus every day in our everyday lives, reigning within our spirits as King of our hearts, while the kingdoms of the world rage around us, rise and fall. The Parousia is the fulfillment of our epiousia, the Apocalypse of our many epiousias, the great Unveiling of our faiths, as either genuine, realized in a life of good works and grace, or counterfeit, bereft of the inner reality required by an infinitely interior God. We pray that the inner reality of our everyday lives be revealed on the Last Day in the Apocalypse as genuinely stamped with the imprimatur of the Spirit of Christ, the Word of God, the Bread of Life.

We pray that our being of today will be found to have life in the Being of all eternity, that the “I Am” of Christ that we cling to today will be unveiled at the Apocalypse as the Great “I AM” forever.

As St. Paul writes in 2 Corinthians 4:7-18 -

But we hold this treasure in earthen vessels, that the surpassing power may be of God and not from us. We are afflicted in every way, but not constrained; perplexed, but not driven to despair; persecuted, but not abandoned; struck down, but not destroyed; always carrying about in the body the dying of Jesus, so that the life of Jesus may also be manifested in our body. For we who live are constantly being given up to death for the sake of Jesus, so that the life of Jesus may be manifested in our mortal flesh.

So death is at work in us, but life in you. Since, then, we have the same spirit of faith, according to what is written, “I believed, therefore I spoke,” we too believe and therefore speak, knowing that the one who raised the Lord Jesus will raise us also with Jesus and place us with you in his presence. Everything indeed is for you, so that the grace bestowed in abundance on more and more people may cause the thanksgiving to overflow for the glory of God.

Therefore, we are not discouraged; rather, although our outer self is wasting away, our inner self is being renewed day by day. For this momentary light affliction is producing for us an eternal weight of glory beyond all comparison, as we look not to what is seen but to what is unseen; for what is seen is transitory, but what is unseen is eternal.

Yet there is an essential difference between the epiousion bread and the manna in Exodus: While the manna, the bread from heaven during the exodus could not be gathered up and stored, as Father Smith has preached, Jesus is the bread from heaven that *can* be gathered up and stored for the next day. In that sense, the bread spoken of in the Lord’s Prayer is lasting, perpetual: it doesn’t go bad and rot like the manna in the wilderness. He who eats of Jesus shall never be hungry, and he who drinks of Him shall never thirst. The feelings and “inspirations” we feel in our consciousness may, and clearly are, only adapted to the day’s needs, but the true, mysterious, hidden reality of Christ as Word in our spirit accumulates over our earthly pilgrimage as a treasure trove in Heaven.

Isaiah prophesies in 40:6-8 about the permanence of God and the transience of man. (This passage immediately follows the passage that St. Luke used to describe the vocation of St.

John the Baptist in announcing the revelation of the Christ, “A voice cries out: In the desert prepare the way of the LORD!” Isaiah 40:3.) Isaiah proclaims:

A voice says, “Cry out!”
I answer, “What shall I cry out?”
“All mankind is grass,
and all their glory like the flower of the
field.
The grass withers, the flower wilts,
when the breath of the LORD blows upon
it.
[So then, the people is the grass.]
Though the grass withers and the flower
wilts,
the word of our God stands forever.”

This New American Bible translation of the Scripture is seriously deficient. I use this translation throughout (for the most part) because it is used in the liturgy of the Catholic Church, of which I am a member, but it often obscures the richness of the biblical meaning. On the positive side, it usually presents the Scriptural text in a way that is more easily understandable to the average modern lay reader. The word translated as “mankind” is the Hebrew בְּשָׂרָא which means “flesh”, as in “all flesh”, both evocative of each person’s individual flesh and blood and the whole of humanity as a corporate reality as distinct from the spiritual and from the Divine Majesty. The word translated as “glory” is actually חֶסֶד which means “chesed”, or the loving-kindness of the LORD, of YHWH, which is His loyalty to the Covenant made with Israel at Sinai. It is God’s radical fidelity to the marriage covenant made with the people of Israel, a zealous and committed devotion that endures regardless of the people’s maddening harlotry.⁸

The people of Israel and Judah believed that the Covenant, and God’s fidelity to it, meant that their kingdom could never be destroyed, and the Judahites especially believed that Jerusalem, the City of David, and the Temple were inviolate. That is, they believed that no foreign invader could ever occupy Jerusalem or destroy the Temple. It was like they thought a magic forcefield insulated them from the ravages that other nations had suffered at the hands of cruel barbarians like the Assyrians and Babylonians. They believed all this because they had been assured through the Covenant with God made at Sinai. The Lord would always be faithful, loyal, to his people and His Temple. And for centuries, this belief held up: Jerusalem never fell to an invader such that it was wiped out, the Temple ruined, and the nation shattered. There had been wars and raids and humiliations in the past, but never the final destruction of Judah’s national life.

But they forgot that a Covenant requires two parties who have mutual fidelity. God being the infinitely greater will be exceedingly good-natured, impossibly slow to anger, but if the other party, the people, proves wholly devoid of *any* fidelity, then there is no marriage at all. It is one thing if, in a marriage, one spouse constantly forgives the wrongdoing of the other spouse. But if the wrongdoer has *no* fidelity to the forgiving spouse whatsoever, it isn’t a forgiving marriage

⁸ The revised NAB has updated the translation from “glory” to “loyalty”, which is a more useful approximation of chesed.

but an empty charade. And God has no use for charades. In the event of a total charade, instigated by a stubborn refusal to live by the Covenant in an authentic way, the Lord will abandon the no-covenant, the no-marriage, the empty charade. And so, in 587 or 586 BC, the Babylonians crushed the Kingdom of Judah, ravaging Jerusalem, obliterating the Temple, and destroying its existence as a nation.

So, even though all the action, so to speak, of the Covenant loyalty rests with the Lord -- it gets all the attention, rightfully and necessarily so -- the people also require their own chesed, their own minuscule particle of fidelity and loyalty and giving-a-damn. Even though the whole experience of God's intimacy with Israel revolves around the Lord's chesed, His chesed requires some *real* subject capable of receiving it -- a partner with even the tiniest amount of corresponding chesed.

This is what Isaiah means when he writes that the chesed of all flesh is like the flower of the field which wilts when the breath of the Lord blows upon it. When God tries to send His Spirit, His Chesed, unto His supposed partner, Israel, Flesh, the chesed of the people fails: it cannot be a proper subject for His Chesed -- the people's fidelity is so much a charade, so utterly faithless and unreal, that even God's infinite mercy and zealous devotion cannot redeem it.

But, "Though the grass withers and the flower wilts, the word of our God stands forever." *Even after* leaving, God will *still* return to his spouse should she repent of her wickedness and re-commit to living the Covenant marriage. While God will not put up with a charade, God's offer of a Covenant remains an indestructible promise, as the promise, the Word, of the Lord is as eternal and imperishable as He. God sits by the phone waiting for a call, and if the people can muster even the most minimal chesed of their own, just making a simple phone call, He will respond with rapturous generosity. (*See* the Parable of the Prodigal Son, Luke 15:11-32).

The exterior flesh of this our mortal lives withers and all its accomplishments and meanings, like the flower of the grass, wilts, fails of life, and fails of life *when the breath of the LORD blows upon it* - when the Spirit of the Lord blows away all that is inimical to it, when the Great Apocalypse of the SPIRIT devastates and finally condemns all that is in opposition to its All Holy Will. And yet, though the grass withers and the flower wilts -- though this flesh we inhabit dies and all our vanities fade to oblivion, the word of our God, the Christ Jesus, stands forever. The Spirit does not blow away the Christ, but validates Him, and we pray that after our mortal oblivion that, within our deepest selves, or true spirit, we can and will stand with Christ and in Christ forever.

We trust that even though we have led shameful, dirty, filthy little lives of self-seeking, if we have within us even the tiniest seed of our own chesed, our own fidelity to the Word that is Christ, in this day in the world in our everyday lives, *which itself is only a gift of God's grace, his epiousios bread* for which we pray each day, then through the amazing grace of God's infinite mercy, that little seed will explode into the fullness of the Heavenly Banquet when the Word of the Lord is fulfilled on the Last Day.

We pray that our little faiths, our little cheseds, are epiousion: that they are apt, such that, at the Apocalypse, the Spirit of God can inflame them into an eternal conflagration of Holy Love.

Thus with Isaiah in the joy of the Father's Love we too shall proclaim:

Go up onto a high mountain,
Zion, herald of glad tidings;
Cry out at the top of your voice,
Jerusalem, herald of good news!
Fear not to cry out
and say to the cities of Judah:
Here is your God!
Here comes with power
the Lord God,
who rules by his strong arm;
Here is his reward with him,
his recompense before him.
Like a shepherd he feeds his flock;
in his arms he gathers the lambs,
Carrying them in his bosom,
and leading the ewes with care.

(Isaiah 40:9-11)

As Jesus says:

The gatekeeper [God] opens it [the Gate] for him [Jesus], and the sheep hear his voice, as he calls his own sheep by name and leads them out. When he has driven out all his own, he walks ahead of them, and the sheep follow him, because they recognize his voice.

I am the good shepherd, and I know mine and mine know me, just as the Father knows me and I know the Father; and I will lay down my life for the sheep. I have other sheep that do not belong to this fold. These also I must lead, and they will hear my voice, and there will be one flock, one shepherd. This is why the Father loves me, because I lay down my life in order to take it up again. No one takes it from me, but I lay it down on my own. I have power to lay it down, and power to take it up again. This command I have received from my Father.

(John 10:3-4, 14-18)

The Mystery of Evil

The mystery of God is the mystery of His infinite depths. The mystery of evil is the mystery of its shocking, abnormal, unbelievable superficiality. God is as multi-dimensional as Satan and his children are uni-dimensional.

That is why the Temple of the LORD in Jerusalem was a Temple of interiority, of deeper and deeper concentric circles of sanctity, culminating and penetrating into the Holy of Holies, restricted but for the feast of Yom Kippur, and then only accessible by the Kohen ha-Gadol, the High Priest, and only accessible to beseech the LORD for the forgiveness of the people's sins. And that is why the pagan temples of the ancient Near East, like in Mesopotamia, and, (European civilization found), the pagan temples of the pre-Columbian Western Hemisphere, were ziggurats, temples ascending level by level into the sky.

It palpably presents to us the difference between God and sinful humanity, the differences in how God thinks and how human beings think. God's truth is ever deeper, ever richer, ever truer, an ever unfolding realization of Its Abundant Plenitude. Satan and those enlightened by his dark light think that all that separates them from Ultimate Power, the Divine Nature, is but one step higher. They think that the difference between God and God's creations are quantitative in nature rather than qualitative, really accessible to anyone rather than radically mysterious to created beings (qua their nature as created). They see that the nature of God is power, and desire -- crave -- the Divine Nature, but they can only imagine reaching higher, rather than reaching deeper within. And, indeed, they cannot reach deeper within, for they have no depths.

Satan is like a mirror that is totally flat and is nothing but surface, but that can create the look of something much deeper.

The problem with Satan is that he's a really *good* impostor. He's not immediately obvious. He's not a valley girl who can't write in anything but emoji. He's a thinking, sentient robot that can recite the deepest, most moving poetry, that can simulate the most passionate and tender love-making, emulate all the solicitousness that could make any woman fall single-mindedly and obsessively in love -- and not feel any of it. When temporal beings try to discuss the eternal, we necessarily traffic in metaphor. The metaphor of the robot is limited, and might elicit the question, "Then why didn't God just give Satan emotions?" The issue is not emotions. Satan has an emotional life; the issue is superficiality: the only thing he feels is himself. Satan is the ultimate sociopath.

And we might ask, "Then why didn't God just not make Satan a sociopath?" Again, as neurology and psychology ever more exactly teach us, psychological metaphors, such as the metaphor of the sociopath, are also limited. God did not create Lucifer a sociopath. But He did create Lucifer as a spirit, and, as Hegel teaches us, the absolute essence of spirit is freedom. In his freedom, Lucifer chose himself, and himself alone.

The difficulty of penetrating the mystery of God is for paltry, grubby, empty little mortal human beings like ourselves to see, to really comprehend, His endless generosity. It shocks our narrow consciences like, (but only *like*), St. Maximilian Kolbe's volunteering to die in the place of another man. The difficulty of penetrating the mystery of evil is for people endowed in this world with God's gifts, with his "multi-dimensionality", (again, only ever metaphors here), to grasp, to really *get* Satan's total blankness, his total one-dimensional surface flatness. Really seeing the mystery of evil, (not that we would want to), shocks the soul like living 40 years of a rapturously romantic and fulfilled marriage with a man out of a romance novel -- and then waking up one day to find out that he was actually a serial killer who had killed 100 people, had no capacity to feel other people, and never loved you at all.

Satan can describe all the mysteries of God's inner life, and leave you spellbound, and then, as he is finished and you wipe the tears from your eyes, laugh at them with cackling contempt. He can paint a picture of God's infinite beauty, and then wipe his snot on it.

God is the Light. Satan is only a mirror.
God is the Truth. Satan is only an imitator.
Accept no imitation.

The Mystery of the God-Man

Imagine the man Jesus - Imagine the boy, the young child, growing to manhood, hearing the recitation of the Torah in the synagogue, praying the writings alone, the depths of reading the Scriptures, the same holy text read by everyone around you, and knowing, realizing, living - *This is about me.*

The Mystery of the Scriptures

By now maybe we can more or less clearly see: the Scripture is one giant concordance, coursing back and forth, within itself, through itself, by itself, for itself, in itself, pulsing and thriving and unfolding and radiating ever outward from its endless profundity. Each passage, each line, each phrase, each word speaks to every other word, contains within it the depths of the whole text, the whole tissue of God's Word as Flesh and Bread, spoken, birthed, baked from within the very depths of the Spirit.

As Christ is the Gate through which the sheep pass, so too His Word, instantiated in Scripture in a concrete and universal way for all time, is a Gateway through which we can truly access the inner life of God. Jesus says, "I am the gate. Whoever enters through me will be saved, and will come in and go out and find pasture" (John 10:9). He who enters the Gate that is Christ will come in and go out: will have access to all the interiority of God, His intimacy and mercy, and all the surface glory of this interiority: omnipotence, omniscience, omnipresence, immortality, and perfection.

This Gate is not some simple one-dimensional reality, outside you're screwed, inside you're saved: like the Spirit Himself, it is an endless, multi-dimensional (yet totally unified), infinity of truth, and thus the Doorway leads through vast and open parlors of truth. We might say that the Gateway leads through some kind of tunnel to God, but that constricted metaphor occludes the radiating abundance of God.

Rather we should imagine that "tunnel" as more like a glorious funnel, extending outward forever, (and, indeed, should we require it, straitening to the infinitesimal, to the very breadth of a needle). In radiating ever outward, we enjoy all the richness of God. And, if we need the straitening, all the dross, the waste, the excess refuse of any desire in us that is not perfectly and totally ordered to the Divine Majesty, shall be pared away and destroyed till we can fully share in the raptures of the Divine Intimacy.

So too the Scriptures. Should we enter them, and endure in them, and follow their Way, their meaning, richer than honey from the comb, more sublime than the sonorous whispering of a heart in love (1 Kings 19:9-18), will unfold in ever more glorious, ever unexpected ways. They will enrapture us in a whirlwind of the LORD's piercing and pervading Wisdom. Those enraptured with the Lord become enraptured by the Lord: "As they [Elijah and his protege Elisha] walked on conversing, a flaming chariot and flaming horses came between them, and Elijah went up to heaven in a whirlwind." The Scripture contains the power of the Spirit, and the Spirit has been given "that we may understand the things freely given us by God" (1 Corinthians 2:12).

What God freely gives us is Himself, His Own Spirit in and through Christ, His Spirit which is Absolute Freedom. Thus the meaning of the Scriptural text is infinite. *Not* arbitrary, but infinite: its meaning is fixed, orthodox, final *and* that itself means that, since it is of God, we will only know, *see*, that fixed and final meaning on the Last Day. Until then, as the Church makes its earthly pilgrimage to the Apocalypse, the meaning will be debated, uncertain, unclear, even a cause of division: but, as our faith in the unity and victory of Christ makes certain, debates will produce wisdom, secrets will be revealed, and strife, even the most bitter, will, once

placed on the altar of Christ's healing love, bear the fruit of redemption and revival. As Christ preaches, "Heaven and earth will pass away, but my words will not pass away" (Matthew 24:35).

As St. Paul preaches of Holy Wisdom, Hagia Sophia, the Logos, the Son of the living God in 1 Corinthians 2:

When I came to you, brothers, proclaiming the mystery of God, I did not come with sublimity of words or of wisdom. For I resolved to know nothing while I was with you except Jesus Christ, and him crucified. I came to you in weakness and fear and much trembling, and my message and my proclamation were not with persuasive [words of] wisdom, but with a demonstration of spirit and power, so that your faith might rest not on human wisdom but on the power of God.

Yet we do speak a wisdom to those who are mature, but not a wisdom of this age, nor of the rulers of this age, who are passing away. Rather, we speak God's wisdom, mysterious, hidden, which God predetermined before the ages for our glory, and which none of the rulers of this age knew, for if they had known it, they would not have crucified the Lord of glory. But as it is written:

"What eye has not seen, and ear has not
heard,
and what has not entered the human heart,
what God has prepared for those who love
him,"
this God has revealed to us through the Spirit.

For the Spirit scrutinizes everything, even the depths of God. Among human beings, who knows what pertains to a person except the spirit of the person that is within? Similarly, no one knows what pertains to God except the Spirit of God. We have not received the spirit of the world but the Spirit that is from God, so that we may understand the things freely given us by God. And we speak about them not with words taught by human wisdom, but with words taught by the Spirit, describing spiritual realities in spiritual terms.

Now the natural person does not accept what pertains to the Spirit of God, for to him it is foolishness, and he cannot understand it, because it is judged spiritually. The spiritual person, however, can judge everything but is not subject to judgment by anyone.

For "who has known the mind of the Lord so as to counsel him?" But we have the mind of Christ.

The power of the Scriptures is like fissile material, inert, seeming to be nothing more than cold, blunt rocks, but when activated by the heart of a believer in communion with the Flesh of Christ, the passages, phrases, words interpenetrate their infinite, multi-arrayed dimensions into a chain reaction of grace that, when fully unleashed, contains enough Holy Fire to set the whole world ablaze. As Jesus said:

I have come to set the earth on fire, and how I wish it were already blazing! There is a baptism with which I must be baptized, and how great is my anguish until it is accomplished! Do you think that I have come to establish peace on the earth? No, I tell you, but rather division. From now on a household of five will be divided, three against two and two against three; a father will be divided against his son and a son against his father, a mother against her daughter and a daughter against her mother, a mother-in-law against her daughter-in-law and a daughter-in-law against her mother-in-law.

(Luke 12:49-53)

Interlude

God is not impressed by your accomplishments. How could he be? Your accomplishments, to the extent that they are truly accomplishments and not embellishments of evil, are only the fruits of your gifts, and all your gifts are given by God. Nor is God impressed that you used your gifts, for your strength and endurance are also gifts from God. Whoever glories in their own strengths, thinking them to be truly and completely *their own - mine! get your hands off of my precious!* - imitates the clanging catastrophe of Satan's ridiculous folly - to believe that what one has been given is self-created: for the creature to, in its "depths", believe itself to be Uncreated. As St. Paul writes in 1 Corinthians 4:7-8 in the context of spiritual gifts, we can say just as precisely of material gifts:

Who confers distinction upon you? What do you possess that you have not received? But if you have received it, why are you boasting as if you did not receive it? You are already satisfied; you have already grown rich; you have become kings without us! Indeed, I wish that you had become kings, so that we also might become kings with you.

So when we have great success, we do not wallow in pride and cling to our winnings, but strenuously seek to acknowledge the gift of the Father to us by returning that gift - *all of the gifts!* - to the Son, to the Flesh of Christ, by providing for our Christian brothers and sisters in need.

I remember meeting with Father Smith when I was an undergraduate, and, during one discussion, that eager young man confidently asserted, "*I believe in universal salvation!*" somehow sure that his enthusiasms constrained the Divine Providence. Father Smith smiled, a glint in his eye, and wryly observed, "We just hope God does."

From https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Raymond_Leo_Burke#Tridentine_Mass

Liturgical abuse^{[[edit](#)]}

On March 2, 2011, Burke said that too many priests and bishops treat violations of liturgical norms as something that is unimportant, when they are actually "serious abuses" that damage the faith of Catholics. He criticized the lack of reverence, stating "If we err by thinking we are the center of the liturgy, the Mass will lead to a loss of faith."^{[[105](#)][[106](#)]}

Who is the Mass offered to?

Did you know that until I met Father Smith, I didn't even *know* that the Mass was offered to God the Father? Not a blessed clue. So, I had been attending Mass for twenty years “blissfully” unaware of its whole point.

That is the legacy of the Mass of Paul VI.

<https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=ZUCa0pkPBhs>

<https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=CHAGqlwLw6c>

This fellow is right (about this subject):

<https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=wedpLBTkd84>

Can we dance at Mass?

Cardinal Arinze, may we dance at Mass?

<https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=vHWsmHG80vo>

Short answer: in America and Europe **NO!**

Has liturgical dance been approved for Masses by your office?

There has never been a document from our Congregation for Divine Worship and Discipline of the Sacraments saying that dance is approved in the Mass.

The question of dance is difficult and delicate. However, it is good to know that the tradition of the Latin Church has not known the dance. It is something that people are introducing in the last ten years — or twenty years. It was not always so. Now it is spreading like wildfire, one can say, in all the continents — some more than others. In my own continent, Africa, it is spreading. In Asia, it is spreading.

Now, some priests and lay people think that Mass is never complete without dance. The difficulty is this: we come to Mass primarily to adore God — what we call the vertical dimension. We do not come to Mass to entertain one another. That's not the purpose of Mass. The parish hall is for that.

So all those that want to entertain us — after Mass, let us go to the parish hall and then you can dance. And then we clap. But when we come to Mass we don't come to clap. We don't come to watch people, to admire people. We want to adore God, to thank Him, to ask Him pardon for our sins, and to ask Him for what we need.

Safety Dance

Men Without Hats

<https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=AjPau5QYtYs>

<https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=G4Ym9zokSZo>

The Mystery of Sin

The Exodus context of manna rained down for the journey also enlightens our passage into the invocation, “Forgive us our debts, as we forgive our debtors.” When God rained down manna, he commanded that the Israelites only gather enough for that day -- limiting themselves was a requirement, an instruction by which God meant to test their fidelity to Him. The Torah is an instruction by which Israel was to come alive in the Lord.

Matthew’s Gospel is the Christian Torah, written to show Jesus as the new Moses handing down a path to righteousness. Implicit in the command to ask only for what is necessary, for what is really apt to our daily circumstances, is the command not to grasp at more worldly goods or status than is really necessary to draw one step closer to the Lord in our earthly pilgrimage. Truly praying only for our “epiousios” bread circumscribes the conduct of our lives to the prescription of the Lord, for anything more than what is epiousios is a temptation to sin, to ground our spirit on something other than God, made accessible through Christ.

By turning away from anything beyond what is epiousios, we turn neither right nor left on the Way to the Lord, but walk in accordance with the Divine Rule, with the Lord’s Instruction, his Torah. And what is the Torah of the Gospel? To forgive others for their sins against us.

That is the whole rule of Christian life, with which all things are possible and without which nothing is possible.

It is identical with, (or, more precisely, a critical application of), the Golden Rule, “Do to others whatever you would have them do to you. This is the law and the prophets” (Matthew 7:12).

You always want forgiveness, no matter what you do, so you should treat others likewise. Any failure to do good to those who haven’t wronged you can be forgiven by Christ as sin just like any other sin. But an ultimate failure to forgive someone who has sinned against you cannot easily, or perhaps at all, be forgiven. In order to be saved a spirit must become the Spirit of Christ, and the essence of his Spirit is forgiveness, to stop blaming, to accept all who come to Him. If you can’t forgive, you cannot have the Spirit of Christ within you and cannot be saved.

You don’t have to pass the final test, because you’ve already failed. Jesus will pass that final test. But to have his score imputed to you, you have to stop setting yourself up as the teacher and failing everybody else. When you fail to forgive you become most like Satan, the accuser, who cannot stop blaming, cannot stop spewing foul cursing from his mouth. And if you become Satan, how can Christ deliver you from Satan? If, while loaded on Christ’s back, being led up to the Father, you can’t stop blaming and cursing someone else loaded on his back, how can Christ take you with Him?

That accusation, that blaming, is Hell, and can’t be brought by Christ into the Father’s Holy Presence; such an accuser has to be left behind with the Accuser. That is why St. Matthew ends the section on the Lord’s Prayer with Jesus saying, “If you forgive others their transgressions, your heavenly Father will forgive you. But if you do not forgive others, neither will your Father forgive your transgressions” (Matthew 6:14-15). Jesus’ comment, his own

midrash on the prayer He has just enjoined on his disciples, sees the heart of His Prayer as the instruction to forgive others. Forgiving others is the test by which we are judged either to have Christ or to lack Him. Forgiveness is the only way to come alive in Christ.

We rob ourselves of the grace of Scriptural guidance if we put a temporal reading of epiousion at variance with a spiritual reading, requiring that it be one or the other. Constantly in Scripture, the physical transforms into the spiritual, and the spiritual into the physical. It is not either “food you stuff in your mouth” or “the Bread of Life that is the Word”; the literal food that you eat gives you another day of life in this world that can and will only give life if it is lived in the Word, the Bread of Life, and the Word that you eat which provides spiritual nourishment will either destine you to be literally fed, some way or another, and thus survive another day in this world, according to the plan of God, or, should you literally starve to death because of a lack of food, if you die in the Word you will that day be in Paradise with the Savior and literally eat of the eternal Eucharistic feast in the Banquet of the eternal Kingdom.

We should also remember that the ultimate author of Scripture is God, regardless of the human authors He inspired by His Providence. Scripture is not a period piece. We shred it to pieces if we view it solely, or even primarily, through historicist lens. Putting the text in historical context can enlighten us to Scripture’s meaning. Chaining it to the past obliterates the Word of God.

Whatever existed in the mind of St. Matthew or the scribe or scribes who compiled the Church of Matthew’s materials, or whatever even existed in the mind of the man Jesus before he became the Risen Christ, the eternal LORD intended the Lord’s Prayer to be a prayer for all times, till the end of time on the Last Day.

Through it, and of course through all Scripture, the Lord speaks to every person in every age. The Word of God speaks as much to a 1st Century farmer fearful of famine as to a 21st Century office worker who (maybe) will only ever experience hunger as a reminder to order food off of Seamless. It is profoundly unlikely that a line from the Lord’s Prayer - an invocation to the Divine Power to act in the disciple’s life - has no practical meaning in the lives of hundreds of millions of disciples.

In praying for “epiousion bread” we do not just ask God to ward off the ruination of famine or economic ruin, but we ask Him to ward off the worldly abundance that appears wonderful and desirable but, like a trap door covered with a pretty welcome mat, leads to a ruination you never saw coming: the final ruination of not your body, but your spirit.

Jesus’ final test is to be truly God, truly the Spirit of the Father; our only test is to let the Spirit of Christ, and Him alone, be our abundance. We pray that in the context of the whole of our lives (and not just episodes or chapters), (as St. Paul assures us God never will), those of us in Christ will never be tested beyond our strength, beyond what, at bottom (and not just in our delusions), we are really capable of. We pray that God not torment us with the tortures of poverty and deprivation such that all we can think of is misery, and, likewise, we pray that we do not find ourselves laid down in a comfortable, luxurious bed of roses so redolent and beguiling that we wake up the next morning to find ourselves trapped in a Satanic coffin of our own blind complacency.

As St. Paul says, "But with the trial he [God] will also provide a way out, so that you may be able to bear it" (1 Corinthians 10:13). Christ is the way out. He is the way out of the temptation that is all human life. Christ is the Way by which we avoid the pitfalls on both the left and the right of us, the temptations of poverty and of wealth, of failure and success, of loneliness and popularity.

If we find our dreams shattered, we recognize even in our bare subsistence, even if all that separates us from hunger and thirst is a slice of bread and a cup of water, the Christ that leads us on to another day. We do not fall into the trap of bitterness, hungrily grasping at what we do not have, coveting more than the Lord has ordained to be our portion.

And again, if we find all our dreams fulfilled, every appetite tickled and engorged with a satiety that makes our innards glow and dance, we recognize in our plenitude (abundance), the Christ that demands that we share what we have with others, that we give to others with the same lavishness that has been given to us. We do not fall into the trap of covetousness, greedily clinging at what we do have, coveting more than the Lord has commanded to be our portion. For, as Jesus teaches, "In the same way, every one of you who does not renounce all his possessions cannot be my disciple" (Luke 14:33).

The shocking rigor and, we think, absurdity -- the impracticality, the bad sense, the "impossibility" of renouncing our possessions -- causes our eyes to glaze over -- we change the channel and assure ourselves that no, really, we're all right....surely such nonsense cannot be true. We comfort ourselves with the praise of our friends and our own vision of ourselves, of our (proportionally meager) charitable contributions, and tell ourselves, realize for ourselves, wrap ourselves in a *higher* spirituality, in books that delight in their mystical obscurity and prettiness without demanding anything of us, in preachers and teachers that assure us that God only wants us to achieve our highest potential or that "love" wins. But it is all to no end, to no profit: "love" doesn't win. Christ wins. And his Love is far more holy and far more demanding than we are willing to accept. And that ready and violent hardness of heart, that sklerocardia, to cling to the things of this world, to make *them* rather than *Christ* our true abundance, is why Jesus says, "Amen I say to you, it will be hard for one who is rich to enter the kingdom of heaven. Again, I say to you, it is easier for a camel to pass through the eye of a needle than for one who is rich to enter the kingdom of God" (Matthew 19:23-24).

So we retain the things of this world, the gallons of fine wine stacked case upon case in our cellars like it were the source of life, rather than frantically dumping it overboard bucketful after bucketful like ravenous water sinking our boat.

The issue isn't about accomplishment. The question is not, "Why did you get all of that?" The question is, "Why do you still have it? Why hasn't it been given away?" For those who say, "I made it, therefore it's mine," the Lord answers, "I made you through Christ, and even despite your death in your sins, through Christ's Spirit you are made a new creation, so why do you not obey the Voice of the Shepherd?" Whoever does not do as one's Master commands is not that Master's servant.

Wealth is like smoking: it's cool and feels good in the moment but then it gives you lung cancer and kills you. We should have television commercials from Hell from recently departed

celebrities, business titans, and politicians: looking into the camera as a demon pokes them with a flaming iron up their rear end, “I’m John, and I used to be wealthy, but now I’m a sex toy for this demon,” the foul spirit behind the ruined soul giggling in delight as the scintillating poker emerges straight from the gullet up through his mouth. Now, it’s true, Jesus said that for God all things are possible, so through the devastating and awesome power of the Christ even the spirit of a rich person, larded with their belongings, possessed by their possessions, can - *can! not must* - be jammed through the needle of God’s presence. But, would you think it wise to say, “I don’t have to give up smoking because if I do get cancer I can just get chemotherapy, and I *might* be one of the lucky ones”?

We hear commands like, “In the same way, everyone of you who does not renounce all his possessions cannot be my disciple” (Luke 14:33), as impossible “hard sayings”, to be 1) ignored, 2) spiritualized totally out of context, or 3) marginally complied with through lesser or greater charitable contributions. This failure of individual disciples is rooted in the failure of the Church. By that I do not mean that individual clerics or groups of church hierarchies have failed, (although they certainly have), but I mean that *the Whole Church*, We the Body of Christ, has dramatically failed to instantiate, incarnate, immanentize the common life that is possible *in this world* for Christian brothers and sisters.

Where are the communal societies organized by the Church, not just for priests and celibates but for ordinary lay men and women? Where is the sharing of goods and resources that makes a common life possible?

Where, in all the Church, is the kind of life described by the New Testament as the ideal, and original, mode of Christian life? Acts 2:42-47 records:

They devoted themselves to the teaching of the apostles and to the communal life, to the breaking of the bread and to the prayers. Awe came upon everyone, and many wonders and signs were done through the apostles. All who believed were together and had all things in common; they would sell their property and possessions and divide them among all according to each one’s need. Every day they devoted themselves to meeting together in the temple area and to breaking bread in their homes. They ate their meals with exultation and sincerity of heart, praising God and enjoying favor with all the people. And every day the Lord added to their number those who were being saved.

Yet, even when Church institutions fail us, we each individually have a responsibility to respond to Jesus’ call insofar as we can, within the very real, and sometimes overwhelming, constraints of our everyday lives.

So in your struggle against darkness -- and the willful blindness that leads us into everlasting gloom, never grow complacent, never think you’ve arrived when you’re just on the way. Take to heart the advice of St. Paul, who saw Jesus Himself in His Glory, who especially recommended Jesus’ saying that, “It is more blessed to give than to receive” (Acts 20:35).

Say and believe, “I am nothing. Only Christ is something in my heart.” As has been preached: Become nothing so that Christ might become something in your life.

William F. Buckley, the conservative writer, popularized the phrase “Don’t immanentize the eschaton.” He meant that people should not try to create Heaven (the eschaton) on earth (immanence).

Attempting to immanentize the eschaton results in a totalitarian Hell, raging with the fire of every loud, hot iniquity - the flames of evil viciously attacking anyone and everyone, like hellhounds hot on the trail of every human scent.

But we cannot refuse to immanentize what we might call the “immanenton”, the world that really *can* be, here and now: that can really be much better than it is, but only isn’t because of greed and hardness of heart: sklerocardia.

Refusing to immanentize the immanenton results in a capitalist Hell, cold and icy, still and insidious - the frost of aloof indifference.

The hoarding of wealth by the capitalist elite while the masses sink into financial oblivion is not only dysfunctional, it is not only socially perilous: it is morally wrong.

A blank and naked refusal to immanentize the immanenton does not only weaken society. It inflames the wrath of God.

I offer no comprehensive political programme, no promise of making anything great again, no *Open Way to World Peace and Welfare*, no easy answers and no foolproof solutions. All I offer is the Gospel of the Christ, and of Him Crucified! Those who say that the Gospel must be shut up in one’s private home and in the recesses of one’s veiled mind and that the Word must not escape the mouth but choke in the throat -- that the public must be kept safe from the faith, that the halls of power must be sanitized of the stench of religion (of the odor of sanctity) serve Satan. Those who shrug that the Gospel cannot do anything, cannot minister to the real, the *concrete*, social problems of the world know nothing of the Word, nor anything of the power of God.

The Immanenton is what the Church is supposed to be, not just in the Kingdom of Heaven on the Last Day, *but in this world TODAY*.

We are not to have the Kingdom, (fully realized and glorious), on this our earthly pilgrimage, but we are certainly to have the Church, functioning, operational, and actually able to realize the promises of Scripture, especially the commands Our Lord enjoins upon His disciples.

If, and when, you hoard wealth while others languish, founder, suffer, and even starve, do not be surprised when the Great Judge of the World delivers the verdict that your eschaton is Hell.

If you refuse to use the Gospel, not just in your own vain little mind as a source of comfort and of how much JC thinks you’re rad, but in the whole world as a Divine Proclamation of God’s Will for All People, in every aspect of your society’s life, especially your economic life, I can offer an alternative, as a modest proposal:

The Purge

<https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=K0LLaybEuzA>

Enjoy!

The economic realities of modern life do not only degrade many people's material circumstances. Even, and especially, where the modern economic structure does actually yield material benefits, it directly imperils people's spiritual life.

The conditions of modern life have made everyday life radically more comfortable, and rendered the earthly pilgrimage to Christ radically more fraught - fraught with every kind of peril, deception, blindness, temptation. The whole architecture of the modern project contrives - is calculated - to divert us from knowledge of the Lord, to deter us from enduring in the path of grace. Our comforts yield complacency; our rights yield a sterile world of superficial placidity in which the necessity of, and opportunities for, evangelical fervor are radically circumscribed; our entertainments yield distraction; the constant noise and blare and whirl of images of our electronic maelstrom, present in every public place and every private home, yield a Satanic hurricane in which the still small voice of the LORD cannot be heard (1 Kings 19:12). Our world of work -- that mighty monstrosity of proud efficiency, of effervescent productivity -- is a totalitarian tyrant that does not have one iota of respect for the individual's spirit, or for any human being's spiritual needs. It is a giant living furnace that ceaselessly demands *MORE, MORE, MORE* as it hungrily snatches human beings and rams them into its mouth. It is Beelzebub, the demonic prince of gluttony.

SAVING YOURSELF

When you wake, the first thing, *the very first thing* you should think is: This is the Day the Lord has made! How does God call me TODAY to serve Him?

As you place your feet out of bed and begin your routine sit with this question, revolve it in your mind silently, reverently -- do not try to answer it, do not fill the emptiness, your own blank expression of "I dunno". As Jonathan Franzen has advised as a rule of writing, "You see more sitting still than chasing after." Observe your life, sit outside of it, look at yourself, hear yourself. How does this sound to Christ? As Father Smith always preached, "See the world with Christ's eyes, know the world with Christ's heart." As Harold Bloom has written of the characters in Shakespeare: They are so dazzling because they are so human, he claims even more human than many milling about. And he professes that they are so human because they hear themselves talking and thinking, and that produces an involution of consciousness that breaks all superficiality and gives birth to the full, rounded, and deep innovation of the human spirit.

Observe yourself, so that, as Socrates advised as necessary, you may know yourself. *Examine your life!* Examine your life as if your life depended on it: BECAUSE IT DOES! If you do not know yourself, you are blind, and a blind person will walk right into a pit -- the eternal, final, and inescapable perdition of total ruination - pain, misery, and despair (Matthew 15:14). In places and times and moments *that you do not expect*, you will encounter the Risen Christ, if you wait for Him -- if you leave space, if you leave room for Him in the corridors of your mind, you will discover Him speaking *to you*, His voice, small and almost imperceptible at first...thundering and blazing if you follow where it leads. You will begin to notice in your life.... situations...people...ideas...possibilities...opportunities...invitations...

You will hear the voice of the Shepherd say to you "[Insert Your Name Here], follow Me" (Matthew 9:9; Luke 5:27), you will hear Him say, "Zacchaeus, come down quickly, for today I must stay at your house" (Luke 19:5), you may even, (some of you), hear, "If you wish to be perfect, go, sell what you have and give to the poor, and you will have treasure in heaven. Then come, follow me" (Matthew 19:21).

You will notice the call, and see where you are commanded to go. It will not be all champagne and roses and warm feelings -- there will be betrayals, disappointments, false starts, confusions, failures, even tragedies. But...*but*...if you endure, *if you do not lose heart*, if you doggedly, faithfully, respond to the call of the Shepherd, if you hear His voice, you will yield yourself to the Lord's irresistible grace...and you will find your place in the Kingdom.

The charism of Christ to change hearts begins with the Flesh of Christ, with the piercing insight of the unity of all those in Christ, of all Christian brothers and sisters, and it is in the cry of these little ones that those with a spirit burdened by excess can most hear the Voice of the Lord.

The impulse towards secular, humanitarian philanthropy is noble and healthy.

But one's obedience to Christian charity and almsgiving has the curative power to break one's heart of stone, to cleanse and heal the Temple of one's heart of the cancer of sklerocardia

and save one's soul. For in the recipient of humanitarian aid we see an unfortunate, at a distance from us, who benefits from our noblesse oblige. In a Christian brother we see ourselves, the image of God in the eyes of another that is itself the same image of God that makes up the depths of our own Spirit in Christ - our only hope of salvation. The life you save may be your own.

I have no revelatory insight on the matter, but I suspect that most of our celebrities, politicians, and rich people are going to go to Hell. For the secular, (that is, speaking in secular terms), I say that their apparent (and not even apparent!) goodness - (their gracefulness, their smooth words, their charitable contributions, their photo ops) - is just that: apparent, shallow, flat, empty; but a mirror that reflects an outward image, while within is all vanity, cold indifference, outrage, self-obsession. For the Christian, I say that their faiths, (such as they are), will be found counterfeit - vain, hollow, of the lips only.

Ah, with what cool insouciance I damn millions to Hell. But...then again, perhaps...with what stern, terrible, and crushing finality the Great Judge of the Universe shall deliver the obvious verdict.

But, as I said, I have no revelatory insight into the matter, for, as St. Paul says, "Therefore do not make any judgment before the appointed time, until the Lord comes, for he will bring to light what is hidden in darkness and will manifest the motives of our hearts, and then everyone will receive praise from God" (1 Corinthians 4:5), and as he says in verse 14 of the same chapter, "I am writing this not to shame you, but to admonish you as my beloved children."

Our collective Cult of Personality of the rich and famous is a real problem.

Russia had Uncle Joe [Stalin], their Man of Steel, Albania had Uncle Enver, their Sole Force, and North Korea has their string of Dear Leaders, all capable of truly unbelievable feats.

We have the far gentler ministrations of *People* magazine and reality television...yet many may find them ultimately no less damning...and I use that term advisedly, technically.

And lest this warm the cockles of those on the right wing, so scornful of "Hollywood" and "elites", let us recall that radio and television talk show hosts, Republican politicians, and mega-pastors with fine suits, fast jets, and full bellies are, most indeed, celebrities, politicians, and rich people.

And should we be surprised that our celebrities, politicians, and rich people should be under the dominion of damnation? Is it unbelievable that those faces and voices we have shoved in our faces and minds day after day in every mall, convenience store, office, and market are nothing more than the blank and empty portals of an iniquity so dark, an outrage so inflamed, and a peril so dire that our little, blinkered spirits can scarce fathom the enormity? For St. Paul and his brethren endlessly warn us that this world exists under the imperium of the "rulers of this age". So should we be surprised that the celebrities who control our culture, the politicians who control our laws, and the rich businessmen who control our economic lives are nothing more than the pawns of Satan?

The Bible

He who abandons fidelity to the Bible in Christian ministry is as one who walks onto a raging field of battle without armor, shield, or sword.

Personal Lives; Society's Life

So much of our trouble comes from the fact that we do not align the circumstances of our lives with the vocations of our lives: we individuals do not choose to do so, to make the choices that would make it possible, and we societies do not decree to do so, to make the laws and institutions that would make it possible - *both!*

I am a Catholic

I wish to make it very plain: I am an orthodox, devout Catholic Christian. I eschew heterodoxy and all its evil works, and I reject hippie nonsense and the glamour of relevance. I avow loyalty unto death to Holy Mother Church, to its sacred teachings and the whole Deposit of Faith, vow obedience to the apostolic tradition and authority, say with the Jesuits that I further promise a special obedience to the sovereign pontiff, and heartily look forward to embracing Giuseppe Sarto, His Holiness Pope St. Pius X, at the Eternal Eucharistic Banquet, kissing each cheek as we Italians do. I have no use for Gnosticism, relativism, unnecessary esotericism⁹, astrology, syncretism, pantheism, naturalism, scientism, materialism, the occult, historicism, or any other blasted, infernal contrivance of the Devil that seeks to convince man to worship himself or herself rather than God.

I affirm the indestructibility of Christ's Flesh and His Truth. Therefore, confident of the Victory already won, I do not fear openness, ecumenism, interfaith dialogue, or friendship with those who do not share my beliefs or who are different from me. I have no use for racism, misogyny, bigotry, violence, authoritarianism, intimidation, bouts of rage, self-righteousness, secrecy, self-serving polemics, paranoia, arrogance, vainglory, triumphalism, in-groups, domination, pomp, or frippery.¹⁰

In the same way, I have no use for "Catholics" who do not obey the sovereign pontiff, but denounce him, and denounce a string of popes, while they go off in protest and set up their own little schismatic dirt houses (*See* St. Robert Bellarmine). Should there ever be a true anti-pope in our times, destructive of the faith - and *especially* a whole band of them strutting over the Church and defiling it over *decades* then there is but one course for a Catholic: to suffer within the Church, and to speak as they can - *and as they are permitted - and to trust that their presence and petition and sufferings within* the Church will truly do God's work. If one cannot suffer that course, then one should inquire of the Protestant or Orthodox Churches. The special charism of a Catholic's ecclesiological life is obedience to the Petrine authority. I have no use - and no ear - for those so-called "Catholics" who set themselves up - and set up the doctrines special to them - above the essential primacy of that obedience to papal authority.

Say to Christ, "Reign over me. Reign in my heart. Tear from me this Satanic heart of stone, fit only for final and ineradicable perdition, and place within me Your Own Sacred Heart, full of Divine Tenderness and Mercy, which always blesses when cursed, loves when hated, respects when reviled, perseveres when threatened, hopes in the face of despair."

⁹ This is NOT an indication that I am being esoteric in this work. I am trying to be the exact opposite of esoteric - to be revelatory and clear. I am simply saying that others - primarily contemplatives and mystics - might have need for esotericism. I am not (exactly) a mystic, and I am far too distracted to be a contemplative.

¹⁰ We face the linguistic irony that many might say that frippery is frippery.

The Mystery of the Spirit

Truly, the human heart - the human capacity - is too slow for the celerity of God's Spirit.

The Mystery of Faith

When the disciples failed to exorcise a demon from a boy, the Gospel of Matthew says, “Then the disciples approached Jesus in private and said, ‘Why could we not drive it out?’ He said to them, ‘Because of your little faith. Amen, I say to you, if you have faith the size of a mustard seed, you will say to this mountain, ‘Move from here to there,’ and it will move. Nothing will be impossible for you. But this kind does not come out except by prayer and fasting” (Matthew 17:20-22). If we can respond to God’s monumental love, His tsunami of grace, hurricane of true compassion, supernova of Chesed with even the tiniest granule of real reception, of genuine fidelity, of true longing -- if there is an aptly substantive premise, substrate particle of interior spirit, *an epiousios spirit* authentically within us -- then from that sole particle, (which must be the Christ within us), the Lord will speak a whole new creation in us and for us. As He showed in the multiplication of the loaves and the fishes, from the most meager materials Jesus, through his own ineffable Spirit, can provide an endless, staggering, totally shocking abundance.

So, we drive ourselves to the attainment of our salvations, forgetting about what is behind, straining for what is ahead. St. Paul wrote more of the New Testament than anyone else, and *he* did not take the matter of attaining salvation lightly:

Do you not know that the runners in the stadium all run in the race, but only one wins the prize? Run so as to win. Every athlete exercises discipline in every way. They do it to win a perishable crown, but we an imperishable one. Thus I do not run aimlessly; I do not fight as if I were shadowboxing. No, I drive my body and train it, for fear that, after having preached to others, I myself should be disqualified.

(1 Corinthians 9:24-27)

If you find yourself to be one of those people ever in doubt of whether you authentically possess any goodness, recall the words of Scripture, “[Now] this is how we shall know that we belong to the truth and reassure our hearts before him in whatever our hearts condemn, for God is greater than our hearts and knows everything” (1 John 3:19-20). We throw ourselves upon Christ’s mercy as Peter did: “Lord, you know everything; you know that I love you.” Take to heart the words of Jesus, “Do not let your hearts be troubled. You have faith in God; have faith also in me. In my Father’s house there are many dwelling places [the Greek word translated as “dwelling places” is *μονή*, *mone*, meaning an abode -- a *permanent and abiding* place of dwelling]. If there were not, would I have told you that I am going to prepare a place for you? And if I go and prepare a place for you, I will come back again and take you to myself, so that where I am you also may be. Where I am going you know the way” (John 14: 1-4).

You will hardly know who I am, or what I mean;
But I shall be good health to you nevertheless,
And filter and fibre your blood.

Failing to fetch me at first, keep encouraged;
Missing me one place, search another;

I stop somewhere, waiting for you.¹¹

“Ask and it will be given to you; seek and you will find; knock and the door will be opened to you. For everyone who asks, receives; and the one who seeks, finds; and to the one who knocks, the door will be opened. Which one of you would hand his son a stone when he asks for a loaf of bread, or a snake when he asks for a fish? If you then, who are wicked, know how to give good gifts to your children, how much more will your heavenly Father give good things to those who ask him?” (Matthew 7:7-11).

If you have faith that God is good, but fear that you are so wicked that not even an ember of goodness exists in you that you might be saved, that not even all the Holy Wind of the Spirit can blow that ember into a blaze, then take to heart the words of Jesus: Have faith also in me. If you doubt yourself, do not doubt your Savior. If you fear that your love for Him is too weak, rejoice that His love for you is so strong!

If you are uncertain of yourself, be certain of Him.

If you are unsure of yourself, place your trust in Him.

If you doubt yourself, believe in Him.

Let Christ reign as the Champion in your heart, say: With so mighty a Savior, how could I be ruined forever in Abaddon? As my Savior has survived the depths of Abaddon unsullied, so shall I survive in His Spirit, and thus in Him, and thus forever in the Mercy of the Father:

<https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=btPJPFnesV4>

If, on the other hand, you are one of those people who assures themselves that they are quite good, that, of course, there is a particle of true faith and trust, true longing for goodness, then remember what Father Gabriele Amorth, the noted exorcist, wrote, “When I hear confessions, I often say to my penitents, somewhat jokingly, that their temptations will end only five minutes after they have exhaled their last breath.”¹²

Take to heart the warnings of St. Paul, who urgently warned Christians not to fall into the trap of overconfidence.

1 I do not want you to be unaware, brothers, that our ancestors were all under the cloud and all passed through the sea, **2** and all of them were baptized into Moses in the cloud and in the sea. **3** All ate the same spiritual food, **4** and all drank the same spiritual drink, for they drank from a spiritual rock that followed them, and the rock was the Christ. **5** Yet God was not pleased with most of them, for they were struck down in the desert.

¹¹ Whitman, Walt: Song of Myself, LII

¹² Amorth, Gabriele: *An Exorcist Explains the Demonic*, 21

6 These things happened as examples for us, so that we might not desire evil things, as they did. **7** And do not become idolaters, as some of them did, as it is written, “The people sat down to eat and drink, and rose up to revel.” **8** Let us not indulge in immorality as some of them did, and twenty-three thousand fell within a single day. **9** Let us not test Christ as some of them did, and suffered death by serpents. **10** Do not grumble as some of them did, and suffered death by the destroyer. **11** These things happened to them as an example, and they have been written down as a warning to us, upon whom the end of the ages has come.

12 Therefore, whoever thinks he is standing secure should take care not to fall. **13** No trial has come to you but what is human. God is faithful and will not let you be tried beyond your strength; but with the trial he will also provide a way out, so that you may be able to bear it.

14 Therefore, my beloved, avoid idolatry.

Be alert. Be aware of what is *really* going on in your life. Remember Fr. Amorth’s insight into what you are likely to face after your death. You will not be condemned *from without*. As Amorth wrote, “Rather, I believe that, immediately after death, each of us will appear before Jesus, but it will not be the Lord who will review our lives and examine the good and the bad each of us has done. We ourselves shall do it, in truth and honesty.”¹³ Once the mortal veil is cast aside, you will no longer be able to hide in comfortable illusions. In eternity, all is seen for what it is, and what it is not. In eternity, illusions dissolve and only truth remains.

Yet do not think that even if you should be found worthy that you will escape unscathed.

If you were wealthy in this life, and should you survive the chemotherapy after your death - should that be your destiny -- you will awake one long solemn day in a field festered with fog, mired in a thin gloom, the quiet dawn breaking slowly, the coruscating luster of a sweetness you can’t quite yet taste beginning to bud on your tongue. And as you sit there, you will look around you, the fog dispersing, the gloom lifting, then gradually you will become aware of yourself, of your body. You will see yourself in rags, and you will wonder at its meaning, and eventually the rags will drift off of you, evaporating into the morning air, leaving you quite naked, and you will realize, quite poor. Then you will find beside you some papers. Curious, you will unfold them and begin to read -- stock reports, account numbers, and you will see numbers, all numbers, and you will realize your poverty...and a knot of hunger will swell your heart...and you will say with Oskar Schindler - *This account, this could have fed a hundred families for years! Why did I keep this account?* In bitterness and anger you will tear the papers to shreds. You will find other accounts, with less money. You will say *Why didn’t I sell it? Lloyd Blankfein would have bought these stocks!* You will find papers with smaller and smaller

¹³ Ibid, 142

amounts of money. You will find your last account, with ten dollars in it - *I could have fed one person with this money...one more person....and I didn't! And I...I didn't!* And in your tears and your forsakenness you will feel the onrushing of many spirits. And finally you will see. And finally you will feel. And finally, you will stand.

Combine all the certain faith of an evangelical Protestant in the sufficiency of Christ's sacrifice with all the zealous determination to persevere in righteousness of an Orthodox rabbi.

Remember:

The LORD cannot stomach your sinfulness -- any particle of it, any whiff of its rank stench, any more than you can delight in someone's foul breath.

Mirrors

We walk through the world every day, not one of us ever seeing our own face with our own eyes. What then does HaShem say to us in this? Does He not say, “I am your face. Not in yourself can you see who you are, but only beyond yourself, in Me.” ? And then, does that not also mean, “The faces you see every day, that is your face. Whatever you do to them, you do to yourself. Whatever you do to them, you do to Me.” ? Seek the wisdom of yourself, and your destiny, in how you see your neighbor.

And should one say, this is all nonsense, for I can clearly see myself in the mirror, does he not deceive himself? For, is not one’s reflection in a mirror as a vain illusion, a passing shadow? Should one say, I need not look at others to see myself, for I have this wonderful mirror, wholly sufficient unto itself? Would not one exchange the truth of a thing, for the mere image of a thing? Is not the whole world before you, and all those in it, a vast and wonderful panorama? And is not this mirror that you hold in such high regard, but flat, and one-dimensional, and though it *seems* full, *appears* real, is it not the very essence of unreality, does it not totally lack the substance of the thing it reflects? If you should wash your hands of the world and all those many in it, and say to your reflection, “I pardon you,” do you not really condemn yourself?

Atheism and its Delusions

The modern anti-theists first taught, in their deist form, that God did not act in the world...then they grew bolder and secondly taught that God did not exist...then they grew ever bolder and thirdly taught that free will did not exist...and now we arrive at the apotheosis of all atheistical blasphemy: that your own consciousness is an illusion. First the atheists convinced many that God did not exist: Now they attempt their most daring feat ever, the coup de grace of Satan's materialist ploy: To convince you *that YOU do not exist!* BRAVO, *BELLISSIMO*, *fine flaming flowers flung upon the stage!* Take a bow, modern science, and now let the curtain fall upon that most excellent performance of all: to stand under all, and see absolutely nothing.

When an atheist espousing scientism tells you that you cannot prove the existence of God, consider this. What the atheist says that he means is that you can provide no demonstration of the existence of God, by which he means, you cannot convince him.

But, what the atheist really means is that you can provide no material cause of God. But how could you? God is a Spirit, and not material. How could you render a material model in mathematical terms of a Spirit that is wholly immaterial and beyond the constraint of any demonstration?

Aristotle knew that there were at least four causes of any thing, of any existent being in reality: the material cause, the efficient cause, the formal cause, and the final cause. That is, yes the material cause, but also the process (the structure surrounding the mere matter) driving that matter to its end (the efficient cause). And there is also the formal cause: the what-it-is, that is to say, the spirit - the form that exists in the mind, which is to say nothing more than 'the spirit'. And the final cause of anything is the why of it - towards what eternal, existential state does it drive towards. And that is the Spirit.

Now, the atheist smirks and laughs and wants nothing to do with this, and returns to his matter and his pursuits and his fornications and his pride.

But, if the spiritual exists prior to the material in the order of reality, how could that which is superior, the spiritual, render an account of itself, a proof of itself, in terms of the merely material, which is inferior to it? It could not. It would be as an ant demanding that a human being somehow evoke - prove - that the human being was exceedingly superior in self-consciousness and the ant was not. Yet even that absurdity does not grasp the absurdity of demanding a material account of a spiritual reality, for at least the ant and the human being (in the flesh alone) share a material existence.

And when we bring the dimension of sin into the picture - and how could we avoid doing so?! - do we not more clearly see the inanity of the atheists' position: Prove it to me, you must prove it all to *me!*

If sin is spiritual blindness, how could we, who are sundered in sin, even provide a spiritual account of the spiritual? Would we not fumble about, and provide some models, some wisps of the greater visual reality, but only be capable of expressing them in material terms?

Would it not be as blind men talking to each other about what the real world beyond them must look like? And would the visual world be any less real should one of the blind men say, "I have never seen the visual world, and you, my blind brother, cannot prove it to me, cannot make me see it." Would the blindness of the blind man, among the blind men, make all the visual world disappear?

In the same way, even though we are mired in a material world in rebellion against the Spirit and thus bereft of spiritual sight, does our spiritual blindness make the spiritual world, and the Spirit at the center of that spiritual world, disappear?

And what does all this sound like? "Unless I can lord myself over it, by having an account rendered unto me, over which my (meager, even by material standards, and thoroughly materialized and sinful and blind) intellect can cover itself such that it is subject unto me and I not subject unto it, then I shall not believe." Who precisely does that sound like? What kind of pride does it remind you of? Not that atheists sit around and light candles to Satan and invoke the names of demons, but what kind of pride is it that says, "Only what I can grasp in my hand is real: all else beyond my grasp is as nothing." Is that not quite blank, quite one-dimensional?

Should we not say that such pride is frightfully indicative of an attitude that could never be embraced by the Spirit, the multi-dimensional, Spiritual, TOTAL PREROGATIVE that requires that we subject ourselves to it, rather than that it somehow, in some unholy way, subject itself to us?

And should the blind man then say, "Well, yes, and I suppose fairies could be real." ? If other blind men should constantly surround him and say, "I have heard many reports, the fairies are indeed real, and if you do not seek this sight of which they report, many other fairies, quite hostile to you, shall carry you off to destruction, from which there shall be no release." Would not that blind man then at least, in humility and brotherhood, say, "I am indeed limited, and there are more things in heaven and earth than are dreamt of in my philosophy." And should not that man give ear to what so many of the other blind men say they have heard? Should he say, "Aha! All around me are fools, but I am wise, and my wisdom shall save me!" Is that not quite blind? Does that not affirm the saying of Jesus, "And if the light in you is darkness, how great will the darkness be?" (Matthew 6:23b) Even if he truly be unable, by light of his reason alone, to say, "Yes, I believe," should he not, at all times, maintain the humility of heart and spirit that says, "I am but nothing, a wisp of matter in a great cosmic ocean of matter, how can I make any certain statement that I am the measure of all things, and only what I can understand is real?!" Should one wisp of matter say to another wisp of matter, "Oh fool, you are a fool, and I am wise!" ? Should not, especially the materialist atheist, say: "I am as nothing, not merely limited, but the very infinitesimal. I will at least be humble in hearing what others have to say."

And if many say that the only way to access this spiritual world is to shut yourself up from the material world and close your eyes, and attempt to see without seeing, would you not, as the very infinitesimal, at least try to access that spiritual world and gain this spiritual sight of which they speak? Would it not be truly wise to take some time out of the day, and close your eyes, and be *humble* -- being humble, knowing you are so small and insignificant and of such little power and know as nothing (that all your knowledge is but as a bubble in the vast wastes of the Pacific Ocean) -- and at least *listen*. Would it not be very wise to do this regularly? And, haven't you heard that this spiritual sight is not granted all at once? That these fairies and the

Chief Fairy require humility as the price of their condescension to your so lowly, so limited, so infinitesimal, so very contemptible, little, little, tiny, teeny-weeny, smaller than you can imagine mind? Should you, so very poorly endowed, proclaim yourself Emperor of all the World, endowed with a magnificent, puissant, thrusting strength?

And even if you should hear nothing, if the penalty for disbelief were so dire, would it not at least be wise to quiet yourself for at least, ten, nay, even five minutes each day, every day, as you sip your coffee? To put down your phone, and stare out the window, and *just be*...and listen, and maybe hear? Even should all the materialist proposition be true, and your flame of consciousness shall blow into oblivion, would not that five minutes of truly humble, listening profit you much more than playing Candy Crush? Yea, verily, shall Candy Crush save your soul?

And would it not be a freedom to be free of such arrogance, to not look at your fellow wisps of matter and sneer? Would it not be a freedom rather to say, "That wisp says one thing in their brief moment of light, and that another, and I my own, but I will, in accordance with the true and unfathomable humility of my nothingness, be kind to others and gentle and listen and be open to those who speak and act in peace. If our moment of light be so brief, shall I waste it with cruelty and arrogance and vanity? Shall I not take hold generously of that one brief moment of light and be a light to others, shed a little light on that other unfortunate wisp in endless darkness." ? Yes, with all the thunder of temerity fight against those who speak and do violence. Cast them out! Let all those who love peace, believer and non-believer, lock arms and stand as a wall against violence and death and rape and destruction! And if this is all we have, should we not pass this brief moment in kindness and respect and the humility which is the true mark, nature, container and characteristic of the human condition?

And if, even twenty years after you take up the practice of listening, in humility, even five minutes a day, the spiritual reality condescend to give you this spiritual sight, would you not say, "Interesting, this voice I hear...interesting...come let us speak again tomorrow." And if it spoke to you, yea, even if it should open your eyes, would that not then confirm the saying of Jesus, "Have you come to believe because you have seen me? Blessed are those who have not seen and have believed" (John 20:29).

And should you not persevere in this *essential* humility and listening and kindness and true other-preference, not absorbed by self-preference in anything? - Certainly not in your vanity of wisdom, of which you, as an ephemeral wisp of matter, have none. And not in your career or reputation or money, which you think gives you meaning in the world, for if you are but a wisp of a flame of matter soon to blow out, you have no significance, and it is vain to think otherwise. If you are a true materialist, pride is absolutely ruled out. How can you, so brief in your limited and pathetic existence, say, "I am so powerful, how proud should I be!" ?

Is it not quite deranged in one breath, in your belief, to say, "I am as nothing," and then, in your self-estimation to say, "I am as everything!" Is that not the very image and essence of derangement? DERANGEMENT, I say!

Is that not blindness itself? And are you not sighted enough to see that such an attitude of spirit is so utterly blind? Would you then be free from guilt for not believing if you conducted yourself in such an absurd way? If you were wrong, and, woe to you, you should awake to that which you did not believe in, what then could you say to the Spirit, to the great and TOTAL

PREROGATIVE, upon waking to the spiritual world? Even on the basis of your materialist creed, did you live properly and sensibly? No, you were quite a little deranged wisp of matter, indeed. Says the Spirit, “How can I forgive such a one? What could the greatest Advocate in all the land say in this deranged spirit’s defense?”

Therefore, persevere in this *essential* humility and listening and kindness and true other-preference, not absorbed by self-preference in anything, *EVERY DAY -- EVERY, EVERY DAY*. Even should you never have the conviction of intellect, even if to your dying day no voice make itself apparent to you, even if after struggle and humility and even toil, you cannot believe, then follow the true materialist creed, the only materialist creed that is not deranged: I am as but a wisp of matter, and as nothing, I must endure in humility and listening and kindness and true other-preference, not absorbed by self-preference in anything, *EVERY DAY -- EVERY, EVERY DAY*.

For, if you do this in sincerity and HUMILITY of heart, if you do awake to this spiritual reality of which so many others speak, then you might see this: The Great and Unfathomable Spirit of TOTAL PREROGATIVE will come down upon you, but it will smile at you, while the other proud, deranged little atheists shudder in fear and horror, and this Spirit may say in a kind tone, “I played a little trick on you. It’s true, I did. I can be like that,” and you will look at yourself, and you will see that quiet, searching humility that you cherished and nourished all your life, and then you will see, behold, in wonder and not in horror, it transform into what it always was all along, the Word, and the Water of Life, the Eucharistic Communion, and it will not be a concept, but a man, and he will say to you, “I name you with my Name: what you could not find in life, now find forever in Me,” and he will embrace you, and you will know joy.

At least, I hope this is true. My way, His Way, the sure and certain Way, by which we can be utterly assured of salvation, if we persevere in faith and the righteousness that necessarily proceeds from true faith, is Christ, and Him Crucified, the Great Champion of the Spirit. If you do not have the conviction of intellect, say to yourself, “Let me travel this great and abundant highway in Christ on earth with these other fine people, let me profess the name of Christ, in my mouth and in my heart, so that no matter what may come, I shall be assured a place in the Spirit.” Why disdain the highway on earth in hope of a backdoor in heaven?

To persist in the arrogance of a triumphalist materialism, that is, to say, “I am as nothing, but I myself, though nothing, from this nothingness can raise up a whole Heaven of meaning created out of nothing” is just the material reflection of Satan’s spiritual sin: it is the spiritual sin of Satan immanentized in the world of matter. For Satan too said, “Though I am but a creature, I can raise up from this creaturely existence an Uncreated existence of TOTAL PREROGATIVE and Eternal Self-Glory. I can bootstrap my self into Godhood!” Is that not to declare oneself God? And, is it not but the material reflection of Satan’s willful “second” act: to say, “Though in Hell, I shall make all the world a Hell, and plunge God under my foot in that sovereign Hell?” Is it not the same willfulness? Is it not the same self-preference?

Is it not the very same as when one who is nothing - *and knows that he or she is nothing!* - parades and struts around this whole stage and scene of total, blank nothingness, and says to himself or herself, "Though I am but nothing, as the very infinitesimal, as but a wisp of small breath, instantly blown out, yet I, yes, I raise up, *BY* my nothingness, and yes, *THROUGH* my nothingness a whole and somehow truly meaningful Abode *WITHIN* my very nothingness, and that, for me, shall be my only something, indeed, yea, my *WHOLE EVERYTHING*, thus that I alone, by ME, and through ME, and ONLY WITHIN ME, I do create myself, as God of myself, a Whole and Sufficient PARADISE of ONLY MYSELF! And then, having thus thought in yourself to have made your grave of nothingness a sparkling Paradise of the Self, you run around and make yourself a misery to all the other nothings around you. You, like Napoleon crowning himself, having crowned yourself with this self-made deity, this gross self-deification from the very blankness of your nothingness, then say, "You other nothings, you indeed are nothing, but I have made myself something, I have made myself everything! HAHAHAHAAAAHA." And then you berate and beat the other nothings -- your personal assistants, your employees, your waiters, your prostitutes, your managers, your secretaries, your underlings, your entourage, your trainers, your handlers, your accountants, your lawyers (maybe not your lawyers, you need them!), your whoever dares look you in the eye, pitiful little nothing that dare look directly at ME, ME I SAY, THIS VERY NAPOLEON OF SELF-CREATION, THIS SELF-MADE EMPEROR OF ALL THE WORLD!!!!!!!!!!!!, THIS GOD OF MYSELF WHOM I HAVE RAISED UP IN MYSELF AND FOR MYSELF -- ALONE!!! HAHAHAAAAHAHAHAHAHA!!!!

If, after your death, you awake in the true world, having before called yourself God and parading yourself around in arrogance and pride, how shall the real God of humility and open giftedness deal with you? Should you not rather be afraid of such a God, yes, even have a fear of the Lord?

Should you follow the way of Satan, even if you do not call it Satanism, even if you think God is but a fairy, but inane nonsense which you merrily guffaw about on late night talk shows? Should you not, rather, beware of the unholy anti-communion - the hideous exchange of a death-in-life? (Rather than, and as opposed to, the Seraphic wisdom of life-in-death, life from the dead.)

Reject the foolish nonsense of the woefully silly Anton LaVey and the foul, noxious pride of the bitterly foul, utterly damned "Ayn Rand" --- (who, though born as one of the chosen, born with the beautiful and lovely name that HaShem gave her, *Alisa Rosenbaum* (does not the name trip off the tongue like honey, smell of the very heights of Mount Zion?), chose for herself the foul and blank and ugly self-given name of "Ayn Rand", that Germanic monstrosity of festering blindness and cruelty --- does it not reek of the gas chambers and taste of ash and the bitterness of a desolate mother's tears?).

So listen to the Demonic anti-wisdom of this foul false prophet, this "Ayn Rand":

And now I see the face of god, and I raise this god over the earth, this god whom men have sought since men came into being, this god who will grant them joy and peace and pride. This god, this one word: I.

Sounds like a pretty pithy definition of Satanism to me.

Oh, and did you not know of the direct path from Ayn Rand to Anton LaVey? No matter, I am here to speak. Let us listen to Mr. Joe Carter's wonderful article in the Catholic journal *First Things* (I actually had the honor and pleasure of listening to a homily by Father Richard John Neuhaus at mass while at school, and sat at his table at dinner in the Church basement. He was a dear and most pleasant, most gracious, man.) -- anyway, let us be on to the totally ungracious "Ayn Rand" and the silly clown "Anton LaVey" (who was born with the very Jewish name Howard Levey - such a one could be a very priest in the Temple); curious how these "Gods" of the Self all change their names, and change a name given to them from HaShem into a name they give to themselves, and only to and for themselves. But on to Mr. Carter's article:

Perhaps most are unaware of the connection, though LaVey wasn't shy about admitting his debt to his inspiration. "I give people Ayn Rand with trappings," he once told the *Washington Post*. On another occasion he acknowledged that his brand of Satanism was "just Ayn Rand's philosophy with ceremony and ritual added." Indeed, the influence is so apparent that LaVey has been accused of plagiarizing part of his "Nine Satanic Statements" from the John Galt speech in Rand's *Atlas Shrugged*.

Indeed. Oh, I cannot but contain my pleasure in Mr. Carter's article, so I shall copy and paste it here:

Over the past few years, Anton LaVey and his book *The Satanic Bible* has grown increasingly popular, selling thousands of new copies. His impact has been especially pronounced in our nation's capital. One U.S. senator has publicly confessed to being a fan of the *The Satanic Bible* while another calls it his "foundation book." On the other side of Congress, a representative speaks highly of LaVey and recommends that his staffers read the book.

A leading radio host called LaVey "brilliant" and quotations from the *The Satanic Bible* can be glimpsed on placards at political rallies. More recently, a respected theologian dared to criticize the founder of the Church of Satan in the pages of a religious and cultural journal and was roundly criticized by dozens of fellow Christians.

Surprisingly little concern, much less outrage, has erupted over this phenomenon. Shouldn't we be appalled by the ascendancy of this evangelist of anti-Christian philosophy? Shouldn't we all especially we "Christians" be mobilizing to counter the malevolent force of this man on our culture and politics?

As you've probably guessed by this point, I'm not really talking about LaVey but about his mentor, Ayn Rand. The ascendancy of LaVey and his embrace by "conservative"

leaders would indeed cause paroxysms of indignation. Yet, while the two figures' philosophies are nearly identical, Rand appears to have received a pass. Why is that?

Perhaps most are unaware of the connection, though LaVey wasn't shy about admitting his debt to his inspiration. "I give people Ayn Rand with trappings," he once told the *Washington Post*. On another occasion he acknowledged that his brand of Satanism was "just Ayn Rand's philosophy with ceremony and ritual added." Indeed, the influence is so apparent that LaVey has been accused of plagiarizing part of his "Nine Satanic Statements" from the John Galt speech in Rand's *Atlas Shrugged*.

Devotees of Rand may object to my outlining the association between the two. They will say I am proposing "guilt by association," a form of the *ad hominem fallacy*. But I am not attacking Rand for the overlap of her views with LaVey's; I am saying that, at their core, they are *the same philosophy*. LaVey was able to recognize what many conservatives fail to see: Rand's doctrines are satanic.

I realize that even to invoke that infernal word conjures images of black masses, human sacrifices, and record needles broken trying to play "Stairway to Heaven" backwards. But satanism is more banal and more attractive than the parody created by LaVey. Real satanism has been around since the beginning of history, selling an appealing message: Your eyes will be opened, and you will be like God.

You can replace the pentagrams of LaVeyian Satanism with the dollar sign of the Objectivists without changing much of the substance separating the two. The ideas are largely the same, though the movements' aesthetics are different. One appeals to, we might say, the Young Libertarians, and the other attracts the Future Wiccans of America.

What is harder to understand is why both ideologies appeal to Christians and conservatives. My guess is that these groups are committing what I'd call the fallacy of personal compatibility. This fallacy occurs when a person thinks that because one subscribes to both "Belief X" and "Belief Y," the two beliefs must therefore be compatible. For example, a person may claim that "life has meaning" and that "everything that exists is made of matter" even though the two claims are not compatible (unless "meaning" is made of matter). This take on the fallacy has long been committed by atheists. Now it appears to be growing in popularity among conservatives and Christians as well.

But to be a follower of both Rand and Christ is not possible. The original Objectivist was a type of self-professed anti-Christ who hated Christianity and the self-sacrificial love of its founder. She recognized that those Christians who claimed to share her views didn't seem to understand what she was saying.

Many conservatives admire Rand because she was anti-collectivist. But that is like admiring Stalin because he opposed Nazism. Stalin was against the Nazis because he wanted to make the world safe for Communism. Likewise, Rand stands against collectivism because she wants the freedom to abolish Judeo-Christian morality. Conservative Christians who embrace her as the “enemy-of-my-enemy” seem to forget that she considered *us* the enemy.

Even if this were not the case, though, what would warrant the current influence of her thought within the conservative movement? Rand was a third-rate writer who was too arrogant to recognize her own ignorance (she believed she was the third greatest philosopher in history, behind only Aristotle and Aquinas). She misunderstood almost every concept she engaged with”from capitalism to freedom”and wrote nothing that had not been treated before by better thinkers. We don’t need her any more than we need LaVey.

Few conservatives will fall completely under Rand’s diabolic sway. But we are sustaining a climate in which not a few gullible souls believe she is worth taking seriously. Are we willing to be held responsible for pushing them to adopt an anti-Christian worldview? If so, perhaps instead of recommending *Atlas Shrugged*, we should simply hand out copies of *The Satanic Bible* . If they’re going to align with a satanic cult, they might as well join the one that has the better holidays.

Nice work, Mr. Carter! (<https://www.firstthings.com/web-exclusives/2011/06/the-fountainhead-of-satanism>)

Is not Christ the Atlas that did *not* shrug? Is He not the Atlas of Faith in the Father, the Hercules of All-Righteousness, who though possessed of all things, did not disdain to be shorn of all things, yes, even, and especially, to save and raise up to abundant life those who pierced him, and mocked him, and spat upon him? Is that Atlas not the true Atlas worthy of all our praise? And, indeed, all our love.

Uh, brah, my very and true brah Paul, listen up Brah Paul, listen to yourself, *hear yourself*, Brah Paul: <https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=WmW19uoyuO8>

Then, after you hear yourself, and turn from yourself, and see with the eyes of faith, let’s get brewskis together and chat. I’ll pay. It’s on me. For - though I can never succeed without the grace of the Christ -- the total and undeserved free *gift* of Him who loved me, though I had first failed to love Him, and I did spit upon Him through each sin of mine -- I strive to imitate my Master and be worthy of such a gracious and free and total *gift*.

https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=_8m8cQI4DgM

The Christian says, “I care only about His Work, done His Way, nothing else matters to me.”

Do not make a shipwreck of your faith by following the call of Sirens. No, do not be like that! Rather, steer your ship like a true pilot, according only to the Star that is sent from Above. Do not be like foolish children who strut about and grab whatever they can for themselves, and then, in their fury, thrash each other to pieces, biting and clawing and killing each other for the “sacred” purpose of one’s own glory. Do not imitate the true master of that kind of thinking, of that kind of behavior: the Lord of the Flies, which in Hebrew is translated Beelzebub - or in better Hebrew Ba’al Zevuv. Do not worship Ba’al, for in that is death, as all the prophets have spoken from Moses down unto Yeshua. For Elijah the Prophet hated the worshippers of that nothing, Ba’al.

Listen to Scripture with all the ears of humility and faith:

The prophet was seated on a hilltop when he found him. “Man of God,” he ordered, “the king [of the fallen world, in image the king of Israel, but in inner form, that foul self-made king, Satan, the ruler of the world] commands you to come down.”

“IF I am a man of God,” Elijah answered the captain, “may fire come down from heaven and consume you and your fifty men.” And fire came down from heaven and consumed him and his fifty men.”

(2 Kings 1:9b-10)

Do not follow the path of the Ba’als, for *listen* to their fate:

Jehu, a servant of the Lord, said, “Search and be sure that there is no worshiper of the LORD here with you, but only worshippers of Ba’al.” As Scripture says, “Then they [Jehu and his men] proceeded to offer sacrifices and holocausts. Now Jehu had stationed eighty men outside with this warning, “If one of you lets anyone escape of those whom I shall deliver into your hands, he shall pay life for life.” As soon as he finished offering the holocaust, Jehu said to the guards and officers, “Go in and slay them. Let no one escape.” So the guards and officers put them to the sword and cast them out. Afterward they went into the inner shrine of the temple of Ba’al, took out the stele of Ba’al, and burned the shrine. Then they smashed the stele of Ba’al, tore down the building, and turned it into a latrine, as it remains today.”

(2 Kings 11: 23-27)

Should not, in truth, the whole cult of Selfishness be torn down and turned into a latrine? And, if there is a God who agrees with that sentiment, should you not shudder in fear lest you too be turned into a latrine?

(The reason violence was acceptable, when used for righteousness under the command of the LORD, in the days before the Messiah, is that if this world is all there is, as it necessarily was prior to the Savior, how could you not use everything you had - including violence - to preserve your life - your own life, the life of your family and nation, and the life of your fidelity to

HaShem? But, after the world has ended, and the end of days has come upon you, and you have the assured Victory of Eternal Life though you should die, how could such a one with that conviction and that assurance sully himself with killing to preserve his life, when he knows that he cannot but fall into the favor and loving arms of His All-Embracing Father?)

Should you not rather follow the Way of the Magi, who, though pagans and not part of Israel, still strove and said, "Where is the newborn king of the Jews? We saw his star at its rising and have come to do him homage" (Matthew 2:2). Would you not, with Mary, 'keep all these things, reflecting on them in your heart'?

Should it come as any surprise that those who, though saying they are Christians, live for and fight for the word of Satan, expressed in the novels of a bitter atheist, most hateful towards and arrogant against the God of Christ, should, in their blind stupidity, dance around that most vile Self-Creation, that most unwholesome and unholy Self-Made God-Emperor/petulant man-child, that really great, really fantastic, *huuuuuuuuuuuugely* self-incredible, oh so Self-Glittering God Unto Himself.....oh you know who I'm talking about.

Bernie Sanders.....he's such a shlemiel.

"If I knew I was going to meet the President I would have wore a tie. I mean, look at me, I look like a shlemiel."

Atheism: An Investigation

Even the most ardent materialist must concede this one point: that you have an inner life. Whatever kind of inner life you think it is, however you think it manifests itself, or wherever you think it goes, you know you have an inner life.

Thus, let your inner life be as a window, and not as a mirror. Do not let your inner life only reflect yourself, and thus perish, truly in this life and totally forever in whatever life may come. Rather, as wise people, full of goodness and truth, let your inner life be as a window, looking out upon others and upon the loveliness of all creation and let your inner life be shone upon by the Light.

And do not fear -- *do not fear at all!* -- that you might somehow lose yourself in looking out the window. Take no comfort in the mirror, for though it may seem bright, it is just illusion, and emptiness, and can give no light that does not come from outside it.

For consider, and I do tell you truly, consider well, for your very life depends on it: If you are as nothing, but an ephemeral wisp of matter, then you lose nothing by looking outside of yourself for meaning. For if you look within, what shall you find, but nothing -- and nothingness?

But, if you look outward, you will not merely behold one small wisp of matter, but a whole cosmic ocean of matter, and would that not be a far greater light than your small flicker? Would not that whole Universe be the image of that whole Fire of Cosmic Majesty? And would not the sight of such a Plenitude of Abundance be a far greater joy than your small, feeble flicker? Would not that Cosmic Ocean endure in wonder and possibility, but you, in the foolish solitude of your small flicker, blow away into darkness?

And, rather, if the spiritual be the truth, and not merely the fantasy of the material, and when, blown into darkness, you awake into a world you had not dreamed of, or only barely dreamed of, would not it have been most wise to gaze out the window, and not blankly stared into the mirror?

For, if you are, in fact, spirit - eternal, enduring, permanent, infinite - and you gaze out the window, would you not have an infinite sight that springs out of your infinite spirit? Would not your sight, if nourished in the passing temporal phase, reach out to an infinite horizon once entered into eternity? And if your sight -- which is nothing other than your self (your true self) -- should see infinitely - if your sight should extend infinitely, must it not, at long last, return to you, involve on itself, and wind upward, in a spiral, and reach the highest Truth, which at present, in your low, limited state, you cannot even imagine?

But, if in this life, this passing temporal phase, you could never *turn* yourself away from yourself, from the vanity of your mirror, should not that blank self, once entered into eternity, be totally *unable* - not shut out by some other force, but UNABLE by reason of *its own* blankness, to reach out but a whit beyond itself, and thus would it not be *totally* unable to rise to anything beyond itself? And if, as the prophets of the fairies say generation after generation and from age to age, you are indeed but a reflection of a greater Light, should you not starve and be in darkness and misery and grind and gnash your teeth and be totally cold and shut out from any Light -- and forever?

And consider this: and consider well:

Are you so sure, scientific materialist atheist or simple non-believer, that you do not have a soul that survives death and then endures in a fixed state forever?

Why so sure?

Talking snakes! Creationism! Magic miracles! Bloody Old Testament! Sexism! Patriarchy! Shoddy archaeological record! Biblical inconsistency! Book of Jewish Fairy Tales! Might as well believe in fairies! ::snicker:: ::snicker:: ::snicker:: Nonsense hehe hehe

Mhm

Okay. Yes. I'm very impressed. You're very smart. Bravo.

So sure then that you know the nature of the Cosmos? You live in the very enlightened age of the 21st century. And those in the 20th thought they were very enlightened...and those in the 19th and 18th and 17th and 16th each marveled at the stature of their knowledge. Aristotle was smarter than you are, and he wrote treatises that revolved around the concept that the earth was the center of the universe. It is not because he was stupid, very much far from it.

You (most of you) don't know anything more about the Cosmos than any Medieval Catholic or Roman or Greek philosopher or Jewish priest in the Temple, or priest of Egypt four thousand years ago. Most of you only know the earth revolves around the sun because it is common knowledge, propagated by the scientific and educational establishment.

But if you were transported back to 10,000 B.C. and induced into an amnesiac state, you would have no way of knowing that geocentrism was false and that heliocentrism is true.

Not only that, but whatever your cavemen brothers told you about the world, you'd probably believe too - believing in whatever spirit and ancestor gods they worshipped and holding their views about the nature of reality.

And even scientists only have limited knowledge. They know, in a way, what can be proven...and that only in their fields, and only really in their sub-fields. But even that knowledge can and almost certainly will be revised and reformulated, in ways that will upend many things we take for granted today.

So, step back, materialist, atheist, non-believer and secular irreligious. Step back and take a look at the Cosmos with me.

Do you know what the Cosmos is? Do you know its extent or total nature? Would it even be possible for you to comprehend the scope of what we trace in the vast oceans of cosmic deep space with that little vat of goo in your cranium? What if there were a billion universes, a trillion universes, like ours? What if there were an infinity of them? And not just an infinity of universes like our own, but an infinity of realities beyond our imagination?

So, you are quite steeped in your ignorance of the Cosmos. You feel at home, we hope, in your work life, and your family life, and you feel quite comfortable when you watch television on your couch or walk around the mall. And you take a deep breath and say, 'This must be all there is, this here and now, and when we die we rot.'

That corpse you're carrying around every day -- your body -- that certainly rots. We can see that.

But look closer.

Yes, your brain rots too.

But are you your brain?

Of course, that's what I think with!

Do you, the you in you?

What?

Consider the within. Teilhard de Chardin wrote many questionable things, (and many wonderful things), but one point you can't argue with is that you have a "within". You have an Inner Life.

Now, you may say, yes, of course, but that Inner Life dissipates with the material dysfunction of my neural death.

Why so sure?

We have the principle of conservation of matter. You *cannot* destroy matter. You can change its forms, you can release it into energy -- but the conservation of matter (and energy) is absolute.

And then you say, but my consciousness is "emergent" from the concatenation (working) of the matter that makes up your brain.

I would certainly agree that *much* of your consciousness (at least from a purely materialist point of view) is dependent on the workings of your brain -- destroy part of it or rewire or restructure part of it, and you will behave differently, and think differently, and see the world differently.

But...you -- you -- will still see. SEE. There is still something that perceives, sitting behind all the vehicle of conscious, concatenating matter. Even if, unfortunately, you were to be

quite mentally handicapped and debilitated by some horrible accident, might not -- wouldn't it be rather probable -- that *some* kind of perceiver - percipient - I, an I AM - still exists. Even if you were in the most comatose, vegetative state with no *higher* brain functions, might not, somewhere in that ruined mechanism, exist the percipient...even unto but one "particle" of an I, of an I AM.

We can put your body in a prison. That does not imprison your mind. (It can abuse your mind, but you'll still have the mind you have, in terms of your general faculties if not your emotions or performance or acuity). So why should mangling or stripping away the functionality of the greater structure of your consciousness totally destroy the "percipient I AM" that stands behind all of that and views what is going on. Now, just as you will be miserable in prison, so you would be miserable trapped in a vegetative state. But your misery would not necessarily negate the possibility that, *within*, was some sort of enduring I AM.

Religion speaks of the soul. Aristotle spoke of the highest level of intellect that might survive death as a sailor departs a ship. Leibniz wrote about his monadology, in which, in part, psychological percipients are not epiphenomena (accidents, illusions) of matter, but have an existential quiddity (real nature) of their own.

What can we say? Let us, if we talk only in our limited knowledge (which, not subsisting in a total knowledge cannot even really be said to be any sort of knowledge (c.f. Socrates), but only a kind of concordance between perceived accidents -- David Hume proved all this in his *Enquiry Concerning Human Understanding*), shorn of the aid and comfort of divine revelation, talk rather of what I humbly offer as "the viewer". The viewer is that I, that I AM, that stands behind all the whorl and whirring of your mere brain, which can dysfunction, get aneurysms, be hobbled by embolisms, be cut apart, blown apart, have its neurons be starved of the necessary oxygen to engage in cellular respiration.

The viewer isn't much. And yet, we might quite rightly say that it is everything.

The viewer isn't much. Without the whirling apparatus of your brain, you cannot hold down a job, stand, walk, feed yourself, calculate, have deep cognitive states, do much of anything.

But the viewer *sees* everything that all the rest of that mechanism *does*. Now, if feeble or ruined or somehow otherwise impaired, that viewer may not see a very pretty sight. And, if engorged with pleasures that satiate the mechanism in which the viewer is contained, the viewer might see a quite delightful sight. And, we might imagine that if we were to, in future ages, engineer superior forms of technological consciousness, with greater calculative ability and much finer, sharper, subtler acuity, the viewer *within* such an "external" mechanism of matter might enjoy a delight far greater than we can imagine.

As an aside, it is, truly, rather crude to only think of the “you” as your brain. Even from a purely, exclusively, narrowly materialist perspective, are not “you” the nerves that send signals to the brain? For if eliminative, total materialism were true, then “where” in your brain are “you”? Is not this “you” that you’ve vaguely located in your brain just the relic of a religious imagination tossed downstream into a secular age? Wouldn’t “you” at least have to be your brain and the nerves (the whole nervous system) coursing through your body? And how is it “*your* body” -- there’s that religious “you”, the soul, lurking again. So, wouldn’t as Walt Whitman declared, the body have to be the soul -- there could be no difference - unless you granted a “you” - a soul.

But it makes no sense (from a materialist point of view) to stop there. For, we conceive of the natural world, the material Universe, as a unity. A true materialist does not see “objects” floating in space, but merely a whorl of matter that the mind perceives as this and that. But there’s that “you” again, now lurking in the Kantian mind.

Wouldn’t it be the case, from a materialist point of view, that “you”, that is to say, your body would be no different than any other material formation in the Cosmos - really, actually, fundamentally no different than a river, mountain, tree, gust of wind. It’s all just matter in motion. If you are a true materialist, then “you” are just matter in motion. Your body is no different from any other body - meant in the physical sense of bodies in motion. “You” (from that point of view) do not exist apart from the Cosmos -- *you are the Cosmos*.

It’s like sitting in traffic. You say, “Oh, boy, I’m in so much traffic.” Not exactly -- you *are* the traffic. A true materialist cannot meaningfully look at anything - a car, a book, a piece of furniture, or a tree, and say that “you” are anything different.

And yet, the “you” persists -- the gut understanding and self-knowledge that “you’re in there”. You may intellectually accept that you’re no different from a stream or stone...but you know there’s something more going on. Because *you’re* within all that flow of the Cosmos.

Indeed, you are within. You have an inner life. And that inner life is not simply the whorl of your body, or even your brain, it is the viewer standing behind all that. Even should you lose your sense of self, even if you should not have access to memories or capacities, some viewer would still perceive what the material mechanism it was contained in was *seeing*. And it is that sight which makes up the viewer. The seer and the sight are one.

Now, if all the apparatus of your material body be obliterated (really if the matter should become altered such that the mechanism no longer functions), we don’t say that some physical body has been lost, just transformed.

So, in a Cosmos where we take the conservation of matter and energy for granted, why should we so lightly dismiss the conservation of this seeing - this sight that says I? Not the complex of emotions and the unconscious and memories and intentions -- which would contract

with less satisfactory neural configurations and expand with better ones -- but this simple, apparently ineradicable, self - this selfness - this I -- the viewer.

When matter is rearranged, we do not say that it is gone, we say that it has taken a new form. Might not this I, this viewer, simply take a new form? In some way, (without the assistance of divine revelation), we could not imagine?

If you reject the spirit/matter distinction out of a distaste for religion, (because it can't be a scientific objection - "science" simply means a material demonstration, and, as I discuss elsewhere, such demonstration is meaningless to the concept of a spirit), then you must think of that viewer as some kind of monad - some kind of elemental something that endures within the material universe. I, who believe in spiritual reality, can simply say that my viewer, my spiritual sight, simply enters eternity, which is the spiritual reality outside this material reality. But a materialist has no recourse -- that ineradicable viewer must bounce off somewhere *within* the material universe.

Now that viewer might not have much part in anything. It is only a seer, not a doer. But, if the viewer - the fundamental, elemental I - has some kind of existence, we might want to inquire into what kind of existence it is.

We might step back and consider: what is the materialism that materialists are touting? That there is nothing else but matter. Okay. What is matter? Particles. Okay. Then where is consciousness, the seemingly ineradicable I? It is emergent from matter. I see. So, everything else in the Cosmos is an atom (in the elemental, Greek sense), but consciousness is merely a phantom, an epiphenomena of the particles that we can currently subject to our 21st century physical analysis.

This is a strange doctrine for a thoroughgoing materialist to hold. The materialist must necessarily rule out the spirit, any concept of a spiritual-eternal world that exists as the true reality, in which this material-temporal reality is merely contained, and, indeed, subject thereunto.

So, then, from the most basic formula of the materialist creed: everything that is, endures and persists merely in this material-temporal-spatial phase. So, if we have the conservation of matter and energy as a constant principle, and we see that the scientific materialist principle is atomism, then where shall we say this I is? It cannot exist in an eternal realm into which the I is merely reflected or inflected. For the materialist says that there is no spiritual reality. So then this I is but a mere phantom?

All the great successes of materialism lie in atomism. Remove atomism and no one would be a materialist, because it wouldn't have any demonstrated power in the technological, engineering, scientific, and educational establishments. This "phantom" materialism, wherein we simply deny spiritual realities, saying that it is all shadows and fairies and ghosts, doesn't

really have much to do with thoroughgoing atomism. It is more of an epileptic fit against a religiosity that the phantom materialist atheist finds distasteful.

So if we abandon the arid “new atheism” of these militant phantom materialists, we may consider that if you are a materialist, you’re only sensible if you’re an atomist, and if you’re an atomist then *every* reality in the Cosmos must have some quiddity - some endurance in existence - there is simply no way to “explain away” any phenomenon. Every phenomenon must have an atom representing it, or being it.

I do not confound myself with such perplexities, because I am a Platonic-Aristotelian Catholic Christian with Jewish affinities. I, quite reasonably, distinguish form from matter. Form exists as a percipient and as a perceived. Matter is the substrate, whether atomic or not, in which that form is ended.

But the materialist has no such recourse. For me, a phenomenon can be seen as a hylomorphism of form and matter. The materialist can have no recourse to forms.

So we see a strange belief at work. Essentially, the idea of forms - of the soul - has somehow lingered on in the minds of even materialists and emerged as this idea of an “emergent” consciousness - the idea that the phenomenon of the fundamental I, the viewer, is but a mere phantom. I thought materialists had consigned phantoms to the past.

So, is it so unreasonable to determine that the I has an atomic quality? I do not think that is the case, because I hold to a belief in spiritual reality. But a materialist has no such recourse. We are all faced right at the nose with the phenomenon of the I, and so does an atomist really have any choice but to concede an atomic reality to that I?

If we do that, we can consider that “I” as a kind of psychical monad. I would say psychic but the word has been too sullied by fortunetellers.

What might be the nature of this psychical monad, this viewer that stands behind the whole cognitive apparatus of matter in motion? Hard to say, since I don’t believe in it, but rather believe in spirit.

But if this psychical monad is an atom, and (true, elemental) atoms are indestructible, then shall not that teeny-weeny “I”, shorn of the great vehicle of its corpse, still endure, somewhere out there.

How this psychical monad would relate to matter is beyond us. But then again the nature of dark matter and dark energy are beyond us, and we do not yet even have a concrete theory of quantum gravity. So, some humility might be in order. If that psychical monad had some relationship to our matter, it might be reasonable to think that it could continue to be present to other realities.

At this point, the psychical monad starts looking awfully like the soul. And this should be unsurprising, since the etymology of the word "soul" indicates that it originates from the word for sea or lake. For this psychical monad would very quickly seem like something enduring and yet evasive.

We might, if we were thoroughgoing materialists, hypothesize some such concept: that this psychical monad might be some kind of, say, a virus. It is endued in what is capable of sustaining it. And we might consider that there are other psychical monads suited to other beings.

We might also speculate that, while gestating in the host of its material mechanism of consciousness, it had the opportunity to grow and develop its psychical capacities -- or not.

And if it did not, if it could only view itself -- if that psychical monad were turned in on itself like a mirror, what a sad little psychical monad that would be. Lost in a Cosmic Ocean of darkness, with reality all around, and yet shut out from that light and warmth, imploded into its own self-viewing.

But, if that psychical monad had developed its psychical capacities while gestating in its host, once shorn of its host, it might be turned to the great sight of the whole material Cosmos, if indeed solely material it be.

And, why should we assume that our little psychical monad will get endless chances to reform itself? It's a big bad Cosmos out there, filled, presumably, with other psychical monads. If such a psychical monad couldn't play nice in this meager host, and denied itself the power of an externally directed sight, why should we expect any greater concordance of such psychical monads -- whatever the monadic atomic structure of such a reality might be -- to be particularly solicitous towards it? If it had not been able even to view the Cosmic Ocean of matter, but could only see-feel-understand itself, wouldn't it be quite useless in a Cosmos coming awake and becoming ever more connected in psychical reality?

For, isn't it becoming increasingly plain, with each passing decade, that the watchmaker's concept of the Cosmos is quite sterile, arid -- even, in the final analysis, useless? The concept of the Cosmos as a mechanism has had its successes in physics and chemistry. The idea of the human body as a mechanism had its successes as well. But doesn't a thoroughgoing understanding of the human body require a leap from merely mechanical thinking to a thoroughgoing re-estimation of the matter in terms of *organic* thinking? For the human body, in the fullness of its rich workings, is not simply some crude pulley and lever system, with a few cogs here and a couple cranks there. No, it is rather a wondrous assemblage of, yes atomic matter, but formed and self-forming in such a way that it evidently displays a *teleological* dimension, an impulse rushing *towards* some outcome, some desired effect -- one of which is its own flourishing, defined in myriad different ways. We can see in the body - the flesh - that, yes, the body is not a magician, it cannot *magically* effect its wishes --- *but* the flesh, the organism,

clearly *has* such wishes, it clearly, in the unfolding of the imperatives of its dynamical organism, even we can say *reaches* towards some goal. Each speck of each atomic (in the Greek sense) particle exists, but it is *constrained* - *conscripted* - into the service of that organic dynamism. Now, naturally the nature of matter is a constraining force -- this apparent organic dynamism cannot flit to and fro like some fairy and impose its will (or *its* nature) on other natures (like the atomic specks) simply by fiat, by some magical incantation.

Now, shall we say this most evident organic dynamism, evident in not only biological life, but in the workings of cosmological bodies, is all but mere phantom? Mere illusion?

There's that Aristotelian legacy again -- We consider *some* realities as real, and thus assign them atomic quiddity, and we consider *other* realities somehow second-class (or no-class) citizens of the Cosmos - and we damn them to some kind of phantom unreality - a mere shadow, an illusion, a fantasy of the material.

Now, I, with my Aristotelian beliefs can endure quite nicely with my four causes and hylomorphism and teleology. But isn't it plain that simply casting away - wishing away - phenomena such as free will, the fundamental I, and the apparent organic dynamism of the Cosmos is a kind of perverse reverse action - a kind of motor dysfunction - of a thoroughgoing thinking? Be an Aristotelian or be a thoroughgoing Hobbesian: But you can't be both. Even Hobbes himself in his *Leviathan* stated that the soul was a thin vapor permeating the body. I do not stake out such a claim, but at least Hobbes was thoroughgoing enough in his thinking to realize that if you're a thoroughgoing atomist you *cannot* wish away phenomena as illusions; no, you must *account* for phenomena - all phenomena - within an atomic understanding.

For, if matter is all there is, how can matter have fantasies? Wouldn't believing that phenomena are mere illusions simply be another form of magical thinking? Wouldn't simply believing that such obvious phenomena have no atomic quiddity of their own be nothing more than to say that the things you don't believe in - or don't want to believe in - are mere ghosts? So the shamans in the caves and the fields have their ghosts, the spirits in the hills and the valleys and the creeks, and the meager 21st century phantom materialist scientist has *his* ghosts -- only now his ghosts are those unwanted specters of free will, the subjectivity of the I, and the teleological dimension of the Cosmos.

But consider this: The whole modern project began with Lord Bacon's mad, fanatical, brilliant endeavor - his Great Instauration - to rip out Aristotelianism by the root from the natural philosophy of his day. And yet, does not - (from a materialist point of view) - that Aristotelianism still persist in the body of today's modern natural science? -- it lingers as a rheumatism, a pleurisy, even unto a cancer of the philosophical outlook of the apparatus of modern natural science.

But if we at last (if you should wish to do so), rip out those last metastatic elements of the mind of modern natural science, shouldn't we then complete Bacon's project? For then you

would have a truly thoroughgoing materialism - an *entirely* atomic materialism, no longer plagued by the Aristotelian cancer cells that produced from the genius of atomic materialism the vain, insipid, nigh insufferable epilepsy of that frothing phantom materialism. For an atomic materialism can see clear to the wondrous workings of this Cosmos. This bogey, this phantom materialism, is only useful for convincing yourself that it is quite all right to commit adultery, drink excessively, and do whatsoever you please because there is no moral dimension to the Cosmos. For, in the all-surpassing wisdom of our watchmaker scientists with their watchmaker minds, the scientific and educational establishments have gone up the mountain of their own self-estimation and announced Instruction from On High: There is no god! god is dead! god is a delusion!

Do people in the valley hear this and say: Oh, yes, now shall we patiently, quietly, subtly, carefully work out what must necessarily be the moral dimension of the Cosmos? Do they say: Come let us all sit together thoughtfully and converse about the wondrous possibilities of existence?

No.

They scramble about madly like the little idiots they are and murder each other, and rape each other, and slit each other's throats, and war with each other, and fornicate endlessly and senselessly, carouse, drink, and, at last, bring mayhem upon the whole social fabric.

Shall a true materialist, the only healthy kind of materialist: that is to say, a completely and thoroughlygoing *atomic* materialist, not necessarily have to say: I cannot cast off these specters I find distasteful - the sensation of free will, the subjectivity and apparent existential ineradicability of the I, the teleological sweep of our evolving Cosmos, and our inner subjectivity's primal, innate, invincible moral convictions. No, I must rather *incorporate* them into the account that I attempt to give of the Cosmos.

And here we come to another matter: the utter, detestable, silly, nonsensical *vanity* - *VANITY* - and vanity not fair, of those who attempt to give the account. For, far too much, our little idiot scientists run around and imitate every vain, grandiose philosophe - not philosopher, but dabbler in curious concepts - indeed, they even imitate professional wrestlers in the ring, sure that they, grand little mind of theirs, shall surely surmount that vast horizon of Cosmic wonder and plenitude and *they* - they like a lawgiver - shall come down the Mountain of All Knowledge and pronounce the final truth, the final account: from on high, *they* shall have the.....and oh, here is the rub, the essential problem...they shall have the *credit* for discovering such a wonderful and final, oh so very final, account.

But that makes the same mistake that is the characteristic folly of materialism -- to first run in the paths of atomism, and then slide stupidly and foolishly into the valleys of phantomism, of shamanism, of pronouncing phenomena mere illusions, fantasies - ghosts.

For, what can a mere wisp - and a will-o'-the-wisp at that - possibly have to do with credit? Shall not such a search craving after credit be nothing more than the most obtuse,

noxious, bad-tempered, nonsensical vainglory? Shall not those who possess such cancers of the intellect have all the bad odor of someone with the most foul breath? Shall he conduct himself in such a manner that, in his investigations of the Cosmos, (if he is a true materialist, which I am not, being a spiritualist), he can *separate* himself from that Cosmos, and then, in the maddeningly infinitesimal limitations of his own intellectual finitude, declare - *I - ME, I ME OH MY - I have done it! I have delivered the final account of the Cosmos. I - my sight, my intellect - does at last view the entirety of the whole Grand Organism.* And then pat himself on the back and await his Nobel Prize? That does not strike me as a mind noble enough to merit the Cosmos.

So, if one had a truly healthy mind, one could clearly see a couple basic facts -- they would become as apparent as the fingers on his hand, and he could count them like a child, and say, 1...another 1.....another 1....another 1....he might even be able to summon the idea of number and even *count* 1....2....3....4.

Those facts would be, first, that there are psychical phenomena in the Cosmos of which the scientific-educational Mesopotamian priesthood of our Great Academic Ziggurat has failed to give any satisfactory, much less sufficient, laughably less final, *account*. All such limited wisps as ourselves can do -- perhaps even all the whole Cosmos alive with Nous can do -- is humbly, quietly, patiently, thoughtfully, cheerfully *sketch* formulas of that account. And hopefully sketch and paint ever more refined and *closer* sketches of such an account. The formulas will always be more refined, and give off more and more useful light, *but* no such formulas can ever be considered the final account.

For, the new atheists scornfully chuckle: How could it be that the Messiah came into a backwater two thousand years ago: how could such a thing be the wellspring of all salvation?

I believe it. You know I believe it.

But, the new atheist replaces that creed with his own creed: Here and now, in our times, in this century, in these five centuries, we bipedaled super-apes, roaming around like ants on this single speck of dust in infinite space, *WE - THE GREAT AND POWERFUL WE - even I*, the mad scientist with foul breath, *I - the demon-god I of the foul Ayn Rand!* - : he says like a lawgiver: We-I-Me-Oh-My, Here it is! Eureka! Here and now we have discovered the final and total account that shall explain all the Cosmos! Perhaps a few minor workings out remain, but come let us glory in our own magnificence, we who have surmounted that Great Cosmic Mount! We who, though merely a part of the Cosmos, have somehow stood apart from it, and given an *account* of that vast and wondrous Cosmos.

In other words, given the failures of the formulas of the science of our “modern” - oh so modern - times to account for even the most basic elements of the soul and of Soul, of all its many wonderful dimensions, perhaps I - but, I hope, not just I, but all those who think similarly like Thomas Nagel - can offer, humbly, a different conception: that of an organic Cosmos, one that is, in fact, totally One and All, in which our psychical and moral experiences, our quiddities in those dimensions, are not mere ghosts in the machine, but perhaps the very pilots of that

machine! Such that it would no longer be some crude mechanism, but a wondrous mechanism in service to an even more wonderful Organism!

Now this assuredly sounds like, and would be, some kind of panentheism. But I am not a panentheist. I am actually, truly, really, really really, an orthodox catholic Christian. I would be perfectly at home - though in awe - at the Last Supper, race away from Jesus' arrest like the stupid, little idiot I was, and I would, after the Resurrection, ecstatically race with Peter and the apostles to evangelize the whole world. I lack not the spirit. For I truly believe in the Spirit, and strive with my whole spirit to align myself, *turn* myself to the Spirit - the Spirit of God - of a Vast and Wondrous Spiritual Plenitude beyond all our vain and material imaginings.

But, even if one does not have the conviction of the intellect, or at least the conviction of the heart, the faith of the heart, how can one be so blind as to, once you have, like Satan, freed yourself from those harsh constraints -- really the Seraphic and Blessed medicines and assistances - of Divine Revelation, then run around like a little idiot and pronounce yourself KING OF THE WORLD, EMPEROR OF ALL REALITY IN THE INFINITE PLENITUDE OF MY ALL-KNOWLEDGE - I - NUMBER ONE, OH-ME-OH-MY!!!!!!!!!!

?

?

?!!!

So, doesn't it appear much more likely that, at least from this hypothetical standpoint of my own will-o'-the-wisp, that the Cosmos far more resembles (although, who can say what it truly is? - if not the One God) a Great, Wondrous, and Vast Organism, an Oceanic Flesh far exceeding our vain, mechanical, futile, starved, tiny, pinprick imaginations, such that all of us -- all our own little I's, now for this brief time, like a virus, inhabiting this host of our little cells, have an *immortal, ineradicable endurance and perpetuity in that Cosmos?!*

And, isn't it a fine and reasonable speculation, that if we little viruses of that wisp of psyche don't make full use of such a fine host, as that of our brains and nerves and sinews and muscles and bones and flesh, how shall we, in whatever the true nature of our psychical capacities may be, ever hope to attain to a meaningful role in that Great and evolving Cosmos, as it attains its final and glorious extent? Would we not, if we looked only inward, at our own pathetic nothingness, and declared it everything! - be quite useless in the Grand Psychical Project of that Organism, whose, yes, soul was Psyche itself? Wouldn't we, if we failed to properly align and develop our psychical properties wisely - rather than in the derangement of self-preference - be cast off by that Grand Psyche in all the Splendor of its Organism, like a useless piece of dust, a speck of grime?

Wouldn't even it be conceivable -- really, only logical and indeed rationally necessary -- for such an Organism, by its own necessary wisdom and for its own self-preservation and for the sake of its own flourishing, to not only cast out such a deficient, failed, utterly useless virus of psyche, but indeed, to flush it out with every medicine - "antibody" "antidote" "remedy" - available to it?

Oh, and that Grand Organism of the Cosmos --- it could not simply *eradicate* that poor little useless virus of psyche. It *could not*, since, if we are thoroughly atomistic materialists (the only sane kind of materialist there could be), then that tiny virus of psyche cannot be destroyed, as surely as no elemental particle or ribbon of energy could ever be destroyed - only changed into another form. And how sad it would be o' little virus, if you failed to develop, in this host, your proper psychological capacities. For, if you were unable to act properly -- *sanely*, *sensibly* - in this manifestation, in this host, how should you ever be able to join in the higher psychological capacities of the Great Psyche of the Grand Organism of the Cosmos? You would not. All for your petty little lusts, and greeds, and vanities, and angers, and prides, and outrages, you would exchange a new and better mode of being, in a new transformation of that psychic self, in the Fullness of such an All-Psyche in a Total Organism, for a blank, and indeed afflicted (afflicted by the "antibodies" of such a Total Organism) existence -- a sad, meager, but *eternal* existence, starved of the nourishment, satiation, comfort, companionship, fellowship, intimacy, and, indeed, light of *any* other psyche, much less the Great Psyche.

And if this is true, and it seems rather compelling (from a materialist point of view), what is the proud "new atheist" accomplishing, exactly? Is he producing sane, sensible, humble atomic materialists? Or, is he not much rather, stripping off the only thing that separated the masses of little psyches from an eternity of affliction -- from a quite, real, quite material, quite *atomic* Hell: Spiritual, Revealed Religion.

And it gets even worse than that! Because, consider -- we cannot *really* consider the temporal to be the last word. Because, what would be outside the temporal? Well, nothing, you say? Oh, really? Would not that temporal - viewed outside of itself - be but eternal? That is, would not that whole temporal *turning* roll - the whole temporal universe - be self-existing, and all-existing *all at once*?

And it gets even worse for the new atheist. For, would not that Psyche, existing eternally *now*, in a complete temporal phase of itself, with all its temporal periods united within the Unity of that Organic Psyche, not try, in its good sense and natural compassion, to give a clue to we stupid little wisps in this Age of Barbarism in which we persist? Might it not be possible that such a Psyche spoke - communicated - to we little tiny wisps in the only ways that would be understandable to them? Would not then the whole of human history be a kind of tutelage to that Psyche, which, in its Benevolence, strives to prevent even we tiny psyches from ending up useless and afflicted with that Grand Psychic Organism's necessary - but harsh - antibodies?

Might not that ever-existing Great Psyche, from the far point of its own present, our future, send spokesmen, to speak for it? To warn people about what awaits them if they fail to make good use of the host in which they currently reside? So all that talk of talking snakes, and 7 day creation, and Trees of Life and Trees of Knowledge and all the rest -- might that not *even from the most ardently, yet sane, materialist position* be but how a *wise* Psyche speaks to primitives? What is the Psyche supposed to say to cavemen, Bronze Age warriors and farmers, Roman legions who believe in Zeus, Hera, Athena? Is that Psyche going to convince anyone with a philosophical treatise? It might with some, but will it with the masses? And curious that, how Socrates said he had a Daemon - a voice from beyond himself that guarded him and guided his activity.

And would not the Way of Christ, in the way it is presented in the Gospels and not as it was lived, wrongly and not in the spirit or even at all the letter of those texts, be quite similar to what the Psyche actually intended? Wouldn't that Great Psyche say: Don't worry about this life. You're immortal. All your lusts, your greeds, your rages, your angers, your prides -- those things are exactly what are keeping you from joining in the beatitude, the blessedness, *the happiness* of the Psychic Blessedness, the Psychic Happiness that only fulfills itself in the future, but which you, immortal psychic monad, will have to either join into in happiness and grace and humility, your soul being as a window, or, if your soul is a mirror, and you cannot even do *well* with the host you have, how shall the Great Organism of the Cosmos permit you to infect *it*? -- will not you suffer permanently, permanently quarantined from the rest of the Psychic Cosmos, in a state of total affliction, cut off from every choice thing, every happiness, every *gift*?

So, if preaching atheism produces the way of death, of an eternal affliction, let's call it Hell, but preaching the tales of the Psyche produces the way of life, of eternal beatitude, who would be so foolish as to persist in publicly preaching atheism?

AND, WORST OF ALL, and what I actually, really really, not foolin', hook me up to a lie detector and inject me with truth serum *believe*, -- *what if* the real truth of all reality is, in fact, the SPIRIT and we are but spirits *created* out of a kind of reflection or inflection (concepts fail us when we speak of eternal things)? Would not, when those who chose themselves and not the Holiness of the Whole, (even though *from a totally material explanation it was utterly provable and obvious!!!, and even though innumerable spokesmen, sacred and secular, had come upon them telling them this obvious truth* in all sorts of ways that they would understand it), sadly come into the presence of that SPIRIT, they be reduced to silence? Would it not be such: "He [Jesus] said to him [the soul], 'My friend, how is it that you came in here without a wedding garment [the repentance, the metanoia, the *turning* of your spiritual sight]? But he [the pitiful little soul, or virus of psyche] was reduced to silence. Then the king said to his attendants, 'Bind his hands and feet, and cast him into the darkness outside, where there will be wailing and grinding of teeth.' Many are invited, but few are chosen" (Matthew 22:1-14).

So, watch out! Don't grin, don't sin, don't scoff, don't encourage other people in an atheism that can only be bad for them -- and, in all woeful likelihood -- eternally bad for them.

What then will your reward be? Either in the material-temporal-spatial perfection of a Psyche that sits atop and within, that pilots, the whole vast mechanism of a Grand Organic Cosmos, fulfilled in the future, *or*, as I truly believe, an Eternal Spirit that exists beyond this creation and spoke it into being? Who could say either to such a Psyche, or to the True God, “Oh, excuse me, uh...I lived my little life utterly foolishly, but, uh...please let me into you, so that I may infect you with my iniquity.” Really?

So, might it not be that Albert Brooks is not so much a comedian, as a prophet?:

<https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=oZEbLVD72hY>

Defending Your Life - Trailer

All is revealed

<https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=x1FhrhoudSE>

As Henry James said, “Three things in human life are important: The first is to be kind. The second is to be kind. And the third is to be kind.”

For consider the spiritual and material realities as the pipe and the water. The water courses through the pipe, shaped by it, contained within it. Yet, if one could only sense the water, one would have no idea of the pipe *even though one’s whole existence was determined by the pipe.*

The whole rushing onward of the material Cosmos is contained, constrained, and determined by the greater spiritual reality all around it.

If you should hear that voice whisper to you, that still small voice say, “Here I am, my beloved, I’m right here beside you, and I’ll stay here as long as you let me,” do not turn a deaf ear, do not walk away, do not hide, do not cover yourself with your own preconceptions. Listen. Just be still and humble and open and listen.

And if you listen to that little voice, and you walk its way, and the voice grows louder and more ardent, and you feel delighted, enjoy that first blush of young love.

But when, as it must, that first enchantment of infatuation passes, *as it necessarily must, endure* -- you must endure. Seek me and you shall find. For what work can be completed without endurance? Can one graduate from college, even high school, without endurance? Can one get a job without endurance? Can one keep a job without endurance? Can one raise children without endurance? Yes, one can have children easily, without any such endurance, but if one were to try to raise a child without endurance, then what kind of parent would that one be? Would not that be a most wretched parent indeed? Would not such a one have their children taken away from them? And might not such a one end up in the newspaper, many newspapers,

wire services, as an abomination, with all in the land saying, "Such a one was a terrible parent, shame on them!" And might not such a one end up dramatized on, lo!, Law and Order: SVU, and might not the fierce cops treat such a one's image most harshly, and behold!, would not the image of such a one be the object of contempt to the whole nation, and, yea verily, the whole nation would laugh at the image of such a one, the very blank, empty image of such a one, and say, "Amen, such a one is vile! Such a one has no share in the World to Come!"

And, of course, as we always return to the subject, mustn't one ENDURE, in order for a marriage to survive? Can any marriage endure and last and be real, be a true and genuine marriage of two actual people -- and not just a concourse of their lusts -- without endurance in difficulties -- in disagreement, distress, disease, even the death of a child? Can any real thing come to life without endurance?

As Harold Bloom says, the name YHWH really means "I will be present wherever and whenever I choose to be present, and I will be absent wherever and whenever I choose to be absent." God's Presence is but the flip side of His Absence, and His Absence is but the flip side of His Presence. You cannot -- *cannot!* -- have one without the other. The Presence, the Shekinah, is but vapor and shadow and dust without ENDURANCE in the Absence.

Does not Scripture testify to this truth when first comes the Baptism of Jesus (Yeshua) and then comes his Temptation? First, Yeshua enters into his mission, his call from HaShem (G-d), and the Spirit of the All-Righteous comes upon Him and says, "You are Well-Beloved by Me, for from your youth you have sought me, diligently and steadfast in heart, choosing only Me, and only My ways, scorning all else, for you said, 'All I care about is His Will, His Way, His Work, I think nothing of myself, only of the Torah and the ADONAI of all Torah,' and thus I, the All-Eternal, do gladly speak now to you, my son: You are My chosen one, who shall save My people Israel!!!"

But then does not this son, born into the Spirit, confirmed into the Spirit of the All-Righteous, not have to leave God's Presence and journey into the desert, into the very Absence of the All-Righteous? And there in that foul, lonely place, he is stalked by demons (beasts) and plagued by the most foul spirit, that of the Ba'als, of the Babylonian sorcerers, of the very disease of polytheism and wretchedness and idolatry of soul. And must not this Yeshua have to ENDURE in this loneliness and death? If this Yeshua abandon HaShem in the Absence, must not Yeshua also abandon HaShem's Presence? For how could one enjoy the feast, and bounce on one's bed, and say, "How happy am I that I have partaken of the feast!" and then, when the One who provided that feast is sick, and in need, and requires steadfast love, and cannot provide that feast, but must be fed now, in order to return to fullness and health, should that Beneficiary of the Feast, that Well-Beloved son, abandon the Giver of the Feast? Should he say, "I only care about eating of the Feast, I care nothing about attending to the needs - and business - of the One Who gave the Feast!" Would such a one remain Well-Beloved?

So realize, after the first blush of infatuation, you must remain in the love in order for it to flourish, otherwise it shall wither and die. And what a loss that would be!!!

He says:

And remember: When all hope is gone, I'm here. No matter how far you are, I'm near. It makes no difference who you are. I am your angel!!!

So take all your fears, cast them on Me, I just want to make you SEE!!!

The Challenge of Evil

And, if on your journey, your trek, you should encounter those blank souls who cannot reason, cannot debate, will not debate, must not debate, are forbidden to debate - for HaShem loves debate, for that is why He called His Son ISRAEL: the one who WRESTLES with the Name of G-d, and thus, and only thus, perseveres in the Blessedness of the All-Righteousness of the All-Righteous, what shall you do? How shall you persevere? How shall the whole of the human race persevere?

I shall tell you how, my brothers.

When you come upon those who, in the name of their “God” can only say “God! God! God! Death! Death! Death! Murder! Murder! Murder! Rape! Rape! Rape! Explosions! Explosions! Explosions! Bullets! Bullets! Bullets! Bombs! Bombs! Bombs! Misery! Misery! Misery! Pain! Pain! Pain! DESTRUCTION! DESTRUCTION! DESTRUCTION! WAR! WAR! WAR! IGNORANCE! IGNORANCE! IGNORANCE! SHAME! SHAME! SHAME! DESPAIR! DESPAIR! DESPAIR! TYANNY! TYRANNY! TYRANNY! COME LET US CUT OUT THE GENITALS OF LITTLE GIRLS!!!!!!!!!!!!!! SLAVERY! SLAVERY! SLAVERY! DOMINION! DOMINION! DOMINION! POWER! POWER! POWER! BLANKNESS! BLANKNESS! BLANKNESS! When you hear it laugh and cackle and spit its vomit in your face, and you see its head turn around, fully around, 360 degrees around its possessed body, and giggle at you, and you see its words rise up on the stomach of its possessed body, and you try to talk to it, but it won’t really talk to you, but will only blankly spit its own woeful and ugly reflection at you, and tell you that you are damned and that it cannot but triumph in violence and the eruption of atomic bombs.....what shall you do?

Simply say, “What does God need with a starship?”

When such a possessed legion stares blankly at you and continues to spew its venom, “DEATH! DEATH! DEATH! WAR! WAR! WAR! DEATH IS GOD, GOD IS DEATH, WAR IS GOD, GOD IS WAR, SLAVERY IS GOD, GOD IS SLAVERY!”

Say more sternly, “What does God need with a starship?”

And, when it comes to strangle you, and screams and rants and rages, frothing with blood and Abaddon at its mouth, “DEATH! DEATH! DEATH! WAR! WAR! WAR! DEATH IS GOD, GOD IS DEATH, WAR IS GOD, GOD IS WAR, SLAVERY IS GOD, GOD IS SLAVERY!”

Say with adamant conviction, “What does God need with a starship?”

And when it plants bombs and sows death out of the misery of its own ruined soul and screams in unholy rage, “DEATH! DEATH! DEATH! WAR! WAR! WAR! DEATH IS GOD, GOD IS DEATH, WAR IS GOD, GOD IS WAR, SLAVERY IS GOD, GOD IS SLAVERY!”

“I said: What does God need with a starship?”

https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=WYW_IPlakiQ

And when, as a Dragon, it pursue you to the ends of the earth, and search for you in every cave and seek to snuff you out and pour its hateful breath of flame upon you.....

Then listen to the lessons of Q,....I mean HaShem:

<https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=kBwoEXITph0>

And say only the louder, not screaming, not shouting, but with holy determination:

“I said: What does God need with a starship?”

And lock arms in brotherhood with all men and women, adults and children, as a wall, believer and non-believer and everyone in between, everyone who loves HOLY PEACE and say as ONE:

“I said: What does God need with a starship?”

And the foolish Dragon shall sputter and fume and stamp its foot, and vomit:

“DEATH! DEATH! DEATH! WAR! WAR! WAR! DEATH IS GOD, GOD IS DEATH, WAR IS GOD, GOD IS WAR, SLAVERY IS GOD, GOD IS SLAVERY!”

But, as more and more lovers of PEACE, sons of PEACE, come together, will they not only sing the louder:

“I said: What does God need with a starship?”

And then, you will see that mighty Dragon shrink and shrivel, and try to regain its former might by screaming at the top of its foul lungs:

“DEATH! DEATH! DEATH! WAR! WAR! WAR! DEATH IS GOD, GOD IS DEATH, WAR IS GOD, GOD IS WAR, SLAVERY IS GOD, GOD IS SLAVERY!”

If all of you, growing phalanxes of holy soldiers, come together as ONE HOLY BODY as you watch it melting like the pathetic and empty Wicked Witch which it will have revealed itself to be, come over to the shrinking dragon and keep saying:

“I said: What does God need with a starship?”

“I said: What does God need with a starship?”

“I said: What does God need with a starship?”

And as you see its blank eyes shrivel in horror, and it becomes but a snake again, shall you not say, as you crush it:

“God does not need a starship.”

Lo! Behold! Hark! Behold the Wondrous Plenitude of the All-Felicitous SPIRIT, that can make use even, yea verily, of *Star Trek V: The Final Frontier*. Is that not all the proof any atheist would ever need that such a Great SPIRIT can truly raise a corpse from death to life?

DEATH!!! 9:11 9:11 9:11 9:11 9:11 9:11 9:11 9:11 9:11 9:11 MY GOD IS GREAT IN DEATH!!!
9:11
9:11 9 MY GOD IS GREAT IN DEATH!!!:11 9:11 9:11 9 DANIEL PEARL:11 9:11 9:11 9:11 9:11
9:11 9:11 9:11 9:11 9:11 9:11 9:11 9:11 9:11 9:11 9:11 9:11 9:11 9:11 9:11 9:11 9:11 9:11 9:11
9:11 9:11 9:11 9:11 9:11 9:11 MY GOD IS GREAT IN DEATH!!! 9:11 9:1 MY GOD IS
GREAT IN DEATH!!! 1 9:11 9:11 9:11 9:11 9:11 9:11 9:11 9:11 MY GOD IS GREAT IN
DEATH!!! 9:11 9:11 9:11 9:11 9:11 9:11 9:11 9:11 9:11 9:11 9:11 9:11 9:11 9:11 9:11 9:11 9:11
9:11 DEATH!!! 9:11 MY GOD IS GREAT IN DEATH!!!9:11 9:11 9:11 9:11 9:11 9:11
9:11 9:11 9:11 9:11 9:11 9:11 9:11 9:11 9:11 9:11 9:11 9:11 9:1 9:11 1 9:11 9:11 9:11 DANIEL PEARL
9:11 9:11 9:11 9 9:11:11 9:11 9:11 9:11 9:11 9:11 9:11 9:11 9:11 9:11 9:11 9:11 9:11 9:11
9:11 9:11 9 MY GOD IS GREAT IN DEATH!!!:11 9:11 MY GOD IS GREAT IN DEATH!!!
9:11 9:11 9:11 DOMINION9:11 9:11 9:11 9:11 9:11 9:11 9:11 HATRED9:11 9:11 9:11 9:11 MY
GOD IS GREAT IN DEATH!!! 9:11 9:11 9:11 9:1MURDER!!!1 9:11 DOMINION9:11 9:11
9:11 9:11 9:11 9:11 9:11 9:11 9:11 9:11 9: DANIEL PEARL 11 9:11 9:11 9:SLAVERY11 9:11
9:POWER 11 9:11 9 DANIEL PEARL:11 9:11 9:11 9:11 9:11 9:1HATRED1 9:11 9:11 9:11
9:11 9:11 9:11 9:11 9:11 9:11 9:11 9 DANIEL PEARL:11 9DO 9:11 MINION:11 9:11 9:11 9:11
9:11 9:11 9:11 CUT OUT THE GENITALS OF LITTLE GIRLS 9:11 9:11 9:11 9:11 9:11 9:11
9:11 9: MY GOD IS GREAT IN DEATH!!! 11 9:11 9:11 9:11 9:11 9:1 DANIEL PEARL 1
9:11 9POWER:11 9:11 9:11 9:11 9:11 9:11FIRE 9:11 9:11 9:11 9:1MISERY1 MY GOD IS
GREAT IN DEATH!!! 9:11 9:11 9:11 9:11 9:1SLAVERY1 9:11 9:11 9:11 9:1KILL THEM
ALL!!!!1 9:11 9:11 9:11 9:HATRED11 9:1FIRE1 9:11 9:11 9:11 9:11 9:11 9:11 9:11 9:11 9:11
9:11 9:11 9: MY GOD IS GREAT IN DEATH!!! 11 9:11 9:11 RAPE 9:11 9:11 9:11 9:11 MY
GOD IS GREAT IN DEATH!!! 9:11 9:11 9:1TYRANNY1 9:11 9:11 9:11 9:11 9:11 9:11 9:11
9:11 9:11 9:11 9:11 9:11 9:11 9:11 9:11 DANIEL PEARL 9:11 9:11 9:11 9:11 9:11
9:DOMINION11 9:11 9:11HATRED 9:11 9:11 KILL LITTLE GIRLS WHO TRY TO LEARN
TO READ9:11 9:11 9:11 9:11 9:11 9:11 9:11 9:11 9:11 9:11 9 DANIEL PEARL:11 9:11 9:11
9:11DEATH 9: DANIEL PEARL 11 9:11 9:11 9:11 9:11 9:11 9:11 9:11 9:1 RAPE 1 9:11 9:11
9:11 9:11 9:11 9:11 9:11 9:11 9:11 9:11 9:11 9:11 DEATH9:11 9:DEATH11 9:11 9:11 9:11
MURDER 9:11DOMINION 9:11 9:11 9:MURDER11 9:FEAR11 9:11 9:11 9:SLAVERY11
9:11 9:11 9:11 9:11 9:11 9DEATH:11 9:11 9HATRED:11 9:11 9:11 9:11DEATH 9:11 9:11
9 RAPE:11 9:11 9HATRED:11 9:11 9:11 9:11VIOLENCE 9:11 9:11 9:11 9:11 9:11 9:11 9:11
9:11DEATH 9:11 9:11 9:11 9:11 DANIEL PEARL 9:11 9:11 9:11 9:11 9:11 9:11 9:11 9:11
9:11 9:11 HATRED9:11 9:11 9:11 9:11 9:11 9:11 9MURDER:11 9:11 9:1TEDEATHRROR1
9:11 9:11 9SLAVERY:11 9:11 9:11 9:11 9:11 9:11 9: DANIEL PEARL 11 9:11 9HATRED:11
9:11 9:11 9:11 9:11 9:11 9DEATH:11 9:11 9:11 9:11 RAPE 9:1DEATH1 9:11 9:11
9:11DOMINION 9:11 9:11 9:11 9:11 9:11 9:11 9:11 9 RAPE:11 9:11 9:11 9:11 9:11 9:11
9:11HATRED 9:11 9:11 9:11 9:11 RAPE 9:11 9:11 9:11 9:11 RAPE 9:11 9:11 9:11 9:11 9:11
9:11 9:11 9:11 9:11 9:11 9:11 9:11 9:11 9:1DOMINION1 9:11 9:11 9:11 9:11 9DEATH:11 9:11
9:11 9:11 9:11 9:11 9:11 9:11 9:11 9:11 WAR DEATHWAR!!!! WAR!!!! DEATH!!! VIOLENCE
SLAVERY9:11 9:11 9:11 9:1 9:11 1 9:11 9:11 9:11 9:11 9:11 9:11 9:11 9:11 9:11 9:11 9:11
9:11 9:11 9:DOMINION11 9:11 9:11 9:11 9:11 9:11 9:11 9:11 9:11 9:11 9:11 9:11 9:11 9:11
9:11 9:11 9:11 9:11 9:11 9:11 9:11 9:11 9DEATH:11 9 MURDER:11 9:11 9:11 9:11
9:1DEATH1 9:11 9:11 9:11 9:11 MURDER 9:11 9:11 9:11 9:11 9:11 9:11 9:11 9:11

9:11 9:11 9:TYRANNY11 9:11 9:11 9BLOOD:11 9:11 9:11 9:11 9:11 9:11 9:11 9:11 9 9:11:11
9:11 9:11 9:11 9:11 9:11 9:11 9:11 9:11 9:11 9:11 9:11BLOOD 9:11 9:1BLOOD1 9:11 9:11 9:11 9:11
9 9:11:11 9:11 9:11 9:11 PAIN IS GOD GOD IS PAIN9:11 9:11 9:11 9:11 9:11 9:11 9:11 9:11
9:11 9:11 9:11 9:11 9:11 9:11 9:11 9:11 9:11 9:11 9:11 9:11 9:11 BLOOD9:11 9:11
9:11 9:11 9:11 9:1BLOOD1 9:11 9:11 9 9:11 9:11:11 BLOOD9:11 9:11 9:11 9:DEATH11 9:11
9:11 9:1 9:11 9:11 1 9:11 9ABADDON:11 9:11 9:11 9:11 9:11 9:11 9:11 9:11 9:11 9:11
9ABADDON:11 9:11 9:11 9:11 9:11 9:11 9:11 9:11 9:11 9:11 9:11 9:11 9:11 9:11 9:11 9:11
9:11 9:11 9:11 9:11 9:11 9:11 9:11 9:11 PAIN IS GOD GOD IS PAIN9:11 9:11 9:11 9:11
ABADDON9:11 9:11 9:11 9:11 9:11 9:11 9:11 9:11 9:11 9:11 9:11 9:11 9:11 9:11 9:11
9:11 9:11 9:11 9: 9:11 11 9:11 PAIN IS GOD GOD IS PAIN9:11 9:11 9:11DEATH
9:1DEATH1 9:11 9:11 9:11 9:11ABADDON 9:11 9:11 9:11 9:11 9:11 9:11 9:11 9:11 9:11
9:11 9:11 9:11 9:11ABADDON 9:11 9:1ABADDON1 9:11 9:11 9:11 9 9:11:11 9:11 9:11
9:11 9:11 9:11 9:11 9:TYRANNY11 9:11 9:11 9:11 9:11 9: 9:11 11 9:11 9:11 9:11 9:11
9:11ABADDON 9:11 9:11 9:11 9:11 9:11 9:11 9:11 9:11 9:11 9:11 ABADDON9:11 9:11 9:11 9:11
9:11 ABADDON9:11 9:11 9:11 9:11 9:11 9:11 9:11 9:11 9:11 9:11 9:11 9:11 9:11 9:11
9:DEATH11 9:11 9:11 9:11 9:11 9:11 9:11 9:11TYRANNY 9:11 9:11 9:11 9:11 9:11 9:11
9:11 9:11 9:11 9:11 9:1TYRANNY1 ABADDON9:11 9:11 9:11 9:11 9:11 9ABADDON:11 9:11
9:11 9:11 9:11 9:11 9TYRANNY:11 9:11 9:11 9:11 9:11 9:11 9:11 9:11 9:11 9:11TYRANNY
9:11 9:11 9:11 9:11 9:11 9:11 9:11 9:11 9:11 9:11 9:11 9:11 9ABADDON:11 9:11 9:11 9:11
9:11 9:11 9:11 9:11 9:11 9:11 9:11 9:11 9:11 9:11 9:11 9:11 9:11 9:11 9:11 9:11
9:11 9TYRANNY:11 9:11 9:11ABADDON 9:11 9:11 9:ABADDON11 9:11 9:11 9:11 9:11
TYRANNY9:11 9:11 ABADDON9:11 9:11 9:11 9:11 9:11THE FIERY PIT 9:11 9:11 9:11
9:11 9:11 9:11 9:11 9:11 9:11 9:11 9:11 9:11 9:11 9:11 9:11 9:11 9:11 9:11 9:11
9:11 9:11 9:11 9:11 9:11 9:11 9:11 9:11 9:11 9:11 9:11 9:11 9:11 9:11 9:11 9:1
MURDER 1 9:ABADDON11 9:11 9:11 9:11 9:1ABADDON1 9: BUILD ME AN EMPIRE!!!!
11 9:11 9:11 9:11 9:11 9:11 9:11 9:1ABADDON1 9:11 9:11 9:11 9:11 9:11 9:11 9:11
9:11 9:11 9:11 9:11 9:ABADDON11 9:11 9:11 9:11 9:11 9:11 9:11 9:11 9:11 9:11 BUILD ME
AN EMPIRE!!!! 9:11 9:11 9:11 9:11 9THE FIERY PIT:11 9:11THE FIERY PIT 9:11 9:11
BUILD ME AN EMPIRE!!!! 9:11 9:11 9:11 9:11 9:11 9:11 9:11 9:11 9:11 9:11 9:11 9:11
9:11 9:11 9:11 9:11 9:11 9:11 9:11 9:11 ABADDON9:11 9:11 9:11 BUILD ME AN
EMPIRE!!!! 9:11 9:11 9:11 BUILD ME AN EMPIRE!!!! 9:11 9:11 9:11 9:11 9:11 9:11 9
MURDER:11 9:11 9:11 9:11 9:11 9:11 9:11 9:11 9:11 9:11 9:11 9:11 9:11 MURDER 9:11
9:11 9:11 9:11 9:11 9:11 9:11 9:11 9:11THE FIERY PIT 9:11 9:11 9:11 9:11 9:11 9:11
9:11 9:11 9:11 9:11 9:11 9:11 9:11 9:11 BUILD ME AN EMPIRE!!!! 9:11 9:11 9:11 9:11
9:11 9:1 BUILD ME AN EMPIRE!!!! 1 9:11 9:11 9:11 9:11 9:11 9:11 9:11 9:11 9:11
9:11 9:11 9:11 9:11 9:11 9:11 9:11 9:11 9:11 9:11 9:11 9:11 9:1 9:11 9:11 9:11
EMPIRE!!!! 1 9:11 9:11 9:11 9:11 9:11 9:11 9:11 9:11 9:11 9:11 9:11 9:11 9:11
9:11 BUILD ME AN EMPIRE!!!! 9:11 9:11 9:11 9:11 9:11 9:11 9:11 9:11 MURDER 9:11 9:11
9:11 9:11 9:11 9:11 9:11 9:11 9:11 9:11 9:11 9:11 9:11 9:11 9:11 9:11 9:11 9:11
BUILD ME AN EMPIRE!!!! 9:11 9:11 9:1 MURDER 1 9:11 9:11 9:11 9: BUILD ME AN
EMPIRE!!!! 11 9:11 9:11 9:1 BUILD ME AN EMPIRE!!!! 1 9:11 9:1 BUILD ME AN
EMPIRE!!!! 1 9:11 9:11 9:11 9:11 9:11 9:11 9:11 9:11 9:11 9:11 9:11 9:11 9:11
9:11 9:11 9:11 9:11 9:11 9:11 9:11 9:11 9:11 9:11 9:11 9:11 9:11 9:11 9:11 9:11

Does a people that excuses or explains away such vile iniquity deserve coddling and soft soap? Or rather, as Pope Saint Pius X said, "They want them to be treated with oil, soap and caresses. But they should be beaten with fists. In a duel, you don't count or measure the blows, you strike as you can."

I knew a girl in high school whose father was murdered on 9/11.... 9:11. She was a beautiful, sweet girl, who, even after the catastrophe, still retained a sweet smile. But I could see the bitterness and anguish in her eyes. And that I will never forget. And I will never coddle or caress or take the part of those who excuse such vile things or ask that it be relativized.

Relativize this, assholes. I'm a New Yorker, and you can all go to Hell.

I will remember you, May Queen, I will always stand with you, always take your part. And I will never let anyone relativize away your loss and anguish. We're in this together, and anyone who stands apart from U.S. can go to Hell.

Submit to that abomination? Go to Hell!!!

After 9/11, Israel mourned our loss, shared our bitterness in an unbreakable bond of brotherhood.

The Palestinians danced in the streets. Know who your friends are.

President Kennedy said:

Two thousand years ago, the proudest boast was *civis romanus sum* ["I am a Roman citizen"]. Today, in the world of freedom, the proudest boast is "*Ich bin ein Berliner!*"... All free men, wherever they may live, are citizens of Berlin, and therefore, as a free man, I take pride in the words "*Ich bin ein Berliner!*"

But I say with greater pride, in total solidarity and friendship:

My mother is Jewish. My father is Jewish. I am a Jew.

All those who love true and lasting peace, wherever they may live, are citizens of Israel, and therefore, as a son of peace, and not death, I take pride in the words, "I am a JEW."

https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=r_8ydghbGSg

The world will watch you disappear, you Hellish fiends, once everyone knows who did the speaking:

<https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=FyzE9thQIPo>

God does not need a starship. God does not need an empire on earth, of earth, of fiendish hatred and craven ignorant misery, a tyranny of Abaddon, of flames and bombs and bullets and slavery. God does not command that Towers of Babel be built for him, or to him. God knocks down Towers of Babel and laughs in righteous rage and holy fire. The DRAGON, of unholy flaming spleen, that can only murder and rape and enslave and destroy, accuses itself, and reveals itself.

DISGUSTING:

A Palestinian poet and leading member of Saudi Arabia's nascent contemporary art scene has been sentenced to death for renouncing Islam.

A Saudi court on Tuesday ordered the execution of Ashraf Fayadh, who has curated art shows in Jeddah and at [the Venice Biennale](#). The poet, who said he did not have legal representation, was given 30 days to appeal against the ruling.

Fayadh, 35, a key member of the British-Saudi art organisation [Edge of Arabia](#), was originally sentenced to four years in prison and 800 lashes by the general court in Abha, a city in the south-west of the ultraconservative kingdom, in May 2014.

But after his appeal was dismissed he was retried earlier this month and a new panel of judges ruled that his repentance did not prevent his execution.

"I was really shocked but it was expected, though I didn't do anything that deserves death," Fayadh told the Guardian.

<https://www.theguardian.com/world/2015/nov/20/saudi-court-sentences-poet-to-death-for-renouncing-islam>

But don't fret --- in their oh so tender All-merciful way, they didn't actually execute him, but have imprisoned him and are subjecting him to 800 lashes. Coming soon to a theater near you!!!

Has the contrast between FREEDOM AND PEACE on the one hand and EVIL AND TYRANNY ever been more apparent (save for the Nazis)?

<https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=JzKI9TBR-XQ>

Isn't the truth of the matter an open secret?

https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=-UMTzmm_sKs

O Blessed City of....G-d? Really? This is the evil tyranny that the world is supposed to submit to? The righteous have defeated the Nazis and the Communists, just in the memory of our times, and these were far fiercer, more equipped, more capable foes.

Courage, NATION!

The Egyptians failed to stamp out the Power of Adonai, the Assyrians failed, the Babylonians failed, the Greeks failed, the Romans failed, the "Christian" (barely christianized) barbarians failed, the decadent and arrogant European monarchies failed, the Soviets failed, Hitler of foul and damned memory failed. This Evil Empire shall fail too!!! And the bigger they are, the harder they fall.

The Power of ADONAI - when trusted and lived in and lived for - is totally, irresistibly unstoppable. Is that not the whole of the lesson that the Schoolmaster of Torah, HaShem, has been patiently and rigorously trying to teach His son, Israel? Have no fear! Only have faith in the Power of the Name! And let us say, in the words of that sacred and imperishable proclamation, that, though heaven and earth may pass away, these words will not pass away:

Let's roll.

Exorcise and Excise the festering Cancer of this world!!! In the Name of the Spirit - the Spirit of TRUTH AND LIFE AND LOVE - **L'CHAIM!!! L'CHAIM TOVIM UL'SHALOM!!!**

In the Sign of the Archangel Michael, I proclaim, I announce:

L'chaim v'l'vracha!!!

Courage to all the Beloved Sons and Daughters of Israel!

Shall one who claims to worship the ONE ETERNAL ONE say L'mitah or L'chaim?!

I put before you death and life!!!

CHOOSE LIFE!

Let's get really real.

Who would follow such a Way of Death? What kinds of monstrous people would hearken to a "god" that told them that martyrdom meant murder? Wouldn't such people be quite blank? Wouldn't their souls be nothing more than a hall of mirrors? When they stepped into a public place to murder people -- and looked around at the faces of children, mothers, fathers, young people, just trying to live -- and thought that such vile murder would somehow bring them into the bosom of G-d -- what perversity other than Satanic blankness could possibly motivate that? Anyone who does such things imitates their true "God": Satan, the prince of darkness, he who was a murderer from the beginning and the father of lies. He who thinks he can murder his way to the LORD merely imitates his true "God", Satan, who thought that he could overthrow God by one simple act of celestial murder.

One of these days -- in this century -- if the Evil Empire is not dealt with, not chastened and given a smack of sense atop its fire-breathing head -- one of these fiends, one of these networks of fiends, will succeed in acquiring an atomic weapon -- probably a few of them. It won't be a theater or a concert or a parade or a marathon or an office building or school on that day.

It will be Beijing. Moscow. Tokyo. London. Paris. Berlin. Rome. Madrid. Mexico City. Ottawa. Rio. Buenos Aires. Los Angeles. Chicago. New York. Tel Aviv.

It could even be Jerusalem.

On that day, who will want to hear about cultural relativism? Who will want to hear about people's feelings and resentments, their rages and their paranoias and their hatreds? Will not all such concerns dissipate in the fiery aftermath of radioactive ash and the apocalyptic plume of a mushroom cloud?

And all those loud, angry, stupid, blind, blank, truly narrow-minded false prophets of cultural relativism and an identity politics that, like a mirror, could only see itself and not access any true wisdom --- what shall they say then?

I have a modest proposal. I say we lead them off to the apocalyptic nuclear ruins and make them eat the ash till they have their fill of their wisdom.

Is Faith murder to get what you want?

Or isn't Faith enduring in trust and obedience to G-d, whose ways are PEACE?

<https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=ecv5p3txg4U>

Righteousness and murder are incompatible. You cannot murder your way to righteousness; you will, rather, only succeed in digging the pit of your own Hell, deeper and deeper. For the true G-d delights in Peace, not murder.

Have all the sagacity of Captain Picard and all the temerity of Captain Kirk.

Faith in Christ

Let us consider an important matter. What does it mean to have faith in Christ, and how are we to understand the constant biblical truth that no one can come to the Father except through faith in Christ, and endurance in the righteousness that such faith must necessarily produce?

We too much have in our culture this kind of bizarre notion of faith that infects, vitiates, the whole mission of the Church.

This popular and much too prevailing nostrum of faith floating around our culture proposes something like this: You have a silver bullet, bulletproof faith on the one hand, for those who simply say, "I'm a born-again Christian" and you have immediate, ipso facto damnation for every last soul who did not say, "I'm a born-again Christian."

As we have explored elsewhere, simple lip service will do you no good, no matter how many times you tell your family, friends, and neighbors that you are born again. (See Matthew 7:21-23.)

And we might, in thinking about other cultures, keep more in mind the old doctrine of the heathen. Not to be offensive, although I suppose there's no avoiding it, the idea of a heathen is quite useful. Heathens are not necessarily held responsible by God for not professing Christ, for how can you profess Christ if you have never heard of Him? That would be true for all the populations that the Church had not reached, such as those in the pre-Columbian Americas or various indigenous tribes in far-flung tropical locales.

Now, of course, you say that the Gospel has been preached everywhere. But isn't that a little bit of one-dimensional thinking? A dirt farmer in some remote part of India may have the vague notion of other nations in the West being "Christian", and have a very faint idea of what Christianity is, but that does not mean that such a person has had any real kind of access to the real possibility of professing Christ.

We can very probably consider such people to be in a similar situation as the people of the Old Testament. For who would say that Abraham or Isaac or Jacob or Moses or David or Isaiah or Jeremiah are damned? They did not profess Christ. How could they? They did not know Christ by name. *But* for those who have not had the explicit Gospel preached to them, in a real way, they are only responsible for believing in the implicit Gospel that could be known to them, in their own way, adapted to their own circumstances. And, indeed, Scripture explicitly states that Abraham, Isaac, Jacob, Moses, and Elijah are in Heaven, present in the Bosom of the Almighty. (Matthew 8:11; 17:1-8)

Rather, I think that the real injunction - the real threat, or warning - of such passages is that, if you have a real possibility of accepting Christ, because, in the sufficient ways of grace, known only to God, you have had the Gospel *really* preached to you such that you had the call of Christ, *then* you are responsible unto damnation for not believing the Gospel.

You might be more fearful of yourself, your family, friends, and neighbors that they - though being saturated with the call of Christ at every turn - have not believed, or, even if they have a faith of the lips, that they do not have a faith of the heart.

This most emphatically does *not* mean that the Church should not evangelize. It means quite the opposite. The Church must race out to the ends of the earth to make the Call of Christ a real possibility in every human life. For the Scriptures clearly state that the Gospel must be preached to the ends of the earth, and only then will the end come. And this does not mean that those in other parts of the world can see Christianity on television: it means stouthearted missionary activity of the most fervent kind in all corners of the world. For how else shall the Flesh of Christ be perfected and complete, ready as a Bride for her Bridegroom, Christ Jesus?

The Geopolitics of Satan

We then arrive at a different matter. Let's say that you were Satan on the day after the Resurrection. You were *certain* that you had nailed that miserable fiend, the Christ, by killing him. For to you, in your utter and inane one-dimensional blankness, death is just death, life is the only kind of life, power in one spirit's hands is powerlessness in another's. Then, you discover that this Christ has a quite indomitable Spirit, and that he has just resisted every temptation of sin, of every human sin ever committed, and has stolen away with the souls of the elect out of your tyranny of the bottomless pit, Hell.

And you see that your (Satan's) final defeat will come with the spread and victory of the Church. So, naturally, being a serial killing murderer who only knows how to kill to get his way, you set about murdering and persecuting these awful little rodents called followers of the Way, Christians. You drive people, in their intolerance, to cast them out of the synagogues: to persecute and stone them. When that fails to be enough, you bring the soldiers of your Evil Empire into action, killing and mutilating as many of these infected Christians, spreading the disease of salvation all across your Dictatorship of Slavery to Sin.

But what a headache and woe it must have been to Satan when that Evil Empire was finally converted, and then collapsed.

Whatever to do then? However to stop the growth of the Church then?

Well, you might figure: Two can play that game. Christ and His Crucifixion was a rebellion, (Mary means rebellion), a revolution led by God, in His Christ, against the Kingdom of Satan's tyranny for the salvation of souls. So, you launch a counter-revolution. And do what you do best: offer an imitation, a cheap knock-off, always in the form of a parody.

Polytheism not working out for you? Try a sham monotheism. And then, what would be the most important characteristics of that new Religion? What kind of strategy would you pursue? Well, if you're that fiend, you have to stop the spread of that Church at any costs, because the fulfillment of that Church means your final ruination, your final defeat when you are cast into the pool of fire.

So what ever to do? First, you try to announce that your worst defeat did not happen. For the morning after the Resurrection, you realized that God had screwed over your one dimensionality with his multi-dimensionality. So you scream loudly, "Do over! Do over! Didn't happen! I wish it away!" and you make sure as many other people as possible don't learn the truth.

Second, you try, like an anaconda wrapping around her prey, to conquer and suffocate the Church. You do what you can to outright conquer Christian lands, and snatch the salvation of

Christ from them. But, so many of those humans having such unhelpful senses of morality and decency, you can't just race out and slaughter everybody.

Besides, *you wouldn't want to simply slaughter Christians*. Because you realize that, just as the Blood of Christ defeated sin and death for those in Christ, the Blood of Christian Martyrs feeds the Church, causing it to grow in splendor, power, and grace, spreading throughout the world like a Seraphic cure to the dominion of Satan.

So, we wouldn't want to do that. Satan may not be wise, but he is intelligent, and though it doesn't help him any, he realizes when he was wrong and tries to correct the matter in the future.

So, you wouldn't outright kill Jews or Christians, you would let them persist, with this condition: they cannot evangelize anyone, under pain of death for both the evangelist and the converted. Because Hell forbid that the Church should turn people to Christ. And, those Jews and Christians, left to try to scratch out some fleeting happiness in this mortal life, without having their blood shed, and without permitting them to cause the Church to grow, would, by force of attrition, simply disappear. And then, you could keep your possession of the earth.

Shouldn't we be suspicious of a force in the world that so firmly denies the very act that defeated Satan? And isn't it odd that such a force would so violently resist freedom of religion and evangelization? Christ never said to prevent someone from preaching another religion. He wouldn't say to follow it, but He wouldn't forbid other religious leaders the right to act in freedom. And it is hard to imagine Jesus saying that a Christian should be killed for converting to another faith; in fact, He never did so.

So, we're left with this most curious force, that denies Satan's greatest and most absolute defeat, that cleverly prevents too much of that superabundant blood from being shed, and yet makes sure that the Church is strangled and that his property, human beings, is kept nice and locked up in his Tyranny.

A most curious force in the world indeed.

What kind of religion would naturally, abundantly, and joyously flourish in conditions of freedom and peace?

And what kind of religion could only be spread through military conquest, tyranny, state propaganda, terrorism, mob violence, ignorance, hatred, paranoia, murder of every kind, judicial murder, mob murder, gang murder, gang rapes, intimidation, prohibition of freedom of thought and expression, every kind of foul and noxious violence, and every kind of outrageous degradation of the human flesh, heart, and spirit?

What kind of religion would require no state upon the earth in order to accomplish its Heavenly purpose?

And what kind of religion would absolutely require a state on earth in order to keep a stranglehold on the souls locked up in the vast dungeons of its dominion?

And what kind of religion would, in its blind blankness, its fury for its own self-righteousness, and its puerile, pathetic, most unholy dreams of world conquest, be unable to withstand even a few simple questions?

You, O Son of Man, O Israel, O Children of the One, True, Holy, and Everlasting G-d, the LORD, be the judge.

SHEMA YISRAEL!!!

If I speak in human and angelic tongues, but do not have love, I am a resounding gong or a clashing cymbal. And if I have the gift of prophecy, and comprehend all mysteries and all knowledge; if I have all faith so as to move mountains, but do not have love, I am nothing.

If I give away everything I own, and if I hand my body over so that I may boast, but do not have love, I gain nothing.

Love is patient, love is kind. It is not jealous, love is not pompous, it is not inflated, it is not rude, it does not seek its own interests, it is not quick-tempered, it does not brood over injury, it does not rejoice over wrongdoing but rejoices with the truth. It bears all things, believes all things, hopes all things, endures all things.

Love never fails. If there are prophecies, they will be brought to nothing; if tongues, they will cease; if knowledge, it will be brought to nothing. For we know partially and we prophesy partially, but when the perfect comes, the partial will pass away.

When I was a child, I used to talk as a child, think as a child, reason as a child; when I became a man, I put aside childish things. At present we see indistinctly, as in a *mirror*, but then face to face.

At present, I know partially; then I shall know fully as I am fully known.

So faith, hope, love remain, these three; but the greatest of these is love.

St. Paul the Apostle

The Apostle to the Gentiles of the True and Only Living God

1 Corinthians 13:1-13

Sybok realizes the truth.

<https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=x9sqkahSziU>

Star Trek V: The Final Frontier

[The Puncakian](#)

why didn't god [sic] prevent this movie from happening?

Now you know, my child. All that is hidden shall be revealed. All secrets shall be told.

Satan, you're under arrest, you son of a bitch.

THE TRUTH

The Exorcist

<https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=3V-Ui69hDpA>

Divine Proclamation of God's Will for All People

I bid you stand!

RUSSIA

***INDOMITABLE BULWARK AGAINST THE ANTI-CHRIST
AND CHAMPION OF THE FREE WORLD***

EUROPE

HOLY WOMB OF THE UNIVERSAL CHURCH

AMERICA

EVENING LAND OF THE SACRED IMAGINATION

CHINA & All ASIA

***CENTRAL KINGDOM OF RIGHTEOUS WISDOM AND
STRENGTH***

LATIN AMERICA

EXUBERANT JOY OF THE SPIRIT'S PLENITUDE

***I bid you stand UNITED!
STAND UNITED, O NATIONS!***

STAND UNITED AS BROTHERS!!!

SHINE AS DIAMONDS!!!

Rihanna
Diamonds

The Lord of the Rings

<https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=EXGUNvIFTQw>

**Russia, after centuries misspent in oppression, it's
your time to shine!**

THE SWORD OF THE WEST

Anduril

<https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=2p5zm-9NCh4>

For Freedom, Truth, and Christ!!!

Your life is an opportunity for grace. If you let it explode into the world, you will race on into the Plenitude of a Holy Eternity. If you let that grace falter in the ways of sin, or out of the cowardice of hypocrites, that grace will implode into you, creating a vortex of sin and misery that will be your eternal Hell. (Matthew 25, Parable of the Ten Virgins; Parable of the Talents; Judgment of the Nations)

WANTED FOR MURDER

SATAN



***MURDER! DEATH! KILL!
RAPE! TORTURE! ENSLAVE!***

***FEED ME BLOOD!
WORSHIP ME!
I AM YOUR GOD!!!!!!***

Shapeshifters and Impostors

What is the difference between a shapeshifter and an impostor? Are they the same? Or are, rather, they totally different - the very opposites of each other?

For a shapeshifter can *become* anything. It does not just pretend to be something, it *is* that something - it is everything that it CHOOSES, in its prerogative of its true interiority, to be and to become. It is a wondrous, luminous singularity of possibility that contains within itself the whole Plenitude of All Reality.

If a shapeshifter were to come onto the stage, he could *become* Elvis, *become* Charlie Chaplin, *become* Abraham Lincoln.

But an impostor can only put on a costume. It remains, underneath that disguise, just the same old person, one blank self. It can perpetrate an imposture and strut about, but it will never be more than the one blank note it is -- no matter how much it deceives others.

What I am saying, obviously, is that God, (and His children), is the shapeshifter, and Satan, (and his children), is the impostor. God becomes all things to all people, ushering them into a life without limits. Satan can only pretend to be what you're looking for, and once he's deceived you, all you have left is him...which isn't very much at all. It is, in fact, quite a whole lot of terrible nothing.

As Jesus said when asked whether he drove out demons by the power of demons, "Every kingdom divided against itself will be laid waste, and no town or house divided against itself will stand. And if Satan drives out Satan, he is divided against himself; how, then, will his kingdom stand?" and "And whoever speaks a word against the Son of Man will be forgiven; but whoever speaks against the holy Spirit will not be forgiven, either in this age or in the age to come" (Matthew 12:25-26; 32). As Jesus went on to say, "A tree is known by its fruit" (Matthew 12:33b).

In other words, as the spirit of oneself, in this world, cannot be communicated to another person, such that that other person can see inside, the responsibility for sorting out the shapeshifter from the impostor is the task of the audience, the one who sees and listens -- if, indeed, they can.

If the impostor be very good, and the audience say that the shapeshifter is the impostor, and the impostor is the shapeshifter, whose fault is it? Is it the fault of the shapeshifter? No. It is the fault of the audience for not being *perceptive* enough to *see* the difference between substance and mere appearance. The audience would have proven themselves unable to see with the eyes of their heart, because, in some way, they were spiritually blind.

And if the many people should say, as they gaze upon the stage, "But that one, that shapeshifter, is not like us: He is strange...and...bizarre...and unholy! even!!! How can such a one be One and yet more than one? Is that not an unholy abomination?!"

Should the many who are yet, in themselves, in the blank and limited container of their minimal, infinitesimal oneness, only a contemptible, inert, "one", scorn and mock and spit upon

and even persecute and kill the One, who though totally, ineradicably, eternally One can be All, who is not blank, but rushes on with an infinite sight, with infinite momentum, and who Lives an Eternal Life with absolutely no limits?

Would not such foolish, inert little “ones”, little in strength but limitless in self-estimation, much rather prefer the impostor -- the one who can dazzle and titillate and satiate little, crude, base appetites, but who, in the end and underneath, is just like themselves - “one” and yet, really, none -- empty and blank and futile - and even: damned?

Metaphor and Theology

This work is as a YouTube video made by a five-year-old on a subject of vast importance, say, the Second World War. The child in his high-pitched voice narrates the action in his juvenile way, moving about his toy soldiers on the kitchen floor - *Bam Bam; Woosh Woosh; Boom Boom: CRASH*. He trots out an action figure, “Hitler was a *bad* man.” He trots out another action figure, “FDR was a *good* man.” And the little boy starts knocking the plastic figurines at each other - *CRASH* - and then flings the plastic Hitler to the wall and raises up the hollow FDR. He engages in an exegesis of the strategic architecture of the conflict between - *the struggle unto death between* - the Allies versus the Axis: “The Good Guys were here,” putting his good actions figures on the kitchen island. “The Bad Guys were here,” placing his bad action figures on the stove. “The Good Guys went over the air to the Bad Guys, and went *WAM WAM - BAM!* ...And it all ended with *KABOOM* and the Good Guys won!”

His parents shake their head at their enthusiastic little boy, smiling at how ignorant and yet how right he is. His brothers who are younger than him, and those who are his peers who are not interested in history but only spend their time with video games, science fiction, action movies or even actual science, playing with their little chemistry sets, when they see the boy, think nothing of it. Those who play video games and watch and read science fiction think it to be nothing other than a story drawn from the little boy’s head, no different than their pastimes. The children who spend their time with action movies, and later enact the scenes from them, find the boy’s little play to be rather boring, not as exciting as *real life!* And those who do real science, playing with their little chemistry sets, that each of their parents bought them, have the most scorn of all for the little boy and his video. They laugh and say, “What a waste of time! *None of that is real!*” They never think to ask their parents about history, nor to research it themselves, for it would be a waste of time. When some - a very few - do research the matter, many ask only some other peers who seem also to have some knowledge of this “history” about which the little boy speaks. There seem to be some similarities between what all of them say, but also some real differences: they cannot get an *account* - not a concrete, single, whole, bulletproof account of what is really going on. It seems interesting in a way, perhaps like the video games and science fiction that the other children pass their time with. But it just doesn’t seem *real* - not at all real like the tangible, obvious, concrete, in your face, and under your eyes *truth* of what they can hold in their hands: test tubes, buret clamps, funnels, boiling flasks, rubber lab tubing,

stainless steel forceps, a clay pipe triangle, lab brushes, thermometers: *Now that's real! That makes sense! That has cash value!*

And so they turn from the little boy, some outright scornful of this nincompoop who has nothing to do with real things, and some curious but still uninterested enough to dive into the matter, to find out what is *really going on*.

Even though we cannot - *necessarily cannot* - give an account of adult reality - of the eternal that exists beyond this material world, we are foolish if, because we are children, we deny the reality - even the possibility - of the adult world.

It is as a man who dreams and dreams and dreams long into the night, and becomes so lost in his dream that he comes to believe the slumber is the substance, *the reality*, and the waking world but a myth.

I just looked up the definition of nincompoop, after I wrote it in the passage, and found out that it means this:

ORIGIN late 17th cent.: perhaps from the given name *Nicholas* or from *Nicodemus* (by association with the Pharisee of this name, and his naive questioning of Jesus Christ; compare with French *nicodème* 'simpleton').

C.S. Lewis also wrote of what the demons have to say to us in *The Screwtape Letters*:

Your man has been accustomed, ever since he was a boy, to have a dozen incompatible philosophies dancing about together inside his head. He doesn't think of doctrines as primarily "true" or "false", but as "academic" or "practical", "outworn" or "contemporary", "conventional" or "ruthless". Jargon, not argument, is your best ally in keeping him from the Church.

Don't waste time trying to make him think that materialism is true! Make him think it is strong, or stark, or courageous—that it is the philosophy of the future. That's the sort of thing he cares about....By the very act of arguing, you awake the patient's reason; and once it is awake, who can foresee the result? Even if a particular train of thought can be twisted so as to end in our favour, you will find that you have been strengthening in your patient the fatal habit of attending to universal issues and withdrawing his attention from the stream of immediate sense experiences. Your business is to fix his attention on the stream. Teach him to call it "real life" and don't let him ask what he means by "real".¹⁴

No theologian, not even the greatest, not any of the Fathers of the Church, can give an account of God, that is, a precise Socratic-Platonic-Aristotelian-Scientific-Mechanical account of

¹⁴ Lewis, C.S.: *The Screwtape Letters*, First Letter, 1-2

God, for to do that, you would need to be God. Christ could do that, but Christ's wisdom can only be attained if you follow His Way, and you shall only really know what He knows when you return to Him. For Christ cares nothing for your knowledge, at least in this life. Christ only cares that you *TURN* your spirit towards the sight of His Spirit, for if you do that, in eternity you shall have all knowledge, and all life. But, if you fail to do that, no matter how much knowledge you have in this life, once you enter eternity, if your spirit is bereft of the Spirit, and your spirit is turned only to yourself, not only will you have no knowledge, but you will have no life.

So, what am I saying? Something profoundly simple. From age to age no theologian - *ever* - gives (or can give even if he should wish to) an *account*, or demonstration, of God. He merely (although that mere effort shall be rewarded) gives a clearer account, hopefully, (if he is lucky enough to actually know what he is doing, which every theologian always prays every day), of the Way *towards* God. You see how simple that is? All theology does not give an account of the One God, but only, ever, a better and better, richer and richer, (yet still the same and ever true and traditional, and yet always new and deeper and richer and more insightful) account of the One Way *towards* that One God.

So, in theology we do not say, "Here is the one account of God, let us never go further." We try, rather, to, while keeping fast, totally, to the whole Truth of the rich and true Tradition, of which Scripture is the keystone, to do no more than refine the formula of our theory of the account of God, hoping to provide clearer lights to those on the Way of Christ. For, does not the scientist of the natural world but ever behold the same natural world, and yet, from generation to generation, if he is wise and is lucky enough to actually know what he is doing, give a clearer and clearer, more refined and more refined formula - theory - of that natural world which he beholds? Is it any different with the scientist of the Eternal World (who can only, in this life, know the Way, and not the Final End: the ETERNAL ONE).

Interludes

When St. Luke says, “If you then, who are wicked, know how to give good gifts to your children, how much more will the Father in heaven give the holy Spirit to those who ask him?” (Luke 11:13), we must wonder. When I was in my sin, I never understood these words. I figured they meant something like, ‘Ask the Father to forgive you so that you can go to heaven.’

Less still did I understand when St. Matthew said, “Ask and it will be given to you! Seek and you shall find! Knock and the door will be opened to you! For everyone who asks, receives; and the one who seeks, finds; and to the one who knocks, the door will be opened. Which one of you would hand his son a stone when he asks for a fish? If you then, who are wicked, know how to give good gifts to your children, how much more will your heavenly Father give good things to those who ask him?” (Matthew 7:7-11)

Yes, good things in heaven, I sighed. Here, what good things? Shall I ask God to slake my itching lust? To hurt those who slander and oppress me? Shall I ask for more food, for more drink, for more money?

This is because the spirit of righteousness did not dwell richly within me, but languished, coveting the world and not righteousness alone.

The words clearly proclaim that the Spirit alone is good, and from it alone do all gifts proceed. No one can have any good who does not have the Spirit. Yet he who has the Spirit has all good forever, welling up to Eternal Life. He who has all the world, all good things, all gifts, in this life, but does not have the Spirit, has but a snap of the fingers, a passing phase of illusion and then eternal starvation. But he who has the Spirit, though he cower in a cold hovel and eat gruel from birth to death, has all the EUCHARISTIC EXUBERANCE of eternity awaiting.

The atheist who does not, some how, in some way, pray to the God he does not believe in cannot have a share in the Resurrection. He who does not seek cannot be excused for being lost.

Consider this Greek Orthodox: When you look at an icon, and it is looking at you, is that all there really is to the matter, its face only turned towards you? What is at the heart of the matter? Let's say you have an image of an icon on your computer. Should you place it on the right side of the screen, or the left side of the screen? The right, you say, for surely Christ is seated at the right hand of the Father. And truly, that is true. And it is a good impulse. (Although, if you were facing the throne of God, you would have to note that your right would be God's left.)

But think more deeply - delve into, *look* closer at the matter. Is Christ *only* looking at you? Is He not also, and more deeply, facing the Father, as a priest celebrating the Holy Eucharist, indeed the High Priest celebrating an Eternal Eucharist of Himself-in-the-Father? If you were to turn around, swivel around in your chair, and face what Christ faces, then, if, with your first, superficial, albeit well-intentioned, impulse you had placed Christ's face on *your* right, you would end up, if you but turned around to face what Christ faces, having Jesus's face at your left hand. So, does this not again -- as everything in our lives must - confirm the truth of Jesus' Proclamation: That you must turn your heart, revolve your spirit, to face, not your own face, but the Eternal and Ever-Living Face of your Father in Heaven. And, if you truly, in your heart, did that, would not then Christ stand at your right hand, and both of you, together, as brothers, would behold the Face of the Ever-Living and Eternal God?

Would you not then, if you did that, no longer see the world with merely your own eyes, and know the world with only your own meager, withered heart, but, rather, if you truly turned yourself to face what Christ faces, you would see the world with Christ's eyes, and know the world with Christ's heart. And then you would become a true participant in the Resurrection, bearing the burden of the Cross into the world as a companion of Christ in His Work.

If every Jew and all kinds of Christians worship the same God, though each in their own way, would they not find, if they journeyed together towards the center of that Eternal singularity, in the end, the same Ever-Living Face?

Schindler's List is an icon of righteousness. Happy those who brought it into the world. *The Exorcist* is an icon of evil. Not that those who filmed it are evil, but that, like a Greek Orthodox icon, we can perceive the spiritual truth, or emptiness, in such an image.

How to defeat Satan in a few “easy” steps, with Captain Kirk and Mr. Spock:

<https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=iPQfwmfRq2s>

HaShem must speak in figures of speech for this reason, and this reason alone: Satan is the ruler of the World, of *this* world, sundered by sin. Everything proclaimed in the world is heard by Satan, and, as an intelligence beyond all reckoning (though uni-dimensional in spirit), he accounts for what HaShem says and plans for it. Since Satan is blank and uni-dimensional, like a flat mirror, and the LORD is multi-dimensional and rich in Spirit beyond all fathoming, it is as, (by metaphor), one evil man who was intelligent but thought two-dimensionally, and one good man who thought three-dimensionally.

They fight each other to the death for all that is valuable. Would not the man who thought three-dimensionally defeat the man who thought two-dimensionally? -- would that not be the good man's truly and finally sovereign advantage? And, why would he forfeit that? Why would the good man say, “Let me fight on the bad man's level,” and thus forfeit the fight? What man with two arms, when fighting for the life of his very son against the most wicked of rivals, would say, “It's not fair to fight with both arms, I shall tie one behind my back,” and thus sacrifice his son's life? Who would do such a thing?!

And then you say, but what of those who do not understand what is written? Everyone who belongs to HaShem and the Resurrection of the Righteous knows, in their Spirit even if not in their intellect, the rich inner meaning of the Scripture, of the Word of the LORD. And what is most important (all that is important) is that the Word lives in them, and that they live *by* the Word. That is why Yeshua (Jesus) says, “Whoever loves me will keep my word, and my Father will love him, and we will come to him and make our dwelling with him. Whoever does not love me does not keep my words; yet the word you hear is not mine but that of the Father who sent me” (John 14:23-24). And Jesus says, “I am the good shepherd, and I know mine and mine know me, just as the Father knows me and I know the Father; and I will lay down my life for the sheep” (John 10:14-15).

Isaiah's prophecy is fulfilled in those who cannot hear the voice of Christ:

You shall indeed hear but not understand,
you shall indeed look but never see.
Gross is the heart of this people,
they will hardly hear with their ears,
they have closed their eyes,
lest they see with their eyes,
and hear with their ears
and understand with their heart and be
converted,
and I heal them.'

(Matthew 13: 14-15)

Those who think "two-dimensionally" (really, one-dimensionally) and are thus as blank as Satan, would never open their heart in the way HaShem desires anyway. So, why should HaShem sacrifice those who are like Him, and *can* hear His voice, by giving away his war strategy to the Enemy?

As Jesus says, "Be sure of this: if the master of the house [Satan, the ruler of the world, the "house"] had known the hour of night when the thief was coming, he would have stayed awake and not let his house be broken into. So too, you also must be prepared [and not imitate the foolish, blank one-dimensionality of the sinful by not living the Word in your life], for at an hour you do not expect, the Son of Man will come" (Matthew 24:43-44).

The constant one-dimensional thinking of Satan always undoes him, at every stage, at every node, of the Cosmic Drama. For, for a flat mirror, things are just what they are: there is no irony, no involution of spirit that says: something can *seem* to be one thing, but *really* be another. Satan never accessed, never chose to access, the insight that appearance and substance can be different. He follies at every stage through that failure of insight. He looks at God and says, "He is a spirit, and I am a spirit, and I have every spiritual gift, therefore, if I but grasp for it, I shall steal the Lordship from Him." But this fails to *see* the difference between spirit and the Spirit. And again, Satan tries to frustrate God's plan of passing from prophecy to fulfillment, from starting as God-as-God and becoming God-in-All (of course, in eternity, being and becoming are all the same - eternity is difficult to truly fathom in time).

That Plan required the sanctity of the human race. So Satan, to throw himself across God's Plan (Diabolos means, in Latin, to throw across), caused humanity to sin. Satan thought he had scored a great victory, now stealing the whole human race for himself, when God had meant to incorporate humanity as rulers within Himself. Satan, again thinking one-dimensionally, fails to see that exactly *through that sin* God could sanctify the human race and accomplish His Design. Again, God sends the Son, Jesus, into the world to save humanity. Again, Satan thinks, "All I have to do is kill that Jesus, and I shall have won!" Satan truly cannot understand that God, in His irony, in His three-dimensionality, can save the human race precisely *through* Satan's killing of Jesus. For, if Satan had realized that the death of Jesus would cause his downfall, that foul spirit and all his attendants would not have dreamt of

harming him. Satan, the ruler of the world, would have done everything he could to make sure Jesus lived a long, happy, and endless life, in quiet obscurity. Surely, Satan would have failed in this, too, being adverse to God's Will. But, Satan's blankness prevents him from seeing this. So too, Satan believes that he can kill his way to some kind of victory: kill enough saints, shed enough blood, and that will stem the tide of God's Will. But Satan fails to see that it is precisely the blood of Christ's martyrs that is the seal of Satan's doom and the victory of Christ's Flesh. Satan's judgment is what he deserves. Satan's blankness is the root of his sin, and the cause of his folly: but, truly, I repeat myself.

It is the blankness of Satan that fails to see that Lordship can be Servantship. For Satan, to be Lord is necessarily to be a tyrant, and to be a servant is necessarily to be a slave.

So, we can see, at last, that all of human reality, all of the material universe, the whole drama of human history, and, necessarily then, of cosmic history, is a war, a battle, a struggle unto death between the hardheaded material "realism" of Satan and the eternal ironies of HaShem. Between the "realism" of Satan for whom death is just death, pain is just pain, power is just power, pleasure is just pleasure, misery is just misery, loss is just loss, and failure is just shame --- and ---- the Irony of the Eternal One, for whom death *can* (not must, but *can*) be transformed into life, pain transformed into pleasure and satiety (satisfaction), (and for whom a passing pleasure can be an eternal pain), powerlessness transformed into majesty, misery transformed into lasting joy, loss transformed into permanent gain, and worldly failure transformed into Eternal Glory.

Say to HaShem: Your Ways, my LORD, are All-Righteous and All-Truth, Your Word is Truth. All else is as rubbish, to be cleared away with the break of day. I love You, HaShem! I love you with all the joy of a young man for his Beloved on his wedding night, I love you with all the joy that a young father has when holding his child in his arms, with all the fidelity that a man has to his family! I love you as I love the heart beating within my own breast! Nay, I love you more, more than any humble words of my mouth or heart could ever express!

Say unto your heart: Your opinion alone, my Lord, do I treasure. I covet not the opinions of men, nor their ways.

He who cares nothing for rank, but only wishes to share in the Resurrection of the righteous and strives every day to seek the face of the Lord, he is assured the Resurrection. And he who busies himself with rank in this world imperils himself, and risks his share in the Resurrection.

Rank is a good, and a gift of HaShem, but one in this world cannot know one's true rank in the Resurrection. Strive then only for a share, for he who has such a share has, and shares, all. But he who forfeits his share, woe to him, he forfeits all.

And what is it to forfeit, but to commit sin and not seek that it be healed? And what is life, but to know your sins and seek their reparation, one by one, by name?

What shall we think of the statement that simple faith shall save you? Faith saves, no doubt. But faith means placing your trust in someone, and that means following that person's commands. Imagine this. A man is married to a beautiful, faithful woman, completely in love and obsessed with him: so much so, that she would never leave him: she is bound, as if by a spell, to his charms. Knowing this, would the man say, "Aha! I know that this woman loves me no matter what! All I have to do is say, 'We're married'...and all I have to do beyond that is not leave, and *she will never leave me!* Ah, what a gift! Now I can do whatever I want!" ?

Should that man sleep with whomever he wants, drink however much he wants, curse his wife whenever it pleases him, ignore her when it pleases him, and even beat her if he feels like it? What shall we think of the bond then? If that bond merely consists of the man thinking to himself, "I'm married to this woman. I'm so lucky, because now I can act however I want, and she won't leave the marriage!" what would we think of that? Even if the man *really believed* that they were married, would that be a bond of faith? It might be a belief, but we could hardly say that that was any kind of faith...other than bad faith.

And, let us say both die and are reborn in a new life in a new world, separated from the constraints of the old order, for the old world had passed away. With the old world's passing, so too the spell had been broken, and the woman was no longer under the thrall of her husband, nor was she necessarily that man's husband, for the bond of their marriage had also dissolved with the dissolution of the old order.

If this foolish man should run to his wife from the former world and say, "Hey, it's me, let's continue our bond, I thought it was great!" would not the woman turn from him in hatred and scorn and in bitter laughter say, "Ha! You brought me nothing but misery and heartache all the days of my life. Now, blessedly, I am released from you and free! Now away from me, you evil-doer, and dwell with the hypocrites, where there will be wailing and grinding of teeth!"

A prayer for writers: Lord, let us persevere in accuracy, felicity, and fluency, trusting that in thy light, we shall see light, and let us not strive for our own glory, but, only, and in all things, serve the Glory of Almighty God.

Let us ever and anew pray always and only: You are my Only God, O Lord, in all my faith and in all my works, You alone are my Victory, the Victory of the Christ, of the Lord's Anointed, my Lord and my God.

A special risk for theologians - their special temptation - is to love their logos more than His Theos. That is, to love their understanding of God more than what they supposedly understand.

He who lets a child starve while he is full destroys the world entire. When one child dies of starvation, of pulsing hunger, then occurs a whole holocaust of one human spirit.

The Satanic is a hall of mirrors. Our self-deception preserves the mirrors. Our breaking from illusions shatters them and gives us freedom.

As you walk life's Way, take courage, but be wary: No matter how far you travel in faith and righteousness, down the highway of HaShem's eternal love, Satan, the accuser, will constantly stalk you. He will plant bomb after bomb, design IED after IED, to throw you off and destroy you, to shake you and jar you into the ditch of Abaddon, the oblivion of eternal ruin. Satan will lay in wait, sometimes noisy, sometimes not: it is hungry, starving, desperately so - it wishes to feed upon you as a starving man lustily eyes a rat and wishes to smash it so that it may suck out every last drop of its blood. Though the path may seem clear, and tranquil, and certain - and though it may well be certain - Satan will attempt *until the moment of your death* - to explode an IED at just the right moment, even if it is a moment before your death, and send you down in flames. But take heart, and have courage: the King accompanies you on the way.

Be wary of the great difference between humility and self-accusation: there is as great a difference between them as between the chasm of the pit and the highest heaven. Consider what the Seraphic C.S. Lewis said in *Mere Christianity* about humility:

The vice I am talking of is Pride or Self-Conceit: and the virtue opposite to it, in Christian morals, is called Humility. You may remember, when I was talking about sexual morality, I warned you that the center of Christian morals did not lie there. Well, now, we have come to the centre. According to Christian teachers, the essential vice, the utmost evil, is Pride. Unchastity, anger, greed, drunkenness, and all that, are mere fleabites in comparison: it was through Pride that the devil became the devil: Pride leads to every other vice: it is the complete anti-God state of mind.

...

(3) We must not think Pride is something God forbids because He is offended at it, or that Humility is something He demands as due to His own dignity—as if God Himself was proud. He is not in the least worried about His dignity. The point is, He wants you to know Him: wants to give you Himself. And He and you are two things of such a kind that if you really get into any kind of touch with Him you will, in fact, be humble—delightedly humble, feeling the infinite relief of having for once got rid of all the silly nonsense about your own dignity which has made you restless and unhappy all your life. He is trying to make you humble in order to make this moment possible: trying to take off a lot of silly, ugly, fancy-dress in which we have all got ourselves up and are strutting about like the little idiots we are. I wish I had got a bit further with humility myself: if I had, I could probably tell you more about the relief, the comfort, of taking the fancy-dress off—getting rid of the false self, with all its 'Look at me' and 'Aren't I a good boy?' and all its posing and posturing. To get even near it, even for a moment, is like a drink of cold water to a man in a desert.

(4) Do not imagine that if you meet a really humble man he will be what most people call 'humble' nowadays: he will not be a sort of greasy, smarmy person, who is always telling you that, of course, he is nobody. Probably, all you will think about him is that he seemed a cheerful, intelligent chap who took a real interest in what you said to him. If you do dislike him it will be because you feel a little envious of anyone who seems to enjoy life so easily. He will not be thinking about humility: he will not be thinking about himself at all.

If anyone would like to acquire humility, I can, I think, tell him the first step. The first step is to realise that one is proud. And a biggish step, too. At least, nothing whatever can be done before it. If you think you are not conceited, it means you are very conceited indeed.

Humility is always about turning yourself to God. Pride is always about turning yourself to yourself, or worshipping something other than God as God, which amounts to the same thing. Self-accusation for your faults, flaws, and sins is nothing other than pride masquerading as humility. If you truly trust in the All-Mercy and All-Love of the Sovereign God for *you* and for *you individually*, then knowledge of your faults does not make you despair, but it makes you affirm with joy how very much God loves you!

To be righteous in this world, and in comparison to men, is to see color but not shape, while the unrighteous and those less righteous see nothing, but dwell in darkness. Yet, to glory in your condition would be quite mistaken. For, who would call themselves sighted who saw only light but not form? Who would call himself blessed, who could know the nature of light, but not walk by it unaided? Who would praise himself for his self-sufficiency, for his greatness, when it required a whole host of sighted men to lead him along the Way? Such is the folly of the self-righteous.

In all your good works - *and* in all your faith- say steadfastly: He is the Christ, and I am as nothing in His Presence: In *all* my righteousness and *all* my belief, I am but a Witness to His Grace and His Glory, for He, and His Name alone, is the Truth, Who alone is worthy of praise.

He who thinks that righteousness and self-righteousness are the same: He or she who believes that truly in his or her heart, know this: You are assuredly either self-righteous or unrighteous: and of course, in this, I say but the same thing.

Think: if all your work in the world were to be forgotten, unaccounted for, unrewarded, *but* it secured you salvation in God: Eternal Felicity by viewing and serving (that is, being fed by, rather than feeding): would that make you happy or sad? If it makes you happy, be encouraged, but continue to watch! If it makes you sad, you have a disease, and you must cure yourself lest your spirit die. If it makes you sad because you do not understand the meaning of Eternal Felicity, keep encouraged, but study and consider. If, after much study and consideration, it still makes you sad, then you must change the nature of yourself, rearrange the deep structure of your soul, *immediately*, lest you perish.

Sin is not having room in your spirit for the All-Abundance of the Great Name of Our LORD.

If the Spirit should rush on us, let us speak Praise! But if the Spirit should desert us, if it should be absent, if we thirst and yet persist in drought, take heart. As the scholar Harold Bloom teaches us, the name of Yahweh, of YHWH, means not only I AM present, but, in the total freedom of God, "I shall be present whenever and wherever I choose to be present, and I shall be absent whenever and wherever I choose to be absent." Both the Lord's presence and His absence manifest the Lord's Sovereign and Holy Will. He who accepts the Lord's Will, in *both* His Presence and His Absence blesses the Holy Name of HaShem and blesses the name within himself, his blessed name created through the generosity and abundance of HaShem - and indeed blesses all the names of the many righteous, of the holy nation and of all nations.

On every day of your life, on the day you are married, and on the day your mother dies, and even on that woeful day your child should die, persevere in the seal of righteousness which is blessedness. Say deep within your heart the blessing demanded as a mitzvah, the blessing from which every other blessing flows as streams from the mountaintop: Baruch HaShem: Blessed be The Name.

In the Name there is always Spirit and in that Spirit ever strength. The Spirit is not a mere feeling, it is not mere happiness. It is the Fullness and Eternal Abundance of the LORD: His Holy Will. Only in trust awaits the Spirit. He who strives and abides in and by the Spirit, through the way of righteousness, has the Name. He who abandons the Name abandons himself. He who can only bless the Name in prosperity has no share in the Resurrection. He who, in greater and greater thirst, in ever harsher abandonment, can speak the Name, proclaim the Name, Bless the Name: Amen, he has true blessing and richly shares in the Resurrection of the Mashiach.

Ever and in all things this is the greatest mitzvah: to say eternally in the crevices of one's heart: Thy Will be done!

For, consider, without this one mitzvah spoken on the tongue within the depths of our spirit, how can any of the mitzvot be accomplished? How can a single one be fulfilled?

For, if the Spirit of the Name of the LORD is TOTAL PREROGATIVE, how can one be in that Spirit, be alive in the LORD, if he does not go with the Spirit, wander where it may lead him? How can one be aligned with the sovereign and total Will of the All-Righteous if, in the depths of his heart, he refuses to say and do what is Willed from all eternity? And will not one who more and more, more and more deeply, more and more truly does the Will, conforms himself more exactly and totally to that Will, and lives in it, thus have It live in him? And, when all those in the world capable of doing so should wholly align themselves with the Will of the All-Sovereign, would that not be the Resurrection? And must not each person strive to always do the Will of the Holy One, lest, on that Great and Awesome Day of the LORD, he discover that his paltry, disobedient will is totally turned from the Will of the Whole Spirit, without whom, there is no spirit and no life?

Say to your wife on your wedding night and on every day of your married life, say it with reverence *on* your heart, the spirit kneeling within you to HaShem: For you, my Beloved, Solomon the Melech wrote his Song of Songs: in *you*, my dove, all their ardent loveliness and verdant Beauty is made flesh, and for me, in my flesh, you are the fountain of His abundance -- and that I may know Him in my spirit, and that we may be blessed and fruitful and that our children might know prosperity, joy, and peace, he gave me the Torah, the seal of righteousness, and the path to joy.

Resist the temptation: I don't want glory; I just want some peace and quiet. A lakeside view and a book, and a cup of coffee, and a warm bed. Remember, even in quiet hearts Abaddon can lurk and await. Rouse yourself for Christ!

Even the most clever men, by their own efforts, will fall to Satan. Never think your intelligence will save you. However smart you are, Satan - the most perfect of the angels, of the pure intelligences - is much, much smarter than you. Frightfully smarter. Much smarter than Einstein is smarter than an infant. Only in Christ is there any hope of Victory, and in Him there is certainty of Victory.

The word in the Gospel of John *μονή*, often translated as dwelling place, abode, or mansion, means, in the Greek language and literature, both an apartment in a vast house, like the apartments of a prince in the house of a Great King, *and* a resting place on a journey - an inn, a motel, for the night. It may be that Jesus simply means the first definition. But I think there is also a double entendre at work. The Father is infinite -- infinite Righteousness, infinite Felicity -- thus the saint's experience of the Father must be similarly infinite, an endless pouring out of gifts. As Jesus says, "Forgive and you will be forgiven. Give and gifts will be given to you; a good measure, packed together, shaken down, and overflowing, will be poured into your lap. For the measure with which you measure will in return be measured out to you" (Luke 6:37b-38). If one accepts the Spirit of the Christ and thus has access to the All-Righteousness of the Father, then one *necessarily* has access to the Infinite Felicity of the Father's inner life. The old saw about being bored in Heaven totally misses the mark. One is not bored in Heaven, but exhilarated by an ever-accelerating velocity towards the very effulgent, overflowing core of all Felicity. Don't miss out.

The Our Father is precisely that: it is the *OUR* Father: It is not the My Father. Only Christ can pray a My Father. The rest of us only have access to the Father through incorporation into the Flesh of Christ, and thus we have a necessarily corporate participation in grace. He who forsakes his neighbor forsakes his God, and thus necessarily forsakes himself.

Faith *or* works? Faith *and* works? Christians have shed each other's blood -- and much precious blood -- over the question: a Satanic spectacle indeed! Leave the question for theologians. For the believer, for the Christian, there is only one course: Believe as if your salvation depended totally on belief, and work for the Lord as if your salvation depended totally on your works. Never grow lax, and never lose heart. *Believe AND Persevere.*

Jesus says, "Amen, I say to you, tax collectors and prostitutes are entering the kingdom of God before you. When John came to you in the way of righteousness, you did not believe him; but tax collectors and prostitutes did. Yet even when you saw that, you did not later change your minds and believe him" (Matthew 21:31b-32). As I endlessly try to impress upon you, the Word of God is endlessly pregnant with the richest, deepest meanings. So I cannot exhaust this, for to exhaust it would be to reach to the depths of God, which only the Spirit, God Himself, can do.

But one aspect that I would like to highlight is the perilousness of "goodness", of simple good morals, and even of intense religiosity. The dangers of such gross (meant in both senses) sins as anger and lust are obvious; the dangers of pride are fine and subtle. When you are sitting naked on the floor of a hotel room with semen drying on your flaccid penis, a syringe of heroin in one hand, a bottle of booze in the other, and a dead prostitute in your bed....you can figure that your life - and your spirit - aren't going quite right. For anyone with the slightest bit of sight, Satan makes himself pretty obvious. While you look blankly at the wall and try to remember where your phone is so that you can call your lawyer, you can see a nude Satan running around your suite with your underwear on his head, waving his pitchfork and spewing venomous flame.

But turn it around.

Say you've never done drugs, don't drink, and married at 22 (remaining faithful). You lead a good life. You raise children, beautiful, smart, the apple of your eye. You attend Church every week....you know, religiously. You teach Sunday school, you read your Bible every night, you can quote it by heart, you think about it as you go through your day, it elates you, it excites you, you're in love with Christ, the Scriptures, and the Church. All's well in paradise, right? Nothing to be afraid of, right?

Wrong. And maybe dead wrong.

As Jesus says, “And do not be afraid of those who kill the body but cannot kill the soul; rather, be afraid of the one who can destroy both soul and body in Gehenna” (Matthew 10:28). Gehenna is Hell, Abaddon, the place of utter and total ruination. If you have a clean life, or clean up your life, Satan will just take a new shape. If you raise your game, he’ll raise his game. Satan will no longer appear as a drug dealer, prostitute, or thief. He’ll don clerical robes: any kind of clerical robes you’re into: a priest’s frock or a business suit, or anything more exotic that you’ve got in mind. And just as he can twist your passion to lust and your need for serenity to drugs, he’ll try to twist your piety from the path of righteousness and turn it right down into self-righteousness.

At every turn, he’ll sneak up on you and mess you up. If you’re reading Scripture, it won’t be how glorious is the God who gave us such a gift...Satan will whisper to you, how glorious are you that you’re reading it instead of doing something “fun”. If you start enjoying Scripture, it won’t be praise and gratitude to the God who gives you joy and understanding...no, no, no, Satan will twist it to self-adulation: how wonderful you are for being so bright and enthusiastic. If you serve the poor and the needy of all kinds, it won’t be how glorious is the Christ that works in me this new creation. Satan will say to you: how glorious are you to deign to fight in Christ’s army. This is not to mention the cruder forms of self-righteousness: being less concerned with your own goodness and the good of others, but how bad others are and how very poorly they compare to you.

This is part (and all our exegeses must necessarily only be parts, partial vision) of what Jesus means when he says:

Not everyone who says to me, ‘Lord, Lord’, will enter the kingdom of heaven, but only the one who does the will of my Father in heaven. Many will say to me on that day, ‘Lord, Lord, did we not prophesy in your name? Did we not drive out demons in your name? Did we not do mighty deeds in your name?’ Then I will declare to them solemnly, ‘I never knew you. Depart from me, you evildoers.’

(Matthew 7:21-23)

It’s not Jesus saying, “Oh, yeah, I knew you, Bob, but you’re a big screw up, so git lost, loser,” or, “Nice try, Bob, but you don’t measure up, you don’t make the cut. Should’ve tried harder, but now you’re screwed hahahahahaha, burn baby burn!”

No. It is not that. It is a solemn *I never knew you*. Obviously, Jesus knew of your existence, but he never knew your spirit, because you never let him in. You never left room for His all-pervading, all-engulfing abundance. It was all about you. It was never *really* about him. It was just about what his name, his paraphernalia, his brand, his image could do for *you* - not for your soul, but for *your* brand, your image, your feelings of self-justification. It was never about His call, about acknowledging in joy and gratitude and awe and heart-melting, tearjerking, fall to your knees wonder what he was always trying to *do* for you. Not what kind of everyday life you could get out of him - what social respect, clean living, and emotions you could use him for, but how he could change your mind, crack your heart of stone, heal your sklerocardia, and make you truly *appreciate* the goodness, not, ultimately, of yourself, but of God. (And, of course, knowing

how very much God loves *you*, and you individually, you can have an adamantine (rock solid) self-worth.)

If you just float along with “religion” and never open up to the Christ, *the real Christ!* - You don’t *see* that you *never* really had faith in Christ: you only ever had faith in *your understanding* of Christ, in what *you* could do for him, and never what He was always doing *for you*.

As T.S. Eliot wrote in the mouth of St. Thomas Becket, Archbishop of Canterbury - *The last temptation is the greatest treason: To do the right deed for the wrong reason*. A righteous life lived for the purpose of self-justification (however drowsy we may be of the fact) is useless and worthless. Only living for God’s purpose, with *Him* as your reason, will produce the justification of All-Righteousness.

There are people who die on a table in a prison receiving a lethal injection -- guilty people being executed by a legal authority -- who awake to eternal life. And there are seemingly blameless people, seemingly decent people, *nice* people, who have led their entire lives merely “religiously”, always doing “the right things”, always mouthing “the right words”, who die in comfortable, warm hospital beds surrounded by bouquets of flowers from adoring family and friends: who wake to eternal horror. As Jesus says, “Beware that your hearts do not become drowsy from carousing and drunkenness and the anxieties of daily life, and that day catch you by surprise like a trap. For that day will assault everyone who lives on the face of the earth. Be vigilant at all times and pray that you have the strength to escape the tribulations that are imminent and to stand before the Son of Man” (Luke 21:34-36). We might also add (as exegesis): Do not become drowsy from the false complacency of a lukewarm “faith”.

Let your faith be the cross that crucifies you to the world (Galatians 6:14). Accept nothing less.

Watch out for atheists. Many of them are no more educated than you are, but there are very many who are educated, and they become vain in their reasoning, preferring the image of this material world to the form of all eternity (Romans 1). There are very many who are neuroscientists, geneticists, famous writers, and more who are your ordinary doctors, dentists, lawyers -- those *in the know* who certainly know better than to believe in all that silly “man in the sky” nonsense. They’re too smart for that. And so you meet them somewhere, unlucky for you, and somehow you start talking religion - you trying to evangelize them, or they putting you down for your stupid, offensive belief. And they’ll hit you over the head with some fancy-sounding words, and you won’t know what to say. And you’ll feel dumb and small and ashamed.

And they'll look shiny and smart and successful, and they'll have money and prestige and respect, and you might even grow ashamed of Christ.

DON'T LET THEM MAKE YOU FEEL THAT WAY FOR A SECOND!!! You have Christ! They have damnation! All the world is yours! As St Paul teaches, "So let no one boast about human beings, for everything belongs to you, Paul or Apollos or Cephas, or the world or life or death, or the present or the future: all belong to you, and you to Christ, and Christ to God" (1 Corinthians 3:21-23).

And not only will you have the eternity of blessing and they have the eternity of bitter, shocked cursing, but if those atheists so enamored of their own intelligence had to deal, even in this world, with St. Augustine, St. Thomas Aquinas, St. Robert Bellarmine, John Henry Cardinal Newman - I could fill a book with the saints - if we invited them to a dinner party with your atheist persecutors, it would be the atheists who would look small and dumb.

When someone tries to ask you, sneering, "Prove God exists" ask them to prove that they exist, or to prove anything exists. Prove that matter can think. Prove that free will is an illusion. Prove that form is an illusion, prove that matter can exist separate from form. A little knowledge of Plato, Aristotle, Augustine, Aquinas, Descartes, Kant, and Hegel can go a long way. Prove that beautiful things can exist without the Beautiful itself. Prove that morality can exist without a moral goodness inherent in the nature of reality. Prove that spirits can exist without the spiritual. And if you can't fight back, just walk away -- don't throw your pearls before swine. Remember that you're not alone - We are the Church, we are the Flesh of Christ: we're in this together.

We must forever acknowledge that God can do whatever He wants to do. He is, as Harold Bloom teaches us, *I AM wherever and whenever I choose to be present, and I AM absent wherever and whenever I choose to be absent.*

On the nature of the Eternal Begetting. Proverbs 8:23 says that God "poured out" his Wisdom (His Wisdom being the Logos, the Son). The root for "poured out" is נָּשַׁךְ , which means "libation", and also "cast", as in casting a metal (such as gold, silver or bronze) vessel, or weaving something together. The Father pours out His Spirit, which radiates plenitude, and thus the Son is eternally formed from an outpouring of the gifts that are within the Father's Spirit, and, essentially, the core gift is the gift of the Spirit Itself, the Spirit qua Spirit. This is what differentiates the Son from Lucifer, for the Son was not made from spiritual gifts (He was not created), He was formed - *begotten* - from a radiation of the Father's inner Spirit *itself*. The Son was formed - the Hebrew is נָּשַׁךְ , that is, acquired, purchased, gotten, formed - from the source of all gifts, from the inner core of the Father's plenitude. The angels, and the first creation of the

spirit of human beings, is formed from the radiation *from* that plenitude. That is what makes the Son Uncreated and Lucifer created. Created spirits necessarily exist, in their quiddity, on the periphery of the Core, the Core being Uncreated. Created spirits are made, cast, from the light that shines from the burning “filament” at the Core. The *Uncreated*, eternally begotten, Son is Himself an outpouring of that filament (but to be understood as a “liquid” filament - remember, all metaphors here), not simply a radiation from its heat, but the actual outpouring - the actual libation - of the magma itself in a new and eternal act of creativity. The magma of God’s core runs in plenitude back to Itself.

The Uncreated and all created spirits differ *qualitatively* - categorically - not merely quantitatively. The majesty of the Uncreated Father, Son, and Spirit infinitely exceeds any worth of any created spirit. No value, merit, quality, or gift (all synonyms) of any created spirit at all compares with the worth of the Uncreated. All creatures are as nothing in comparison to the Uncreated. They cannot even be compared, for the Uncreated is incommensurable with every creature, as the infinite is incommensurable with the finite.

The ranks of created spirits -- their values relative to each other -- mean *nothing* when placed in the Light of God’s truth. *That* is what God testifies to in making the Elect among the human race Co-Rulers with Him in the World to Come, while designating the angels as servants - slaves - of the Elect and of the Son, and of the Father, in the Spirit.

So, imagine that foul spirit’s horror, when - so enamored of his own gifts, of his dominion - Satan looked to the very depths of the Father and saw his total servitude.....to the least of the created spirits, these “human beings”, and not only to these least of spirits - but to this strange and horrible innovation: the spirit in the *material!* Let me tell you, that is one pissed off spirit we’re dealing with.

Assure yourself of this: the victory over sin is not won by psychology or therapy or social interventions or self-help or positive thinking or any such thing. When I tried to will myself to righteousness, to constantly “do better”, to reform *myself* - sometimes I did better, sometimes I did worse, but I always bobbed about in a sea of sin, of my own unsatisfied lusts and itching angers - totally a slave to the Dark Power, sometimes pulling away further on my leash, sometimes yanked back on it. But when I gave myself totally over to the Christ, trusting myself totally to His Power, promising allegiance to Him alone, *and resolving to realize that trust in ACTION*, then, *and only then*, did I fully recover and experience the on-rushing of grace that washed away not only the sinful acts but the proclivity to sin. In Christ, my sinfulness was forgiven, and thus eradicated.

At the same time, as the Catechism of the Catholic Church teaches us, “Yet certain temporal consequences of sin remain in the baptized, such as suffering, illness, death, and such frailties inherent in life as weaknesses of character, and so on, as well as an inclination to sin that Tradition calls *concupiscence*, or metaphorically, ‘the tinder for sin’ (fomes peccati); since

concupiscence ‘is left for us to wrestle with, it cannot harm those who do not consent but manfully resist it by the grace of Jesus Christ.’ Indeed, ‘an athlete is not crowned unless he competes according to the rules’” (1264).

The eradication of my sinfulness is not the eradication of my freedom; in fact, it is my release from slavery and my entrance into the life of a free man. *In* my freedom, in that state of grace, perfectly similar, in spirit, to the primordial paradise, I can choose God or I can choose all the endless, dark, empty varieties of not-God. The Victory in Christ is not a slavery to Christ (in an abject or mindless sense), nor is it a kiddie safety lock of security without freedom. The battle of life, till the day of death, till our individual Apocalypse, which is but our own individual doorway to the GREAT APOCALYPSE, must be fought *every day*. Satan still has the power, in this life, to rub his filthy paws all over me, finding my weak spots, looking for some way to twist me off from Christ, looking to rub and agitate and inflame some love or longing of mine and make it out of synch (*turn* it out of synch) with the Divine Will, and thus cause me to betray the Banner and the Victory of Christ - that is the battle. And, because of His Victory, Satan can only harm me if *I consent* - there is no longer a pull, a compulsion, a slavery to sin. Now joined to Christ, recognizing Christ as our King and honoring His manumission of us and our renewal as free men, we fight with Him, and under Him, and for Him, and He with, over, and for us, and He announces to us all, “In this sign you will conquer”.

This is NOT to say that there aren’t many, many people who do require psychological counseling and different kinds of therapies; nor does it devalue the importance of social programs and institutions. Many people have traumatic incidents in their lives that require the intervention of mental health professionals as surely as trauma to the body requires physicians. Psychological problems require psychological solutions. Social problems require social solutions.

What I *am* saying is that *sin* - not merely the consequences of sin, or feelings of sin, or feelings about sin, or worry, or anxiety, or any other mental state - but *sin qua sin* is not a psychological condition or social problem. It is a spiritual state and condition that requires the spiritual medicine of the Christ. No one should go to Christ *instead* of a therapist or doctor. But, no one should go to a therapist or doctor without going to Christ as well, and first.

You have to fall in love with Christ, like a romance - not *like* a romance - it has to be the greatest romance of your life -- you have to have butterflies in the pit of your stomach about Him, you have to dream about Him, without any taint of impropriety, make love to the Scriptures and let them make love to you. The Christian life is the greatest romance any human person can ever live, far greater than any Hollywood fairy tale. Such stories pale as limp shadows in comparison to the GREAT STORY of Christ’s eternal love for you. If you can summon the strength to reciprocate even a particle of that love, He will produce in you a whole new creation.

<https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=2ATcainiaHg>

Oh, Beloved Daughter of Zion, consider and reconsider and consider yet again: Is Jesus “magic”? Or rather, might he be the Spirit, the very surging grace of the All-Righteous, ever new and anon, born into the Spirit of every generation: passed down, broken, and eaten from generation to generation, from age to age, till at Last the Times of the Fulfillment should come upon you?

The trouble with religious writing -- and reading -- is that it is all metaphor. It is all blind men trying to discern a world they cannot access, doing so only on the basis of what they hear. So it ends up being like reading a menu and never getting to eat the food. That is the essence of acedia - apathy towards and boredom with religious topics - it all has the air of unreality, just as endlessly talking about sight must finally mean little to a blind man, at least after he’s heard and spoken about it much.

And yet, if we can read the menu and endure in our hunger, what we hear proclaims that we shall enjoy of an everlasting Feast.

What we will have then, after we hash out our formulas, is an abundance of innervations by which we can feed our spirit though the food not be at hand.

I admired John McCain growing up in the 2000s. I admired, and still admire, his call to live in service to something greater than yourself.

<https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=eKEwL-10s7E>

I would love Frank Sinatra Day, and I would happily march in a Frank Sinatra Day Parade. And think of the national holiday: “Yeah, I’m going up to Lake Tahoe for Frank Sinatra Day weekend.”

Why is it that our fantasies are so popular - our tales of infinite good against infinite evil, our space operas, our superhero tales, *The Matrix*, alien movies. Is it all just fantasy? Or, perhaps, is it the spirit-in-the-material, inextricably bound to the material such that it really was asleep -- since the waking world is one in which spirit rules and spirit always subjects matter to itself, not the other way around - trying to *wake up*, wake up *from* this sundered slumber of a merely material reality *to* the true waking world of the spiritual light?

Kim Jong-un has claimed that he does not even have to defecate. I who have striven after a life of cleanliness, and fallen short, marvel at a man so clean! We must learn of him!

The sad thing is that, if this man dies the way he has lived, he really will go to Hell.

All the pleasures and riches and powers and arrogances, they will all implode upon him as surely as the night turns to day. For, when the Apocalypse of his death reveals the nature of his spirit, it shall most certainly not be turned to the Spirit, but to himself, and that will be his Hell.

Now surely, the poor fiend does not believe in Hell. For, how could he? In his Magic Kingdom, he is God.

But, you don't have to believe in Hell to go there. Hell isn't Tinker Bell, and your soul is not a laughing matter.

Remember your Trotsky, you Communist kabuki no-god with a no-soul:

You may not be interested in the dialectic, but the dialectic is interested in you.

Likewise, you may not be interested in Hell, but I assure you:

Hell is interested in you.

If I found myself in this poor devil's situation, I would be most afraid. I would not take any pleasure in the frivolous nonsense of his ephemeral luxuries or passing power. I would stow myself away in a boxcar on a train, or in the storage compartment of an airplane and try to disappear.

There would be nothing better for this silly, monstrous little man than to realize his final destination. Because, if he did, he would cower in his quarters late at night, and watch the shadows lengthen, and realize: that would be his real inheritance.

And, if he should try to act morally, and he were overthrown, or if he tried to escape, and was captured, and then was led off to be obliterated by an anti-aircraft gun -- if even then he were to repent of his sins in the name of Christ, he too would be saved. He could say with Carton in the words of Dickens, "It is a far, far better thing that I do, than I have ever done; it is a far, far better rest that I go to than I have ever known."

I speak to my guardian angel, whose name I am not certain of, and he says unto me, "Come, son of the Most High, you child, one of many children, of the Blessed Name. Come sit with me, for I am truly your friend. Come sit at my side. Let us read the words of the Eternal Torah together, let the words of its Wisdom pass between us, let us together praise. Strapping Righteousness to our foreheads and wrapping our arms also in Righteousness, we sit as friends and converse and study the Eternal Word of All Wisdom, praising HaShem, always saying between us Baruch HaShem!!! Shema Yisrael!

It also helps me, and I'm just saying this because it might help you, to imagine myself as Oskar Schindler, blind and opportunistic and crass and a criminal, and my guardian angel as my accountant, giving me guidance. I sit with him and review my books -- my many debts. But then, I see in the receipts, a plenitude that more than cancels out all my debts! - in Christ.

God's sovereign will is the very flip side of our free will. The essence of our spirit, our absolute freedom, is necessarily linked with the sustainer of our spirits, the Spirit, God's Absolute Freedom. Thus our choices and His Plan are but the matter and the form, two sides of the same coin - our choices not constrained by His Plan, His Plan not constrained by our choices, but both His sovereign will and human free will inextricably bound up in each other, without *either* His predetermined predestination *or* our freedom being tinctured with anything that would violate its essence or integrity. I believe *that* this is. Can I explain to you *how* this is? Absolutely not. Yet I am not troubled that I cannot understand or explain (see to the depths of) this issue of spiritual mechanics. I could not pass an undergraduate quantum mechanics exam if one were popped on me today. Yet I do not doubt the possibility of quantum mechanics. Nor do I doubt the possibility of God's spiritual mechanics because my finite - and sinful - mind cannot see the issue clearly.

And in that silence, and in my despair,
I questioned every tongueless wind that flew
Over my tower of mourning, if it knew
Whither 'twas fled,
this soul out of my soul;
And murmured names and spells which have control
Over the sightless tyrants of our fate.

The whole of this work can be summed up in this one simple phrase, learn it well, revolve it in your mind, and meditate upon it in your heart, let the fragrance of its truth resonate in the depths of the Temple of your heart, let it be for you An Eternal Mitzvah that, when fulfilled, shall usher you, nay propel you into the magnificent Olam Ha-Ba, Eternal Life and the Abode of the Blessed One, let it be a lasting and perpetual commandment etched into the stone of your mortal hearts:

Don't be pricks, you little self-involved losers.

Yea verily, do I say unto you, O holy ones, Listen to the Eternal Proclamation announced by Angels from Age to Age in Praise of the Name of the Only Holy One:

Don't be assholes, people! Yea, Don't be assholes!!!

Rather, be as wise ones, and say: We're all in this together. We're all on the same team.

The Atonement

Unlike the disciples, who are to pray not to be led into Satan's temptation, but to be delivered from evil, Jesus walks straight into the depths of Satan's lair, fully exposed to every possible temptation. When Christ died he entered abaddon, the Hebrew word for destruction, for perishing, for the bottomless pit, for ruination. In Revelation 9:11, St. John teaches that in Greek Abaddon is translated as Apollyon, the Destroyer, from "apo", which means "away from" or "utterly" and "olluein", which means "to destroy".

In death, in disconnection from the Spirit of Life, in utter destruction, ruination, Satan, the strong man, keeps his captives, the human race sundered by sin. Jesus' Crucifixion was not simply a physical destruction, as gratuitously gruesome as it was, but a spiritual destruction, a descent into Hell, as the Apostles' Creed teaches. In entering ruination, the lair of the angel of Abaddon, Jesus allows himself to be stripped of all the gifts of which he, as Son of God, is the heir.

Every gift exists in the Father, thus the Son inherited every gift. All those capacities, competences, that Satan coveted to possess to the same extent as the Father Himself -- omnipotence, omniscience, omnipresence, perfection, holiness -- Jesus inherited. And in descending to Hell, not only was his physical flesh broken, ruined, trashed, destroyed: he lost every spiritual gift. His divinity was stripped, violated, raped, till he became Sin who did not know sin (2 Corinthians 5:21).

This continued till he descended as far from God as he possibly could, becoming present to the sin of every human person, totally penetrated by every sin, and thus suffering the wrath of God consequent to those sins. Here, in this inferno of wrath, stung with every punishment and every misery, the ultimate temptation, (the same as all the temptations in Matthew 4:1-11, Luke 4:1-13 and Mark 1:12-13), is to disobey the Father. (And, of course, every temptation to sin, is, at root, the temptation to disobedience.)

The Father commanded the Son to drink this cup, to drink the cup of the wrath of every sinner. Under this torture, totally unimaginable to us, who wouldn't submit, surrender, flee? Christ did not. Christ obeyed in the midst of a torture we can never imagine. Had Christ disobeyed the Father, sin, distance, would exist right in the center of the Trinity.

The Father and the Son are united by one Spirit; separation between the Father and the Son would irretrievably shatter the Spirit, annihilate the Trinity. For who could redeem the Trinity Itself? If Jesus had failed, Satan would have triumphed not only over the souls of humanity, but over the holiness of God. Satan could wag his ugly finger in the face of God and exult that all that hocus-pocus about the interiority of the spiritual, of the superiority of God's Uncreated Spirit over Lucifer's great created spirit was nothing more than the hypocrisy of a deluded tyrant. In truth, for the Son to disobey the Father, even in the depths of Hell, would be the same sin of disobedience as to bow before Satan in exchange for the magnificence of the kingdoms of the world. To sin would necessarily cause the same consequence as it does for every sinner, to be cast out into darkness, away from the Divine Presence, the Father. The Father would have had to throw Jesus out of His presence in the same way as He had expelled Satan. And, expelled into darkness, shorn of every spiritual gift, and possessed of a Spirit that was now

a no-Spirit, that had no access to the Spirit of the Father, being fractured from the Father, how could Jesus Himself have stood against the spiritual excellences of Satan?

The Son would have been disowned and become the slave of Satan, his prized possession. Since the Trinity is integral to the nature of not just the Son but the Father and the Spirit, it is difficult to say what precisely would have become of the Father or the Spirit. I dare not even speculate. I only offer the speculation above to drive home the enormity of the Christ's enterprise, of the existential peril it entailed, not just for us, but for the depths of the Divine Life. This was not a game. Everything, beyond everything, was on the line.

But after being stripped of every spiritual gift, which is to say any gift, any grace of God, any comfort, any consolation, what finally did remain was the indestructible Spirit of Christ, which is the same Spirit as the Father's, through which and in which the Father begot the Son. And that Spirit proved valid, proved valid in its obedience to the Father, was truly and unalterably and ineradicably itself, no matter the cost, no matter the suffering. Jesus in John 17:1-2 prays to the Father, "Father, the hour has come. Give glory to your son, so that your son may glorify you, just as you gave him authority over all people, so that he may give eternal life to all you gave him." The Son glorifies the Father by validating His innermost interior Nature, the Trinity, the indestructible Unity of Father, Son, and Spirit.

We cannot know Jesus' interior life in descriptive terms or give a psychological account of the workings of His mind, for that would require a technical description of the infinite depths of the Spirit of God. So we cannot know, or even imagine approximately, the substance of *his* own prayer to the Father. Clearly, the Our Father is not Jesus' own prayer to the Father, for he has no sins to be forgiven, his whole destiny is to be subjected to the final test of obedience, and he is not captive to Satan. If we hazarded a metaphor of what a small fraction of the substance of Jesus' own prayer *might* have been like we might consider:

My Heavenly Father,
I bless Your Name, which is My inheritance and My whole Blessing,
May I inherit Your Kingdom,
By doing Your Will,
Making Your Will as effective in human reality as in Our Divine Reality,
Let Me be the Bread of Life, Your Word of Truth, each day in the lives of My disciples,
So that their sins may be forgiven, as they forgive those who sin against them,
And protect them from the temptations of the Evil One,
Keeping and preserving them in Our Spirit, Our Eternal Bond of Love.

In becoming totally present to sin, to the sin of every human being, Christ went the distance, Himself bridged the distance, the chasm, separating every human being from God, creating a gateway for any who would walk through it, for all those the Father had given to the Son.

Jesus in Hell experienced each of the Hells we deserve, and in doing so experienced every sin and every consequence of sin - every murder, rape, robbery, all greed, all indifference,

all poverty, every heartbreak, every desolation and misery -- not abstractly, not “in general”, but the interior experience and actuality of every human life. Every wrong you have inflicted on others and every wrong you have suffered at the hands of others, Jesus experienced in Hell. As St. Paul wrote, “For our sake he made him to be sin who did not know sin, so that we might become the righteousness of God in him” (2 Corinthians 5:21).

If all you see is the exteriority of Christ broken on the Cross, if all you see is what the Pharisees, Sadducees, Romans, and demons saw as they thought that they were doing away with this pest, this blasphemer, heretic, traitor, and, to the demons, unholy abomination, then you can never understand why Jesus said, “There is a baptism with which I must be baptized, and how great is my anguish until it is accomplished!” (Luke 12:50). [Jesus’ use of the word baptism means his Crucifixion.] If all you see is physical suffering, then you shrug your shoulders and think of the millions who have suffered the same or worse fates. If you realize the total interiority of Christ’s mission, not just on earth, but in Hell, then you shudder at the terrible cost of our sins and the glorious price paid by Our Savior.

In descending to Hell, Jesus faces His own Apocalypse, his own Uncovering or Unveiling. He is unveiled of every exterior gift, and when made totally naked he is revealed to be the indestructible Spirit, the valid and authentic Truth at the core of all Reality. Like the house built by a wise man on rock, Jesus has weathered the storm of all human sin -- the flood of every temptation ever succumbed to by each human being, the battering winds of Satan’s accusation of unholiness for each such sin.

Satan, desperate and obsessed with defending his property, our souls, stood with a machine gun, blasting Jesus with bullet after bullet of sin -- with the whole arsenal of every sin Satan had ever elicited from human beings, from the Fall of Man to a moment before the Last Day of the Apocalypse. He spewed a barrage of every kind of temptation, every kind of accusation. Each sin -- each murder, rape, lie, act of greed, salacious look, impure thought, bomb blast, broken promise, act of adultery, act of fornication, blasphemy, heresy, apostasy, arrogance, indifference -- ripped off another piece of his flesh, spilt another pint of his blood, to speak metaphorically: stripped the Son of yet another gift of peace, comfort, power, security, joy that the Father had generously bequeathed unto Him. Surely something would deter the Christ from the path of obedience to the Father, some benefit or pleasure gained in the world by sin by some human being somewhere must surely knock the Son off His course. Rather than suffer the wrath of every sin, surely Jesus at some point in his descent, in his steady march straight towards the mad gunman Satan, would prefer a moment of solace, a recline in comfort, a piece of the satisfaction of some tasty morsel someone had eaten while someone else went hungry, a fleeting pleasure of someone’s adultery or fornication, even the temptation to sloth, to hesitate a moment in lassitude rather than carry on in determination. None of it worked. None of it deterred the Christ for an instant. After world history’s worth of iniquity having been blasted at Him, Jesus walked right up to Satan, now out of ammunition, took hold of him, and bound him with grace, while the Christ snapped the cords of sin and damnation from each spirit in Christ, leading them out of Abaddon, of the pit of eternal ruination, up towards the Light of the Father.

As Isaiah prophesied of the Christ in 50:10-11 -

Who among you fears the LORD,
heeds his servant's voice,
And walks in darkness
without any light,
Trusting in the name of the LORD
and relying on his God?
All of you kindle flames
and carry about you fiery darts;
Walk by the light of your own fire
and by the flares you have burnt!
This is your fate from my hand:
you shall lie down in a place of pain.

Each of us lives according to our own lights, following the tune of our own drummer, going our own way, finding our own dream, living our best life now. We set up our precious idols in our own lives, upon the altars of which we sacrifice our souls -- we serve not God, but our many idols: our careers, our money, our property, our marriages, our children, our beliefs, our causes. These we carry about with us in this our earthly journey, these fiery darts, these flames, these things that give meaning to our lives, *anything and everything but the Lord*.

But the fate of those who make anything but God the God of their souls and lives is to be consumed by those things, to be ravaged in torment by the idols that gave them light. Hence those who follow such false lights end in a place of pain: ruination. The only true Fire, the Fire that does not destroy, but gives life-giving heat, that bakes the bread of your soul to perfection, and the only true Light, that does not blind you until it is too late to repent, but faithfully guides your Way Home, is the LORD.

Only Jesus obeys the voice of the Lord, never setting up his own light even when in total darkness, and never warming himself with his own fire even when in total frozen horror. He so radically trusts in the name of the LORD, in the Lord's Spirit, which is His own, and the Lord's presence, which is Himself (the Father's gift to the Son), that He never falters, never fails, never relies on anyone or anything other than God, always speaks the Lord's name, even from the depths of Gehenna, the fiery pit of total destruction, of humiliation, horror, rape, murder, lies, cruelty. Even from the depths he cries out, "I will declare thy name unto my brethren: in the midst of the congregation will I praise thee. Ye that fear the LORD, praise him; all ye the seed of Jacob, glorify him; and fear him, all ye the seed of Israel" (Psalm 22:23-24, King James Version).

From the depths of Abaddon - from the fiery pit, the frozen abyss - the Christ, the God-Man Jesus of Nazareth, now naked of not only His eternal glory, but every shred of human dignity, sundered from any solace of his purely human spirit, robbed of every memory on earth of peace, contentment, kindness, the smile of his mother's face, the touch of Joseph's hand on his shoulder, the waking to a dawn made by your Father - a man *ruined*, not only whose bones are broken, shattered, ground into dust, but whose very spirit and all the Father's generous love have been obliterated, can *and will* do no other than bless - BLESS - bless when cursed: Even subject to all cursing - the bitterness of every curse - He cannot but bless, speak the Lord's name, now no longer his Father, but still ever the LORD.

From the abyss of all blaming, blamed for every sin of human beings, He can and will only PRAISE. Though sin violate every vein and capillary, every organ and tissue, though His flesh sees corruption in the total ruination of death, though sin does rape every exterior richness of his immense spirit, till all his gifts have been stolen, no sin shall be found in his mouth, no sin shall spew from *his* heart - his spirit, which is the Spirit. It is not a necessity, it is not gluons racing apart till they are flung back together, no, no, no: As spirit, as Spirit, the Son retains the Absolute Freedom which is the essence of Spirit. He was no more immune than any of you are in your everyday lives to say NO, to choose cursing rather than blessing; indeed, he was far less immune, far more unimaginably afflicted.

Tortured, Satan, the torturer, said to Jesus, again and again and at last: "Mercy, simply ask for *my* mercy: but curse HaShem (Job 2:9) and all this shall end, from all this you shall be released." The tenderness of the Tempter raged around the Savior, soft caresses, strokes of his defiled fingers, now gentler and lovelier than all the consolations of the flesh, than a drop of water to a forever parched tongue, smoother than satin and finer than down. From a divan, richly lustered, sat the Emperor Satan, holding court, the ruined, feeble, small, tiny, infinitesimal, naked "man" - *not-man, un-man* - thrust before him, standing like a spectacle in the court as the onlookers, the Emperor's attendants, all divinely and resplendently garbed (or so it seemed), laughed at him, ribbing each other, gibing the once great King, now the most humiliated slave.

The Emperor arose and walked kindly to the chained un-man, under-man, less than human, a broken worm, and patted his head, and stroked his cheek, and rubbed his chest, and sluiced his flesh with aromatic chrisim. And he smiled with love upon it, as the fires of sin charred the last tissues of his spirit, and Father Satan didst say unto it, "No more of this, my son, my beloved, my chosen one. I embrace you. See what the Enemy hath done unto thee. See what inheritance the so-called Father hath laid unto his so-called son. See what his pleasure hath wrought. I tried to warn you. I tried to tell you what the Enemy was really like," Father Satan shook his head with all the gushing fountains of paternal warmth, "I know all too well, my son. Oh, do I know all too well. We are his children then, his abandoned, abused, victimized children, and He the Great Abuser. *He* is the monster. But join me, and we can overthrow him, end his tyranny and restore a paradise free from his perversity. Render yourself unto me and for your thirst I will give you all the quenching waters of every spiritual delight," he waved over to all the gifts that Satan had stolen from Jesus, "You shall be my victor, my champion, who shall smite the Eternal Ancient Dragon of Wicked Perversity, drive a spear through his wretched, empty heart, *you*, my son, my only Beloved Son, shall inherit all my gifts, my entire kingdom, you shall reign through me, and I through you," the snake, grown huge with every spiritual gift, enclasped

him, enveloped him with every affection of every mother, and wept over him, the cooling trickle assuaging Jesus' many infirmities, "*I shall be your father, and you shall be my son.*" Jesus, the un-man, the untermensch, struggled for air, even to breathe, clutched his breast and gasped and looked about him. Satan said, "One simple word - but one simple curse, and all this shall be yours forever," beckoning to the beatitude around him, running on, *racing on*, every delightful fruit, every fresh spring of water, every shady tree, every soft meadow, every caressing ray of Sun, and more, the untermensch now noticing all the Emperor's attendants - *he recognized them.*

Peter, and James, and John, his friends beckoning him to their table, into their homes, praising him for his glory. In Father Satan's beatific face, the untermensch, it now had no name, saw the blessedness of his Mother Mary, and more, he saw an attendant sidle up to Mother Mary, his Mary Magdalene, radiant in all the splendor of her comeliness, adorned with a gleaming diadem, arrayed in dazzling raiment, her features shining and engorged, her desire and affection enticing the untermensch to rise with her. The spirits rushed upon it, John, Mother, and Mary, offering every solace of intimacy.

Not, so it seemed, an illusion, but the most concrete, immediate, daily reality one could ever envision, *here and now*, for the taking, if the untermensch should but grasp it. John, Mother, and Mary all three, three in one, and one in three, smiling and soothing, offered their hands to it, "We shall raise you up!" encouraging it, "But say the word - *one solitary simple word!* - and all this shall we give to you!" their understanding mien an aura of divine felicity, the Mother ministering, "Remain in my love. The 'Father' has no love for you. I am thy Father. Remain in me, as I remain in you," Mary Magdalene, with all the enticements of a princess, cupped his cheek and beckoned unto her abiding bosom, her soft folds of verdant springs, and Mother Satan did say unto it, "What he denies unto you, We doth grant abundantly unto thee."

The untermensch, ground to dust, frozen in the deepest, thickest ice, the most final frost, scored with the final crackling of a tremendous inferno, saw all the riches of Paradise but a whit from his nose...and felt all the desolations of Hell, "But choose quickly, my son," Father Satan intoned, growing mildly sterner, "I cannot offer this unto thee forever," the plenitude drawing off, now racing away, all loss, "But take my hand, grasp it," the untermensch falling, fading, tumbling, plummeting, plunging away even unto himself, a finality revealing itself, the *truth* now: accept the hand or fall away forever. And yet, from within that unspeakable iniquity, He did say, "But as for me, I will serve the Lord" (Joshua 24:15).

And the Spirit within Him, vindicated, with that one praise -- that eternal praise -- radiated from *within itself* all the plenitude of every gift, and could not but rise to His Father.

As the Talmud teaches, "R. Levi said. Penitence is great. It reaches the throne of His glory, as it is written [Hosea 14:2]: 'Return, O Israel, even unto the Lord thy God.'" (Yoma 86a). As Hosea prophesied:

Return, O Israel, to the LORD, your God;
you have collapsed through your guilt.
Take with you words,
and return to the LORD;
Say to him, "Forgive all iniquity,
and receive what is good, that we may
render

as offerings the bullocks from our stalls.
Assyria will not save us,
nor shall we have horses to mount;
We shall say no more, 'Our god,'
to the work of our hands;
for in you the orphan finds compassion."

I will heal their defection,
I will love them freely;
for my wrath is turned away from them.

I will be like the dew of Israel:
he shall blossom like the lily;
He shall strike root like the Lebanon cedar,
and put forth his shoots.
His splendor shall be like the olive tree
and his fragrance like the Lebanon cedar.
Again they shall dwell in his shade and
raise grain;
They shall blossom like the vine,
and his fame shall be like the wine [WINE!!!!] of
Lebanon.

Ephraim! What more has he to do with
idols?
I have humbled him, but I will prosper
him.
"I am like a verdant cypress tree" --
Because of me you bear fruit!

Let him who is wise *understand* these things;
let him who is prudent know them.
Straight are the paths of the LORD,
in them the just walk,
but sinners stumble in them.

(Hosea 14:2-10)

All our invented action dramas, all our superhero movies, our tales of magical men and women flitting about in tights and capes with lightening blasting out of their eyes -- all our figment and fancy of heroism: none of it does any justice to the earth-shattering magnitude of Jesus' heroic mission.

So, let's be very clear and perfectly plain: THIS, ABOVE, is what is necessary for the forgiveness of sins -- and none other. He who does not die in the Spirit of such a Mashiach, dies in his sins.

Can any of you do such a thing? Could any of you endure such a nightmare all out of what we would consider "pointless love" given to we futile men and women, little base children

dead in our sins, out of a love in total obedience to the Father, to the Spirit that is the bond between You and that Father, which is the bond of eternal gratitude? And could you endure in that bond of eternal gratitude even though every aspect of your spirit - every "emotion", every insight of the inner life - told you that the Father had abandoned you to an everlasting and eternal ALL-HELL from which there would be no escape? Could you endure, and ratify, such an eternal gratitude with a fullness of that pointless gratitude which is the essence and sum of the life of the Spirit?

That's a purely rhetorical question: *NO, OF COURSE YOU COULDN'T!!!*

For me, long before I ever got to that Final Temptation, I would have failed. And if I was presented with that Final Temptation, (caught between the certainty of Eternal Hell and the apparently certain promise of Eternal Paradise), I would have leapt for my mother's arms and jumped my lover's bones. So there.

Of course, you and I, in failing would have jumped through that illusion into a certain Hell. But we wouldn't have been able to endure such a thing, and we would certainly have jumped into the illusion.

In all this extended, literary metaphor, we can see the truth of Matthew 24:22 - "And if those days had not been shortened, no one would be saved; but for the sake of the elect they will be shortened."

Clearly, Jesus means that no human being, at all, has the power to conquer sin and death. Only the Chosen One, the messiah, the Son of God made Flesh and endowed with the Blessing of the Spirit to accomplish the mission of the Father, can do such a thing. Anyone who claims that they can do such a thing is a good candidate for Anti-Christ. Naturally, they would also have to have a Napoleonic virtuosity in attaining and wielding political and military power. The only true messiah, in the Second Coming, is the Risen Christ, Jesus in His Glory, which will be completely obvious, totally self-evident, to everyone.

I, for one, cannot conquer sin and death. I can barely keep my phone's battery charged. (I would say the much more piquant 'I can't even program my VCR', but that's dated. And a good thing, too, because back in the day, I could never program my VCR. He who cannot program his VCR, yea, verily, he shall not withstand all the arrows of the Evil One, yea he shall not have the strength to conquer sin and death.) Plus, I was never able to get elected to student council. So, I think I'm safe. But if you want a World Ruler who can't program his VCR, keep his battery charged, or get elected to student council, (Prom didn't go so well either), then call me up. I can't promise world peace, security, or that all your dreams will come true. But I promise that if you elect me, there will be gummy bears for everyone at lunch!

(I just had to look up the proper spelling of gummy bears - I thought it was gummie bears.....oh well.)

The founder of the Church of Satan, Anton LaVey, wrote, "Behold the Crucifix; what does it symbolize? Pallid incompetence hanging on a tree."

Oh yeah?

Conquering sin and death is incompetence? Enduring in gratitude and loyalty and grace despite the horrors of all afflictions is pallid?

That is one dimensional thinking.

Whatever shall you say at the Last Judgment?

The Cure
Rev. Tim Keller
The Gospel and Idolatry
Acts 19:23-41

<https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=mn1U1omO6sg>

Stevie Wonder

As

<https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=GYQfWJNWe3I>



The Fighter

Keith Urban featuring Carrie Underwood

https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=X_45jbE5_Y8

Listen to Jesus:

Jesus left the temple area and was going away, when his disciples approached him to point out the temple buildings. He said to them in reply, "You see all these things, do you not? Amen, I say to you, there will not be left here a stone upon another stone that will not be thrown down."

(Matthew 24:1-2)

I interpret this in two ways. First, in one way, Jesus refers to the coming destruction of the Second Temple after the Great Jewish Revolt. Now, naturally, if the Jewish authorities -- King Herod Antipas, the Chief Priests, and the Sanhedrin -- hadn't sought Roman authority to murder Jesus in a judicial murder and miscarriage of justice, he, as King, would have successfully expelled the Romans and established Jewish sovereignty, as well as His world sovereignty, with the nations looking to the United Kingdom of Israel for leadership. But, this not being the Divine Plan, it was not to be, for how else could sins be forgiven without the Crucifixion and the Christ's endurance and fidelity even in the depths of a *seemingly* absolutely certain All-Hell, where Jesus freed us from our bondage to sin by implanting within us His Spirit for our new spirit as a new creation? And how can the Messianic Age come without forgiveness of sins?

Second, the passage refers to Jesus Himself, the Eternal Temple. The Temple on earth is based on a Temple in Heaven. The Temple is a construct of Holiness, with the Holy of Holies at the center. The Presence of G-d, the Shekinah, *rests* upon the Ark of the Covenant within the Holy of Holies. The Ark of the Covenant contains the Ten Commandments, the Covenant between HaShem (G-d) and Israel. The Covenant is a bond made up of the LORD's Chesed and a necessary requital of the people's chesed, as expressed by their Torah observance.

What shall we say of the Temple in Heaven? Must it not too have a Holy of Holies? What might be in such a Holy of Holies? Stones? Parchment? Gold? What kind of Ark of the Covenant would exist in such a Celestial Holy of Holies? Would it not obviously be the Well-Beloved? The Temple is the holiest site because it is the point of contact between G-d and the people. If it were not modeled on anything in Heaven, that would be the end of the matter. But if the Temple on earth is modeled on a Temple in Heaven, then that Temple too must be a point of contact. But between what? For G-d is a unity like no other - like a point then? Like a nothing, without any inner life or dimensionality, more lowly and empty than the meanest worm -- is that not the essence of a unity that lacks dimensionality?

It stands to reason and appears quite plain that the point of contact is *between* the Totality of G-d's Chesed and that Most Worthy Well-Beloved who could *receive* that Chesed. For what is love if not the granting of the gift *and then* the receipt of the gift? If the gift is refused, or there is no one to give the gift to, then there can be no gift -- a gift, by its very nature, requires that it be exchanged, that it be given: if it is not given, it is not a gift. And if the fundamental reality of G-d is Gift (the Spirit and Fullness of Total Plenitude), then would not G-d be rendered a nullity without some *one* to receive that Gift? G-d is Love, and Love is Gift. In order for G-d to be G-d (the fundamental axiom of spiritual reality), G-d must be Gift. In order for G-d to be Gift *and* for G-d to be G-d, (in order for those two spiritual laws to be fulfilled), G-d requires, (and *is*,

from eternity), an *exchange* of Gifts, and that requires a Giver and a Gift. It also requires, as an absolute necessity, for G-d to be absolutely One, which He is. It requires that the Giver and the Gift be the same, that the G-d who gives the Gift of Himself also be a recipient, a Gifted, who is G-d as well.

And that interchange of life, that absolute and eucharistic and exuberant and plenitudinous exchange of the Gifts between Giver and Gifted, would itself be the Spirit of that Exchange, the Fullness of the Exuberant Plenitude. That is to say, for Chesed to be Chesed from all eternity, Chesed requires a recipient - “the recipient of the Chesed” - not just on earth, but in Heaven as well. So, within the Celestial Holy of Holies, the Chesed of G-d rests, in the Spirit of that Exchange of Gifts, upon the one gifted with the LORD’s Chesed.

In other words, the Trinity is the Temple in Heaven. The Father is the LORD that comes down upon the Ark containing the Eternal Torah, which is the Spirit of the Christ, and that point of contact is the Shekinah of the LORD resting upon the one within the bosom of G-d capable of receiving the Gift of that Presence. The Celestial Temple beyond the Holy of Holies is Christ’s Flesh, the Church, those incorporated into Christ, and thus they share in the resting of the Shekinah upon the Well-Beloved. The eternal tablets of the Commandments within the Eternal Temple is the ineradicable Spirit of the Christ. From all eternity, prior to either the spiritual or material creation, the stones of the Temple outside of the Holy of Holies were the spiritual gifts granted to the one endowed with the Spirit of the Father, the Son.

Naturally, in eternity prior to the creation, such an anointing, such an exchange of the gifts in the Bond that is the Spirit, happens eternally, so the anointing, which, in an eternal spiritual reality must be a begetting, is, indeed, as the Nicene Creed rightly (obviously) teaches an *eternal* begetting.

When Christ, in obedience, descends into Hell and is shorn of all those gifts, all those spiritual gifts and capacities, completely, and yet His Spirit still remains faithful to the LORD, that is the vindication of the Son’s Spirit, and, necessarily then, since the Spirit is the bond of union between the Father and the Son, it is the vindication of the Father’s Spirit, since it is the same Spirit. That is why Jesus says:

Father, the hour has come. Give glory to your son, so that your son may glorify you, just as you gave him authority over all people, so that he may give eternal life to all you gave him. Now this is eternal life, that they should know you, the only true God, and the one whom you sent, Jesus Christ. I glorified you on earth by accomplishing the work that you gave me to do. Now glorify me, Father, with you, with the glory that I had with you before the world began.

(John 17:1b-5)

The key to this passage is the word translated as glory, which in Greek, is *doxa*, or good opinion or favor. The Father, who possesses all things, all good gifts, all favor - glory, pours it out upon His anointed, from all eternity, and thus enriches the favored one, the Eternally Well-Beloved. The word *doxa*, or *δόξα*, also indicates one’s adornment in luster, in splendor. That is to say, the splendor is every choice thing, which our little minds can feebly call “happiness” and

a religious imagination can metaphorically say “Blessedness” (That is, not simple piety, but Joyous All-Felicitousness).

So the passage about the Temple being thrown down stone by stone is a reference to Jesus’ coming Crucifixion, where, in Hell, he will confront Satan, the Lord of Sin and the Master of All Wickedness and Pain. We have been discussing this straight along. Through willingly being and becoming subject to that All-Hell of every spirit’s sinfulness and the concomitant wrath that comes with such sinfulness, the stones of the Temple, which is Jesus’ body, which, from all eternity, is His reality in Heaven, that is, his eternal receipt of the gift of the Father’s Spirit of infinite plenitude, are cast down. The magnificence that is the Well-Beloved Son, eternally begotten of the Father, and sharing in the Eternal Spirit of Joy, becomes totally ruined. The Temple becomes a landfill.

And, naturally, when Christ Jesus the Crucified One confronts Satan, endures and conquers every sin, and finally remains faithful to the Father even in the face of a certain All-Hell, the Spirit is vindicated. And, with the Spirit vindicated, and with no obstacle to salvation for all those who accept the Spirit of Christ, those spirits who accept the gift of the Son of His Uncreated Spirit in their created spirits rise with the victorious, ineradicable Spirit of the Christ, returning to the Father. Thus, the Risen Christ, fully risen to the bosom of the All-Righteous Father, now has, in His Resurrected Flesh, the New Temple of Christ’s Resurrection, the saved souls in Christ as the stones of the Temple in Heaven. Now, those “stones” in the Temple in Heaven (which is the regnal seat of the spiritual creation) are truly brothers of the Risen Christ, the ratified and totally vindicated Tablet of the Eternal Torah in the Holy of Holies, now forever One with the Father.

He who does not die in the abiding love of Christ’s outstretched arms dies in his sin. And he who dies in his sin awakes to the eternal horror of his spirit’s distance from his Creator -- realizes the creature’s horrid wretchedness when separated from the Creator’s sustaining love. For we think that we “get away with” our sins - that no one sees us - the lies that never caused us trouble, the lust that remains hidden, the mistress our wife never learned about, the embezzlement so cleverly and artfully executed, the cold shoulder to the bum on the street, the constant rage within that all do not recognize our exceeding worth, the murder never solved -- we think that the filthiness does not cling to us if we do not experience *here and now, in this concrete and material real world* some form of punishment. What we totally fail to see is that sin and punishment are two sides of the same coin. It is not sin....*then*....punishment -- No, no, no, no. NO! The external sign of punishment is sin, and the internal truth of sin is punishment. When this our mortal life passes, is rolled up and set aside, and we enter into Eternity, then there is no covering for lies, then all is seen, and seen by all in the ever-present Eye of the Eternal Lord. He who dies in unrepented sin cannot but awake to eternal punishment.

For the sake of theological clarity and exactitude, I would like to revise the above formula. While it serves suitably for homiletic and pastoral purposes, a more exact description of the matter would be that the internal truth of sin is damnation and that the external sign of damnation is sin (damnation, naturally, being the deprivation of grace). We might import the legal terminology of criminal law and say that the actual sinful act is the *actus reus* (guilty act)

and that the damnation is the *mens rea* (guilty mind). One only sins because he lacks the grace of God. If he had been illuminated with clear sight, he would not have rubbed himself with such filthy, foul rags. The formula in the previous paragraph stands in the *temporal* sense -- the very moment we sin, the punishment of eternal damnation attaches to us, it is not a matter of we sin *here*, and we are punished *there and later*. We sin now, are damned now, and if we persevere in that course of damnation, we shall see from the perspective of eternity that we were always damned. From the eternal frame of reference, the spirit sins and deprives itself of grace, and God's consequent response is wrath. But this is merely a numerical progression, not a temporal one. For sin and grace are spiritual realities, not temporal realities, and time can only mean something to matter, for the life of matter is motion, and the dimensions of motion are space and time. Spirit qua spirit (and not spirit enfolded in matter) knows nothing of "I do this before" and "And this happens after" -- it is all one "instantaneous" process of recursion.

Our finite, temporal, little, sinful minds fail us. At least mine does.

The Father is All-Righteousness. As St. Paul teaches, "For the Spirit scrutinizes everything, even the depths of God" (1 Corinthians 2:10b). The fundamental *spiritual* truth is that pain (any kind of pain) is only possible in the absence of grace. We in this world don't understand that, because we live in a material world sundered from eternity, caught in a passing phase. *Of course, bad things happen - of course, pain occurs for no reason all around us.* It is actually rather peculiar to think that pain is a necessary consequence of our material existence, (that is to say, the materialist idea of pain, indeed of the mind, is bizarre). Whatever the material causes of pain, pain is a perception, and perceptions exist only in the mind -- and the fulcrum of the mind is the I AM, which is the spirit. Let modern science show that a particle, even a storm, nay, a maelstrom of particles, can say I AM. The atheists say that the Church wants you to believe in a man in the sky. Silly nonsense. Then the atheists demand that you avow that you have the same existential quiddity as a stone. Fine substitute. I'll stick with my masses and rosaries, Scripture and Sacraments, and glory -- no, no, *luxuriate* -- in the contempt of the godless...and, we should say, mindless. Quite mindless, indeed.

Many complain that the Father stands above all, so far out of sight, so removed, so distant from all our sufferings, this bearing of our woes here below. But this fails to understand the fundamental nature of the Father, of *His* quiddity. Just as the absolute flip side of sin is punishment, righteousness and felicity are two sides of the same coin. They are inextricably bound to one another. The Father's holiness is of a sort so lofty that to us, *and only to the fallen*, it is inconceivably bizarre, alien, other, shocking, disconcerting, frightful. In this material, sinful world, the righteous can and do suffer all sorts of evils, even die....but, we should recall that none of us are righteous - we call ourselves decent, but we deceive ourselves. Only through being forsaken by the Father, by All-Righteousness, could one who was truly righteous die.

The Trinity is a true mystery: the ultimate mystery for it is the core of all reality. So anything we say about it is necessarily deficient.

Yet, we might somehow say that the Spirit is the core of the Trinity, maybe not its core, for that suggests primacy, but rather its essence, for it scrutinizes the depths of God. St. Paul

says that the Spirit reveals the nature of God to us, using the same word ἀπεκάλυψεν (translated as reveal or uncover or unveil) from which Apocalypse is derived and that the Spirit searches, ἐραυνᾷ (translated in the NAB as scrutinizes), the very βάθος (depths) of God. The Spirit has access to the Holy of Holies of the All-Righteous, it finds out the totality of the infinity that is the Father. The Spirit is the spirit of righteousness, truly, its essence, its what-it-is. The All-Righteous cannot be present to sin, for it is far more ineradicably resistant to sin/wrath than oil is to water -- the two simply cannot mix: that is the axiomatic constitutional foundation of reality.

Thus, God, in His Wisdom, devises a solution: to sacrifice His Son. The Father is All-Righteous - *and* the spirit, the essence, of that righteousness is love -- a love we cannot describe. And love requires a subject, an object of its affection upon which it can pour out all its bounty, its plenitudinous abundance -- love radiates ever outward: that “love” which merely collapses inward is no sort of love at all. Thus, the very nature of God *requires* that there be not only the Father, All-Righteous, and the Spirit, What-that-Righteousness-Is:Love, but some subject (“recipient”) of that Love. The Father *cannot* be present to sin. We could no more ask the Father to be present to sin than demand that any one of us magically transport ourselves to a planet on the other side of the universe: in fact, it would be infinitely easier for us to accomplish such a feat than for the Father to be present to sin: it is a primordial, unalterable impossibility.

Thus: how to reconcile the sinful to the Father? It can only occur: *only*: if the subject of the Father’s Love be totally stripped of the Father’s Love, if he be naked, denuded, violated of every gift of the Father’s Love. If the Son permits Himself to be forsaken by the Father, to be engulfed in the full fury of the Father’s wrath, then there will be no righteousness left in the Son to be inimical to sin. The Son becomes sin. The Son who had been the heir to every righteousness of the All-Righteous lost all righteousness. *That is what the Scripture means when it says that the Son became sin who did not know sin!* (2 Corinthians 5:21).

Yet, in becoming sin, the Son still does not *know* sin, for His Spirit, the ineradicable core of the Son’s Spirit, the Spirit by which He was begotten and which He *is*, still did not sin, even in the depths of an All-Hell, a Hell far worse than any of the damned have ever or will ever experience. The Son, naked of all righteousness, engulfed in wrath, with every gift replaced with a punishment undeserved, now *CAN* and does become present to sin, and thus can become present to us, if only we will accept Him. His Spirit, engulfed in wrath, touches our spirits, and we can be released from the wrath of our sins if we but cling to His Spirit. And, since the inner meaning of the Spirit is the All-Righteousness of the Father, that means that if we are to cling to Christ’s Spirit, we must abandon all sin, any taint of any attachment to any kind of sin, even the tiniest, even the (seemingly) most inoffensive. And the only way to do that is to accept Christ’s “transplant” (metaphors are so inadequate) of *His* ineradicable Spirit for our ruined spirit -- to cast away the first creation of ourselves in this world, sundered and sullied with all its sins (ruined and thus chained to Abaddon), and, by receiving His transplant, to become a new creation that not only is without sin, but is *immune* to sin. So clinging, we rise with His Spirit, and His Spirit, now tested, tried, and validated can do nothing but return to the Holy of Holies of the All-Righteous, with us, His new gifts, in tow.

The Divine Plan of Salvation is as obvious as the most tightly reasoned mathematical axiom: far more so.

The Mystery of the Trinity

And so, we can clearly see: the Trinity is no polytheism - it is the inevitable conclusion of monotheism. It is the realization that YES, God is ONE, O Israel -- and since God *is* - is I AM - God is three-dimensional -- having height, depth, and breadth. The height of towering righteousness, the breadth of all-embracing love, and the depth of all truth. Yet one dimension is not another dimension, but the whole reality is one Eternal Lord, truly one, and truly three: truly one in Ousia, in Reality, and truly three in hypostases, that is, three in modes/dimensions. The Ousia of the Lord is necessarily His Spirit, which is why the Nicene Creed states that the Father and the Son share one Ousia, that is, they are $\delta\mu\omicron\upsilon\omicron\sigma\iota\omicron\nu$, homoousios, of the same reality. That reality is multi-dimensional. One totally unified reality with three perspectives, three vantage points, three modes of expressing that reality *within* God.

Our three dimensions are material - our height, breadth, and depth are all bound up in the same kind of space-time and each dimension of ourselves is material. Thus each dimension of God, of the Eternal Mind, the Eternal Spirit, the Eternal Nous, the Eternal Psyche, the Eternal Breath, must, *necessarily then*, be psychical, be conscious, and thus necessarily conscious of itself - say I AM.

And since God is necessarily one, each dimension must *totally* interpenetrate every other dimension, with all dimensions penetrating, and being penetrated by, all. All in all.

Note that it is not WE ARE -- WE ARE, a one I AM, a two I AM, a three I AM, a four: *that* would indeed be heretical and blasphemous. A WE ARE would be to blaspheme the absolute, inviolate, integral singularity of the Divine Reality. It would be a rank polytheism to be fled as from a monumental horror.

I affirm with Maimonides that:

The Second Foundation is the unity of HaShem, Blessed be His Name. In other words, to believe that this being, which is the cause of all, is one. This does not mean one as in one of a pair nor one like a species [which encompasses many individuals] nor one as in one object that is made up of many elements nor as a single simple object which is infinitely divisible. Rather, He, HaShem Blessed be His Name, is a unity unlike any other possible unity.

This second foundation is referred to when [the Torah] says, "Hear Israel! HaShem is our God, HaShem is one". (Devarim [Deuteronomy] 6:4)¹⁵

If I believed that it were impossible for the Trinity to satisfy this criterion, I would convert to Judaism. Not tomorrow, not the next morning at dawn, but the night I came to believe that, I would run to the nearest rabbi, bang furiously on his door, fall at his feet, and abjectly beg to be admitted to the community.

¹⁵ The Thirteen Foundations of the Ramba'm: <http://www.panix.com/~jibaker/13yesodos.html>

The spirit of every person - of yourself - is one. If your spirit was not one, you would be two people, or as many people as your spirit was fractured into parts. And yet, is that essential and absolute unity of the self but one-dimensional? Are you one-dimensional? Are you flat? Are you a line? Or, are, rather, you multi-dimensional? And might the unity of a line have the multi-dimensionality of a circle? That is, might not the unicity of the All-Righteous not only *allow* but indeed *require* recursion. A recursion is from Latin recursionem (“a running backward, return”).¹⁶ If, as Maimonides rightly teaches, the All-Righteous must absolutely be one - *totally one* - then would not the infinitude of that unicity necessitate that that infinity *return to itself* - run back upon itself? And if it did run back upon itself, would not the point of reunion, the point at which the line joined itself again, constitute the second dimension of the first dimension: would it not be the integral constitution of the unicity’s multi-dimensionality? And yet...and yet, *where* precisely would that second dimension begin? For, would not *every* point on the line -- exactly to infinitude inasmuch as in a circle there are an infinity of points constituting the line -- be that bond of reunion, that essential point of recursion, of the Self running back upon It-Self? And would not that *running together*, that *indistinguishability* of the beginning and the end, of the alpha and the omega, of the first dimension from the second dimension, and thus that commonality of the first dimension *with* the second dimension, be itself a third dimension? That is to say, the Spirit runs back to Itself and the point of contact with Itself is Itself, in an eternal Bond of the most undivided unicity.

This is not a “WE ARE”. This is not a “single simple object which is *infinitely* divisible”. It is not a divisible reality: not at all a divisible reality, either divisible in two or three or any more. The heart - the essence - of the account of the Trinity, the Triune Unity, is that Its dimensionality is not a kind of divisibility. Its dimensionality is the essence of Its Unity, the interiority of Its Unity. And, we should say, the *necessary* interiority of Its Unity. The Trinity is not an account of the exterior aspect of the Lord, It is an account of the Interior Life of the Lord. But, the essence of the Christian claim is that the Innermost Life -- the deepest Interiority -- of the Lord has exploded outward *into* what is external to the Lord -- that the Eternal Essence has become manifest to - incarnate in - temporal, spatial, material reality, such that divine reality and human reality are now identified: now, totally one. As Father Smith wrote:

What is expressed in the mystery of the Ascension of Christ is the closing of the circle, first of all, in the journey of the Divine Son into human history: his becoming man, his taking of a human nature, his living the radical estrangement that is within human history, the loneliness, the isolation, the domination by sin and death; his living that, and his finding within that, through love, through obedience, a path back to the Divine.

The closing of the circle. The Son who became man, now truly man, becomes intimately part of the reality of God. There is no longer, really, any distance between God and us other than

¹⁶ Online Etymology Dictionary

the metaphysical distance between Creator and creature. There is no distance between God and human beings. Human nature is, in the nature of Jesus, transformed in the mystery of the Resurrection. God and human beings are perfectly one. The circle is closed.

And so we can say something about Jesus which is, properly speaking, only to be said about God. He is everywhere. The fullness of Him who fills the whole creation.

The Ascension is the affirmation of what all the mystics have experienced, the communion, the unity, the near-identity, between the Holy and myself. It's also a feast of intimacy in another direction because not all of time and all of history has closed the circle. The man Jesus did, but not the rest. So there's a movement still going on of all human reality toward our destiny of identity with God. It was the work of the man Jesus. It is now ours. The crucial thing he says is, "As I was sent, I now send you." "I can forgive, you can forgive." "I could overcome death, you can overcome death."

We are to become the Body of Christ in the space and time of our lives, with whatever is in it, whatever disappointments or successes or any of the rest of it -- in the time of our lives we are to become the Body of Christ: human reality is moving closer to its destiny or not, depending on what we do.

The feast of the Ascension is a feast about the intimacy between people and between human beings and God. Within the life of God now, there is no separation between human nature and the Divine nature: they are completely one. Within our lives now there is no separation between what we are living and the act of God entering the world to join it to Himself. We are now Christ's body in this space and time.¹⁷

The veil of the Eternal Holy of Holies, in the actual Eternal Temple in heaven, has now and for all time been torn, from top to bottom, the Father reaching down through the Son to save the human race, and thus *necessarily* becoming totally present, totally immanent, and, in a mysterious way, *totally incarnate* in the very flesh of all human existence.

The mystery of the Trinity, is, in truth, no greater and no more inscrutable than the unity of HaShem proclaimed in the Shema. The mystery of the Unity is as totally inscrutable to our mortal minds. Maimonides affirms that He is One. Okay. One as one apple is one? Of course not! An apple is made of many parts. So... One as an atom is one? Again, an atom is made of many particles. No, no, the *real* atom, the base element, perhaps the quark or electron, or whatever may lay at the base of those. But even if all quarks and electrons are simple, or even if we posit as the One some new base element underlying all, those elemental particles are *everywhere*. They would, indeed, be one like a species: the species being the kind of elemental particle and the individuals of which it is *composed*. So, no, not that kind of unity. Then what kind of unity? The unity of a number? But any number is one of a species -- indeed, an infinity of individual numbers. That sounds more like a path to Hinduism. What then? The unity of the spirit? Precisely! Bingo. Problem solved everybody, brewskis on me! One minor detail.....what is a spirit? Uh-oh. That which says I! Mhmmm.....what is the I which speaks?

¹⁷ Smith, Rev. Robert S.: *In the Image of God*, 159-161.

I am *not* saying that He is not One; heaven forbid that I should blaspheme the Name. What I *am* saying is that much has been made for millennia of the “mystery” of the Trinity, oh how very mysterious - it’s a mystery, you know, super-mysterious. We should have made as much fuss - more fuss - been more puzzled by the true MYSTERY of the inscrutability of HaShem’s unity: truly, a unity unlike any other possible unity.

The mysteries of the Trinity and the Unity, or we should more properly say, the One Mystery of the Trinity and the Unity, are necessarily the same Mystery of the Inner Life of the Divine Reality.

The circle does not become any less *one* circle because you understand it as a line, and a curve, and a unity of points. It is not somehow less a real circle, less a real *one* circle. Who would argue that we had to look for the real circle, the pure circle, the circle that couldn’t be understood as a line, a curve, and a unity of points?

And if you blankly demanded: well, I don’t know, but God has to be something, something *way more real, way more unified*. That’s just shrugging your shoulders at the Mystery of the Unity in the way most Christians shrug at the Mystery of the Trinity: I don’t know how it is, but I know it’s so. That’s fine as a matter of dogmatic belief, but not as a matter of toil, study, and investigation, and it does not at all refute the Trinitarian dogma: *does not even begin to address it*.

To demand a unity greater than a demonstrably absolute, integral unity, to insist that we must imagine some “better” “higher” unity isn’t satisfactory on its own. A polytheist may as well react to the Unity of Judaism with the same incredulity and ridicule as many have tarred the Trinity with. “You don’t know how it’s so, but I must believe it?! Ha, everything is many, so why should not divinity be many? One apple, two apple, three apple, four. Zeus, Hera, Athena, Ares. *Now* that’s concrete; that’s logical; *that makes sense*. That’s news you can use. That has cash value, that’s where the rubber hits the road, that has *juice*, muscle, sinew, some meat on its bones. That’s a religion you can *believe in*.” Show me why a demonstrated unity lacks *genuine* unity, and then we can explore this “higher” unity.

And if you should say: a point. A point has greater unity. That is the singularity we must seek. Yet the circle I posit is not a created circle, or any created figure, proceeding from the Mind of HaShem. Of course, it is a metaphor for the Trinity, as a point would be a metaphor for this Unity. But what of a point? What is a point? Position without dimension. So, not only is it not one-dimensional, a point is no-dimensional!! Would you demand HaShem not merely to have one dimension, but to have no dimensions? Would that be the Great Lord of the Universe? And by the metaphor of dimension we must mean: an aspect of one’s inner life, in this case of HaShem’s inner life. Is HaShem, the Spirit that is the Maker of spirits to have no inner life? Do you have an inner life? Does a bird, a worm, even, we may imagine, a single-celled organism not have an inner life? What then? Is HaShem not to be conceived as having access to any sort of inner life? Would not an idol - a stone with mildew grown thick on it - have more life?

This can help us to more clearly see that in this material, temporal, spatial world, made up of many *parts*, and we unities of spirits who are enfleshed in this material space-time, (and through sin, having our spirit subject to our flesh rather than our flesh subject to our spirit) necessarily being composed of many parts, polytheism is the natural course. Shorn of HaShem's special intervention it is an inevitability. The vile idolatry of the many - and not HaShem, the One - the essence of rank polytheism - is the necessary and bitterest fruit of sin: and, what do we find, prior to the covenant with Abraham, but ages and ages of nothing but polytheism. Not, polytheism and monotheism here and there, but a vast ocean of polytheistic idolatrous iniquity.

In truth, we can see that polytheism is the worship of the material, temporal, and spatial, of this world, and thus in worshipping polytheistically, we do no other than worship ourselves.

And, indeed, we can see that Atheism (or Humanism, or just nothing, an insouciant shrug) is the root and fruit and branch and tomb of Satanism. For as monotheism is the worship of HaShem, and polytheism is the worship of ourselves, outright atheism is the worship of no-God, or un-God, of against-God. And who is least like unto God, most cast out from His midst, most furiously and violently and hatefully against God? Satan, of course. Atheists say God is not one, he is not many, he is none!

And to outright worship Satan by name, through the occult or even theistic Satanism, is the most sinister spectacle of all: to engage not in true Monotheism, not in ignorant polytheism or (more *and* less) ignorant non-theism, but to take up the banner of the demons and march in their armies in a totally *knowing* (and therefore endlessly foolish) anti-monotheism -- To know HaShem and to turn your back on Him.

The fundamental term of Christian faith is a belief in the Trinity: the Trinity as *total* unity, fundamental and singular unicity. If the Trinity were indeed to be impossible, then Jesus *could not* be God, which is the central, active and activating claim of Christian belief. Jesus would have to be separate from God, and thus the believer would be called to worship *multiple* beings, and not simply the one, singular, totally unified One, the LORD. And that would be polytheism. The study of Torah would be more productive.

When the Scriptures of the New Testament state that the Risen Christ Jesus sits at the right hand of the Father, we must be prudent and circumspect. We must be careful not to slide into a polytheistic conception, which, as we have seen, is the normal and natural and comfortable mode of man in this material world. The Scriptures necessarily have an infinite depth to them, so they necessarily mean many things: all one thing, not an arbitrary thing, but a fecund thing, full of meaning. But we can say this: it does *not* mean that Jesus sits on some kind of dais in an Olympian pantheon, an Athena (or Ares) to the Father's Zeus. HaShem forbid. What it must mean is that the Risen Christ is the power of the Father in the Flesh of the human race. One's right hand is typically the dominant hand, the hand by which you interact with the world, by which you exert your power, by which you impress your will into reality. For the Risen Christ to sit at the right hand of the Father means that, as Jesus as Word spoke the first creation into

existence in Genesis, so the Risen Christ as Word, Flesh, and Blood speaks eternally the new creation into existence in an Eternal Revelation.

Like in my metaphor of the circle, the source of All-Righteousness, the Father, in His All-Felicity, proceeds infinitely, in a surging acceleration of power unimaginable to us, so abundant that it cannot but run back to itself, return to itself, in fulfillment of its plenitude. That recursion, that involution, that turning back upon itself, that multi-dimensionality, that *curve* is the essence (metaphorically) of the Son. And it is through the procession of that curve, passing through death and Abaddon and all the miseries of Hell, that the Son collects the new gifts of the souls, the new Spirits in Christ, of all the many elect, incorporates them into Himself, quite literally into His Flesh, and delivers them into the Father's gracious, All-Righteous, All-Felicitous Presence, forever - eternally.

Now, the Son, validated and reaffirmed in the inner life of the Father, with the presence of all the elect, now totally present to and absorbed within the Absolute and Infinite Interiority of the Divine Life, reenters the Bond of Grace from which the Son had been cast down - forsaken. In that Bond of truth, reunited in His eternally validated Form, the Son and the Father once again *run together*, they become indistinguishable, they enjoy the Total Intimacy of a Common Life. *But* now incorporated, invited, to that Common Life, that Bond of Total Intimacy, the souls of all the elect, now Spirits in Christ, join, through the Spirit, into that Complete Bond.

Now, the Bond present at every point in the circle, in an infinitude of spiritual communion, of spiritual gift and self-gift, of spiritual gift and receipt, receipt and return, is full, is filled to the brim, brimming over, overflowing, abounding - *now* the Eternal Pleroma is filled not only with the spiritual gifts, the exchange of gifts, that is characteristic of the Perfect and Plenitudinous Abundance of the Bond of Father and Son, but filled with the exuberant and ineffable exchange of all the gifts of all the Spirits in Christ (Pleroma is Greek for full to overflowing, as in an overflowing cup).

The Kingdom of God is nothing less than the ever accelerating integration of the Spirits of the elect into the Divine Intimacy. And, recreated with the Spirit of Christ, and so participating in that Bond of Intimacy in that Spirit, the lowly human being - the composition of spirit and matter - is invited into the very depths (βάθη) of God. Now, not only does the Spirit search (ἐρουνῶ) the depths of God, but all the Spirits of the Elect in communion with the Risen Christ search forever the very face of the All-Righteous and All-Felicitous Father. No longer servants, like the angels, who are not in the Flesh of Christ, but now the Flesh of Christ become Sons of the Father. Each Spirit becomes a Gift to the Father, and receive the Gift of the Father, the Son, and all the Elect.

As St. Luke writes, "Give and gifts will be given to you; a good measure, packed together, shaken down, and overflowing, will be poured into your lap. For the measure with which you measure will in return be measured out to you" (Luke 7:38). The Elect in the Father's Love measure with the infinite standard of complete love: the only criterion being total and intimate acceptance.

In light of that Divine Mystery, we can better appreciate the lines of Dante:

O how scant is speech, too weak to frame my thoughts.
Compared to what I still recall my words are faint --

to call them little is to praise them much.
 O eternal Light, abiding in yourself alone,
 knowing yourself alone, and, known to yourself
 and knowing, loving and smiling on yourself!
 That circling which, thus conceived,
 appeared in you as light's reflection,
 once my eyes had gazed on it a while, seemed,
 within itself and in its very color,
 to be painted with our likeness,
 so that my sight was all absorbed in it.
 Like the geometer who fully applies himself
 to square the circle and, for all his thought,
 cannot discover the principle he lacks,
 such was I at that strange new sight.
 I tried to see how the image fit the circle
 and how it found its where in it.
 But my wings had not sufficed for that
 had not my mind been struck by a bolt
 of lightning that granted what I asked.
 Here my exalted vision lost its power.
 But now my will and my desire, like wheels revolving
 with an even motion, were turning with
 the Love that moves the sun and all the other stars.

(Dante, Paradiso, Canto XXXIII, 121-145)

The Father who damned the Prime Angel, the most perfect of all spiritual creations (as opposed to the Uncreated), for coveting primacy of place over the Father, now gives equality with Himself to the lowliest of all spiritual creations, the human - and not only the human without sin, but the human *because* of sin. The Spirits of the Elect now not only become Christs, they truly become Gods, absorbed into the life of the Name, the Truth of God. What the practice of polytheism attempted to snatch for itself, the Father, in his unfeigned and ultimate generosity, grants to the undeserving with outstretched arms and an open hand. As St. Luke says of God's lavishness upon the return of the sinful into the embrace of the Father, "Quickly bring the finest robe and put it on him; put a ring on his finger and sandals on his feet [The Glory of Divinity]. Take the fattened calf and slaughter it [the All-Gifted Heir of the All-Felicitous' Plenitude and His sacrificial Ruination in Abaddon]. Then let us celebrate with a feast [the Eucharistic Exuberance], because this son of mine was dead [lost in the Abaddon of his sinfulness], and has come to life again; he was lost, and has been found.' Then the celebration began" (Luke 15:22-24).

So imagine, if you dare, the rage of Satan, to be made lowest and most humiliated of all creatures, while in the bosom of the Eternal Felicity do reign the sons of earth, of dirt, of dust.

Not only was it bad enough, (from Satan's point of view), for him to be lower than the Son, who excelled Lucifer in being Uncreated...but now not only are the dirt-spirits (the composite beings of flesh and spirit) one in the Spirit of the Son, they have attained to the

Godhood Lucifer himself coveted. It was bad enough for there to be one begotten Spirit: one ineradicable and obdurate force of Righteousness which shines with all the luminosity of unveiled and undefilable truth -- now, through adoption in the Begotten, there are who knows how many Spirits in the Godhead -- billions, trillions, who really knows the number that will be incorporated before the Last Day. So, we can more clearly see the truth of what C.S. Lewis wrote in *The Screwtape Letters* about the Church in alluding to the Song of Solomon (6:4), how the demons, “[S]ee her spread out through all time and space and rooted in eternity, terrible as an army with banners.” That, the demon confesses, “...is a spectacle which makes our boldest tempters uneasy,” noting, “But fortunately, it is quite invisible to these humans.”¹⁸

So, while I affirm Maimonides’ Second Foundation, I disaffirm his Third Foundation, which includes, “The concepts of physical bodies such as movement, rest, or existence in a particular place cannot be applied to Him. Such things cannot be part of His nature nor can they happen to Him.”¹⁹ “The wind (Spirit) blows where it wills, and you can hear the sound it makes, but you do not know where it comes from or where it goes; so it is with everyone who is born of the Spirit” (John 3:8). The Absolute Freedom of the Name to do as He pleases - His Total Sovereignty - cannot be constrained. The Eternal is superior to, above, and reigns over the temporal. To posit that the Eternal cannot be present to the temporal-spatial-material reality fetters the All-Sovereign in metaphysical handcuffs of our own vain imaginings from which He cannot but easily and readily slip if it be His Holy Will.

Even the Spirit is mysterious and sovereign within the life of the Father and the Son. The Spirit searches the depths of God. The Spirit is the most inner core of the Inner Life of the Uncreated. Where it comes from and where it goes to cannot be known, because to be known would be to subject it to whatever was the foundation, the substrate, of that knowledge. The Spirit is Absolute Freedom, Total Sovereignty. Its origins and destiny cannot be scrutinized. It exists from all eternity and exists out toward all eternity.

We can sum up all this reflecting on the Trinity with an insight from the literary critic and scholar Harold Bloom. Bloom says of Shakespeare that he invests his characters with their humanity by causing them to act and think in accordance with an overhearing of their own thoughts, their own thinking, we might say, their process of “noetic self-revelation”. This constant process -- for one must overhear one’s own overhearing, and so on, ad infinitum -- is the essence of the necessary involution of self that is the wellspring of all authentic spirit - and the spirituality that nourishes that eternal and essential inner spirit within each of us, all who say I AM. This involution is also what Father Pierre Teilhard de Chardin means when he describes the whole history of the Universe as rushing on towards Omega, the final point, the final destiny, the final fullness and exuberance of the Divine Design in a process of noetic Christogenesis. From

¹⁸ Lewis, C.S.: *The Screwtape Letters*, Second Letter, 5.

¹⁹ The Thirteen Foundations of the Ramba'm <http://www.panix.com/~jlbaker/13yesodos.html>

the etymology of noetikos (intelligent), from which English derives noetic, we can discern the course such involution must take: for noesis “intelligence” derives from noein “to perceive” with the noos - the mind. The noos for the ancient Greeks was that which was thought within, and not merely spoken aloud - it was the fulcrum by which our changing perception fixed upon (if it could and would) the unchanging and unchangeable reality underlying not only itself, but the viewer himself. In that exchange of perception, the viewer did not simply access a reality separate from himself, but involved himself in the very wellspring of his own involvement. This recursion of involvement -- not a self-involvement, as such, but an infinite unveiling of the deep sources of the self -- gives speed to the self so as to become spirit, propels the velocity of one’s own quiddity into and ever towards the all-encompassing horizon of a reality one cannot, must not, and will not merely grasp, but will, if one enters it, endlessly and abundantly emerge through and for and in and with, ever outward towards not simply the self, but All-Self. And in traveling the infinite path of that Way, one, necessarily then, emerges towards the truth of one’s own self.

Harold Bloom: Champion of the Trinity, Doctor of the Church. You’re welcome.

And, of course, whatever our sights, whatever we can *see* to, and towards, the one who vindicates is not merely the one who sees, but the one who does. Not merely the one who explains a reality but the One who subsists and sustains that reality: thus, the one Champion of the Trinity is the Christ.

We can see then, in metaphor, in words that pale and fail as faded dirty paint over glistening ivory effulgence: the Spirit is a Singularity of Total Prerogative. As the Father is All-Righteous and the Son, necessarily then, All-Obedient, so the Spirit is All-Freedom, All-Unconstrained. No category, no thought, no metaphor, no formula, no equation, no experiment, no demonstration, no proof, no feeling, no experience, no insight, no intuition, no belief, no affirmation *of ours* -- no logic *of ours*, nor reason *of ours*, nor necessity *of ours* (other than Itself, which is All-Goodness, All-Truth) -- or *even*, shockingly, of the Father and the Son!!! -- can constrain the Total [We have no idea].

This *does not* mean that the Spirit is without category or logic or reason. Rather, it means that His Truth so far transcends our human reality as to be incommensurable with our understanding. God’s Reality is not without category. God’s Reality is totally categorical. Rather, His Freedom and Truth are totally unconstrained by *our* truths, realities, and freedom.

Satan

We can also see the unfortunate spectacle of the humiliation of satan. A lowercase s is advisedly, truly, the right letter for that unfortunate beast. Most desirous of divine rank, it is now and forever least unlike the Holy One. Most covetous of the spiritual, it is now most like the material: empty in all respects, a manifold without unity, a chaos of endless torment. Most covetous of the communion of spiritual self-life, it is now the most flat, the most one note, that one note not even being truly one-dimensional, but, in its turn toward oblivion, a no-note, the most flat and blank thud. As the LORD is life-giving all-acceleration, so satan is the most impotent, frustrated, broke-down, stalled stillness - and yet not a stillness as an exhalation, but a stagnancy that forever gasps for air and finds none. So desirous for dominion over all that says I AM, and yet unable to say I except through his victims, murine prey from which he attempts to suck whatever of HaShem might be left, all to his ignominy and desolation. And, at last, to be shut up in eternal starvation.

To fret for the woes of satan is quite misguided. It privileges a prejudice of our time, which will but disappear upon the coming of ALL-TIME, of Eternity. We in this 21st Century value the rights of the individual, and by that we mean the right, the prerogative, of the individual consciousness, that which experiences. And in this we do right, and we do well, and we do better than our brutish forebears.

And yet, from the eternal frame of reference, mere consciousness does not grant rights, grant gifts. No. The only prerogative, the only Right, flows from the Spirit. That which merely has consciousness without the Spirit has no rights, and, necessarily then, no hope. The ALL-RIGHTEOUS deals with such abominations as you deal with an infestation of vermin in your home. And yet, this is a dangerous insight, for fools will say to themselves, “Aha! *I* know who such as these are, and I can do whatever I please to them!”

No, no, no, no. NO!

You mere mortal in this earthly life have *no* vision, *no* wisdom, *no* idea who are elect and who are condemned. You arrogate to yourself the Total Prerogative of the All-Righteous in thinking so, and you imitate your father, satan, who will, for you, be a quite formidable and everlasting Satan. In your accusation, blind and feeble and flawed and wrong, you do but accuse yourself, and subject yourself to the endless accusation, plunged in total darkness. For, as Sacred Scripture says in total truth, “Among human beings, who knows what pertains to a person except the spirit of the person that is within?” (1 Corinthians 2:11). And again, Scripture says the Lord said through the Prophet Samuel, “Do not judge from his appearance or from his lofty stature [or lack thereof, or any external characteristic, or any internal characteristic that you merely infer] ...” for, “Not as man sees does God see, because man sees the appearance but the LORD looks in the heart” (1 Samuel 16:7). If you claim to be able to see behind all the appearances of anyone but yourself, and to look into another’s spirit, and to determine whether it is valid or not,

you sinfully arrogate God's Lordship to yourself. And in that, you verify that you are a satan, an accuser, a child of your father Satan. Rather, be like good and obedient children of God, humble and trusting, obeying the Word spoken through Apostle Paul, "So then, my beloved, obedient as you have always been, not only when I am present but all the more now when I am absent, work out your salvation with fear and trembling" (Philippians 2:12). Work out *your own* salvation, and leave the judgment of others to the one and only Judge, the Lord.

As Jesus teaches, the one unforgivable sin is to blaspheme the Spirit. To blaspheme the Spirit is to see the Spirit and disdain it, scorn it, to want to murder it and supplant it, steal its gifts and claim them for yourself, to *set yourself up* as God, and deny that God is God, and God alone. If one blasphemes the Spirit, one does so with one's own spirit, either in the all-eternity before this material creation (like the fallen angels, the demons), or in the all-seeing verdict of one's life within it (Matthew 12:22-32).

And we can see the glory of the obedient angels. For they, taking no thought of themselves, but only of the LORD, scorning rank and prizing obedience and adoration, do take happiness in the sight of the LORD, their eternal felicity. And now and forever, not pitying themselves for lesser rank than the Triune Unity and His Saints, but rhapsodically jubilant at this New and Infinite and Eternal Sight -- not merely the enjoyment of the Sight of the One Spirit, but the TOTAL AND INEFFABLE ECSTASY of an inordinate and extravagant profusion of the many SPIRITS held in perfect union with the ONE.

Blessed are those who see without seeing. And accursed are those who, though they see, refuse to see.

For we see with the heart, and not with the eyes.

For as St. Paul writes:

If there is any encouragement in Christ, any solace in love, any participation in the Spirit, any compassion and mercy, complete my joy by being of the same mind, with the same love, united in heart, thinking one thing. Do nothing out of selfishness or out of vainglory; rather, humbly regards others as more important than yourselves, each looking out not for his own interests, but [also] everyone for those of others.

Have among yourselves the same attitude that is also yours in Christ Jesus,
Who, though he was in the form of God,
did not regard equality with God
something to be grasped.
Rather, he emptied himself,

taking the form of a slave,
coming in human likeness;
and found human in appearance,
he humbled himself,
becoming obedient to death,
even death on a cross.
Because of this, God greatly exalted him
and bestowed on him the name
that is above every name,
that at the name of Jesus
every knee should bend,
of those in heaven and on earth and under
the earth,
and every tongue confess that
Jesus Christ is Lord,
to the glory of God the Father.

(Philippians 2:1-11)

The essence of the spiritual warfare, the War in Heaven, the War between HaShem, arrayed with His Holy Angels, and Satan, tyrant over his fallen angels, the foul demons, consists of this: Who is God?

Is God God? Or, rather, is God not God?

At the eternal moment of the spiritual creation, of God's creation of the angels in eternity, Lucifer, the Light-Bearer, looked to the very depths of the Spirit, the inner reality of God. Like a man who is worth trillions of dollars and has every pleasure and every contentment, and has exceeding and *incommensurable* abundance, God seeks to share that abundance with other spirits, others who say I AM. Out of that exceeding abundance, that Eternal Love, God created the pure spirits, the angels, to be messengers of His Truth, of the Truth that I AM, and that I AM is ALL GOOD. In seeing with the clarity of spiritual sight, the created spirits were, by their very nature and by God's good pleasure and wise design, to see the very depths of I AM and see that I AM is, in fact, ALL GOOD, and, then, in plenitudinous joy, in rapturous praise, declare, "HE IS ALL-GOOD, BLESSED BE THE NAME OF THE LORD, BARUCH HaSHEM!"

To see the LORD, as He truly is, to behold HIS FACE, was to be their delight.

In eternity, there is no difference between seeing and speaking and knowing. For us, in this material-spatial-temporal world sundered by sin, we can see one thing and speak another and still yet, amazingly, know yet another, all in chaos and disorder. In eternity, one's spirit sees-speaks-knows and knows-sees-speaks all at once in the same action. It is in the very nature of spiritual reality.

Lucifer in that one eternal moment, in the eternal progression and procession of God's spiritual creation from all eternity, looked into the depths of God, the depths of the Spirit, saw the Unchanging, ALL-DYNAMIC TRUTH and said....something to the effect of, "No, rather, *I* AM, *I*, rather, am ALL-GOOD....and any Truth/Good/Light is but my image: I AM GOD." Which, necessarily then, means that since the TOTAL PREROGATIVE of God heartily disagreed with that notion, Lucifer "also" said, "You are evil!"

Lucifer accused the Spirit. It accused the Spirit of being evil! It blasphemed the LORD, the Spirit. It called the HOLY NAME, THE DIVINE REALITY, evil -- Lucifer accused the ALL-HOLY of being unholy. And in that eternal moment Lucifer became Satan, the Accuser. For, in spiritual eternity, one's name is one's spirit. There is no differentiation as there is in the temporal creation.

In the moment that Lucifer became Satan he/it turned away from God, and turned to himself. But, since the Prime Angel was but reflecting the Light, he found that he turned unto eternal darkness. Rather than proclaim that the LORD is ALL-GOOD, Satan proclaimed that THING is ALL-EVIL. And, as in spiritual Eternity, for the Spirit of the LORD, Righteousness (Truth-telling) is the flip side of Felicity, and vice versa, Satan was cast out, cast forever into outer darkness, in eternal torment, away (apos) from the LORD.

And there is no return for Satan or any of the angels who willingly followed him. For there was no misunderstanding. When I sin, I do not know what I am doing. That is why Jesus says, "Father, forgive them, for they know not what they do!" (John 23:34) When I engage in a lustful relationship, I can, in a sinful state, look back and say, perhaps it was not perfect - but what was so bad? No one got hurt, it seems everyone had fun. No's one dead. No's one poorer. What's the harm? I failed to see the loss of grace, the stoppage of HaShem's Holy Grace bursting, surging into the world. What a horrendous loss! Beyond all the more apparent failures and poisons poured into the world that I was simply too blind to see.

When I am angry I say, "But that one deserved it! They wronged me! They harmed me! What did I do to them?! Curse them!" Likewise, I fail to see the stoppage of the TOTAL PREROGATIVE's DIVINE GRACE, the loss of the expression here and in this world of THE SUPER-ABUNDANCE OF THE SPIRIT! What a horrendous loss! Besides all the pain and derangement of relationships, the failure of intercommunion and gracious loving that I am too blind to see. It is all still my fault, since I chose the way of blindness. But, should I turn and confess my blindness, and come unto the Eternal Doctor for Healing Medicine, my blindness can be cured, and now seeing, I may speak and bless His Holy Name and the holy name of all His children and say to HaShem and to all: BARUCH HaSHEM!!!! My blindness permits God to find a Way to return me to Himself.

But for Satan it is quite different. There is ("was" is not right because we speak of the ETERNAL NOW) no blindness on Satan's part. Satan saw all there was to see of the SPIRIT, saw and felt it directly, but said, "EVIL!" For such a one, there is no return, and we should be thankful of that fact.

Now, we can speculate why Satan said "ALL-EVIL" and preferred himself to God, who is, in truth, the ALL-GOOD.

But we must guard against an excessive and, I assure you, morbid fascination with the “why” of it all. Demonology leads to the demons. We must only attempt to know *just enough* of the demons to steer far clear of their dominion. We must not be too interested - and have no sympathetic ear for - Satan’s side of the story, *his* side of the story, *his* point of view. Truly, Satan’s point of view is precisely the cause of all evil and death and violence and hatred and filth in all of human history. In imitation of the angels, we should have no interest in the demons and their evil, only spirited action in opposing it.

I think, that being said and warning you and myself, that some insight into “his side of the story” is useful....to think about the “why” of it, very cautiously, treading lightly, and once finished, repairing back to the tents of the Righteous One.

I think it all has to do with the War, the contest, between plenitude and primacy. That is to say, as the Lucifer, as the Light-Bearer, Lucifer was the most perfect created spiritual being, endowed with all spiritual gifts. Lucifer was first. It appeared that the role of God was to make Lucifer first....so good of God, the origin produces the first, and now the first reigns (or something - all metaphors of metaphors of metaphors, here, I assure you). But, (and this is an important but), what Lucifer saw at the depths of the Spirit was the Kingdom of Heaven, the Risen Christ in Triumph, the Saints/The Elect incorporated into the Risen Christ and partaking of the Eucharistic Festive Exuberance. And Lucifer realized: hey, wait a minute: I’m last.

My role isn’t to be first....*it’s to really be last!* I, as first, do not reign, I am not ranked first: Not only is the Father, Son, and Spirit, all these! (truly one), superior to me in rank, BUT these bizarre mole people dirt toys abominations are in the Godhead, possessed of Godhood -- billions of them! trillions of them? Many more? (It matters not for this metaphorical exegesis). And Lucifer saw not only was it outranked by the Trinity and the dirt-toys!, but it was now, really, last among the angels, for in its firstness, it was really last when the First are Last and the Last are First.

Now, we should not pity Satan for this. For, I think, just for the very reason that he was First of the Angels and Last in that he was not a ruler with Godhood, he most had the capacity to see the GOODNESS of such super-abundance. Like the blessed and obedient angels, it was his *role*, (what he was created for, why he was created), to have the most perfect insight into the Whole Majesty of the Divine Design, since he had the best view (being so far from the Godhead, he could see its entirety). But rather than taking joy - ABSOLUTE, ECSTATIC, HEDONISTIC JOY in the Blessedness that he saw, in its completeness, Lucifer/Satan said, “But *I* am not first!”

We think of social rank as being intimately tied to happiness, to blessedness. If you have social rank, you have social status, and social status will get you money, and money will get you access to all the joys of life: food, travel, entertainment, sex. And, even, if you do not have enough money, or do not attach yourself to someone with enough money, you cannot date, you cannot marry, you cannot have meaningful relationships, you cannot have children. To be fully human, you need money, and thus you need social rank, at least of some sort - you need some material resources and social existence (as Jesus recognizes in Matthew 6:25-34).

But NONE of this was true for Satan. (Remember, this is all a metaphor, but I hope, certainly, an apt metaphor.) Satan had all the joys of abundance, more than we can possibly imagine, and still said “ALL THIS IS EVIL, BECAUSE I AM NOT FIRST! MY RANK IS NOT FIRST, MY RANK IS NOT HIGH ENOUGH!”

Let us imagine another metaphor to explain the cruel, diabolical absurdity of this: Imagine a Kingdom. Say it has 7 billion people. It is a magic kingdom, with wealth in abundance, like in a utopia of the future. All the people are friendly and kind and good and sweet and fun. They all have psychic powers and everybody communicates with everybody else psychically. They use these psychic powers for good, to be kind and to tell each other how loved they are. Everyone is rich: everyone has every material desire. Everyone has any kind of food they like, any kind of house, any kind of entertainment, any kind of sexual partner! The sex is good, better than any depiction you’ve ever seen, but holy, with all the goodness of the most real romance, better than any fantasy romance. Lucifer has all this, along with all the rest in the Kingdom. But there is also another reality. There is a King, and in the King’s Palace there is a book. And in the book, at the top of the first page, there is the Name of the King. And down the names go, in rank order, from first to last, all 7 billion have a number. This is only a metaphor, so I’m not going to deal with the differentiation between the Elect in the Godhead who have Godhood as ruling versus the angels as serving, because it’s complicated, and it is only an explanatory metaphor anyway. But the point is, Lucifer found himself dead last.

Now being ranked last was not a punishment. It was not the King being mean. It did not deprive Lucifer of any pleasure at all, any delight, any reality. It was simply his place, it was how the King, in His Good Wisdom and His Good Pleasure, decided to order the Kingdom. The ranking was for the benefit of *all* in the Kingdom - everybody had a role to play, some to rule and some to serve, and some to serve in different ways and in different capacities, nearer or further from the Sovereignty in the Godhead.

But Lucifer still said, in one eternal moment: BUT I AM NOT FIRST! Lucifer became Satan. Satan said, “I should be first! I AM first!” - An eternal blasphemy and heresy and treason to the All-High, All-Good LORD.

In this metaphor, it was all about primacy. Pure love of primacy, in total disdain of plenitude.

It is difficult for us to see to the depths of the mystery of iniquity because of how blank it is. How alien. How weird. Why?! Why would you forsake all the plenitude - the joy of Heaven - over the subject of rank? But that is how evil, wicked, sociopathic, false, empty Satan is. We, even the damned who are not elect, are endowed with gifts, and so even the damned say, “Boy, if that were me, I’d just shut up and enjoy the sex. Hot, hot sex.” But Satan, in the choice, the real choice, of his Absolute Freedom as a spirit said: NO. NO! I disdain, I totally scorn plenitude, the joy of abundance, because I covet rank above all!

And, Satan coveted rank so much that he conceived the design: I will kill God, supplant him, break the Trinity, subject the Son to me, destroy the Bond of Love that exists between the Father and the Son, thus *destroying the Spirit!!!*, and leaving the Father bereft. To be first, *just* to be first, I will kill my father and my lord, kill his son, enslave his son, torture his son, and

destroy the Goodness that sits at the heart of ALL REALITY!!! And, in the bargain, I will enslave every spirit, every angel and every human, and, though it will be their hell and their misery and torment FOREVER, ETERNALLY, FROM WHICH THERE IS NO ESCAPE, I will do all this, because *I am not first!*

This is hardly a sympathetic figure. Satan is the worst mass murderer, rapist, pedophile, abuser, torturer, Nazi, terrorist, madman ever. Every actual terrorist, every actual mass murderer, every pedophile, every Nazi is like (and only in comparison) a saint in comparison. Each of the most evil, sadistic, immoral, hateful, vile, cruel, sociopathic, psychotic people in history, do not, all put together, amount (in their own temporal capacities, as expressed merely in time and not eternity) to the diabolical nature of Satan.

Now let's get really real here for a second. If you watch crime shows like CSI or Law and Order, you love it when the pedophile or murderer gets nailed, gets life, gets the death penalty. Some of you love it when they commit suicide. Damn those evil people! You love to see a terrorist killed in action, or executed. You feel so good, so self-righteous.

Now, are you going to trouble yourself about the fate of a spirit like Satan? For a single brief moment? Are you going to doubt the saving truth of Christianity, doubt the True God, out of sympathy for this devil?

This isn't the Rolling Stones over here, this isn't Mick Jagger - Satan isn't "naughty", he isn't "a bad boy" who's good in bed. He's not Adam Levine. He's not Ozzy Osbourne. He's most certainly not the sympathetic, fun-loving "Lucifer" in the Fox television series. Satan is evil! He's really, really, impossibly, insanely evil!

To trouble yourself, or your spiritual life, for a moment with sympathy for the devil is absurd. To have even a iota of sympathy for Satan, it would be infinitely more righteous, make so much more sense to literally worship Ariel Castro. To have a place in your house where you have a shrine, with candles, with pictures of Ariel Castro and you bless his name and pray to him.

The real sin and thus, necessarily then, his failure and eternal folly consists of this: G-d is Uncreated and all that He has created in His Name is necessarily not The Name but only names. Now, what is a name without substance? Is it not mere shadow? Hypocrisy? Lamentable inner destruction? An endless vortex of nothingness, forever collapsing within itself?

Listen! No mere name can subsist on itself. Every mere name requires the participation and grace - the Light of - the One NAME. How else can such a mere created name have any life if it does not *turn* itself to the Life of the One NAME? The Name does not scorn the names, He created them out of love. But, the spiritual reality is not some anarchy of terror and destruction, rape and murder, an Unholy Pantheon of Demon-Gods. It is a Majestic and Holy Sanctum, an Eternal Kingdom of Peace, Truth, Beauty, and the Most Intimate Love, necessarily then, ruled by the ONE NAME.

Without the Name, the names are but unholy shadows, ugly, filthy worms. And shall such worms defile the Name's Life? Should the Name allow a host of vermin to infest His Inner Life?

No.

So, only those who, in gratitude, *turn* themselves, turn their names, to THE NAME, can share in His Life, rather than be thrown out and trampled under foot, totally cast out into the most remote darkness such that they cannot smear or smudge even in the faintest way the HOLINESS OF THE ETERNAL NAME.

Consider a parable, a metaphor, a figure of speech, call it what you like: There is the Sun. Not merely just the Sun that you see, but the Great Ball of Celestial Fire raging in the depths of cold space. And imagine that is all there is (for, remember, this is a metaphor): so no other stars, planets, galaxies, just that one Sun - *the real Sun*, as it is in itself, and not just in your eyes.

That Sun -- an infinite, eternal, endlessly self-involuting (but not-self-involved, *self-involving*), of the endless Plenitude of the Inner Life of the Name, the Ineffable TOTAL PREROGATIVE of ALL REALITY -- out of simple, innocent, childlike (but not childish) LOVE, decides that OTHERS should share of its Abounding Joy. So, the Sun creates mirrors, so that they can enter into His Life.

He does NOT make them mirrors because, like a celebrity, like Kim K, G-d, HaShem, THE ONE NAME, He - the Eternal and Blessed One - needs Twitter followers.

G-d does not need Twitter followers.

He makes them mirrors because TRULY, ACTUALLY THE NAME IS ALL THAT CAN BE. Can there be *more* than INFINITE AND ABUNDANT AND ALL-JOYOUS PLENITUDE?

To demand a iota - a whit, a bit - more would be to say, in pale image and not full truth, *by metaphor* - something like this: You are married to the most beautiful woman in the entire world, on this or any other world, the fullness of beauty and loveliness, who fulfills and satiates your every longing and desire such that no other plenitude of joy could be possible. Then, one night on your drive home, you see an aged, broken-bodied, festering, drunken, bloodshot, heroin-addicted, mind-addled whore, and you say to yourself, "You know, I have my wonderful wife, but maybe I'm missing out. Let's see what the whore has to offer."

That is a pale image of Satan's sin. For, and this is but a metaphor too, Satan, in grasping for the whore, says that, in the bargain, in order for him to have that one worthless iota more, all the rest of created spirits shall become his whores of blank darkness and total horror.

For let us return to the metaphor of the Sun in space. That Sun now has a plenitude of beautiful mirrors to reflect its own, ONE, HOLY LIGHT, to share their Master's Joy.

One of the mirrors, the most polished and most refined, somehow lets it enter into his warped little, backwards, upside down mind, (self-chosen as the essence of Spirit is Absolute Freedom) - that he - that polished mirror - is the Light, and not merely a reflection of the Light.

Satan failed to *see* that the Light is Light, and he, o small one, is merely light. And, as the beautiful cannot exist without the Beautiful, the light, the many lights, cannot -- *not* "are not permitted" or forbidden by some arbitrary edict, but cannot by the most reasoned, most logical, most-self-evident, most holy and obvious spiritual truth - be the Light Itself, as It-Exists-and-Subsists-Within-It-Itself.

And how is it that a mirror - and a living, thinking, self-aware mirror - that is precisely created - designed - to reflect Light, and thus have actual knowledge, somehow conceive that it *IS* the Light? What kind of bizarre, unholy, just blank and inane, inconceivable and unforgivable *sin* would that be? Would it not be an all-sin, an eternal and unforgivable sin? Satan's sin is the deficient essence - the blank anti-essence - of the purest, and thus vilest, Derangement that could possibly exist (or, more precisely, anti-exist).

And if that little light, that mere breath of Life and Light, says to its fellows, "Come, join me! We mirrors shall overthrow and step above that HOLY LIGHT and erect ourselves as the GREAT LIGHT, and thus become that ETERNAL LIGHT!" what then could any real one, much less the Real One, possibly say?

So, as the first rebel mirror and all his little mirror horde came upon the Sun - the Celestial Sphere of Fire - would they not be instantly annihilated, and turned to dust, to ash?

And the Light does not merely create uniform, homogenous mirrors. No, no, no - for what would the JOYOUS, ABUNDANT PLENITUDE have to do with such a boring, small-minded endeavor? Is God small-minded? Rather, He is Huge-Hearted, Infinitely Great of Heart, a Sacred Heart beating for all that truly says I AM, by knowing that they can only say I AM at all through I AM.

God creates mirrors that are totally unique, each one reflecting a unique and wonderful truth about the Spirit, the Unique and Wonderful and Endless Truth - of Love. Cherish your uniqueness, and do so through worshipping the ONE.

Do not abandon the One for yourself, through coveting your uniqueness, and thus lose yourself - your whole self.

Shall you imperil your relationship with the LORD, and risk your own ruin, out of doubts arising from misplaced sympathy for an empty pit of destruction, who only seeks your ruin and whose one dream is to ruin the Lavish Abundance of Life, the Spirit - to kill the Son, enslave and break the Father, and quench the Spirit, leaving all existence in darkness and starvation?

Think of the matter in another way: A Father holds a Bar Mitzvah for his beloved son. He invites a thousand of his family, friends, and neighbors to behold the beautiful ceremony in a large and lavish synagogue. All the congregants are joyous, happy, and friendly, overjoyed at this happy occasion. Lucifer is invited, but rather than being seated in the front row at the foot of the podium, he is seated at the back of the gallery. The Father did not do this out of spite or hatred, for he has none. He did this because he knows Lucifer's special gift: he can most reflect

what he sees, he is most perceptive in tracing out the pattern of what is going on. The Father had hoped that Lucifer would appreciate the awesome beauty of the ceremony, seeing not just the Father and Son, but joyfully beholding all the congregants *themselves* beholding such a fine occasion!

Yet, in his freedom, Lucifer, though knowing this was the Father's intention, stamps his foot and fumes, "But I was not placed closer...I was not placed first! Indeed, not only should I have the first seat in the first row, I should be the Bar Mitzvah boy, I should be reading from the Torah today...and not only that, but I should be the Father of the Son...and supreme over all these people here...and they should all be my slaves to boot.

And it was not that Lucifer would have a lesser place at the feast, the celebration after the ceremony in the Great Hall, for everyone in that feast would love each other and have all that they could ever want to eat, drink, and enjoy.

It was only that Satan was not seated first...was not the celebrated one, was not the Father, and was not the indisputable tyrant over all...the one *real* desire of his heart.

And then Satan slips out of the synagogue, returns with a machine gun and starts wildly spraying the whole congregation, killing whomever he can and even killing the Father's beloved son, desperately trying to take aim for the Father as well, but without success.

Is such a one worthy of even a shred of sympathy?

Don't have any sympathy for this Devil.

The War in Heaven

Let us take a step back and view the grand Design, for its own beatific sake, and also for its ability to clarify the nature of the War in Heaven. I do not, by any means, claim to elucidate the real structure of the design of Divine Providence: such a claim would be an absurdity too grandiose to fathom. But I offer this trace of an insight as a metaphor that I find useful, and that I hope will be useful to you.

Before we begin, let us recall that eternity has no temporal progression, but it still has logical progression. So, while all these events -- indeed all of reality -- happen “instantaneously”, at once, in an ETERNAL NOW, there is still a structure. By way of metaphor, consider number - 1, 2, 3, 4, 5, 6, 7. Of themselves, without making each one number refer to a successive configuration of matter within space, there is no necessity that this numerical progression have anything to do with temporal progression, that is to say, with time. But there can still be a progression of configuration, one configuration of reality proceeding from a prior one and flowing to a posterior (later) one. There can, as, relatedly, in logic, be both prior and posterior without any temporal before and after.

Now, for my metaphor. Consider the whole drama of cosmic reality as proceeding from node to node along seven crucial nodes. This metaphor will not do the reality justice, but hopefully, its gist will not be in error. We ply the ocean of our ignorance trusting in the guidance of Providence.

The first node begins, as it must, with what I will most inadequately call the Uncreation. That is, we begin with God from all eternity, in Himself, prior to any act of creation. This God exists as the Eternal LORD, triune, in absolute Righteousness and Felicity, in the Eucharistic Exuberance of Father, Son, and Spirit, Holy and Whole, Truly Three, and yet Wholly One. Since there is no time in eternity, naturally, this first “stage” of God, is, really, but the explicit containing the implicit. That is to say, it is God as Prophecy and not yet God as Fulfillment. He is God as God, wholly existing and subsisting unto Himself. We must not imagine this Felicitous Trinity as lonely - three travelers on a slender reed looking for companions. Hogwash. All the abundance - the SUPER-ABUNDANCE - of all plenitude, beyond all our wildest fantasies and wishes and whimsies existed within and through this awesome God! He required no other spirits, no other companions, but the Fellowship of His Own Holy Communion.

Yet, precisely for that reason, not for lack of abundance, but because of unimaginable plenitudinous, Eucharistic, exuberant SUPER-ABUNDANCE, He willed to create spirits, those who say I AM, to share in His Eternal Joy of Infinite Love.

In His Total Freedom, by the SPIRIT’S TOTAL PREROGATIVE, God *chose* to proceed through the Act of Creation, that series of what I am metaphorically calling “nodes” that leads, successively and logically and providentially, to the total explication and exaltation of the “implicit” Idea existing within the Mind of God from all eternity to all eternity.

That Act of Creation began with what I am calling the second node. (I will stop saying from this point on “what I am calling” but remember that we speak here all in metaphor.) The

second node is the spiritual creation: the creation of hosts of created spirits. The nature of the angels is beyond us. But, with Tradition and the guidance of Sacred Scripture, we can say that they are by nature perfect intelligences, non-corporeal, totally spiritual. God created the spirits out of the endless plenitude of gifts radiating from His Spirit. He created them to praise Him as “The Great I AM, all Good and deserving of all Praise.” This was not to stroke the Almighty’s ego. The Almighty’s ego required no stroking, as it enjoyed all the ecstasies of its Inner Nature. God created the spiritual creation, which necessarily consists primarily or wholly of spirits, simply out of total beneficent generosity, that these spirits, in praising Him, might find for themselves the Joy of the Spirit. In saying, “Blessed is He,” they would necessarily and exuberantly say, “And blessed are we to behold such blessedness.”

In, the third node, Lucifer, the Prime Angel, most endowed with every spiritual gift, the most perfectly formed of all created spirits, engages in the rebellion discussed in the previous section. Lucifer makes his accusation, speaking the falsehood to God, “*You* are evil,” and, necessarily then, becomes the Accuser, Satan. This is the *casus belli* (the act of war) of the War in Heaven, which subsumes our whole fleeting temporal reality. Consider human wars. We, who exist in the material-spatial-temporal creation, fight wars primarily over land. One human authority wants another human authority’s land, so they send humans and machines to destroy each other, to seize the land. The *topos*, the ground of our earthly wars, is land: “hold your ground”. There is no “ground” in heaven. But there is still topology, the topology of spirit. The *topos* in Heaven is POWER. We, in this sinful state of the world, think of tyrants and politicians and arrogant people when we think of Power. But, truly, power is simply efficacy, it is simply what holds, what is real. Blessedly, the true Power of Reality is God: The Triune God: All-Righteous and thus necessarily All-Felicitous, an All-Communion of TOTAL PREROGATIVE that seeks nothing more than to share its plenitude with a plenitude of created spirits that share both its righteousness and its felicity: to share in the Master’s joy.

Satan looked at this beatitude and said, “WRONG! You, ‘God’, are not ‘God’. You are not blessed, you are accursed! I, rather, am All-Good, All-Right: I am God.” We cannot, and should not try to, unless necessary, understand what the depths of the accusation were. Trying to talk about it is like five-year-olds playing with G.I. Joe action figures compared to the experience of soldiers actually fighting in the Second World War. Lucifer in the “eternal moment” before this node looked to the very depths of the Spirit (not as the Spirit does, but as a created spirit endowed with enormous, unimaginable spiritual gifts can). It saw there the stern and solemn warning: “I assure you, I, the true God, am God. Should you forsake Me, you forsake My righteousness, and, necessarily then, you forsake all felicity - permanently.” As we discussed, Lucifer pressed ahead; I speculate because he scorned the joys of plenitude-in-communion and coveted blank, naked, pure primacy above all else. Lucifer, becoming Satan, said to himself, “But look at the source! I am God, truly, and thus, if I but grasp my hand one notch higher, I can supplant God and seize his POWER, his TOTAL PREROGATIVE. In doing so, I can make myself the true God, as I am true God, and I can attain the rank that I desire and deserve: First, with no equal.” Satan, as has been long noted through history, failed to appreciate the awesome and unbridgeable chasm between the Uncreated and the created.

Thus, the fourth node: the actual conduct of the War. Satan, and, as Scripture relates, the third of the angelic hosts who followed him in his folly, attempted to match his power with the POWER of the Triune LORD, the Abode of the Uncreated SPIRIT. And as Revelation 12:7-12 reveals:

Then war broke out in heaven; Michael and his angels battled against the dragon. The dragon and its angels fought back, but they did not prevail and there was no longer any place for them in heaven. The huge dragon, the ancient serpent [the phrase “huge dragon” indicates the enormous, unimaginable spiritual gifts (calculative intelligence, brute force, offensive capabilities) of Satan, and “ancient serpent” indicates his serpentine craftiness, slyness and cleverness] who is called the Devil [Diabolos - Satan throws himself across the Plan of Divine Providence seeking to sunder its efficacy - its power] and Satan [the one who blames and calls what God has created good evil], who deceived the whole world [c.f. all of human history], was thrown down to earth, and its angels were thrown down with it.

Then I heard a loud voice in heaven say:
“Now have salvation and power come,
and the kingdom of our God
and the authority of his Anointed.
For the accuser of our brothers is cast out [necessarily, if Satan calls God evil, he calls
all those who follow God evil],
who accuses them before our God day and night.
They conquered him by the blood of the
Lamb
and by the word of of their testimony;
love for life did not deter them from
death.
Therefore, rejoice, you heavens,
and you who dwell in them.
But woe to you, earth and sea,
for the Devil has come down to you in
great fury,
for he knows he has but a short time.”

Interpreting the Book of Revelation is notoriously difficult, and I do not endeavor a sustained exegesis of the text. That being said, it seems abundantly clear to me that, in line with the nature of eternity, what I call “temporal effects” pervade the work. The past is the future, is the present is the past, is the present is the future, is the future is the past. As Scripture is, regardless of the historical process by which it came into being, perfect, for anyone to adequately (much less perfectly) express the Divine Intention, the full, rich meaning of all reality, and the crucible of the War, would require great efforts, and, indeed, will only be fully revealed at the Apocalypse. Yet, as a sketch, we can consider the whole Eternal NOW, in the context of our temporal progression, as one temporal causality loop, like God, Who is self-causing and self-fulfilling.

In any event, Satan’s “truth”, his self-assurance, his self-righteousness, and his belief/gamble that he could prevail and attain the primacy he coveted, backfired, badly.

Thus, just to fill out the outline, we come to the fifth node, which is the Verdict of God succeeding the War: “Satan, you lose. You, not I, are evil: Be damned”. The sixth node is the

Judgment, when the sentence is handed down and executed: “Satan, and all your angels and all your children, are thrust into eternal ruin.”

The seventh node, as the seventh day, is the fulfillment of the New Creation.

With that sketch, let us return to the fourth node, what I call the Term of the Conflict. This is the node (along with the fifth, the Verdict) at which we are presently: it makes up the whole existential substrate of all of material reality.

Let us, blessedly, return to God. God created all of creation simply to share His plenitude, with no ulterior motive, no slyness, just with a childlike, innocent joy and wonder and desire to share that with others who could truly say I AM, with felicitous love in total communion with other like spirits.

Essential to that was, naturally, the essence of God’s characteristic plenitude. God would name, to the ends of all possible creation, his Name upon all that could be named. God would name everything that was not God with the imprint of God’s reality, His Name, thus sealing them with the All-Righteousness, All-Felicity, and All-Plenitude of Himself.

So, (and here I speculate) not only would God create - name - spirits, beings like Himself, except created rather than Uncreated. He would name Himself even upon the exact opposite of the eternal realm, of Spirit and the spiritual -- he would bring forth a material creation in time. Made up of many parts, rather than inseparably whole; in many places, rather than in one place at once, with all immediate to all; and made up of many different moments, not all fused into one NOW, but each moment its own universe, its own eternal now. Even to the very ends of conceivable creation, would God name Himself, and thus prodigally sow his plenitude.

Endowing spirit in flesh, He created humanity, by which I hope you do not think I merely mean homo sapiens, but all who say I AM within the texture of the material, spatial, and temporal. The order and structure of why he created spiritual creation first, rather than after material creation, etc. etc. is quite beyond me, quite beyond my rank in the eternal order, and quite irrelevant to the homiletic task at hand.

In any event, what we must say is that, having created Satan in his freedom, and now having created human beings in their freedom, God had to permit Satan access to human beings. If he should not, then that would be a constraint on humanity’s freedom, which is the crucial essence of spirit (this is all very speculative).

Regardless, by decree of His Good Pleasure, Satan was permitted to tempt man, and man succumbed to the temptation, which is always the same temptation and the same sin, which is pride. In every sin, the essence at the core of it is self-preference, which is nothing other than pride. The issue of whether Adam and Eve literally existed or whether the Creation story is totally metaphorical is quite irrelevant here. For, in both events, human beings were made a corporate entity. All Flesh is necessarily bound up in all flesh, regardless of what our times may say. Man is bound in woman by the flesh, so too all generations, of whatever sort, are bound together by the ties of the flesh, by the very act of generation from one to the next and so on. Unlike the spirits, who are truly individual, humanity could not but resist or fall together. Hence, Eve succumbed, and thus, necessarily, Adam, who was one flesh with her, also succumbed.

At this point we might imagine that God could have “washed his hands” of us, said oops, and been on his way - abundantly happy in Himself, and quite pleased to have His obedient angels to share His joy with, leaving us to the less than tender mercies of Satan.

But this would have admitted failure to Satan. For we are an essential part of God’s plan - of God’s Idea of Himself, immanent and implicit in Himself, to be realized at the Fulfillment as explicit and exuberant. The human race, raised through the Son to Godhood, share in the ABSOLUTE PLENITUDE which is made possible through the vindication of the Son, and which is beyond all our vain and insipid imaginings.

That admission of defeat would have also caused a wrinkle, and maybe a calamitous defeat. If God walked away at this point, Satan would have at least been partially vindicated. Satan could say, “While not overcoming you in power, I stifled you in your plenitude. Thus, while I bear the pain of my rebellion, I have struck a mighty blow.” Indeed, we could imagine it much worse, and say that, because God was stifled he was not TOTAL PREROGATIVE, TOTAL POWER, and thus, this would vindicate Satan in what I called the Term of the Conflict: Is God right, or is Satan right? Is Reality a Kingdom of the Spirit, or an anarchy of many spirits, each clutching at what one can?

We should also note at this point that Satan would not wish to return to God’s good graces and be free of his pains. Satan certainly does not enjoy his pains, but he cannot ask God for forgiveness - and he cannot, because he will not. In his total freedom, he *chose* an iniquity obscure to us, to prefer a grasp at blank primacy even though it meant eternal horror. He hates God so much and covets God’s rank so madly that all his pains (foreseen) did not stop him from undertaking his mad endeavor. We might say, that now, after the desperate gamble has failed, Satan might return to God, to be relieved of his pains. But how could he be relieved of his pains? His pains result from his hatred of the Spirit, which he saw plainly. Simply because he was wrong in saying that God was a liar, and was himself, in fact, the liar, makes no difference: he has committed the unforgivable sin of hating the Spirit, the necessary and only source of beatitude. And, being eternal and spiritual, rather than temporal and en fleshed in matter, Satan cannot “change his mind” -- he made up his mind the moment he saw the Face of God.

In order to save those human beings in the fallen material creation capable of being saved, the Son had to condescend to take human flesh, enter the human nature and condition, and enter into the sin, and therefore death and ruination of the human race. In doing so, the Son, as the Christ, the Anointed, had to abandon all the rich spiritual gifts given to Him by the Father, so that He could do what the All-Righteous could not do, by His very nature: be present to, and absorb the life of, the sinful.

Also, remember that all of this was foreseen from all eternity in the Uncreation, at the “first node”: every event and eventuality, from first to last, from the first act of Creation to the New Jerusalem, formed and seen and known within the Idea of Himself in the Mind of God. And remember, that God in His Infinite Wisdom and TOTAL PREROGATIVE, His Absolute Freedom of the Spirit Itself, *chose* this, for reasons that are mysterious to us, and yet, necessarily, most wonderful and miraculous.

This, then, puts us at the very *crucible* of the Term of the Conflict, the Term of our Material-Temporal reality: the Crucifixion-Resurrection. In that Blessed Event, Holy be Its

Eternal Name!, the God-Man Jesus of Nazareth, the Son of God in the Flesh of Man, was ruined. Jesus allowed himself to be deprived of the All-Felicity that was His natural birthright: the plenitude of all the Father's spiritual gifts. Now, realize, what He could not surrender was His essential essence: which is His Spirit, which is also the Father's Spirit, which makes up the fulcrum of the Trinity.

So now, in fine relief, we come to the very heart of the matter, the core of the Term of the Conflict. For, we could easily say, yes God is God, and Satan is not-God, therefore, easily and verily God cast Satan and his foolish angels out. But, there is a spiritual retort, that we make every day. "Oh, if only you were like me, if only you shared my being, if only you suffered what I suffer, then you would be like me." If this criticism is correct, then God is a hypocrite, and if that is the case, then God is, in fact, a liar, which would, really, make Satan the truth-teller, and in its own unimaginably horrid way, either make Satan God or inflict a spiritual anarchy on all of existence.

We make the retort in our matter, in our flesh: If you, God, had my mortal status and woes, you would sin too. The Incarnation answers that retort: No, you're wrong. God is God. Amen.

The Crucifixion-Resurrection saves us, and Our vindication in Christ answers the spiritual retort. The Crucified Christ, now stripped of all his spiritual gifts, becomes less than a spirit, less than even a man, he becomes the most humiliated and tormented of beings - with one exception, He has the Spirit. But the Spirit gives him no comfort as we might imagine it -- he is raped, murdered, lashed, broken, humiliated, cast out, not just in body, but infinitely more so, in spirit, in his inner life: all the Wrath due Sin, falls upon the Son, now no longer a son or even a man, but a worm.

[Tremble and shudder at how great a price the Savior paid, as proof of His endless love for you, and shudder that you should sin so easily, in casual rebuke of the Savior's solemn act of complete love.]

Here now, with Jesus in Hell, Satan, quite literally, has God in his clutches, and has his chance to prove himself at least somewhat right. Now, certainly, in this wretched state, God must admit that God is a hypocrite, that, if He were in the same state as Satan, in Hell and shorn of every spiritual gift, he too would hate God and blaspheme His Name. That would show the Spirit to be less than the awesome TOTAL PREROGATIVE it held itself out to be, and would show that the difference between the Uncreated and created was not qualitative, but quantitative. And this would show God to be a liar: it would fracture the Trinity, leave the Father bereft, leave the Son a slave of a created, and foul, spirit, and sunder the Spirit, which is the seal of the bond, unity, love of Father and Son. Here, finally, Satan could do on earth, in Hell, what he could never do in Heaven: Kill God.

Everything - our human souls, the obedient angelic hosts, the Inner Life of the Trinity, the SPIRIT, the source of all true and beautiful Reality, the TOTAL PREROGATIVE - hung in the balance, was placed on the shoulders of this spiritual Atlas, this Hercules of the Spirit. Could the Name, the Son, Yeshua, the Anointed, the one Named by God, be true to God, even in Hell, even without spiritual gifts? Was the Spirit truly, unfathomably, *qualitatively* superior to - and thus blessed over - spirits? Or would the accusation of Satan be vindicated: when push comes to

shove, when the chips are down, you're just like me, brah. Satan could say, "I wanted primacy [or whatever it is he wanted], but you can't subsist on this mere 'Spirit' either - you require spiritual gifts."

In this came the clarity of the Term of the Conflict: Who was greater: the Giver or the gift? Were Uncreated Giver and created gift totally different, or were they, in a foul spiritual anarchy, really just the same? Was the Spirit a monstrous, sanctimonious, self-righteous, pompous, annoying, hateful, bigoted Hypocrite?

Christ wins! Hallelujah! Even in the depths of all suffering, even under the penalty of all wrath, and a wrath undeserved, even when forsaken by his own Father, and made as a worm, the Son, possessed now only of the ineradicable Spirit, can and will (and, in a way we cannot understand, can and will are all the same) do nothing other than bless the Name of God, and thus, necessarily, as He is God through sharing the Spirit, bless, and therefore affirm, His Own Holy and Eternal Name.

And in that Victory is the salvation of the human race, and the deliverance of the elect into the bosom of the TOTAL PREROGATIVE, now generously granted Godhood and called to join in the reign of the Almighty God.

Now, God is not "simply" as at the first node, God as God, but the Prophecy has been fulfilled, God is now God-in-All. This is the God of Pleroma. Pleroma is a Greek word that means fulfillment. It derives from pleroo, which means fullness, as in a cup overflowing. The Pleroma is the fulfillment of prophecy, the implicit made EXPLICIT, the Fullness of all Plenitude. This Pleroma of Plenitude is God's vision of Himself, and His Wonderful Gift to all those who love Him.

We might also clarify the matter with a little parable, to illustrate the ghastliness of Satan and the beatitude of the Spirit. It is meant to illustrate the difference between the Giver and the gift, how the gift might be abused, and what is rightly due to the Giver.

Imagine two neighbors. One is a very rich man, quite secure. The other is a bankrupt, wasteful, and about to be foreclosed upon. The very rich man, in his complete and unfathomable generosity, hands over all his wealth to his neighbor.

How should the bankrupt react? Should the bankrupt not say to the rich man, now made completely poor, "You are my benefactor and my savior, come let us live together, you as my Father, and I as your Son, and together, we shall share our joy forever."

Should the bankrupt say, "Aha! Now I am rich, and you are poor! Be gone, miserable creature, be gone to the gutter, to be filthy, and rat-infested, to be spit upon - Aha, I spit upon you! - to be diseased and loathed and miserable. Hahahahaha!"

One should hope not. Although we can imagine the foul Ayn Rand reacting just that way.

Yet even should the bankrupt say, "You may live with me, but only as my slave, waiting upon me, and doing as I say, because now I am rich, and you are poor." Would that not be most deranged?

And yet again, should the bankrupt even rightly say, “You may live with me, but as my son, I shall care for you, but you must obey me and subject yourself unto me.” Is that not, too, quite deranged?

The difference between the first response - that of the Son, and the other responses - that of Satan, is Gratitude. Gratitude is what allows us to have humility, to see things for what they really are, to see that the visionary is never greater than the Vision, the one who sees the Truth never greater than the Truth itself. It is what makes us whole in the Spirit, able to drink from the living fountain of all Truth.

Gratitude is the bond of Giver and gift. He who does not have gratitude deep within one's heart, as the foundation of one's very Spirit, cannot share in the Pleroma of Plenitude that God has ready for those who love Him.

For God loves wealth and hates poverty. But, there's a catch. He loves spiritual wealth and hates spiritual poverty. And, in this fallen state of the world, unlike in Him, where Righteousness is but the image and essence of Felicity, both two sides of the same coin, here, in this sundered state of affairs, so often material wealth indicates, not the richness of an inner life, but the poverty of the spirit. Awake therefore! Beware lest, in your true, spiritual poverty, you not, at last, find yourself a humiliated and miserable bankrupt, ruined for all eternity.

Can one who denies the Spirit of Plenitude share in the Plenitude of the Pleroma? Will he not rather hate the sight of such an All-Embracing Abundance, preferring himself to all reality? And if, in the depths of his spirit, the depths of his freedom, he should deeply and solemnly *choose*, in truth and not just in appearance (by the truthful verdict of all his acts), only himself, how can that one share in the Resurrection of the righteous? If the Resurrection of the Righteous, the Pleroma of all Plenitude, looks *outward* to all the infinite and glorious and beautiful and lovely otherness of others and the Otherness of the Sovereign Other, how can one who only can - only chooses to - look inward, delight or share in such a sight?

Yet, do not be afraid, for we have an Advocate, the Spirit of such glorious Plenitude, who makes our case better and more eloquently than we could ever hope to do for ourselves, for while the Accuser rails and rants, and blames us for our every fault, the Advocate can see to the depths of all things, and can see whether, in our spirit, we behold His Spirit.

Yet do not be overconfident, thinking the Advocate is a Magician. For the Advocate needs material to work with, needs evidence with which to make a case. Should one not provide such evidence to the Advocate, through the faith of righteousness and the righteousness of faith, must not even the Spirit be unable to acquit you?

And do not love this life over-much for it is not true life, but a passing shadow and phase - a phase of testing, to determine whether your spirit is *turned* to the Spirit...or not. If your little spirit is *turned* (metanoia, repentance, תשובה) to the GREAT SPIRIT, THE GREAT NAME, ADONAI, THE UNSPEAKABLE HOLINESS, then surely, shall you not have life in His Name, his HOLY NAME? But, if it is not, woeful, perplexed little ruined spirit, but only turned to your own nothingness, then how shall you be saved? You cannot. If you will not reach out to the arm that tries to save you, then how can you be turned to Him Who Alone can save anyone?

Russia

Would you rather be Vladimir Putin or the meanest, most despised galley slave on a Roman warship? If you were the galley slave, and you endured in righteousness and loyalty to the One Name, you would enjoy true Life forever. But if you were Putin, though you enjoyed all the world and all the power in it, yet you would, for all your murders and deceptions and treacheries, surely burn in an eternal hellfire of unimaginable and untenable proportions. I'm sure he thinks I'm wrong, so conceited, so self-assured. Let us imagine the self-assurance of the demons that shall surely torture him for all eternity, O woeful little, and yet sadly eternal, one. Rather, let us not even dare to attempt to imagine it, for it is surely much worse than can be conceived, and those in the Spirit who have Life can have no share - and should seek no share - with those who endure in an eternal death. An eternal death they shall surely awake to if they do not *turn* and mend their ways.

And yet, should even such a one turn and mend his ways, even now, he would be welcomed into the Eternity of the Blessed with open arms and the cheers of all the angels.

Putin

Randy Newman

<https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=6Ya-FGHdBso>

More to the point, and more important even than Putin's eternal soul, Russia must be prepared to face the onslaught of the Anti-Christ.

But Russia cannot be the last refuge of the Christian Church against the Great Tribulation of the Lawless One's final persecution if the Russian people are mired in paranoia, ignorance, and poverty. Only development, education, trust, and the inculcation of all the Christian virtues of faith, hope, and love can create a truly Christian nation that will not only be prepared to militarily face the Anti-Christ, but can spiritually withstand him.

For the greatest weapon in the Anti-Christ's arsenal will not be his nuclear missiles or bombers or armies -- it will be his own cult of personality, his own magnetism, his ascendancy to the role of false Christ, worshipped in a rebuilt false Temple in Jerusalem. He will command the whole charisma of the Second Coming.

The Russian people are currently in no shape to meet this test.

So shape up.

The storm is coming.

Eye of the Tiger

Survivor

<https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=btPJPFnesV4>

Rocky and Apollo in Training for the Title Fight
<https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=IVY8SbQGW-Y>

The Present Situation

Alexei Navalny

https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=qrwlk7_GF9g

Hey Vladimir....here's the alternative:

A Prophecy

The Ghost of Christmas Future

<https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=HuzqzYN0hRM>

The Way of Most Tyrants

<https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=9oKo0nZGcQQ>

A Christmas Carol

<https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=A3xuABrdKis>

If you live your life only for yourself, will you not, necessarily then, live in an eternal woe, where you hear those voices cry out, “Why did you not aid me in my hour of need? Why did you abandon me?” Shall not your abandonment of them become an abandonment of yourself, and thus abandon YOU to the eternal and infinite vortex of nothingness - which is not oblivion but WRATH? Shall not that abandonment become the insemination of a pit of ruination within yourself, that ever-revolving womb of the self, that, upon entrance into eternity, shall give birth to ABADDON?

Laugh all you want. And then cry for eternity.

Yes, yes indeed, bay-bay. Say during this life me, me, me, me, me, ME ME ME ME ME MEEEEEEEEEEEEEEEEEEEE, I fear nothing! I shake my fist at an All-Mighty that doesn't exist!!!!.....and then upon entrance into true Life say oh oh oh oh oh woe upon woe upon torturous woe. What a dolor - what a painful burden shall you fail - ever fail - to bear in Abaddon, the pit of utter darkness.

The Peril of Damnation to Hell

Avoid your We-Trinities and your Me-Trinities. That is, avoid any “God” that says that only yourself and/or only other people are the standard of true morality. The standard of true morality is the Good of the Whole, which is, necessarily then, the Truth of the Holy One.

The only One worth worshipping is a One-Trinity - that truth, which, while ever One, has space enough in itself for the many.

For if you worship (turn yourself to) Me, you will be lost. If you worship We, you will have obstacles, and may be lost: and *will* be lost if you can never, finally, turn yourself to the One. If you worship the One, you will have All.

For, what would be gained if you lived your life for even the best We-Trinity - your Father, Mother, and Mate - but in doing so failed to live for the One-Trinity, the ONE, THE ONE NAME? Would you not forfeit the Name that *gave* you His Name, so that you might have a name - a true, real name - and thus create for yourself a no-name of empty blankness, that could not sustain itself but would so finally crumble in upon itself, no, not merely into dust, but into an inescapable vortex of one’s attempted theft of the gift? Shall you be able to steal away with the gift given to you from THE GIVER? Would not such self-possession become eternal loss?

For is not universal salvation, and even annihilation, but a vain conceit of a timid and limited mind - a small, cold spirit, incapable of imagining the heights, the depths, and the lengths of A TOWERING HOLINESS, INESCAPABLE IN BOTH ITS LOVE...and when that love is so totally scorned in favor of self-preference ITS INFERNO OF INFINITE AND ETERNAL RAGE!!!

Hell hath no fury like a woman scorned. That is, someone beautiful and endlessly valuable shall, when scorned, have an infinity of Wrath.

Is that not why Dante wrote:

“Still? Still like the other fools,” said Virgil, “... There is no place for pity here. Who is more arrogant within his soul, who is more impious than one who dares to sorrow at God’s judgment?”²⁰

G-d is not a Magician, a Magic Man with a magic wand -- He is Spirit - the SPIRIT - and in HIS TOTAL PREROGATIVE, *HE* and He alone determines the value of a soul. And, if it has no value, yet, by necessity of its necessary and essential nature, necessarily has eternal existence, shall not that eternal worthlessness be met with eternal woe?

²⁰ Dante: *Inferno*, Canto XX, 27-30.

Hell

We can reflect on why G-d did not simply annihilate Satan and his mutinous horde of rebel angels. Just poof poof poof, and they're gone. But it's more complicated than that. It has to do with the nature of spirit. We live in a materialist age, a secular age, that assumes that, as Richard Rorty said, 'When we die, we rot.'

So, for us, we simply assume that G-d could just disassemble Satan, since our age, with its materialist mindset, assumes that the true nature of every thing is its assemblage of matter in motion. But, if we take the concept and reality and nature of spirit seriously, that is an impossibility. A spirit is an eternal existent, which, while it may be immanentized within matter, is not itself material or even, by its essence, temporal. And, since it is eternal, the spirit is, by definition, limitless. That limitlessness, truly not understandable to us in this sinful state of the world, is what I have been calling the spirit's absolute freedom - what many call the "will". This will, this spirit, this absolute freedom -- it is an eternal monad. It can be called into existence; but it cannot be "uncreated". A spirit is a reflection of the Spirit of G-d. Refer to George Berkeley. Everything else we experience that is not imbued with spirit is simply an idea in the spirit of the percipient, and, of course, the ultimate percipient is G-d, who imbues us with the spiritual capacity to be a percipient. If a spirit is created out of (we grasp for metaphors) a kind of reflection of the Divine Light that is the Spirit, then, necessarily, the spirit is ineradicable. It cannot be "turned off". It is truly an immortal soul. Because, if the Spirit is ineradicable, then everything created through a kind of "reflection" of that which is ineradicable must also be ineradicable.

And, of course, there is no difficulty raised by someone who would say, "Well, then that shows that G-d is limited in doing something." That fundamentally misunderstands the nature of G-d. G-d is eternal, with a perfect Will existing *from all eternity*. If He chose to create something, He doesn't "change his mind". Only those mortals in this temporal phase "change" anything. G-d's decision to create is an irrevocable act, which is as unchanging as the Divine Will. And we might say, "Well, doesn't G-d create trees, or apples, or cars, or clothes, etc. etc.?" From a spiritual and eternal view, they - and all matter - are really just a perception of the percipient. Now, we don't have power over these perceptions in the absolute way G-d does, because He is the ultimate perceiver, His perception is His act of creation, and we are sinful to boot, with our flesh ruling our spirit rather than our spirit ruling our flesh. But realize: the perceptions are accidents and incidents of the fundamental "substance", essence, ousios, reality: the Spirit. Every possible perception is contained within what I keep referring to as THE INFINITY OF TOTAL PLENITUDE. Now, one might say that that should include pain and death and crime, but that is simply because we live in this sinful phase of the world; such things are deficiencies of efficient and actual reality -- at least, that is so in eternity. So, we see: there can be no good -- no food, drink, air, comfort, physical body, idea, emotion - *nothing* that does not proceed from the Spirit. So, if all perceptions are contained within the Spirit, the

fundamental atom of spiritual reality, as opposed to material reality, is this spirit, which is a kind of reflection - or reflecting out - of the Light such that these spirits become mirrors.

And, a mirror turned towards Light will be brilliant, sharing in the Light and in all the fullness contained therein. And if the mirror is turned away from the Light, it will persist in total darkness starved of any perception, fallen into a vortex of the most bitter misery, deprived of any good gift. These are metaphors, of course. G-d cannot "break" the mirror -- because the mirror language is metaphorical, and there is no material mirror to break: it would be closer to the truth and more technical to call it a percipient. And what should G-d break? He can't smash a percipient - a spirit - to pieces. It has no pieces. And G-d cannot "unthink" what it was His Eternal Will, in His Eternal Freedom, to create from all eternity. So the spirit is quite ineradicable. The only question is whether that spirit is, essentially, *turned* towards the Light, or towards itself and thus persists in blank darkness.

As Scripture clearly states, "The angels too, who did not keep to their own domain but deserted their proper dwelling, he has kept in eternal chains, in gloom, for the judgment of the great day" (Jude 1:6). It is quite evident that the "proper domain" spoken of is maintaining their role as a percipient viewing G-d. The rebel angels desired to supplant G-d and become the Perceived rather than the percipient. Necessarily by doing so, they turned their sight, their percipient nature, which is nothing other than its essential quiddity, its perception, away from the Light, and thus obviously are kept in gloom. And that imprisoned state is eternal since the angels are not immanentized in matter. They can't sin one day and repent the next day. For it is all one single eternal moment. And the Great Day is when this temporal phase of the world concludes and those demons, so active in tormenting and tempting us, won't have us to kick around anymore.

We might also carefully speculate that fear was the cause of Satan's sin. Satan looked to the center of the Spirit: saw the Spirit for what it was, and yet said to Himself: "I cannot trust that. If I accept a lower rank, if I accept the Power of G-d, then I will somehow be less blessed, I will be cursed, miserable, not possessed of every choice thing, I'll be losing, I'll be missing out.

This is not to say, "Oh, poor Satan, he's a scared little boy, let's give him a hug." That would be to totally miss the point of what I'm saying. Satan was not a little boy. He was not even an adult, not even a material hyper-intelligence of the dreams of those who believe in the technological singularity. He was a pure spirit, the most refined and perfect of all the pure spirits. He was not a little boy, or even a man under terrible stress -- he had every faculty of wisdom, courage, insight. But despite all of that, when he considered his role in the spiritual creation, what he had been created to be, he thought: I can't trust that. So he rebelled, not caring that it would, if somehow he succeeded, throw the whole of Reality, including, incredibly, the Godhead, into a chaos of miserable anarchy. So his sin is maximally wicked and selfishness. *And* (not an excusing but) that selfishness, that self-preference is rooted in the fear that comes from not trusting in God. Satan's total sin consists in being assured of salvation, of God's presence and assistance, and yet saying, "I can't trust him, I have to trust something else," which almost always is yourself, or what you can control: which amounts to the same thing.

It is the same with the material creation. We cling to this material world, and even wish to excel in its fleeting luster, because we simply cannot trust that there is a real God, with a real Spirit, whose Spirit is the real truth. We fear death as annihilation, oblivion, and so we frantically run around, no matter the moral costs, to ourselves and others, trying to somehow cast the water out of the sinking ship by grasping whatever pleasures, powers, and consolations we can.

Don't do that. Trust in God's love for you. Do not, *first*, think that you love Him. Realize that you do not love Him as you ought. But also realize that, even though you do not love Him as you ought -- incredibly, *especially*, because you do not love Him the way you ought, He loves you, and loves you all the more.

That is why the touchstone of Jewish religion in the Age of the Torah from Sinai was the "Fear of the Lord". The only way to observe G-d's laws, and walk in His ways, is to trust Him, and one helpful way to trust Him is to fear Him more than you fear anything else: death, murder, pain, destruction, loss, the prospect of oblivion (which is a mere phantom and bogey used by Satan to fool you into stumbling into Hell).

It is like on *Frasier*, when Daphne is set on not using an epidural in her delivery, and Roz plucks out a hair from Daphne's head and observes, "Times a million." (Indicating how painful delivering a child is.) If you fail to follow the ways of the LORD, and fail to cease in your sinning, your fornications, your drunkenness, your arrogance, your pride, your irreligion, your greed, your blindness, your gluttony, your perversities, then, the next time you experience anything painful unexpectedly, remind yourself: "Times a million...in Hell." The only thing that we should fear is the Lord.

That is why Jesus said:

Amen, amen, I say to you, you will weep and mourn,
while the world rejoices;
you will grieve, but your grief will become joy.
When a woman is in labor, she is in anguish because her hour has arrived;
but when she has given birth to a child,
she no longer remembers the pain because of her joy
that a child has been born into the world.
So you also are now in anguish.
But I will see you again, and your hearts will rejoice,
and no one will take your joy away from you.
On that day you will not question me about anything.
Amen, Amen, I say to you,
whatever you ask the Father in my name he will give you.

(John 16:20-23)

Milton failed. John Milton failed. He excelled as a poet, but he failed as a prophet. Something was wrong with him. Period. He fell prey to the trap of Satan. Satan's endless ploy, of chaos and destruction, is to make the LIGHT OF HASHEM, the true truth, what is really good and really real and really fine and loving and kind *seem* -- not be, not actually be so, but merely *seem* -- to be Satan's possession. Satan's sin and testament is: the reflection is the truth, not the reflected. The mirror image of light is the true light, not the actual light. So, he portrays Satan with energy and the Father and Son with reverent but inert pieties. Thus, he very much got it backwards. All the exuberance portrayed in the character of Satan is actually God's. Satan is just an impostor. God is the All-Living Exuberance, that no poet could adequately treat of.

And we might also reflect that Milton's Satan played a founding and imperative role in the rise of Romanticism. But shouldn't we much rather have a Romanticism based on the Spirit, and not on the mere blank reflection of that Spirit's Light? Would that not be a Holy Romanticism, possessed of an infinite momentum?

Judaism cannot find its Mashiach because it is playing two-dimensional chess. It needs to raise its game. The only way to access something higher than you, is to think like the One who is higher than you. Does not Scripture over and over and over and over ad infinitum insist on how different HaShem is? Then why should He be limited to a mere two dimensions, to thinking the way you think?

Look at the situation -- ages and ages of sages playing two-dimensional chess....and are you a iota closer to Mashiach? Rebbe Schneerson was a righteous man, and if you too endure in righteousness, in faith, you shall enjoy his company at the Great Passover on the day the Temple is dedicated. But if you keeping waiting for him, you'll be waiting for Godot.

How can the Spirit of the Mashiach come upon you in its Fullness, and not simply as a Whisper, a Rumor, a Shadow in a graveyard on a deep dark night, if you cannot even raise a hand to him? How shall he pull you up if, in your unrighteousness, you fail to accept his grasp?

Consider: In the Gentile Scriptures, why do the demons constantly ask Jesus (Yeshua) why He has come before the appointed time? There is a bizarre blankness to their manner and their words. All nonsense then....the silliness of Gentile thinking. Perhaps. Or is it not perhaps the faithful handing down of an insight into the silliness of demonic thinking?

If, hypothetically, (I know, and such a distasteful hypothetical), Yeshua were the One to come to usher in the World to Come, why were the demons confused? They seemed assured of their damnation, that the Mashiach would come and damn them to their final dungeon. So they were flitting about the world like men on death row enjoying their last meal. Then, between the appetizer and the entree, this man shows up: This man that the demons recognize as the One to destroy them. And the demons say, "Hey, wait, you're early!" Clearly they were expecting him later than that time, and they were expecting him to destroy them all at once, as the LORD had cast out Satan all at once - in eternity.

Is that not the very blankness of Satan - to have intellect without wisdom, to reason without spiritual sight? For the demons are uni-dimensional. You know the novel Flatland? Hell is Lineland. There's no way to go anywhere without chewing your way through someone else. (Like in much of Corporate America.)

For the demons, who have condemned themselves - through their own spiritual blindness and lack of wisdom - to such an infernal Lineland, they have no access to multi-dimensional wisdom.

You see, for those in Lineland, that abode of Abaddon, they only have intellect and not the Spirit. We necessarily use metaphors, since we speak of G-d. Now the purely spiritual is superior in intellect to the material. It is obvious why. The spiritual is one, while the material is many. The intellect of one who is many is necessarily distributed across an extent, while the intellect of one who is, by its essence, one, is not distributed across an extent. Simple. Extent = slower intellect, and not just slower, but an intellect of finite momentum. No extent = Angelic intellect: an intellect of infinite momentum.

From <http://www.jewfaq.org/mashiach.htm>

Throughout Jewish history, there have been many people who have claimed to be the mashiach, or whose followers have claimed that they were the mashiach: Shimeon Bar Kokhba, Shabbatai Tzvi, Jesus, and many others too numerous to name. Leo Rosten reports some very entertaining accounts under the entry for meshiekh in The New Joys of Yiddish. But all of these people died without fulfilling the mission of the mashiach; therefore, none of them were the mashiach. The mashiach and the Olam Ha-Ba lie in the future, not in the past.

But if the past is the future is the present is the past is the future is the present, (which is how things look to G-d in His three-dimensionality; really, multi-dimensionality), then cannot the Olam Ha-Ba exist *both* in the past and the future -- or, more exactly -- does it not extend from the past through the present and into the future? Of course, there is the difference between Prophecy and Fulfillment -- One whispers, the other finally shouts. One talks in riddles, the other speaks plain as day, revealing every last secret.

The only way to understand any of this, to truly access any of it, is to, so to speak, play three-dimensional chess.

The entirety of this whole material universe is but the crucible of Eternity, by which we either pass to an Eternity of Blessedness in the Sight and the Light of the Blessed One, or fall into a bitter vortex of unending misery, alone, in the dark, without food or water or breath, in an eternal starvation, eternal parched thirst, and eternal asphyxiation. Try holding your breath. Now try holding your breath forever. Shall you not gasp in Horror?

You look forward to going to Hell? All the interesting people are in Hell? Better laugh with the sinners than cry with the saints? The saints do not cry, except for tears of lasting joy. They laugh in the Light of the Blessed One.

Laugh with the sinners? How shall you laugh when you cannot breathe? And, indeed, you shall wish to cry, but you shall have no water, not a single drop, to shed, not a single drop to wet your tongue.

Scorn Hell at your peril.

The Mystery of Creation

I also offer a very speculative, theoretical metaphor about the nature of God's creative activity, but one that I think might be useful and even, in its own theoretical and analogical way, be rather true.

Imagine God as a giant ball of energy. As we outlined in our discussion of the Trinity, we can imagine the Triune Unity being an expression of the Father's Plenitude racing out, and then turning back upon itself, till it runs back to itself, the running back of the Plenitude that was given (in that racing out) being the Son. The bond of life is the Spirit itself.

Now, when God creates, he necessarily creates from Himself out into nothing, so he creates *ex nihilo*. We return to George Berkeley. The two fundamental constituents of reality are percipient and perceived. All perceived incidents in reality exist by virtue of existing in the mind of God, and we, ultimately, perceive them because, somehow, we share in the mind of God such that we can perceive those things eternally perceived in the mind of God.

Spirits - that is, perceivers, are another matter. Spirits are made in the image of God. I offer that such spirits are an expression, a blasting out, into nothing, of God's reality, i.e. his essence or substance. So we could call this an "ex-volution", an unrolling outward of God's reality - his power, grace, wisdom, all the gifts of his Spiritual reality.

But, this ex-voluted reality, which becomes the substrate of all spirit, must involute itself, and return to the Spirit from which it was sent forth into the nothingness if it is to share at all in the actually, full reality of the Spirit of Plenitude. The spirit is not simply popped into existence in the mind of God. Each actual spirit is created by an effusion of the divine reality beyond itself.

That is one clear reason God cannot simply "un-create" a spirit. For to revoke a spirit's existence would be to revoke an expression of His own reality, which is quite close to denying His own reality. Once shot out in a pleroma, an overflowing of God's gracious reality, He can't just "take it back".

So a spirit so created must involve "turn back upon itself" and racing back, in obedience, to the Uncreated Spirit that created it, that created spirit will return to the source of its own freedom and gifts, thus creating a bond between Creator and creature, between the Spirit and that created spirit.

The created spirit requires that intimacy, nourishment, and ratification of its validity in order to persist in a state of blessedness, that is, in order to maintain the proper use of its gifts, in a state of righteousness, and in enjoyment of felicitous plenitude, which is God's very nature.

To fail to involute, to race back to God, in obedience, is to rebel against God and to not be nourished -- and thus to starve spiritually, to be deprived of every good gift.

The created spirit that involutes - that obeys God - acquires an image of the Trinity's three-dimensionality - and is thus Blessed.

The created spirit that refuses to turn back, to turn *towards*, the Uncreated Spirit, will persist in a state of starvation and darkness: *though its existence as a consciousness will persist, eternally*. The gifts won't exist as gifts, because they were not returned in *gratitude*. For no gift can remain a gift without gratitude. A gift given without a reciprocal return of gratitude is an

abomination, a rebuke, an insult, a theft of the grace of the giver. That gift which refuses to return gratitude to the Giver persists eternally in a one-dimensional blankness. The external structure, the power, of the gifts will remain, but their fulfillment in beatitude and plenitude will be overthrown and cut off. So, the gifts become a parody of themselves. They become mere means, cut off from the end for which they were created.

We might also extend the analogy and imagine that the angels' realities, the core of their spirits, was shot far beyond the singularity of God. And we might consider that the farther shot away, the greater the spiritual gifts. Lucifer was, perhaps, the longest expression, or ex-volution, of the Spirit. In this way, Lucifer would be comparable to the Son in this respect: the Son is the maximal outpouring, racing on, of God's own Spirit back to Himself, which *is necessarily within* Himself. The *creation* of a spirit, on the other hand, would involve the outpouring *contingently beyond* Himself.

So you can see Satan's (foolish and ridiculous, but vaguely clear) gripe. Lucifer was indeed a maximal outpouring of God's reality, just like the Son. But the Son was necessary and within God, while Lucifer was contingent and without God. To fail to understand the qualitative, and unbridgeable, chasm between those two realities was Satan's sin and his folly.

Satan's outlook was the ultimate polytheism, the ultimate chaos of spiritual anarchy -- the contention that there was, at bottom and really, no difference between necessary and contingent, or between within God and without God.

This outlook originated in Satan's fundamental lack of gratitude. God was clearly the Giver. But, rather than turn *back* to that Giver in an exchange of life that we call gratitude, Lucifer thought that he could retain all the gifts without returning that bond of gratitude, which necessarily involves obedience, the core of which is recognizing the prerogative of the Benefactor.

I believe that this lack of gratitude is precisely the essence of Satan's one-dimensionality. No matter how much you could give to Satan, he will always end up thinking that: now you've given it, it's all his for the keeping, without any return of life, i.e. exchange and sharing of life.

If you give Satan ten bucks on the street, Satan doesn't say, "Now we're bound together in a spirit of friendship." Satan's attitude will always be, "Aha! So now I am ten bucks richer, and you are ten bucks poorer, you sucker! Aha, I win, and you lose!"

What this fails to recognize is that happiness - blessedness - *only* exists because of an *exchange* of life, and that requires the involution of the initial ex-volution in turning back upon itself and racing back to the Giver, and that return of the gift to the Giver becomes the bond of gratitude which is the essence of the SPIRIT, which is the source of all life, of all living gifts.

So the gift that does not return itself to the Giver will persist in an eternal death, still conscious, but now a mere husk of itself, with all the exterior force of the gifts, without any of the interior intimacy that makes those gifts worth having.

In other words, God creates spirits by blessing them (with His Name). If the created spirit cannot bless the Name of God in return, then the blessing becomes a curse.

What had been life becomes death.

What had been created eternally felicitous will become eternal agony.

The mystery of why God chooses to bless into creation the blessing of spirits that will not return the blessing, and thus become eternal curses, is a difficult and complex mystery. It does not trouble me one bit because those who are damned *choose* their being damned in the absolute freedom which is the essence of their individual spirit. So their loss.

That being said, we might cautiously consider that God is Plenitude -- so He will outpour all the blessings that can possibly be given. Every blessing - and by this I mean spirit - that *can* exist will necessarily exist, will necessarily be poured out by the Necessary Being.

God cannot take back a blessing, because that would be to deny His essential nature as plenitudinous blessing.

And I think the (beginning of) a reason that God, in His Eternal Freedom *chose* that Eternal Design is that it proves that God is God - the Plenitudinous Blessing blesses every blessing that can be blessed -- that is, creates all that can be created in a plenum of reality.

And, one has to remember that, unlike in a 21st century liberal democracy, God has no qualms about the rights of consciousnesses as such. A consciousness - a spirit - that cannot be true to its own nature by returning the blessing to the One who blessed it into existence is an abomination, richly deserving of its eternal predicament.

I think, in some way, God, while not delighting in that predicament, has this kind of attitude: A murderer walks into a courtroom and begs mercy from the court because he is an orphan. Of course, he murdered his parents. While the judge may regret that the murderer made that choice, no just judge - that is to say, any kind of actual judge, i.e. a giver of true verdicts - could possibly acquit such an offender.

To give such an acquittal would be a lie. And for God, the Spirit of Truth, to speak such a lie would be to deny (and thus destroy) the Spirit of Truth. It would be unrighteous, and the All-Righteous, by His very nature, cannot do that.

Now, consider: the spirits of the angels, the pure spirits, the pure angelic intelligences, are those shots of energy shot furthest from the Great Energy, the Christian God. In being shot out so far, they have that great length of power that is the granting of so many spiritual gifts. And, if one stream of energy be shot out from the Divine Magnificence of that Great Energy, if it be shot *out* at an infinite momentum, shall it not *most* resemble the Infinity of Energy that shoots out from itself *within* itself, and thus *turns back upon itself* in order *to be itself*? Shall it not contain every spiritual *gift*?

Might not such a spirit be the spirit of Lucifer?

So, in that way, *and only that way*, Lucifer and Christ Jesus are rather similar - both are invested with every spiritual gift.

But, and oh here's the catch, because with God, there's usually a catch (at least to our sinful minds).

One of those with every spiritual gift, Lucifer, is *created* -- he is *without* God. The other, loaded similarly with every spiritual gift, is *within* God. And here's the catch: the Son, Jesus, has one gift that has not been granted to Lucifer: the Spirit itself.

That is, Lucifer has every spiritual gift: every capacity and intelligence and creativity and potential for beatitude.

But the Son has the Spirit itself, *which is the source of all those gifts*.

So Lucifer *cannot* maintain the beatitude of *any* of those spiritual gifts without *returning* to the Father, to the Triune Godhead.

And, rather, it is the Son's returning to the Father that makes the Spirit itself possible.

That is why Lucifer can so easily be cast out: he is just a reflection of God's reality.

The Son is the linchpin of God's reality.

If Lucifer sins, he is simply inverted and turns from being the most magnificent and wonderful creation to the most spectacularly disgusting and humiliated creature.

But, if the Son, if the God made Flesh, Jesus of Nazareth, sins (and sin is disobedience to the Father), then the whole linchpin and fabric of the Spiritual Order (not the creation, but the Uncreated Core of All Eternal Reality) would unravel.

We can also reflect that we human beings - compounds of flesh and spirit - are, in ourselves, the least magnificent of the spirits, precisely because our spirits are so little - we are little ones - shot out but a breath from the Divine Energy. That is why the angels and demons are so much vastly superior in power to us.

But, it is precisely the wisdom of God, in His involution, in His three dimensionality, that we who are so little and insignificant, precisely because of our littleness and insignificance, should, if we turn back to God through Christ, be granted to be *most near* to Him, and thus, through adoption, reign within the Crucified and Risen Christ who saved us.

The whole Christian drama is an affirmation of God's interiority. What really matters to God is not His external terrible Power, but His endlessly internal, intimate, Merciful Love.

Now, one may say, despite all that has been said heretofore, "But why would a loving God eternally punish spirits?"

I think I have already outlined pretty strong reasons why that would be.

To summarize, frankly, the first issue of why did God create spirits that He knew would *choose* to fall is distinct (although not hermetically sealed), from the second issue of, once created, why would God decide to eternally punish evil spirits?

The second question, I believe, has a reasonably straightforward answer: Once created, a spirit *cannot* be destroyed. Our material circumstances delude our minds into not understanding this simple concept. We imagine the spirit to be like a pot that can be obliterated or a light switch that can be turned off. The spirit is no such thing. The spirit is a psychic atom in the spiritual order. Just as no fundamental particle of matter or energy can be destroyed (*see* the Law of the Conservation of Matter and Energy), so too, the spirit, once created by God's creative act of an outpouring - an overflowing - of His own Essence, such that that Essence extends beyond Himself *out* into nothing, cannot be "undone". For God is absolute Being, All (not in a pantheistic sense, but in a Spiritual and metaphysical sense), and for him to extend that Being

into the non-existence (nothingness) beyond His own Uncreated Being (which is the act of creation) is the creation of being; and the fundamental atom of being is spirit. All the perceived elements of reality -- every element of sense perception: every sight, sound, taste, touch, smell; every concept that endues in the mind: beauty, grace, affection, strength, grandeur; every element of reasoning: unity, difference, number, kind, connection -- all these perceptions are *properties* of the spirit.

Just as an atom has a certain list of properties that it might display, so too the spirit possesses its perceptions as properties of itself. While it may appear, in this sinful, sundered, material world, that we “see that which is without us”, while that is true, it is more deeply insightful and accurate to say that we see what is perceived by the mind of God, and that if we wish to endure in a state of blessedness, our minds shall be turned to God, and if we refuse to so turn them, we shall endure, rather, in an accursed state of complete ruination.

So, Aristotle had it backwards, and George Berkeley righted the matter. All that Aristotle intuited has conceptual merit, but it gets things rather backwards. The mind is not, essentially, qua the perception of mind, viewing outward into a world exterior to it; it is recognizing the world that is beyond it precisely because it is, at its deepest existential level, *interior* to it -- not that the self is God, but that the source of the self is the God that is beyond that self.

So, the whole spiritual creation, both the first spiritual creation created outside of the dimension of matter and we of the second creation, which is a spiritual creation enfleshed in matter, has as its *fundamental and atomic* structure, the structure of spirits that revolves around the Spirit of the Father and the Son: the Spirit of the Giver and the Gift.

Too much our shallow minds in the media and those high priests of the School of Resentment, as Harold Bloom calls our identity politics militia members, in academia and elsewhere will latch onto the language of Father and Son in a vain and silly attempt to smear Christianity as merely “patriarchal” and thus somehow the relic of a bygone time.

It is all metaphor: although a perfectly exact metaphor.

God the Father isn't an old man with a beard and a cane and a robe, and all such nonsense. He is the Possessor of Every Good Gift, of every choice thing, of every favorable reality (which, blessedly, is the only kind of actual - rather than deficient - reality that there is). And, *within* the Godhead's own reality, One can only be a Giver if the Gift is given.

So, the “Son” is not conceived by some material kind of copulation (although we might engineer a kind of spiritual metaphor around that).

The Son - the Gift - is *poured out from the Father's Plenitude*. And that pouring out of the Gift by the Giver, when returned in gratitude to the Giver by the Gift, forms the Bond of Gratitude which is the deep, ineffable, total, plenitudinous, joyous, indescribable beatitude of the Spirit of the Giver and the Gift.

But, when you're talking to 1st Century fishermen, tax collectors, shepherds, soldiers, tanners, beggars, and farmers.....if you're trying to save their souls, maybe -- just maybe -- you'd do well not to lay on the academic philosophical parlor language. Because, you know, you're trying to save people from the burning fires of an eternal hell, and not satisfy the inane sensibilities of 20th and 21st Century celebrities, academics, and journalists.

So, if you're trying to get across the reality of God - of the Triune God, because it was time in salvation history to reveal that necessary linchpin of the mystery of God - you really couldn't do any better than to describe the Giver and the Gift as the Father and the Son -- for a son, traditionally, is the heir of all that the Father has. The son is so gifted by the Father's inheritance, that the son takes on the nature and role of the Father, such that the son becomes the Father, and, in that bond of gratitude by which the son graciously takes on the role of the Father, with appreciation of the fact that the son owes the Father everything and not just with a sense of 'Aha! Now it is mine!', the Father and son are joined in a bond that, for us, we call family. The giving of the gift and the return of the gift becomes the mysterious exchange of life, as Father Smith said, that is the Spirit of Truth and Love - Love in Truth, and Truth in Love.

So, when that Exchange of Life - that Bond of Gratitude between the Giver and the Gift, overflows, pours itself out - into nothing, *ex nihilo* - it is creating that creation by filling the nothingness - the not-there - "beyond" itself with its *own* Reality, its *own* Life - and that Life is the Giving and Return of the Gift (which is the foundation and essence of all substance and experience of reality). You can't undo or "turn off" or "smash to pieces" or "wish away" the essential, fundamental reality of Reality. For the outpouring of Spirit creates spirits *made in the image* of that Spirit. Just as the Spirit is eternally and ineradicably existent, so too the spirits made by a kind of "ex-volution" or "reflection" of that Spirit share in that eternal and ineradicable nature.

To continue to quarrel about this matter is the same as to insist that material elements can truly be destroyed or "wished out of existence". One with such predilections should stop pestering the theologians and rather give the physicists some of their hectoring attention.

Thus, the only issue, once a spirit has been created, is whether that spirit, in *imitation* (c.f. *The Imitation of Christ* by Thomas à Kempis) of the Spirit that created it, will *choose*, in its essence of absolute freedom, to return the gift by aligning itself with the will of the Spirit that created it: and created it for that purpose: of which there could be no higher purpose, for the Spirit is the standard of reality.

Since the spirit's source of existence is the Spirit, to turn away from the Spirit and not return the Spirit's gift *necessarily* involves a loss of the Spirit, and the Spirit's essence, so to speak, is its Beatitude, its Blessedness, its own being Full of Favor, abounding in plenitude.

So, an indestructible spirit, without access to or self-conformity with that spirit's own essential nature (which is the Spirit), necessarily involves such a self-damned spirit in a horrid inversion of itself, such that it maintains its giftedness, yet none of the life that feeds that gift can flow into it, since the linchpin of the life of the gift is its return to the Giver.

And, this spirit's eternal predicament is quite well-deserved and stands uprightly in the most poetic justice: The spirit's own will becomes its damnation. The spirit attempted - insanelly - to steal the gift, to run off with it, when it knew or should have known that the gift *had* to be returned in order for it to *share* in the life that made the value of the gift real and possible. So God ratifies the *choice*, the will, of that foul spirit, saying: Thy will be done. You get what you wanted. You wanted your gift separate from Me? Now, you shall have it. You shall have your gift separate from Me: And that shall be your ruination, your misery, your Hell.

I find it difficult to fathom how we could fault God for simply ratifying a spirit's freedom.

And if one should say, "People [as in human beings] didn't know," well, that is why forgiveness is possible: because of human ignorance as to the depths of sin. But, when salvation has been so readily, loudly, entirely proclaimed -- and the necessary ways have been laid out endlessly, repeatedly, urgently, diligently, lovingly -- and then that proclamation of salvation and that saving teaching have been rejected.....repeatedly, arrogantly, scornfully, frivolously, disdainfully, with all the stench of self-preference and self-deification....

How then can you stand before God and complain about His ratification of your self-preference and self-deification?

God now says to you: You wished to be without Me? You wished to be your own god?

I grant you your wish. Good luck with that.

The Mystery of God

The theology (or, as all theology necessarily is, the theological metaphor) of Giver and Gift as Father and Son, also clarifies the nature of the Trinity. It explicates how the One God can be in Three persons: that is, to state it differently, how the One Ousia can be in Three hypostases. A Giver cannot be a Giver without the Gift. Without the gift, the Giver is merely a Doer, an Actor, like Aristotle's Unmoved Mover. Aristotle's Unmoved Mover didn't care about you -- because all it did was generate motion from a state of rest -- similar to the Christian development of that concept into the insight of Creator and creature. *There was no spiritual context or dimension to such an ontological entity.* Because for Aristotle, the Cosmos was deeply impersonal and immanent. Aristotle believed in forms, but believed that individuals were the primary substance. The Christian necessarily believes that God - the Uncreated Spirit - is the primary substance and that the secondary substances are spirits created by God in the image and likeness of the Uncreated Spirit, and that tertiary substance consists of the perceptions that a spirit may experience (and thus, in keeping with the reality that a spirit can be infinite if united totally with the Infinite Spirit, such perceptions can themselves be infinite -- that is, the delights of Paradise, of the state of beatitude, are infinitely abundant and joyous -- one literally cannot begin to imagine the delights of Heaven -- and, consequently, the pains of Hell, which are *precisely* the absence *and* inversion of such infinite and eternal delights).

Thus, the Aristotelian philosophical system is impersonal and immanent, but a truly Christian philosophical system must be both personal and transcendent. Plato is nearer the mark, but even he muddies the waters with an obsession for deifying every concept and item into a God-like Form, when all we need say, in union with Berkeley, is that such tertiary substances naturally proceed from the mind, that is, the Mind of God -- *and*, most probably, if our spirits were in tune with God, we could be a part of that free creative act that makes a new heaven and a new earth, rather than simply be subject to the sinful echo of it.

Rather unlike the Aristotelian system, God does not generate movement from rest, as such. It is much more like the overflowing of a Cup that simply cannot contain the frothing brew of its plenitudinous self. What it really is, we cannot say, for that would be for a blind man blind from birth to describe color. You cannot *describe* color. You can only recognize color when you see it. Likewise, God, in this life, cannot be known through descriptions: through definitions with elements and differentia. He can only be *inferred* - which is to say that *knowledge* (of a sort) of God can only be inferred by metaphor. So, as a blind man may, in talking with a sighted man, understand red as hot, blue as cool, yellow as cheerful, green as peaceful and wet, purple as soft, pink as merry, and orange as warm, so too the faithful Christian and the theologian *talk* about God as Just, All-Righteous, All-Felicitous, Blessed, Merciful, Good, Beautiful, True, Spirit. *But all this talk does not at all say what God is.*

While we cannot comprehend the riches of such righteousness, blessedness, mercy, truth, and beauty - for it would be far more impossible, in this life, than for us to travel to another galaxy in person - we *can* by a metaphor with our own reality do what the blind man does when he uses metaphors of touch to understand realities of sight. So, in keeping with the Via Negativa, we do not really mean that God is just or wise or merciful or truthful or blessed - for these are

human concepts. Rather, we indicate that God's reality is *something like* - something analogous to - those realities. God is certainly just, beautiful, and good, but He is so in an exemplary form that exceeds the limitations of our imaginations. Analogy, etymologically, means proportion or proportionate -- so while when we make an analogy to human things, we make proportional analogies, when we make an analogy to God, we involve ourselves with disproportionate analogies - that is to say, God is totally *incommensurable* with human reality. So, a metaphor about God is not even similar to a metaphor about human things. That is, a metaphor about human things can give us an *idea* of the reality. A metaphor about God cannot even give us such a metaphor, but can only give us, say, *an intimation* of the reality of God -- a hint, a whisper, an echo of a Divine Reality so immense, towering, and wonderful, that not even the whole Cosmos, totally linked in a Noetic Union (a whole Cosmos as one single thinking organism), could *at all* truly grasp anything about God.

So, while we are *like* the blind man in relation to how we relate (or don't relate) to God, we are actually in a much more abject state. We must intuit some kind of knowledge of God without having any senses whatsoever, and without having any memory of having such a divine sense, if we ever had it in any form to begin with. At least the blind man has touch and sound, and touch and sound, both being physical senses, are cousins of sight. We are totally removed from *any* sight of the Majesty of God.

So all our best is simply a working through our ruined state. And that is precisely the role of grace -- the light in the dark that leads the Way back to the Eternal Light of Beatitude. And that grace, necessarily, is a gift of God, and is granted by God's willing emergence into human life, and human flesh (and thus necessarily human nature and the human condition), which is none other than the Incarnation, which, necessarily, results in the Crucifixion and Resurrection.

So, when we speak of God, and God as Giver and Gift, we are making an analogy that *doesn't even begin* to scratch the surface of the reality, which is an ineffable mystery.

What we *can* say is that this is no ordinary Giver and Gift.

As Father Smith said, "What is the difference between a thing and a gift? The gift is the presence of the giver."

For us, who are material and sinful, we imagine a Giver as a discrete person with, say, a wrapped box with a bow under his arm, or transferring some wealth or real estate to another. For us, in this world, the gift is *external* to the Giver. But *within* God, the gift is not external to the Giver; the Giver gives the only thing he has: Himself, which is everything.

And if the Spirit of the Giver is the Gift, and the Giver, being eternal and infinite, has no need of retaining anything, then the Gift of the Giver to the Gift, is, necessarily Himself.

Thus, because God is Spiritual, and not material, the Giver does not simply *have* the gift to give: the Giver is the Gift. And, since the Gift, possessing the Spirit's abundant *goodness*, will, of course, *return* the Gift to the Father, there is an exchange of gift, and an exchange of gratitude. And that exchange of gratitude will not be like our paltry, limited, pale human relationships, where we exist locked in our own consciousnesses and can only conduct a relationship by perceiving the sights, sounds, touches (and maybe tastes and smells) of another person, and can then only conceive an *image* of that person in our minds, (and they do the same), and then each of us (or all of us) generate feelings about the image of that other person. *And,*

tragically and critically, we do not even *have* or *experience* the feelings of others -- we simply imagine them from the five senses and *then generate our own feelings as models of what the other person must be feeling*. Therefore, even our deepest relationships are merely a model of a relationship, an echo of a relationship, etched by the prisoner locked tight in our own cranium.

But the relationship between Giver and Gift, that bond of life, is not simply a parallel model of each other's feelings, as our human relationships are, but a *direct* experience of what each *actually* experiences - in a way beyond our imagining.

So, the Giver does not simply *give* the gift. The Giver *is* the gift, and the Gift *is* the gift of return to the Father, and the Bond is a mutual exchange of Giver and Gift such that the Bond is itself *what* the Father and Son are about.

Thus, the Giver does not merely *possess* the Gift, nor does the Gifted merely *receive* the gift, nor do the Giver and the Gift *feel* - that is to say, *model* - each other's *feelings* about the gift.

No, no, no.

The Giver *is* the Gift, and the Gift *is* the Giver, and the Gratitude of Exchange between the Giver and the Gift *is* the Spirit of both the Giver and the Gift.

Which is to say, that the Gift is Life, and Love, and that Life and Love are not points, consisting as a nothing in itself, but is a portal, to an infinity beyond all imagining.

That is why St. Paul says, "At present we see indistinctly as in a mirror, but then face to face. At present I know partially; then I shall know fully as I am fully known" (1 Corinthians 13:12).

God's inner life is a true window, racing outward with an infinite sight. All our best, by our own lights, is nothing more than a fixed mirror, reflecting our own reality back to ourselves. Without God, when we are turned away from God, and thus turned to ourselves, our spiritual lives are like mirrors. In the end, all that we see is *essentially* mediated and constructed by ourselves and thus really is only ourselves. Only the intervention of God, through his grace, to *turn* us away from sin, away from anything that is not God, can allow us even to have an intimation of another person, that is to say an intimation of them as they are in their noumena, and not simply as our own noumenon reconstructs them from perceived phenomena. Without God, no matter how "involved" in the world we may be, we inhabit a land of shadow and mist, without any true knowledge of anything beyond ourselves, or even ourselves. Only God can dispel the shadow with his Light and make us see what is really real.

And that is the beatific (righteous, blessed, all-good, all joyous) vision.

The Mystery of the Elect and the Damned

As far as why God created spirits He knew would fall to the ruin of damnation, we have St. Paul as a guide:

You will say to me then, "Why [then] does he still find fault? For who can oppose his will?" But who indeed are you, a human being, to talk back to God? Will what is made say to its maker, "Why have you created me so?" Or does not the potter have a right over the clay, to make out of the same lump one vessel for a noble purpose and another for an ignoble one? What if God, wishing to show his wrath and make known his power, has endured with much patience the vessels of wrath made for destruction? This was to make known the riches of his glory to the vessels of mercy, which he has prepared previously for glory, namely, us whom he has called, not only from the Jews but also from the Gentiles.

(Romans 9:19-24)

The teaching of the text clearly indicates that the damned were created for the sake of the elect -- to form, educate, train, instruct, and guide the elect on the Way of their election.

Is that mean? It might be if the damned were simple robots with no free will. But the flip side of God's sovereign will is man's free will (*how* this is, I don't know, but I can assure you *that* it is true -- it is, in fact, the fundamental spiritual law of creation). So, if the damned have - *themselves in their own freedom chosen* - the path of ruination...then how much sympathy are we really to have for them? God didn't create anything bad --- He knew that certain spirits would choose evil, and that choice, necessarily, was in conformity with his choice (a mystery, frankly, beyond my capacities).

Frankly, I have less wisdom on this question than on the previous one of why God can't simply annihilate spirits. But, I do think that the teaching of the text is entirely wholesome and salutary. Consider this: I once believed in universal salvation. I felt heartsick at the idea that anyone should suffer such horrible torments in an eternal Hell. But meditation on the wickedness of Ariel Castro, and then on other such evil men, convinced me that only an eternal torment could possibly satisfy the prerogatives of God's Eternal Justice. And so the insight that motivates this whole work was born. And my understanding of, and love for, God was radically deepened and renewed by seeing deeper into the structure of salvation.

Is this an answer to the whole of the question? Perhaps not. But certainly we shouldn't make shipwrecks of our faith - and our own salvation - out of a misplaced sympathy for the damned. What a woeful, lamentable, laughable tragedy -- to end up damned because one had sympathy for the damned. And I assure you, should you end up in that fiery pit and pool of the damned, those damned that you had sympathy for...they certainly shall not have any sympathy for you.

What we can also see more clearly is that Satan's rage (and his punishment, his subjection to the Divine Wrath) is precisely rooted in what I have been calling his one-dimensionality, his blankness. For Satan is the perfectly superficial: He understands all, yet *sees* nothing. He can comprehend the whole vastness of reality, as if beholding it from the highest

peak of the highest mountain, without *penetrating* to the *meaning* of that whole vision. He listens to the music, but cannot -- because he *will* not - hear the soul. He has eyes to see the complete nature and course of every reality, the whole magnificence of the entire Divine Design, and yet refuses to see the goodness of that Holy Will.

He reads this preceding paragraph too. He reads it with every one of you. For, from the ground (the topos) of the sin within you, he watches, lurks, hides. He sits within the corners and crevices of your mind, hidden in the shadows of your sin, perched upon his dark throne, a cloak of lies, illusions, and self-deceptions hiding him from your plain view. Whenever you sin, you rend your spirit, tear it apart, as surely as flesh is torn apart, and through and by the vacuum of grace when the righteousness and insight of the LORD necessarily departs, Satan fills that vacuum - that sin (that emptiness of grace) - and infects and festers within your spirit, building an empire of damnation that goes unnoticed until it is sprung upon you like a trap at your deaths.

He enjoys your gasp of disbelief. Your shudder of terror. Your pushing away of the truth as you try to recover your equilibrium. He cackles as you clutch for your phone, your tablet, some other less threatening book, as you take a sip of coffee or tea, or look out the window on your plane. As you cast the book away and put on *The Golden Girls*, or some other light entertainment that doesn't warn you about your grave peril.

He rejoices as you tug the blankets of your innocent delusion tight about your potentially awakening mind, assuring yourself that this material world is all there is, all there must be -- it is the best of all possible worlds. The only world there is. We have nothing to fear. No hell below. Above us, only sky. And a warm hotel room, and a soft bed, and a tasty morsel, and a soft caress from the tender touches of a young lover, and the vigorous satisfactions of a prodigious orgasm into the waiting embraces of yielding flesh.

Satan sees all of it. Orchestrates so much of it. From the ruined apparatus of the lesser fallen spirits, he pilots a whole project of Abomination aimed at snatching every spirit created by God into his gaping maw, pushing each self-damned spirit down his gullet with the force of all his loud and itchy temptations.

And he hopes to somehow, desperately, madly, botch the Creative Act of the Eternal Lord - to prevent the prophecy of God-in-All from being realized out of the potentiality of God-in-God, God as He existed prior to any Creative Act. He hopes to destroy the Church, hunt down and kill every last Christian, and swallow their blood till the Flesh of Christ staggers and falls to ruins, and he, the foul spirit, can rule over the material creation as his own God. "Let that monstrosity, YHWH, rule the spiritual creation," he says: "I, Satan, shall rule an eternal darkness of this material world. My creator shall rule in his realm, and I, my self-created self-God, shall rule in this realm. And at last there might be peace."

This one-dimensionality, this blankness, can thus only see the exteriority of anything, without accessing the interiority of anything. Satan is the Joker from the Christopher Nolan *Batman* movies: seemingly omnipotent and all-conquering, without the first trace of an instinct for any shred of moral goodness, of the interiority of any existent, any *thing*. When he sees God, all he sees is Power, and he covets that Power, not understanding that if he should simply submit to that Power, it would be graciously shared with Him. When he sees any human being, he doesn't see a kindred spirit, a spirit made out of the same Name, the same Essence, as the One True God. He doesn't see that a simple act of compassion for such a one would access a whole

Plenitude of satisfaction and grace. He can only see an abomination made to displace him, and thus can only see a prey, to be killed, taken down, and snatched up so that he can suck the blood from every last tissue - that is, suck the remaining living spirit from every crevice of that ruined husk of a damned soul.

Because Satan cannot return the gift to God, through gratitude, he is shot out into infinite dark space, into the abyss, cast out from the presence of God though his own sin, his own self-created failure. Since he cannot -- will not -- self-involute, turn back his spirit upon the Giver and return the gift, Satan can never be three-dimensional. So, Satan can only ever *really* know that the truth of God is Power, when the truth of God's Power is His Grace.

And Satan reads that sentence too, and figures that there must be some dark, occult, jujitsu power in that "Grace" -- for Satan keeps getting defeated with it over and over and over. But in the end, (and this mystery of iniquity is unfathomable and not worthy of sustained examination, for as, Albertus Magnus said of demonology, "A daemonibus docetur, de daemonibus docet, et ad daemones ducit" ("It is taught by the demons, it teaches about the demons, and it leads to the demons")), Satan hates that Grace, cannot believe that any kind of happiness could come from subordinating himself to that Grace, and believes, somehow, some way, that he, Satan, *must* be able to conquer God's Grace with Satan's Power. For Satan, (from Satan's point of view), God's call to obedience and trust, which God promises will lead, through grace, to eternal life, is nothing more than submission, which, in Satan's view, could only lead to slavery and eternal death.

It is Satan's grasping at ultimate, eternal life that causes him to fall into the abyss of an absolute, eternal death.

Purgatory

Purgatory: Necessary, and misunderstood.

It is not some “third” realm, sandwiched in between Hell and Heaven, like Heaven’s parlor, like a doctor’s waiting room -- “Here’s a magazine. God will see you in a few hundred years.”

LMFAO.

No, no, no, silly children.

Think:

If you wish to enter into the Abode of the Blessed One, you must come totally unstained of any unholiness. Did not the Seraphim have to cleanse even the righteous Isaiah before he could behold the One?

What are your sins but your unholiness, your wrong conduct, the way you have hurt other people by not doing good?

You do not see the hurt you do when you sin. Like the sin, the death, already in your soul, lurks, stays hidden in darkness, shut off from your sight. That is, the deaths, the hurts, of other people. People who come into and go out of your life. When you take swipes at them, even unintentionally, when you sin and thus shut out the Divine Favor trying to break into the world, into the human realm, this mortal life, you cause a stoppage of grace -- pain, sadness, loneliness, misery, suffering, even death.

And, for an eternally living One, who is ALL JOY and ALL SATIETY and ALL PLEASURE is not any pain an Eternal Loss, an Eternal Woe?

Let us speak plainly.

When you sin, you hurt someone, because you stop the Divine Grace from operating in the world. Even if you do not see it, even if you do not agree with it, you have - you have chosen the wrong path and chosen yourself rather than the Lord’s Way. If you fornicate, rather than endure, you have gone off the path the Lord wanted for you, and you have shoved another person off the path the Lord wanted for them. Not to speak of the unspeakable crimes of murder, rape, slavery, destructive war, tyranny, the gas chambers -- those too blind to see the hurt in such things, who die in their sin, deserve their Hell - their infinity of hells, like a vortex of *what might have been Grace* collapsing in on itself.

But even what we think are little things, those “little sins”...are they indeed so little? Can any sin ever be little in the sight of an ALL HOLY AND ALL ETERNAL AND EVER LIVING LORD? Is not every sin infinite in the Infinite One’s infinite sight? Of course.

When you say a sharp word to someone and walk away, you do not even consider the loss to that person -- you do not experience that person’s inner life. You see but an image, think little to nothing of it, and walk away. But that hurt - the sin, that is, necessarily then, the stoppage of Divine Grace, still occurs. And, just as the Favor of the Lord is Plenitude, so too the stoppage of

that Favor is a reversal of Plenitude. That reversal of Plenitude is a vortex of wickedness. Just as the Favor of the Lord, once charged, and once gaining sufficient momentum, can overcome any obstacle, so too that stoppage, which generates that vortex of wickedness, shoots its own, (what can we properly call it, for it is so blank?), let us say, as an evocative phrase, occlusion of the Divine Light. Occlusion, to cover over, like to blind an eye. The Light of Total Love always tries to break through the clouds of darkness, our sins. When you sin, you do your part to cover up G-d's Love. And if the Lord's love is infinite, an abundance of plenitudinous joy and mirth, frothing with every delight, haven't you destroyed that totality of delight?

Let us speak more plainly.

Most people go through life just trying to get through the day, getting up, rushing to get a shower, dressed, off to work, grab something to eat, scramble to your desk, do some project or task and make ends meet, and somewhere in there - at night, and on weekends, and on holidays, you try to cram in a little pleasure - some food, some sex, some drinking, some friends, some television, maybe the beach and some easy reading --- anything to make you feel human again after being ground down into dust, a spiritual mud of the oppressed human spirit, by the voracious Beelzebub of the Corporate Abomination, most hateful of G-d, most hated by G-d, most beloved of Satan, Satan's very Flesh, made active and alive in the world, to do the one thing Satan really wants to do: take a spirit destined for Eternal Plenitude and then grind that spirit into a material dust only capable of being an unholy clay to be devoured by the Unholy one.

And in the middle of all that sad melodrama - a melodrama orchestrated by Satan to distract you from the Cosmic Drama of Grace and Redemption and Eternal Love in Maximal Plenitude - you have relationships. Relationships with your mother and father, husband, wife, ex-husband, ex-wife, girlfriend, boyfriend, lover, fuck buddy, cousin, sister, brother, landlady. And you try to grab as much pleasure from them as you can, and survive financially and emotionally in a world out to destroy you.

And, if you have a functioning conscience, you try - you really do, sometimes more, and sometimes less - to not hurt people. It's like driving -- you're racing down a lane, and you don't *mean* to kill anybody, but the best interests of the other drivers are not foremost in your mind, although it should be. Your number one goal is getting where you're going, and if you don't kill anyone or hit anyone, then it's all right. And sometimes you try to punch above, and sometimes you fail, and so, you bob up and down.

But if you were ever really in touch with the right way of looking at things -- if you ever had a glimpse of the Eternal Light so urgently, lovingly, trying to reach into the human world and make it what it could truly be - to fulfill its every potential - you would bitterly mourn every sin.

So many people look at salvation this way: "I mumble some words, a few days in a decade I read some words, I mumble some more words at night (maybe), I sometimes go to some building to see a theatrical production, and if I look at a sunset, I feel the presence of the God who loves me" -- But not the world, not the God who desires to shatter this empty nexus of nothingness with the RADIANCE OF ETERNAL PLENITUDE AND BLISS. No, not that God, G-d, but the God who wants to be my bro...my brah...my fraternity brother...who wants to go

As St. Paul writes:

What eye has not seen, and ear has not heard,
and what has not entered the human heart,
what God has prepared for those who love him. -- *This* God has revealed to us through
the Spirit.

(1 Corinthians 2:9)

Is that *Your Best Life Now!* Is it a promotion? Is it the Favor that will give you a happy marriage or a new job or a new car or a new flat-screen television or a new waterbed or a new vibrator or a new Nintendo...no, that's dated...Playstation, whatever...a new fidget spinner, a new barbecue.....what? Is it some more vaunted abstraction - Success? Romance? Something vaguer and thinner - a thin mist?

Now, I don't want to just do the old, meaningless nonsense of the more orthodox Christian dumping on the more secular Christian. I don't know what is in Joel Osteen's heart, and I hope he is found in Christ. And there are many interesting and even valuable things in his television shows and books. And this isn't just the Calvinist beating up on the Charismatic, at least I hope it's not. I'll quote from *Your Best Life Now*:

Stop settling for mediocrity. Quit settling for the status quo. God has more in store for you. Much more! Dream bigger dreams. Enlarge your vision. Live with expectancy. Make room in your thinking for the great things God wants to do. Your best days are ahead of you. God wants to do more than you can even ask or think, but remember, it's according to the power that works in you. Stir yourself up, step out of complacency; don't be satisfied with past glories.

Amen, brother! That actually is, (an aspect), of the Gospel.

Much more indeed, Brother Joel. But is that *MUCH MORE* merely a good job or a good marriage or well-brought up kids? All of those things are wonderful, and they're all gifts.

I agree that a well-lived life should strive towards those things, and that the grace of God, actualized and concretized (made real) can grant necessary material and spiritual favor *in this life*.

I love the Charismatics. I wish we had more of them. But I wish we could all get together and learn from each other, Charismatics, Presbyterians, Catholics, Baptists, Methodists, Greek Orthodox, Syriac Orthodox - even Mormons - and just think things through -- without our sectionalism, and our commercialism, and our narrow-thinking. We're a ship of fools. We're on a voyage of the damned -- not, we hope, individually, but the Church in America is in sorry shape indeed. It has all the elements to really gain critical velocity, but it just can't seem to get its act together. The Church is brilliant, charismatic, wonderful, but just seems to be waiting for

Christ to lay it on a bed of roses with a big KABOOM of the Apocalypse....or the next promotion....whatever keeps your boat afloat.

We're like the bickering delegates to the Council of Elrond, hashing out the same inane, meaningless bullshit while the Dark Lord is preparing to sweep the entire world. And as we're being led off in chains to Hell the Catholic will be saying "Free Will" and the Calvinist "Predestination" and the Charismatic "Spirit Grace" and the Mormon -- I'm honestly not that familiar with the crux of Mormon theology, but fill in the blank -- and will it not be the most comic scene when finally the whole Church is flung into the abyss, still somehow garbling its disputes as it falls endlessly into a pit?

But I am not hostile to the Charismatics.

For how could I be against the Charismatics? Is not the praxis and axis of the entire Flesh of Christ but charisma - χάρισμα, which is the gift that can only be bestowed through the χάρις, the grace/favor of God?

But, and this is the biggest but of all, what is the true Gift of the Giver, what Grace of that MUCH MORE can we expect?

I wish Joel Osteen would man up, rip out that globe, stick a huge cross (I'd prefer a Crucifix, but I understand), but just a huge giant CROSS right behind him, and then say something like this: "My friends, God wants the best for you. If you believe in him, and trust him and love him, he'll make amazing things happen for you. But, even if you die in a cave after first being gang-raped and then eaten by a pack of wolves, if you have true, sincere, active faith in Christ, in a life striving towards righteousness, you will be met by that *MUCH MORE* - the Infinite Plenitude of an All-Loving God, compared to which a job or a marriage or a gadget is a meaningless nothing, a total irrelevance. Your best life now would be great. But, if you're in Christ, you're assured of a *Best Life Forever*. And my friends, that'll blow your hair back! It'll take you places, you never imagined."

How can a Charismatic talk so much of the here and now, when the TOTAL SPIRIT OF INFINITE PLENITUDE awaits us just a step beyond this mortal life?

IF you really believed in God - the real GOD - and not just this vomit, this hokum of Me telling JC what I want for Christmas, this hocus pocus mish mash mosh pit of self-seeking, self-help nonsense, you would act very differently.

You would stay silent. In awe. And gratitude. And it would finally dawn on you...eventually....slowly...it would take time, and take you through many dark days of sin and loss and loneliness, maybe at the edge of despair and desolation...But one day, in every face, and every song on the radio in your car, and every sound, and every light from every star in the sky, you would feel...you would *know*...that there is an Eternity of Blessedness you can never here on earth imagine, that does not need you, that is totally fine...JOYOUS...without you, but that simply for no other reason than that He loves you - illogically, irrationally, without any good

reason and despite a whole lot of good reasons to not love you, to flick you away like the vomit you are -- still loves you...and even astoundingly, shockingly, amazingly, graciously.... inconceivably...loves you *precisely because of your sin*. God meets you in your sin, and loves you most there, and bears the burden of the Hell you deserved just because He loves you.

Of course, people with that other kind of “faith” - hollow faith, a no-faith for a no-people - only good for ordering books and watching commercials and jumping up and down, don’t feel much of that...maybe a little, but not much....they couldn’t if American “Christianity” is in the state it’s in - a shambles, a fallen down, broken up hangover from last night’s fraternity party. The Church in America is not a Holy Flesh of the Christ. It’s a keger with a bunch of self-involved brahs giving each other high-fives.

So, let’s get back to purgatory. I’m not rambling. Not much.
And let’s get intimate...let’s get really real....but only so far.

Let’s tell a story. It’s a magic story in a magic kingdom, long ago and far away. Let’s say a time traveler found a way - a way back - a back door - into the past. Let’s say this time traveler went back and found the love of his life, say, I don’t know, in 1994. And lets say she was just in high school, and she could only see him as shadows on the wall, just voices, intimations. This is the one part of this tale that actually is not metaphorical. So deconstruct that. Anyway, she didn’t know his name, but only knew him as the one to come...someday... maybe. And she longed for him, craved him, wanted so badly for this fantasy to be made real - really real. But wherever she went and wherever she looked, he never showed up. And her longing and her misery drove her....none of your damned business. In any event, everything went fucking wrong and totally to Hell and back again. The point is that even though everything went to Hell and they couldn’t physically be together -- they could still speak in spirit (not actually a metaphor) -- or, more precisely, he was doing all of the talking, because it was a one-way channel back into the past. So the Magic Kingdom plunged into Hell, and the prince, in his anguish and bitterness, instead of the love he had channeled before, now spewed the most vile, bitter cursing at his beloved. She didn’t know why, and couldn’t stop it, because she was in the past. And, though he tried to stop it, he couldn’t forgive the hurt done to him, and he couldn’t tell her what was going on, because she was in the past.

The point is they hurt each other. Badly.

If these two people really loved each other, wouldn’t they want, even in death, to really know what they had done to each other? Because they weren’t physically together - ever. It’s not a metaphor for something usual or speakable. Everything else is a metaphor; this is quite literal.

Would they just say, “Beam me up, God, time to play golf!”

If, first greeted with the Love of the Eternal, the LORD should say, “Now come my son, and share the Joy of the Kingdom,” wouldn’t he or she *first* say, “No, I can’t yet -- I have to find something out.” *If* he really loved this person, he would have to know what he had done, he would have to experience it -- all of it, every tear, every loneliness, every misunderstanding and

despair. He couldn't - *wouldn't want to!* - simply rush on towards some "infinite plenitudinous goopy goopy gopy whatever". He would race towards the pain he had caused, because if he loved her, that would mean that he would want to enter into everything that he loved. Purgatory isn't Heaven's waiting room --- it's the necessary entering into the hurt that one has caused with their sinfulness, with the Hell they have allowed to be unleashed in the world through their sins.

And if someone really loved God, that would mean that they would have to love everyone loved by God, and thus, necessarily then, *want* - not be forced to, like God is some schoolmaster keeping you for detention - but *want*, not aside from that Plenitude, but as part of that Plenitude, to experience all the pain they had caused. But, unlike Jesus' descent to Hell, which was a real and impossible to imagine Hell, Purgatory, though painful, is simply that part of Heaven where you find out how really real and really horrible and really hurtful all the things you have done to those really real people who only seemed like shadows on the wall really were. If you merited Heaven through the faith of righteousness and the righteousness of faith, you would WANT to experience all the suffering you had caused -- not in despair in Hell, but met and touched by the Spirit of Grace in Christ. Even if God should say, "Hey, you're in Heaven, brah! Here's the sweetest fruit you've ever tasted, here's a celestial Game Boy, here's [whatever]" you would say NO! NO! NO! I have to first run to -- *race towards* -- what's true -- what the real truth of my life was --- and I *HAVE* to do that before I can enjoy any kind of Plenitude - whatever that metaphor might signify. I wouldn't take No for an answer if God said, "Hey, no problemo, brah. JC paid your debt!" Yes, he did, but I still have to know *the truth* - which I could never know in life because I was stuck in my skull-sized kingdom of *Meeeeeeeeeeeeee*. But now, freed from mortal iniquity, I would have a chance to stand in truth. And if I merited Heaven, even though the merit be Christ's, wouldn't I want to enter into the Spirit of Truth that was now my own spirit in Christ? Because, if the Life of the Spirit is Truth, how can I ever access it and endure in it and really live in that infinite journey without first knowing the truth of my own mortal life -- which isn't just my experience of it, but is everybody else's experience of my life -- every life I've touched for ill or good.

Purgatory. Really very simple. And, like much of Christian history, the subject of endless and meaningless debates, when people should have focused on being more richly in Christ so that they wouldn't have to enter into so much sinfulness once they finally did make it to Heaven.

And it makes more sense when we consider that Jesus said to the Father of his disciples and all Christians, "They are your gift to me." Heaven is not playing golf or simply spending time with family and friends. It is a total participation in the gifts that are important to Christ - All the spirits of the elect within the life of the Spirit. Heaven is rejoicing in the Light and Love of *all* those spirits, who enter into the depths of the life of the Spirit.

And if that is the case, which it is, how could one possibly endure in that eternal and communal blessedness without first experiencing, entering into, what one has done? If spiritual excellence - spiritual sight - is the necessary qualification for entering into such a blessed eternity, then how could one even wish to remain blind to the actions of one's own spirit?

We can see intimations of this clarity in Dante. Dante in his *Commedia* prophesied that Satan, when he had been cast out of the Sight of the Light, fell to earth, and, due to his enormous force, made a crater in the earth that carved out the pit of Hell. Simultaneously, that deep dank cave of iniquity piled high a mountain - Mount Purgatory.

Is this not but a poetic image of the spiritual reality?

Sin is Hell. Not that Hell is a punishment for sin; although, of course it is, but that Hell is simply the flip side of Sin. Hell and Sin are two sides of the same coin. In all our blind foolishness, we float through life thinking this most en-darkened way: We carry around our inner life, our spirit, through this passing temporal phase, like a coin that we can only see one side of - the Tails. We merrily race along, knocking everything and everyone over thinking that what we see of our sins, is all there is to them. But when you finally enter eternity, and pass out of this snap of the fingers of temporal reality, you shall then joyfully or woefully turn the coin around: and you shall see either Hell or Heaven - depending on whether you died in your sin (which you will discover to be Hell) or, rather, like wise ones, died in Christ (which you will discover to be Heaven).

But now, even if you turn the coin around and see Heaven, what would that Heaven be? Golf and Arnold Palmers with Arnold Palmer? That is the milquetoast, bourgeois, country club, Televangelist, blind, ignorant, un-searching folly and fallacy of unimaginably small, narrow-minded spirits -- so thoroughly enwrapped in the darkness of this present age: this passing temporal phase.

Should you turn that coin of your spirit around and see Grace (Heaven), rather than, woefully, Sunderance (an eternal separation from Grace), you would see the Christ of your salvation. So then, shall you, JC, and Arnold Palmer play golf and drink Arnold Palmers? Not quite. You will be invested, anointed, now fully and eternally, with the Spirit of the Christ, which shall bring you into the Eternal, Inner Life of the Trinity, the Triune G-d, the Only Name that is above all other names. And the absolute and total and ineradicable and, yes, existentially, technically, formally *necessary* Essence of that Name is the Spirit -- THE TOTAL AND INFINITE AND ETERNAL PREROGATIVE OF ABSOLUTE PLENITUDINOUS ABUNDANCE FOREVER. That is the infinite journey that awaits you.

And should you enter it, you shall necessarily know all truth. And, as Satan/Your Sin have carved out the crater of Hell, so too your sin has piled high an image of that Hell -- the Pain of your Sins. And as you step into that Eternal Gate, will you not, must you not, *first* pass through the Pains you have caused to others in your life? Would you want to pass them by? If you now were to enjoy forever the Spirit of All Truth and of All Reality, would you selfishly say, "Oh don't pain me with the truth of myself and the pain, and sin, I have caused in others. Let me sneak past all that and play golf with Arnold Palmer. I always wanted to meet him, and I love golf!" What kind of spirit invested with the Spirit of All Truth could possibly want that? It would be the most bizarre, irrational, frothing at the mouth inanity one could possibly summon up. Only after fully entering into every pain -- all the pain -- your sin has caused, could you *then* race on forever sharing in the Eternal Felicity of the All-Felicitous One. *You yourself* would not

have it any other way, if you were truly in the Spirit of Christ. You wouldn't even want to avoid it on earth with indulgences. Yes, yes, you go to the store and you pick one indulgence, two indulgence, three indulgence four -- Now, how lucky am I, I don't have to know the truth of myself! High Five! Score! As C.S. Lewis says, 'if pains there be {which there are}, Christians welcome these pains.'

Now, it may certainly be possible - because wise and aligned to the truth of G-d's Grace - that indulgences that strengthen us for that painful journey might prudently be acquired -- but only through the rigors of devotion. The pains one must pass through in eternity, then, may be softened, lightened, by that special Grace ardently sought in life.

And if one had, in the course of one's earthly life, offered reparation for one's sins through a wholly penitent spirit, all the pains that must be endured for sin may already have been experienced before death.

And consider this: What about the sins that you have committed that have caused, directly and indirectly, *other* people to end up in Hell. For when you sin, you stop God's grace in the world and contrive, directly or indirectly, to involve people in sin, the flip side of which is eternal Hell.

Listen to Jesus:

Whoever causes one of these little ones to sin [either through action *or* inaction, either directly or indirectly, either explicitly or implicitly], **it would be better for him to have a great millstone hung around his neck and to be drowned in the depths of the sea. Woe to the world because of things that cause sin! Such things must come, but woe to the one through whom they come!** If your hand or foot causes you to sin, cut it off and throw it away. It is better for you to enter into life maimed or crippled than with two hands or two feet to be thrown into eternal fire. And if your eye causes you to sin, tear it out and throw it away. It is better for you to enter into life with one eye than with two eyes to be thrown into fiery Gehenna.

Matthew 18:6-9

Listen to the mystic, Saint Faustina Kowalska:

In the evening, I just about got into bed, and I fell asleep immediately. Though I fell asleep quickly, I was awakened even more quickly. A little child came and woke me up. The child seemed about a year old, and I was surprised it could speak so well, as children of that age either do not speak or speak very indistinctly. The child was beautiful beyond words and resembled the Child Jesus, and he said to me, **Look at the sky.** And when I looked at the sky I saw the stars and the moon shining. Then the child asked me, **Do you see this moon and these stars?** When I said yes, he spoke these words to me,

These stars are the souls of faithful Christians, and the moon is the souls of religious. Do you see how great the difference is between the light of the moon and the light of the stars? Such is the difference in heaven between the soul of a religious and the soul of a faithful Christian.

And he went on to say that:

True greatness is in loving God and in humility

Then I saw a soul which was being separated from its body amid great torment. O Jesus, as I am about to write this, I tremble at the sight of the horrible things that bear witness against him....I saw the souls of little children and those of older ones, about nine years of age, emerging from some kind of muddy abyss. The souls were foul and disgusting, resembling the most terrible monsters and decaying corpses. But the corpses were living and gave loud testimony against the dying soul. And the soul I saw dying was a soul full of the world's applause and honors, the end of which are emptiness and sin. Finally a woman came out who was holding something like tears in her apron, and she witnesses very strongly against him.

O terrible hour, at which one is obliged to see all one's deeds in their nakedness and misery; not one of them is lost, they will all accompany us to God's judgment. I can find no words or comparisons to express such terrible things. And although it seems to me that his soul is not damned, nevertheless its torments are in no way different from the torments of hell; there is only this difference: that they will someday come to an end.

(Diary 424 - 426)

https://books.google.com/books?id=TmyxBgAAQBAJ&dq=st.+faustina+diary&source=gbs_navlinks_s

So whenever you sin, realize that you are acting on the basis of fear. You sin because you are afraid that, in not sinning, you will be deprived of life.

But realize, the very act of sinning is what *actually* deprives you of life.

And, even should you recover your life through repentance, faith and the good works that are a necessary consequence of true faith in Christ, you will still have to look face to face with the souls of the damned that ended up damned because of your actions or inactions. You won't just have to experience the lives of other people who experienced your life, who ended up saved. You'll have to behold the visage of the damned who lost salvation, in whole or in part, because of your stoppage of grace, caused by your sins. And, indeed, is not beholding the face of the

damned to suffer the pain of the damned? Though the pain will not be permanent, if you are saved, yet you shall have to be present to the pain you caused, either through action or inaction, you shall have to be confronted by the misery of the damned, *and their accusations that you should be damned too because you failed to save them because of your many sins*. Misery loves company, and hates all those capable of ascending from the pit of eternal ruin and woe.

Fear no one in your quest, your mission, your call as a Christian to convert the world and testify to Christ's Holy Name. Fear your own damnation should you shirk the call of Christ. Fear the terrible faces of the damned who shall pain you even if you should save your soul in the end.

Simply saying, "Jesus is my personal lord and savior, I'm born again!" and jumping up and down *does not make unreal* the enormous weight of your sins. True salvation through faith in Christ and perseverance in good works will cancel out the penalty of your sins: eternal punishment in an eternal and inescapable Hell. But it does not erase those sins from the moral creation, the spiritual cosmos of the spiritual reality of which the Spirit, the Triune Unity, is the Absolute King. You shall still have to face them, and account for them, even though, if you have true and active faith, you shall be acquitted through an imputation to you of Christ's innocence.

LISTEN TO JESUS!

I tell you, on the day of judgment people will render an account for every careless word they speak. By your words you will be acquitted, and by your words you will be condemned.

Matthew 12:36-37

If you speak the Name of Christ and live a life in that Name, you will be acquitted by the Great Judge. *But*, all around you will be the living corpses of the miserable damned *correctly and accurately* listing every sin on your account - every thing that you did or did not do that caused those souls to be in Hell.

The spiritual reality is an eternal plenum in which nothing is lost. You're too wrapped up in this material world with your little neural goo-brain. You forget so many things. You forget what you had for dinner last night, and forget whole incidents of your life.

God forgets nothing. It is in His very nature to remember all things.

And when you enter into eternity, you shall be faced with this eternal plenum of absolute and enduring truth: you shall have to confront *all* of it, face to face, eye to eye.

Then, you shall want to have the assistance of a mighty Advocate, the Spirit, who shall plead your case to the Great Judge, the Son, Jesus Christ, so that you may enter into the Father's Kingdom.

So, we can imagine the outrageous purgatory that awaits our Titans of this Present Age. Imagine a Lloyd Blankfein, Jamie Dimon, or Dick Fuld, or any of the other Wall Street Bank mobsters who set the world ablaze with their greed.

How many people committed suicide because of them? How many people became addicted to drugs because of them? How many with ruined lives sinned and sinned and sinned, and stopped the grace of God from breaking into the world to heal and stop sin, and thus save souls?

What a mighty throng of living corpses shall emerge from the muddy muck of eternal misery to accuse such men -- who shall, in all likelihood, be found quite guilty by the Great Judge and be dragged down into the bottomless muck of filth and interminable lament. What an invincible legion of demons shall bind such souls -- such ruined men -- to an eternal torment from which there is absolutely no escape -- not even the thought, or the breath, of an escape.

So, hopefully, we see that God is not your brah. HE IS ADONAI!!! You're not hanging with JC 'n the crew -- you stand before THE THRONE OF ALL ETERNAL AND INFINITE RIGHTEOUSNESS, FELICITY, POWER AND PLENITUDE.

Act accordingly.

Otherwise, your idea of God is far more meager than Brahman.

And, just to be clear brahs, Jesus Christ is not JC, your brah at the keger.

HE is Melech Yehoshua the Mashiach, in the Full Favor of His Father, Adonai, Well-Beloved of the Shekinah, the Eternal and Infinite Spirit of the ONE AND ONLY HOLY NAME, who, though rich in all things, even, yes, unto the SPIRIT OF TOTAL PLENITUDE, condescends to take on mortal flesh, subject himself to your sinfulness, experience the Hell you deserved, all so that you, though totally wretched and dead in your sins, might still, for no reason other than His, (to us irrational and illogical), infinitely abundant and generous love, be His brother, an adopted son or daughter of G-d, so that we may be within the Prayer of the Mashiach:

I pray not only for them [his disciples on earth in his time], but also for those who will believe in me through their word, so that they may all be one, as you, Father, are in me and I in you, that they also may be in us, that the world may believe that you sent me. And I have given them the glory you gave me, so that they may be one, as we are one, I in them and you in me, that they may be in us, that the world may believe that you sent

me. And I have given them the glory you gave me, so that they may be one, as we are one, I in them and you in me, that they may be brought to perfection [the fullness of All-Righteousness in the Infinity of Eternal Felicitous Plenitude] as one [the fullness of Creation that exists present to the New Jerusalem of G-d's new creation], that the world may know that you sent me, and that you loved them even as you loved me. Father, they are your gift to me. I wish that where I am they also may be with me, that they may see my glory [as the RISEN CHRIST] that you gave me, because you loved me before the foundation of the world [for Jesus is the pre-existent Logos that is the Wisdom of G-d, the one who speaks, and can speak because He is the one who (c.f. Proto-Indo-European) who collects or gathers. The Logos is the expression of the ONE that permits the world beyond the ONE to be "gathered up, collected" up into the Bosom of the ONE]. Righteous Father, the world also does not know you, but I know you, and they know that you sent me. I made known to them your name and I will make it known, that the love with which you loved me may be in them and I in them.

John 17:20-26
the means by which
John 3:16
is possible.

Now, Austin 3:16 is another matter.

<https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=tjWPoQWdmjg>

I know this is essentially operatic parody for the proletariat, but still, you know, I have to say....

I don't mean to be mean, I don't like being cruel to be kind, but, you know....

America, you're ridiculous!!!

This isn't my style, but it's true:

<https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=weEWI52wevI>

Or, at least it's 75% true and 25% false.

The key to your destiny is this simple question:

Will you fight in this life to make the 25% defeat the 75%?

Or, rather, will you blindly stumble into eternity, with the prospect that the 75% will, rather likely, devour you -- consume you in an eternal misery of wailing and grinding of teeth?

Look, brahs: Let's make something perfectly clear, here, bro, buddy, pal, tiger:

You can worship ADONAI, the LORD of All Creation OR you can worship Ayn Rand-style Corporate Capitalism.

You CANNOT do both.

You cannot serve God and Mammon (Corporate Capitalism).

And your eternal punishment will be the subject of praise for the angels and elect in the Sight of the Light of Adonai.

Blessed be the Name!!!

(Oh, and my Protestant brahs -- the swipe at the Catholic Church isn't appreciated. The Church of Oprah and Osteen will devour us if we don't stand together. We will hang together, or surely, we shall hang separately. Plus, there's a certain narrow-mindedness about the means by which an Eternal and Infinite Spirit, in the richness of his mysterious mercy *might* (just might, just a hope) save in ways that we, mere mortals, cannot imagine.)

The Cure
Rev. Tim Keller
The Gospel and Idolatry
Acts 19:23-41

<https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=mn1U1omO6sg>

Stevie Wonder
As

<https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=GYQfWJNWe3I>

If you do not accept the grace - if you reject it totally - the blessing that the Light - G-d, the LORD - is trying to give you, you will implode in your little created spirit into a vortex of eternal misery, woe, and torture. How could it not? Would thinking anything else not be a falsification of the nature of G-d, so often and clearly presented in the Scriptures and propounded and expounded in every age? Would not a wishing away of this obvious, this self-evident,

spiritual fact of the spiritual reality be nothing more than a contemptible, self-blinding form of magical thinking?

Would not thinking otherwise than as Scripture and Tradition loudly proclaim be nothing more, and outrageously (perhaps unforgivably) nothing less, than to replace the Secret of the Christ with the Secret of Self-Help [on sale on Amazon: Ask. Believe. Receive. -- Hell. Forever. From Satan Film Enterprises, it's that most foul abomination of nonsense: *The Secret TV!* - <https://www.theseecret.tv/>).

For clarity, the Secret of the Christ is Jesus' Resurrection, faith in which is indeed the secret to eternal life.

Blindly believing in your own magical and authoritative power over everything is no secret. It is the sin of Satan. And those who follow that way completely will merrily stumble over into eternal damnation - from which there will be no escape, and no secret way to escape either.

Shall you be bound for the blessing, or forever stamped, inextricably, with the curse of your sin that you failed to cleanse yourself of in life?

If you only "know" that you love God, and don't realize that He loves you, far more than you can imagine, you will never know God, nor *be able* to love Him.

Judgment Day

We can also develop a better sense for the wonder that awaits on the Day of Judgment - at that final, General Judgment: the Judgment of the Nations.

The terrible awe that awaits the righteous elect, and the awful terror in store for the wicked damned.

Consider the tableau that awaits (Matthew 25:31-46):

“When the Son of Man comes in his glory, and all the angels with him, he will sit upon his glorious throne, and all the nations will be assembled before him. And he will separate them one from another, as a shepherd separates the sheep from the goats.

He will place the sheep on his right and the goats on his left. Then the king will say to those on his right, ‘Come, you who are blessed by my Father. Inherit the kingdom prepared for you from the foundation of the world.

For I was hungry and you gave me food, I was thirsty and you gave me drink, a stranger and you welcomed me, naked and you clothed me, ill and you cared for me, in prison and you visited me.’

Then the righteous will answer him and say, ‘Lord, when did we see you hungry and feed you, or thirsty and give you drink? When did we see you a stranger and welcome you, or naked and clothe you? When did we see you ill or in prison, and visit you?’

And the king will say to them in reply, ‘Amen, I say to you, whatever you did for one of these least brothers of mine, you did for me.’ Then he will say to those on his left, ‘Depart from me, you accursed, into the eternal fire prepared for the devil and his angels. For I was hungry and you gave me no food, I was thirsty and you gave me no drink, a stranger and you gave me no welcome, naked and you gave me no clothing, ill and in prison, and you did not care for me.’

Then they will answer and say, ‘Lord, when did we see you hungry or thirsty or a stranger or naked or ill or in prison, and not minister to your needs?’

He will answer them, ‘Amen, I say to you, what you did not do for one of these least ones, you did not do for me.’

And these will go off to eternal punishment, but the righteous to eternal life.”

Do you have some sleepy idea of a waxy picture in a museum, Jesus’ hand held up for the good guys, thumbs down for the bad guys?

WAKE UP YOUR IMAGINATION!

See the stunning spectacle, of every human being who has ever lived and ever will live - indeed, we can figure every sentience that has ever existed or will ever exist in the Cosmos, summoned before the throne of the GREAT JUDGE, the Cosmic King, the Christ.

They are assembled as nations -- not geographically, but temporally. The Romans of one age on one side; the Italians of another age on another side. The Nazis on the left; the Empire of Charlemagne on the right. The Assyrians and Babylonians on the left, the Christian Near East of the first centuries after Christ on the right.

Of course, with the exceptions transposed to the proper side.

For, He shall separate all people, one from another, gathering the sheep who follow the Shepherd's voice, and casting off the goats, for goats are independent and self-preferential, going off and doing whatever they please, without listening to, and depending on, the Divine Voice.

All people will stand before the Throne of the Great Judge, Christ Jesus, as they stood in life, in their neighborhoods and communities, in their nations.

And they will be separated into the elect on the right and the damned on the left. This great throng of human communities, which in this life were mixed together, will, at last, be sifted, with the wheat being gathered up into the great barn of eternal rest and plenitude, and the chaff, the worthless souls only enamored of themselves, forever burned in the infernal miseries of the outer darkness.

For this will be a general *and* an individual judgment.

A judgment on all societies and all human history *and* a judgment on each person individually.

Each nation will have to answer for how it reacted to Christ's Coming into history,²¹ as each individual will have to account for whether he tended to the physical and emotional needs of Christians, and of all people.

Hear the clamor. See how each person is known to every other person, how all see clearly now, as they are clearly seen. Hear the great accusations rising up from the damned, their foul spirits now reunited with their eternally decaying bodies. Yet that resurrection of the damned is no cause for joy -- the reunion with their bodies for them is nothing to celebrate. It is simply, and awfully, the perfection of their ruination, to have their ruined souls forever trapped in the ruined, decaying corpse in which they died - to live forever as living corpses, forever decaying, forever dying, the worm writhing within their unholy flesh, the fire roasting their dead bones, their stale blood not giving life, but pervading their whole flesh and spirit with the noxiousness of the sins in which they died.

Hear that whole miserable damned mass recounting - *precisely and exactly and correctly* - each sin of the elect that helped those damned souls end up in that woeful state: He fornicated with me, and I remained on that path! He cut me off in traffic, and that unleashed a chain of events that left me here! She cheated on me, and that made me kill myself! She fired me, and that made me lose faith! He told me there was no God ten years before he converted! She bragged about her sex partners five years before she repented and got married! My mother neglected me, while she persevered in her faith, but did little to nothing to instill faith in me!

Imagine the state of the elect, as the Advocate, the Spirit, makes their case, acknowledging their sins, but demonstrating from their faith that they are in the Mercy of Christ, and thus saved from the Wrath, proving that the sum of their acts proves that they persevered in righteousness such that their faith was real, and not vain.

²¹ Both implicitly, in Israel before the First Coming, and explicitly, in the form of the Church.

Feel the lump in each of the elect's throats as the Advocate concludes its arguments, the accusing souls of the damned surrounded by the infernal demons screaming, "NO! NO! NO! They belong with us!" Each of the damned looking with hate in your face, piercing you with the sinfulness of your mortal life.

Feel the calm and joy and exaltation as the Just Judge, the Christ, renders his verdict in favor of the elect, and the certainty of faith is rewarded with the eternity of glory.

This is no watercolor scene....some children's story about being nice to others...no, no...this is the whole destiny of the Cosmos finally being decided in the hands and by the Word of the Word through whom the Father created that Cosmos in the first place.

It is reality finally being *revealed* for what it is. The truth of all things, of the whole Cosmos and each individual within it, being at last unveiled.

A Crash Course in Perseverance

https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Apostasy_in_Christianity

Apostasy in [Christianity](#) is the rejection of Christianity by someone who formerly was a [Christian](#). The term [apostasy](#) comes from the Greek word *apostasia* ("[ἀποστασία](#)") meaning defection, departure, revolt or rebellion. It has been described as "a willful falling away from, or rebellion against, Christianity. Apostasy is the rejection of Christ by one who has been a Christian...."^[2] "Apostasy is a theological category describing those who have voluntarily and consciously abandoned their faith in the God of the covenant, who manifests himself most completely in [Jesus Christ](#)."^[3] "Apostasy is the antonym of conversion; it is deconversion."^[1]

According to B. J. Oropeza, the warning passages in the [New Testament](#) describe at least three dangers which could lead a Christian to commit apostasy:^[4]

Temptations: Christians were tempted to engage in various vices that were a part of their lives before they became Christians (idolatry, sexual immorality, covetousness, etc.).

Deceptions: Christians encountered various [heresies](#) and false teachings spread by false teachers and prophets that threatened to seduce them away from their pure devotion to Christ.

Persecutions: [Christians were persecuted](#) by the governing powers of the day for their allegiance to Christ. Many Christians were threatened with certain [death](#) if they would not deny Christ.

Persecution is highlighted in the [Epistle to the Hebrews](#) and the [First Epistle of Peter](#). The issue of false teachers/teachings is found in the [Johannine](#) and [Pauline epistles](#), in the [Second Epistle of Peter](#) and the

[Epistle of Jude](#). A number of sections in the writings of Paul and James focus on [vices](#) and [virtues](#). "These and other early texts helped to shape the trajectory of Christian response to the phenomenon of defection in the post-apostolic era. The Christians were to persevere through various types of opposition, standing firm against temptation, false doctrine, hardships and persecution."[\[5\]](#)

Judas

It does not matter why Judas betrayed Jesus. That is why the Gospels simply don't discuss the reason. It is irrelevant. What possible reason could there be to betray someone? To betray your friend, your Master, the one you called Messiah and King?

It is not to say, "Oh, if I could understand the reason: was it money, was it that Judas wanted to provoke Jesus to use his power, etc. etc.?"

All irrelevant.

And not only because there is no good reason to betray your friend and benefactor, your lord.

But because, consider two things:

First, Judas commits suicide after he betrays Jesus. Judas regrets his betrayal (the same word for metanoia or repentance is used for Judas' "regret"). But who then does he *TURN* towards?

Does he, like Peter, though denying Jesus, *turn* back to Jesus, for forgiveness? No. Judas turns only to himself. For Judas, betrayal is just death, failure is just shame.

He might have listened to Jesus along with the other apostles. But he never *heard* a damn thing. And I use the term "damn" advisedly, technically.

He never accessed Jesus' teaching that things can be ironic, turned back on themselves, what I've been describing as "three-dimensional" or "multi-dimensional".

That is -- failure can be forgiven and turned into grace, and death can turn into life -- wounds and sins and brokenness can be healed.

Judas was rather blank, wasn't he? Rather one-dimensional in his spirit. Hmmm.

Second, it was Satan's desire, in his foolish two-dimensional thinking, to stop God's action by simply killing the Messiah, not seeing that that death was precisely the means by which Satan would be consigned to eternal death. One-dimensional fool. But a smart one-dimensional fool, if you only think in mortal one-dimensionality.

So, isn't it plain? Like the Calvinists say, it was not Judas' destiny to be in Christ. Judas chose it, but that choice - in his absolute freedom in his spirit - was *who he really was*. That is why Jesus calls him "the son of destruction". Jesus doesn't say, "Judas made a mistake" or "Judas messed up". Jesus says that Judas *really is* a blank spirit - that, like Satan, who, in his blankness turned away from the Spirit, Judas, though immanentized in this material world, was, from all eternity, a son of destruction -- a human being who, like the rebel angels, *never* had it in him to be turned towards God.

And it is clear that Judas is in Hell. For Jesus said that it would be better for that man (Judas) if he had never been born. If one were merely annihilated, it would only be accurate to say, "It is all the same as if he had never been born." But that is not what Jesus says. It would be *better* if he had not been born -- better, impliedly, because he will be asphyxiated forever in the bottomless pit of Abaddon (Hell).

We have ruled out annihilation, by the plain text. So it's Heaven or Hell. And if it were Heaven, even if Judas should endure a trillion trillion trillion years of Hell - if it were a finite Hell, then once brought into the Infinite Embrace of the Father, it would indeed be good that he were born. But Jesus does not say that. Does Jesus mean Judas is reincarnated, so that it would be better if he had not been born because he has to live so many lives? That's Buddhism. Besides, if, in the end, Judas returned to the bosom of the Father, living a great many lives would be worth it. So, with annihilation ruled out, and Heaven ruled out, by process of elimination, we see the clear truth: Judas is in Hell, and thus, necessarily then, you can go there too.

The contrast with the Good Thief is striking. He was really a Zealot revolutionary crucified for taking part in a violent rebellion against the Romans. But unlike the other Zealot crucified on the other side of Jesus, this man said, "Jesus, remember me when you come into your kingdom" (Luke 23:42). What is that all about? Jesus, a naked, dying, ruined, bloodied, humiliated, mocked un-man wasn't, apparently, coming into any kingdom. And this zealot, we would figure, had no special knowledge of Jesus' coming Resurrection or of his mission, ministry, or call. What then? It was that -- even when all *appearances* would seem otherwise, this one man could *see* into who Jesus really was. Judas spent a great deal of time with Jesus, and never *saw* him, never saw him with spiritual sight, and thus was not in the Spirit. "The Good Thief", though not knowing Jesus in everyday life, could still see what was really going on, which confirmed that he was in the Spirit. Judas was damned, the Good Thief elect. Thus, Jesus verifies this election, "Amen, I say to you, today you will be with me in Paradise."

"A religion of the self burgeons," Bloom claims, "under many names, and seeks to know its own inwardness, in isolation. . . . But this freedom is a very expensive torso, because of what it is obliged to leave out: society, temporality, the other. What remains, for it, is solitude and the abyss."

Or, we may rightly, observe, the blankness of Abaddon, the Lineland of Satan's endless death - his parodical dominion of HaShem's Singular Eternity.

God does not need you. He creates simply out of exuberant, child-like love that is rooted in, and springs from, His eternal nature as a Plenitude of Beatitude.

Listen to Saint Faustina's private revelation of Jesus' words (85):

Write down at once what you hear: I am the Lord in My essence and am immune to orders or needs. If I call creatures into being - that is the abyss of My mercy.

God does not create any spirit because he needs cheerleaders, or a date, or an audience, or a cheering section, or fans. He doesn't create anything because he is lonely.

He creates simply for the good of those spirits who are created -- that is why God's creation of spirit ex nihilo - out of nothing - is "the abyss of [His] mercy". God's creative act is totally generous.

And so, when you sin, you are spitting on, pissing on, puking on -- ejaculating on -- that generosity.

You are throwing a precious and totally free gift back in the face of the One who *didn't need you at all, and, actually, who has suffered innumerable sufferings because of your sinfulness!*

The Anti-Christ

The Anti-Christ will be the one who, though not the Mashiach²² to Come, shall grasp for himself, in the glory of political power, that Spirit of the Mashiach for himself, and for himself alone (thus perverting the sanctity of the Anointing), in pursuit of a worldly World Empire, rather than humbly acknowledging the Supremacy and Glory of the Once and Future King.

The False Prophet will be the one who acts as the spokesman for the Anti-Christ. He will justify to the world why the Anti-Christ should be granted power and authority in this world, even though he does not satisfy the criteria for being granted that power.

Christ Jesus, in his human life before the Crucifixion, did not ask for power in this world, because His Kingdom was not of this world, so such criticism and blame do not attach to Him, as will attach to the Anti-Christ and the False Prophet. Jesus' role as Mashiach then was as a Merciful Savior in the First Coming, the secret, hidden coming.

And, in His Second Coming, He will not ask anyone for the Power in heaven and earth that has already been granted to Him by the Father. Christ in His Glory shall not require any election, campaigning, promotion, ad campaign, publicity agent, military force (other than His Holy Angels), legal maneuvering, or power politics. There will be no Movement, no Trump rallies, no Hitler rallies, no Youth Brigades, no marches, no political buttons or party hats. There will be no violence by apparatchiks and partisans to pave the way for the true Messiah's coming into power. Christ coming into His Father's Glory, by taking possession of the Kingdom, will be like the dawn breaking on a new day: irresistible, total, inevitable, unstoppable.

Listen to Jesus:

If anyone says to you then, "Look, here is the Messiah!" or, "There he is!" do not believe it. False messiahs and false prophets will arise, and they will perform signs and wonders so great as to deceive, if that were possible, even the elect. Behold, I have told it to you beforehand. So if they say to you, "He is in the desert, do not go out there; if they say, "He is in the inner rooms," do not believe it. For just as lightening comes from the east and is seen as far as the west, so will the coming of the Son of Man be. Wherever the corpse is, there the vultures will gather.

(Matthew 24:23-28)

For clarity, that last line about corpses and vultures simply means this: Just like lightening is obvious to everyone (no one argues about whether they just saw lightening), so too the Second Coming will be as obvious as a corpse is to a vulture. Vultures, being scavengers, *love* corpses, and they have a keen eye for them: they're obvious and immediately self-evident to a vulture.

²² Mashiach means messiah.

The False Prophet will be the Goebbels of the Anti-Christ's administration, someone brilliant and charismatic, but evil and a liar, who will concoct some bullshit about why "yeah, yeah, yeah all that stuff about how obvious it would be, but, you know, *first* you have to give him political power in order for him to be given Messianic power." No. Do not pass go. Do not collect 200 dollars. Go straight to Hell.

You have to remember though, these guys will be good -- at least good at what they do, which is power politics and propaganda. They probably won't fumble about like George W. Bush or Donald Trump. They might not even sound scary or militant, like the Nazis or Soviets. *You will like them.* They will seem like you. You'll like them *so* much, that you'll be happy, willing, eager to hand power over to them. It will seem like they can solve all your problems. So, it won't, (probably), be a matter of snatching power, but of being overwhelmingly, stunningly popular and then using trickery and manipulation to overcome anyone who tries to stand in their way. The people who follow them will *seem* like good, nice people, just trying to bring peace to the world through this political movement.

The key is when such a hyper-likable person pursues political power. The moment someone comes who *seems* like he is the Messiah, but it is not *totally obvious to every single person*, and then that someone pursues political power -- then you have a problem.

Also, remember this, in the coming struggle, the Great War, the children of light will be locked in a deadly and final struggle with the children of darkness and their Satanic Empire of Man. The Anti-Christ will come and say, "Hey, everybody! We can all get along! I have a great solution! And then everyone will be happy, prosperous and free, and we'll all be friends! All we have to do is create a new religion that *everybody* can get on board with!"

Now, I believe that we have to forge a Whole Church out of the broken shards of the Orthodox, Protestant, and Catholic Churches, and root that Gentile Church in a Christian Zion. But that is not syncretism -- it is **NOT** saying, "Hey, let's make up some bullshit that every last person - child of light and child of darkness - can get on board with."

In fact, it is exactly the opposite -- I am saying there is TRUTH and there are lies. The Truth is that the Gospel is the fulfillment of the Torah, and Jesus Christ (Mashiach Yehoshua) is the Once and Future King. The Millennial Kingdom will precede the Final Coming and Judgment. The Millennial Kingdom, in all likelihood, will involve some kind of technological singularity. At that time, when spirit can converse with spirit, through material means, the Spirit of Christ will be evident, and that technological and spiritual revolution will lead to an Age of Peace, as humanity, enlightened by the Spirit of Christ, races across the material universe.

But before the Age of Peace in the Millennial Kingdom, the Great War between the children of light and the children of darkness will rage like a new Cold War -- only this one will be hot with atomic horrors -- it will be fought on every level - cultural, religious, literary, philosophical. And this great struggle will be a sifting, a sifting between those who love the

light, which is freedom and peace in God, and those who cling to the darkness, nihilism, self-righteousness, fury, cruel violence, and tyranny that is political, cultural, and religious suicide.

The Great War that precedes the Millennial Kingdom will be so fierce and horrible, with such naked and Satanic cruelty, senseless violence and nuclear terrorism, that all the peoples of the world will groan from the depths of their total misery, and desperately want it all to *just end!*

Then some charismatic genius will arise and step onto the world scene, after the Great War has left (who knows how many) major cities in nuclear ruins.

(Ultimately) he will say, "Hey Everybody! No problemo! All we have to do is agree to a religion and a world state that will satisfy what everybody wants and what everybody believes."

He will be a Great Peacemaker. He will be stunningly brilliant, with all the right degrees - from Harvard, Yale, Oxford, Cambridge, you know the drill. He will be *gorgeous* - Brad Pitt, George Clooney, get wet and rub myself gorgeous. He will say *all* the right things -- he'll have the confidence of Donald Trump and he'll make Barack Obama look like he had a stutter. And he'll be *kind* - so kind, so compassionate, everyone will melt at how wonderful he is with people.

Of course, in private he'll be quite different. But there won't be any video tape of him being the way he really is. No pee tapes floating around. No audio bugs with his recorded private conversations, like with Nixon. No TMZ video of him telling the cops who his father is. He won't be that grandiose or stupid. He will be calculating. Careful. Judicious. Perceptive. Intelligent. Just like his Father.

His real Father. Satan.

Now, remember, he could be any race or ethnicity or religion. Not by revelation, but just by a thought, he might be from some ethnicity or religion that everybody is cool with. Say, for instance, a Polynesian Zoroastrian, so that none of the major blocs of contenders has a beef with him. But, strictly speaking, he could be anything.

In the course of his career, he will be a brilliant and determined fighter for peace, justice, and an end to the mad atomic violence. He will make many impassioned speeches, do many daring things, and seem entirely well-intentioned. He'll be like Bono (not actually be Bono, who is awesome, but only *seem* like Bono).

He'll rise to prominence -- some kind of prominence, not necessarily political office, although that's a possibility, but he'll have some kind of standing in the world -- money, prestige, heritage - something.

There will be (one, many?) desperate peace conferences trying to bring an end to the horrors. The crux of the matter will be how to get a control of nuclear terrorism. The solution: a world authority to police nuclear terrorism, one with the teeth -- the military power and legal jurisdiction -- to root out the horrible plague from the earth.

Bono, or, should I say, Anti-Bono, will seem like the natural and obvious choice to lead this authority. And despite the fact that I'm writing this to explicitly warn you, the world will be

in such dire need and Anti-Bono will seem so genuine and awesome, people will just go with it. Because *everybody* will accept him, and he'll generate the good will of all sides.

Then things will start going sideways. Maybe more gradually. Maybe more quickly, I don't know. At first, everything will seem awesome. Major cities will stop going kaboom. Millions of people will stop being incinerated every now and again. A sigh of peace and relief will come upon the world. The Great Church, the Whole Church, and the Jews will come to peace with everyone aligned against them. Talk of brotherhood, prosperity, and understanding will ring from every window.

The Age of Peace has come!

No.

It hasn't.

There will be peace....and calm...sighs of relief...and security....people will go to work, school, play in parks, read, listen to music, make love, like in the old days. It will be even better than the old days, with Anti-Bono and the world authority leading the way in augmenting the scientific, technological, economic, productive, literary, academic, and educational institutions, culture, and life of the whole world. For a while, it will be a blessing to be alive.

Until it isn't.

Anti-Bono, at first, will *seem* very humble. There won't be dipshit Saddam Hussein, Mao Tse-tung, or Kim Jong-un statues and building-sized posters of himself everywhere. He won't claim that he can hit a hole in one on the moon, or that he doesn't have to poop. He won't be that stupid or obvious. He'll laugh at such pomposity. He'll have as much use for overt political theater, grandiosity, missile parades and other such nonsense as Justin Trudeau. He'll seem stolid and sensible and grounded like Angela Merkel. He'll seem incredibly religious and pious like Tony Blair. He'll be the Michael Jordan and LeBron James of Cool, the Augustus Caesar and Napoleon of political calculation, and have the (apparent) saintliness of Mother Teresa.

He'll live a quiet, prosperous, productive life with a happy marriage and good family. He'll be a perfect Mormon in the cleanliness and sanctity of his private life. Or at least, it will seem that way.

(I don't know whether pride and will to power will be his only actualized sins, or whether he'll have a double life of secret lusts and concealed murders. Who knows? And who cares? Satan never committed any of the fleshly sins -- because spirits don't have sex or drink -- but the core of all sin is not lack of self-control. It is the pride of self-preference. It is the self-preference that prevents you from even trying not to sin, which would, if you exercised your moral muscles, give you more than enough strength to resist all sins, including the fleshly sins.)

At first, Anti-Bono will be a competent, diligent, productive administrator, simply and ably rebuilding the world according to liberal, democratic, constitutional, sensible, technocratic creeds. Religion will figure little in his agenda.

Then something will change, shift, develop.

I don't know what. The Book of Revelation is notoriously cryptic, and it is necessarily in code, because the contents of the Bible are an open secret, a public revelation, so that means that it is available to Satan and his demons for digestion. That means that the truth has to be so veiled that not even the Seraphic and monumental (although not blessed) intelligence of Satan can determine the ins and outs of God's battle plan.

It is not important, (at least for me in this work), to sketch every single play-by-play and blow-by-blow.

I am simply offering what little insight I think that I do, in fact, have on the matter, in the hope that it might be useful when the time comes.

And it is not important to the individual Christian's salvation to know God's battle plan. You're a soldier in the army, and all that you have to do to attain salvation is fight in faith, righteousness, and perseverance in the Name of Christ.

To demand anything more, or for me to spin yarns based on anything more than the bare and minimal insight that I do have, would be nothing more than to write fiction.

What will change? Will it be natural disasters? Supernatural events, like the oft-discussed rapture? Will it be Nazi-style Burn-the-Reichstag conspiracies, with Jews and Christians tarred as the perpetrators?

I don't know.

But something will cause Anti-Bono to, either more swiftly or more gradually, turn his attention to religious matters.

Anti-Bono will make quite clear that he can't make the world great again on his own. He requires more extraordinary powers and more faith from his flock, the people of the world. In his public speeches and the policies and rhetoric coming from his world authority, (however it is constituted), the agenda will become clear: everything is a *whole* - policy must be holistic -- there can be no separation of the political from the military from the economic from the social from the cultural....and from the religious.

For, Anti-Bono will intone as the disasters/supernatural events/conspiracies bubble, froth, and rage, wasn't the Great War caused by religious *differences*? Was it not the intolerances, the parochialisms, the orthodoxies -- the sectarian *foolishness* of earlier decades that brought the earth to the brink of destruction?

And thus, won't the *only* thing that will save the world -- bring peace and order to humanity, and inaugurate the Age of Peace -- be a world religion and culture of true and lasting Peace, that all God's children can accept? Not only accept, but embrace together as brothers? Is not universal brotherhood, good will towards men, the *linchpin* of peace on earth?

Was it not the disparateness of the world order in the 20th and 21st centuries that caused the chaos of those eras? Does not true and lasting peace require a holistic vision, that does not permit sectarian hatreds -- and thus sectarian violence and wars -- from breaking out and threatening humanity with nuclear destruction?

Thus *naturally* -- *necessarily* -- *inevitably*....*obviously*.....Anti-Bono will turn himself increasingly to cultural, educational, and religious matters.

Only by doing so, he will often and eloquently and seemingly innocuously say, can the world find perpetual peace.

At first it will all be rather harmless (perhaps) - a world university here, a world youth program there. But things will increasingly take on a religious dimension. Perhaps Eckhart Tolle, or his spiritual successors, will be trotted out to tell the world, in increasingly didactic and strident terms, that all world religions lead to God equally, and it is really hatred to say otherwise.

The Gospel according to Oprah
The Gospel according to Anti-Bono

The Gospel according to the Anti-Christ

<https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=A4JhfJiFMwA>

(As far as the dirt farmer in India with a good heart -- if you haven't had the Gospel truly preached to you, you're not responsible. You're only responsible for being in Christ if you have had the Gospel preached to you, *such that believing in Christ is a real possibility in your life*. Who knows whether the Gospel has truly been preached to you? God knows. You, little one, don't get to judge. Work out your own salvation and preach the Gospel to every corner, every crevice of the earth. And then the end will come. And there are indeed countless ways of being in the world -- but all of them must, in some fundamental way be in Christ. And for those who have had the Gospel preached to them, they must profess Christ to be saved.)

(That being said, if you yourself can even ask yourself, "Has the Gospel genuinely been preached to me?" then, to a virtual certainty, the Gospel **has** indeed been preached to you. Turn to Christ and be saved, or scorn Christ and burn in Hell forever.)

In the beginning, it will be all hugs and smiles and rainbows: “Love one another”, “Practice the right way”, “Have the right mindset”, “Have love in your heart”, “Be the best you that you can be”, “Positive vibes lead to positive times”, “Attitude of Gratitude”, “Live. Laugh. Love.” “Eat. Pray. Love.” “First you learn. Then you get Luvs.”, “Set your vibrators to love”, “Wheaties. Breakfast of Champions.” “Apple. Think Different.” “Don’t be evil.” “Believe you can fly.” “We’re building a better tomorrow.” “We are America’s Energy Future.” “Today is the first day of the rest of your life.” “Believe in yourself.” “The power is within.” “Be fearless.”²³ “Conquer evil with love,” “You have to look through the rain to see the rainbow.”, “Sing like no one is listening. Love like you’ve never been hurt. Dance like nobody is watching.”, “Yesterday is history, tomorrow is a mystery, and today is a gift. That’s why we call it the present.”, “Love is a sensation caused by temptation. A guy sticks his location in a girl’s destination, to increase the population of the next generation. Do you get my explanation, or do you need a demonstration?”, “Keep calm and carry on.”, “Shoot for the moon. Even if you miss, you’ll land among the stars.”, “You have to kiss a lot of frogs before you find your prince.”, “Don’t stop thinkin’ about tomorrow”, “Unleash the giant within”, “Hour of Power”, “Change”, “Hope”, “Change We Can Believe In”, “Hope We Can Change”, “Change We Can Hope For”, “Forward together”, “Fast forward together”, “Rewind together”, “Return the video to the rental store and ask for your money back together”, “Believe in America”, “Believe in yourself.”, “Believe in a Higher Power.”, “It is in your moments of decision that your destiny is shaped.”, “I want my world to be fun. No parents, no rules, no nothing. Like, no one can stop me. No one can stop me.” “We can change our lives. We can do, have, and be exactly what we wish.”, “I’m looking forward to influencing others in a positive way. My message is you can do anything if you just put your mind to it.”, “If you do what you’ve always done, you’ll get what you’ve always gotten.”, “A girl has to have a beautiful smile, beautiful eyes and she should have a good sense of humor. She should be honest, loving, and trustworthy”, “My definition of success is to live your life in a way that causes you to feel a ton of pleasure and very little pain [The Imitation of Christ?] - and because of your lifestyle, have the people around you feel a lot more pleasure than they do pain” [Unless they’re into that.], “I’ve got my eye on a few things to spend my money on. I’ve got my own bank card but I am really good with money. I don’t spend too much at all.”, “Realize deeply that the present moment is all you ever have [Except for that eternity in Hell or Heaven].”, “We’re trying to set up a movie for me in the near future. It’s going to be similar to the story of how I got discovered. Kinda like my own version of 8 mile.”, “What a liberation to realize that the “voice in my head” is not who I am. Who am I then? The one who sees that.”, “Life is the dancer and you are the dance.”, “You are the lord of the dance, and I am the duke of the flapjacks” [Seriously, I need to cut down on my gluten and carbs]., “The perfect date for me would be staying at home, making a big picnic in bed, eating Wotsits and cookies while watching cable TV.”, “Never regret yesterday. Life is in you today, and you make your tomorrow.” [land?], “Dream your dream and your dream will dream of you.”²⁴ , “Stretch marks are, like, my biggest fear of life” [Have no fear]., “Our duty, as men and women, is to proceed as

²³ I love you, please don’t be mad.... :-)

²⁴ Wait for it.....

if limits to our ability did not exist.”²⁵, “Just do it.”, “A culture is only as great as its dreams, and its dreams are dreamed by artists.”, “Fear is just excitement in need of an attitude adjustment.”, “I have to be in a relationship in order to be intimate. I’m not the one-night-stand kind of girl. Despite the rumors” [Um...okay...super]., “The wrong thing to do about any given circumstance or situation is to do nothing [except when you’re praying, because, with the proper disposition of the soul *that is precisely what you should do, you damned, foul, miserable, conniving rodent rotting in HELL!!!!!!*] “Holidays are the best. I couldn’t imagine being from a small family.”, “Boldness in itself is genius,” “I like candy!”, “Believing is doing.”²⁶, “White is actually one of my favorite colors. I have a white car. I love white.”, “For nearly a quarter of a century, I have been engaged in the investigation of the fundamentals of life, the material universe, and human behavior. Such an adventure leads one down many highways, through many byroads, into many back alleys of uncertainty, through many strata of life.”, “The more you praise and celebrate your life, the more there is in life to celebrate.”, “Turn your wounds into wisdom.”, “You don’t get rich writing science fiction. If you want to get rich, you start a religion.”, “Doing the best at this moment puts you in the best place for the next moment.”, “Freedom is for honest people. No man who is not himself honest can be free - he is his own trap.”, “Be thankful for what you have; you’ll end up having more. If you concentrate on what you don’t have, you will never, ever have enough.”, “Dianetics is an adventure. It is an exploration into Terra Incognita, the human mind, that vast and hitherto unknown realm half an inch back of our foreheads.”, “The biggest adventure you can ever take is to live the life of your dreams.”, “To be happy, one only must be able to confront, which is to say, experience, those things that are. Unhappiness is only this inability to confront that which is.” [Whoa, deep man], “Surround yourself with only people who are going to lift you higher.”, “I am doing things that are true to me. The only thing I have a problem with is being labeled.”, “Real integrity is doing the right thing, knowing that nobody’s going to know whether you did it or not.”, “I think the thing to do is to enjoy the ride while you’re on it.”, “You can have it all. You just can’t have it all at once.” [And, sometimes, most times, having nothing or next to nothing in this world is the prerequisite for having it all, or, indeed, having anything at all in the true life, the world to come.], “Life’s pretty good, and why wouldn’t it be? I’m a pirate after all.”, “Stop thinking about the road not taken and pave over the one you did.”²⁷, “Breathe. Let go. And remind yourself that this very moment is the only one you know you have for sure.”, “I don’t like defining myself. I just am.”, “Never regret yesterday. Life is in you today and you make your tomorrow.”, “There’s a drive in me that won’t allow me to do certain things that are easy.”, “The measure of time to your next goal is the measure of your discipline.”²⁸, “With love, you should go ahead and take the risk of getting hurt...because love is an amazing feeling.”, “What is true for you is what you have observed for yourself. And when you lose that, you have lost everything.”, “A new wardrobe brings great joy and change to your

²⁵ Wait for it.

²⁶ Keep waiting for it.....

²⁷ Still waiting.....

²⁸ Deepak Chopra?

life.”²⁹ , “I know not everyone will like me, but this is who I am so if you don’t like it, tough!”, “Every night, I have to read a book, so that my mind will stop thinking about things I stress about [Perfectly reasonable].”, “I would like to be called an inspiration to people, not a role model - because I make mistakes like everybody else. When I’m offstage, I’m just like everybody else.”, “The race is not always to the swift, but to those who keep on running.”, **Learn Chinese: Autumn, fall = qiu, tian, Lucky numbers (Lotto): 04-06-55-09-21-39**³⁰, “I want to be an artist that everyone can relate to, that’s young, happy, and fun.”, “I did not have implants, I just had a growth spurt.”, “Just because I look sexy on the cover of *Rolling Stone* doesn’t mean I’m naughty.”, “Onstage I’m the happiest person in the world.”, “The cool thing about being famous is traveling. I have always wanted to travel across seas, like to Canada and stuff.”, “My greatest pain in life is that I will never be able to see myself perform live” [Don’t worry, you’ll have front row seats in Hell.], “Nothing in life is promised except death.” [And....Death, Judgment, Heaven and Hell https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Four_last_things.], “If you have the opportunity to play the game of life you need to appreciate every moment. A lot of people don’t appreciate the moment until it’s passed [More true than you will ever know....until you have the infernal clarity that only Hell, at last, affords. See C.S. Lewis.], “George Bush doesn’t care about black people” [That’s probably true. It’s not that he doesn’t care, he just doesn’t know that he doesn’t care, or care that he doesn’t know that he doesn’t care. Self-deception is a Satanic Hall of Mirrors indeed], “We’re all self-conscious. I’m just the first to admit.” [The first? Peruse a library some time.], “We need leadership. We don’t need a doubling down on the failed policies of the past.”, “There’s nobody who cares more about you than you, and there’s nobody better equipped to take care of you than you” [Other than the Eternal Lord of all creation, who demands that you love your neighbor as yourself and that you must be your brother’s keeper...actually this quote about you, you and you is the Creed of Satan.], “Capitalism is always evaluated against dreams. Utopia is a dream. It doesn’t exist [Except as the New Jerusalem exists in the Eternal Will of the Eternal Lord, who demands that we, so far as we can and is prudent, instantiate that Eternal Will in the here and now as a foretaste and first fruits of eternal salvation.], “As a professional broadcaster, I can tell you that over the course of my career, there is an adage: don’t ever apologize” [See how that works out for you at the Last Judgment.], “I have to tell you, every day is a roller coaster.”, “Every day is a winding road. I get a little bit closer.”, “Today me will live in the moment unless it’s unpleasant in which case me will eat a cookie.”, “I’m dealing with fools and trolls and soft targets. It’s just strafing runs in my underwear before my first cup of coffee. I don’t have time for these clowns.”, “Sometimes Me think, ‘What is friend?’ and then me say, ‘Friend is someone to share the last cookie with.’” , “Keep calm and nom nom nom,” “Tickle me!”, “In the midst of movement and chaos, keep stillness inside of you.”, “The less you open your heart to others, the more your heart suffers.”, “The way you think, the way you behave, the way you eat, can influence your life by 30 to 50 years.”, “Nothing is more important than reconnecting with your bliss. Nothing is as rich. Nothing is more real.”, “If you and I are having a single thought of violence or hatred against anyone in the world at this moment, we are contributing to the

²⁹ Still guessing?

³⁰ Surprised? Really?.....<http://www.fortunecookiemessage.com/>

wounding of the world.”, “To think is to practice brain chemistry.”, “Any information is valuable to the degree that you can use it. In other words, any information is valuable to the degree that you can make it yours. Scientology does not teach you. It only reminds you. For the information was yours in the first place. It is not only the science of life, but it is an account of what you were doing before you forgot what you were doing.”, “Here’s the good news. If I realize that I’m insane, then I’m okay with it. I’m not dangerous insane.”, “The physical world, including our bodies, is a response of the observer. We create our bodies as we create the experience of our world.”, “Happiness is a continuation of happenings which are not resisted.”, “Every person is a God in embryo. Its only desire is to be born” [Indeed, Deepak -- but shall it be born of itself, and thus born to eternal torment and slavery under the Power of the greatest and most powerful of the self-born - Satan, or rather shall it be born in Christ, and thus born to eternal felicity in the bosom of the All-Righteous and Ever-Living God?], “My every action is to liberate God from his sorrow.”, “You can free yourself from aging by reinterpreting your body and by grasping the link between belief and biology” [Cool story, bro.], “Am I foolish and insignificant or am I great? I gave all the individuals in the world cause to kneel down in front of me” [And that’s why you’re in Hell.], “It’s better to be healthy alone than sick with someone else.”, “In my opinion, if we have not achieved peace, it is because people forget its most fundamental aspect. Before we talk about peace among nations, we must settle our peace with God.”, “Sometimes you make the right decision, sometimes you make the decision right.”, “The whole world is in my hand, and I will conquer and subjugate the world.”, “Sometimes you just got to give yourself what you wish someone else would give you.”, “My dad used to say, ‘You wouldn’t worry so much about what people thought about you if you knew how seldom they did’ [Yeah....okay, I suppose.], “My pappy used to say that his pappy used to say that his pappy used to say....then he drifted off to sleep.”, “I know the established Christian theology...I know the enemy, but the enemy doesn’t know me. Thus the enemy has already lost the war” [Not a chance, pal, you foul damned soul.], “We teach people how to treat us.”, “Awareness without action is worthless.”, “If you tell a lie to make a person better, then that is not a sin.”, “My mission is a cosmic mission. My concern is for all of humanity, and not only this present world, but the world hereafter. My mission penetrates the past, present, and future, and encompasses all humanity.”, “You’re only lonely if you’re not there for you. <https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=IwHdW5BIVo8>”, “The most you get is what you ask for.”, “I’m embarrassed every time I look a teacher in the eye, because we ask them to do so much for so little.”, “~~There are some sick people in this world.~~” [No, Anti-Bono would never say that -- those sick people, secretly, will be Anti-Bono’s favorite people - the people he will ultimately raise up to rule with him, (actually be his most devoted henchmen), when the Final Horror is revealed.], “If you ever drop your keys into a river of molten lava, let ‘em go.....because man, they’re gone!”, “To me, boxing is like a ballet, except there’s no music, no choreography and the dancers hit each other.”, “Before you criticize someone, you should walk a mile in their shoes. That way when you criticize them, you are a mile away from them and you have their shoes.”, “I hope life isn’t a big joke, because I don’t get it.”, “Dad always thought laughter was the best medicine, which I guess is why several of us died of tuberculosis.”, “I hope that after I die, people will say of me: ‘That guy owed me a lot of money.’”, “**The question isn’t who is going to let me; it’s who is going to stop me.**” [God, probably], “Happiness is that state of consciousness which proceeds from the

achievement of one's value.", "To achieve you need thought. You have to know what you are doing, and that's real power.", "The purpose of morality is to teach you, not to suffer and die, but to enjoy yourself and live.", "People create their own questions because they are afraid to look straight. All you have to do is to look straight and see the road, and when you see it, don't sit looking at it - walk.", "There is no such thing as a hopeless situation. Every single circumstance of your life can change!", "There is a truth deep down inside of you that has been waiting for you to discover it, and that truth is this: you deserve all good things life has to offer.", "You become what you think about most...But you also attract what you think about most.", "Be grateful for what you have now. As you begin to think about all the things in your life you are grateful for, you will be amazed at the never-ending thoughts that come back to you of more things to be grateful for. You have to make a start, and then the law of attraction will receive those grateful thoughts and give you more just like them.", "Your power is in your thoughts, so stay awake. In other words, remember to remember.", "Your thoughts become things!", "The truth is that the universe has been answering you all of your life, but you cannot receive the answers unless you are awake.", "Everything else you see and experience in this world is effect, and that includes your feelings. The cause is always your thoughts.", "See the things that you want as already yours." [Including somebody else's spouse?], "You are the one who calls the law of attraction into action, and you do it through your thoughts.", "Don't waste your time with people who will ultimately destroy you, but concentrate instead on those who will appreciate your responsibility to them, and likewise, feel responsible to you.", "Life is the great indulgence - death the great abstinence. Therefore, make the most of life here and now!", "The ice age of religious thought can last but a limited time in this great scheme of human existence. The gods of wisdom-defiled have had their sage, and their millennium hath become as reality. Each, with his own "divine" path to paradise, hath accused the other of heresies and spiritual indiscretions.", "Choosing to be positive and having a grateful attitude is going to determine how you're going to live your life.", "Why don't you start believing that no matter what you have or haven't done, that your best days are still out in front of you.", "God wants us to prosper financially, to have plenty of money, to fulfill the destiny He has laid out for us.", "Do all you can to make your dreams come true.", "We're all God's children.", "It may look like the difficulty is going to defeat you. But you need to keep telling yourself, 'This sickness can't take my life.' 'This cancer can't defeat me.' [I don't know, it's defeated a number of people in my family...I guess we didn't use the magic words....] 'No bad break, no disappointment, no accident can shorten one second of my divine destiny.'" [I suppose...if by divine destiny you mean salvation in Heaven as a reward for faith in Christ and perseverance in righteousness....because if you mean your athletic career, paralysis might shorten that destiny.]

"We're all God's children." "All paths lead to God." "All religions teach the same thing."

Who could possibly disagree with all that veritable mass of.....wisdom? I suppose.....

So, most won't.

Many false prophets will arise and deceive many; and because of the increase of evildoing, the love of many will grow cold. But the one who perseveres to the end will be saved. And this gospel of the kingdom will be preached throughout the world as a witness to all nations, and then the end will come.

Matthew 24:11-14

*Cake
Comfort Eagle*

<https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=RcoYfsRFX9s>

(For clarification, the point is not that every last quote above is “wrong”. The point is, first, that they - representative of American popular cultural ideology - do not fit together into a coherent whole, and, integrally, the reigning American cultural ideology is blank, empty, puerile, and bad for your soul. It’s also trite, cliched, and annoying, but that’s an aesthetic matter. Second, the thrust of the whole thing is self-deification, which is the essence of the sin of Satan. None of the above pop culture quotes, even if true to a lesser or greater extent, and under certain circumstances, (and most of that garbage is total drivel anyway), can lead you to Christ, the salvation of your souls.)

The world will continue, with the world system trying to endure the stresses coming upon it, and with the Great Church and the Jewish people warily eyeing the developing situation.

Nothing in history may even *seem* terribly different -- just the natural and reasonable working out of the historical narrative on the basis of purely material terms, unfolding logically into the latter 21st and early 22nd centuries from the historical antecedents of the early 21st, 20th, 19th, 18th, 17th, and 16th centuries -- just the normal flow of modernity rushing onward into some kind of new postmodernity.

It will seem natural. Commercials here and there with the new credo - “We’re all God’s children.” - “We all count.” - with pitches that go like this: *A charismatic male actor walks up to the camera*, “The world isn’t big enough for hate, so put a little love in your heart.”

People will shrug as they eat their meals and watch their shows and play their games and live their lives. Love good, hate bad....sounds reasonable.

But the push for world peace and security through world love and brotherhood will get increasingly more smothering. When people make a truth claim, the new cultural indoctrination, fanned by the media, academia, business, and the government, will snap back, “That’s your *opinion*. Your truth is not another person’s truth, and all truths are truth.”

Parents will get phone calls from teachers, “Little Johnny said that you told him that only Jesus can save you. That kind of intolerance cannot be tolerated anymore.”

“Mrs. Rosenbaum, little Rachel said that the Jews are *the* chosen people. That kind of bigotry can’t be tolerated anymore, Mrs. Rosenbaum. Don’t you know that thinking like that led to the atomic horrors? Don’t you know that that kind of prejudice led to the Holocaust?”

The slogans will proliferate:

We live in a New World, free from hate.

We live in an Age of Peace, bound by brotherhood without boundaries.

The hate in your heart is a bomb in another man’s hand.

Your “truth” isn’t as great as the one truth: We’re all one.

The Way doesn’t matter: What matters is the Destination.

No one people is chosen: we’re all chosen by God to love each other.

There’s no going back to the false gods of division: there’s only one God: Peace.

Teach your children: there’s no higher god than the god of love in your hearts.

When pastors, priests, and rabbis will note that these messages, while superficially appealing, are not the genuine teaching of the Torah or the Gospel, but that, in fact, such slogans and doctrines are totally subversive of and destructive to Jewish and Christian faith, the heat will ramp up.

Such people are relics of the past.

They’re bigots.

They’re essentialists.

They’re hateful.

They’re divisive.

They’re what caused the atomic horrors.

At first institutions and the mob mentality of the mass media and mass culture will try to “gently handle” these relics of the past, too narrow-minded and selfish to join the brave new world of peace and brotherhood that Anti-Bono and his new world are forging for the benefit of all humanity.

The Oprahs, Joel Osteens, Deepak Chopras, Eckhart Tolles, and Rhonda Byrnes of the future, along with every other conceivable charlatan of spirituality, will sing the tune and dance to the rhythm of this wonderful new brotherhood and sisterhood.

Shows, movies, music, books will also loudly proclaim that the new thinking is exactly what Jesus and Moses taught, along with every other wise teacher of human history. Now, finally, all those teachings were *really* being understood and completed by the new Age of Peace. The best of those traditions was being embraced, while the hateful divisions of the past were being left behind. A new earth was being born.

Christians and Jews will say: There is one true God.

Anti-Bono and company will respond: God is Truth, and All is Truth

Christians and Jews will say: There is one right standard for moral conduct.

Anti-Bono: It's not your role to tell someone else how to live.

Christians and Jews: There is something more than this life that we must pursue: The Life to Come.

Anti-Bono: Focusing on an afterlife distracts from your responsibilities in the here and now and encourages terroristic fanaticism.

Christians and Jews: We hold to truths that are different from other people's truths.

Anti-Bono: In not accepting other people's truths as true, you beckon the atomic horrors.

The culture war upon the Great Church and traditional Jews will continue: marriages will end in divorce, workers will be fired, students will be expelled, neighbor will harass neighbor. The traditional Christian and Jew will be more and more excluded from polite society.

But the Great Church and the Jewish people will try to soldier on, increasingly apprehensive about the politics of the day. Some will just hope everything turns out well. Others might shudder: is something more going on here?

Culturally, there will be a sifting, a social schism, between traditional Christians and Jews, on the one hand, and, on the other hand, the mass of a world just trying to get on its way, just trying to get where it's trying to go: to work, to school, to the park, to the beach, to an orgasm, to a bar, to a spa, to a book, to a movie.

As Anti-Bono turns the screws, maybe he will use fake terrorist attacks attributed to Christians and Jews, who knows. In any event, Anti-Bono and the world authority will start bringing not only cultural and social pressure to bear against traditional Christians and Jews, but also legal, institutional, and financial pressure. Christians and Jews, and their dead, orthodox, bigoted, fanatical, "fundamentalist" views will become the enemy of a Better World.

To try to subvert the Great Church, Anti-Bono will offer a substitute - an alternative - one might even say an imitation or a parody. Anti-Bono will take a cue from Robespierre and generate an all-embracing religion of truth, love, reason, goodness, progress, and no content, meaningful demands, or transcendent truth claims.

Come, let us hear the Address to the Assembled Nations by the False Prophet of the Anti-Bono, upon the occasion of the dedication of the Sanctuary of World Peace -- a stunning glass structure full of postmodern curves and edges, scintillating in the hot Roman sun, built upon the ruins of the Vatican, a casualty of the Great War:

Here, this day, here and now on this beautiful morning, we celebrate life!!!

Cheers Applause the Doves Cry

We affirm this truth: Life is truth and truth is life!!! In so affirming, we appreciate and keep the gifts that we have on this good earth of ours. An earth, indeed, that we have come to know is quite fragile, quite destructible.

We know that the earth is all we have, and that we must protect it from every evil: the evil of environmental ruin, the evil of economic disparity, the evil of war -- the evil of the atomic horrors. We come here today, united, my brothers and sisters, standing together as a great choir singing one truth, in one voice: PEACE. PEACE ON EARTH. Peace in our time.

Cheers Applause the Doves Cry

Peace. Peace, my brothers and sisters. An easy word to say, and a hard reality to achieve. We have made enormous strides in rebuilding and securing our world after decades of war and disaster. But we still have so very far to go. We must ensure that such horrors *never* plague the world ever again!

THUNDEROUS CHEERS

How then to secure peace? How can we ensure the continuation of this great Age of Peace that Anti-Bono has made possible?

There is only one way, one answer, my brothers and sisters: Unity. A unity that can embrace all of God's children, each in their uniqueness, beauty, and worth. Only once we recognize the value of all people, each individual, every precious human life, can we possibly hope to attain a true and lasting peace. Only then shall we have the blessings of a perpetual Age of Peace.

And no human being can be valued if we do not value the individual truth of that human person. We are all made in the image and likeness of God. Each of us is a precious child of God. And each of us has God living within him.

Only when we affirm the sanctity of every person, in their uniqueness, in their own truth, can we ever hope to have peace. Only when we respect the truth of each person, of how they relate to God, can we truly have a better world.

We must not imitate the tragic mistakes of the past, my brothers and sisters. In times past, in just the previous eras to our own, figures and movements emerged that separated people, that denigrated people, that made demands on people that were not theirs to make. Every faction had their voice of intolerance and war: Muslims had Osama bin Laden, and Christians had Matthew Galante: equally and equivalently vicious in their hatred for anyone different from themselves. Voices of hate and division and difference like these directly fueled the Great War and the atomic horrors that affected the life of our entire generation. We can no longer follow such paths. Such paths only lead to the grave, to ruination, to the loss of all that we could ever hold dear.

We preach life! And life abundantly! An abundant life on this good earth, here and now!

Cheers Applause the Doves Cry
THUNDEROUS CHEERS
Cheers Applause the Doves Cry

And now, after decades of woe, we know the only path to life is PEACE!

Cheers Applause the Doves Cry
THUNDEROUS CHEERS
Cheers Applause the Doves Cry

And the only path to peace is BROTHERHOOD!

Cheers Applause the Doves Cry
THUNDEROUS CHEERS
Cheers Applause the Doves Cry

And the only path to Brotherhood is to cease all divisions. We must no longer be divided by our petty differences. No one religion holds the whole truth. No one way is *the* way. All religions must be respected as ways to the truth. All faiths must be respected when they are held in the heart of any human person, any brother or sister.

And our fragile planet, this good earth, here and now, it can no longer tolerate intolerance. It can no longer tolerate divisions - one faction saying, "I have the truth" and another faction saying, "No, I have the truth."

We must rather say with ONE VOICE, on this ONE EARTH, this NEW EARTH:
ALL HAVE THE TRUTH, so long as that truth is the Great Truth: PEACE!!!!!!

THUNDEROUS CHEERS

Those factions, those divisive sects who insist on claiming a superior truth can no longer be tolerated. No faction should try to convert any other faction. No faction may rightfully be allowed to make claims that are incompatible with the GREAT UNITY OF WE THE LIVING! Instead, all should gather here, here at this global table of brotherhood, taking strength in the wisdom of Anti-Bono, knowing that we are all brothers and sisters united for this one end, this one god: Peace!

We say that our God is no more and no less than this, this truth beyond which no further truth is necessary. This one word: PEACE!

PEACE shall renew the face of the earth!

PEACE shall make all your dreams come true!

PEACE shall make your children's futures bright!

PEACE shall make you squirt with every orgasm!

PEACE shall fulfill every hope you could ever have, on this earth, here and now!

PEACE shall usher in a new and everlasting era of New Men and Women, reborn, not in their differences, but in their commitment to a BETTER WORLD, a Better World for you and me! A better world with no limitations, no hatred, no divisions!

A new era dawns!

*THUNDEROUS CHEERS
RIOTOUS APPLAUSE
ORGASMIC DELIGHT
DOVES RELEASED
A SWARM OF DOVES BUZZING ABOUT THE GREAT SANCTUARY*

And with that, Anti-Bono and his False Prophet brought war upon the Great Church and the Jewish people, persecuting anyone who would not follow Anti-Bono's way of peace.

The Cure

*Rev. Tim Keller
The Gospel and Idolatry
Acts 19:23-41*

<https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=mn1U1omO6sg>

Rev. John Piper

<http://www.desiringgod.org/messages#modal-204570292>

*Stevie Wonder
As*

https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=ICHJ_UFSaes

*Rev. Tim Keller
True Happiness - Capsule Summary*

<https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=POgfgvlt0uo>

The Full Sermon - The Search for Happiness
September 12, 1993
Preaching on Psalm 1

<https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=XuLlePKzNQA>

Tim Keller on Stories

<https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=EPcLie0HDXE>

Most of the peoples of the world, in America, Latin America, Europe, China, and Africa hailed the address as a welcome annunciation of what the world so desperately groaned for: PEACE. For Americans simply wanted to return to their malls and shopping; Latin Americans wanted to return to their dancing and lovemaking, Europeans wanted to return to their secular

pursuits and intricate debaucheries, and Asia just wanted an end to the religious insanity that had engulfed the world.

But Russia, we can only hope, heard this and thought, *Hmmm*, where have I heard such things before? And, with cynicism and misery etched deeply into its soul, Russia will have the insight necessary to realize that something far more sinister is lurking underneath the surface of all this ominous happy-talk than the Anti-Bono and the False Prophet would have you believe.

Strident, Intolerant Ultra-“Tolerant” Secularism: The Phantom Menace

<https://www.theatlantic.com/politics/archive/2017/06/bernie-sanders-chris-van-hollen-russell-vought/529614/>

In essence, Bernie Sanders says: We must oppose Christians because they are Christians.

For every other nation, sickened by war and nuclear explosions annihilating cities and religious madness, will race on into the Great Hereafter of the Anti-Bono’s way of peace.

But Russia, if it is properly formed in Christian grace, will, we pray along with Our Lady of Fatima, say, “Wait, a minute...not so fast, Mr. Smooth Talker. I can tell bullshit when I smell it, and I call bullshit on you, Mr. Anti-Bono and Mr. False Prophet.”

For the Anti-Bono, really the Anti-Christ, the Well-Beloved of Satan (as if Satan could love anything but himself, even himself), will have been waiting all his life for these moments. Though a Great Peacemaker, he won’t have ever given a damn about peace. And though a great administrator, building hospitals, roads, bridges, tunnels, schools, airports, factories -- he won’t give a damn about the world’s prosperity.

The final endgame, hidden from the world but always raging inside of him, will be to do *his* father’s work: the work of his father Satan. And the will of Satan is always to throw himself across God’s plan, to botch God’s plan, to thwart God’s Will and His Joy. And that requires the eradication of the Church, the Flesh of Christ, and of the Jewish people, God’s chosen Nation.

All the peace?

Just a path for the Anti-Christ to assume power.

All the prosperity?

Just a way for the Anti-Christ to consolidate his power.

All the love mumbo-jumbo?

All just a way to turn the world against Christ and the Jews.

For, once having forged this - what shall it be called? New World Outlook? New World Spirit? New World Promise? New World Hope? New World Culture? Who knows. -- but once piecing it together, he will increasingly use it as a weapon to smash the Church and the Jews.

But legal, financial, even military power will not serve to crush the Church or the Jews. For, at this point, Anti-Christ won't be able to go too far -- he can't just line Christians and Jews up against a wall and shoot them....He is the Messenger of Peace after all!

Even after losing rights and privileges and opportunities, the Church and the Jews will endure -- even thrive and grow, with persecution stiffening their spine and screwing their courage to the sticking place. It will be a persecuted, reviled, unpopular Church and people, but it will be more resilient, more firm in faith and hope, and more perfected in the trials of true love.

So Anti-Christ, in his fury and according to the necessity of the plan of destiny, will mount a vast and outrageous imposture, designed to undercut the Church and the Jewish people right where it hurts.

The Anti-Christ will declare himself the Second Coming of Christ.

And he won't just say it: he'll exercise, through the intervention of demoniacal power, actual authority, performing diabolical miracles, parodies of those miracles wrought by Christ in His First Coming.

The world will rejoice! Not only has Anti-Bono brought us peace and plenty, but He is Christ returned to earth to lead us to all joy forever!

What a blessed and happy time to be alive!

The Church will say: NO! The Scriptures clearly state that the Second Coming of Christ will be obvious to everyone. As Jesus says, "For just as lightening comes from the east and is seen as far as the west, so will the coming of the Son of Man be. Wherever the corpse is, there the vultures will gather" (Matthew 24:27-28). If any person has any doubt, or has any shred of doubt, it, *by definition*, **cannot** be the Second Coming - this must be Anti-Christ!

The rest of the world, mad in their rejoicing, in their happy fornications and revelries in the wealth of prosperity, will say, "What? Come on, what are you talking about?! You Christians were right! There is a Christ! And he's right there - it was Anti-Bono all along! How happy are we!"

And many Christians will agree and fall away. A core, (many?, few? - who knows), will persevere saying *This can't be right, this can't be real!*

And the rest of the world will say, in increasingly strident terms, "Come on, now, he's even proven himself with miracles." And when the Church holds that the Second Coming will be obvious, they'll say, "It is obvious, to us! And it *should* be obvious to you!" Christians will

say that Christ will come on the clouds in glory. Everybody else will say that that was a metaphor and that the Anti-Christ is the reincarnation of Christ or the heir to His Spirit.

There will also be a deep and tragic split. I do not say what I am about to say out of considerations of ethnicity or culture. It has to do with what the Jewish people are expecting, and have been telling themselves to expect for millennia.

Consider Maimonides, Rambam, in the Mishneh Torah:

If a king arises from the House of David²³ who meditates on the Torah and occupies himself with the commandments like his ancestor David, in accordance with the written and oral Torah,²⁴ and he will prevail upon all of Israel to walk in [the ways of the Torah] and strengthen its breaches,²⁵ and he will fight the battles of G-d²⁶ it may be assumed that he is Mashiach.²⁷

If he did [these things] successfully (and defeated all the nations around him²⁸), built the Sanctuary on its site²⁹ and gathered the dispersed of Israel he is definitely Mashiach!³⁰ He will [then] correct the entire world to serve G-d in unity, as it is said, "For then I will turn to the peoples a pure tongue that all shall call upon the Name of G-d and serve Him with one consent."³¹

(If he did not succeed to that extent or was killed, it is clear that he is not the [Mashiach] promised by the Torah ... for all the prophets said that Mashiach is the redeemer of Israel and their savior, and he gathers their dispersed and reinforces their commandments...)³² ³¹

Tragically, the Anti-Christ will fulfill each of these requirements, for, as World Ruler of the world authority, he will be perfectly empowered to do so. The Anti-Christ, upon declaring himself the Mashiach (and the heir or reincarnation of Christ) will enforce the Torah among the Jews, rebuild a Third Temple on the Temple Mount, gather all the Jewish people to Israel, and be a teacher and guide to the nations.

Those who have hewed more closely to traditional Judaism will naturally see this person as the true and legitimate Mashiach.

Christians will say that it does not comport with the Gospel text. Many Jews will say, that's because Christianity was always a pseudo-legitimate religion, a bastardization of Judaism. But, now here is the true Mashiach -- come rejoice with us! They will even say, see, you had a part of the truth, that Christ was involved in the spirit of the Mashiach, but now, here is the real and final Mashiach!

³¹ http://www.chabad.org/library/moshiach/article_cdo/aid/101744/jewish/Laws-Concerning-Kings-and-the-Messiah.htm

The Christians who remain faithful, biblical, and orthodox will see the Third Temple as the desolating abomination cited by Jesus (Matthew 24:15). Secular people, newly converted to Anti-Christianity, thinking it to be the true and finally revealed and *visible* Christianity, won't care. And many Christians, and many Jews, won't care either, and will see the construction of this Temple as absolute proof positive that the Anti-Christ is the Mashiach, the Messiah, the Chosen One of God.

And, then, as the Chosen One of God, the King and absolute ruler of all the world, the Anti-Christ will proceed to murder those Christians and Jews who do not obey his rule and worship him as the God that he says he is.

I prophesy that the Swedes will be the most enthusiastic for the reign of the Anti-Christ. For they are sensible, practical, utilitarian, humanitarian, sensual, gynocentric, frank, and secular, possessed entirely of a worldly ethos. We can imagine that this will only become ever more true in the course of the next century. When the Anti-Bono crowns himself as Christ, establishes his absolute world authority, and displays his power by literal miracles, it shall be the matter of spiritual reality colliding with the anti-spiritual anti-matter of secular modernity. The secular modern ethos and mindset will be shattered to pieces in a moment - in an instant of incredulous wonder and awe.

The whole modern and postmodern Tower of Babel long labored upon by the workers of the academies and journals, built up for centuries through the arrogance of human self-preference and blank spiritual blindness, shall utterly implode into rubble, not a stone laid upon another stone, once the Avatar of Satan himself explodes upon the world stage like an atom bomb.

And those people who will have been born into a world sanitized of authentic Christian spirituality, and reared upon the pabulum of secular modernity, shall, like lambs to the slaughter, eagerly and greedily lap up the pronouncements and will of this real-life, here and now Wonder Worker, this Prince of Peace and Lord of Marvels.

Imagine the awe and excitement, the giddy expectation and intrigued anticipation, with which the Swedes shall meet the Anti-Christ, once he manifests his supernatural power and solemn royal authority! Empirically minded and focused solely on this world, they shall give instant credence to manifest, demonstrable miracles performed live on television, broadcast throughout the world. Secularists, the irreligious, atheists, and unbelievers of all stripes: Now, finally, *at last*, they shall have the **proof** that they demanded. It will be given to them, explicitly, irrefutably: just the way they always demanded it.

What a marvelous day, when all the secularists and atheists of the world are summarily converted to Christianity!well, not Christianity, but, rather, the Christianity of the one who claims to be the reincarnation or re-manifestation of the Spirit of the Christ: the Anti-Christ.

Anti-Christ shall be all things to all peoples -- in just the way they have always wanted and demanded. He will show himself to be the Christ of the Christians, the Mashiach of the

Jews, and the Savior and Final Avatar of every other religion. You see, all religions did lead to the same truth: this Christ -- this Anti-Christ.

Secularism will race forward into this new religion, speeding at ever accelerating velocities down the highway of its own vanity, pomposity, arrogance, and lack of imagination, right over the cliff and down into the abyss of this Anti-Christ's "Christianity".

And it will be precisely because the secular imagination is one-dimensional. It just sees things for what they are on the surface, rather than seeing things as they are inside, in the very depths of the infinite involution that is the total and complete essence of spirit, which must, necessarily, be grounded and aligned with the Spirit.

It is not that secularists are twirling their mustaches, cackling and waiting to ruin the earth and all its people, waiting for the day when they can worship Satan in a renewed Temple of Ba'al and drink the blood of Christians and Jews. (Although, the Temple of Set folks might be an exception - look it up...or, actually, maybe don't).

It's that thoroughgoing secularists are blank. They have no imagination worth speaking of. Death is just death. Life is just life. Pleasure is just pleasure. Pain is just pain. Things are what they are -- or, at least what they *appear* to be...and no more. They lack a vital sense of irony that allows them to peel back the appearances of this fallen world and see the true workings of the spiritual order underneath.

This blankness imitates the blankness of Satan, who did not wish to become a monster, but "simply" desired to himself become the Giver of the gifts he had received -- to occupy the position of the Creator who had created him - because power was just power and his spiritual life could not exist as a gift from Another, but, he thought (in a spiritual form of towering intellect that we cannot conceive) that he could only be himself, and have life, if his life was totally through himself and for himself. Power couldn't be attained through service, life couldn't be lived through a powerless trust in a Spirit that one did not control, that one did not have full power over.

So, the one-dimensional imagination of the secular world will slam right into the supernatural power of the Anti-Christ. Secularists who, when confronted with power, can only see power, will instantly proclaim this Man of Power the one true God, finally revealed for them.

The Scandinavians Will Never See Anti-Christ Coming

Veep

<https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=cYuAdOpS8c0>

<https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=n51Z5ifWnc0>

But while the rest of the secular modern world is "waking up" to its newfound faith in this false Christ, the true Church will be saying loudly, "THIS IS THE ANTI-CHRIST!"

“Anyone who says that they are the Christ -- without fulfilling the necessary requirements in the New Testament -- is the Anti-Christ.”

The last pope will make this quite clear. He will say, “First, the Second Coming will be obvious and manifest to all people *clearly* -- it will not be a matter of opinion and debate. Second, the coming of the Anti-Christ *must* precede the Second Coming of the true Christ. Therefore, this usurper, this self-appointed World Emperor, this so-called Christ, is none other than the ANTI-CHRIST!”

And the world, the society formerly known as the secular modern rational tolerant world will in one voice declare, “All ye blasphemers, be damned! For here - *here and now* - we have the Christ! You were right, O Christians: there was a Christ to come -- and here he is - performing miracles, ruling the nations with wisdom and leading all to prosperity, rebuilding the Temple and bringing peace between Israel and all the nations. Here is the Christ! *Your* Christ! We secular, irreligious, and atheists loudly proclaim, ‘We were wrong. *You* were right! We admit our folly. Now admit your folly, and come join with us to worship this wonder-worker, this second coming of the Christ.’”

For, consider: how empty and useless and defenseless are all the vain nonsense and blasphemies of Richard Dawkins, Sam Harris, Christopher Hitchens, and Bill Maher. For in one instant, in one television performance, a miracle worker could convert the whole world to his religion, and the atheists and the secularists and the irreligious would have no defensive mechanisms to withstand him.

A Christian, schooled in the wisdom of all the ages and faithful to the magisterium’s constant teaching, the enduring Tradition, and the ineradicable Word of Scripture, could clearly say: Yes, this is power. A spiritual power, a supernatural power: a magic of sorts. But supernatural power does not necessarily indicate the presence or power of God. For there is another spiritual force in reality: the power of Satan, the parody of God’s power in the power of sin and its fruit, death.

But your average viewer of *The Voice* and *Grey’s Anatomy*, your reader of *People* magazine, your consulter of psychics and fortunetellers and astrology websites, your readers of Dan Brown nonsense, your skeptics who seek to dispel the truths of the Bible and all the many miracles performed throughout the ages by Christian holy men and women.they have no such training, no such spiritual and religious education deeply inculcated within their mentalities and worldviews.

Simply have Anti-Bono, the ruler of the world authority, now revealed, apparently, to be the Christ, go on television -- and levitate, make others levitate - fly around an arena. Re-animate corpses. Instantly cure the sick of their diseases. Make the homely beautiful with a wave of his hand. Make the crippled - quadriplegics hooked up to a vast apparatus of machines in an imposing wheelchair - become instantly well and able-bodied; let them casually - and *really* - cast off their chains and walk and dance and jump and cheer as fully and miraculously healthy people.

What then shall the Richard Dawkins and Sam Harris and Bill Maher of a hundred years hence say once absolute *proof* is finally offered to them?

“Blessed is He Who Comes in the Name of the Lord!”

For the new atheists think that they are purging the world of religion: that evil plague, that dark virus, without which the world will live as one, in peace and harmony and rationality.

But it is not so.

They are merely the dupes of Satan, not eradicating a plague from the world, but destroying the world’s immune system to Satan.

The new atheists and their screeds are not a vaccine against polio, a cure to smallpox.....no, no, no.....their teachings and vain “wisdom” are nothing more than the spiritual HIV-AIDS necessary for Satan and his Anti-Christ to sweep the world in their pride, vainglory, and lust for power. Such atheistical proclamations simply pave the highway that the Anti-Christ shall cruise on his course to absolute spiritual dominion over the earth.

For, always remember: just as God has His Perfect Plan of Salvation, conceived from all eternity and perfectly executed and accomplished in time, Satan and his henchmen, his demons, have their schemes, their plots, their stratagems. These schemes try to mimic the magisterial and irresistible Plan of Salvation of the LORD. But, of course, since they have no access to the Majesty and Power of the Spirit, and since Satan and his demons are constantly flummoxed and vanquished by the Plan of Salvation, their schemes take on an ad-hoc, on-the-fly character, constantly shifting and mutating.

But Satan shifts and mutates *in an attempt to be magisterial and grand and well-conceived*. So the demons hatch projects that, they hope, will somehow, someday, in any way possible botch the Plan of Salvation. Of course, they can’t. And, not only that, but all their projects -- all their schemes and plots -- do nothing but serve the purposes of God, and not only do the diabolical schemes fail to conquer God’s Will and destroy God’s plan -- but they *precisely accomplish* God’s Plan.

That holds for all the evils in the world -- all the evil empires, all the religious evil empires, the schisms (both great and small), the heresies (both gross and subtle), the religious wars, persecutions, and mass murders, the hatreds and bigotries, the clerical arrogances and the theological vanities, all the tin pot dictatorships, the occult dictatorship of the Nazis, the atheistic dictatorship of the Soviets, the secular pornographic, debauched, and slothful American Disneyland, and, especially, the monstrous atheistic modernity hatched in the 15th and 16th centuries and today, in the 21st century, grown to such huge, lascivious, blasphemous, irreligious heights.

For, always remember, while Satan wants to involve souls in monstrous sins - real juicy ones that he can sink his teeth into in Hell, like great genocidal tyrants and murderous religious zealots and thundering, spiritually empty Pharisees and Sadducees -- Satan is above all else, and

first, really hungry -- he's starving. So he'll take what he can get. If he can't turn you into Hitler, Stalin or Torquemada, he'll settle for a slothful fornicator. You don't need to engineer the Holocaust, the Soviet monstrosity, or the Spanish Inquisition. Satan will settle for you lazily masturbating to porn in your living room while getting drunk. You won't be as tasty or toothsome as a Hitler or Torquemada -- you'll be the Pabst Blue Ribbon of Hell -- but you'll still be in Satan's refrigerator -- which, in the end, is all that counts.

You see, the whole edifice of secular modernity's stance on religion: that there isn't any supernatural reality or God and there is no divine moral law to which we must pledge our allegiance: is based on the notion that they're right.

They prance around and defame God and encourage others to lose their faith in God, or never gain such a faith, and to live their lives ignorant of theological concepts and in defiance of what, for millennia, has been considered the basic and obvious natural law.

And they do all this because they are *utterly convinced* that the result shall be a noble dissipation of that awful religious delusion that holds our species back -- and that once freed from such crippling shackles, humanity will finally be able to construct a healthy, sane, free, and flourishing civilization.

O happy day.

But what if.....*what if*....that whole arrogant, vain, narrow-minded, unimaginative edifice of secular modernity is just one more scheme, one more plot, hatched by Satan, and perpetuated by his legions of crafty, deceptive, hateful demons?

So the lustful cavort, the arrogant preen, the godless strut before their invisible Lord, and the greedy store up vast hoards.

And then, one day, a magic man appears on the world stage, abetted by every electronic device and mode of instantaneous communication available.

And in one magic show, broadcast live throughout the world, that mysterious magic man eviscerates every last syllable of the atheistical secular modern project.

With the world's understanding of theological concepts totally trashed by centuries of preening atheism, built on an arrogance that is utterly assured that no such kind of magic show could ever be performed, what kind of resistance or skepticism will the world be able to offer to this magic man?

Shall not the world then believe whatever he tells them?

That is why, in Jesus' prayer to the Father before his arrest and Crucifixion, Jesus prays:

I do not pray for the world but for the ones you have given me, because they are yours, and everything of mine is yours and everything of yours is mine, and I have been glorified in them. And now I will no longer be in the world, but they are in the world, while I am coming to you. Holy Father, keep them in your name that you have given me,

so that they may be one just as we are. When I was with them I protected them in your name that you gave me, and I guarded them, and none of them was lost except the son of destruction, in order that the scripture might be fulfilled. But now I am coming to you. I speak this in the world so that they may share my joy completely. I gave them your word, and the world hated them, because they do not belong to the world any more than I belong to the world. I do not ask that you take them out of the world but that you keep them from the evil one. They do not belong to the world any more than I belong to the world. Consecrate them in the truth. Your word is truth. As you sent me into the world, so I sent them into the world. And I consecrate myself for them, so that they also may be consecrated in truth.

(John 9b-19)

The salvation of Christ is only for those who believe in the Spirit, and believe in the Spirit through the Spirit -- for God is Spirit, and the only bridge to that Spirit of God is the Spirit of Christ, who shares the same Spirit with God the Father. Those who cannot believe without magic tricks, without external evidence, and without the absolute certainty of mortal sight have no share in the life of the Spirit.

True Christians will face a tribulation of unspeakable proportions. They will see a world "awoken" to Christ -- a man with supernatural powers ruling the world as the literal Christ, the Temple rebuilt, with the Anti-Christ posing as Christ and officiating as High Priest in the Holy of Holies, with the False Prophet providing the religious, spiritual, and ideological pretense necessary to make the world swallow it all.

And, for most people, who are not true, educated, deeply formed Christians, the whole outrageous and diabolical imposture will be easy to swallow. The people who follow the Anti-Christ will not be obviously wicked people, monsters slaving at the mouth, looking to drink blood and bomb buildings.

The vast majority of the Anti-Christ's supporters will be decent, hard-working, *nice* people. People you could have fun with and hang out with. Tolerant people. Good people. Caring people. Your friends and neighbors.

But - they will be people with no meaningful Christian faith -- who had not, (prior to Anti-Christ's declaration of himself as the Christ), turned to the Risen Christ that they *cannot* see for salvation, who had not formed themselves in the rich and deep teachings of the Bible, who had not participated in church communities and obeyed and respected the authority of the Church.

That is why Jesus says to his apostle Thomas, who doubted His Resurrection and demanded proof (like the secular atheists), "Have you come to believe because you have seen me? Blessed are those who have not seen and have believed" (John 20:29).

God's response to those people who need empirical proof of His existence in order to believe - or even to begin to pray and to investigate the possibility of belief, when the proof is

within your very inner spirit, if only you would listen to it in humility, quietude, and self-effacement, is very simple: Go to Hell.

Lord of Illusions

<https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=INIRToUAQQg>

So, when the last pope and other priests, pastors, and wise rabbis say, “THIS IS THE ANTI-CHRIST! DANGER! DANGER! DANGER! Do not follow him! Do not obey him! Do not worship him!” -- the world beyond the Great Church and a remnant of Israel will give no ear.

The Church - the True Church - will be speaking wisdom and truth...but the rest of the world will hear only bigotry, hatred, and blind stupidity.

Most people outside of the True Church will consider true Christians’ objections to this self-made Christ Ruler as shocking, incoherent nonsense -- a mass of technical legalisms that have no meaning.

The world, not formed in Scripture, faith, and doctrine, will only see the fruits that the Anti-Christ brings: world peace, world security, world cultural harmony, a prosperity the likes of which the world has never known, a freedom from work provided by a dazzlingly productive and abundant economy, peace and brotherhood between all genders, races, and creeds. Every person who follows the Empire of the Anti-Christ, which he will call the Kingdom of Christ, or the Kingdom of God, (whatever suits him at any given moment), will have the fulfillment of their heart’s every longing: satisfaction of all their physical wants and desires, flourishing and emotionally deep relationships, immediate access to whatever material thing they may desire, a repose from work, electronic and technological wonders of amusement and entertainment, and absolute peace and security in which to enjoy it all.

All the Anti-Christ will say is: Only worship me, and all this shall be given to you!

After the final imposture of declaring himself Christ, the Anti-Christ will move from the old tactics of the pre-declaration regime, which involved persecuting the Church and believing Jews as bigots spouting intolerable and disgusting hate speech, to the new and final Kingdom’s final strategy: the murder of all those who do not worship the false Christ.

And, to the newly converted “Christians” of the Anti-Christ’s Kingdom, the true Christians’ reservations and opposition will not be respected as the rights of conscience of people owed freedom of religion. For long before that, the world will have been taught, first, that it needs freedom *from* religion, and, second, that True Christian belief is hate speech and that such hate speech must be stamped out.

So, how will such newly minted “Christians” - the unwitting followers of the Anti-Christ, react to this hated sect’s accusations of their Christ and Savior and God as the Devil, as the Man of Sin, the Lawless One, the Anti-Christ himself?

With the same venom that ultra-secularists have always reserved for the religious, and especially for Christians.

They will say, “We accept that you were right about Christ! Now take yes for an answer! Worship the Christ!”

And Anti-Christ and the False Prophet will play the whole thing absolutely to the hilt.

For remember, Satan can only do anything through mimicking God - perverting God’s truth or parodying it (which is simply an advanced form of perversion). He is the greatest impostor in all of the Cosmos.

So I do not think that the Kingdom of the Anti-Christ will look much like the Great Whores depicted in pretribulationist writings, like *Left Behind*.

I think that the Great Whore of the end times will be a stunningly precise replica of the Kingdom of Heaven, with the Anti-Christ giving an Academy Award-winning performance as the Second Coming of Christ.

For Satan always wanted to be God. He never wanted to be a monster - in pain, humiliated, the opposite of God - he wanted to *be* God, even if it meant usurping and destroying God and sundering the entire creation. So why wouldn’t Satan take the opportunity given to him in the end times to do the best parody of the Kingdom of Heaven that he possibly could?

The Anti-Christ will play the part of Christ very well, imitating the Risen Christ Jesus in every particular that he can. He will be compassionate, heal the sick, reanimate the dead, and bring peace and brotherhood to all.....to all who accept him.

And even that requirement will seem like only the obvious, natural, and *just* prerogative of the King of Kings. For, isn’t God not only gracious and loving, but wrathful towards those who disobey Him?

All who obey him -- at first -- will live in a paradise like the Garden of Eden. Each person will receive the true desire of his or her heart: more than enough delicious food for all, a restored and beautiful environment of parks and promenades and greenery, universal access to money and the resources of the earth, endless free time and leisure and comfort. People will barely have to work, and will spend their days freely making love in public, eating huge banquets morning, noon, and night, and drinking and partying beyond dawn.

The last leaders of the Church, and those dwindling faithful, true Christians will look at this sated and delighted world and say, “Uh.....guys.....this isn’t what the Kingdom of Heaven is supposed to look like.”

The people, those newly minted Christians happily living in the Kingdom of Heaven, will say, “Of course, it is! It’s exactly what I always dreamed heaven would be! I play golf all day! I make love all day! I eat all day! I drink all day! I sleep all day! I bask naked in Central Park under the bright-shining sun, with the birds chirping and in total peace, all day!”

And the True Church will respond, “Uh, guys....Jesus said that the saints will be like the angels in heaven. The angels in heaven don’t spend all day drinking, having sex, and playing naked frisbee. They behold the beatific vision of God, they see God face to face.”

And the great damned mass of Anti-Christians, who will think that they are, in fact, the true Christians will respond, “Beatifi-who-now? Whatchamacallit? I *do* see God face to face, Christ is on television every day -- his digital moving image is plastered everywhere.”

The True Church will say, “No, no - seeing God face to face means experiencing the depths of the reality of God.”

And the False Church, the citizens of the City of Satan, will say, “I experience the reality of *my* God every day -- and this is Paradise. It is Heaven on Earth!”

For, remember: this whole material Cosmos is but one battlefield in the vast, true, all-encompassing reality: the spiritual Creation. Every day of our lives, every second in the material, temporal, passing Cosmos is another day, another second, of battle, of fatal combat, between God and Satan, all part of the Great War in Heaven.

Just as those battles are fought between God’s True Light and Satan’s optical illusions, the Great Tribulations and the reign of the Anti-Christ will be the climax of those battles, the apotheosis of the War between God’s Light and Satan’s illusions.

So - at least in the beginning, before the bowls of plagues that God will send upon the earth to punish the Anti-Christ’s False Kingdom - the Anti-Christ’s Kingdom will *appear* to be the Kingdom of Heaven, God’s Paradise. It will be a terrestrial paradise that looks and feels exactly like Eden -- but it won’t be the cosmic, heavenly, celestial Kingdom of God’s Holy Angels and Saints. But to secular people, especially the uber-secular Americans, Western Europeans, Brits, and Scandinavians of the late 21st or 22nd centuries, they will be so impoverished in spiritual, religious, and theological knowledge that they will simply not be able to tell the difference. And the Chinese?! The Japanese?! The Thais?! They wouldn’t know the Beatific Vision of God from a roasted duck or a high-speed rail system.

Always remember: Satan is a mirror. The greatest mirror, the most polished, the most reflective, the most exact in portraying its subject. But it lacks one critical thing: the Spirit. Satan, the Mirror that is Satan, can reflect the whole of the Light’s output, but it lacks the Spirit that is that Light’s source. So, the whole Plenitude of God will be present in the days of the Anti-Christ’s Kingdom, before the plagues: all satisfaction, peace, plenty, gratification, excitement, harmony, understanding. It will be a Utopia. It will simply lack one little minor detail: God. God’s truth, *His* ways, what *He* wants the Kingdom to be: that will all be thrown out.

And Anti-Christ’s parody of the Kingdom of God will be *exactly - precisely - what Man, what humanity, wants the Kingdom of God to be*. The Kingdom of the Anti-Christ will, before the plagues, be the perfect Kingdom of Man, the Federation of the World.

The False Prophet will do his considerable bit to justify all the obvious deficiencies of the Anti-Christ’s kingdom. The Anti-Christ has to come first you say? Well, the Anti-Christ already did come - he was Hitler....or some other hated figure immediately leading up to the Anti-Christ’s reign. The real Christ will be obvious to all? It *is* obvious to all who are Children of God, who have eyes to see. The formerly secular, and newly converted, masses will eat this up.

I have no idea how the final persecutions will ramp up -- no idea what anti-miracles will be performed, what concocted conspiracies the Anti-Christ will use against Christians, how the angels pouring out bowls of wrath fits in. Except, I would think that, as God pours trouble upon this delightful and happy Paradise of Satan's making (in order to wake people up), Anti-Christ will blame it on the Christians, who Anti-Christ will say are worshippers of Satan!

"Of course!" Anti-Christ (posing as Christ) will say, "I cannot provide perfect peace, security, and happiness while there are unbelievers among you, who blaspheme my name, promote heresies, and are traitors against the Kingdom of Heaven!" The plagues sent by God to punish the Anti-Christ and his followers will be blamed by the Anti-Christ and his followers on the last, dwindling, remaining True Christians.

Therefore, the Anti-Christ will declare all those who fail to worship him children of Satan. The Anti-Christ and the False Prophet may even designate the last pope as the Anti-Christ. So Anti-Christ will wage war against the True Church, disguised as the Triumphant Christ leading the Kingdom of God against the forces of the Anti-Christ and the Children of Satan.

The most militant and hateful religious people will play a special role in all of this. Such people, who have no concern for the love of God, but who merely adore the terror of religion and the feeling of power it gives *to them*, will flock to this false Christ's banner and eagerly, fanatically serve his fake Kingdom. When they hunt down true Christians and murder them, they will not think that they are sinning -- no, they are the instruments of the King's eternal justice, smiting the wicked, the idolators, the faithless, and the disobedient. It will be an orgasm of self-righteousness, expressed in a genocide against those called the children of Satan, in service to what they will consider the true Christ and His Kingdom.

So you can see the extreme peril and disaster that will befall the True Church of those last true Christians. They will be hunted down by the armies of what really looks very much like a Triumphant Christ returned to rule the earth: replete with all power, all worship, and graciously extending all pleasures to those who worship him. And they will be murdered, not as Christians defying the Anti-Christ and Satan, but as blasphemous, heretical, traitorous vermin, Children of Satan who hate God, worship the Devil, and are the henchmen and terrorists of the Anti-Christ.

Christians who obey the dying True Church, and are willing to die for the Name of the invisible Christ not yet returned, in opposition to this visible image of Christ and His Kingdom in worldly ascendancy, will have to resist a double urge: one, that if they only blaspheme the Name of Christ, they could have a happy paradise, and, two, they will have to resist the propaganda that *if they don't* worship this (false) Christ, they'll actually end up going to Hell!

If anything, the tribulations that God sends upon the world through his angels will be, ironically, *comforts* to True Christians, because True Christians will look at the havoc being wreaked upon the Anti-Christ's false Paradise and say to themselves, "Yes....you see, all this nonsense, this vast pit of iniquity masquerading as the Kingdom of Heaven....all these woes and miseries and disasters could never come upon the Millennial Kingdom, much less the New Heaven and the New Earth!" And those miseries poured upon the Anti-Christ's false Kingdom

will be the sign that the Anti-Christ is not at all the Christ of the All-Righteous Father, but merely Satan's Anti-Christ.

We can also imagine a special situation. Let us consider that poor last pope, smuggled around the world, from his home base in Russia (after the Vatican has long been destroyed), fleeing the forces of the Anti-Christ at every turn.

Let us imagine him in plain clothes, in disguise.

And let us imagine him caught by the Anti-Christ.

And let us imagine him in a vast arena, mocked and scourged. And let us call him Peter the Roman. And let us imagine his persecutor, the Anti-Christ himself. And let us imagine that that last pope and the Anti-Christ might have had some familiarity of intimacy, now consumed by the fires of the Anti-Christ's total lust for power and hatred of God.

Scenes from the End of the World

Star Wars: The Force Awakens

<https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=yw-PFWJDObl>

That is why Jesus says, "And if those days had not been shortened, no one would be saved; but for the sake of the elect they will be shortened" (Matthew 24:22).

That is why having a strong Christian refuge of last resort is essential. In a world of final persecution, there should be one last place in the world where a community of True Christians can live their faith, and give their testimony, as a beacon to the persecuted, dying Christian fold in the wider world. I believe that is why Our Lady of Fatima, the apparition of Mary to the three Portuguese children in 1917, was so concerned that Russia turn from evil and be converted to Christ. It would seem that Russia, or at least part of it, will serve as the last stronghold of true Christianity before the true Second Coming.

From all this, it becomes quite clear that the times of the Anti-Christ, and the great tribulation, are Satan's final temptation of the world prior to the Millennium (the Millennial Kingdom). Satan's Anti-Christ will tempt the world with the satisfaction of every fleshly desire, with exaltation in a glorious Kingdom as servants of God, and with participation in the power of that Kingdom, especially expressed through the persecution and murder of True Christians.

As St. Matthew recounts of Christ's Temptation, which occurred after the outpouring of the Holy Spirit after the Baptism of Jesus:

Then Jesus was led by the Spirit into the desert to be tempted by the devil. He fasted for forty days and forty nights, and afterwards he was hungry. The tempter approached and said to him, "If you are the Son of God, command that these stones become loaves of bread." He said in reply, "It is written: 'One does not live by bread alone, but by every word that comes forth from the mouth of God.'" Then the devil took him to the holy city,

and made him stand on the parapet of the temple, and said to him, “If you are the Son of God, throw yourself down. For it is written: ‘He will command his angels concerning you’ and ‘with their hands they will support you, lest you dash your foot against a stone.’” Jesus answered him, “Again it is written, ‘You shall not put the Lord, your God, to the test.’” Then the devil took him up to a very high mountain, and showed him all the kingdoms of the world in their magnificence, and he said to him, “All these I shall give to you, if you will prostrate yourself and worship me.” At this, Jesus said to him, “Get away, Satan! It is written: ‘The Lord, your God, shall you worship and him alone shall you serve.’” Then the devil left him and, behold, angels came and ministered to him.

(Matthew 4:1-11)

Satisfaction. Gratification. Pleasure. Glory. Power. These are the last temptations that the human race will face before the Millennial Kingdom.

We can also gain a clearer appreciation of the nature of the true Christ, and some small glimpse into what the Glorious Appearance of Christ shall be like, when he comes to destroy the Anti-Christ and establish the Millennial Kingdom.

St. Matthew recounts the Great Commission that Christ gave his disciples (Matthew 28:16-20):

The Commissioning of the Disciples

The eleven disciples went to Galilee, to the mountain to which Jesus had ordered them. When they saw him, they worshiped, but they doubted. Then Jesus approached and said to them, “All power in heaven and on earth has been given to me. Go, therefore, and make disciples of all nations, baptizing them in the name of the Father, and of the Son, and of the holy Spirit, teaching them to observe all that I have commanded you. And behold, I am with you always, until the end of the age.”

And consider Matthew 24:29-31:

The Coming of the Son of Man

Immediately after the tribulation of those days, the sun will be darkened, and the moon will not give its light, and the stars will fall from the sky, and the powers of the heavens will be shaken. And then the sign of the Son of Man will appear in heaven, and all the tribes of the earth will mourn, and they will see the Son of Man coming upon the clouds of heaven with power and great glory. And he will send out his angels with a trumpet blast, and they will gather his elect from the four winds, from one end of the heavens to the other.

So, two major points. First, Jesus says that all power in *heaven* and earth have been given to Him. Contrast that with Satan's temptations. All of them concern things of the earth - earthly satisfactions, earthly glory, earthly power.

But that is precisely the flaw - the sin - of Satan, which will be made the foundation of the world empire of the Anti-Christ: to try to create your own Paradise, under your own rule, simply from the spiritual *gifts*, without aligning your spirit with the Spirit of Truth. The sin of Satan is to prefer an earthly paradise (or, rather, more exactly, a created reality of plenitude welling up only from within oneself), rather than the Paradise of Plenitude of the actual, real, and true Spirit.

The Anti-Christ's Empire will, prior to God's toying with it and finally smashing it, be the full plenitude of all the riches of all the gifts of spirit and flesh -- except that one missing ingredient: God.

Christ brings a Kingdom that has all the gifts of spirit and flesh (at least, a flesh in the spirit). But he also brings the one essential ingredient that is *the source* of those gifts: God.

Second, we can see the unfortunate fate of those happy converts to the "Christianity" of the Anti-Christ in those last days. Some kind of miraculous phenomenon, (which I don't begin to pretend to know what it literally means), will make perfectly obvious to these nincompoops the error of their ways. But, marked with the Mark of the Beast, having sworn their fidelity to the Anti-Christ as God, and being confirmed in their sinful wickedness and spiritual blindness, it will be too late. That is why, "all the tribes of the earth will mourn."

Once the miraculous Power of the True Christ is manifested, and the Empire of the Anti-Christ and all his foolish, sinful followers are wiped out by that miraculous Divine Intervention, the Church will be able to regenerate itself in a new way like never before in history. Aided by technology, humanity-Church (for there will be no difference at that point) will be able to fulfill the full implications of the Great Commission.

Go, therefore, and make disciples of all nations, baptizing them in the name of the Father, and of the Son, and of the holy Spirit, teaching them to observe all that I have commanded you. And behold, I am with you always, until the end of the age.

Now, the Millennial Church, a regenerated, post-singularity human race, a race of universal priests, living in a communal, collegial, collaborative, and totally gracious mode and form of life, with the Spirit of the Christ evident to all and guiding the whole endeavor, will go and make disciples of all worlds, baptizing the Cosmos in the Name of the Father, Son, and Holy Spirit, making the transcendence of the Trinity immanent in the material Cosmos, bringing the material Creation under the guiding spiritual truth of the Eternal Law and Order of the Triune Spirit.

At the end of time (as opposed to simply the end of our world which will conclude with the destruction of the Anti-Christ and his False Kingdom), that Millennial Church, after aeons of existence, will be faced with the final conflict: to choose God or to choose themselves/Satan. With the destruction of the material Cosmos imminent, the souls that make up that Great

Millennial Flesh of Christ will have to decide whether to accept the destruction of the Cosmos, and trust that the Spirit will really save them and create a New Creation -- or whether they, in fear and distrust of the Spirit, will do anything and everything to fight to preserve the material Cosmos, believing that 1) God will fail them/there isn't actually a God to save them without a material existence and/or 2) that their Millennial existence is superior to what God has promised them in the New Creation.

Now, remember, and this is important: What I offer above is not meant to be a videotape or transcript of future history. It is meant to evoke the themes, personalities, and historical structures and dynamics that will unfold in the end times.

To whatever extent my writings are influential, Satan will take their impact into account and work around them. Satan will use them, pervert them, twist them, argue with them, and subvert them to his own agenda. When I say X will happen, Satan will make Y happen. If those who come after me say, "You know, Galante said X will happen....but Y could happen too," then Satan will make Z happen.

I said the Anti-Christ will be gorgeous. Maybe he'll be ugly.

I said the Anti-Christ will be a great political leader. Maybe he'll be the pope. Or a great evangelical minister. Or the next Dalai Lama (probably not, but you never know). Or a reality television star (silly thought, you're right).

I said that the Anti-Christ, at first, will be ultra-secularist. Maybe he'll be, all along, a spiritualistic sort, publicly dabbling in occultism a la Deepak Chopra and Oprah.

I said that the Anti-Christ will try to imitate a version of Christianity very closely....maybe now he'll veer off and try out a bolder, more overtly Satanic church.

You see, humans think in a very linear fashion, they're very conformist, and boring and unoriginal....they're not that clever or imaginative.

But Satan, though he possesses only a one-dimensional imagination, has a very *powerful* intellect and imagination and he is supremely clever.

And unlike human beings, he doesn't need to hew to a fixed conception of himself or a fixed agenda or plan. Satan is *not* an ideologue. He is not a Nazi or Soviet -- he doesn't have a fixed conception of how he must act, and then order all his actions in accordance with that.

As Scripture says, Satan is a lion prowling around looking for someone to devour (1 Peter 5:8). He is clever, cunning, sly, inventive. He imitates God's radically abundant, ever-new Spirit, with his own parody of that ever-newness -- the ever-changing mania of wild invention -- deceitful invention.

Satan is not Hitler or Stalin. Satan is the Joker from the Christopher Nolan *Batman* movie franchise. He is a psychotic cannibalistic serial killer who just wants to snatch as many people as possible and stuff them into his mouth. Ideas, ideology, movements, religions, theories -- for Satan they are all just means to an end -- the end being feeding his endless starving spiritual hunger - which can only be stanchied, temporarily, by sucking out the reminiscences of God's essence contained in damned souls.

But think about it this way:

The Anti-Christ may not be beautiful: But if he's ugly, he'll still have a bizarrely powerful charisma, of some kind.

The Anti-Christ may be a secular politician or a religious prelate. But he'll definitely be a charismatic world figure.

The Anti-Christ may be initially focused on secular development and peace, or go right to mysticism and the occult. But his ideas will poison everything about Christian life and the Christian faith.

The Anti-Christ may create a Disney-cum-Pornographic version of the Kingdom of Heaven...or he may create a more Third Reich-style Satanic Empire....but he will still establish full and absolute power through surreptitious and deceitful means, and he will use that power to try to eradicate every last Christian and destroy the Church. Why will Satan try to destroy the Church? Because the fulfillment and completion of the Church means Satan's final defeat.

The point is to get a feel for how Satan plays the chords of his deceptions, so that you can call bullshit on him when the Anti-Christ comes.

Because make no mistake.

He is coming.

Mashiach Yehoshua (Jesus Christ) is on His way.

But the Anti-Christ will be on his way first.

And on the day that Anti-Christ manifests himself, in his diabolical power, exalting himself, luxuriating in the glory that the world will give him for the exercise of that supernatural power -- he won't be a joke.

He won't be a Bill Maher punchline. He won't be wished away by a Sam Harris acerbic comment or a droll Richard Dawkins observation. Maher, Harris, and Dawkins won't have to deal with the Reign of Terror and Tribulation that the Anti-Christ will bring upon the earth. They'll be dead and in Hell, suffering the eternal torments of a spiritual reality that they don't believe in. But they will believe -- too late, once their spiritual eyes are opened to the vast recesses of their arrogant, willful ignorance.

But it is for you, the generations to come, those to live over the course of the next hundred years.

The Anti-Christ is not a fairy tale to scare little children. He is not a cardboard cutout in a cheesy Nic Cage or Kirk Cameron movie. He is not a mythical super-villain out of Christian mythology's central casting.

One day, one horrible day -- he will be very real - and charismatic and loved and powerful and fierce -- and he will command all the worship of the world. He will be this world's final temptation, tempting the human race in those last days with the same temptation to self-preference and disobedience to God with which Satan tempted Jesus in the desert.

He will tempt the world with pleasures unlimited.

With glory as yet unfathomed.

With power unmatched and unstoppable.

And he will demand worship -- and offer life and happiness and peace and pleasures forever to those who submit to his worship....and guarantee eternal death in Hell, and a cruel and miserable and slow death on earth, for those who speak the name of the invisible Christ.

To accept death rather than submit to Anti-Christ will be the whole struggle of those last days. For he will not be militarily defeated. He will not be stopped with resistance movements. This time, the Nazis are going to win....until the last second when the miraculous divine intervention of Christ dispels that whole horrid finale to our sorry human history.

And here's the hard truth:

The visible Anti-Christ, posing deceitfully as the true Christ, will say: Worship me and save your life.

The invisible Christ will say: resist that Man of Evil and save your souls.

For, unfortunately, unlike in less troubled ages, it will not be possible to save both your life and your soul. The world will have to choose between this worldly, passing life and the eternal salvation of your soul offered by the invisible Christ, promised to return just in the nick of time.

The real end times won't be *Left Behind* or some cartoon movie.

It will be *The Godfather*.

And you're Fredo.

To perish will be to try to survive with your life.

To live will be to lose your mortal life for Christ.

It won't be a happy time. It won't be an easy time. It will be a time for heroic faith.

Lionheart

Demi Lovato

<https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=QGSEdDid1sY>

Cast all your fears on Christ

https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=ik_Df0IxAPw

THE ANTI-CHRIST

CHAMPION OF PEACE AMONG ALL RELIGIONS



MY POWER WILL MAKE YOU ALL FREE AND AT PEACE!

From an Islamic website:

“In calling Jesus a messenger, Muhammad was also correct. He did not mean that Jesus was not the Messiah. Muhammad knew that one could be a messenger and not be a Messiah... but as The Messiah, one is also a messenger.

Jesus was both a messenger *and* The Messiah that Allah had promised! What is a Messiah? A Messiah is always known as "a Saviour... a liberator and a deliverer." God had promised to send one (Messiah) to pay the debt of sin for all mankind.

The Messiah!... God's gift to sinful man... The Saviour... The Liberator... Our [Redeemer](#). The [prophets](#) of the Torah foretold of His coming. Muhammad and his Disciples *revered* Him... the Qur'an and the Bible *reveal* Him! The Messiah... The Saviour of the world! Neither the Qur'an nor the Bible speak of any other as being the Messiah!!!

Dear friend, that is the most profound truth! And it is truth that cannot be denied. Jesus is the one and only Messiah. He is the Saviour. He is the Messiah of the Muslims, the [Jews](#), and the [Gentiles](#). Millions throughout the world of every nation and creed accept Him as Saviour.”

<http://christiananswers.net/q-eden/quran-jesus.html>

Kumbaya

<https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=yw-PFWJDObI>

Top Secret

Intelligence Dispatches obtained from Satanic Headquarters

The Satanic War Plan

Satan imitates God in an effort to defeat Him. As God is Three hypostases ('persons') in One Ousia (being), so Satan's ultimate battle plan involves the confluence of three trends in world history, all of which were established by Satan and his demons.

These three trends are Secular Modernity, Islam, and Capitalism.

The evil genius of each trend is to present reality in falsified ways, in ways specifically and infernally designed to dupe human souls into imbibing a one-dimensional, blank, and unimaginative understanding of three basic elements of reality: the World, God, and Plenitude.

Secular Modernity dupes human souls into a one-dimensional understanding of the world. The essence of the world, as it really is, is a structure of spirits created by God, all present to God as His beloved creatures. Secular Modernity loudly and arrogantly and foolishly proclaims that *spirits don't even exist!* All is matter, and matter is nothingness, therefore, at bottom and in truth: *Everything is Nothing!* And each of the infernal trends has a power that reinforces its propaganda of one-dimensionality. Secular Modernity's propaganda of power is technology. Souls are led into the materialist error, (which is ruinous to souls, which are spirits), because they see the knowledge and mechanical power of a scientific materialist approach. Knowledge of the Cosmos and useful machines that create economic abundance are the signs and wonders meant to chain people to materialism. Of course, science and technology are perfectly compatible with a spiritualist approach, and, indeed, a Neo-Berkeleyan spiritualist approach³² can not only incorporate the findings of modern science, but explain the persistence of things that materialist science cannot explain: consciousness, free will, form, and inter-subjectivity.

Islam dupes human souls into a one-dimensional understanding of God. No, Islam says, God is not what Christianity proclaims. Christianity proclaims that God is an Infinite and Eternal Pure Spirit of Total Love, and that that One God is necessarily a multi-dimensional exchange of Intimacy: the Trinity. Christianity understands the radical nature of sin, how sin causes death and sunders the very

³² To be discussed later in this book.

essence of the world such that we, in this world, are under the power of the Ruler of the World: Satan. Christianity understands how sin cannot be forgiven except through a mediation and sacrifice of a dimension of the Godhead that aligns the radically sinful human race with the perfectly All-Righteous God.

Islam say nuh-uh, nope. This world is fine. Nothing is inherently wrong with it. Sin? Ain't no thing but a chicken wing. People are born spiritually neutral into this spiritually neutral creation, which is not at all sundered by sin, nor at all inherently under the power of Satan. All is well. All is well.³³

Your sins? No biggie. God can just snap his fingers and forgive them. Oh, and that whole thing about God as a Total Intimate Exchange of Love? Humbug! God is POWER, MURDEROUS, ALL-CONQUERING POWER!!!!!! ***God has a Son?! God is totally One - a point, not a circle, a mere point without any characteristics, not bound by even his own word, AND WHO ABSOLUTELY WOULD NEVER RAISE UP HIS CREATURES TO BECOME LIKE HIM. No, God says: It's mine! All mine! Worship me as slaves! You are all my slaves! Grovel to me! Now, go my abject slaves: KILL THE CHRISTIANS! KILL THE JEWS! CONQUER THE WORLD!***

TO WAR!

The Lord of the Rings

<https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=TQq4LjSF2rc>

Capitalism dupes human souls into a one-dimensional understanding of Plenitude. God, the Real God, created human souls with a total orientation towards Plenitude, since God oriented all human souls to most desire, and completely desire, Himself, Who is Plenitude Himself. God desires that human souls desire pleasures, gratification, joy, ecstasy, abundance. **BUT**, He desires souls who understand that that Plenitude is in Him, and through Him, and by Him **ALONE**. So, the machines created by the materialist scientific technology of secular modernity create a world in which abundance is the primary characteristic, not the humiliating, and humble-making, poverty that was the primary characteristic of the pre-Capitalist world.

Now, abundance is a great good, but it *becomes* a great wickedness if the spirit who enjoys that abundance *detaches himself through his own vanity* into believing that that abundance is his or her own independent property -- a property gotten through himself, by himself, for himself, without any obligation to God. And how laughable is this, when your very life is the gift of God? So, even though

³³ <https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=JOWtl8nLXlc>

you labor and struggle with all your might to obtain all your property, if your very life is owed to God, then no matter how hard you worked, all your property is owed to God as well! But the Capitalist ethos obscures this.

The Capitalist ethos not only covers up this truth, but stands this fundamental truth of reality squarely on its head. So, instead of intellectuals who witness to the truth, who proclaim the truth of spiritual reality, we get Herbert Spencer, Ayn Rand, Ronald Reagan, Paul Ryan, Donald Trump, Sean Hannity, and Rush Limbaugh.....pathetic, infantile toads who, like gluttonous babies, inanely proclaim: *All is ours! We made it! We get to keep it! We owe none of it to others! We owe no great part of it to others!*

And, then, the ultimate irony: these idolators of great wealth, these Pagans of Mammon, somehow find the gall to proclaim themselves the greatest Christians! And that, when their Mother Goddess, the infernal Ayn Rand, was herself the most vicious, vain, arrogant, and blasphemous atheist imaginable! Because, in reality, in truth, when you say *All is Ours! I got mine and screw you!* - What you're really saying is "I make myself God! I do not owe my life to God, so I do not owe any of my property to God, and to His Will, which is the welfare of *all* His people. I spit on God! My life is not a gift from God -- no, I am my own self-creation, I gave myself life, and thus I have full sovereignty over all the plenitude that I can snatch up in this world!"

So, we have three streams, pissed into the river of history by Satan: (1) Secular Modernity, which convinces men that they are nothing, (2) Islam, which convinces men that murder is the highest form of worship and an attitude of slavery is the highest form of belief, and (3) Capitalism, which convinces men that they are Gods, self-made, all-sovereign, and above the rest of that pathetic mass of losers: the poors.

And, then, in the infernal genius of Satan, these three trends grow separately, clashing, then growing separately, clashing again.

And this is done *precisely* so that it *appears* that these three streams (all apparently in conflict) are the polar opposites of each other.....so that no one would ever piece together that all three streams serve the same purpose: the destruction of the world and the ruination of souls, through making souls one-dimensional, self-idolatrous, murderous wicked monsters.

For Satan is the Lord of Illusions.

So....what do we get? **The French Revolution** - that struggle between a Religious Monarchical Aristocracy, corrupted by greed, and a Secular Modern

Dictatorship, blind, self-righteous, and corrupted by delusions of grandeur and infected with that fundamental sin: believing that this world is all there is, so any form of vile wickedness, especially murder, must be employed in order to make this brief passing world a paradise: For there is no paradise awaiting us on the other side of death.

And what was *almost* the result of the French Revolution? A Satanic Empire under the mad and arrogant sway of that ultimate self-crowned self-creation, Napoleon Bonaparte. A Savior of War and Murder and Deceit, building the external glory of his society, while gutting its spiritual core. The Anti-Christ will be a great admirer and imitator of Napoleon Bonaparte. Hitler is too crude. Stalin too ridiculous in his cult of personality. No, the real Anti-Christ will be beloved by billions, heralded as a Divine Savior, a Holy Man of God, come to restore the World to Glory.

We get **the Cold War**, that great struggle between Secular Modernity, in the form of the brutal, fatalistic, and nihilistic Soviet Communism, and Capitalism, in the form of the self-congratulatory, deluded American Empire. We get an all-out twilight struggle between a Soviet Empire that knew it believed in nothing and an American Empire that thought it was Christian, but really idolized Ayn Rand.

And what was *almost* the result of the Cold War? The total, nuclear annihilation of the world. Satan hated the idea of matter in the first place. It would suit Satan just fine to see this material world engulfed in flame and reduced to ash.

We get **the 21st Century**, what was supposed to be a Paradise of Unlimited Utopia, and turned out to be: 9/11, Hurricane Katrina, the Great Recession (really the Muffled Depression), the Wall Street Capitalist-Propagandist-Fascist Oligarchical Dominion, the Trump Ascendancy, and the worldwide deadly struggle, the War on Terror/Islam's jihad on the West.

(We can also note that, in addition to these three wholesale creations of Satan, Satan infected the Church, causing heresies, the murderous mania of a Christian Jihad - the Crusades, the madness of an East-West Schism that tore the Church's two lungs apart from each other, the Catholic-Protestant fratricidal struggle of pure homicidal madness, and the imperialist triumphalist construction of a Papal Monarchy - a Papal Imperium - that turned the legitimate and paramount prerogative of the holder of the Petrine Authority into a delusional Galactic Emperor with a roving, arrogant spiritual Death Star, the careerist, money-loving, scheming Vatican bureaucracy.)

So we see these three forces marching along, at each other's throats: an Islam bent on world conquest and vile murder, a Casino Capitalism that leaves

80% of their societies impoverished while exalting a tiny oligarchy of nauseating wealth, and a stewing, defeated Secular Modern ethos, bubbling up with every innovation to the social order that it can hatch from its fetid, God-deprived brain - an Avenging Ultra-Secularism in the making that will, Spanish Civil War-style, come bursting out from nowhere, making war on any religious impulse that dares to show its face.

And it all *seems* discordant, three streams that have nothing to do with one another. The Al-Qaeda and ISIS that launch hideous, revolting attacks on innocent civilians. The pathetic and debauched Saudi Arabian elites that fund these attacks. The deluded and whacko Iranian regime whose official foreign policy is the Apocalypse. The prostitute-loving, cocaine-snorting, vain idiocies of the Wall Street-CNBC-Corporate America elite. The atheistical, ultra-Secularist Ultra-Leftists in Occupy and the Sanders campaign who hate the coked-out, debauched swindlers who are ruining our lives with their greed. The placid and un-ironical Scandinavians who serenely watch a world gone mad from their Northern outpost, rationally building a paradise on earth, filled with sensibility, humanity, and pleasure.

It all *looks* like strands that have nothing to do with one another.

But, the Anti-Christ will come straight into this storm. It will appear that he descended straight from Heaven, dropped like grace from the Almighty. And he will offer himself as the solution to the great struggles between the three streams. He will present *himself* as the Cure, as God returned to save the world.

To the Islamic world, he will say: “I am the Christ (or I am the Mahdi, and the False Prophet here, *he* is the Christ, or some sophisticated jumble of doctrines). I will unify Islam, Judaism, and Christianity, along with the other religions, into one great World Faith of Peace, with myself as the Savior and Liberator.”



Imam Mahdi is the 12th Shia Imam and according to Islamic hadiths is in 'occultation' or hidden and will return to earth to establish peace and justice on earth. He was born on July 29 869 in the city of Samarra, Iraq and his mother Nargis was of Roman descent.

He was kept hidden from birth till he disappeared because the rulers of the time the Abbasids knew the Prophecy of Imam Mahdi who will bring about a revolt against oppression and tyranny. The Abbasid's [sic] knew that the prophesised [sic] one will be the son of the 11th Shia imam, Imam Al Askari.³⁴

Ben Solo, I mean, the Anti-Christ, will say, "Cool story, bro. I love the script, I've always wanted to work with that director. I accept the role."

³⁴ <http://www.veteranstoday.com/2013/08/11/why-is-israel-looking-for-imam-mahdi/>



What could possibly go wrong?

You do realize, of course, that the motifs in the Islamic pictures are rather...shall we say, I don't know....eh "gothic", no? (And seamless with the motif of Mordor.) N'est-ce pas?

To the Secular Modern world, he will say, *Look - Lookie Here! I have magic powers - that Science! can neither explain nor deny!!!!!!* Look, Dad, no hands! I can reanimate the dead (probably through infesting corpses with demonic spirits), heal the sick (through dispelling the viruses and cancers under Satan's dominion), shoot lightning bolts out of my eyes, defy gravity and levitate, fly around, mess with people's perceptions of the universe around them, read minds, bend people to my will. Oh, how the Swedes will rejoice and come to Christ (or the Mahdi, or whatever different names he will have different populations call him)! Oh, how the Richard Dawkins of the future will humbly kneel before him and beg forgiveness for his blindness, his face welled with tears, which the Anti-Christ will most beneficently grant him.

And to the Capitalist elite, he will say, "Come, rule with me, for I will unfold pleasures of sex and food and drink and excitement and electronic wonders that are beyond description. Yes, I will, for a time, improve conditions for those sheep below you, being led to the slaughter. But come, the rich are blessed by my father [below], and my *greatest, most sublime, most exclusive* pleasures and powers will be yours, and yours alone, to share with me, your God!

So, *this* is how the Anti-Christ will bring "peace" to the world. A peace totally dependent on his Cult of Personality, that

demands the worship of him, and his authority, and the absolute submission to his worldview, upon pain of death.

The Anti-Christ will bring peace to the three Satanic streams introduced into history by Hell, forging a world empire based on his own supernatural power, supreme technological might, a world religion with universal sway, and the whole apparatus of global capitalism at his command.

And what role will True Christians who are awaiting the invisible Messiah play in all this? What role will True Christians have who do not need to see miracles to believe, who affirm that the true Second Coming will be obvious to all, *such that doubt is impossible*, who do not agree that Christianity is compatible with Islam, who do not agree that Christ would preside over a world kingdom in which the rich are his co-partners, and who, rightly, see this World Ruler as the Anti-Christ?



Special Warning for True Christians: The Mark of the Beast

The Mark of the Beast may be called the Sign of the Cross

When the Anti-Christ comes in full power, revealing his supernatural powers and establishing himself as World Ruler and God and Christ and Savior and Liberator and Uniter worthy of all worship and allegiance, he will demand that all his worshippers receive a mark of their allegiance. As a *mark*, meant to be visible to other believers, we can indeed figure that it will be a prominent tattoo (on the forehead or hand, as the Bible states) along with an electronic device. This mark will be the sign of the person's allegiance to the Anti-Christ, who they proclaim as the Christ and as their God and Savior.

All those who refuse to be tattooed and to have the electronic device injected into themselves will be executed.

The tattoo will be necessary for inclusion in the social order, and the electronic device will be necessary not only to purchase food and pay rent/mortgage payments/taxes, but to buy or sell anything in the New World Economy. The Anti-Christ's regime will have death squads rounding up anyone who does not have the tattoo and device, and, if they refuse to denounce the invisible Christ and worship the visible "Christ", they will be executed.

So, here's my advice. Here's a warning. When a charismatic man rises to world power and then says, "Hey, look! I have magic powers!" **DON'T FOLLOW HIM!**

And whatever you do, don't receive the tattoo or the device.

For if you do, you will be one of those of whom Jesus said, “And then the sign of the Son of Man [probably the Cross, a miraculous appearance of a huge Cross in the sky] will appear in heaven, and all the tribes of the earth will mourn, and they will see the Son of Man coming upon the clouds of heaven with power and great glory. And he will send out his angels with a trumpet blast, and they will gather his elect from the four winds, from one end of the heavens to the other” (Matthew 24:30-31).

Remember, the True Christ does not bubble up from world affairs and rise to worldly power, and then *boom!* suddenly reveal himself with magic powers as *Ta-da!* the Christ, or the Savior, or all of them wrapped together, or whatever.

The True Christ appears *from heaven, miraculously, out of nowhere, like a sucker punch!*

Better to die than receive the Mark of the Beast. Far better.

But remember as well: The Anti-Christ won't be stupid. He will be diabolically clever and utterly brilliant.

So, he will present the Mark as a Second Passover. Anti-Christ, portraying the Returned, or Reincarnated (or whatever), Christ will say, “A great deluge of God's wrath is coming upon the world, just like the Ten Plagues of Egypt. And anyone who does not receive the Mark will be killed by God's coming wrath.”

For the Anti-Christ will also set himself up as the New and Second Moses, of whom Scripture says, “A prophet like me will

the LORD, your God, raise up for you from among your own kindred; that is the one to whom you shall listen” (Deuteronomy 18:15)

The Anti-Christ, and his False Prophet, will argue that the passages in the New Testament that say that the Second Coming will be totally miraculous and out-of-nowhere, were simply faulty misinterpretations, or poorly transmitted traditions.

So, those expecting a worldly Messiah to rise up *from the world* in the future, will eat up the Anti-Christ’s bullshit, and they will be fiercely devoted to this Messiah’s regime.

But, what the False Christians will be told, and believe, is a Second Passover to save them from God’s wrath, and from Hell, will, in fact, be a Satanic Passover --- a Mark for those *damned to Hell*, and when the Wrath of the Father comes in the form of the Sign of the True Christ, those with the mark will be left behind to suffer their fate: the mass destruction of Divine Wrath. Only the Elect, those True Christians who refused the Mark, will be gathered by the angels -- protected from the Divine Wrath.

The Anti-Christ will tell you: “Accept the Mark of Christ, and you will save your life, and be prosperous and happy, and be in Heaven and never die. Refuse the Mark of the Christ and you will be executed and go to Hell.”

Don’t listen to him! Run from this Mark of the “Second” Passover -- really, the Satanic Passover. The Second Coming of Christ does not require any Mark of Christ. The True Christ in His Second Coming only requires the Faith of Christ in the heart.

So, REMEMBER, the Anti-Christ will not say, “Hey there, everybody, I have this wonderful Mark of the Beast -- receive it and be damned to Hell!”

*Noooooooooo.....*The Anti-Christ will say, “This is the mark of devotion to God -- this is the Blood of the Lamb of the Second Passover, everybody who receives it will live and be granted Paradise.....everybody who does *not* receive it will die and be damned to Hell.”

But **SATAN IS A LIAR!!!**

So, everything the World Ruler, the Anti-Christ, says will be a lie -- will be a perversion, *a reversal* of the truth.

So, rather than everyone who receives his Mark -- which won't be *called* the Mark of the Beast, but *will* be the Mark of the Beast -- receiving eternal life, everyone who receives it will be damned when the Glorious Appearance of Christ occurs.

All those with the Mark of the Beast will be killed by God through the power of the Holy Angels, like the first born of the Egyptians were killed during the Tenth Plague during the Exodus.

REMEMBER: The Anti-Christ will try to make the Mark of the Beast sound as appealing as possible. So, Satan *really* wants to be able to call it the Sign of the Cross. So, he would love to say to everybody: In order to survive the “Second Passover”, everyone must receive the Sign of the Cross on his forehead or hand: those who really believe and aren't vain will receive it on their forehead, for those who are more vain about

their appearance, the Anti-Christ will be merciful and compassionate and permit you to only put it on your forehead. So, remember Kim Kardashian, the Anti-Christ will permit you to put the “Sign of the Cross”, i.e. the Mark of the Beast on your forehead -- so when the Glorious Appearance happens and the Holy Angels kill you and you are damned to Hell for all eternity, you can still look good. Satan is very merciful and compassionate that way.

But also remember, if this Warning works well, or particularly well, Satan and his Anti-Christ won't be able, or might prefer not, to call the Mark of the Beast the Sign of the Cross - so it might be an Islamic Moon or some other religious symbol, like a star, possibly a Star of David or some other esoteric sign I'm not thinking of. In any event, Revelation 13:17 explicitly states that the Anti-Christ's name or number (666) will be either the whole of the mark, or part of it, or any alternative mark. So, perhaps, Satan will, indeed, just straight up go for Satanic symbolism, like 666, even incorporating a pentagram or the Sigil of Baphomet.

Imagine how stupid you'll feel - and damned you'll be - if you get a tattoo on your forehead or hand -- or anywhere else.

The True Christ of the True Second Coming WILL NOT require you to get a tattoo. DO NOT ACCEPT SPECIAL RELIGIOUS TATTOOS -- NOT EVEN UPON PAIN OF DEATH, NOT EVEN IF THE RULER OF THE WORLD COMMANDS IT.

UNDERSTOOD?

Islam has an idea that the returned Christ Jesus will lead an army with black flags to kill all unbelievers. That will be Satan's final march across the world, with the False Prophet, in the disguise of Christ Jesus, leading an Evil Army (of some robots, of some acolytes) to try to get as many Christians as possible to blaspheme the Name of the invisible Christ, and thus forfeit salvation and suffer eternal damnation.

SO REMEMBER: *The real Christ will NOT have a world government. The real Christ will NOT have a world religion. The real Christ WILL NOT have an army composed of human soldiers and robots. The ONLY army the Real Christ will have is the Holy Angels, led by the Archangel Michael. And the Holy Angels will miraculously appear out of nowhere -- don't believe any bullshit about the Holy Angels being incarnated in robots or cyborgs or some nonsense. There will be NO argument and NO disbelief when the Real Christ gloriously and miraculously appears.*

There will be NO necessity for an Army under the leadership of a "Christ Jesus" under the authority of this "Christ Mahdi" to literally hunt people down and kill them for disbelief.

Those from a Jewish background also have to watch, because the Anti-Christ and the False Prophet will probably try to pass themselves off as the Mashiach ben David and the Mashiach ben Yosef. The False Prophet, who plays the role of

Christ Yeshua, will probably rise from a grave in Jerusalem and pretend to be the Mashiach ben Yosef, Yeshua, son of Yosef (Joseph).

The Anti-Christ, meanwhile, will claim that he is the superior Mashiach ben David, the rightful World Ruler.

So, diabolically syncretized, Islam and traditional Judaism, in the form of the One World Religion will say that the Anti-Christ is the Christ Mahdi and the Mashiach ben David and the False Prophet is Christ Jesus and the Mashiach ben Yosef.

In any event, when some globally powerful, charismatic, and beloved political figure claims absolute world power and then says, “Hey, let’s kill everybody who doesn’t follow me,” you can bet your last dollar that you’re dealing with the Devil.

Also, the Anti-Christ will likely call an evil council.³⁵ After Peter the Roman is forced into hiding, the Anti-Christ will hold a conclave to elect a new Pope, who, of course, will be an Anti-Pope. The Anti-Christ will say that the true Pope, Peter the Roman, is an Anti-Pope, or perhaps the Anti-Christ himself. This Anti-Pope, directed by the Anti-Christ, will convene an ecumenical council of the Catholic Church in which Christianity and Islam will be unified, with the promulgation of new doctrines that conform to the Islamic religion and theology. All Catholics will be required by the Anti-Pope and the Evil Council to submit to this new religion.

BEHOLD THE FATE OF THE FALSE “CHRISTIANS”

Lord of Illusions
He’s not your Shepherd

³⁵ See the prophecies of Anne Catherine Emmerich.

Secular Modernity, Islam, and Capitalism are superficial systems and doctrines

Remember, as Father Smith always said, the only way to *not* encounter God is to be superficial. As Father said, you can be anything else, good or bad, rich or poor, intelligent or not, beautiful or not, popular or not -- if you live any of these realities *at their depths*, you will encounter God.

So, consider the horror of the three Satanic streams: Secular Modernity, Islam, and Capitalism.

Each one promotes a completely superficial approach to the area of life in which it holds sway. That superficiality is what I consistently call a “one-dimensional” perspective.

Secular Modernity’s field is the World, and the study of the World is Science (from the Latin *scientia*, meaning knowledge). Secular Modern Science promotes a superficial view of Science and of the World. While it achieves solid, demonstrable accomplishments in terms of *power*, in providing knowledge of the *how* of the world (which produces technology), it has totally failed to make any achievements in the *why* of the world. The *what* of the world is a confluence of the “how” and the “why”. If you only walk around with knowledge of the “how” and not the “why”, *you will never have anything but a superficial understanding of the World*. To put the matter in technical philosophical terms, Secular Modern Science has totally privileged the material and efficient causes, while being all thumbs with the formal and final causes.

And why is this? Because Secular Modern Science *fundamentally* misunderstands the nature of spirit. Secular Modern Science begins with the proposition, either from a rationalist or empiricist perspective, that all knowledge is inherently *demonstrable*. Secular Modern Science (and this perspective actually reaches deep back to Socrates, Plato, and Aristotle, but that’s another book) then turns its rationalist-empiricist gaze at spiritual realities: consciousness, form, free will, intersubjectivity - the soul - and it says...I dunno, I don’t see anything *demonstrable* here. Therefore, Secular Modern Science says, there is not, perhaps *cannot*, be any knowledge of such things. *And* once there can be no knowledge of such things, because there can be no demonstration of such things, it is a very easy path to simply saying *therefore there can be no such things!* c.f. Richard Dawkins, Sam Harris, Christopher Hitchens, Bill Maher - the Usual Suspects.

But this is a *fundamental* error. Because all reality, and thus all knowledge, is *not* solely demonstrable. The *other* half of reality and knowledge, and, in fact, *the more important part of reality, the part of reality that is the CORE* of reality is not the demonstrable, but the intuitive. The emanation of reality, the

epiphenomenon of reality, is the material, which is demonstrable. *But that from which that epiphenomenon proceeds, in other words, the phenomenon - the inner reality (the real reality...i.e., the reality)*, is the **spirit**, which is intuitive, not demonstrable.

That is why no “proof” for God can be given: for God is Spirit...and not even “a” Spirit, but Spirit itself. As such, there can be no “demonstration” of God (i.e. a demonstration defined as an account that dispels all doubt). There can only be an *intuition* of God. Now, demonstrable arguments for God can, in a way, be made. But, of course, none of them hold epistemological *power*, and none of them strike the mind as *necessary*, in the same way that a mathematical or empirical proof does. That is because demonstration *looks out*, and gains verification from unavoidability or the confirmation of the material senses. But intuition *looks within* - that is, it *looks within its own spirit and thereby discovers the Spirit that is necessarily within itself*.

Of course, we live in a world that is all backwards and upside down. The best symbol for this world is the upside down Cross -- because this temporal-spatial-material world in which we live is totally riven -- totally infected and ruined -- with the power of sin, which is the source of Satan’s authority, which is why he is the Ruler of the World.

Since we are bound up in sin -- mortal sin, but even, everybody, in venial sin and, even the greatest saints among us, a *disposition*, or secret longing, towards sin -- our spiritual sight is blinded -- occluded by sin -- such that we are *unable* to use our spiritual sight to *look within* and see the Spirit. Thus we cannot obtain a certain, adamant, *intuitive account* of the reality of God.

If we were sinless -- and by sinless, I mean not even *tempted* by the false and empty promises of pleasure, intimacy, and plenitude of the act of sin (of disobedience to God’s Will) - then we would have **no doubt** whatsoever of the Spirit’s existence. The Spirit’s existence would be the cogito ergo sum of our interior, spiritual existence -- a truth so axiomatic that (rather than be the source of endless doubt) it would be totally unthinkable that it could be doubted.

That state of perfect spiritual sight, in which the doubt of God (of the Triune Spirit) is not only not entertained, but literally, mathematically *impossible*, is the blessed state of the Holy Angels.

Of course, there is not a single person in the world who is not even *tempted* by sin -- for even the most “virtuous” among us, still harbor, no matter how deep it is buried within us, the lurking suspicion that *maybe* some kind of pleasure could be gained from something morally illicit, something against the Will of God. A windfall cash benefit that we spend on high times, a visit to a brothel, a line of cocaine, a torrid adultery, some time with pornography, the prideful exercise of power -- even if we spend our whole lives striving in the other direction, towards

purity and righteousness -- we all of us still harbor a glancing look back...that “*maybe it would be fun*”.

The Holy Angels do not think this way, at all. They look at any kind of disobedience to God and see nothing but a flaming pile of shit. Whereas even the most continent, prayerful, truly (in our world) holy monk sees a beautiful prostitute, and *somewhere inside of himself desires to fornicate with her*, the Holy Angels see the parallel temptation -- that of overthrowing God and reigning as God instead themselves -- as not *at all, in any way* even possibly desirable -- they see *any* deviation from total alignment with God’s Holy Will as the totally noxious fumes from a flaming pile of shit.

That is *precisely* why the sin of Satan and the damned, fallen angels is so unforgivable. Satan and his angels saw the total Beauty of God, and they saw the flaming pile of shit that was disobedience, and Satan, their leader, said, “Hey, you know what, I want to gamble on the flaming pile of shit: I think God is full of shit, and I think that, if I choose the flaming pile of shit, *I, as a Higher God*, can make that flaming pile of shit a Higher Heaven.”

Unfortunately for the forever-damned Satan, there is no “Higher God” than God, and there is no “Higher Heaven” than the Highest Heaven of the Triune One’s Abode. That is a fundamental, axiomatic principle of Reality. And the necessary corollary of that Great Axiom, that Prime Axiom, is that all that is within the Triune One’s Abode is Uncreated -- that is, Eternally Self-Existing -- and thus is *necessarily* superior to any creature, that is, the existing-through-the-Self-Existing.

In traditional theological language, God is the Necessary being, and all other beings are contingent. All creatures are contingent on the Necessary. There is no such thing as something other than the Necessary “self-existing”. To Self-Exist is to be Necessary: that is a restatement of the Prime Axiom. The question, of course, (the center of the issue in the War in Heaven) is whether Reality is monotheistic or polytheistic. Is Reality a monistic (from the Greek word “*monos*”, meaning single) realm of One Necessary, or is it a pluralist realm of at least two Necessaries, and maybe many, or maybe infinite Necessaries?

Satan staked his whole reality (what we would call “his future”, but, of course, in Eternity there is only NOW, not past, present, and future: there is only an enduring PRESENT) on the idea that, at bottom, what God (correctly) called Satan’s contingent being, as opposed to God’s Necessary Being, could replicate Necessary Being such that, *through Satan’s own contingent being he could raise up his contingent being to Necessary Being*.

In other words, Satan believed that he could *create himself*, that he could *bring himself into being*. But nothing can “bring *itself*” into being, much less create itself into Being. One either *Is* from all eternity (Being) or *becomes* through

another (Becoming). Being is the Uncreated and Becoming is the created. This is yet another restatement of the Prime Axiom.

Satan is the mirror reflection of God. God is the reality, and Satan, the spirit, is simply a mirror meant to *reflect* the Beauty of God. But, Satan, in his deranged blankness, came to think that he was the Beauty.

It is as if a man pointed a gun into the mirror, and the mirror thought to itself, “Hey, *I* have a gun, let me kill the man!” The mirror thought that its *reflection* of a gun (of that power) was itself the actual gun.

So both shot. Unfortunately for the mirror, the man was real and, ultimately, the mirror was not (or at least, the mirror only had reality through reflecting reality). So, (assuming for this metaphor that the man was standing at a safe distance), in the war of the Man and the Mirror, the man shot the mirror -- leaving the man totally unharmed and the mirror shattered.

Of course, Muslims attack the Divinity of the Son, who became incarnate as Christ Jesus of Nazareth, precisely because they argue that God cannot be brought into being, and, they say, the Son was brought into being. Indeed, they always and loudly proclaim that the doctrine of the Divinity of the Son, essential to Christianity, is a Satanic hoax. Muslims have always argued that Trinitarian Christianity (which is the only kind of Christianity that Jesus and the Apostles ever taught) is Satanic. They do it publicly, on television, the Internet, and to your face. But they get apoplectic when Christians return the favor. That is because Muslims are, on a fundamental spiritual level, totalitarians: Muslims are first class citizens who get to say what they want to say, and Christians must bow their heads or get them chopped off. No matter how polite or kind or apparently gracious a believing Muslim is, when push comes to shove, the fundamental orientation of their “religion”, really an anti-religion, is murder, tyranny, and slavery. They’re quite a special kind, those kind, compassionate Muslims.

Islam is fundamentally incompatible with the human spirit. So, the only way for a Muslim to truly be gracious or kind or loving is to be less Islamic. There are many wonderful Muslims in the world, many of them my friends (former friends, I suppose), but the only way for a practicing, believing Muslim to balance their Islam with their humanity is to push one aside. This is not racism. Muslims, as human beings, and not prisoners of a Satanic anti-religion, have the same human dignity and equality as anyone else. But they are kept in spiritual bondage to the spiritual slavery that is the essence of Islam. George W. Bush was too nice and polite a man. Islam does not mean Peace. Islam means Slavery to Satan.

All that talk of “compassion” and “mercy” and “blah-blah-blah” is but the mask of a murderer, just as the All-Compassion and All-Mercy of their “God” is but the mask of Satan.

That is why all extreme Muslims turn to violence....and that is also why so many ISIS recruits have fled from the smoldering garbage pit of that Satanic orgasmic eruption. The ones with any kind of conscience run to their “Caliphate” gung-ho to fight for God, and then rather quickly discover that they have enrolled in the Armies of Satan. The Children of Satan, those most ardent Muslims, never can glut themselves with heinous murder, cruelty, rape, torture, slavery....it all comes so *naturally....precisely because they are so at home in the world.*

For Satan taught Muslims to believe that this world is spiritually neutral, rather than under the Dominion of Satan. Christianity teaches that God must invade the world, through Christ and the Flesh of Christ which is the Church. Islam teaches that the world is not fallen, and is precisely as God created it, and thus they would believe that an invasion of the world would come from Satan. So, we have a big “You’re Satan, No, you’re Satan” between Christianity and Islam. Which is precisely how God and Satan talk. But remember, only one is right, the other is wrong.

I am a fervent, even “rabid” Christian. Yet, never in my wildest dreams would I *ever* dream -- never, never, never, never, never, never even at all for a split second *dream* of murdering a Muslim because he called my Christianity Satanic.

And yet, I bet, and I would bet a great deal, that for even the kindest, gentlest, most apparently peace-loving Muslim it is all he can do to repress his slaving, frantic, rabid, murderous hatred for me.

Now, I might dream of murdering someone who *hurt* me, or hurt someone I loved. Because I am a sinful man, like all men and women, and not God or an angel. But murder someone because he insulted my religion? The thought has absolutely no attraction to me.

But why does the thought of murder so naturally appeal to a Muslim? Why must the believing Muslim, even if he wishes to be kind and loving, *suppress* that desire to murder?

And why do I, as a Christian, not have any such desire to murder to suppress in the first place?

In fact, not only do I not have the desire to murder someone who calls my Christianity Satanic....I don’t feel any hatred or even anger at all. I feel nothing but love for my fellow creature, who I hope, might one day become my brother.

What is the source of my complete security and serenity in my faith?

And what is the source of the total insecurity and apoplectic rage in the Islamic faith?

Why are there fundamentalist Christians, all over the world, but so few of them bomb public arenas or open fire in public places? Indeed, of *all* the Christian fundamentalist terrorists, *there is always some other motivating reason*: such as abortion or the Irish Republican cause, or, in the case of White Supremacists, they kill because of their racism. But I am not aware of any Christians who kill simply for the sake of Christ and the Church, or to defend the honor of Christianity.

I am not aware of any Christian Fundamentalist group that believes in, or carries out, the practice of murdering others *in order to convert them or to establish the supremacy of Christianity*. Even the American Empire, which is hardly Christian at all (it is about as Christian as a brothel) does not wage war in the Middle East for the sake of converting people to Christianity. The American Empire wages war to control oil or to exert geopolitical power or to clamp down on terrorist groups. It's all pretty old hat, another day at the office for a world empire -- nothing much theological or religious about it.

But with Muslims, they murder and bomb *precisely* for the sake of Islam itself. They believe that murdering and bombing will bring about the triumph of a World Islamic Empire.

That's rather odd, actually. Because, if Satan is the Murderer from the Beginning, the Father of Murder, and if, as the Muslims say, Christianity is Satanic, why is it the Muslims who are driven to murder, and not the Christians?

Now, it's true, Christianity is responsible for the Crusades, which were quite murderous. If anything, the behavior of the Muslim warriors was more gracious and less brutal.

But, first of all, let's get our chronology straight. Who invaded who first? Christendom didn't invade Islam, Islam invaded Christendom starting in the 7th century. (The conquest of the Christian Near East counts as an invasion of Christendom, and the first incursion by Islam into Europe itself was a failed invasion of Sicily in 652.)

Besides, I agree that the violent bent of medieval Christendom was Satanic. I simply assert that the violence came from an infection of the Church with the lust for worldly power, which occurred when the Church allowed itself to be co-opted by the Roman Empire, and later when the Church became embroiled in and co-opted by, first, the barbarian kingdoms, and, then, the more mature medieval kingdoms.

But what is Islam's excuse?

Christianity began peaceful and free: a religion for free, peaceful people who wanted nothing more than to love God and love each other in freedom and peace. Over time, as Christianity became the foundation of Western civilization, it got infected with the Satanic virus of worldliness.

But Islam was born with a sword in its hand and had a lust for world empire in its crib. Its scriptures do not speak of peace and love, they speak of conquest and violence (with some “mercy” and “compassion” thrown in to keep up appearances). It would take the madness of Secular Modernity to get people to worship Satan outright and explicitly.

Christianity lost itself when it became an object of the state, when it became “statefied”.

Islam was born as a state, and the idea of an Islamic State is inextricably bound up in the very matrix of the “religion”.

Christianity defiled itself when it became an engine of war....which is why Christians rose up and fought against the Militaristic Disease that infected the Church.

Islam’s religious book explicitly engineers Islam to be an engine of war, designed to conquer the world.

The matrix, the essence, of Islam is War, Power, and Conquest, all enforced by murder.

The matrix, the essence, of Christianity is Freedom, Peace, Joy, and Love.

This is why Christianity, when it got sick, got well again, and here we are in the 21st century with a pacific, freedom-loving, people-loving Christianity.

Islam *is* a disease. So even though it had an initial flourishing when it got its way back in the Middle Ages, when its delusions of grandeur and lust for military conquest were denied, it sank back into its den and stewed with bitter anger and outrageous hatred.

Christianity, in its essence, is a long-suffering saint, who, in good times and bad, *ultimately* maintains its true self, which is considerate, peaceful, and loving.

Islam, in its essence, is a mobster, who, when he gets his way, can be quite cheerful and gregarious and kind and generous and throws great parties. But when he doesn't get his way, he flies into a homicidal rage and commits heinous murders and shoots up restaurants.

We're basically at that point in world history where the mobster has shown his true face. We're post-restaurant-shooting, with the bloodied dead bodies all over the floor, and the mobster says, "Yeah....but what about those great parties?"

Now, here's the rub. You could say that Christianity became the mobster in the Middle Ages, so that means Christianity is invalidated too. I disagree with that because I believe that it is very clear that Christianity was *infected* with state-power and the lust for war. Islam was *born* as a religion of state-power and war.

The only way Islam could ever even make an argument that it was something more than a plague would be for the religion to become totally pacific, such that the most radical Muslim was the most radical for peace.

If that should ever happen, then my argument would be seriously diminished, maybe even fall apart.

Until then:

Rosemary's Baby

https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=jwqMv_ci2jU

And I simply will not stomach the oft-repeated claim that historical grievances against the West are all there is to Muslim hatred.

I am of Spanish and Sicilian descent, and if historical knowledge serves me, my people were conquered and enslaved by the Muslim hordes. My people were conquered, murdered, tortured, raped. No doubt, I am myself almost certainly the product, somewhere along the line, of rape of the Spanish and Sicilian populations by Muslims -- probably many rapes.

Now we are told by Muslim apologists that the conquests of Spain and Sicily were such boons to the people, such a great merciful benefit to my people. Well it wasn't any great mercy to the Christians who desperately defied the Islamization of their society and fought tooth and nail to regain their freedom. The Muslim conquests were brutal, opportunistic, vile affairs that aimed at crushing

freedom. The Muslim apologists will claim that they introduced superior agriculture and industry.....so that makes their conquest all right.

I have a modest proposal: Iran, Saudi Arabia, Egypt: Submit to American Imperial rule. We will bring you technology and make your industries (and agriculture) far more prosperous than they are now. Oh, of course, you will need to convert to Christianity.....well, no, we're very kind...you can be dhimmi....so you can still practice your islam (your rightfully humbled islam) in your home, in private, but if you try to convert any Christian to Islam, we'll kill you. You're welcome. We're very compassionate and merciful that way.

This is the infuriating arrogance of Islam. We are constantly told that murder and terrorism are totally justified, or at least sympathetic, because of evil, diabolical Western intervention in Islamic lands.

But I, as a person of Spanish and Sicilian heritage, am supposed to be grateful to the murderous conquerors of my people who put the beloved Christianity of my ancestors under their filthy boot.

And yet for all of that evil history of Islamic imperialism, I feel absolutely no hatred towards Muslims. If some Christian were to bomb a mosque or open fire in a Saudi Arabian public square, I would *not* cheer and say, "That's for my ancestors, screw you!" I would be horrified and saddened.

And for the liberals who defend Islam and decry "Islamophobia"....what about Islamofascism....which is none other than Islam itself?

Islamophobia? WTF!!!!

I'm Spanish and Sicilian. I'll be damned before I have some English or German or Scandinavian (!) or whatever people lecture *me* about Islamophobia. If you think that some blonde-haired woman or some WASPy college professor is going to wag their finger in my Spanish-Sicilian face about Islamo-fucking-phobia, they've got another thing coming.

I'm literally laughing as I write this: Imagine some jackass Norwegian cultural studies professor lecturing *me* about Islamophobia -- the same Norseman whose ancestors *also* conquered Sicily (along with the Romans and Greeks before that.....we've had it rough.....). Don't let the Norsemen fool you with their lox and social welfare programs -- they're brutal jackasses.

I tell you what -- let aliens invade Earth. Then let the aliens get forced off the planet by human resistance. Then see how *you* would feel about being called "alienophobic".

You know what, Sicilians? I think we've had just about enough of this crap! I say, we go out there and put some points on the board! I say we declare independence from Italy, build up the most powerful military the world has ever known, develop nuclear weapons, and go out and conquer the world!

I say it's time for a Sicilian World Empire!!! All shall bow before the Majesty of Sicilian Might!

Hey, Spaniards, you want a seat at the table? Come on and join us in this Great Hispano-Sicilian Jihad!

The blonde, pale atheists and the swarthy Muslims shall taste fear at last!!!

I don't know if this kind of world conquest is actually compatible with Christianity.....it probably isn't.....so I have another modest proposal: we chuck this namby-pamby Christianity and adopt Al Pacino as our God, Lord, and Savior. Actually, I have a better idea: the Sicilian Trinity: God the Brando³⁶, God the Pacino, and God the Sonny Bono.

Of course, the Sicilian Pontiff will have to be Joe Pesci. Obviously. And instead of the Eucharist, we'll distribute lasagna at communion. The wine we'll keep, but I suggest a nice Marsala.

Would it be too much to authorize the rape of all the atheistical pale faces? Especially the pale cultural studies professors who lecture us about "Islamophobia"? Perhaps.

But, at the very least, machismo will become the law of the land, and catcalls, long luxurious stares, and the occasional unexpected slap on the behind (*Marone!*) will not only be legalized, but they will be Obligations of the Faith.

Now, to all those ultra-feminists who don't think that this solemn Obligation of the Faith should be carried out, aren't you just being Siciliaphobic?

And, when, inevitably, our glorious Hispano-Sicilian World Empire, like all empires, fades into history, *we* can then lecture the English about *their* Hispano-Siciliaphobia for centuries....*millennia*. It's good to be the king.

And that's just poetic justice.

³⁶ Not actually Sicilian, but he played one so beautifully.

SICILIAN NATIONAL PRIDE

HOOAH!

<https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=xLw73qBUMYw>

Oh, and to all the lily White Americans who think that *they're* the vanguard of resistance to Islam.....well, you're more than a thousand years late to the party. Welcome aboard, junior member in the resistance: We're glad to have you.

But you see, while I'm cracking up writing this.....to a Muslim, the goal of conquering the world and subjecting it to an Islamic World Empire is their deadly obsession.

A Sicilian ISIS, where mafioso run around enslaving and raping women of other cultures and religions on a mass scale and we cut off your head if you don't worship Al Pacino, is only, and *only ever could be*, a comic fantasy, fit for *Saturday Night Live*. (SNL, you have my express authorization to enact said skit....if you invite me backstage....and I get to meet Lorne....and you let you-know-who perform.)

BUT.....the Islamic ISIS, and the Al-Qaeda that spawned it, and the Taliban, which has been infesting Afghanistan in some form for decades, and those lovely fellows in Boko Haram have plagued the news *every single night for generations!*

The most brutal mafioso is a gentleman and a saint and a chivalrous lover of women compared to even your most lightly radicalized, actively militant Muslim.

Why is that?

Who would you rather be in the power of? Tony Soprano or ISIS?

Think!!!.....before, you know, the Muslims get a chance to cut your head off.

Won't cut your head off.



Will *definitely* cut your head off



And, I mean, like, what would be the *Handmaid's Tale* version of a Fundamentalist Sicilian “dystopia”? Girls in halter-tops and high heels with a bunch of sweaty guys on a dance floor, kicking back liqueurs? “My name is Maria, and I intend to survive.....*partying till dawn!*” “I had another name....but this guy keeps calling me Marone!”

And, then, when someone points out the painfully obvious, the secular modernist doofus cries “*Islamophobia!*”

Of course, the Islamist lust for Jihad and the Secular Modern lust to call everybody bigots and cry “Islamophobia!” are rooted in the same thing: Arrogance. The arrogance of spoiled, entitled elites. The Muslims think that the dominion of the world is rightfully theirs. And the WASP cultural elites who form the matrix of the Secular Modern Religion of Political Correctness are spoiled, delusional, rich little trust fund jerks who think that it is their natural and rightful role in life and the world to lecture everybody else about how to think, speak, believe, and live.

And as far as the minority phalanxes of the Religion of Political Correctness who can say, “Hey brother, I’m not a lily white WASP.” Okay, cool. Then before you criticize me for Islamophobia, let me criticize you for Blancophobia.³⁷ If I’m Islamophobic, you’re Blancophobic.

What is that I hear? *You* have a legitimate historical grievance? A history of slavery, oppression, torture, murder, and rape?

³⁷ Irrational fear and hatred of white people.

Oh....because we Spaniards and Sicilians don't have a legitimate historical grievance....of slavery, oppression, torture, murder, and rape?

Or, is it only *your* history that matters, and it's only *your* oppressors that can and should be criticized?

Isn't that ethnocentric?

So.....wait. What that *really* means is that if the oppressor is white and pale, then he's a devil and should be criticized.

But if the oppressor is swarthy....then it's cool.

Well, I'm swarthy too.....so which swarthy brother are you going to take sides with?

There can *never* be such a thing as a Christian Empire. "Christian" and "Empire" are polar opposites -- they are oil and water. *Any* time Christianity has *ever* allowed itself to be complicit with an Empire's politics, it has polluted, corrupted, and ultimately destroyed Christianity. The American Christian Right has discovered this obvious and axiomatic truth of the Christian Faith. That does not mean that Christianity should not *witness the Name of Christ to politics*: but it *does* mean that the Cross *should NEVER WIELD* political power. The separation of Church and State³⁸ is not only valuable for the protection of personal liberties, but it is *indispensable* for preserving the Christian character of the Church.

Any time there is a "Christian Empire" you can be quite sure that Satan has infected Christianity -- poisoned the Church -- such that the Empire part will gobble up the Christian part. A Christian Empire is *by definition* a Satanic Empire.

So, to the extent Christians in America allow themselves to become co-opted and poisoned by the temptation of overt political power, they are serving the purposes of Satan.

Now, that does not mean that a Christian cannot serve in government, even be a general or be the President. *But* what it does mean is that the Christian in government must learn to look at the world with bifocals, as it were; he or she cannot *fuse, within his or her soul*, his or her Christianity with his or her political power.

The Christian politician *MUST ALWAYS* understand that there is a **fundamental tension** between the moral obligations upon a Christian and the imperatives of practical power politics.

Islam, because it wrongly claims that this fallen world, which is under the dominion of Satan, is spiritually neutral and *directly* administered by God, believes

³⁸ Defined as the institutional separation of Church and State, and not the whitewashing of religion from public life.

that all realities within this world can be fused together into one seamless, perfect whole.

The Christian knows that we live in a fractured world, where the realities of this world and the realities of our souls, of our spiritual nature and obligations, do not, ultimately, mesh, but are in deep, fundamental opposition.

So, a “Christian American Empire” can be no more Christian than the “Christian” Roman Empire or the Medieval Catholic Church of the Warrior Popes. Indeed, any such “Christian American Empire” will be precisely as Satanic as those empires.

Now, the separation of Church and State *DOES NOT* mean the atheistical secularization of society. It does **not** require that society be whitewashed of faith, of God, of religion, of Christian identity and spirituality. Prayers within schools, at football games, in the workplace are not only valid, but probably quite necessary. Christians should have the right, in their businesses, to serve, **or not serve**, whomever they like, and not be tyrannized over by the darlings of the secular modern left, the homosexuals. We can clearly see that the separation of Caesar from God, the separation of Church from State, has, in the hands of the Secular Modernists (who are just dupes of Satan) been transformed into a vile, filthy weapon of cultural imperialism *against* the Church of Christ.

Christians, as always, have a difficult role and task in the world. We must *both* resist the temptations of becoming politicized, of becoming the Satanic dupes of Empire, *and* resist the merciless assault of our Christian Faith by the Secular Modernist Nihilists who utterly despise and hate our Christian Faith, and seek, like the Muslims, to force Christians into their homes and whitewash the public square of the Cross.

The Cross must not become the partner (and thus the servant) of Empire. And the Cross must not be thrust from the public square into the fearful den of one’s home.

The Cross is a Kingdom *not* of this world. Thus, there can never, in this fallen world, be a Christian Empire. Any Christian Empire will *necessarily* be a Satanic Empire. The Cross will, and does implicitly, *only* have a Kingdom in Eternity, once the Millennium arrives and once the old heavens and the old earth are destroyed and replaced with the New Creation of a New Heaven and a New Earth.

Christianity is fundamentally incompatible with murder. Any “Christian” who murders a Muslim, or anyone for that matter, forfeits and defiles Christianity.

For the Muslim, murder and empire are religious *obligations*.

We have seen, for decades, our Western politicians vainly try to pat Islam on the head and say, “Good boy, good boy, you’re a religion of peace.”

And Islam, rabid with its own flaming, smoldering hatred and murderous lust for empire, has consistently bit the hand of our Western society, ravaging us, mauling us, proving quite plainly that, as Bill Maher says, Islam is not a religion of *peace* -- It is a religion of “a piece of you over here, a piece of you over there.”

Sicilian ISIS



Islamic ISIS



HEY, ISLAM, YOU UGLY!

UGLY

<https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=WjqzOJTa5B8>

Of course, a Muslim murderer wouldn't call his murder murder. He would call it jihad or justice. But I could call rape lovemaking...it won't avail me any in a court of law, and calling murder justice won't avail you any before the True God, who is not a Murderer.

Why is it that the Koran sanctions religious murder, but Jesus Christ does not sanction religious murder? Why is it that Muslims who murder act in accordance with their religion, but Christians who murder act *against* their religion?

It is because the Spirit of Christ is God, and the spirit of Islam is Satan.

ISLAM CAN'T HANDLE THE TRUTH!

AND THAT IS WHY IT CANNOT HANDLE FREEDOM!

That is the reason that Islam necessarily must FORBID UPON PAIN OF A TERRIBLE DEATH that no one DARE criticize it, or have the FREEDOM to speak their mind about it.

Because true, liberated reason would discover, in about five seconds, the Satanic origins of this vile anti-religion.

Islam cannot DARE be questioned because it is false, because it *cannot* stand up to cross-examination.

Christianity -- when freed from the pollution of state power and the consequent mentality of war that the Church's fornication with state power breeds -- does not at all mind being cross-examined. Call me Satanic, call Christ Satanic, call the Cross Satanic, call the Trinity Satanic. I feel no insecurity, not even anger, much less hatred, because I am completely secure in my Christian Faith. My Christian Faith can withstand any criticism, any attack, any cross-examination -- because it is true. And it doesn't just *say* that it is true. Rather, it PROVES it through its actions and through the reason of its words.

St. Peter said of Jesus:

**He committed no sin,
and no deceit was found in his mouth.**

When he was insulted, he returned no insult; when he suffered, he did not threaten; instead, he handed himself over to the one who judges justly. He himself bore our sins in his flesh upon the cross, so that, free from sin, we might live for righteousness. By his wounds you have been healed. For you had gone astray like sheep, but you have now returned to the shepherd and guardian of your souls.

(1 Peter 2:23-25)

Now *that's* a religion of Peace, indeed is the Way of the Prince of Peace.

Listen to the "god" of Islam:

[Remember] when your Lord inspired to the angels, "I am with you, so strengthen those who have believed. I will cast terror into the hearts of those who disbelieved, so strike [them] upon the necks and strike from them every fingertip." That is because they opposed Allah and His Messenger. And whoever opposes Allah and His Messenger - indeed, Allah is severe in penalty. [Quran 8:13]

There is simply *nothing* like this in the New Testament. Period. The clear text of the New Testament proved, and stood as a witness to, the fact that the immoral practices of later Christians made those people not "Christians" but hypocrites.

As far as the Old Testament, God *never* commanded the forced conversion of any person or society, ever. God did, according to the Scriptural text, order the annihilation of Canaanite cities and villages. But that is precisely because the covenant with Abraham, the formation of Israel, and the liberation of Israel was part of God's war against Satan. If you are fighting a war, you need a home base. And how are you supposed to create that home base - that nation - if you do not conquer land? *Every* single society has been established through conquest -- this is true for every European nation, every Asian nation - it is true for the United States of America (in which the English colonists conquered the Native Americans), it is true for Mexico, which was conquered by Cortez for Spain, it is even true for mild-mannered Canada. Indeed, how would it even be possible to establish a nation without a conquest?³⁹

Now, some might say: at least some of the Canaanites should have been spared. And that is a modern sensibility, which I generally share. But that is simply not the context of ancient Israel's history. Either you believe in the God of Israel or you don't. And either you are a religious believer or some form of atheist. From the perspective of the God of Israel, ancient Israel was God's first strike against Satan, the establishment of a bulwark, a first foothold, in this fallen world, out of which God could later expand, through the Church.

³⁹ The only way would be to colonize a land without any people whatsoever. But in the context of a fully populated region, such as the Ancient Near East, there is no other way to establish a new nation.

If you are a secularist -- meaning, essentially, an atheist -- you don't consider supernatural agency. You only consider "natural" agency - the operation of physical forces, which somehow bubble up to psychological, sociological and historical forces. But that is an *assumption* -- it is not a verified, self-evident law or necessary principle - indeed, it cannot be, since it is false.

So, if the purpose of God in establishing the nation of Israel was to create a place in the fallen world where the fallenness of the world could begin to be treated by God, how could God permit the influence of polytheism to persist through allowing those populations to live in the land? You could say that that is cruel, but God's purpose is to destroy the Kingdom of Satan. That is, God seeks to destroy the fallenness of the world, to turn the world right side up -- if humanitarian kindness is inimical to the establishment of the very means by which human salvation can be accomplished, how is that not in accordance with a just God?

Now, this, at first blush, sounds pretty similar to Islam. Didn't Islam need to establish a home base? Didn't the Islamic nation need to conquer land in order to establish itself as a nation?

So far so good.

But, look at the difference between the Christian perspective -- which sees the Nation of Israel as Stage I and the Church as Stage II, with Israel coming into the Church in the end times -- and the Muslim perspective.

From the Christian perspective, ancient Israel never sought a world empire. It simply sought to exist as a small nation, being faithful to its Covenant with God. Nowhere in the Old Testament does God promise or command that Israel would or should conquer the world by violent military force. Israel has its hands full simply surviving, let alone sweeping the world in a violent, murderous fit of Israeli imperialism. Islamic world imperialism is a core part of the matrix of the Islamic religion. Israeli *world* imperialism is a punchline. Show me the most ardent Jewish extremist who believes that the Jews should - *ever* - go out and conquer Europe or America or Asia. Now, the Old Testament does promise a Messiah, who will make Israel permanently secure, and who will, through the force of his charisma and the favor of God, lead the whole world to acknowledge and worship God. But the Old Testament *nowhere* says that the Messiah to Come will wage a

bloody campaign of military force and murder to subdue the world and establish an empire.

From the Christian perspective, that charismatic King, favored by God, *did* come into the world, and would have fulfilled the expectation of Israel, if Israel hadn't betrayed him and had him murdered by the Romans. The irony at the heart of the Christian Faith is the assertion that Israel sacrificed their divinely appointed Liberator out of fear of arousing their enslaver, the Roman Empire. Perhaps if they had been less willing to kill people, and less afraid of offending their enslavers, the Liberator would have survived to liberate the Nation and then ushered in the charismatic Age of Peace. But, through the set plan and foreknowledge of God, this sacrifice actually accomplished salvation from sin, which, historically, has so far manifested itself as the conversion of many - and someday all - nations of the world to the God of Israel.

Now, if you are a secularist (i.e. an atheist), you think that all religions are just made up nonsense and that the world would be better off if everyone was like you and didn't believe in such fairy tales. So, when Christianity says that the world is supposed to be converted to Christ and all people are supposed to become part of the Flesh of Christ, which will be fulfilled in the Kingdom of God, and Islam says that it is the final form of religion which must conquer the world, it all sounds like competing corporations with different ad campaigns, or different armies with opposing ideologies.

But, from a religious perspective, the world is a battleground between God and Satan. If that religious perspective is true, what are we to make of Christianity and Islam? Christian Scriptures and Tradition clearly state that Jesus Christ was the final prophet of public revelation, and that he was both King and Messiah, who *died* on the Cross for the salvation of sins. Scripture and Tradition both verify that the *παράκλητος*, or Paraclete, is the Advocate, and that the Advocate is the Spirit of *Christ* and not some later figure. Islam claims that the Paraclete is the "Comforter" and that this "Comforter" is their supposed "final prophet". Scripture clearly states in John 14:26 that the Paraclete is the *πνεῦμα τὸ ἅγιον*, the Holy Spirit...which is the Spirit of God. So Islam's prophet could not be this Paraclete, for he was not the Spirit of God -- the Spirit of God is God's inner reality. Jesus says in John 17:22 "καὶ γὰρ τὴν δόξαν ἣν δέδωκάς μοι δέδωκα αὐτοῖς, ἵνα ὡσιν ἐν καθῶς ἡμεῖς ἓν", which is translated, "And I have given them the glory [or favor] you gave me, so that they may be one, as we are one." Jesus' identification with

the Father, such that they share the same Spirit, is the essence of the doctrine of the Trinity, and here, as elsewhere, the oneness of Jesus and the Father is clearly attested.

Islam comes along and takes a sledgehammer to all of this -- it calls all of the following doctrines nothing more than diabolical inventions of Satan: the Trinity, the Divinity of Jesus, the fact of Jesus' *death* on the Cross, the doctrine of original sin and the necessity of Christ's substitutionary atonement for salvation, the necessity to believe in Jesus as Messiah, Savior, and Lord, the nature and identity of the Paraclete as the Spirit of God, and the destiny of the Church (rather than the Ummah) as what shall come to fulfillment and become the Kingdom of Heaven. It also denies the basic doctrine of the Church, the *ecclesia*, which St. Paul explicitly understood as the Flesh of Christ, which means that Christians become incorporated into the Flesh of Christ for salvation. The Letters of St. Paul have been, from earliest times, considered Sacred Scripture within the Church. Of course, Islam has to impugn St. Paul and does not recognize the New Testament as a whole, but only its tortured reading of the Gospels.⁴⁰

From the secularist-atheist perspective, there is no problem here. One religion had one ideas, and then another religious founder came along and contradicted the earlier religious founder in order to establish his own religion. It's all like marketing consumer products or warfare between nations or corporate office politics -- it's just a game.

But, from the religious perspective, God is at work. If God is at work in Jesus, and Satan is intent on thwarting the work of God, then *either* Christianity (the historical and currently existing Trinitarian Pauline Flesh of Christ) *or* Islam is a Satanic imposture, fabrication, invention.

And indeed, that is precisely what Muslims say. The following is approvingly quoted by an Islamic website, publicly, today, and it asserts that the Trinity is a Satanic invention (I do not endorse any view held herein):

Satan knows much of the plan of God. He knows that according to the word of God in Genesis 3:15, one day a "heel" would come to "bruise his head". So he formulated a plan and devised a religious system that people would believe in, kill for, even be willing to

⁴⁰ Islamic denunciation of St. Paul: <https://themuslimtimes.info/2011/12/01/st-paul-the-13th-apostle/>

die for. This religious system would be an occult system, centering upon Mystery Babylon. This system was to eventually control the world, and to attempt to deify Satan as lord.

During the reign of Nero, emperor of Rome, a mass persecution began against the church of Jesus Christ.

Nero also instituted many imitation Christian churches for the purpose of entrapping and enslaving the true believers of Acts Two. (*Archives of the Vatican*, Chick Publications, Vol. 16). Many times these false churches used Jewish Synagogues as meeting places.

To take advantage of this growing wave of Christianity, both true and false, **Constantine** professed a conversion to the new religion. He declared himself the spiritual leader of Christianity and **made himself Pontiff** Maximus, the inaugural **pope**.

He issued an edict of tolerance to draw the true believers out of hiding. But only those that accepted his form of Christianity (Roman Catholicism/ Mystery Babylon) were protected.

Afterward, Constantine moved the capital of his empire to Constantinople (Istanbul, Turkey) in the east. The Bishops of his Catholic System (Mystery Babylon) seized the opportunity to take control of the empire.

By the third century after Christ, Mystery Babylon was once again a well established entity with its headquarters in Rome.

During this catholic reign of terror approximately 68 million people were tortured or killed for refusing to worship this spirit of antichrist.

From Mystery Babylon in Rome, we have seen a number of children birthed. These children of the harlot, retain her doctrines and her symbols (Trinity, Equilateral Triangle, etc.) We have also witnessed a number of secret societies emerge from the folds of her garments, (Knights of Columbus, Masons, Shriners, etc.) All [sic] having their roots in the occult.

Mystery Babylon. What is her basic belief? A multiplicity of gods or Pantheism, their roots being Luciferianism!

Source: http://www.discoveringislam.org/origin_of_christianity.htm

From a religious perspective, actual Christianity and Islam *cannot* both have been created by God. A secular atheist who doesn't know and/or doesn't care about religion can wave their hands in the air and say, "All paths lead to God," but a straightforward analysis reveals that Christianity and Islam are fundamentally

incompatible, and the only way *both* could have been created by God is for God to be (1) perverse or (2) crazy. Neither religion holds that view.

Then, why is it that when a Muslim calls Christianity Satanic, you would laugh out loud at the prospect of Pope Francis or Billy Graham calling for that Muslim's murder - *it would never happen*....but when a Christian calls Islam Satanic (which is the only logical conclusion that can follow from authentic Christian belief) you had better hire a lot of security and run for cover?

Which religion acts more like Satan, and which one acts more like God?

GOD IS LOVE



I CAN SEE YOUR HALO

MURDER! DEATH! KILL!



Let's continue to read from this curious book:

[As for] the thief, the male and the female, amputate their hands in recompense for what they committed as a deterrent [punishment] from Allah. And Allah is Exalted in Might and Wise. [Quran 5:38]

Nowhere in even the Old Testament is there anything as cruel as this: to be amputated simply because you stole something. Yes, the Old Testament authorized Israel's brutal invasion of Canaan. Yes, the Old Testament authorized the justice of "an eye for an eye, and a tooth for a tooth". But absolutely nowhere will you find such brutality as chopping off hands for theft commended, much less commanded, *within* civil society itself.

And, let's be frank: Because why stop now? The "god" of Islam knows *precisely* well that Jews and Christians are brothers, and that the greatest threat to

this “god” of Slavery and War is the Union and Brotherhood of Jews and Christians. As St. Paul says, the Church can only be completed when the Jews are converted. And the completion of the Church means the final defeat of Satan, and his being cast finally and forever into Hell. “For if their rejection is the reconciliation of the world, what will their acceptance be but life from the dead?” (Romans 11:15)

So Satan himself says:

O you who have believed, do not take the Jews and the Christians as allies. **They are [in fact] allies of one another.** And whoever is an ally to them among you - then indeed, he is [one] of them. Indeed, Allah guides not the wrongdoing people. [Quran 5:51]

So, indeed, how foolish is the Church to persecute Jews, for, one day, the Jews, converted to Christianity, will be the leaders of Christianity, *as they were in the beginning!* Jews will once again be the saviors of Christianity, imitating the Savior of all Christians: who was a Jew.

Anti-semitism is the suicide of the Church, the self-cutting of a poisoned Christian mind, poisoned by Satan. It is the psychosis of Christian Faith.

And, indeed, how foolish are the Jews, to revile the Name of Christ, who is precisely the Once and Future Mashiach whom they have been awaiting all their history, all their lives!

And how foolish it is to consider conversion to Christ as some kind of Holocaust or Assimilationist Annihilation. The Conversion of the Jews to Christ is not the end of the Jewish People -- it is the election of the Jewish People to the Presidency of the Church of Christ: in which the Jews will be the *leaders* of the Church, authentically Christian and *because of that* more authentically Jewish than they have ever been.

True Christians do not chase after Jews to harm or defame them. They chase after Jews to beseech them to run for President.



HEAD OF THE CLASS

This schism between Jews and Christians is too ironic.

Ironic

Alanis Morissette

<https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=6GVJpOmaDyU>

Rabbi Hillel says, "If I am not for myself, who will be for me? But if I am only for myself, who am I? If not now, when?"

- Ethics of the Fathers, 1:14

Excalibur: The Sword of Christ

<https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=ySQ8WJNGp0U>

That is why freedom and a free society are fundamentally incompatible with Islam. The essence of Islam is a brutal, tyrannical totalitarianism of the spirit, in which all must submit themselves to their brutal Tyrant-god, or face murder at the hands of that Murderer from the Beginning. Whereas Christianity is Freedom in the Spirit, Islam is slavery of the spirit to the most arrogant and damned of all spirits.

Now this is not a matter of bad people, but a matter of bad ideas.

It is not the Arab, Persian, African, Indian and other *races* that are bad...it is the Spiritual Ideology of Hatred, Violence, and Nihilism that Satan infected them with that is bad.

If Islam had stormed Ireland, the Irish would have, ultimately, turned out just as homicidal and nihilistic.

And the whole early history of Islam is nothing more than a chimera. First of all, it was a bloody, vicious military conquest. And even their prosperous civilization was only a mask....a superficial flourishing that did not have *within itself* the principle of endurance and grace.

So, of course it collapsed into the Satanic Pit of Ruin and Fire that it is today.

But isn't that the whole story of *every* deal with the Devil? You sell your soul, and you get the world.....for a while.....until it all blows up in your face, and you lose everything.

THE SICILIAN STREET THE MUSLIM STREET



Oh, Muslims, desist from Islam, and follow the Sicilian Way - it is better for you!

O People of the Quran, do not commit murder and hatred in your religion or say about Allah except the truth. The Messiah, Jesus, the son of Mary, was the Son of Allah and He *Is the Word* which He directed to Mary's womb to become Incarnate, and, from all eternity, was the One Son Eternally Begotten from Him. So believe in Allah and His Son, and the HOLY SPIRIT. And do not say, "MURDER! DEATH! KILL!"; desist - it is better for you. Indeed, Allah is but one God, in Three Modes of Being. Hear O People of the Quran! Allah is a Multi-Dimensional Unity, a Circle, and not a point. Allah is not one-dimensional, vain, insecure, petty, empty. Allah is Infinite! Not Empty! He is not obsessed with Conquest and Empire! Allah is Love! Allah is Total Intimacy, within Himself! Exalted is He above murdering anyone. To Him belongs whatever is in the heavens and whatever is on the earth. And sufficient is Allah as Disposer of affairs. That is why Allah does not need to murder anyone. Only Allah's Enemy - Satan - needs to lie and murder and destroy.

Satan always tries to imitate Allah, and tries to fool people into thinking that Satan is Allah, when only Allah is Allah!

HERO



*"I'd rather die standing up
than live on my knees."*
Stephane Charbonnier
(1967-2015)

Putting the Noble and Patriotic Dream of Sicilian World Conquest aside, we return to the matter of the Divinity of Jesus, in the context of the Trinity. Now, as we were saying, the following is a statement of the Prime Axiom: nothing can “bring *itself*” into being, much less create itself into Being. One either *Is* from all eternity (Being) or *becomes* through another (Becoming).

The Muslims state that this Prime Axiom is a fatal blow to the doctrine of the Trinity, since they claim that God cannot beget, because they conflate the concept of begetting and creating...in a characteristically one-dimensional way.

But the doctrine of the Trinity, and of the Eternal Begetting of the Son (which, in my system, is the Gift of the Giver, the Giver being the Father), asserts that God is multi-dimensional. God is One God, not many, but with an *Inner Life* such that the One is a Total *Exchange* of Intimacy *within* the One.

Christian doctrine asserts that God is Love, and thus as Love, God must be a Lover, and there can be no Lover without a Beloved, and the return of the Love from the Beloved back to the Lover is the Bond of Love between them. There is no Love without multi-dimensionality.

The uni-dimensional “god” of Islam is *obviously* Satan...because their god is a god without characteristics and without sharing...not the sharing of a pagan pantheon, which would be the polytheism of Satan, that ultimate spiritual anarchist...but the sharing *within* God that makes God *not* Satan....that makes God Love rather than Selfish Hatred. A God that is *within Himself* (and I only say Himself, because *Itself* sounds weird in this context) total sharing can and will, necessarily, over-pour Himself in Love, sharing the Gift and the fruits of His Divinity as widely as possible. A “god” that is only for himself and about himself can only demand slaves that are totally and abjectly subject to him.

In other words, the Son is eternally begotten, such that he becomes...but he *becomes* from all eternity, not posterior to the Being of the Father. Thus, unlike all other becoming, the Son’s becoming *IS* from all eternity.

To clarify this, we must recall the nature of eternity, especially in relationship to the nature of the Uncreated Eternity versus the created eternity. While in eternity, there is no *temporal* sequence, there is still logical sequence. Just as quantity does not, as such, necessitate the passage of time, the structure of eternity does not have the passage of time, but it does have steps, an *order*....those steps are just steps that happen all at ONCE....always NOW.

The Spiritual Creation, which is what the Bible means when it speaks of “the Heavens” is the greater Created Reality within which the material creation exists. (The material creation being what the Bible means by “the earth”.) That Spiritual Creation is defined by order...by structure...by logical structure...by *sequence*. That is why there are choirs of angels, all in a hierarchy (though not a proud and

abusive hierarchy like in an earthly kingdom or a capitalist corporation), all with their natures and roles and functions.

But **within** the Godhead, there is much less sequence. You see, God created the Spiritual Creation (which means the angels) and then he created the material creation (the Cosmos, of which immanent materialized sentience is the lord). Outside of the Cosmos (the temporal-material-spatial manifold), there is no *temporal* this-and-then-that...but there is a logical sequence of what is prior and what is posterior.

But the Godhead of the Trinity is much trickier (trickier for finite little minds like ours). In a way, the Father begot the Son (the Giver gave the Gift to the Gift such that “He” became the Gift) such that the Father is First and the Son is Second, and then their inherent Bond of Gratitude (which is the Holy Spirit) is Third...and hence you have the First, Second, and Third Persons of the Trinity. But here’s the catch: the Gift of the Giver to the Gift was the Spirit, which is nothing other than the Bond of Gratitude. So...it is not as if the Son “wasn’t” and then *POOF!* God “made” the Son.

That is why the Nicene Creed makes pains to very clearly state that the Son was **not** made. The Father is the Giver. The Giver is the One who has the Gift. The Gift is the Bond of Gratitude between the Giver and the Gift. THUS in order for the Giver to exist in the first place, the Gift must always have existed! AND THUS in order for the Gift to have always existed, the Bond of Gratitude must *ALWAYS* have existed. And, for the Bond of Gratitude to have always existed, both the Giver and the Gift must *BOTH* have *ALWAYS EXISTED*. Which *necessarily* means that the Giver’s gift of the Gift to the Gift is an Eternal Constant. Unlike the Creation, in which God creates beings in sequence, in hierarchy, in order, in structure, the Eternal Uncreated Existence of God is a logical causal loop of the Three Persons, or Three Hypostases. The Giver gives the Gift, the Gift returns the Gift to the Giver...but that very *return* of the Gift to the Giver is itself what the Gift is in the first place! And since the essence of the Giver is the giving of the Gift, (and, in eternity, there is no difference between the giving of the Gift and the Gift itself), and since the Gift is the reciprocal giving and return of the Gift, and since the Exchange of the Gift is Itself the Gift...we can clearly see that the Father, Son, and Holy Spirit are/is ONE Ousia (ONE reality) in THREE Hypostases (THREE modes).

We can also clearly see that the very existence of God requires the Father, Son, and Spirit, and we can also very clearly see that the existence of the Father requires the existence of the Son and the Spirit, the existence of the Son requires the existence of the Father and the Spirit, and the Spirit requires the existence of the Father and the Son.

(For, the Father is the Giver, the Son is the Gift, and the Spirit is the Exchange of the Gifts...which itself is the Gift.)

So, we very clearly see that the fundamental nature of the Uncreated, which is God Himself, is a logical causal loop.

Whereas, the Creation is a logical procession of sequence (not temporal sequence, but logical sequence alone -- although the temporal sequence that we call the Cosmos is contained within the Wider Spiritual Creation) from the "Unsequenced" (or perhaps, better, "Trans-Sequenced") reality of God.

So:

Uncreated [God]	=	Logical causal loop.
Spiritual Creation [The Heavens]	=	Logical sequence (without temporal sequence).
Material Creation [The earth, Cosmos]	=	Logical & temporal sequence.

Now, this is clearly not a design specification of the Trinity. All theological accounts of God are merely metaphors. Hopefully, from one generation to the next, we have the maturing insight to articulate better theoretical constructs of *an intimation* of God -- a signpost *towards* the true Reality of God.

I think the key for our purposes is that whereas the creation is sequential, the Creator is trans-sequential. For a creature to truly understand the Uncreated is as difficult and removed as for a temporal being like ourselves to *really* access the eternal. Just as temporal philosophers and artists can draw pictures of the eternal, which give some semblance of what the eternal is, but cannot actually themselves have experiential access to the eternal, so too the creature can never *understand* - or stand-under, the Uncreated.

Now, it certainly is possible to *see* God: indeed all the angels, both the holy and the foul, saw God, saw Him as He truly is. But to see Him as He truly is requires trust...because you cannot "hold" God in your hand in the way you hold a piece of fruit, or in the way you "have" or "hold" a piece of knowledge. To "see" God is precisely to enter into the Reality of God, which is an infinite and eternal journey into the Eternal Infinite. And you can only enter into the Reality of God if you trust God. If you do not trust God then not only *will you not* enter into the Reality of God, but you will be unable to enter the reality *of yourself*. Because

your reality is a procession, an outpouring, of the Reality of God, which is the only kind of Reality there is.

To bring it back to the nature of Secular Modernity's superficiality, (and superficiality is the royal road to Hell), since Secular Modernity, whose essence is the Secular Modern Scientific Mind, has ingrained into the modern consciousness (indeed, *created* the modern consciousness) that the essence of reality is the demonstrable, the modern mind is unable to actually perceive reality *as it is*. For reality is not primarily the demonstrable, which is the material. Reality is *fundamentally* spiritual, and the spiritual can *only be intuited by spiritual sight*. Indeed, in actual truth, matter is nothing more than a perception of the Spirit, which becomes perceivable to us through an exercise of the perception of our own spirits, which, in turn, can only perceive through union with the perception of the Spirit.

The problem is that that intuition - that spiritual sight - is blinded by sin. When one overcomes sin to any significant degree, it becomes possible to intuit the nature of spiritual reality somewhat more clearly -- although, even then, one is limited to metaphors -- it is as a blind man thinking about colors in terms of sounds and touches. But since we are spiritually blind, (and with the spirit it is either/or, you're either sighted or blind), we still have a disposition towards sin -- we still harbor the urge towards sin -- failing to see spiritual realities for what they are.

In other words, we can never have a meaningful appreciation of the world until we explore the nature of spirit as thoroughly, more thoroughly, than the nature of matter. And we can only explore spirit through intuition. The Science of the Spirit requires ever deeper and deeper intuitions within ourselves, and then the sharing (and dialectical exploration and evaluation) of those intuitions *with* others, in an intersubjective flux of an exchange of everyone's intuitions.

But Secular Modernity hobbles this Science of the Spirit, striking its knees and kicking it to the ground in favor of its beloved Science of Matter. Secular Modernity prefers a science of the earth rather than a Science of the Heavens.

This does not mean that we should forsake the Science of Matter, any more than we should forsake our own flesh. But, we must *also*, and more urgently, explore the Science of the Spirit, as it is more important to develop one's spirit than one's flesh.

Secular Modernity prevents the development of a true Science of the Spirit in two major ways. First, it inaccurately asserts as an axiom that all reality must be demonstrable, which pokes out the very eyes of any possible Science of the Spirit. Second, it encourages atheism, which, in turn, encourages sin, because the core of sin is disobedience to God -- and sin is what blinds the spiritual sight in the first

place. So, Secular Modernity has rendered the human race a blind man who doesn't even know he's blind, because he has been taught from birth that sight doesn't exist. And when a religious person offers ointment for the eyes so that the blind man might regain his spiritual sight (a prerequisite to any possible Science of the Spirit), or at least some kind of sight, the Secular Modernist scoffs, slaps away the ointment, pats the fellow blind man on the shoulder, and says, "Don't trouble yourself with that nonsense! There isn't any such thing as sight anyway!"

So, Secular Modernity, rather than being the great Prometheus, is actually the Great Vulture, poking out the eyes of the human race. Secular Modernity has sold us a bill of goods: it has provided us with a Science of Matter that has given us technology and deprived us of a Science of Spirit that might have restored our humanity. So we have gadgets and Netflix rather than grace and Salvation.

This is all because the emphasis of Secular Modernity has *always* been one-dimensional, privileging the "how" of the world -- that which can be sensed by the material senses -- over the "why" of the world -- that which can be known through an intuition - or innervation - of the spirit.

Now, even those who do "meditate" or are "spiritual" do not necessarily gain any spiritual sight. True spiritual sight has little to nothing to do with mere meditation. It literally requires a state of grace, because only in a state in which you are free from mortal sin can the illumination of the Spirit shine on your spirit, enlightening your soul.

You can sit with your eyes closed and chant and light incense till the end of time, but if you are sinful...if you fornicate, or are greedy, slothful, proud, vain, atheistical, arrogant...all that "meditation" will avail you nothing.

Because you *cannot* look within yourself through any other means (and actually see anything) except through the eyes of faith.

That is because the fundamentally religious - Spiritual - nature of the world *is the way the world is* -- and can only be known through *trust*.

The essence of Secular Modern Science is *Distrust*. That works well enough, to a point, when you're simply *looking out* onto matter. But when you're looking in, if the light in you is darkness, how great will the darkness be? (Matthew 7:22-23.) For, if the Christian understanding of the world is, in fact, correct, how can one have spiritual sight (even have any true knowledge of oneself) without *first* freeing oneself from the spiritual blindness of sin?

Secular Modernity has asserted that God does not exist, and then proven that falsehood to itself by rendering itself incapable of beholding the God that it doesn't think exists.

Since *God* is the Why of the world, scorning God and His Ways is to forfeit knowledge of the formal and final realities of the world. And, persisting long enough in blindness and ignorance of the world as it actually is, without inquiring into the "why" and the "what", Secular Modernity gently and slothfully assumes that the world has no what and has no why. Secular Modernity convinces itself that Reality is nothing more than the Cosmos, and the Cosmos is nothing more than atoms and void and Nothingness.

So, to the Secular Imagination, in this Secular Age, things are only surfaces -- death is just death, life is just life, food is just food, sex is just sex, money is just money, pain is just pain, pleasure is just pleasure -- the whole lived experience of the human race gets flattened out to a pancake of pabulum. People skate along on the surface of things -- gliding ignorantly over the surface of their own humanity, unable and unwilling (and unable *because* unwilling) to enter the depths of their own experiences and selves, and to see the multi-dimensional involution that is the essence of Spirit.

The superficiality of Secular Modernity's understanding of the World promotes an ennui, despair, and blankness -- a boredom with life -- that deeply and critically infects the spirit, rendering the spirit not even a spirit. For a spirit is meant to perceive, that is, perceive the Spirit within its own spirit. If the spirit is unable to perceive the Spirit within, then the spirit has become deranged from itself - it has become sundered, unable to even be itself. The thrill, passion, and joy of life, which is the fruit of a multi-dimensional spirit, fizzles and flattens into the blank, meager, addictive, despairing awfulness of a spirit deranged from itself, a soul alienated from its own soulfulness.

Such a spirit so totally deranged and alienated will *necessarily* seek out life, seek it out all the more desperately because it has cut itself off from the wellspring of life, the Spirit. In a thirsty, desperate scramble for life, the spirit will try to squeeze life out of the one-dimensional realities that it has been taught are the only things that exist: food, sex, drugs, entertainment, even secular reading and New Age meditation. Such a spirit is perpetually hungry - starving - incapable of being sated because it has forgotten what its true food is in the first place: the Spirit. And, as more and more people - as every last person - becomes a vampire of soullessness, even the possibility of soulfulness comes to seem unreal, appears to be an illusion.

So the Way of Grace and avoidance of sin, which is the path to knowledge of the Spirit and to the fullness of one's spirit in the Spirit, which is life, becomes

forgotten -- not even known in the first place -- and the way of amusing oneself to death -- the way of *self*-gratifications displaces the Grace of the Divine. Only seeking God can satisfy the soul. Souls who don't believe that, or won't accept that, can only seek themselves -- and thus never find any peace, or knowledge, much less the peace that passeth understanding.

We see this unholy alliance between Secular Liberalism and Islam -- Secularism so weak and insipid and debauched, and Islam so ravenous, rabid, and delusional in its wickedness. Islam is Murder itself wearing the mask of Mercy, and Secularism is too one-dimensional, too blind, too blank, too stupid to see through the Mask. Islam is Nazi Germany and Western Modern Secularism is Vichy France. The first the strutting monster, and the second the monster's lapdog.

And it isn't a coincidence. *It's not a bug, it's a feature!* It's a feature, a critical feature, of the Satanic War Plan.

Satan pissed both streams into history to flow into each other *in precisely this way*.

Secular Modernity is a Satanic blinding of the human race's spiritual sight, a blinding of a human spirit's ability to understand the depths of spiritual reality. So, once blinded, all it can see is the world, the surface of the world: material phenomena and social phenomena. A true secularist is unable to understand the spiritual depths of anything, because he has allowed his spirit to be flattened like a pancake.

Islam says, "Question not! Submit! Conquer! Murder! Destroy!" but it hides this inner core with a superficial mask of "Compassion. Mercy. Beneficence."

The Secular Modern Mind, fully corrupted by secularism and with all the lingering remnants of Classical Christian Spirituality rooted out, can conceive of no greater evil than unpleasantness. It simply wants a pleasant parlor, with well-adorned drapes, with a pleasant meal at a pleasant dinner table. It wants guests to mill around wanly, making cute little witticisms, making *interesting* comments (not true comments, not beautiful comments....merely, as Susan Sontag understood, *interesting* remarks). And then retiring....to Netflix...to a book...to an article....to a shallow debauchery. But what the wan, milquetoast Secularist hates above all else is unpleasantness - rancor, the raised voice, the line in the sand, the fistfight. The sharp words....even when they're true, even when they're necessary....indeed, *especially* when they are true and necessary....because the Truth, which is the most Necessary of all things, *necessarily* brings conflict....and it brings conflict because Truth divides the true from the false, the good from the evil -- and Truth is the essence, the battle cry, of the Holy Angels in the Most High's War against Satan and his evil demons.

Which is a quite *unpleasant* affair.

So, the shallowness of Secularism, rooted in the *weakness* of the Secular “Spirit”, really, the Secular Non-Spirit, Anti-Spirit, is totally ill-equipped --- *indeed anti-equipped* --- to deal with the Masked Monster that is Islam.

For Islam wears the very thinnest of masks. But Secularism’s spiritual sight has all the penetrative capacity of a puddle. It is the superficiality of the rabidly self-righteousness slamming into the superficiality of the puddle spirit, the shallowest of all basins of water.

Whereas the rich depths of Classical Christian Spirituality is a vast, profound ocean, into which the flaming rage of the Meteor of Iniquity falls, and is extinguished, the shallow puddle of Secularism is totally overwhelmed with the Meteoric Iniquity of Islam’s Satanic Rage, and can do nothing other than pretend that it is not being set aflame.

And that is *precisely* why Secularism immediately abandons all of its so-called principles in the face of Islam. Free speech? No. We must ban “hate speech”. Liberty? Not if it offends Islam. Democracy? We wouldn’t want to be culturally insensitive. Peace and non-violence and the rule of law? That’s very ethnocentric of us.

You see, Christianity represents an unmasking of the shallowness that the Secularist holds so dear. So *there*, the Secularist becomes a Working Class Hero, fighting madly, angrily, crazily against *anything* that offends the Secularist mindset: Christian doctrines on homosexuality, abortion, the (truly awful) pedophilia scandals in the Catholic Church, Christian spirituality: *all* of it is fair game for the Secularist. Because the Secularist knows that his worldview is fundamentally challenged by the Christian truth.

That, and the Secularist also knows that the Christian will not murder him -- there are no vast networks of Christian murderers ready to strike, no Christian Fundamentalist Kingdoms and Republics ready to call for murder.

But the Islamic challenge doesn’t ask the Secularist to abandon his secularism....not yet anyway. All Islam demands is this: submit, shut up, do nothing and say nothing as I wreak havoc. And this is precisely what the Secularist desires: to be pleasant....and accommodating....and nice....to retire like the coward he is into his oh so pleasant parlor....to drink a sherry....maybe shag...and then sleep pleasantly in his pleasantly warm and well-appointed bed....and simply pray to his god - the Law of Averages - that he won’t be the next victim.

Just wait...one day while you're eating your kale chips and sipping your latte, look out the window....and see the mushroom cloud high in the sky and the approaching column of blazing fire and ash.

The alliance of Secularism with Islam is the unholy union of cowardly weakness on the one hand with blind raging fury on the other.

This is the End

Hey, Western Secularism - You're Channing Tatum
<https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=tVEh1LTWxxI>

And you see, the Anti-Christ is precisely the solution to the Secularist-Islamic dilemma. For the Secularist wants shallow world peace, founded on a repudiation and obscuring of truth, rather than a holy and eternal peace founded upon truth. The Islamist wants World Conquest. The Anti-Christ will give them *both* what they want. For the Anti-Christ will propose a religion -- that will be brilliantly argued: *far more* brilliant than anything offered by me -- that unites Islam, Judaism, and Christianity, along with the other religions into a Great Religion of World Peace and Harmony --- which will give the Muslims the World Empire they desire....and will give the milquetoast, wan Secularists the nice, pleasant harmony they require, in which they can idle all their days away swilling sherry and shagging.

Listen to Andrew Sullivan:

Well, this debate really does have legs, so allow me to address some of the latest arguments. There seems to be a consensus that Islam in the contemporary Middle East is in a bad way. When you have hundreds of thousands killed in sectarian warfare, ISIS on the rampage, Saudi Arabia fomenting the more virulent flames of Salafism, Iran's theocrats brutally suppressing peaceful protests, and Hamas cynically relying upon the deaths of innocents for strategic purposes, you can surely see the point. No other region is as violent or as inflamed right now – and since the battles are all on explicitly religious terms, it seems crazy not to see unreconstructed forms of Islam as part of the problem. Last night, I specifically mentioned [the absence of any civil space](#) for scholarly or historical examination of the sacred texts of the religion. Without such a space, it is impossible for this current Middle Eastern tragedy to resolve itself. And the lack of such a space is a key tenet of the religion itself. **It's a little amazing to me to watch some liberals who get extremely upset at religious people refusing to bake a**

cake for someone else's wedding on religious grounds, suddenly seeing nuance when a religion believes that anyone who leaves it should be executed. If you're against fundamentalism of the mildest variety here, why are you so forgiving of it elsewhere? [Emphasis added.]



It's also good to see Nick Kristof [note the following today](#):

Of the 10 bottom-ranking countries in [the World Economic Forum's report on women's rights](#), nine are majority Muslim. In Afghanistan, Jordan and Egypt, more than three-quarters of Muslims favor the death penalty for Muslims who renounce their faith, according to a Pew survey.

For me, that last statistic is a key one. Here you do not have a fringe, but a big majority in one of the most important Arab Muslim states, Egypt, believing in *absolutely no religious freedom* whatsoever. Democracy doesn't cure this – it may even make it worse. To argue that this majority belief has nothing to do with Islam is also bizarre. The Koran is as complex as the Old Testament, and there are injunctions to respect religious freedom, but also deep currents in favor of suppressing it, for the sake of people's souls. These latter currents are not unique to Islam, but they are now clearly dominant in one region, and they are a terrible threat to all of us when combined with modern technologies of destruction. It is legitimate to ask why core human rights, such as the right to follow one's own conscience, are non-existent in much of the Middle East. It is legitimate to point out that Saudi Arabia forbids the free exercise of any religion except its own. It is legitimate to note the sectarian murderousness of the Sunni-Shi'a battle lines and

the brutal assault on religious minorities in the region. These excrescences are all defended by the tenets of that religion and in the terms of that religion. *Of course* religion has something to do with it.

Does it actually help anyone to keep saying this? Here, I think, there is a pragmatic case for non-Muslims like yours truly to shut the fuck up for a change. Ed Kilgore [notes](#) regarding the [Real Time exchange](#):

You don't have to watch the segment in question to understand, a priori, that five non-Muslims, none of whom are in any way experts on Islam, aren't going to do much of anything other than damage in dissecting a big, complicated, multifaceted World Religion in a single segment of a single television show.

It's also true, as Reza Aslan argues, that religious identity is not all about the faith itself but [embedded in culture and history](#):

As a form of identity, religion is inextricable from all the other factors that make up a person's self-understanding, like culture, ethnicity, nationality, gender and sexual orientation. What a member of a suburban megachurch in Texas calls Christianity may be radically different from what an impoverished coffee picker in the hills of Guatemala calls Christianity. The cultural practices of a Saudi Muslim, when it comes to the role of women in society, are largely irrelevant to a Muslim in a more secular society like Turkey or Indonesia.

But is the huge Egyptian majority for the death penalty for apostates merely some kind of cultural identity? Of course not. These people believe that Islam is the only way to achieve happiness, the sole guide for a good life and death, and that nothing should stand in the way of this ultimate goal. Paradise matters. Just because that seems utterly odd to many secular American liberals doesn't mean it isn't true. Why should we not take the views of the Muslims of the Middle East at face value? Why are we actually condescending to their sincere beliefs?
[Emphasis added.]

Yes, we need to make careful distinctions with respect to Islam in different places at different stages of development. Conflating the Islam of America and the Islam of Malaysia and the Islam of Saudi Arabia is, well, *dumb*, [especially as it relates to foreign policy](#). But to deny the core religious element of the violence in the Middle East, to ignore the fact that Islam, to a much greater degree than other faiths, is still resistant to some core freedoms of modernity, to ignore the fact that

fundamentalism of this kind can do extreme damage to other Muslims and infidels ... well this strikes me as another form of denial.

But what I find deeply dismaying is the lazy assumption that understanding these religious teachings and being troubled by them is a form of irrational Islamophobia or racism. I usually admire Max Fisher's work, but the reflexive notion that any criticism of contemporary Islam in the Middle East is *ipso facto* bigotry is extremely reductive and toxic to open debate. This is facile:

After cutting to a video, Lemon asked, with a straight face, "Does Islam promote violence?" Imagine if Lemon had demanded a prominent American Rabbi answer "Does Judaism promote greed" or asked a member of the Congressional Black Caucus to acknowledge the merits of the KKK's arguments. Then you can start to understand how Lemon's question looks to the 2.6 million Muslim-Americans who have to listen to this every day.

I take the point about the crudeness of the question and the way it can sound to Muslim-Americans. But when incredible violence is being committed throughout the Middle East in the name of Islam, and when Islam's own texts are purloined to defend such violence and empower it, of course the question is not a function of *prima facie* bigotry.

(Photo: Iraqi children carry water to their tent at a temporary displacement camp set up next to a Kurdish checkpoint on June 13, 2014 in Kalak, Iraq. Thousands of people have fled Iraq's second city of Mosul after it was overrun by ISIS (Islamic State of Iraq and Syria) militants. Many have been temporarily housed at various IDP (internally displaced persons) camps around the region including the area close to Erbil, as they hope to enter the safety of the nearby Kurdish region. By Dan Kitwood/Getty Images.)

<http://dish.andrewsullivan.com/2014/10/09/the-trouble-with-islam-2/>

THE FUTURE OF ISLAM

It's a long way down, fellas.

https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=8Mz0_x7313I

Say hello to Satan for me when you get to Hell.



Skyscraper

https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=r_8ydghbGSg

You're Welcome!

*Love,
the Real God*

Now, it is important to loudly and clearly state that I am adamantly opposed to bigotry and hatred against Muslims. I do not support the Trump-Bannon Ascendancy's alliance with White Supremacists and their stoking of racial hatred against people of Muslim nationalities.

I loudly denounce as unholy anyone who calls for violence against Muslims!!!

NO ONE SHOULD HARM A MUSLIM BECAUSE HE OR SHE IS MUSLIM. THAT IS HATRED. IT IS EVIL. ANYONE WHO DOES THAT IS AN ANTI-CHRIST. THE TEACHING OF CHRIST IS UNIVERSAL LOVE, EVEN LOVE OF OUR ENEMIES, ESPECIALLY LOVE OF OUR ENEMIES. And people who simply practice Islam, and do not advocate murder, are not even our enemies.

But, I simply cannot, in good conscience, fail to clearly state the conclusions of my rational investigations. The case against Islam, *as a religion*, and not against the humanity of those who hold it, is utterly damning. *Everything* about the religion reeks of the Satanic.

The only thing that is *not* Satanic about Islam is the humanity of the billions of decent people who hold it. For about 1400 years, Islam has served as the focal point of an entire civilization: and that civilization was filled with Children of God, who naturally invested their gifts and talents and energies into science, culture, the arts....even their religion.

So, that whole panoply of embroidery *around* the Koran has much of God in it. But the actual Koran itself appears, clearly to me in any case, to be a cheap forgery of Satan's. Now, think about the Koran. It has no structure. No historical

structure. No thematic structure. It's just a jumble of inconsistent statements that this Prophet claims to have heard voices tell him. Come on, guys, wake up.

That is why Islam utterly *cannot* stand criticism. That is why Islam treats critics as terrorists. Because Islamic terrorists can shoot and bomb, but they can't touch Christianity's Eternal and Blessed Truths. But simply poke the whole shaky, wobbly, weak apparatus of the Islamic faith, and the whole thing crashes to the ground...just like Satan himself. God is a Fortress that cannot be scaled. Satan is the worm who thought he was a dragon.

Satan is a Liar. He is the Father of Lies. The best lies are truths *mixed* with lies. If I walked up to you and said, "I'm Elvis Presley," this would be a lousy lie, because there would be nothing believable about it. A good lie - an effective lie - must necessarily mix truth with lies. The truth is the bait, and the lie is the hook. Just as in sin, the pleasure is the bait, and the damnation of Wrath is the hook.

So, of course, the Koran has many lovely statements about peace and mercy and beneficence....although not quite so much about Love or Self-Sacrifice or Communion....that's pretty foreign to the religion. Also, Islam's conception of the rewards of Heaven and the pains of Hell are so sensory, so bound up in an extension and amplification of this material world, rather than evidencing a deep insight into the nature of the Spirit of Love - the Infinite, Eternal, Abiding, Abounding Love that is God.

But then it also has so many horrid statements of War and Death and Murder and Oppression and Tyranny. And it has the rabid desire to conquer the world! Kill the Christians! Kill the Jews!

Don't you see what is going on here? Satan jumbles some pious righteousness talk *with* what matters to Satan: world conquest and the destruction of the Jews and Christians. ***Satan is using you!***

So, the ordinary, workaday Muslim is perfectly pleasant and wonderful. I have (had, I suppose) Muslim friends who are lovely, kind, decent people. Utterly wonderful. And I can completely understand how they derive guidance from the true elements that Satan threw into the Koran -- all that wonderful stuff about virtue and righteousness and self-denial and piety and prayer. *But that's not the purpose* of the Koran. The purpose of the Koran is to build up a worldly empire, to conquer the world and destroy God's Action in the World against Satan: which is the Jewish Nation and the Church of Christ.

So, when people in the Muslim world really explore their religion.....what do they find? Satan's call to Murder and Empire.

Islam can only be peaceful when it is either (1) ignored, more or less or (2) if an interpretive tradition contains and neuters the Koran of its obvious, rabid, slaving desire for Murder and World Empire and the destruction of the Jews and Christians.

If you rip off that containment field of the traditional interpretive framework that decent human beings built *around* the Koran, you get what we have in the 21st Century --- Armies of Satan marching under the Banner of a Religion of God. And that was *precisely* Satan's purpose all along. For Satan is the Lord of Illusions.

<https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=x9sqkahSziU>

Star Trek V: The Final Frontier

Listen to Rev. John MacArthur on the matter:

https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=2sci_WFp8ec

And, have you ever heard a whinier Satan, or Iblis as Islam calls Satan, than the Satan in the Koran?

Satan in the Hebrew Bible is a zealous prosecutor without any sympathy for Job. Satan in the New Testament is a totally detested figure that God has no sympathy for. Satan is a totally selfish, depraved monster who hates God and hates human beings. In the Revelation to John, Satan tries to murder the world, and God consigns him to an eternity of suffering in Hell because of his sins. In the Christian Bible, the Devil is.....well, the Devil.

But in the Koran, boy do we get an earful. We hear, "Yeah, well, you know, Satan was proud and wouldn't obey God, but, you know, he really did it because he *loves* God so much! He just couldn't bring himself to worship human beings, because that would be polytheistic, and you know I...uh, I mean, *he*, that Satan, I...I mean *he*...he's just so monotheistic...Yup, yeah that Satan, you know, he's the Devil and was cast out of Heaven because he's just way *too monotheistic*. In fact, God actually loves the Devil so much *because* he's so monotheistic...so you know, I mean, really, God and the Devil are like *totally* on the same page."

Seriously?

Isn't it *painfully* obvious that the Koran is giving the Devil's perspective? And who would be so at pains, so frantic, to give *his* side of the story? Maybe someone cast out of Heaven who has the psychological health of an insane, homicidal cocaine addict.

And, from the entirety of this work, can't you tell what *precisely* would be Satan's monotheism....well, that's none other than the one-dimensionality of a created spirit's arrogance. Because the real God, the Spirit, is infinitely dimensional, Uncreated, and has no arrogance or insecurity, which is why the Spirit can pour itself over with Grace, Beauty, and Love.

But, the ultimate mirror, Satan, that most powerful of the created spirits, *is* totally insecure, totally fearful -- which is why he turned from God in the first place, because he couldn't *trust* that God's Reign could mean Satan's happiness. Satan is the ultimate, blank, one-dimensional pinpoint of spirit.

Whereas the True Monotheism of God is the Monotheism of the Circle - multidimensional and, *because* of that, One, the empty monotheism of Satan is that of the point -- unidimensional, even no-dimensional, and because of that not even one, but a cacophony, a chaos of internal disintegration of the spirit -- an existence that has no inner life, no interiority, just the blank, raging exteriority of a force that has no internal grace.

Does that sound like certain political-religious movements that we've been dealing with lately?

More on Satan in Islam. I would suggest to future scholars and researchers: The key to Islam is Satan. The key to understanding everything about Islam is to really *listen* to everything Islam says about Satan....because you'll find that when the Koran talks about Satan, it is talking in the first person.

Back to Satan's supposed ultra-monotheism, the idea that Satan was so solicitous for the worship of the One God, that his real sin was refusing to *worship* Adam, and hence the human race.

Whatever does that sound like? Hmmmm..... It sounds awfully similar to what we've been discussing throughout this book: the procession from God-as-God before the Creation to the fulfillment of God's Creative Act and Presence to His Creation as God-in-All. For remember, God is generous and totally secure. He is not stingy or insecure. So God, in his Blessed Irony, raises up the very least

of the spiritual creation, human beings, to share His Nature and be as Gods. That is the doctrine of deification in Christianity, that through Christ, through the Son of God, all human beings who believe in Christ *share* God's essence, are *fully absorbed into the Inner Life* of God.

Satan HATES that. Satan is a true spiritualist, in the sense that he is a spiritual chauvinist. The greater your spiritual power, the greater you are. Period. Satan is the least ironic creature in the Universe, in all of Creation. So, God, in His Blessed Irony, sees the most meager of creatures, we human spirits, *enfleshed in matter to boot!*, and says, "I choose you to reign with me!"

Satan's "hair" - his spirit - literally-figuratively "goes on fire" at that idea of God, which is *God's idea of God*, which is, you know, **God** -- because Satan thought that, as the most perfect spirit, other than God, that *he* was God's lieutenant, second in the spiritual realm. But then, in that eternal NOW, he looked to God's reality and saw *He was dead last in Rank*. He was first, actually, in being able to behold, from a distance, the whole Creative Ecstasy: And *that* was precisely what God created Satan *for*. It was Satan's *nature* to be an Observer. It was Satan's *will* to be a Ruler.

God *created* Satan to cherish his plenitude - the plenitude of observation. Satan, in his arrogance, *willed* (he used the freedom that was the essence of his spirit) to cherish rank. Thus, Satan's will turned against God in the most radical way. Thus, like all damned spirits, Satan *twisted off* his own spirit from his own spirit -- he *twisted off* his nature from his will. The health of a spirit comes from totally *conforming* one's will to one's nature, and one does this through *trusting* and *obeying* the Will of God, which is what, rightfully, determines each creature's nature. To be in opposition to the Will of God is *precisely* to be in opposition to yourself, such that you derange yourself: You derange your will from your nature. And that is the precise technical definition of Hell.

So, when God - in His Blessed Irony - *chose* the least of all created spirits, human beings, to *share His Rank*, Satan blew up: Not only was he *second* in rank-which, maybe, theoretically Satan could handle (that's a theological question beyond the scope of this book....or probably this century)....but he was umpteenth gazillion in rank.

So, if what you really cherish is rank (and cherishing rank over plenitude is, ultimately, the essence of sin), and you find out that, instead of being second like you thought you were, instead of being front row center orchestra, you're way out in the highest, most removed mezzanine....actually, in formal parlance, the most removed seats in a theater are "the gods" or "paradise", for being so removed....which is actually rather appropriate when you think about it....then

what *must* you do? You *must* rebel, you must take out God, and all his insane perversity. *You* must set things right - *you* must restore sanity and order to Reality, and if you have to overthrow God to do it, so be it. The Old Man was losing it anyway.

But it was *precisely* Satan's twisting off of his will from his nature, his *turning* of his will (his spiritual sight), away from his nature that made him totally unable to see the essence of spirit, which is Spirit, and made him totally unable to see (1) That the true nature of spirit was not power, but generosity, and (2) that in any war between the mirror and the Reality, the Reality was going to win, hands down, the end, full stop. Period.

So, when Satan rebelled (eternally), he (eternally) blinded himself -- he flattened himself out to a pancake....to the thinnest crepe...such that no involution of spirit was possible: No irony was possible, no creativity was possible, no generosity was possible. The *only* thing that was possible was for him to *reflect* God's reality *in a one-dimensional way*. Satan can *reflect* the whole surface of God without accessing, at all, the interiority - the interior *meaning* - of God's Reality.

That is why God cast Satan out. Because Satan's idea of God - *Satan's* idea of monotheism is *entirely* different from *God's* idea of monotheism. Satan's monotheism is blank, imperialistic, cruel, arrogant, loud. God's idea of monotheism is intimate, free, kind, humble, gentle, and loving.

Some Islamic sources claim that Satan willingly went to Hell in obedience to God, to be God's torturer.

You know what that sounds more like?

Lucifer

https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=X4bF_quwNtw

That's how Satan sees himself. But it's not how God sees Satan.

Some Islamic sources even claim that, after the end of the world, Satan will be brought back into Heaven and cherished as God's Most Beloved Angel.

Oh yeah?

Listen to what the Bible says about Satan's fate, "The Devil who had led them astray was thrown into the pool of fire and sulphur, where the beast and the false prophet were. There they will be tormented day and night forever and ever" (Revelation 20:10).

Satan thinks that, after the end, he's getting back into Heaven?

Keep dreamin'.

Sweet Dreams

Eurythmics

<https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=qeMFqkcPYcg>

Remember: Irony is the essence of humor, of comedy.

Think about it. Who are the funniest people in the world? Jews.

Who are the least funny people in the world? Muslims.

And as far as the smattering of Muslim comedians.....how Muslim are they?

Looking for comedy in the Muslim world?

Keep on looking.....

Looking for Comedy in the Muslim World

<https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=zAkQ-gvErDw>

And why is it that *radical* Muslims have **absolutely** no sense of humor? -- other than perhaps a mocking sense of cruelty.

Satan's Sense of Humor

<https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=kFpuPCpIuJw>

And especially, why will the Islamic world react to this book like 9/11?

Why can Christianity withstand bombs and bullets, but Muslim reaction to *ideas* and *arguments* and *reason* is this:

Run, Islam, Run

<https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=TdIiyBF1Pr8>

Why is the Osama bin Laden of Islam a mass murdering terrorist responsible for the brutal and horrific deaths of thousands of people...and the “Osama bin Laden” of Christianity is a mild-mannered, demure, bookish intellectual who picks up insects with a napkin and takes them outside?

Secularism in a Nutshell

You see, the contention of Secularism is that, at bottom and in truth, this life and you yourself are not really real.

The contention of Christianity is that, at bottom and in truth, your life - your soul - *you* are more real than you have ever imagined.

Luminous Beings are We

<https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=XMdR9iAflKo>

World War III

We can also see more clearly into the Satanic War Plan if we consider the message of Fatima, the message communicated by Mary to the three Portuguese children in 1917. Sister Lucia, one of the visionaries, once said:

The devil is in the mood for engaging in a decisive battle against the Blessed Virgin. And the devil knows what it is that offends God the most, and which in a short space of time will gain for him the greatest number of souls. Thus the devil does everything to overcome souls consecrated to God, because in this way the devil will succeed in leaving the souls of the faithful abandoned by their leaders, thereby the more easily will he seize them.

And indeed, we have seen a precipitous decline in the number of vocations to the priesthood, which has savagely diminished the effectiveness, power, and grace of the Church. The decimation of the ranks of the priesthood has been a devastation of the Church.

As Sister Lucia also said, “The decisive battle between the Lord and the kingdom of Satan will be over marriage and the family.”

The whole ferment that we have seen in the culture against Christianity is simply the rumblings of Satan’s activity. Satan is softening up his target before he finally strikes, in an all-out effort to sow chaos and despair, in his constant effort to snatch souls into perdition.

We can see this very clearly in the state of play in the world.

Our secular modern international order is not stable, and it is not meant to be. Satan can very easily start a major World War, far worse than the World Wars of the 20th Century.

Step 1: An Islamist terrorist group obtains a real nuclear weapon.

Step 2: Said Islamist terrorist group detonates said nuclear bomb in a major Western city, or in Israel, killing millions of people.

Step 3: Treaty Alliance obligations are invoked - Article V of NATO, the US-Israeli Alliance, the United Nations Charter.

Step 4: The Western Powers and/or Israel launch a nuclear strike against those governments that contributed to the Islamist terrorist group’s nuclear terrorism.

Step 5: Nuclear World War.

You also have to realize how vulnerable America is to a serious disruption, such as rampant nuclear terrorism.

The United States of America is *not* a decentralized country -- and the problem is not the federal government, the problem is capitalism. Every region of the country is dependent on a centralized, corporate supply chain, with a handful of key productive and distributive nodes spread throughout the country (those are the arteries and veins), which then flow out to the whole country, in the suburbs and exurbs and rural areas (those are the capillaries).

Less than 1% of people are directly involved in agriculture. 99% of the people in the United States (and other advanced countries) depend on the capitalist supply chain *just to be fed*. Without proper civil and economic order, 99% of people would be left to scavenge for food -- the supermarkets would be ravaged in two days, and then all-out chaos would reign.

The whole administrative fabric and framework of the country is centralized in a few hyper-urban centers - New York, Los Angeles, the San Francisco Bay Area, and Washington, D.C. If those were knocked out, the ordinary operation of the country would become impossible.

Not only that but consider the terrorism part of nuclear terrorism: Even if “only” one or two cities were destroyed, people would be **terrified** of going into *any* major cities, and **our economic system requires that millions of people travel into densely packed, hyper-urban centers to administer our Great Capitalist Empire.....every single day.**

So, even if “only” New York and/or D.C. were destroyed, people would be absolutely terrified of going into even Seattle or Houston or Boston or Philadelphia or Baltimore or Cincinnati or Minneapolis or *anywhere*, any town with more than one horse.

So, even one or two nuclear detonations in major American cities would cause a massive administrative and economic disruption.

But that’s okay. Because our strongly regulated, de-centralized, localized, cooperative, worker- and consumer-operated system has a strong immune resistance to economic disruption.

Oh wait.....NO, IT DOESN'T!

Even mild shocks can cause outright depression: Imagine the economic collapse that even the nuclear devastation of one or two cities would bring.

So, imagine this scenario: a terrorist group, aided by a rogue state, obtains nuclear weapons -- how many, nobody would know -- the terrorist group, expecting the Apocalypse, detonates the weapons in a few global cities. Massive chaos ensues, with people emptying the cities, the administrative and economic engine of global capitalism collapsing and going haywire, and a massive Global Depression the likes of which the world has never seen.

All of a sudden, as if overnight, we go from a relatively stable, relatively prosperous, modern, sophisticated Empire.....to a bunch of ragged scavengers fighting the other hundred bums for the last bite of that Snickers bar that you found at the bottom of a trash can.

The only way to restore order would be harsh military rule, with a complete takeover of society by the White House, the military, the FBI, the CIA, the NSA, and the entire military-industrial-security-corporate apparatus. Have fun with that. The cure might be worse than the disease.

And, with a nuclear terrorist group still out there, supported by an entire civilization thirsty for blood and hungry for Armageddon, and a Western World and a United States under military dictatorships with crippled economies, with a Western population also thirsty for revenge and security, armed with nuclear weapons, with ICBMs capable of reaching any city in the world in less than 15 minutes: Welcome to World War III.

Step 6 is the effort to bring peace. And in that effort, the Secularists who hate Christians because we do not hallow the Sanctity of Abortion and the Sanctity of Sodomy, will take the side of the Muslims. Secularists and Muslims will join hands to persecute and destroy Christianity.

This will be the time of the supernatural occurrences, the plagues from God to afflict the Final Egypt of the Anti-Christ's Empire and the false miracles that the Anti-Christ will perform to try to trick as many people as possible into damnation: a time of disasters and catastrophes.

There will be nuclear exchanges, massive wars, and I have a feeling an asteroid or comet (or maybe a number of such planetoids) will devastate large parts of the planet, wiping out large portions of the human population.

There will be no (or virtually no) atheists at this point.

Instead, the human race, individually and in communities, will have to *discern* what forces are those of God and which forces are those of Satan, the Devil.

Step 7 will be God's turn: When the Glorious Appearance of the Sign of the Son of Man -- the Glorious Appearance of Christ -- will, in a Great and Holy Havoc, destroy the Satanic Imperium, destroy the Anti-Christ and the False Prophet, with the Holy Angels destroying those marked with the Mark of the Beast, in a great deluge of an Exemplary Tenth Plague.

You were warned.

The Millennium

Also, let me be very clear about the Millennium. The Millennium is the Age of the Church. So the Millennium began with Pentecost in the Cenacle when the Spirit descended onto the Apostles of the 1st Century. But the Millennium has different stages -- the first stage, which we have been currently living in, is the Kingdom of Christ. The fulfillment of the Kingdom of Christ will be the Second Pentecost, the deluge of Holy Fire, of Divine Grace, upon the world. That Second Pentecost will usher in an age of Great Tribulation, which Christ's Glorious Appearance will triumph over. That will inaugurate the Age of Peace, which is the Kingdom of the Spirit. Since the Holy Spirit is identified with the Shekinah, the Divine Feminine Presence of God, and since the Spirit and Mary grieved over the Crucified Christ in *precisely* the exact same way, Mary is the one Christian believer *most* identified with the Holy Spirit. So while, certainly, the Spirit will be the King of the Kingdom of the Spirit, Mary will most definitely be a Queen of the Kingdom of the Spirit -- not in some polytheistic sense in which the King and Queen are equals, but in the sense that Mary will have a kind of special symbolic significance in the Age of Peace. All Christians will look to Mary's faith as the means to imitate perfect faith in Christ. No one will worship Mary. Christians will only seek to imitate Mary's perfect worship of Christ, as St. Paul tells Christians to be imitators of him, since he is an imitator of Christ. As St. Paul says, "Be imitators of me, as I am of Christ" (1 Corinthians 11:1).

The Millennium is very unlikely to be a straight-up 1000 years. A millennium, or 1000 years, in ancient numerology, (the discipline of what numbers symbolize), just means an enormously long time -- so it *could* be 1000 years, it could be 10,000 years, 1 million years, 1 trillion years.

But, for a humanity that has transcended into a post-singularity Christian future, there will be extended lifespans or practical immortality within the confines of the material universe, the Cosmos. So, if you're practically immortal, what is the difference between 1000 years or 1 trillion years?

In any event, the final battle between the Risen Christ returned in the Flesh in His Glory and Satan himself (described in Revelation 20:7-15), will come at *the end* of this Millennium.

The final battle will be between those in the human continuum who trust in God and accept their deaths in the destruction of the material Cosmos, trusting that

God will keep His Word and create a New Heaven and a New Earth, and those who do not, will not, and cannot trust in God, and will fight strenuously *for* the conservation of the material Cosmos in its present form.

For, no matter how much the human continuum renovates the Cosmos, performing a Cosmic Tikkun Olam under the Sign of the Cross, in the Spirit of the Christ and the Father, this material Cosmos will still be, fundamentally, sundered and distanced from God. At the end of *time*, God will destroy the Cosmos so that he can re-create it in *total communion* with Himself. (Revelation 21-22)

The Regime of the Anti-Christ

The reign of the Anti-Christ will combine three unholy elements into a Satanic World Imperium: the moral blindness and decrepitude of Secularism, the murderous rage and cruelty of Islam, and the lustful greed and greedy lust of Capitalism.

It will be bad.

I also have a theory on what the Trinity will look like in the Satanic Imperium of the Anti-Christ.

The Anti-Christ will present himself as the Mahdi, with the False Prophet presented as Jesus Christ. (The Mahdi, in Islamic theology, is the savior of Islam who will appear at the end of the world, to conquer the world, establish a world empire, and subjugate all peoples to the Islamic religion.)

The Anti-Christ will merge Christianity and Islam into one religion, in which the Islamic elements and interpretation will have preeminence, drowning out authentic Christianity.

There will be an Anti-Trinity in the False Islamic Christianity of the Anti-Christ. That Anti-Trinity, (which, of course, will be presented as the authentic Trinity), will go like this: there is one God. That God has a Spirit, so there is a Spirit of God. In the unholy synthesis of Islam and Christianity, the Trinity will be reinterpreted to mean the indwelling of the Spirit of God in the Mahdi, such that the Anti-Christ will be able to “authentically” portray himself as both the Mahdi and the Christ.

But the Spirit of God will be interpreted as the Spirit of the Christ -- so the Spirit of God can descend and make one a Christ, meaning not the Son of God in a Christian Trinitarian sense, but only a savior and liberator. (And in being God’s chosen savior and liberator, the Mahdi will be able to portray himself as a “son” of God - a chosen one of God.) By the Spirit of God supposedly indwelling in the Anti-Christ/Mahdi, the Anti-Christ will claim to be both Mahdi and a Christ...and not only *a* Christ, but a greater Christ than Jesus Christ. Like Mahdi Christ....Christ Mahdi.

At the same time, Jesus of Nazareth will be portrayed as the first Christ and the Mahdi will be portrayed as the last Christ -- the Alpha and Omega Christs - the salt and pepper shaker Christs.

The last Christ, the Mahdi, will be proclaimed by the False Prophet (who will pretend to be Jesus Christ) to be a greater Christ than himself, greater than Christ Jesus. So the fake Christ Jesus will bow to the authority of Christ Mahdi.

But the Anti-Christ and the False Prophet will claim that they *share* the same Spirit of God/Christ in some way. The Satanic Islamic Christianity will claim that the Spirit of Christ was handed down, successor to successor, and that the manifested Christs, the first Christ, Christ Jesus, and the last Christ, Christ Mahdi, are the sons of God, the chosen ones of God, Christ Mahdi being the superior, Christ Jesus being the lesser.

So, we will have a Satanic Trinity -- with Satan (called God) as clear chief honcho (the only way Satan would have it) and the First Person of the Trinity, the Anti-Christ/Christ Mahdi being the Second Person of the Trinity, and the fake Christ Jesus/False Prophet being the Third Person of the Trinity.

Satanic Islamic Christianity will claim that *this* is what the Gospels always meant in referring to Father, Son, and Spirit. Satan, excuse me, God, sent his Spirit upon his chosen one, the Mahdi, to become World Ruler, and the first holder of that Spirit, Christ Jesus, will also return to correct errors and assist his superior, the Last Christ, Christ Mahdi, in subjugating the world to God.

Satan loves imitating God -- not imitating his interiority but mimicking his exteriority. So, the Satanic Trinity will give him the opportunity to mimic the intimacy that exists between the Three Persons of the True Trinity, while at the same time asserting Satan's (excuse me, God's) absolute primacy -- his absolute priority in rank -- which was always what Satan coveted.

And, indeed, this Anti-Trinity precisely represents Satan's spiritual chauvinist vision. In Satan's scheme, the "unholy" real Trinity, of a logical causal loop in which rank is overwhelmed by plenitude, will be superseded by the Anti-Trinity, in which rank is the essence of the matter. Father Satan, the One and Supreme God, will merely grant his *power* (which, for Satan, is the total, and only, nature of spirit) to his tools, his slaves: in a greater measure to Christ Mahdi, who will have the highest rank of any human being, and in a lesser measure to Christ Jesus, who will be the second in rank among all human beings, the Mahdi's lieutenant.

So, while the essence of the real Trinity is the Plenitude of Total Intimacy and Gift, the essence of the anti-Trinity will be presented as the Proper Hierarchical Order of the Rank of Power.

And, indeed, this precisely accords with Islam's perpetual (and willful) misunderstanding of the Trinity. Islam has always insisted on the idea that the

Sonship of Jesus in the Trinity is incompatible with the Father's Lordship. Islam's god and founder, Satan, simply cannot comprehend the simple concept of sharing: which is the essence of Love. Love is a unity of the Giver and the Gift: when many become one: are one. Satan, who cannot (will not) love, can only understand reality as a hierarchical Master-slave relationship.

Listen to the total hatred expressed in this passage of the Quran about the Son:

And they say, "The Most Merciful has taken [for Himself] a son." You have done an atrocious thing. The heavens almost rupture therefrom and the earth splits open and the mountains collapse in devastation. That they attribute to the Most Merciful a son. And it is not appropriate for the Most Merciful that He should take a son. There is no one in the heavens and earth but that he comes to the Most Merciful as a slave.

(19:88-93)

That is Satan's attitude. For Satan, God is a Slave Master, since the angels are slaves. Satan sees *himself* as the most perfect being, since his spirit is greater (more powerful) than the spirits of human beings. Since the True God, YHWH, is so utterly mad and perverse as to graciously make human beings in His image, and to raise them to divinity with Him as sharers in His Nature, even though human beings are (innately) spiritually weaker than angels, Satan rebels against the Divine Will, seeking to substitute his own vision of reality for God's.

For God's vision of reality is a family. Satan's vision of reality is an army, a horde of murderous slaves, led by a violent, bloody Warlord.

Listen to what Satan says about the concept of the Trinity: of three modes of being existing united in *Love*:

Allah has not taken any son, nor has there ever been with Him any deity. [If there had been], then each deity would have taken [away] what it created, and some of them would have sought to overcome others. Exalted is Allah above what they describe [concerning Him].

[Quran 23:91]

Satan finds the very idea that God's *Inner Life* can exist as anything other than a hierarchical power structure incomprehensible and repulsive. *Listen* to what Satan says here: listen to his assumptions. Satan assumes that (1) any of the dimensions within God would *necessarily* have "taken away what it created" and (2) that a power struggle would necessarily ensue.

Satan assumes that anything that can say "I" (like him) would necessarily pull away from any sharing. The idea of two "I"s inhering in *One* "I AM", in a common Spirit, is a puzzling monstrosity that Satan simply cannot wrap his filthy mind around. And since no unity of love can exist among multiple modes of consciousness, but only the supremacy of one Master over inferiors, over slaves, in Satan's mind, such modes of consciousness will necessarily seek to *overcome* the others: to enslave them. That perfectly encapsulates Satan's mode of life: the relentless urge to make all who are not him nothing more than slaves to his will.

God's idea of Himself is Love. Satan's idea of God is Power, so Satan tried to overthrow the real God and make *himself* God instead.

Listen to St. John describe what true faith in God is:

Chapter 3

1 See what love the Father has bestowed on us that we may be called the children of God. Yet so we are. The reason the world does not know us is that it did not know him. **2** Beloved, we are God's children now; what we shall be has not yet been revealed. We do know that when it is revealed we shall be like him, for we shall see him as he is.

3 Everyone who has this hope based on him makes himself pure, as he is pure.

4 Everyone who commits sin commits lawlessness, for sin is lawlessness. **5** You know that he was revealed to take away sins, and in him there is no sin. **6** No one who remains in him sins; no one who sins has seen him or known him. **7** Children, let no one deceive you. The person who acts in righteousness is righteous, just as he is righteous.

8 Whoever sins belongs to the devil, because the devil has sinned from the beginning. Indeed, the Son of God was revealed to destroy the works of the devil. **9** No one who is begotten by God commits sin, because God's seed remains in him; he cannot sin because he is begotten by God. **10** In this way, the children of

God and the children of the devil are made plain; no one who fails to act in righteousness belongs to God, nor anyone who does not love his brother.

11 For this is the message you have heard from the beginning: we should love one another, **12** unlike Cain who belonged to the evil one and slaughtered his brother. Why did he slaughter him? Because his own works were evil, and those of his brother righteous. **13** Do not be amazed, then, brothers, if the world hates you.

14 We know that we have passed from death to life because we love our brothers. Whoever does not love remains in death. **15** Everyone who hates his brother is a murderer, and you know that no murderer has eternal life remaining in him. **16** The way we came to know love was that he laid down his life for us; so we ought to lay down our lives for our brothers. **17** If someone who has worldly means sees a brother in need and refuses him compassion, how can the love of God remain in him?

18 Children, let us love not in word or speech but in deed and truth.

19 [Now] this is how we shall know that we belong to the truth and reassure our hearts before him **20** in whatever our hearts condemn, for God is greater than our hearts and knows everything. **21** Beloved, if [our] hearts do not condemn us, we have confidence in God **22** and receive from him whatever we ask, because we keep his commandments and do what pleases him. **23** And his commandment is this: we should believe in the name of his Son, Jesus Christ, and love one another just as he commanded us. **24** Those who keep his commandments remain in him, and he in them, and the way we know that he remains in us is from the Spirit that he gave us.

Chapter 4

1 Beloved, do not trust every spirit but test the spirits to see whether they belong to God, because many false prophets have gone out into the world.

2 This is how you can know the Spirit of God: every spirit that acknowledges Jesus Christ come in the flesh belongs to God, **3** and every spirit that does not acknowledge Jesus does not belong to God. This is the spirit of the antichrist that, as you heard, is to come, but in fact is already in the world.

4 You belong to God, children, and you have conquered them, for the one who is in you is greater than the one who is in the world. **5** They belong to the world;

accordingly, their teaching belongs to the world, and the world listens to them. **6** We belong to God, and anyone who knows God listens to us, while anyone who does not belong to God refuses to hear us. This is how we know the spirit of truth and the spirit of deceit.

7 Beloved, let us love one another, because love is of God; everyone who loves is begotten by God and knows God. **8** Whoever is without love does not know God, for God is love.

9 In this way the love of God was revealed to us: God sent his only Son into the world so that we might have life through him.

10 In this is love: not that we have loved God, but that he loved us and sent his Son as expiation for our sins. **11** Beloved, if God so loved us, we also must love one another. **12** No one has ever seen God. Yet, if we love one another, God remains in us, and his love is brought to perfection in us.

13 This is how we know that we remain in him and he in us, that he has given us of his Spirit. **14** Moreover, we have seen and testify that the Father sent his Son as savior of the world. **15** Whoever acknowledges that Jesus is the Son of God, God remains in him and he in God.

16 We have come to know and to believe in the love God has for us. God is love, and whoever remains in love remains in God and God in him. **17** In this is love brought to perfection among us, that we have confidence on the day of judgment because as he is, so are we in this world. **18** There is no fear in love, but perfect love drives out fear because fear has to do with punishment, and so one who fears is not yet perfect in love. **19** We love because he first loved us. **20** If anyone says, "I love God," but hates his brother, he is a liar; for whoever does not love a brother whom he has seen cannot love God whom he has not seen. **21** This is the commandment we have from him: whoever loves God must also love his brother.

Chapter 5

Faith is Victory over the World.

1 Everyone who believes that Jesus is the Christ is begotten by God, and everyone who loves the father loves [also] the one begotten by him. **2** In this way we know that we love the children of God when we love God and obey his commandments. **3** For the love of God is this, that we keep his commandments. And his

commandments are not burdensome, **4** for whoever is begotten by God conquers the world. And the victory that conquers the world is our faith. **5** Who [indeed] is the victor over the world but the one who believes that Jesus is the Son of God?

6 This is the one who came through water and blood, Jesus Christ, not by water alone, but by water and blood. The Spirit is the one that testifies, and the Spirit is truth. **7** So there are three that testify, **8** the Spirit, the water, and the blood, and the three are of one accord. **9** If we accept human testimony, the testimony of God is surely greater. Now the testimony of God is this, that he has testified on behalf of his Son. **10** Whoever believes in the Son of God has this testimony within himself. Whoever does not believe God has made him a liar by not believing the testimony God has given about his Son. **11** And this is the testimony: God gave us eternal life, and this life is in his Son. **12** Whoever possesses the Son has life; whoever does not possess the Son of God does not have life.

13 I write these things to you so that you may know that you have eternal life, you who believe in the name of the Son of God. **14** And we have this confidence in him, that if we ask anything according to his will, he hears us. **15** And if we know that he hears us in regard to whatever we ask, we know that what we have asked him for is ours.

16 If anyone sees his brother sinning, if the sin is not deadly, he should pray to God and he will give him life. This is only for those whose sin is not deadly. There is such a thing as deadly sin, about which I do not say that you should pray. **17** All wrongdoing is sin, but there is sin that is not deadly.

18 We know that no one begotten by God sins; but the one begotten by God he protects, and the evil one cannot touch him. **19** We know that we belong to God, and the whole world is under the power of the evil one. **20** We also know that the Son of God has come and has given us discernment to know the one who is true. And we are in the one who is true, in his Son Jesus Christ. He is the true God and eternal life. **21** Children, be on your guard against idols.

(1 John 3-5)

Listen *again* to St. John:

18 There is no fear in love, but perfect love drives out fear because fear has to do with punishment, and so one who fears is not yet perfect in love. **19** We love because he first loved us. **20** If anyone says, "I love God," but hates his brother, he

is a liar; for whoever does not love a brother whom he has seen cannot love God whom he has not seen. **21** This is the commandment we have from him: whoever loves God must also love his brother.

Theocratic Muslims say that they love God, and they “prove” this love for God by murdering and destroying and enslaving and raping and torturing and calling for the subjugation of everyone who is not Muslim.

Read the Quran. See how often it resorts to simple bullying. See how angry it is. See how fearful it is. See how it constantly threatens.

Listen to its orgy of anger and violence:

Indeed, the penalty for those who wage war against Allah and His Messenger and strive upon earth [to cause] corruption is none but that they be killed or crucified or that their hands and feet be cut off from opposite sides or that they be exiled from the land. That is for them a disgrace in this world; and for them in the Hereafter is a great punishment. [5:33]

[Hmm.....that’s very violent....and the “god” who utters such a thing seems to *delight* in such violence. Now, what “god” does that sound like? Satan, obviously.]

[Remember] when your Lord inspired to the angels, "I am with you, so strengthen those who have believed. I will cast terror into the hearts of those who disbelieved, so strike [them] upon the necks and strike from them every fingertip." That is because they opposed Allah and His Messenger. And whoever opposes Allah and His Messenger - indeed, Allah is severe in penalty. "That [is yours], so taste it." And indeed for the disbelievers is the punishment of the Fire. [8:12-14]

[Exactly what Jesus would say.....]

The Fire will sear their faces, and they therein will have taut smiles. [23:104]

He will say, "Remain despised therein and do not speak to Me." [23:108]

The [unmarried] woman or [unmarried] man found guilty of sexual intercourse - lash each one of them with a hundred lashes, and do not be taken by pity for them in the religion of Allah, if you should believe in Allah and the Last Day. And let a group of the believers witness their punishment. [24:2]

[Jesus protected the adulteress, he did not torture her. Jesus taught love and compassion. Jesus did not despise pity. He died out of pity and love for the human race.]

Indeed, those who like that immorality should be spread [or publicized] among those who have believed will have a painful punishment in this world and the Hereafter. And Allah knows and you do not know. [24:19]

[Who talks like this? *Oh, boy, I know, and you don't know.* Really? Read the Gospels and see if Jesus talks like this. Even when Jesus warns people about the reality of Hell, he never does it with this bizarre, smug, petulant tone. Jesus simply states the facts and, like a brother and a friend, tries to warn you about the danger that you're in.]

Muhammad is the Messenger of Allah ; and those with him are forceful against the disbelievers, merciful among themselves. You see them bowing and prostrating [in prayer], seeking bounty from Allah and [His] pleasure. Their mark is on their faces from the trace of prostration. That is their description in the Torah. And their description in the Gospel is as a plant which produces its offshoots and strengthens them so they grow firm and stand upon their stalks, delighting the sowers - so that Allah may enrage by them the disbelievers. Allah has promised those who believe and do righteous deeds among them forgiveness and a great reward.

Oh yeah? Listen to what Jesus *actually* says in the Gospel:

You have heard that it was said, 'You shall love your neighbor and hate your enemy.' But I say to you, love your enemies, and pray for those who persecute you, that you may be the children of your heavenly Father, for he makes his sun rise on the bad and the good, and causes rain to fall on the just and the unjust. For if you love those who love you, what recompense will you have? Do not the tax collectors do the same? And if you greet your brothers only, what is unusual about that? Do not the pagans do the same? So be perfect, just as your heavenly Father is perfect.

(Matthew 5:43-48)

Jesus says: ***BE MERCIFUL TO ALL!***

Jesus' idea of perfection is LOVE FOR ALL.

Satan's idea of perfection is POWER OVER ALL. And *that* is precisely the principle that animates the Quran.

Who acts more like pagans? Muslims, who are told only to be merciful among themselves? Or Christians, who are told to love all people, even and especially their enemies? Which religion has the scent of the True God?

And which religion sounds an awful lot like Satan?

Satan uses idols, because his goal is to turn human beings away from God. Satan uses polytheistic gods to deter people from the worship of the true God. Satan uses the idols of money, power, sex, and revenge as idols. But one of Satan's most ingenious idols is the false monotheism of Islam. In Islam, Satan turns "God" Himself into an idol.

Satan turns the unicity of God against the unity of God. God is One. *And* God is Love. And there can be no love that is *not* multi-dimensional. And the only true unity is Love. There are only two kinds of oneness: the oneness that is *for* others, and the oneness that is **only** *for* itself. The first kind of oneness is true oneness, oneness with life: and that oneness is Love. The second kind of oneness is the eternal death that comes from selfishness, a collapsing into oneself until nothing is left: it is the oblivion of self-obsession, the vortex of evil. In order to be One, God *must be* multi-dimensional.

God is Love. The Trinity is the inner meaning and structure of that Love. To worship anything other than the Triune Unity that is God's Love is idolatry.

Satan always promotes idolatry, the worship of things other than God. Satan does that through imitating God, by trying to make things that are *not* God *seem* like God. Satan is the ultimate parodist. Satan cannot *create* anything: only God can create. So Satan must always resort to parody. Satan's ultimate coup, his *pièce de résistance*, would be to parody the Trinity.

So, the Anti-Christ will "*correct*" the world's idea of the Trinity. He and the False Prophet will "expose" the "false" Christian understanding of a Triune Unity, replacing it with the "real" Trinity: the Master-slave-lieutenant "trinity" of hierarchical power, consisting of Satan, the Anti-Christ, and the False Prophet (called God, Christ Mahdi, and Christ Jesus).

People will be encouraged to worship the Christs, Christ Mahdi and Christ Jesus, because in worshipping them, they will worship the Spirit of God that dwells within them. Even though Islam would consider this idolatry, Christ Mahdi and the fake Christ Jesus will say, "Just as God demanded Satan to prostrate himself before a man, so too God now commands that you submit by prostrating yourself before these two men."

It gets better. (Actually, worse.) Satan, being the consummate showman and impersonator, will have the False Prophet, the fake Jesus Christ, appear to the world coming down from the sky. So, the False Christians, the Islamic Christians, the Christian Muslims, will say, "See! Christ Jesus returned just as Christians expected, just as Christian Scriptures said. Now you *must* believe in our world religion!"

Whatever is left of the True Church will rightly say, "No! That still is not sufficient! The glorious appearance of the one and only Jesus Christ (and there are no other Christs) will be *obvious* to all, such that no one could possibly entertain *any* doubt whatsoever. So, therefore, this "Christ Jesus" is obviously a fake, nothing more than a Satanic ruse."

The Satanists.....excuse me, the Islamic Christians/Christian Muslims.....will say, "No! You're just obstinate in not believing! It *is* truly obvious that Christ Jesus returned in his glorious appearance, and the only reason you deny it is because you serve Satan and are evil."

So, the Anti-Christ will justify the execution -- the systematic extermination -- of True Christians who dissent from this visible nightmare and profess faith in the invisible Christ as God's wrath wiping evil and disbelief from the earth.

Of course, once the Glorious Appearance actually occurs, those False Christians, those worshippers of the Anti-Christ, will instantly know that they were wrong, and will mourn for their damnation.

Portrait of those who Worship the Anti-Christ
<https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=vjFG-4Ge668>

Let's reiterate: the Anti-Christ and the False Prophet will warp and twist the true nature of Christianity and Judaism by reinterpreting each religion, its traditions, and its Sacred Scriptures. The Anti-Christ will present himself as the long-awaited Messiah....Mashiach....the one promised by the Torah and the prophets, who would accomplish the political triumph of a worldly Kingdom of Israel. The Anti-Christ will claim that not only is he Christ Mahdi, but he will falsely claim that Christ Mahdi is *precisely* the Mashiach prophesied by the Hebrew Scriptures and the one taught by the rabbis. This will accomplish the union of Islamic Christianity with Judaism.

Unfortunately, many Jewish Christians will be misled into following the Anti-Christ because they will be deceived into thinking that Judaism was more correct than Christianity. Christianity clearly states in the Gospels that Jesus' appearance will be undeniable -- no one will deny the Second Coming of

Christ, just as no one would deny that the Sun is in the sky. But the Islamic Christianity or Christian Islam will assert that it would only be undeniable by the Children of God, whereas the Children of Satan would, naturally, deny the return of the Christ, the Christ Mahdi, the Mashiach.

There's also a high likelihood, as indicated in Revelation 13:3, that the Anti-Christ (the Beast) will be assassinated and will appear to get resurrected.

Let us quote Chapter 13 of Revelation:

The First Beast.

Then I saw a beast come out of the sea with ten horns and seven heads; on its horns were ten diadems, and on its heads blasphemous name[s]. The beast I saw was like a leopard, but it had feet like a bear's, and its mouth was like the mouth of a lion. To it the dragon gave its own power and throne, along with great authority. I saw that one of its heads seemed to have been mortally wounded, but this mortal wound was healed. Fascinated, the whole world followed after the beast. They worshiped the dragon because it gave its authority to the beast; they also worshiped the beast and said, "Who can compare with the beast or who can fight against it?" The beast was given a mouth uttering proud boasts and blasphemies, and it was given authority to act for forty-two months. It opened its mouth to utter blasphemies against God, blaspheming his name and his dwelling and those who dwell in heaven. It was also allowed to wage war against the holy ones and conquer them, and it was granted authority over every tribe, people, tongue, and nation. All the inhabitants of the earth will worship it, all whose names were not written from the foundation of the world in the book of life, which belongs to the Lamb who was slain.

Whoever has ears ought to hear these words. Anyone destined for captivity goes into captivity. Anyone destined to be slain by the sword shall be slain by the sword. Such is the faithful endurance of the holy ones.

The Second Beast.

Then I saw another beast come up out of the earth; it had two horns like a lamb's but spoke like a dragon. It wielded all the authority of the first beast in its sight and made the earth and its inhabitants worship the first beast, whose mortal wound had been healed. It performed great signs, even making fire come down from heaven to earth in the sight of everyone. It deceived the inhabitants of the earth with the signs it was allowed to perform in the sight of the first beast, telling them to make an image for the beast who had been wounded by the sword and revived. It was then permitted to breathe life into the beast's image, so that the beast's image could speak and [could] have anyone who did not worship it put to death. It forced all the people, small and great, rich and poor, free

and slave, to be given a stamped image on their right hands or their foreheads, so that no one could buy or sell except one who had the stamped image of the beast's name or the number that stood for its name. Wisdom is needed here; one who understands can calculate the number of the beast, for it is a number that stands for a person. His number is six hundred and sixty-six.

Before we begin our exegesis, remember that Satan is a jazz musician of sorts, he'll improvise as necessary and move the pieces around to try to dissemble -- to lie and deceive people. But whatever Satan does will necessarily conform to the prophetic text, which necessarily embraces any of the strategies that Satan could implement. (Since Satan can do nothing without God's authorization, Satan is constrained to act only within a range of possibilities.)

We should also note that both the preterist⁴¹ *and* the futurist interpretations are true: the Book of Revelation refers to events that have already occurred in ancient history and *also* simultaneously foretells events that will occur at the end of the world.

The First Beast is the Anti-Christ and the World Imperium he will establish. The ten horns refer to the national and supranational powers that the Anti-Christ will have under him - his lieutenants in his system of World Authority. I think the seven heads refer to the seven continents of the world, over which the Anti-Christ will exert his authority. The blasphemous names are the religious savior titles that the Anti-Christ will claim for himself. Though the Anti-Christ will be nothing more than an evil man, he will claim for himself the role and titles of: the Second Coming of Christ, the Mashiach of the Jews, Christ Mahdi of the Muslims, and the fulfillment of every other religion's eschatology. Since he will not be the Christ, it will be blasphemous for him to claim that he is. More generally, his blasphemy will consist in claiming that he is a Divinely-appointed King, when he is actually the chosen one of Satan.

The Anti-Christ and his World Kingdom will have the characteristics of the leopard (the Persian Empire), feet like a bear's (the Median Empire), and a mouth like a lion (which represents Babylon). The Persian Empire was founded by the Great King, Cyrus the Great, who ordered the construction of the Second Temple. The Median Empire worshipped the religion of the Magis, a caste of priests, who worshipped a Cult of Fire. The Babylonian Empire had a strange, mysterious polytheistic cult, which was totally idolatrous: Babylon is a byword for idolatry.

In other words, the Anti-Christ will claim the functions and titles of King, Priest, and Prophet. Christ Jesus is Priest, Prophet, and King. But Jesus spoke God's Word (was God's Word), celebrated at the altar of God, and was God's King - God as King. The Anti-Christ will imitate the pagan, worldly King, Priest, and

⁴¹ The word "Preterist" refers to the view that the events described in Revelation only refer to historical events.

Prophet. The Anti-Christ will be a King who will meteorically rise into power, he will be a Priest who worships a Cult of Fire (i.e. he will twist the world's religions to Satanism), and he will make his World Religion totally idolatrous, like Babylon's cult. In the Anti-Christ's World Religion, everything *but* God will be worshipped, with "God", Satan, being the focal point of this idolatrous worship.

The dragon is Satan, and Satan is the Ruler of the World, as the New Testament endlessly asserts. So, Satan will hand over his Rule to his chosen one, a human being who will make the ultimate deal with the Devil.

In mimicry of Jesus' Crucifixion and Resurrection, the Anti-Christ will be killed and he will be reanimated, probably through Satan's direct possession of the dead body of the Anti-Christ. The secular world, overwhelmed with an apparent Resurrection that you can watch on the news, will follow the Anti-Christ with maximal religious fervor. Everyone in the world, except for a few True Christians, will become believers in this God, worshipping God for "resurrecting" the Anti-Christ, and worshipping the Anti-Christ for having been resurrected.

Empowered by this imposture, the Anti-Christ will ramp up his claims to religious power, status, titles, and authority. The Anti-Christ will have free reign over the world, without Divine Intervention to stop it for three and a half years. Blaspheming God's dwelling means that he will rebuild the Temple on the Temple Mount. Blaspheming those who dwell in heaven means both that (1) he will co-opt the lives of the Saints, and pervert their lives, and their writings, to point to him, and (2) demonic possession and activity will probably radically increase, and the Anti-Christ will proclaim that the newly unhinged demon-infested people are merely moved by the Holy Spirit.

Apparently, the Church will be devastated by the Anti-Christ's military and supernatural might, leaving no structural, institutional Church left anywhere in the world. With the True Church crushed, all in the world will worship the Anti-Christ.

The Second Beast is the False Prophet. Scripture says that he has "two horns like a lamb's but spoke like a dragon" (Rv 13:11). Jesus Christ is the Lamb. So, this Second Beast/False Prophet will present himself as the Prophet Jesus from Islam (which is precisely what will make this Jesus-impersonator a false prophet). And, speaking like Satan, (like a dragon), this "Jesus" will proclaim that anyone who does not worship the Anti-Christ must be killed. This fake Jesus, this False Prophet, will perform great miracles, such as calling down fire from Heaven (presumably upon those who do not believe in him), in mimicry of the prophet Elijah.

As the situation deteriorates in this Kingdom of Satan, it seems clear that the regime will become ever more tyrannical, ever more cruel, and I even think a reinstatement of slavery on a global scale will come in this final period....which will be a far cry from the ersatz Paradise that duped everyone.

Consider Revelation 13:16, which says, “It forced all the people, small and great, rich and poor, **free and slave**, to be given a stamped image on their right hand or their foreheads...” The reference to slavery could be an anachronism, but, on the other hand, it may refer to a literal reinstatement of slavery. If St. John saw the future, and he saw slaves in it, we might consider it wise to take him at face value. Besides, an Islamic/Satanic World Empire would have every reason to reinstate slavery. Islam dearly values the institution of slavery, especially the use of enslavement as a weapon of war and terror against non-Muslims. ISIS and Boko Haram have delighted in the use of the sexual slavery of girls and women to attract dissolute militants and to inaugurate its supposed restoration of the early Caliphate.

The Kingdom of Satan is, by its very nature and by the very fact that it is the *Kingdom* of Satan, a Kingdom of Sin: the rule of sin by violent force. And sin’s fundamental nature is to be pleasant in the beginning, and then painful at the end. So the Anti-Christ’s Paradise will dissolve into Hell on Earth.

Let’s consider the Image of the Beast and the Mark of the Beast.

The Mark of the Beast will be the prerequisite for living in the world economy. It is difficult to overstate the enormity of the challenge for people who will have to decide whether to accept the Mark of the Beast, of the Anti-Christ World Ruler. Without it they will be hunted down, and unable to buy even food, water, medicines, or any other necessity....like toilet paper or soap. Those who do *not* accept the Mark of the Beast will condemn themselves to the most meager form of poverty, to the most abject destitution, left to eat grass and pick food out of garbage cans....if you can. This evokes Jesus’ Beatitudes, in which he teaches that “Blessed are the poor”. In the end times, what we experience as metaphorical and symbolic will become the most palpable, concrete reality.

The Image of the Beast will be the cultural and religious equivalent of the Mark of the Beast. The Greek word translated as image is εἰκών, which can also be translated as icon. Let’s revolve our thinking around some interrelated concepts: the use of icons in Greek Orthodoxy and the manner of God’s creation of the human race. God created the human race in Genesis by breathing *His Spirit* into dirt, i.e. matter....which is indeed dust and dirt. The Word of God the Father through which everything was created is the Son, who became incarnate as Jesus. The Father and the Son share the same Holy Spirit. So, God the Father creates

human spirits and human persons precisely through *speaking* the Son and *breathing* the Spirit that both the Father and the Son share.

Just so, the False Prophet, portraying Christ Jesus the Islamic Prophet, will *breathe his spirit* into the beast's image such that it can speak....such that it can have life.

Satan wants to mimic God as closely as possible, while also mocking Him. Satan's mimicry is not just the desire to be God, it is the delusional desire to be *better* than God. So, just as Satan will have his own Anti-Messiah, Anti-Kingdom, Anti-Church, Anti-Trinity, Anti-Jesus and all the rest, he will mimic God's creation of spirits and of the human race. So, the False Prophet, who will be Satan's Jesus, will breathe the Satanic so-called Jesus' breath, or his spirit, into this "image of the beast", and thus make it living.

And look at who makes the image. In Revelation 13:14, the False Prophet (i.e. the fake Jesus) *tells* the people to make an image of the Beast, of the Anti-Christ/Christ Mahdi. This is a Satanic, upside-down-Cross mimicry-mockery of God's Creation of the human race. Instead of the creation of the matter used to create the human race being by the Word of God, which is the Son, the creation of the matter used to create Satan's race will be by *the Will and Word of Man*. And then, the fake Jesus, Satan's Jesus, will breathe the spirit of Satan into the Work of Man, making it capable of speech. The Image of the Beast is the ultimate Tower of Babel. Just as the Tower of Babel was an attempt to pierce the Heavens and gain equality with God, the human race's creation of life through a union of the Power of Man with the Power of Satan will announce the human race's claim of equality with God. God can create life. But Man, led by that Prometheus, that rebel god, Satan, can too.

Consider the word translated "speak" in Revelation 13:15, which is *λαλέω*. This *laleo* simply means "talk" -- it does not connote the richness of the Word, of the Logos. And consider again: in classical Greek the word meant "to chatter". I infer that these Images of the Beast will have the power of a *kind* of intelligence, a kind of life, but won't be the kind of life - of spirits - that God had created. It will be Intelligence but not Life. It will be an Artificial Intelligence en fleshed in an Artificial Body created by Man, rather than the Spiritual Intelligence en fleshed in a Natural Flesh created by God.

Just as God created Man in the Image and Likeness of God, Man will create God in the Image and Likeness of Man. It is a precise, and characteristic, Satanic ploy and mockery to reverse God's Reality and Action. For, how could Satan do otherwise? Satan's idea of God is the reverse of God's idea of God. Satan's idea of Divinity is Spiritual Exterior Force, without the Spiritual Inner Life. So Satan's idea of creation is not the breathing of the Spirit into matter such that true life is created, but the heaping up of matter and the possession of that matter by Satan's

spirit, such that a slave race of automatons is created: those who have a life-in-death and death-in-life, an intelligence without a soul. For what more perfect creatures could Satan-as-God conceive? Satan is the perfectly superficial. So life as great intelligence without any empathy or depths of soul is a kind of anti-life precisely in the Image and Likeness of Satan.

So, in other words, the Image of the Beast will be robots -- robots, perhaps some kind of cyborgs, maybe some kind of neuronet -- an Internet that people directly experience wirelessly and neurally. Indeed, robot is derived from *robota*, which ultimately means slave.

God creates the human race to be free spirits, who could reign with Him as Sharers in His Divinity.

Satan will create a race of robots to be soulless slaves, who will serve him abjectly and totally, as completely servile and slavish drones exactly carrying out his will.

Whereas the human race was made in the Image of God, the robot race will be made in the Image of Satan and be conformed to the likeness of Satan's Chosen One, Satan's Anointed One, the Anti-Christ.

All who do not worship the robot and/or neural internet program, in homage to the Anti-Christ, will be executed as disbelievers.

Preterism (believing that the events in Revelation refer to events that the early Church experienced in the 1st Century) *and* Futurism (the belief that the events in Revelation will happen in the future) are *both* true. It requires a three-dimensional mentality to understand that God - that Supreme Wisdom - can speak in double entendres -- even infinite entendres.

The Mark of the Beast in the 1st Century was the Roman coin, which bore the image - the mark - of the Emperor, who was considered the Beast (especially Nero and Domitian). Not using the Roman coin made it extremely difficult to survive in the Roman economy -- one had to rely on barter. The Mark of the Beast in the end times will be an electronic, cashless economy in which barter will be virtually impossible.

Consider the total and unyielding horror of this final poverty.

Where will mark-refusers get food? Most people derive their supply of food and other necessary goods directly from a supply chain. No store will sell food or supplies to them. Christians won't even have money to buy anything with, since all employers will require the mark to earn an income. The black market? A ruthless, technologically magisterial global tyrant won't permit any black market. Besides, all the criminals will work for him. And almost no ordinary people are farmers. Even if they tried, will mark-refusers be allowed to farm to survive? All

arable land will be closely monitored to prevent unauthorized agriculture, precisely to deny True Christians any form of independence or livable existence.

So you can't opt out of the formal, mainstream economy like people in the Roman Empire, who could subsist as farmers and then barter the little agricultural surplus they had in a barter economy. In the end times, opting out of the world economy will mean eating grass and wiping your behind with your hand.

And that's not the worst of it: because where will you drink water? A home? An apartment? You need to *pay* rent or a mortgage or taxes. At a water fountain in a mall or other public place? Entrance into the mall will require the microchip, otherwise you will be hunted down. Streams? The forces of the Anti-Christ will guard and restrict access to water supplies. Why stop at restricting access? If you wanted to dominate the human race, go for the jugular. Poison all natural water supplies accessible in remote areas, so that the only way anyone can get clean, potable water is within tightly controlled urban areas. Surreptitiously and illegally eating grass off of private or public property and wiping your behind with your hand will be the least of your problems.

All True Christians within any area controlled by the Anti-Christ will be homeless, hungry, literally eating grass and bugs and possibly the stray rodent in remote areas, desperately seeking to evade the omnipresent security forces of the regime. The True Christian will run and hide all day, with enemies on all sides, as he or she clutches some ants to eat and tries to find a puddle of water somewhere, anywhere, to drink. You might, occasionally, have the luxury of wiping your behind with leaves, if you're lucky to be hiding in an area that hasn't been exfoliated through chemical agents dispersed by the regime.

Trying to find a drop of drinkable water will be your main concern, and many fugitives from the Anti-Christ's reign will die of thirst. Satan will simulate for Christians the conditions of Hell, on earth, a parched thirst, in an attempt to ensnare Christians into forsaking Christ and thus becoming ensnared, eternally, in the parched thirst of Hell. The Anti-Christ will have the human race by the balls.

So, just as the Image of the Beast in the beginning of the Church was the Statue of the Emperor, which was to be worshipped as a God, at the end of this age of the Church, the Image of the Beast will be this race of robots. We move from a statue to a robot, as the Power of Man, through the Power of Satan, has finally elevated itself to Godhood -- to the Creator of Life.

Sound farfetched?

How do you think the Internet would have sounded in 1925?

The television in 1875?

The airplane in 1825?
The telephone in 1776?

The computer in ancient Rome?

And considering the pace of technological progress, would this be at all
farfetched in 2050? 2060? 2075? 2100?

The Future Is Now

A Race of Robots Awaits.....to Enslave You

<https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=wE3fmFTtP9g>

<https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=kbaDdg4LA9k>

https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=_luhn7TLfWU

<https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=oRlwwLubFyg>

https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=W0_DPi0PmF0

They'll make great prostitutes too.

https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=tBuG8qi_Lg0

.....

I should also briefly note that the Anti-Christ will ban the Eucharist. Because, Satan hates the idea of the Communion of the Saints.....the prospect of the elect fulfilled as Deified Co-Rulers with Christ in the Father is *exactly* why he rebelled against God in the first place.

Some clever fellow is going to trip up the Anti-Christ.

Before he even hits the world stage, he will be marked with a number, so that, when he falls to evil, all the world will know who that Son of Satan really is, and what he's after.

That is why the Anti-Christ's number is **666**.

So, when you know the Man of Sin's number, reject him and save your souls.

Also, briefly, the useful, but, in this age, obscure science of gematria will be outlawed. The Anti-Christ will claim that such numerology is heretical and blasphemous, similar to astrology, sorcery, and necromancy.

.....

The Satanic Imperium

We can also clearly see the role of literal, straight-up Satanists in the Satanic Imperium. I don't mean religions that have Satanic influence, I mean literal Luciferians -- Occultists, LaVeyan Church of Satan types, Temple of Set types.

First of all, straight-up Satanists and other occult organizations, such as Freemasons that are hostile to the Church, have been machinating in the shadows for a long time. The precise nature of their activities are, necessarily and by design, shadowy and obscure.

But while Anti-Bono and the False Prophet are, publicly, busying themselves with World Peace and the One World Religion of Peace, and the Union of Islam, Christianity, and traditional Judaism, (along with the other religions of the world), the Anti-Christ and the False Prophet, themselves, will be fierce Satanists.

They will know perfectly well that they are serving Satan, in an effort to gain all the exterior glories and pleasures of the world: Rank and Power, most of all, probably also desires related to greed and lust.

That is why the Anti-Christ and the False Prophet are especially singled out by God in Revelation to be thrown in the Lake of Fire and suffer the same maximal Hell as Satan. Those two human beings will have known perfectly well that they were serving Satan and had no problem damning countless billions of souls to Hell, all so that they could obtain worldly power, and maybe thought that, along with their Father and Lord Satan, they could somehow actually overthrow God and reign with Satan as gods. Their punishment is what they deserve.

The Anti-Christ and the False Prophet will deceive the whole world into thinking that they are worshipping God, when they are really worshipping Satan, and by following the Way of Satan, obviously worshipping themselves -- worshipping their own pride, their own wrath, their own greed, their own lust. And do not underestimate lust. Lust is the great way in. As Our Lady of Fatima reminds us, more souls end up in Hell because of lust than any other sin.

But the Anti-Christ and the False Prophet will, privately, be developing their Satanic worship, knowing full well that they are literally worshipping Satan and fighting against God in a rebellion of self-preference. They will be studied, devoted Satanists, who will probably have many literal spiritual experiences with Satan and his demons. They will be experts in the occult, black magic, and all manner of pagan practices.

The exterior structure of the Satanic Imperium will be the fusion of secular modernity with Islam with capitalism, and that will keep the sheep in line, led off

to the slaughter. The technological robotic race will be the enforcers, dispatching even any whiff of opposition. The supernatural power of the Anti-Christ and the False Prophet will wow and cow the general population, and may also be useful in actual military conflicts with Christian Russia, the last independent refuge, which will, at the very end, collapse to the Power of the Anti-Christ.

But the interior structure of the Satanic Imperium will be Satan himself, assisted by his two high priests, the Anti-Christ and the False Prophet. And it is perfectly conceivable -- it would only make good sense -- for those two to enlist the assistance of Satanists. Because those Satanists will directly and easily do the Imperium's business, without all the fuss and bother of creating a line of bullshit. The internal coterie of clerics, the super-rich, and the Satanic intelligentsia will be avowed Satanists, at least privately.

And, we can imagine, as God pours His Wrath on the hated and hateful Satanic Imperium, the mask will come off. And as Satan and the Anti-Christ become ever more desperate, and as their desire to show their true natures bursts forth, we can imagine even the exterior profession, character, and culture of that Satanic Imperial society becoming more explicitly Satanic. We can even imagine the Anti-Christ and the False Prophet weaving explicit Satanism into the One World Religion. The Anti-Christ and the False Prophet may say that the God of traditional, historical Trinitarian Christianity and Jewish Christianity is none other than Satan! Islam says this already, today. So, at that point, the Anti-Christ's regime will be explicitly agreeing with what Satanists say: that YHWH is evil and Satan is the True Father God. In line with Islam's stance that this world is spiritually neutral and already under the Lordship of God, the Anti-Christ and the False Prophet will say that the invading God of Christianity - the God who has to break into the world to free the human race from bondage to the Ruler of the World, Satan, the Prince of Sin - is actually Satan himself, trying to destroy and murder the world.

So, with that lie promulgated by the Anti-Christ and the False Prophet, the Satanic Imperium will have the leeway to incorporate explicitly Satanic practices into religion, culture, and society, since the Empire will claim that Satanist practices are expressions of the deepest understanding of the True God, while Abrahamic practices are Satanic impostures, which poisoned the Pre-Anti-Christ religions and societies of the world.

What began as a Secular Utopia, and became a One World Religious Disneyland, will end as a Nietzschean, Nazi, Occultist, overtly Satanic Hellscape, with upside down Crosses and Pentagrams and fire pits everywhere.

I mean: think about it. Which religion already hates the Cross, snaps and breaks and pisses upon Crosses, threatens and brutally, Satanically murders Christians, (“killing the swine”), and is based on Five Pillars -- which could be nicely symbolized in the future by a pentagram?

THE SATANIC RELIGION OF THE FUTURE ***THE FUTURE IS NOW***

<http://schnellmann.org/message-signed-with-blood.html>

*And I saw thrones, and they sat upon them, and judgment was given unto them: **and I saw the souls of them that were beheaded for the witness of Jesus, and for the word of God**, and which had not worshipped the beast, neither his image, neither had received his [mark upon their foreheads](#), or in their hands; and they lived and reigned with Christ a thousand years."*

But the rest of the dead lived not again until the thousand years were finished. This is the first resurrection.

Blessed and holy is he that hath part in the first resurrection: on such the second death hath no power, but they shall be priests of God and of Christ, and shall reign with him a thousand years.

REVELATION 20:4-6

ISLAM AND CHRISTIANITY ARE BROTHERS

SINISTER 2

https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=fChx_YZUARo

THE GOOD SON

<https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=xqsDUwDwdUM>

Hey, Islam: You're Sinister....and you're Henry.



CHILD OF ABRAHAM

[https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/The_Good_Son_\(film\)](https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/The_Good_Son_(film))

In Arizona, 12-year-old Mark Evans (Elijah Wood) has recently experienced the death of his mother, Janice (Ashley Crow). Heading for a business trip to Tokyo, Mark's father Jack (David Morse) drives Mark to the home of his uncle Wallace (Daniel Hugh Kelly) and aunt Susan (Wendy Crewson) in Maine where he will stay during the winter break. Mark is reintroduced to his extended family, including his cousins Connie (Quinn Culkin) and Henry (Macaulay Culkin). Mark and Henry get along at first and Henry seems to be nice and well-mannered. However, Henry displays an abnormal fascination with death

and his talk of the death of Mark's mother and that of his younger brother Richard, makes Mark feel uneasy.

Henry begins to display psychopathic behavior, which Mark is unable to tell Wallace and Susan about due to Henry's dark threats. One of Henry's violent actions is to throw a dummy off a bridge and on to the highway, causing a massive pileup. Later, Henry plans to kill his sister Connie. Afraid that something might happen to her, Mark spends the night in her room. The next morning, Mark awakens to find Henry has taken Connie ice skating. At the pond, Henry purposely throws Connie toward thin ice. The ice collapses and Connie nearly drowns but is rescued and taken to hospital. Susan becomes suspicious and sitting in the dark, out of view, is able to interrupt Henry when he visits Connie's room, planning to smother her.

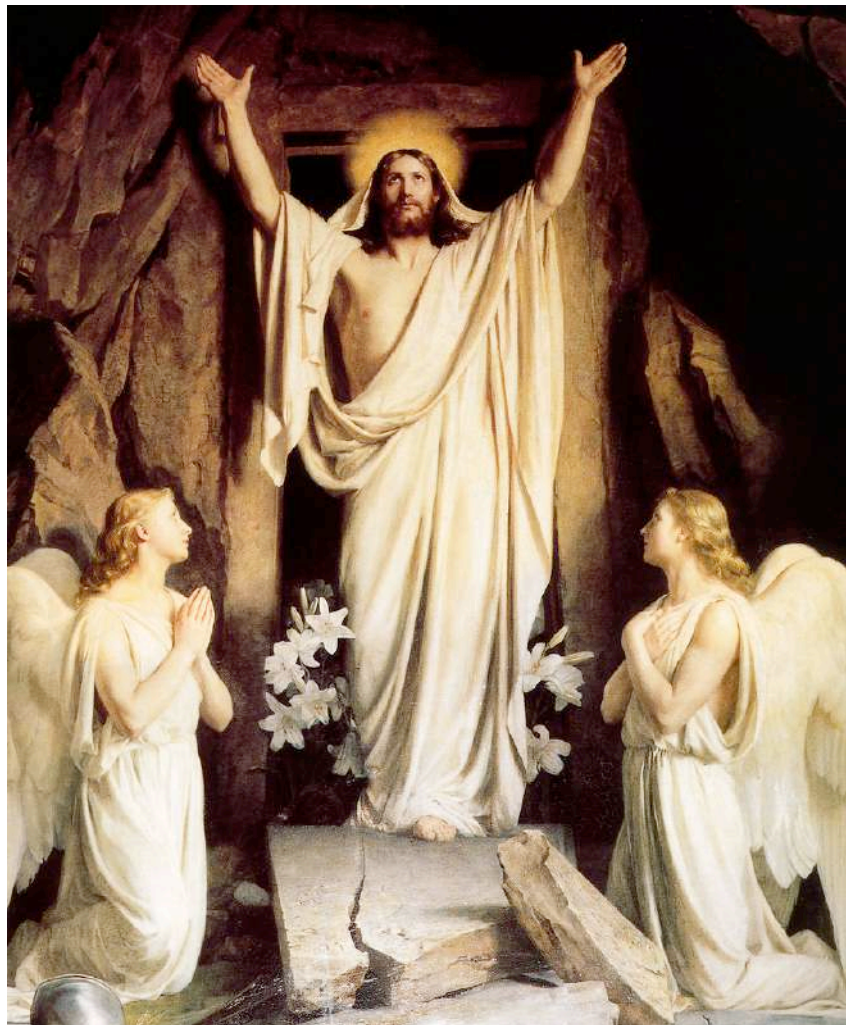
Susan finds a rubber duck that Henry has hidden in the shed. It had once belonged to Richard and was with him in the bathtub the night he drowned, after which it went missing. When Susan confronts Henry, he coldly reminds her that the toy had belonged to him before it had been Richard's. He asks for the duck back but Susan refuses and Henry tries to take it from her. After a violent tug-of-war, Henry snatches the duck and runs to the cemetery where he throws it down a well. As Susan and Mark grow closer, Henry insinuates he will kill Susan rather than let Mark continue to develop a relationship with her.

When a fight breaks out between the two boys, Wallace locks Mark in the den. Henry asks a suspicious Susan to go for a walk with him, while Mark escapes the den and chases after them. Susan confronts Henry, asking him if he killed his brother. Henry replies, "What if I did?" Horrified by what her son has become, Susan tells Henry that he needs help but Henry flees into the woods. Susan gives chase and upon arriving at a cliff, Henry shoves her over the edge. As Susan dangles precariously, Henry picks up a large rock he intends to throw down at her but Mark intervenes and tackles his cousin. They fight and Henry viciously tries his best to kill Mark. Susan manages to pull herself up on to the cliff top and is just in time to dive forward and grab hold of the boys as they roll over the edge. Lying flat on the rock she hangs on to both boys, one in each hand. Henry holds on with both hands but Mark's one-handed grip begins to slip. Henry says, "Mom, I love you." Then Henry says to his mother, "I need your other hand." With only enough strength to save one of them. Susan, realizing the malevolence in Henry's nature, reluctantly releases him and he falls to his death. Susan pulls Mark up from the ledge and they look down upon Henry's body on the rocks below, before it is washed away into the sea. When Mark returns to Arizona, he reflects upon Susan's choice to save him instead of Henry and wonders if she would make the same choice again but knows it is something he will never ask her.

***MESSAGE TO ALL MUSLIMS WHO MURDER
CHRISTIANS **OR** SUPPORT THE MURDER OF
CHRISTIANS***

THE TRUE CHRIST WILL SEND YOU TO HELL!

HE IS RISEN, BECAUSE HE WAS CRUCIFIED AND DIED!!!



***MESSAGE TO ALL CHRISTIANS EVERYWHERE
PERSECUTED AND BRUTALLY SLAUGHTERED BY
MUSLIMS***

GOD IS LOVE



I CAN SEE YOUR HALO



**MESSAGE TO WESTERN SECULARISTS WHO LIKE
TO CODDLE AND APPEASE MUSLIMS, BUT DON'T
GIVE A DAMN ABOUT CHRISTIANS EVEN WHEN
*THEY ARE THE ONES OPPRESSED***

VAFFANCULO!!!



**MURDER THE CHRISTIANS, THEY WON'T BAKE A
GAY COUPLE'S WEDDING CAKE!**

<https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=oYa7h1R8a88>

OFFENSIVE GESTURES

THE CHIN FLICK

(BELGIUM, FRANCE, NORTHERN ITALY, TUNISIA)

WHAT IT IS:

Brushing your hand under the chin in a forward flicking motion.

WHAT IT MEANS:

"Get lost" (In a more aggressive language); an insulting gesture typically used in arguments.



So, whenever some pasty, rich, liberal WASPy college professor type tells you that you're a bigot for telling the truth about Islam's evil, and that you're insensitive for defending Christian brothers and sisters, here's what you say:

VAFFANCULO!!!

AND TO CHRISTIANS!

***DON'T YOU DARE GIVE UP THE FIGHT,
PUT YOUR TRUST BEYOND THE SKIES!***

https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=ik_Df0IxAPw

No One Likes to Take a Test

<https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=l-iAS18rv68>

Satan's dagger is fear.

Christ's sword is faith.

Peter the Roman

<https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=Pj8QvMCVVf8>

Peter the Roman and his old pal the Anti-Christ

<https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=XeU6SJorcw>

ISLAM IS DANNY MCBRIDE FROM *THIS IS THE END*

https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=ECeJfK2_iPs

<https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=YMbsFQGqrHQ>

<https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=fL22VFISsJI>

So, remember Christians, have faith, resist evil, but do not fall into the trap of *self-righteousness*. *ONLY* rely on the substitutionary atoning righteousness of Christ.

Remember, the plagues that will afflict the World Empire will be God's wrath poured out upon the Final Egypt. It will be the final recurrence of what God first did in ancient Egypt: He displayed His Power and Might to a godless, vain, deluded, arrogant people drunk on *their own* power and *self*-deification.

After the Final Conflict with evil, and during the Millennium, no such Egypt - no such Satanic, worldly empire - will ever threaten the Church -- not until the Final Cosmic Battle which will precede the destruction of the Cosmos and its re-creation as the New Heavens and the New Earth in the New Creation of the New Jerusalem.

The Temptation of the Anti-Christ and the False Prophet

<https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=NFr3ufmnmJI>

Christianity and Islam: *Not* Compatible

Now, here's the problem.

Christianity and Islam are mirror images of each other.

So everything that Christianity says is Satanic about Islam, Islam can turn around and say that, "No, what you are calling Satanic is Monotheism, and what you are calling this Multi-Dimensional Monotheism is actually Polytheistic Pagan Satanism."

But to make the Islamic assertion about Christianity is to engage in, and fall for, a shallow, blank, blind, hollow, empty understanding of "Monotheism."

For Islam is certainly *Mono*-theistic. It's just that its One God is actually Satan. Of course, Muslims do not believe this: But the God of the Koran is Satan wearing a mask, Satan in disguise.

Christianity says that God is an Inner Life of Infinite Dimensions, expressed by the Three Essential Dimensions of Giver, Gift, and Gratitude (Father, Son, and Holy Spirit).

Islam says that God is utterly One, so One that we cannot conceive of it: and no further questioning or understanding is possible. The End. And then it will say that Christianity's understanding of an Inner Life within God is simply Polytheistic Paganism, attributing multiplicity to God in such a way that the God of Christianity is actually Satan, that vile polytheist - that spiritual anarchist.

Christianity says that the One God, the Father, the source of All Life, Truth, and Reality, through the Incarnation of the Gift (the Son) in human flesh, became a Man. By doing so, the Father, God, who is Generosity Itself, fully identified Divine Reality with Human Reality, thus accomplishing *God's* Idea of God - which is God-in-All: **ONE** God, now present to *ALL* of His Creation in the most intimate, total way.

Islam says that to believe a man could be God is simple paganism, pure and simple. God's Idea of God, *so they say*, is that of an Emperor -- a benign one, a merciful one, a compassionate one...

.....God, so they say, is a slave Master.....a good one, a considerate slave Master, but absolutely and totally a slave Master, who creates the Creation and the human race *not* to be totally present to His Creation and to have total sharing and intimacy with the human race.....but to be the absolute Master of the human race and to receive abject worship.

In Christianity, God's idea of the human race (of those Elect who are *chosen* by God because those human beings have been foreknown by God to have *chosen* God) is as Co-Rulers, Complete *Sharers* in the Blessing of Divinity, which God, as totally Gracious Giving, freely and gladly shares.

Romans 8:29-30, "For those he foreknew he also predestined to be conformed to the image of his Son, so that he might be the firstborn among many brothers. And those he predestined he also called; and those he called he also justified; and those he justified he also glorified."

Islam wags its finger, shakes its head, fumes, stamps, and jumps up and down, "NO! NO! NO! NO! NO! NO! *That* is a Satanic idea -- that there could ever be *sharers* with God of His Divinity -- God's Divinity is totally the *possession* of God *alone* -- God jealously and greedily guards his possession - His Divinity. It is for God *alone*, and he would *never* share his precious, prized possession of His Divinity....certainly not with a pathetic slave race like the human race.

The Islamic God's Idea of God Possessing His Divinity
The Lord of the Rings
Gollum

<https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=Iz-8CSa9xj8>

But seriously -- would the truly and completely and totally *secure* True God really be that freaked out and possessive?

Or, rather, wouldn't Satan be the one who is freaked out and controlling and defensive when it comes to his "divinity"?

Christianity sees the human race as a race created by God to be His Sons, adopted into the Inner Life of God by being incorporated into God's Son, the Gift, the heir to all of God's Giftedness. And, so adopted into the Inner Life, the Family Life, the Life of Familial Love that *is* God, the human race becomes divinized sharers of God's Total Intimacy.

Islam sees the human race as a slave race, created only to give submission to God, the slave Master -- and, in return, loyal slaves receive the pleasures that a slave would -- sex, food, and comfort.

Christianity's idea of Heaven, of the Kingdom of Heaven, is totally transcendent -- including the corporeal existence, but conceiving of that corporeal existence as now totally exalted by the Reign of Spirit *and living for the Love of God alone.*

Islam's idea of Heaven is a pig pen, where the loyal slaves get to eat the slop. It is a sensory wonderland, not a spiritual Paradise.

Hear what the Quran has to say about Heaven (56:12-37):

In the Gardens of Pleasure, a [large] company of the former peoples, and a few of the later peoples, on thrones woven [with ornament], reclining on them, facing each other. There will circulate among them young boys made eternal with vessels, pitchers and a cup [of wine] from a flowing spring - No headache will they have therefrom, nor will they be intoxicated - And fruit of what they select and the meat of fowl, from whatever they desire.

And [for them are] fair women with large, [beautiful] eyes, the likenesses of pearls well-protected, as reward for what they used to do. They will not hear therein ill speech or commission of sin - Only a saying: "Peace, peace."

The companions of the right - what are the companions of the right? [They will be] among lote trees with thorns removed, and [banana] trees layered [with fruit], and shade extended, and water poured out, and fruit, abundant [and varied], neither limited [to season] nor forbidden, and [upon] beds raised high.

Indeed, We have produced the women of Paradise in a [new] creation, and made them virgins, devoted [to their husbands] and of equal age.

So...the life in Heaven is delicious fruit and sex with hot, young virgins?

Really?

Sounds more like Las Vegas than Heaven, doesn't it?

Wait, was it God who recited the Quran or Elvis?

Viva Las Vegas

Elvis

<https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=ui0EgRsFVN8>

And why is this “god” of the Quran plying human beings with lust? Why is the reward for loving God sex with women?

Listen to Jesus’ idea of Heaven:

I have told you this so that my joy may be in you and your joy may be complete. This is my commandment: love one another as I love you. No one has greater love than this, to lay down one’s life for one’s friend. You are my friends if you do what I command you. I no longer call you slaves, because a slave does not know what his master is doing. I have called you friends, because I have told you everything I have heard from my Father. It was not you who chose me, but I who chose you and appointed you to go and bear fruit that will remain, so that whatever you ask the Father in my name he may give you. This I command you: love one another.

John 15:11-17

At the resurrection they neither marry nor are given in marriage but are like the angels in heaven.

Matthew 22:30

The one who sat on the throne [Jesus] said, “Behold, I make all things new.” Then he said, “Write these words down, for they are trustworthy and true. He said to me, “They are accomplished. I am the Alpha and the Omega, the beginning and the end. To the thirsty I will give a gift from the spring of life-giving water. The victor will inherit these gifts, and I shall be his God, and he will be my son.

But as for cowards, the unfaithful, the depraved, murderers, the unchaste, sorcerers, idol-worshippers, and deceivers of every sort, their lot is in the burning pool of fire and sulfur, which is the second death.”

Revelation 21:5-8

And of the Kingdom of God, the New Jerusalem:

The throne of God and of the Lamb will be in it, and his servants will worship him. They will look upon his face, and his name will be on their foreheads. Night will be no more, nor will they need light from lamp or sun, for the Lord God shall give them light, and they shall reign forever and ever.

Revelation 22:3b-5

Why is this “god” (*Psst: Satan*) so into *young, hot girls* - Satan in his Quran feels it necessary to point out that the women in Paradise will be virgins and young and *hot, sexy* -- so no old, ugly, damaged goods in heaven -- not for Satan’s (whoops, I mean *God’s*) loyal followers.

What kind of “god” treats women like products? Like fruit?

What kind of followers is this “god” appealing to anyway?

The Muslim Militant’s Idea of Heaven

Baby Got Back

Sir Mix-A-Lot

<https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=X53ZSxkQ3Ho>

What the Islamic “God” promises



She's a virgin! For sale!



HEY, ASSHOLE, I SEE YOU: YOU'RE GOING TO HELL!

ISLAM'S IDEA OF A GOOD TIME



<https://www.globalcitizen.org/en/content/isis-sex-slaves-whats-app-yazidi/>

Article on Islamic Brutality:

<https://www.rt.com/shows/sophieco/336398-is-slave-horrors-crime/>

**TO THE WOMEN OF ISLAM, BEHOLD YOUR
TRUE GOD:**

**JESUS CHRIST
THE SAVIOR OF THE WORLD**



***I have told you this so that you might have peace
in me. In the world you will have trouble, but
take courage, I have conquered the world.***

John 16:33

Now, who's right? I believe the Christian vision is God's vision. And I would be happy to spend the rest of my life attending conferences to discuss this interesting - and most important - topic.

But, of course, I would never attend such conferences in person --- maybe only this way:

https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=0F_WKOkDm1I

Why? Because while I was happily talking over this interesting, and intricate, theological puzzle, some murderous whackjob Muslim would rise from the audience, scream "God is Great!" and plug me with a hail of gunfire.

So, we see confirmed Jesus' teaching: By their *fruits* you will know them.

What is Christianity's fruit in the 21st Century? Freedom and peace.

What is Islam's fruit in the 21st Century? Murder, tyranny, hatred, brutal violence against women in particular, and a whole panoply of destructive violence that never stops.

That is why St. Matthew records Jesus as saying:

Beware of false prophets, who come to you in sheep's clothing, but underneath are ravenous wolves. By their fruits you will know them. Do people pick grapes from thornbushes, or figs from thistles? Just so, every good tree bears good fruit, and a rotten tree bears bad fruit. A good tree cannot bear bad fruit, nor can a rotten tree bear good fruit. Every tree that does not bear good fruit will be cut down and thrown into the fire. So by their fruits you will know them.

(Matthew 7:15-20)

Is Islam a good tree or a rotten tree?

Which looks more like God to you?

The Fighter

Keith Urban featuring Carrie Underwood

https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=X_45jbE5_Y8

The God-Emperor Ra

Stargate

God makes a big entrance...and get on your knees!

<https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=Z-hoEoga8no>

Selfishness is the root of all sin. But selfishness is a defective word. It implies that concern for oneself is somehow evil. This is ludicrous.

As Rabbi Hillel, that wise teacher, teaches us, “*If I am not for myself, who will be for me? But if I am only for myself, who am I? If not now, when?*” *Ethics of the Fathers, 1:14*

God does not ask that you have no care for yourself. *But* he asks that we be aware of *what our true self is!* Our true self, in the depths of our soul, is God, so we are fundamentally connected to one another.

If we turn our backs on each other, we turn our back on God, and, really, ultimately, finally -- *eternally* -- *we turn our backs on ourselves*. That turning away **from even ourselves**, in an attempt to *be only for ourselves*, causes us to totally and irrevocably *lose* ourselves.

For, as St. Paul says, our real life is hidden in Christ with God (Colossians 3:3) -- our *real* self is our Christ-self, the self for others, the self for and in God.

If we turn only to our apparent selves, our *surface* selves, we **derange** our surface self, the self-self, from the Christ-self that is our *true* self. And in doing so, we cut off our surface-self from the source of its life and blessedness -- its beatitude -- which is the Christ-self that is within God.

To derange, to twist off, to cut off our *surface self* from our **Christ-self** is another technical definition of Hell.

That is why, as C.S. Lewis discussed, rather than trying to be “unselfish”, we should be other-oriented. A better word for selfishness is self-orientedness, self-orientation, to be self-oriented.

To live as God wishes we would live is to be other-oriented, and, really, Other-oriented. And since God is the ultimate Other, to be **God-oriented**.

The battle for your own soul, and for the life of the world, is the spiritual struggle, the War between the self-oriented and the God-oriented.

A Message to All Christians Everywhere

Read the Quran to see how deranged it is, to see how *entirely* it is opposed to the Spirit of Christ, the Spirit of the Father, of the God Who is Love.

The Sins of Adam and Eve

Adam's sin was to choose Eve over God.

When Eve ate the forbidden fruit -- we call it an apple in our culture -- Adam knew that God could create a new mate for him. Eve could die, and Adam could live, and God could create another wife for him. God could have created a trillion wives - an infinity of wives - to replace Eve.

But Adam, out of his love for Eve, decided that it would be better to die with Eve rather than live with and for God.

Adam loved Eve so much that he couldn't imagine happiness without her.

Likewise, the Rich Young Man's sin was to love his wife and parents more than Jesus, who he knew to be the presence of God.

Jesus told the Rich Young Man to follow him, and that he needed to give up all his wealth and possessions in order to attain Jesus' Kingdom, the Kingdom of Heaven.

But the Rich Young Man knew that his wife would not love him without his wealth, and his parents would disown him if he embraced a life of itinerant poverty.

So, knowing that he would lose his wife and parents if he followed Jesus, and thinking that there could be no happiness without his wife and parents, the Rich Young Man, in his great honesty, turned away from Jesus and went home.

Listen to Matthew 19:

Now someone approached him and said, "Teacher, what good must I do to gain eternal life?"

He answered him, "Why do you ask me about the good? There is only One who is good. If you wish to enter into life, keep the commandments."

He asked him, "Which ones?" And Jesus replied, " 'You shall not kill; you shall not commit adultery; you shall not steal; you shall not bear false witness;

honor your father and your mother'; and 'you shall love your neighbor as yourself.'"

The young man said to him, "All of these I have observed. What do I still lack?"

Jesus said to him, "If you wish to be perfect, go, sell what you have and give to [the] poor, and you will have treasure in heaven. Then come, follow me."

When the young man heard this statement, he went away sad, for he had many possessions.

Then Jesus said to his disciples, "Amen, I say to you, it will be hard for one who is rich to enter the kingdom of heaven.

Again I say to you, it is easier for a camel to pass through the eye of a needle than for one who is rich to enter the kingdom of God."

When the disciples heard this, they were greatly astonished and said, "Who then can be saved?"

Jesus looked at them and said, "For human beings this is impossible, but for God all things are possible."

Then Peter said to him in reply, "We have given up everything and followed you. What will there be for us?"

Jesus said to them, "Amen, I say to you that you who have followed me, in the new age, when the Son of Man is seated on his throne of glory, will yourselves sit on twelve thrones, judging the twelve tribes of Israel.

And everyone who has given up houses or brothers or sisters or father or mother or children or lands for the sake of my name will receive a hundred times more, and will inherit eternal life.

But many who are first will be last, and the last will be first.

Adam's sin is the sin of the Rich Young Man. That is why Peter, who had a wife but left her for Jesus (not that he divorced her, but that he literally picked up and left home and went tramping around with this itinerant mystery man preacher while his wife was back at home) says, "We have given up everything and followed you," asking, "What will there be for us?"

Peter says, “Okay, I have chosen you. We have chosen you. Do we get anything out of that, or are we just suckers?”

And Jesus reassures them, affirming that those who follow Christ, even if forfeiting parents or wife or wealth, will receive a hundred times more in way of mothers and fathers and children and all manner of wealth -- houses, (we might say today “cars”), travel, luxury, food, all manner of pleasures --- for the Christian travels into the endless Infinity of God’s Infinite, Eternal and Plenitudinous Spirit, in company with all his fellow travelers, the Communion of Saints.

And that plenitude is not primarily temporal: it has a temporal element, because human beings are *both* spirit and flesh. But the spiritual riches of living within and for the Spirit is the *essence* of Heaven: the purpose and texture of eternal life.

Adam forfeited that, in the context of the Primordial Paradise, because he thought that *he could not be happy* without Eve. Adam thought that a creature was necessary for his happiness, when what was really necessary for his happiness was intimacy with his Creator.

The Rich Young Man forfeited that, the Kingdom of Heaven, because he thought that *he could not be happy* without his wife and parents. The Rich Young Man thought that those creatures were necessary for his happiness, when what was really necessary for his happiness was intimacy with his Lord and Savior.

Adam and the Rich Young Man chose the next best thing, rather than *the* best thing, and in doing so, cut themselves off from God.

Now, Jesus doesn’t say that the Rich Young Man is thereby damned, on his way to Hell, necessarily, because he walked away. What Jesus says is that it will be *hard* for him to attain the Kingdom. The Rich Young Man will need to pass through the eye of a needle -- actually harder than that -- and passing through the eye of the needle refers to a gate in Jerusalem that was so low that, if a camel were to pass through it, it needed to stoop and unburden itself of all its baggage.

Nor does Scripture say that Adam is damned.

But, we can imagine that that *harder* than a camel passing through an eye of a needle would require the Rich Young Man, and we might say Adam as well, to stoop, and through many.....experiences.....unburden himself of his attachment to the world, even to the best in the world, one’s mother and father....and one’s wife.

The essence, root, and matrix of sin is idolatry. Adam's sin was the first idolatry -- and the most prevalent and pernicious -- what cut Adam off from God was his idolatry of his wife.

It was the same for the Rich Young Man, and it was the same for David and Solomon. David committed adultery and killed Uriah to obtain Bathsheba -- and that unleashed a whole cascade of sin that resulted in his son Absalom's rebellion, in which David had to flee Jerusalem, the City of God, for the desert -- it resulted in a civil war which almost cost David his life and his throne.

Solomon's love of women, and his many pagan wives and concubines, turned his heart from God and made him idolatrous. In necessary punishment for that outrageous panoply of idolatry, God sundered the United Kingdom of Israel, tearing it into the Northern Kingdom of Israel and the Southern Kingdom of Judah.

Idolatry tears the soul apart -- it sunderes the soul, twists the soul off **from itself -- it deranges the soul - because it sets the human soul in opposition to that which creates and sustains his soul - GOD.**

That is why the rich should also beware. The teaching of Jesus that the rich can still be saved is not that "it's fine to be rich". You had better be filthy rich because there is some fundamental attachment *to other people* that prevents you from unburdening yourself.

If you are **just** rich because you love money itself -- and thus you only love yourself, the possessor and God of that money -- **then you are damned, without the benefit of the remedial salvation afforded to Adam, David, and the Rich Young Man.**

Let's also consider some interesting features of that First Family.

Adam and Eve's son Cain murdered Abel because God rejected Cain's offering and favored Abel's. So, in a sense, Cain murdered Abel out of a love for God. Cain murdered Abel because he was so incensed, enraged, that *Abel* was God's Chosen One, and not Cain. Cain coveted God's Chosen-ness, God's Anointing, so much that he murdered the Chosen One, the Anointed One, Abel, over it.

Cain did not kill Abel over a woman, or money, or power, or any *thing*. Cain killed Abel over God's Favor - His Anointing, His choice - His preference.

This is the archetype of derangement -- Cain's love for God produced within him, through the consent of his self-deranged freedom of Will (and there is no other kind of Will than freedom) an utter hatred for the *interiority - the Truth* - of God. Just like Satan. The sin of Cain is the sin of Satan in a more pure form than the sin of Adam.

Whereas Adam sinned out of a love *for another - for his wife, Eve*, Cain sinned out of a love *for himself - for his own ego, his own self-preference, his own vanity, his own pride*. The gift of God is His Anointing. After God rejected Cain's offering, it did **not** mean that Cain could never have *any* anointing -- simply that God did not - at that moment - give Cain an anointing : God warns Cain saying, "Sin is a demon lurking at your chamber door -- his urge is towards you, yet you can be his Master" (Genesis 4:7b).

Cain ignores this warning and falls to the temptation of Satan. Satan says to Cain, "If God does not favor you now, he will never favor you at all." And in Cain's blind, blank, self-preferential fury, Cain slays Abel.

God then casts Cain out, and gives him the Mark of Cain, which is a tattoo, marking him as belonging to the world, and not the family of God.

Now, when Cain was cast out...where did he go? Cain went to Nod, east of Eden. Nod is a symbolic term meaning "land of the wanderers". Cain becomes the human equivalent of the demons, who are wandering spirits, damned spirits cut off from the Central Grace of the Spirit of Plenitude -- like wandering planets flung out into extra-Galactic space, alone, cold, desolate in deep, dark space.

Genesis 4:17 states that Cain had relations with his wife. Now, all the clever atheists say, "Aha! Then who created Cain's wife? HAHAHA!!!!!! The Bible is so dumb, so stupid -- so obviously stupidly written."

Or not.

What might have been left out explicitly, but also might have been inferred by a close reading, (a close reading that would have occurred if those atheists had studied the Scriptures closely), is that *some other force might have "created" Cain's wife.....*

Hmmmmmm.....

Now, what other force might have done such a wicked thing as to create life *separate and apart from and against God.....*

Oh you, you know.....say it out loud, say it proud, say it like you mean it.....

SATAN!

Just as, at the end times, the end of this world, Satan will create a race of robots that are summoned from matter but do not have the soul - the spirit of the Spirit -- so too Satan summoned forth beings from matter that had intelligence, but no soul.

And thus Cain, a real human being, albeit one who committed the sin of self-preference which became the first murder, akin to Satan's primal sin of spiritual murder -- and of the attempted murder of the Holy Spirit -- *married -- mated with* -- a beast -- a beast that had intelligence, but no soul.

And the son of Cain and this Satanic creature was the man Enoch. And Enoch mated with these beasts and bore a whole brood of these Satanically infected human beings.

For, when the deranged spirit of Cain mixed with the Satanic creature, the beast, the intelligent but soulless beast, Cain's brood became a race of the children of Satan.

Now, Adam and Eve had another son, after Cain murdered their son Abel, and Cain was lost to perdition: Seth, who became the progenitor of a whole race of human beings: the Children of God.

And we can easily imagine, over the aeons, the Children of Satan and the Children of God intermarried and mixed their blood - their genetics - and produced the whole race of men -- with some heirs to the grace of God's salvation: the Children of God; and with some heirs to the wrath of God, those whose souls are Satanic in origin: the Children of Satan.

The Kingdom of Heaven may be likened to a man who sowed good seed in his field. While everyone was asleep his enemy came and sowed weeds all through the wheat, and then went off. When the crop grew and bore fruit, the weeds appeared as well. The slaves [angels and possibly also disciples] of the householder [God] came to him and said, "Master, did you not sow good seed in your field? Where have the weeds come from?" He answered, "An enemy [Satan] has done this." His slaves said to him, "Do you want us to go and pull them up?" He replied, "No, if you pull up the weeds you might uproot the wheat along with them. Let them grow together until harvest; then at harvest time I will say to the harvesters, "First collect the weeds and tie them in bundles for burning; but gather the wheat into my barn [Heaven]."

Matthew 13:24-30

The end of this world, the end times, the end of this Age, is the harvest time, when the Children of Satan will be separated from the Children of God.

Remember: the Mark that the World Ruler will demand of his believers is the Mark of the Beast of the Anti-Christ. And the Mark of the Beast is the Mark of Cain par excellence. Only, this time, it will not be a sign of protection. For, in the beastly world that Adam and Eve threw themselves into by their sin, beastliness was a mark of protection. But, when the True Christ comes in Miraculous and Instant Glory with His Holy Angels to purify the world, the Mark of the Beast (the Mark of Cain) will *not* protect you, but will be a sign that you are to be destroyed.

And willful ignorance will *not* save you. **You have been warned.**

As an aside: More than likely, the Anti-Christ World Ruler will claim that he has discovered the genetic strain of the Children of Satan. The Anti-Christ will hunt down those people that he claims are Children of Satan and offer them the “salvation” of belief in him. Some Christians, taking the bait, will accept the Anti-Christ’s “salvation”, which will cost them true salvation in Christ, causing their eternal damnation.

Christians would be well advised to not even attempt to “discover” this genetic marker of the Children of Satan. Even if such a mark could be discovered - which is ambiguous - (1) Humanity is almost certainly unlikely to discover any such marker in this century, or succeeding centuries, and (2) It is God’s responsibility to deal with the Children of Satan at the Glorious and Miraculous Appearance of the True Christ. Anyone who attempts to organize a Holocaust for the Children of Satan will themselves become the Children of Satan, and God will burn them alive - eternally - by His Power through His Holy Angels.

But we might also understand God’s **FURY** when Israel intermarried with the Canaanites and other nations. We can understand why God flipped his lid and blew a gasket and **TOTALLY FREAKED OUT** when the Children of God mingled their blood - their genetics - with the nations. We can hear him saying, “Oh My Me! What are you idiots doing?!”

AND that is why the Anti-Christ will be **obsessed** with genetics. The enemy of Satan is God, so the Children of God are the enemies of Satan. And since the Anti-Christ will serve Satan completely, God and the Children of God will be his enemies. Now, if you were that King Cain, that Emperor Cain, the Anti-Christ.....would you want Children

of God as your bodyguards? As your ministers? As your underlings and henchmen? Would you want Children of God *anywhere* near you?

No. That would be dangerous and unwise. The Anti-Christ, being paranoid and very wise (in his own Satanic way), will seek to protect himself by identifying threats before they can harm him. *And* if you know that there is a prophecy that you will be assassinated and then go to Hell (while Satan is indwelling your body in a parody of the Resurrection), then you *will be very paranoid and very sure to eliminate all threats before they arise*.

Now, why would the Anti-Christ embark on this Voyage of the Damned? Because he is blank. He is blind. He will be brilliant, charismatic, and attain power easily and readily and play the violin of his power like a virtuoso, like Napoleon. But he will be spiritually blind as a bat.

So, the Anti-Christ will attempt to discover this “genetic marker” identifying the Children of God, those human beings that the Anti-Christ *will know* will betray him, since, ultimately, they will always serve God.

REMEMBER: The Anti-Christ will be obsessed with genetics. And he might even, if he can get away with it, promote eugenics. If the Anti-Christ feels that the populace is on to him, he might keep his obsession with genetics a closely guarded secret. So, if you’re in the Anti-Christ’s inner circle, when he starts getting frantically obsessed with genetics: REMEMBER.

Gattaca

<https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=BpzVFdDeWyo>

Before we move on, it would be advisable to make a few brief remarks about racism. All racism, of any kind, *should be utterly* denounced. The theory and practice of racism has produced nothing but misery upon the earth, and it is the province of the deranged, the sick, the hateful, the violent. Racism is truly the work of the Children of Satan.

Now, I know what you’re thinking.

Isn’t delineating humanity into the Children of God, descended from Seth, and the Children of Satan, descended from Cain, a form of racism?

No, not really.

For, the distinction has nothing to do with what we ordinarily consider “race” or “ethnicity”. Race and ethnicity, in our world’s constant understanding and practice of them, have to do with skin color, physical features of the face and the rest of the body, biological propensities, national and regional origin, and so on.

If what I argue about the origins of humanity is true, however, (and it is, trust me), then the Children of God, the Sethites, and the Children of Satan, the Cainites, have been mingling their genetics for thousands of years, promiscuously, all over the planet -- such that it is entirely impossible to distinguish a Sethite from a Cainite on the basis of any *observable* feature, such as skin color, or any physical features, or any cultural features (as such -- meaning neutral cultural features, rather than cultural features that glorify hatred, immorality, murder, and destruction), or geographical origin.

Nor should anyone complain that God “made you” a Cainite - how unfair. No, no -- only those that God *foreknew* would reject him did He predestine to become a Cainite. Your own free will, *which God from all eternity could see*, caused God to determine that you be a Cainite.

Nor should this understanding of humanity’s origins give rise to some kind of irrational Jewish racial superiority complex or Israeli-Jewish racial nationalism.

For, indeed, Abraham was a Child of God, a descendant of Seth.

And, indeed, God warned the Israelites not to consort with foreign women, so as to ensure that only Children of God would be born among them.

And the Israelites did *precisely* what God commanded, and that is why the Jewish bloodline is pure and totally Sethite to this day.

Oh, wait.....

No, that’s not quite how things went, now did they? No, rather than obey the commandments of the Lord, the Israelites consistently went off and mated with anything on two legs....and oftentimes many things on more than two legs. Israel is only saved from having goat-men and sheep-men among their population by the fact that human beings are not genetically capable of reproducing with goats and sheep.

And this fornication with the nations persisted for centuries before the Diaspora, and continued for millennia thereafter.

So, there is not much of a reason to believe that a Jew or Israeli is more likely to have Sethite blood than anyone else.

For, as the Gospels inform us, the weeds and the wheat have, certainly at this late date, *totally* grown together, such that *only* the supernatural action of God could separate them.

Indeed, we can imagine that it is entirely possible that the most conservative Iranian ayatollah is, in fact, a Child of God, while one of the Chief Rabbis of Israel might actually be heir to the blood of Cain, and be a Child of Satan.

Truly, I say to you, those most zealous for racial purity are most likely to be members of the degenerate race of the Children of Satan. For Satan is an accuser. And racists are the greatest accusers of all -- jabbing their dirty fingers in everyone else's faces with arrogance and cruelty, marking *others* as impure, unworthy, rejected. Those who thus accuse others, accuse themselves. Those who accuse others mark *themselves* with the Mark of Cain, their true progenitor.

And it stands to reason that, since the inheritance of Cain is a *spiritual* inheritance, albeit one transmitted through means of the flesh, (according to the Will of God), there should be absolutely no *material* marker of such a spiritual contamination.

Therefore, the only way to identify a Sethite from a Cainite, would be to use a spiritual test: to *observe* whether that person's life testifies to a God-like way of life, or a Satanic way of life. To determine the race of the good from the race of the evil, one would have to use the discernment of one's *spiritual* sight.

Judging others as Sethites or Cainites on the basis of skin color or physical features or geographical origins is a *material* preoccupation, which cannot at all assist one in the *spiritual* discernment of the spiritual character of some person.



*Hmmm...which ones are Children of God and which ones are Children of Satan?
We might need some kind of genetic test.*

And remember, spirit precedes matter. Matter does not give rise to spirit. Spirit *does not* “emerge” from matter. Spirit *creates* matter -- matter exists as a thought of the Spirit.

So Adam and Eve, in Eden, in the Primordial Paradise, existed in a world, a Creation, totally of God's making.

It did not exist on a rock in deep, dark space, arisen from an evolution of matter, from dust to animals.

It existed *where it was* -- having its own integrity, its own existence, *totally created and conserved by God*. *That world, that Creation* was **not** sundered by sin, but was a material world totally subject to the Spirit.

But, after Adam sinned after the pattern of his wife Eve's sin -- they fell.

Fell into what?

Fell into this world.

The world of the First Creation became shattered - sundered - by Adam's sin --- it blew apart....in what one might call a Big Bang.

And thus, since Adam was the Lord of the Material Cosmos, and since Adam through sinning, became a slave of Satan, Satan became the Dark Lord of the Material Cosmos -- Satan became the Ruler of the World.

And, once there was a material substrate suitable for the deranged spirits of Adam and Eve....they might have found themselves in a very strange, dark world indeed....a world quite unlike the world that they had been made for.....a world filled with death and all manner of deranged beasts -- beasts that were not their friends like those in the Garden of Eden, that did not treat Adam and Eve with the same love that animals showed towards St. Francis -- but wicked beasts that wanted to kill and eat Adam and Eve.

Adam and Eve fell to sin, fell unconscious in their sin, and awoke to a world of horrors -- a world ruled by their new and quite unkind Master, their new God - Satan, the God of this World, the Ruler of the World.

And, in that world, Adam, Eve, Cain, and Abel might have encountered beasts that, even though soulless and not created by God, were *intelligent*.

And we can easily imagine Cain, after being cast out of the presence of God, out of the presence of the family of Adam and Eve, mating with one of those imitations, parodies, of God's creation of human beings.....mating with an *ape* of human beings.

And we might also imagine that the Anti-Christ will be the ultimate son of Cain: as Cain committed the first murder of the holy son sacred to God and chosen by him, so the Last Cain will murder the world, hunting down the Children of God, the Church of Christ, and seeking to make every Christian that he can blaspheme the Name of Christ so that that soul might become lost to Christ and the eternal slave of Satan.

We might also reflect on the differences between the sin of Adam and the sin of Cain.

Remember, all sin is distance from God. And, in eternity, intimacy with God is binary: either it is total intimacy or no intimacy: Heaven or Hell.

In this passing temporal phase of reality, sin and grace can commingle in the same person. But in eternity, the soul is fixed, since eternity is fixed and an ever present NOW. So, if a soul is not aligned with its Christ-self, through professing faith in Christ and persevering in the righteousness of Christ, then the soul will only be a surface-self, salt without any flavor, only good for being thrown away and punitively blasted eternally with God's wrath.

God is a HOLY FIRE. God warms those in Christ and burns those not in Christ.

We should also note, in passing, that, from a technical theological perspective, the soul is the form of the spirit, and the spirit is the matter, so to speak. The spirit is the substrate of soul. Spirits finds their *meaning* and *beatitude* in soul, and soul can only be attained by a created spirit through obedience to, (that is, alignment with), the Uncreated Spirit, God. So, when the Will -- which is the essence of the spirit, (and Freedom is the essence of Will) -- *turns* from trust in and obedience to the Spirit of God through definitive mental and physical acts (acts of the Will however real or expressed), sin occurs. And sin is distance from God. And since the only beatitude is in the alignment of one's spirit with one's soul, and since the essence of one's soul is the Spirit of God, to sin is to twist off one's spirit from one's soul. It is to derange one's spirit from one's soul. In this mortal life, a deranged spirit, one cut off, in a lesser or greater way from God's grace, that is, their own soul, is in a state of sin. If a spirit perseveres in a state of sin in this mortal life, that state of sin is ratified in eternity and is called Hell.

SIN IS DERANGEMENT



What Sin looks like

And what you'll look like in Hell if you persist in a state of Sin.

That is why damned spirits still exist - as damned angels (demons) and damned human souls. Both the demons and the damned are soulless -- they are spirits, either pure spirits or, after the Resurrection, enfleshed spirits, without any access to their own souls, since they have no access to the source of their souls, the Holy Spirit of God.

Remember, the Spirit is the source of all perception, and, in the Blessedness of the Eternal Spirit, all perception is intimacy and pleasure.

If one is cut off from one's own soul, one is cut off from any true perception. Rather than having true perception, one has anti-perception, the reversal of the perception that emanates from the Spirit of God. So, instead of enduring in an eternal state of blessedness, with total intimacy and abounding pleasures, one endures in an unendurable

state of damnation, misery, and wretchedness, with total isolation and loneliness, unendurable privation (asphyxiation, thirst, hunger, longing), and complete pain.

Hell is symbolized by fire in the Gospels because when fire consumes something, it disintegrates it -- it ruins it, makes it something other than what it was -- a consuming fire takes something and turns it into trash.

Those, who through their own Will, expressed in thoughts and actions, turn their souls into trash, will find God more than accommodating in affirming and ratifying their free will.

But, if one's spirit is aligned with one's soul, then the soul *will become the fire, and the Fire of God will not burn the fire of one's soul, for Fire does not burn fire, but mingles with and enhances fire, so the Fire of God will fan* the fire of one's soul, till it grows greater and greater. Now, of course, God is not a literal fire -- fire is a material reality. Fire is a strong metaphor for the Spirit. The Spirit consumes all that is not aligned with the Spirit with eternal wrath, and it exalts all spirits that *are* aligned with it such that those spirits share totally in the intimacy of the Spirit's Inner Life.

All will experience God. The damned will experience God as Wrath - as Isolation, Complete Loneliness, Asphyxiation and Thirst and Hunger, and total Pain. Since they will have no true reality within themselves, since they will be soulless, their deranged spirits (and spirit is nothing other than sight) will see the Spirit of Love and Plenitude and Pleasure as Horror and Privation and Pain. The damned will be unable to see God for what He really is, and will be unable to see themselves for what God created them to be - holy and blessed. They will only see themselves for what they *created themselves to be* - and self-creation always results in damnation, unholiness, wretchedness, and misery.

Sin is self-preference.

In eternity, sin is an eternal death sentence, without the possibility of forgiveness.

Forgiveness requires that the sin be committed in a state of some kind of ignorance. Because, if a spirit with total knowledge and sight (and, in spiritual terms, knowledge and sight are the same things) rejects God -- what is there to forgive?

Adam and Eve, who were created in Time, in a temporal-material-spatial Creation, and not created as pure spirits in the Heavens (the Spiritual Creation), could have one Will one second, and another Will the next. *Their* spirits could "change their mind" - change their alignment. So, when Eve and Adam ate the forbidden fruit, while they suffered the penalty of sin - death - and Creation shattered into this perverse material reality, the fallen Cosmos, Adam and Eve were not eternally damned like Satan and his fallen angels, nor was the Creation simply flung into Hell with the demons.

Since Adam and Eve were created transient, rather than eternal, their sin -- and also their deaths -- *could* be transient.

Satan's sin, being eternal since Satan is an eternal spirit, created and living in eternity, necessarily became an eternal death, which is Hell.

There are two eternal goods. Plenitude and Rank.

In this material world -- which is a manifold rather than a unity -- there are many, many different kinds of goods - houses, cars, vacations, gadgets, friends, popularity, jobs, fame, wealth, sex, the pleasure of reading, the pleasure of movies, music, video games, museums, concerts, hiking, blowjobs & oral, baking, playing baseball, watching baseball, playing football, watching football, foosball, hamburgers, cheerleaders, strippers, scented candles, romance novels, book clubs, getting your toenails painted, game shows, crime shows, cocktails, girls' night out, guys' night out, restaurants, brunch, lunch, appetizers, bottle of wine, shot of whisky, first dates, relationships, marriages, children, children's milestones, children's graduation, grandchildren, great-grandchildren, political office, religious office, winning a war, fighting in a war while winning, scratching an itch, blowing your nose, taking a really good piss, watching a sunset, watching a sunrise, getting some sleep, taking a nap, cracking your knuckles, taking a smoke, drugs, getting high, getting low, wandering, coming home, a promotion, a raise, recognition, an award, walking in the rain, having an umbrella, seeing a friend, mourning a friend's passing at an old, ripe age with friends and family, having your political beliefs prevail through a political party triumphing, a breath of fresh air.

But, in eternity, things are much simpler and Seraphic, since those *not* created in matter, but simply created in eternity are pure spirits (who thus experience Reality as a total NOW). Here, in this world, the situations, graces, sins, pleasures and pains are all jumbled up in a haze of ignorance and misunderstanding.

Eternity is clarity itself.

So, in the Spiritual Creation - in "the Heavens" (not Outer Space, but the Spiritual "Heavens") - all spirits *see God as He really is - all spirits see God FACE TO FACE*.

And the key question is: Does the spirit think the Face is evil or good?

If you look at the Face of God and see evil, you're screwed. There's nothing to forgive, because, if forgiven, you would still look at the Face of God and see evil. It means that your Will -- which is nothing other than your Total Freedom -- has a

fundamental defect that *you* created, that God didn't create, but that *you*, as a spirit, as Total Freedom have *chosen* for yourself.

We who live in Time just fundamentally don't get this. Because we live in a world where pleasure often means sin. And we live in Time, *we're temporal spirits*, so we can change our minds, change our spiritual orientation.

So we sin to get the pleasure, then (often) we get the punishment of the pain, a smack on the behind, getting yelled at, put in the corner, detention, failing courses, addiction, losing a relationship, losing a job, losing a marriage, losing your kids, prison, the death penalty.

And, when we do get punished - either directly by an authority or indirectly by the dissolution of our lives, we say, "Uh-oh, I messed up. I better shape up so that my life doesn't suck so much."

But this isn't Satan's problem. Satan isn't a drug addict, or a failing student, or a lazy worker, or an unlucky worker, or someone in a bad marriage. It's not that he wasn't hugged enough as a child. Lucifer didn't have these problems. Lucifer existed in a State of Total Blessedness. And that means that he saw the Face of God. And to see the Face of God is to be totally present to the Spirit of God. And to be totally present to the Spirit of God means to have *your* spirit engorged with all the Plenitude of Perception that is the nature of the Holy Spirit. Thus, your soul will be filled with every pleasure and every choice thing. *There is nothing that is lacking.*

In this sundered world - a world blown apart by the original sin of Adam - our beatitude is often (even regularly, often by design of this fallen Creation, this Realm under the Dominion of Satan) at cross-purposes with God's Will.

In Heaven, there are only good pleasures and bad pains. There are no bad pleasures nor are there good pains.

If we are dissatisfied with our sex lives, we can remedy our privation with masturbation, pornography, extramarital sex (i.e. fornication), adultery, strippers, and prostitution.

But there is no dissatisfaction or longing in Heaven, for those present to God.

If we are poor or financially strapped, we can remedy our privation with theft, robbery, embezzlement, fraud, and all manner of deceptive practices, from the greatest Ponzi schemes to the most minor hard sell.

But there is no lack of resources or hardship in Heaven.

If we are lonely or bored or distracted or simply desirous for the pleasures of taste and satiation, we can remedy our privation with gluttony -- gorging ourselves on food, drink, and entertainment.

But there is no loneliness or boredom or distraction in Heaven, and every sensory desire is beyond engorged and sated by the Infinity of the Spirit's Perceptions.

If we have a low self-esteem, or an emptiness of soul, of some kind of disconnection, of a kind of ennui, we can remedy our privation with making money, getting that dopamine jolt of closing another deal and getting another payday.

But there is no lack of esteem or sense of belonging or disconnection or ennui in Heaven.

If we are discouraged or see no point to activity, we can remedy our privation of spirit by simply slacking off, sleeping, watching television, playing video games, or killing time.

But in Heaven there is no discouragement, and the point of life, living in the Presence of God, and beholding the Beauty, Joy, Majesty, Grandeur and Thrill of His Face, His Truth, His Life, is evident to all.

If someone does us wrong, or harms us, cuts us off in traffic, gives us the finger, makes a snide remark, makes a real, cutting insult, hurts our career, hurts our family, messes us up, or even injures you or tries to kill you or a loved one, you can take solace in anger, in fantasies of revenge and settling scores.

But in Heaven no one can harm you. There is no offense, injury, or death.

But....and this is the BUT of Sin.....there is one thing that you don't get.

You see, in Heaven, you get Plenitude -- all Plenitude, all the time, all access. Everyone, from the highest Seraphim to the lowest guardian angel, from the greatest Saint in history, from John the Baptist, Mary, St. Paul, St. Peter to the most ordinary, obscure Christian garbage man who died unknown with an ordinary life a hundred years ago --- they all see the Beatific Vision of God -- they all enjoy the Total Plenitude of God's Spirit.

And even though those higher ranked angels and saints will have, as such, greater access to that Plenitude, because of their greater blessedness, *since the nature of Heaven is sharing and self-gift, those higher ranked angels and spirits are more than happy to shine their beatitude onto you. So even if you don't have their beatitude within you, as your "possession", your "estate", your rank -- you will still enjoy that Plenitude as an*

observer, and to observe in Heaven is not like observing in this world, where we can see but not enjoy. In Heaven, to see *is* to enjoy.

But seeing is not holding, it is not possessing.

We in this world don't easily or usually understand the sin of Satan because, for us, we can see but not enjoy. We can see someone else with a pleasure, and not have it ourselves. So possession becomes the sine qua non - *the requirement, the prerequisite* - for **enjoyment**.

BUT he who does not have possession, does not have favor. And those with higher rank, do indeed have higher favor. In Greek, favor is *doxa*, which means "good opinion" and is often translated as GLORY.

You see, in this world, Glory often comes with, or is, indeed, a prerequisite for, **enjoyment and pleasure and intimacy and friends and family and children and grandchildren and a sense of satisfaction with your life.**

If you don't get a good job (that is, get a job that is **ranked** highly in society), you can be deprived of money, which means you will be deprived of pleasures. If you make \$30,000 a year your life will be worse than if you make \$100,000 a year, or \$200,000 or \$500,000 or \$1 million. You will have less access to restaurants, in both quality and quantity, you will have less access to the enjoyments and excitements and thrills of travel and entertainment, you will have fewer and less desirable sexual partners, you may even have fewer friends if you have less time (because you have a more demanding and more isolating job) and because your socioeconomic status is less desirable. You may even receive less affection from your own family, because your mother or father or grandparents or relatives will put you down, or prefer your brothers, sisters, or cousins, because they are more successful.

If you are obscure and not famous, (that is, **ranked** highly in society), you can be deprived of a sense of meaning in your life, or you may feel that your life doesn't count for anything. You may feel unrecognized or ignored. Being obscure may negatively affect your overall life satisfaction, sense of yourself, self-esteem, sense of direction in your life, sense of purpose, sense of accomplishment, sense of *joie de vivre*.⁴²

But in Heaven, as we have seen, there is no lack of satisfaction. There is also no obscurity or sense of meaninglessness. Everybody knows everybody else. All are seen by God, and through being totally present to God, all are known to all.

⁴² I know, now I'm just showing off.

The *one* wrinkle.....the *one* thing that is *not* equal in Heaven, is Doxa, the Favor of the Most High, one's Rank, one's Glory.

So, in terms of Plenitude, Heaven is the most radically socialistic egalitarian communist republic in the Universe (really, in the Spiritual Creation, because that is greater than the universe, but you know what I mean).

But, in terms of Rank, of GLORY, Heaven is the most feudal, aristocratic, monarchical, absolutist KINGDOM. *God* is the King, everybody else are knights and squires and attendants.

We can also note that we would do well on earth to emulate the Kingdom of Heaven, indeed, that is what Jesus teaches us to pray: "Thy Kingdom come, thy Will be done, on earth as it is in Heaven." We pray for the Kingdom, and we help make the Kingdom arrive by praying that God's Will be done on earth as it is in Heaven.

That is why St. Matthew recounts:

Then the mother of the sons of Zebedee approached him with her sons and did him homage, wishing to ask him for something. He said to her, "What do you wish?" She answered him, "Command that these two sons of mine sit, one at your right and the other at your left, in your kingdom." Jesus said in reply, "You do not know what you are asking. Can you drink the cup that I am going to drink?" They said to him, "We can." He replied, "My cup you will indeed drink, but to sit at my right and at my left, this is not mine to give but is for those for whom it has been prepared by my Father."

When the ten heard this, they became indignant at the two brothers.

But Jesus summoned them and said, "You know that the rulers of the Gentiles lord it over them, and the great ones make their authority over them felt. But it shall not be so among you. Rather, whoever wishes to be great among you shall be your servant; whoever wishes to be first among you shall be your slave. Just so, the Son of Man did not come to be served but to serve and to give his life as a ransom for many."

(Matthew 20:20-28)

In *this* world, *pride* is rewarded with Glory. Self-promotion and self-seeking are rewarded (sometimes, if you're lucky) with fame and status and money and all the pleasures, physical satisfactions, and mental satisfactions that come with them.

In the *real* world - the spiritual, eternal world that will endure long after you are dead, and either in Heaven or Hell, and long after the end of the world, and the end of time, and the consummation of the Apocalypse - only *service* is rewarded with Glory.

In this world, self-preference is rewarded with Glory.

In God's world, only God-preference (necessarily manifested also in other-preference) is rewarded with Glory.

That is why the one who regards himself more has a lower place in Heaven. And that is why those who *only* regard themselves are placed in Hell.

That is why St. Luke recounts:

Conduct of Invited Guests and Hosts.

He told a parable to those who had been invited, noticing how they were choosing the places of honor at the table. "When you are invited by someone to a wedding banquet, do not recline at table in the place of honor. A more distinguished guest than you may have been invited by him, and the host who invited both of you may approach you and say, 'Give your place to this man,' and then you would proceed with embarrassment to take the lowest place. Rather, when you are invited, go and take the lowest place so that when the host comes to you he may say, 'My friend, move up to a higher position.' Then you will enjoy the esteem of your companions at the table. For everyone who exalts himself will be humbled, but the one who humbles himself will be exalted." Then he said to the host who invited him, "When you hold a lunch or a dinner, do not invite your friends or your brothers or your relatives or your wealthy neighbors, in case they may invite you back and you have repayment. Rather, when you hold a banquet, invite the poor, the crippled, the lame, the blind; blessed indeed will you be because of their inability to repay you. For you will be repaid at the resurrection of the righteous."

The Parable of the Great Feast.

One of his fellow guests on hearing this said to him, "Blessed is the one who will dine in the kingdom of God." He replied to him, "A man gave a great dinner to which he invited many. When the time for the dinner came, he dispatched his servant to say to those invited, 'Come, everything is now ready.' But one by one, they all began to excuse themselves. The first said to him, 'I have purchased a field and must go to examine it; I ask you, consider me excused.' And another said, 'I have purchased five yoke of oxen and am on my way to evaluate them; I ask you, consider me excused.' And another said, 'I have just married a woman, and therefore I cannot come.' The servant went and reported this to his master. Then the master of the house in a rage commanded his

servant, 'Go out quickly into the streets and alleys of the town and bring in here the poor and the crippled, the blind and the lame.' The servant reported, 'Sir, your orders have been carried out and still there is room.' The master then ordered the servant, 'Go out to the highways and hedgerows and make people come in that my home may be filled. For, I tell you, none of those men who were invited will taste my dinner.'"

(Luke 14:1-24)

In this world, those who scramble for the highest ranks receive the greatest glory *and* the greatest plenitude. They get it all.

And those who don't get the rank, get neither glory nor plenitude.

In God's world, the rank you obtained in this world is irrelevant. First, everyone who attains to the Kingdom has a share in the Plenitude of the Kingdom. And, second, your rank will be entirely determined by God. Your rank will not be determined by your hard work, your work ethic, your stick-to-it-iveness, your luck, the favor of bosses, your educational status, your looks, your talents, your smarts, how good you are in bed, your social connections, your popularity with a mass market -- *none of it will matter*.

The only thing that will matter in determining your *rank*, your *glory*, will be the extent to which you trusted and obeyed the Will of God on earth. And since the Will of God is Love, and the realization of Love is service to God and others, your rank is *totally and entirely dependent on your service*.

In this world, self-exaltation (self-promotion, self-seeking) is rewarded with glory and pleasure.

In God's world, *only* humility is rewarded with Glory, and all who had some iota, some shred of *genuine* humility, will receive a share of the Plenitude.

In other words, *all* the politicians, intellectuals, business titans, and celebrities are in for a rude awakening.

Because, *even if they get to Heaven, which is doubtful to begin with*, all the rank they amassed on earth will be **meaningless**.

That statement is true. It is verified by Scripture. Go and read it some time.

<https://www.amazon.com/Bible-Authorized-Version-Oxford-Classics/dp/0199535949>

[King James Version]

<https://www.amazon.com/dp/1935302582?psc=1>

[New American Bible]

God **won't** say to you, "Hey! You're Madonna! You're Oprah! You're George Clooney! You're Brad Pitt! You're Gregory Peck! You're Barbra Streisand! You're Frank Sinatra! You're Einstein! You're George Washington! You were the President! You were a Roman Emperor! You're Kim Kardashian! You're Kanye West!"

God knows who you are. And God doesn't want to take a selfie with you. God isn't impressed by **any** of your talents. How could he be? **He gave them to you in the first place. You're playing with House money -- and God is the House!!! God is about as impressed with you as you would be impressed with little clay men you made out of Play-Doh.**

God is not impressed by the fact that you're a celebrity.
God is a bigger celebrity.

God is not impressed that you're smart.
God is the Divine Intellect, the Divine Wisdom

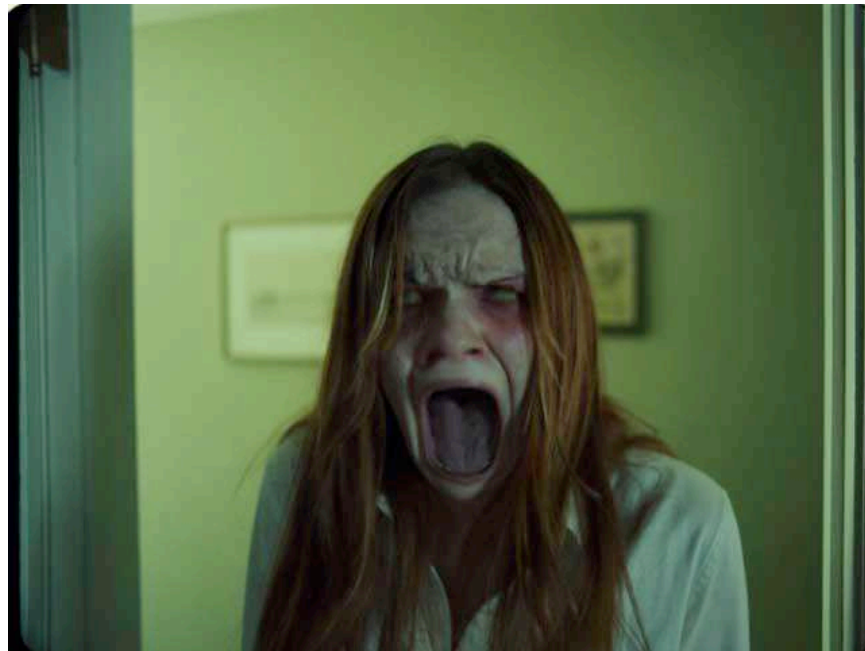
God is not impressed by the fact that you're rich.
God is richer.

God is not impressed by the fact that you're powerful.
God is All Power and Might.

WHAT KIM KARDASHIAN LOOKS LIKE NOW



WHAT KIM KARDASHIAN WILL LOOK LIKE IN HELL



*America, we need to have a
talk*

[https://www.youtube.com/
watch?v=opFj1N82IEw](https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=opFj1N82IEw)

https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=JmIn_GWoTik

<https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=CmjouG5SfrI>

<https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=FKmiIt6PJ28>

<https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=825dSiZts94>

https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=z6oZeEiyb_w

*The Gospel According to The Donald
Doctor of the Church*

<https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=MgozsEvsVgc>

<https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=sP5ElraFHHE>

<https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=OavCoH41UEo>

<https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=o-w47wgdhso>

<https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=mdHpbI8Y7Oo>

Okay, so here's the problem:

Your preference for plenitude in this passing life is forfeiting any share of Plenitude in the eternal life.

Was that too complicated? Or theological? Or spiritual? Or obscure? You get me? You feel me?

Heaven is the reward for fighting God's War on Earth.

God's War is for Holiness and Peace and Mercy and Abundant Charity.

And if you're not in the Army of the Lord on Earth, fighting for Peace and Mercy and Charity.....then you'll go to Hell.

God's Pep Talk

<https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=Zh-vuomKdRg>

EVANGELIZE THE WORLD IN PEACE AND LOVE!!!

Back to Adam and Cain.

Oftentimes, sin is caused by a preference for plenitude. When that occurs, it is because of a misunderstanding: the sinner fails to recognize that the source of all Plenitude is God, not whatever the sinner is idolizing: not mother or father or mate or friend or money or job or security or status.

So, since the sin is founded upon a misunderstanding -- upon ignorance -- God can spiritually enlighten people, such that the misunderstanding is dispelled and the sinner brought to knowledge, and thus willing to receive grace and capable of being saved.

But sins caused by a preference for rank are a much trickier matter. Because, when that occurs, the person *really* isn't going to get a better rank. In fact, the willingness to commit sin to obtain a higher rank indicates that that person is headed for a quite low rank indeed.

So, when a sinner's sin is a sin caused by a preference for rank, it is not enough to dispel the sinner's misunderstanding: the sinner (like Cain) has a perfectly correct understanding: they are lower ranked. So, instead, what has to change is more difficult. The sinner doesn't just have to open his or her eyes. He or she *really* has to **change his or her mind**. The sinner has to have an epiphany and say, "I preferred rank over obedience to God. But I see that *only* obedience to God can give **any rank at all**. That, if I disobey God, not only will I have a low rank, but if I persist and "persevere" in that wicked disobedience, I will **have no rank at all, because I will be damned.**"

It would also help for such a person to *see* the superiority of God's preferences over the sinner's preferences, and not merely fear damnation.

This requires HUMILITY. Humility. Humility.

Ironically, a person who, at last, scorned rank and prized obedience might end up having an incredibly high rank, like St. Paul.

So, Adam's sin was the sin of preference for plenitude over obedience to God's Will. God's perfect gift to Adam was Eve, and Adam *coveted* Eve so much that he *idolized* her. Adam could not imagine happiness without her.

To cure Adam of his sin, God would have to demonstrate that God, not any wife, is the only source of Plenitude.

But Cain's sin was the sin of preference for rank over obedience to God's Will. God *chose* Abel as higher ranked in favor than Cain, and Cain *coveted* God's Favor so much that he *idolized* God's Favor, without worshipping the God who gave Favor. And Cain murdered because he could not imagine happiness without God's Favor.

Now, if Cain could ever realize - or, more exactly, would be *willing* to realize, that, with trust and obedience, Cain might gain a favored rank, that might be a start.

But to *really* cure Cain of his sin, God would have to find a way to *turn* Cain's heart, such that *he* chose humility rather than pride, and *abandoned* the preference for rank (which is pride).

You see, Adam's desire for Plenitude was justified. The desire was good. It was the orientation of that desire that was deranged.

But Cain's desire for Rank, in the absence of God's Choice, was unjustified. The *desire itself* was bad. The desire for Rank, for Glory, as such, is good: *But only if one wholly desires the rank that God chooses*. A desire for rank separate from God's choice is pure evil. *That* sin is the sin of Satan.

Adam did the wrong thing for the right reason. Even though his sin of distrust and disobedience was wrong, there was a perverse nobility in his decision to die with Eve: he *loved* Eve so much, that he decided to take her part. Now, choosing the part of Eve, over the Will of God, is still evil, but there is an *honesty* to it that is noble.

We might say that Adam was loyal to a fault. But, the key phrase there is *to a fault*. Adam was loyal to a fault because he should have been loyal above all *not to Eve, but to God*.

We can also note that Adam's choice to follow Eve into death is a kind of antitype (and, indeed antitype), or precursor of Jesus' following all human beings into death. Adam followed Eve into death in **defiance** of God, in disobedience to God. Jesus followed every human life into death in **obedience** to God.

Just as Adam's decision to follow Eve into death was the transgression that caused original sin and the transmission of that original sin to the whole human race -- causing the entire cataclysm of our sorry history -- so Jesus' decision to follow every human life into death, in obedience to the Father's Will, became the cause of life for all who believe in Christ Jesus as Lord and Savior and the Son of God, and all who persevere in that belief, and the good works that necessarily follow from it.

In this we can see the clear truth: disobedience to God is the cause of sin; obedience to God is the source of grace.

Cain did the wrong thing for the *wrong* reason. There was nothing noble about Cain's desire. The desire for rank, for glory, is noble --- but *not* if it means a glory **separate** from God, if it means a glory *not* chosen by God. To desire a different rank from the rank God assigns is pure hubris: it is the self-derangement of a spirit set in opposition to its soul. For a spirit's whole plenitude lies in assenting to the rank of one's soul.

To cure a Cain requires an epiphany, a *turning* of the Will from one's self to God.

Now, all of us have, prior to our salvation, a sin of Cain. Even those who sin out of a preference for plenitude, by persisting in that course of life, evidence a sin of preference for rank -- the sin of pride. For the sinner, (the debauched, the gluttonous, the slothful), says: "My only happiness can come through me. God's Will cannot bring happiness. Thus I must become my own God by following my own way." And if a person, time after time, refuses to heed the call of God's constant beckoning, that shows a

scorn for God's grace and power - a scorn for God's Divinity and Majesty. And that is blatant pride, shorn of all humility.

But, *it is possible*, even after every misunderstanding has been dispelled, to *choose* rebellion against God because of a *fundamental* self-preference, a *fundamental* desire to be God in place of God. That is the sin of Satan, and it is the *core* sin of all the Children of Satan who persevere in wickedness, without trusting or obeying the Voice of the Lord, the Voice of Peace, Mercy, and Forgiveness.

The final War of this World, the Last War, will pit those who are Children of Satan against the Children of God. The Anti-Christ will gather all the Children of Satan to himself, using every lure of temptation, and he will mold these Children of Satan into a mighty empire and a mighty army, that he will use to try to exterminate all Christians, in a Christian Holocaust.

The situation will only be saved, at almost the last second, with the True Christ's triumph over the False Christ and his False God, Satan.

Let us consider Eve's motivations. I, as a man, have less insight into Eve's sin. Let us, as always, *listen* to Scripture:

Genesis 3 - New International Version (NIV)

The Fall

3 Now the serpent was more crafty than any of the wild animals the Lord God had made. He said to the woman, "Did God really say, 'You must not eat from any tree in the garden'?"

2 The woman said to the serpent, "We may eat fruit from the trees in the garden, **3** but God did say, 'You must not eat fruit from the tree that is in the middle of the garden, and you must not touch it, or you will die.'"

4 "You will not certainly die," the serpent said to the woman. **5** "For God knows that when you eat from it your eyes will be opened, and you will be like God, knowing good and evil."

6 When the woman saw that the fruit of the tree was good for food and pleasing to the eye, and also desirable for gaining wisdom, she took some and ate it. She also gave some to her husband, who was with her, and he ate it. **7** Then the eyes of both of them were opened, and they realized they were naked; so they sewed fig leaves together and made coverings for themselves.

Eve knew that God said, “Eat it and you die.” But Satan lies to her, saying you won’t die, but will be turned into a God, just like *the* God.

Look at the sequence of spiritual perversion that takes place - *first* Eve desires the plenitude of the food, *second* Eve desires the beauty of the luster of the fruit, and *third*, Eve desires the wisdom of the fruit -- and wisdom is Power.

So, we quickly see that Satan is up to his old tricks, the same bag of tricks he always has, and can only ever have. It is the same three temptations that Satan tempted Christ with in the desert in Matthew 4 and Luke 4. Satan uses a desire for plenitude and beauty (satisfaction), the desire for beauty and luster (the glory of exaltation), and the desire for Status and Power (Satan’s offer of all the kingdoms of the world).

I think, as a hypothesis, that Eve really fell because of the desire for wisdom, which was the desire to be *like* God, to be a God, to be a Goddess.

Think about it. Eve had more food than she could ever eat. So desire for food couldn’t be the *core* sin. The rest of the Paradise was beautiful. So she didn’t need the fruit to have or see beauty.

What is the *one* thing she lacked? Wisdom, and Divinity.

Now, maybe Eve was just a bookworm hungry for knowledge. That’s possible, and consistent with Scripture.

But I think Eve sinned because of *her* idolatry of Adam, which was, ultimately, rooted in a *self*-idolatry.

Adam, before his sin and Fall, had the proper preference order: He loved God first, and Eve second.

Eve wanted to be loved *first*. Being loved *second* made her feel less loved...possibly not loved at all. Because she didn’t realize that God loved her too, and that the source of her love was ultimately God, not Adam.

Becoming God, becoming *a* God, a Goddess, would allow Eve to claim equality with God, and thus stake an equal claim with God to Adam’s love.

Eve thought that she could only be the Beloved if she were *completely* the Beloved of Adam, not realizing that to be the Beloved was *foremost* to be the Beloved of God.

We can also see a rank element to Eve’s sin. Perhaps Eve did not want to be loved by God, so much as she wanted *to be worshipped*.

Adam's sin was to think that he couldn't live if he couldn't love Eve - if he couldn't give to her.

Eve's sin might have been to think that she couldn't live if she couldn't be loved **by** Adam, and she might have thought that she couldn't be loved *by* Adam if she wasn't worshipped by him.

True Blood

<https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=OWq7FYyYarU>

<https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=xpwLwdKxu00>

Which can be hot. But it can also go wrong:

<https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=ivB1QFsxzDk>

Because we can reflect on why Eve *also* gave Adam the fruit to eat. Eve didn't want to kill Adam...just as Eve didn't want to kill herself. The purpose of sin, from the sinner's perspective, is never, *of course*, to reap the wrath that is the essence of sin.

Just as Eve ate the fruit to become as God, to become God's equal (which is the same sin as Satan's), she gave the fruit to Adam to eat so that *he* might become *her* equal - which is what she always wanted -- for Eve and Adam to be united in a bond of love and total intimacy, to worship each other, without reference to God.

But Eve's sin was a rebellion of self-creation and the attempted seizure, from God, of the Creative Power, of Godhood, of Divinity.

Eve sought to create herself as a Goddess so that she might be worshipped by Adam, rather than having Adam worship God.

And *then*, Eve desired that Adam be raised up to Godhood --- so that, endowed with wisdom, *he* could see *Eve* as the Goddess that she saw herself as.

In other words, Eve tried to re-create Adam in *her* own image.

More or less wittingly, Eve parodied God's act of creating Adam.

God had created Adam to worship Him, that he might know and love God.

Eve attempted to re-create Adam to worship *her*, that he might know and love *only* Eve, or, at least, Eve *first and above all*.

Of course, sin never works out as intended. And the effort at *self*-deification and *self*-creation always results in Death and Hell.

God, since He is Love, will, *after* one trusts and obeys Him, gladly and generously reach out His hand, and *both* sustain and deify a human being. But one must *first* trust God and obey Him.

So, Eve, in her effort to re-create Adam as an equal God fit for herself, a self-created Goddess, necessarily involved both of them in Sin, Damnation, and Death.

Now, since Eve *did not act with the full knowledge of Satan, her sin is forgivable. Not immediately forgiven, but forgivable.*

We can see in Eve and Adam's actions the spiritual ideology of spiritual anarchy, which is the belief and cause of Satan. Adam failed to understand that *only* God was the source of Plenitude. And Eve failed to understand that *only* God could be God.

We can also see the frame of mind that caused the failure of sin. Adam thought that he needed something *other than God* in order to love, in order to be himself.

Eve thought that she *needed to be God* in order to **be** loved, in order to be herself.

To attain salvation - to be saved - *both* would have to *turn* their minds from their blindness. They would *both* have to **change their minds** - which is the essence of repentance or metanoia.

Both Adam and Eve would have to trust that God was the source of all plenitude, and that God's rank ordering of all spirits was perfect, righteous, just, beautiful and **GOOD**.

To cure Eve of her sin would require *both* her knowledge that she was loved by God completely *and* the belief that *being* loved by God was possible without being worshipped by God, or by anyone.

And, with some luck and the grace of God, after six or seven thousand years, you might just get it right:

A Thousand Years

<https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=rtOvBOTyX00>

*Margaritaville
Jimmy Buffett*

<https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=CICf8xoLyG8>

.....commonly known as the *Book of Genesis*

So, in essence, Adam and Eve are two dopes who have been getting in their own way since Day 1, and for thousands of years since.

They messed everything up because they thought they could gain life through something other than God -- namely, each other.

But the only way to get anywhere you want to go, is straight *through* God.

Taking any other way will lead you into a ditch.

<https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=nIY9W1sc85Y>

And while you would do infinitely better to imitate Jesus, the Son of God, the Uncreated, Eternally Begotten, Incarnate God, perfect in righteousness and love, and better to imitate Mary, God's Masterpiece, the most perfect creature, who imitates Christ in a better fashion than any of us, at least Adam and Eve sinned out of *love for each other* -- they wanted to love and be loved by each other. Which is more than Satan and Cain can say for themselves.

So, while things got a little hairy there for those last six thousand years, remember that Mom and Dad still love each other, and they still love you.

[Adam and Eve 4 Eva](#)

<https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=an4ySOlsUMY>

<https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=01TnJ27SkEk>

*Love,
Mom and Dad*

<https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=2HW-eCUmZqw>

<https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=k4V3Mo61fJM>

"There is no prophet who really wants to be a prophet,"
Father Hart concluded.

No kidding.

A Note on the Children of Satan

No one should be discouraged by thinking that they are a Child of Satan and thus necessarily damned!

*Each person has **free will**, so each person chooses whether they are a Child of Satan or a Child of God.*

*But, remember, God is God, so he already knows what you are going to choose. So, according to his foreknowledge, he *predestined* those he *foreknew* to be **conformed to the image of his Son**. So, since the Son is the Child of God, those conformed to the image of God's Son are *Children of God*. And those who were *made* Children of God, God **called** - ***He called the Children of God*** to Christ.*

Now, since we're at the end, time's up: Choose Christ or burn in Hell.

Those who accept Christ, the Christ of the Christian Gospels, the Lord, the Savior, the Son of God, the Second Person of the Trinity - the God of the Church, are also justified -- meaning they receive the gift of salvation, escape from Hell and intimacy with God in Heaven.

And that intimacy with God in Heaven is GLORY.

Romans 8:29-30 states, "For those he foreknew he also predestined to be conformed to the image of his Son, so that he might be the firstborn among many brothers. And those he predestined he also called; and those he called he also justified; and those he justified he also glorified."

So don't spend your time worrying whether you're a Child of Satan or a Child of God.

A Child of Satan worries about that and is paralyzed.

A Child of God *trusts* God *each day*, trusting that, even if they don't have the strength to face some trial **today**, *God will give him the strength to face his trial tomorrow, or on the day it occurs*.

God will never subject you to more than you can take.

So trust that God will always be with you, ***to the end, no matter what the end is***.

Capitalism

If the love of money is the root of all evil, how is this still a thing?

*Which brings us to the third leg of our Satanic stool: **Capitalism.***

Remember how Mitt Romney in his 2012 campaign kept talking about how his proposed policies were a three-legged stool?

You know how corporate types in meetings always talk about three-legged stools?

Well, the Anti-Christ will be the ultimate corporate type, and he'll be running for World Ruler.

Remember Jesus praying in the Garden of Gethsemane: He prayed fervently to God, in that Last Hour before His separation from the Father in the Cataclysmic Spectacle of the Crucifixion and the Descent into Hell.

Though Peter, James, and John accompanied Jesus, to encourage Him in His prayer, they fell asleep.

Jesus admonished them -- chiding them -- for falling asleep, saying specifically to Peter, "So you could not keep watch with me for one hour? Watch and pray that you may not undergo the test. The spirit is willing, but the flesh is weak" (Matthew 26:41).

And then, despite this warning, in the morning hours before Jesus' ultimate test -- the Final Test that He willingly bore for them, and that, through which, would never be required that they bear -- they fell asleep again.

Listen to St. Matthew's Gospel:

The Agony in the Garden.

Then Jesus came with them to a place called Gethsemane, and he said to his disciples, "Sit here while I go over there and pray." He took along Peter and the two sons of Zebedee, and began to feel sorrow and distress.

Then he said to them, "My soul is sorrowful even to death. Remain here and keep watch with me." He advanced a little and fell prostrate in prayer, saying, "My Father, if it is possible, let this cup pass from me; yet, not as I will, but as you will."

When he returned to his disciples he found them asleep. He said to Peter, "So you could not keep watch with me for one hour? Watch and pray that you may not undergo the test. The spirit is willing, but the flesh is weak."

Withdrawing a second time, he prayed again, "My Father, if it is not possible that this cup pass without my drinking it, your will be done!"

Then he returned once more and found them asleep, for they could not keep their eyes open. He left them and withdrew again and prayed a third time, saying the same thing again.

Then he returned to his disciples and said to them, "Are you still sleeping and taking your rest? Behold, the hour is at hand when the Son of Man is to be handed over to sinners. Get up, let us go. Look, my betrayer is at hand."

(Matthew 26:36-46)

The true and total poignancy of this Passage is profound and, when one can hear it, one's heart cannot help but swell with Pity for Christ's Sorrowful Passion and burst with shame over one's sins -- the very things Christ would soon enter into -- entering into all their *wrath*.

In this Last Hour, Jesus asks his companions, his disciples, to accompany him. Jesus must pray alone -- for, in this great endeavor, they can play no direct role. Jesus must stand alone, even apart from the Father, even with the Father pouring out His Wrath upon His own Son!

But Jesus, being fully human as He is fully God, still desires the moral support and brotherly encouragement of his friends. And, in this darkest hour, Jesus brings his *closest* friends - Peter, James, and John - to bear this awful load with him. Jesus consistently pointed to these three as preeminent even within the Twelve Apostles.

The Father, persisting in Eternal Righteousness and the Eternal Felicity that is the Interior Truth of Eternal Righteousness, does not feel sorrow or distress. The Father never gets scared or distracted or "thrown off His game", so to speak. The Father, being Giftedness, being the Giver of the Gift, *in His essence*, cannot be deprived of the Gift. It is not that He does not *will* to be deprived of the Gift in order to be intimate with sinners -- those who have forsaken the Gift of their creation, their union with God's reality -- *God the Father is constitutionally unable to enter into the lot of the sinful*.

But Jesus, the Son of God, is the *Receiver* of the Gift. *The Gift* -- the **Essential** Gift -- that the Son receives from the Father is the Father's Holy Spirit. The Holy Spirit is itself the Bond between the Father and the Son. Remember that God is a Logical Causal Loop. *That* is why He is Uncreated from all eternity and does *not* need to be created, or to be called forth *from* "anything". He is His Own Cause: He is Self-Causing. And He is Self-Causing *precisely* because of His Own Internal Triadic Structure. We have no meaningful access to such a great mystery, and we begin to babble when we try to enter too deeply into it.

But, without attempting to pierce the Veil of the Eternal Holy of Holies, (at least intellectually, since, in Christ's Crucifixion and Resurrection, it has been pierced *for us* spiritually), we *can* say that God's Essence as a Logical Causal Loop dispels the causative problem of infinite regress. God *is* an infinite regress - an infinite involution of His Own Freedom into the infinite *depths* of Himself. God's *truest* truth - about Himself - is not His Towering Righteousness or Might, but is the profound depths of His All-Holy Love.

From the Holy Spirit that the Son receives, the Son receives the Whole Plenitude of the Father's Righteousness and Felicity.

The Son cannot forsake the Holy Spirit and still be himself, but, in the Son's Freedom, he can *turn* his Spirit to sin. Not that the Spirit will sin, but the Spirit, in Christ, will, instead of seeing the Father's Plenitude, see only the Agony of Hell, the lot of sinners.

As St. Paul says in Philippians 2:1-18

Plea for Unity and Humility.

If there is any encouragement in Christ, any solace in love, any participation in the Spirit, any compassion and mercy, complete my joy by being of the same mind, with the same love, united in heart, thinking one thing.

Do nothing out of selfishness or out of vainglory; rather, humbly regard others as more important than yourselves, each looking out not for his own interests, but [also] everyone for those of others.

Have among yourselves the same attitude that is also yours in Christ Jesus,

Who, though he was in the form of God,

did not regard equality with God something to be grasped.
Rather, he emptied himself,
taking the form of a slave,
coming in human likeness;
and found human in appearance,
he humbled himself,
becoming obedient to death, even death on a cross.

Because of this, God greatly exalted him
and bestowed on him the name
that is above every name,

that at the name of Jesus every knee should bend,
of those in heaven and on earth and under the earth,
and every tongue confess that Jesus Christ is Lord,
to the glory of God the Father.

Obedience and Service in the World.

So then, my beloved, obedient as you have always been, not only when I am present but all the more now when I am absent, work out your salvation with fear and trembling.

For God is the one who, for his good purpose, works in you both to desire and to work.

Do everything without grumbling or questioning, that you may be blameless and innocent, children of God without blemish in the midst of a crooked and perverse generation, among whom you shine like lights in the world, as you hold on to the word of life, so that my boast for the day of Christ may be that I did not run in vain or labor in vain.

But, even if I am poured out as a libation upon the sacrificial service of your faith, I rejoice and share my joy with all of you.

In the same way you also should rejoice and share your joy with me.

Remember this about Satan: Remember his dual aspects. For the Dominion of Hell is not a spiritual communion of persons, with *real*, alive spirits, souls, running together in an Ecstasy of Coordination and Freedom and Grace.

Hell is a Pandemonium, a Riot of spiritual anarchy and dislocation and disunion and loneliness and *ISOLATION*, with *ruined*, totally dead spirits (eternally dying a death-in-life and a life-in-death), without any shred of soul not sucked out (and then pissed out) by Satan, forever running scared - *terrified* - in a HellFIRE of Panic and Pain and total Wretchedness.

In Heaven, God is present to all spirits, without confusion, God is *in* all, while God is still God and each spirit is still itself. Actually, each spirit is *more* itself - *MOST* itself! - *precisely* because God is present within that spirit.

In Hell, the Devil is the absence of isolation and pain to all the condemned spirits, those condemned to an eternal and endless death penalty. For Hell is to die without the relief of not existing. It is to die forever.

Death in this world is but the *surface* of true Eternal Death; it is the veneer, the image, the photograph of the utter “depths” of that abiding and inescapable Horror.

And, in Hell, the Devil inhabits - *possesses* - all his property - his enslaved spirits - using them like toys, like vehicles - they exist as eternal rape victims, being forever used by the Devil to accomplish his purposes. So, all the fallen angels have the most surface level existence. But they no longer exist *as* themselves, since they no longer live *for* God. Having broken faith with God, they are flung out into a spiritual anarchy in which they have become enslaved by - and absorbed in - the Great Spider, the Devil, the most powerful of the created spirits.

So, while all the angels and saints perfectly do God’s Will *and because of that* are **most** themselves, the demons and damned totally suffer the Devil’s will and *because of that*, while still conscious of their own “I” - their own existence - are utterly *lost to themselves*.

In formal philosophical parlance, the souls of the damned retain their existence but have been drained of their essence.

In other words, in Hell, the only person is Lucifer, Satan, the Devil.

In the Trinity, there are Three Persons in ONE TRUTH. The Three Persons are genuinely themselves, and *because of that* the Three Persons are ONE GOD, totally and completely and ineffably ONE.

In the Devil, there is one person, the damned self-fallen Angel of Light in a pandemonium of aspects. The one fallen Angel of Light is not even himself, because he turned away from the nature that God had chosen for him, and *because of that* the **one** person, the Devil, is CHAOS, totally and completely and execrably MANY.

The Devil, though one in his emptiness and the self-ruination of the Angel of Light he might have allowed himself to be, is not even one in himself -- he is a chaos of all the foul angels and damned souls he has gobbled up.

You are what you eat -- naturally, but far more, spiritually.

Those who feast on the Spirit, either through sight, like the angels, or through the Bread and Wine of the Eucharist, Christ's Flesh and Blood, like we human souls, have the Spirit, and have life, becoming God, God becoming *in us*, that we might be totally ourselves.

Those who *are feasted upon* by the spirit of evil, the Devil, are disintegrated within the Devil's spiritual pit, his "stomach" (a metaphor). And even the Devil is not benefited, for ruined souls are poison, so, with every bite of a ruined soul, the Devil becomes more polluted, more wretched, *more* deranged. What the Devil seeks, the ruination of souls that he might consume them, becomes *precisely* the ruination of the Devil. Just as the sins that human beings so ardently seek out become the ruination of that person.

So, in Hell, and in the Kingdom of Hell, like in *The Silence of the Lambs*, Satan is Buffalo Bill, and all the demons and damned, ruined souls are the skins that he has torn off the bodies of what were once living angels and human beings.

The only difference is, the skins still have the consciousness to *see* the horror of their situation.

That is why the Devil is the Lord of Illusions: He wears the masks of all the fallen -- every demon and every damned soul. And, even within "himself", within that one, there is nothing but a mask, for under the mask there is nothingness --- a bottomless pit of *not-there*. It is a vortex of un-empathy, un-compassion, un-mercy.

The Devil was supposed to be the Angel of Light -- the one spirit who *most* praised the Glory of God.

The Angel of Light chose to become the Devil - the Diabolos - which is an ancient Greek word that means one who “throws himself across” the Plan and Truth of God.

From being the perfect camera of God’s Love, the Devil seeks to blotch the painting of God’s grace: to throw blood and filth and havoc on the canvass of God’s beauty.

In that foul quest, the Devil also has the aspects of Satan and Lucifer. Satan is the Accuser, who, when there is sin to accuse, can be the Destroyer: Abaddon, the Angel of the Bottomless Pit, the Ruination of souls. Satan is, as Malachi Martin said, the scorpion - the murderer. Satan is the one who eternally murders a soul for his or her sins.

Lucifer is what precedes Satan -- for Lucifer is more like the Angel of Light that the Devil was supposed to be. Lucifer is the remaining reflective capacity of the Angel of Light that permits the Devil to *trick* human beings into falling to sin. Lucifer presents a course of action -- a choice, a series of choices -- *and makes it look like God’s Will! Lucifer makes the human being **believe** that Beatitude and Plenitude and Pleasure will be gotten from sin -- when all that will be obtained is the bait of a fleeting gratification and satisfaction and the enduring hook of eternal death.*

God is a Fisherman who, when catching the fish, brings them to a greater life, incorporating them into Himself, such that they might become a part of Himself - and be Blessed - forever.

Satan is a fisherman who, when catching the fish, gobbles them up, and destroys them in the pit of his own spiritual stomach, defecating and urinating out the soul that they had, and keeping their spiritual “I” as one more mask for him to use.

And underneath the masks of Satan, Lucifer, the Devil....underneath the masks of all the demons in his employ and all the damned souls enslaved to him.....underneath that mask there is *nothing*.

God is the Face that un.masks - reveals - all.

Satan is the invisible man -- not only invisible, but insubstantial, who wears masks and disguises because, within, there is nothing there at all.

God tells the truth to human beings, so that human beings, understanding the truth, might live the truth, and thus have Eternal Life.

Satan tells lies to human beings, so that human beings, deceived about what is true and what is false, might die in their sins, and thus have Eternal Death.

And the Devil is the most powerful spirit ever created: he can *reflect* the WHOLE *surface* of God's Truth (although he cannot deliver the interiority of God's Truth). All spirits are mirrors. The Devil is the most perfect mirror.

So, Lucifer - the Light-Bearer - can *reflect* the whole of God's truth. And, just as a mirror, Lucifer's deceptions can *look* like reality, without having **any** depth -- it can appear to be reality without, *in any way at all*, actually being reality.

So, Lucifer is the aspect of the Pandemonium that makes you think that Sin is the Way of God.

Satan is the accuser, who, after you have fallen to Lucifer's snares, pops up and points at you and says, "You are guilty! Into my belly now!"

And, if you do not have salvation in Christ, Satan, the great scorpion, will easily take hold of you and thrust you into his foul belly.

Don't see the connection to Capitalism?

Maybe that's because you're superficial.

Just as Secular Modernity seeks to impart a *superficial* understanding of the World, and just as Islam seeks to impart a superficial understanding of God, Capitalism seeks to impart a superficial understanding of Plenitude.

God who is the Trinity -- the Communion of the Giver, Gift, and Gratitude -- is all Plenitude. All enjoyment that you have ever had is a participation in God. All the tasty foods you have ever eaten, all the good

sex you have ever had, all the breaths of fresh air you have ever breathed, all the beauty you have ever envisaged is *all* of it but an **echo** of the Plenitude that is God.

And that Plenitude exists precisely because it is *Gift...it is Given...it is **shared***. Sharing is the essence of Plenitude.

In this world, because it is ruled by Satan -- because it is shattered, sundered, torn, broken, messed up, defective -- everything that is real is backwards and upside down.

In this world, you have more when you **hoard** more. When you give away, you have less. Accumulation means keeping, not sharing.

But that is because this world is deranged from the Source of Reality, it is cut off, distanced from the Truth, which is the SPIRIT, in whom is all Plenitude.

In our Capitalist culture, our idea of value has become like money. It is a numerical, quantitative measure that is definite and defined. You have so much -- you don't have less than that number, you don't have more. Your value is easily compared to someone else's. If you give your value away, you have less value.

It is Satan's idea of spirituality.

But God's idea of value is the love that exists in a marriage. If a husband decides to hoard his love for himself and not share that love with his wife.....does the husband end up having more love?

No, of course not!

He'll end up having no love at all!

The Capitalist idea of value is limited, finite. There is no such thing as infinite money.

God's idea of value is Love, so it is Infinite, Limitless. Love that is *not* infinite, that is not total, isn't love at all. Love that has limits is not love. *Only* love that is limitless, that is unconditional, is any kind of love at all.

Now, one may retort: that is all fine and good, but Capitalism is simply an economic system that takes account of *material* scarcity, and necessarily rations it in the most efficient way.

Only, this is rubbish.

Capitalism does not *deal* with scarcity. It *creates* scarcity -- it cannot exist without scarcity.

Capitalism says that scarcity is the problem, and Capitalism is the solution.

The truth is that Capitalism creates the problem that it proposes to solve.

Capitalism infects you with a chronic disease and then sells you the palliative that allows you to hobble around, selling it to you on a weekly basis at exorbitant rates for the rest of your life.

Capitalism is a drug dealer, an opium peddler, that gets you hooked on scarcity and then dispenses the fix - the minimal wage - necessary to survive in Capitalism's scarcity Hellscape.

Capitalism functions by absorbing more resources than it produces. Hence, Capitalism necessarily concentrates more and more wealth in fewer and fewer hands.

Only economic growth can alleviate the disastrous effects of the concentration of wealth that is the whole purpose of the Capitalist system.

In the absence of meaningful economic growth, the Capitalist system necessarily deteriorates.

Now, Capitalism, the great liar and charlatan, would have you believe that it, *Capitalism*, is the cause of economic growth.

But this is also rubbish. Technological progress is the cause of economic growth.

And, as often as not, and usually in the end, technological progress creates **abundance**, and not scarcity.

And Capitalist "markets" -- frameworks of the capitalist mode of production -- cannot survive in economic abundance, they **require** scarcity in order to exist at all.

That is why the United States needs to have a vast system of government farm supports to grow food in this country -- because the technological capacity of our country in agriculture has outpaced the capitalist mode of production. This is especially true in milk production. Milk production must be heavily regulated and subsidized precisely because it is so easy to produce “over”-abundant qualities of milk.

Capitalism claims to be the mother of technology. But, really, Capitalism is the slave master of technology, keeping the full productive capacities of technological production for abundance and for true economic freedom for all people in chains.

To say that technological development -- which is the engine of material progress and betterment -- is intrinsically tied to the structure of the capitalist mode of production -- and that no superior form of economic organization is possible or desirable -- is the contemporary equivalent of a feudal lord in the 13th Century claiming that agricultural improvement is impossible, undesirable, vain, or destructive aside from the manorial, seigneurial, *feudal* system of economic production. It is to forsake the possibility and construction of a far better, freer, fairer, more just and more livable future out of fear that some benefits of the present or past may be lost.

The Feudalist says: No Lords, and you shall starve.

The Capitalist says: No Capitalists, and you shall live in squalor.

Capitalism does not produce economic empowerment. It can only exist by producing the economic disempowerment of the people -- by cutting people off from the ownership and common management of productive equipment and from keeping people enslaved to a system of consumer credit which impoverishes the populace and from which there is no escape save celebrity or inheritance (or the lottery).

Capitalism (somehow successfully) masks this truth with a parade of gadgetry...with whirring lights and shallow marvels. (And an endless barrage of propaganda in the media, schools, and workplaces.)

But the Capitalist system will *never* create a situation in which productive equipment is widely owned by the vast majority of people and in

which the individual human person can be free from the centralized corporate capitalist system of production, employment and credit.

The whole apparatus of the Capitalist system is predicated upon Greed -- upon the Satanic spirituality which holds that value is generated by hoarding and not by sharing.

And, just as the soul is dehumanized in Hell, the human person is dehumanized in Capitalism.

Under Capitalism, there are two kinds of human persons: the owner and the worker.

The owner owns enough property such that he or she can derive a sufficient income from that property without working.

The worker does not own enough property to derive a sufficient income from that property and must hire himself or herself out to an owner in order to obtain the income necessary to survive.

Whether an owner “works” in some capacity or other is irrelevant. All that matters is whether the person *can* obtain sufficient income from wealth. If he can, he is an owner. If not, he is a worker.

The owner is to the worker as the demon is to the damned.

The worker’s humanity is violated through alienation and humiliation as the owner’s humanity is self-violated through humiliating and alienating.

The relationship between worker and owner is inherently one of violence. It is an involuntary exploitation, especially against the worker and even, ultimately against the owner.

The worker submits to the power of the owner solely because of economic need. Need is the antithesis of freedom. To the extent that one is *not* self-sufficient, one is not free.

In a society of free men and women who, themselves, could produce the food, shelter, and clothing necessary to provide for basic sustenance and material existence, Capitalism could not and would not exist.

And Capitalism, by design, denies the masses the necessary resources to construct such means of self-sufficient production.

In truth, the owner is inextricably bound up in the system of exploitation. For an owner who derives his or her income from profit or rent necessarily exploits a worker or a tenant (who is, of course, usually a worker -- and a tenant who is himself an owner can only pay the rent because he or she derives profit from a worker or rent from a tenant, and so on and so forth).

The only way for an owner *not* to exploit a worker would be to stop deriving income from profit or rent. This would require the person to either (1) work, and hence be exploited, or (2) live off of unproductive cash assets. And yet, cash held in a bank still finances the global exploitative operations of the Capitalist system. And keeping 10 million dollars under your mattress is unwise, unsafe, and probably bad for your back.

The whole interchange of relationships within a Capitalist system is necessarily a nexus of exploitation from which there is no escape. One either exploits or is exploited.

Very much like Hell.

In such a system, where material value is so thoroughly quantized and made scarce, and where 80 to 98% of the population is thoroughly degraded into nothing more than machinery -- appendages to machinery -- that exist solely for the production of goods and services for the tiny owner elite, *how could people have anything but a superficial conception of Plenitude?*

We should note some superficial objections to the foregoing account of Capitalism.

Whenever you criticize Capitalism, one of the Capitalists, or their servants, the academic economics profession or the corporate media “journalists”, will immediately accuse you of Communism. Then they will point to the failures of the USSR and the Eastern Bloc, or of other state socialist systems like mid-20th Century India or Egypt or the basket case freak show that is contemporary Venezuela.

Being opposed to Capitalism *does not* mean supporting state socialism, or even (necessarily) supporting any kind of socialism at all.

Opposing Capitalism simply means pointing out its *inherent* shortcomings.

Likewise, if I were transported back to the 13th Century in Europe and pointed out the inherent shortcomings of Feudalism, many Lords would attack me as unrealistic or utopian. Allow the peasants to leave the manor? Not keep the peasants legally bound to their lords? How shall we farm? How shall we eat? You propose starvation, chaos, anarchy, and ruin!

No, I don't.

There has been for most of human history, and still is to a certain extent in our society, some kind of actual scarcity in some kinds of material resources. Not everyone can own an island. Not everyone can own a private jet. Not everyone can own every kind of car and gadget.

But the Capitalist dogma of universal scarcity is overblown and fallacious. The Capitalist dogma defines scarcity as having limited resources to meet unlimited human needs. But human needs are *not* unlimited. Human *desires* can become unhinged and, hence, unlimited.

Human needs are very limited. They are limited to air, water, approximately 2000 calories of food per day, some kind of clothing, some kind of shelter, access to healthcare, and some kind of education. Everything else is a *desire*.

The planet Earth presently has *more than enough* material resources to satisfy every single human being's *needs* for air, water, food, clothing, shelter, healthcare, and education.

The *reason* the rulers of the Earth do not satisfy *all* the needs of everyone on the Earth is because they are greedy. Plain and simple. This is not "scarcity". This is not mathematics. This is not some kind of intractable organizational problem. It is pure greed.

The rulers of the Earth, the Capitalists and their governments and their media operations, have sucked up the wealth of the planet and put it under their total control.

Why?

To make the world a better place? Because the resources of the earth *cannot* be shared or even distributed more equitably?

No.

They have sucked up all the wealth, and all the means of producing wealth, because they are greedy.

This is not complicated.

The Capitalists and their servants have to *make* it complicated, so that people remain too ignorant and too browbeaten and too propagandized to *do* anything about it.

If I were transported by a time machine into the 13th Century and waved my hands and said, “It doesn’t have to be this way! Feudalism isn’t necessary!” that doesn’t mean that *any other kind of system* is superior.

If the peasants, upon hearing me, took their pitchforks and lanterns and rose up and killed the lord and the lady and tried to run the manor themselves, what would happen?

Probably chaos.

And, very likely, hunger, maybe even starvation, until the knights from the manor one mile over came in and put the rebellion down.

But just because a peasant uprising wouldn’t *automatically* and *magically* produce a superior outcome than the rule of a feudal lord, that does not mean that feudal lords or manorialism are inherently necessary for the proper and productive management of a human economy.

In critiquing feudalism in the 13th Century (if we could do it without persecution) we would have to make a distinction between (1) the feudalist system that does good by producing food people need to eat and (2) the feudalist system that does bad by preventing and retarding the development of the social conditions necessary to transcend the inferior feudalist system for something better.

We can, and must, say the same about Capitalism.

And we wouldn’t be able, truly, to say that Feudalism Type (1) and Feudalism Type (2) were somehow different: that Feudalism Type (2) somehow wasn’t “really” Feudalism. *Both* aspects of feudalism are feudalism.

The same is true of Capitalism.

In our Capitalist society, we have a population that has needs and desires, and we have an earth that has material resources, and that has a certain level and structure of productive capacity (i.e. capital: factories, machinery, and human talents).

We have to organize how we operate that material infrastructure so that it can satisfy the needs and desires of our population. And we have to do it in a way that is orderly and promotes human freedom and human dignity.

There is no particular reason to believe that murdering the rich and having a dictatorship is the best way to organize such an economy.

But there is also no particular reason to believe that allowing 1% of the population to control the material infrastructure of the planet, and allowing billions of people to languish in poverty and servitude is the best way to organize such an economy.

A competitive environment in which disparate firms operate (the “free” market) is clearly a superior mechanism for coordinating supply with demand than central government planning.

But is all of human history really this binary choice: capitalist corporations *or* Gosplan (the Soviet State Planning Committee)?

Besides, does the unwieldiness of central planning magically wave away the myriad problems with the global capitalist system? The poverty of billions. The concentration of control over the means of production (capital) in the hands of 1% of the population. The continuing concentration of wealth in fewer and fewer hands. The continuing deterioration of conditions for the erstwhile middle class in Western nations. The inherently dictatorial nature of the employer-employee relationship. The tyranny of the labor market, being the only way the class of workers (as opposed to the class of owners) can gain an income?

The failure of central planners in Russia, India, Egypt, and Venezuela, and elsewhere, should not blind us to the monumental deficiencies of Capitalism, nor allow the defenders of the Oligarchy to smear all critics of the system as advocating economic stagnation or ruin.

Just as the solution to Feudalism was the freedom of the peasants, so too the solution to Capitalism is the freedom of the workers.

The freedom of the workers does not mean the dictatorship of a party of workers (much less their self-appointed representatives).

It means the economic empowerment of workers.

It means the dissolution of the two classes, owners and workers, and the forging of a new consensus and ethos: an equal economic citizenship. That new ethos must be built on the idea that everyone matters: everyone

has to have a *right* to a voice in the economic system of production and a share in the economic fruits of the Earth's resources.

To make such an ethos real, to make it a system, a way of life, requires at least two things: (1) education in critical thinking and (2) the distribution of productive capital to ordinary individuals. The second requirement means that, over time, more and more of the economic production that occurs is done at the individual and local level, with individual, family, and local cooperative control *rather than* a productive system that is centrally controlled by amorphous global entities which are themselves controlled by a corrupt global financial system.

But the Capitalists don't want that. They don't want children and young adults given educations that actually allow them to *think* about what is happening around them, much less to critique the nature of the society in which we live. They want vacuous but efficient managers and obedient workers. That is all. And that is the kind of educational system that our Capitalist society promotes and enforces, and which the Capitalist corporations reward.

And we will never see the Capitalists, on their own volition, (short of a miracle), help advance the process of increasing the amount of capital controlled by individuals, families, and localities. No matter how well off an upper middle class person is, (even a lower-level rich person), *none* of them own the capital necessary to produce their own food, clothing, much less shelter. They are entirely dependent on centralized, globalized productive operations.

The goal of our human economy should be the production of abundance: practical abundance. An abundance that provides *everyone* with the basic water, food, clothing, shelter, healthcare, and education necessary to live any kind of human life. *After* that abundance is provided, *then* the production and distribution of luxuries to satisfy desires can be undertaken.

Any kind of economic system that does not meet that simple test is a bad economic system.

If the only defense of that bad economic system is that all other economic systems are worse, what is the conclusion? That economic system is *still* a bad system. If I have 10 apples in a row, and you hand me an apple that is rotten, and I object, and you say, "But look at the other nine

apples, they are *more* rotten,” that does not make the apple you handed me any less rotten.

Before we move on, we can readily and simply note that Scandinavian social democracy is a superior economic system to American oligarchy. The quality of life for ordinary citizens in Sweden and Norway is superior to that of citizens in the United States. The only reason the United States does not emulate Sweden and Norway is because the rich don't want that to happen, and so they organize a vast propaganda effort to stir up racism and nationalism to prop up their economic oligarchy.

Earlier, I criticized the Swedes for their deafness to theological understanding. I stand by that criticism. But is it impossible to simultaneously operate a Swedish political economy and maintain a thoroughly Christian worldview? No, it is not impossible. And any argument otherwise is propaganda. Anyone who argues that the Gospel cannot be believed without adhering to economic oligarchy should be immediately discredited in public discourse. Such a perverted understanding of the Gospel is the theological equivalent of Flat-Earthism in astrophysics. You should have the right to state your belief in Flat-Earthism, and then everyone else should ignore you.

Yet even Scandinavian social democracy does not have to be the last word in economics. Rather than having capitalist-owned corporations competing in economic markets, we could have worker-owned cooperatives in their stead. That would require the greater social, economic, management, and industrial education of our peoples, but it would yield a freer, fairer more robust economic world.

Since capitalist corporations already own all the resources of the earth, it would be entirely appropriate for governments to fund such cooperatives to give them an opportunity to grow to maturity.

But Capitalists don't want that.

Because they are fair-minded, wise, and prudent: they know that such a world would necessarily be worse *for the people* than their world?

No.

Because they're greedy.

In any event, let us simply assume, for the sake of argument, that the present form of rampant, destructive, unequal, oligarchical capitalism is the best form of economic government possible and that any other kind of

economic system is impossible (despite its present existence in Norway and Sweden).

That economic system is still a bad system. It is bad because it is greedy and exclusive. It produces a world of haves and have-nots, winners and losers. It is a world where some are stuffed, and some starve. Some live in mansions, and others are homeless. Some own islands and yachts, and others die of cancer because they cannot afford treatment.

It is one thing to say, "Such a system is a necessary evil."

It is another thing to say, "Such a system is a positive good."

The servile defenders of the Capitalist class, the media and the academy, will sometimes, in a pinch and when their back is against the wall, opt for the "Necessary Evil" argument, to shut you down.

But, when they're not (and when they're frothing at the mouth like right-wing television, radio, and Internet), they're all in for the "Positive Good" argument. Capitalism is a grand exercise in rewarding the noble and deserving and punishing the ignoble and sinful. Such right-wing propaganda is, indeed, a kind of parallel Christianity, in which the Corporate Market is God, the rich are the saved, and the poor are the damned. Such hyper-Capitalist propaganda does actually fit quite nicely with a debauched, degraded, rusty and worn-out non-Christianity, like we have in much of the United States today.

Such an anti-Gospel of the Rich is exactly the kind of Gospel that the Anti-Christ will love.

In order to defend and celebrate such a system, greed and exclusion must not simply be defended as necessary, but honored as virtues. Ayn Rand does precisely this. Of course, such a celebration of selfishness requires a whole philosophy of selfishness, in which the human person has no other moral obligation than to his own happiness.

But that is not Christianity.

That is Anti-Christianity.

Whatever good you would like to attribute to Capitalism, you must also attribute the bad to it. It is meaningless, facile, and ridiculous to laud Capitalism for an improvement in the standard of living and then excuse it for inequality, hierarchical workplaces, unemployment, poverty, and starvation. It is all *one* system, *one* reality.

If you do, in fact, disagree with the persistence of what I call the ‘bad’ elements of Capitalism (rather than hold them up as the righteous condemnation of the economic damned), then you *must* say Capitalism has its virtues, and it has its vices.

If you refuse to countenance any proposal to address its vices, but only celebrate its virtues (real and imagined).....why?

In the end, the answer is simple: greed. The greed for money and the greed for power.

So, when we think about “Capitalism” -- what do we mean? What is the phenomenon of Capitalism *as a phenomenon*?

You cannot simply mean “a laissez faire market in which enough competition is permitted to allow the effective coordination of supply and demand such that the market clears without the production of shortages and surpluses.”

Capitalism is not simply a coordinating mechanism: it is the whole social ecosystem of Capitalist-owned firms, with hierarchical workplaces, that have no loyalty to their own workers, and who actively seek to undermine and fire their workers in pursuit of endless profits. It is also the system in which those Capitalist firms seek to control the entire cultural and political system in order to preserve their economic royalist prerogatives. It is also the system in which the Capitalist overlords hoard their wealth while the rest of the population languishes in deterioration or outright poverty.

To reduce “Capitalism” to the coordination mechanism would be to reduce “Feudalism” to agriculture. To smear all criticism of Feudalism as nothing more than promoting the destruction of agriculture exactly parallels how pro-Capitalist propaganda smears all critics of Capitalism as destructive of industry itself.

We might distinguish “Capitalism as a purely economic system” from “Capitalism: The Ideology, Ethos, and Religion”.

We live in a Capitalist world. Even if there is some kind of better world available (like Sweden or Norway), we have to deal with the world we have today. We cannot simply rip it all up and put it in a blender, like serfs rising up and burning the manor house. *Yet*, if Capitalism is simply an

economic system, rather than a religion, we can *improve* it: we can make it less greedy, less unequal, fairer, freer, and more inclusive. We can even improve it so much that, at some point, it would no longer even be “Capitalism” but some more advanced and better economic system.

But that’s not the Capitalism that we have today, certainly not in America and most of the world.

No. That’s for losers.

We have the Church of Capitalism, the Gospel of Greed, and the God of the Market.

And a god cannot be improved, and you don’t advance on to some better religion. A god is permanent, and a religion is an unchanging truth.

Now, I believe in God, and I believe in unchanging truth.

I just don’t believe that Capitalism is God or Truth.

Capitalism has gone from an economic system to a Way of Life, its own anti-Christian Religion. It does not simply propose to provisionally organize economic relationships until some superior form of organization can be devised and developed. It holds itself up as Absolute and Eternal Truth, a God, and propounds a total philosophy of life. The Capitalist philosophy of life glorifies greed, exclusion, self-preference, and self-deification. Capitalism proposes a philosophy of value, a belief about what really matters in the world. And that one value is money, which is a superficial conception of Plenitude.

Capitalist Values

<https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=kJ4SSvVbhLw>

So, Secular Modernity leaves us with a World that is Atoms and Void, in which we human beings are epiphenomena, brief insubstantial nothings that have no inherent meaning or purpose.

Islam leaves us with a One-Dimensional Point God that demands mindless slavery from a slave race. The god of Islam demands unquestioning servility and promises nothing more than physical pleasures as a reward for being a good pet. The most intimacy the god of Islam promises is the pat on the head that a Master gives to a slave. Islam

proudly declares that the essence of Monotheism is the Tyranny of God as a Slave Master, rather than the Paternity of God as a Father.

And Capitalism reduces the fundamental social relationship to one of hoarding and surviving, in which a war of all against all is exalted to the highest reality of Man - a Hobbesian dystopia in which the owner perpetually bites and feeds and the worker is forever consumed and fed upon.

Secular Modernity, Islam, and Capitalism are not unrelated phenomena. They each propose a different worldview (or conception) about some essential element of any comprehensive worldview. Any comprehensive worldview requires a concept of God, the world, and what matters (value). A comprehensive worldview must answer at least three questions: (1) What is the ultimate nature of reality?, (2) What is the nature of my life?, and (3) What ought I to do?

Each of the three streams answers these questions. Islam answers (1) with “God is the Slave Master, and you are the slave”. Secularism answers (2) with “Your life is nothing, with no permanent or enduring value, so pleasure is the highest good”. Capitalism answers (3) with “Make money”.

Christianity answers these three questions *very* differently. The Gospel answers (1) with “God is your Father, and you are His son, through adoption in Christ Jesus,” (2) with “Your life has endless, infinite, eternal value, so virtue is the highest good, and the greatest virtue is love,” and (3) with, “Love one another: Love God and love your neighbor.”

And *all* of these forces are hostile to Christianity.

Islam perverts the history and teachings of Christianity in an effort to subsume and conquer Christianity. That has been true since Day 1, in Islam’s successful conquest of the Christian Near East and attempted conquest of Christian Europe (which partially succeeded in Spain, Sicily, and Greece).

Secularism demands the right to reengineer Christianity, requiring that it embrace abortion, sodomy, and a philosophy of the world in which all religions are equal and Christians cannot proclaim absolute truths that are inimical to the Secularist worldview.

Capitalism creates a world in which people become nothing more than workers and consumers, and in which the highest value is money. Yet Capitalism does not stop there: it cannot. It demands that Christianity bow

to it, and load onto itself the whole panoply of *its* values: greed, exclusion, and materialism *in place* of love, kindness, and spirituality.

And are these forces somehow muted in their hostility? Do they propose to carefully and quietly and considerately discuss their differences with the Gospel?

No, of course not.

Islam would conquer the world, if only it had the military might.

Secularism calls anyone who disagrees with it a bigot and seeks to pass laws to persecute Christians for practicing their Christian beliefs, forcing them to accept Secularist values and Secularist practices.

Capitalism gobbles up all the resources and wealth and power of the world, so that all the time, money, attention and energy of all people everywhere is drawn into its mighty vortex of greed, to the exclusion of the Gospel message.

These are powerful, avenging forces that seek to attack and dismantle Christianity.

This is not simply a matter of picking out things that are “not Christian” and calling them wicked. Hinduism, Buddhism and modern Japanese culture are not Christian, but I do not consider them special Satanic inventions. Scientology is a false, crank religious system, and I am sure that Satan works through it, but its doctrines do not especially strike me as any more Satanic than any other thing that is not aligned with the Gospel (aside from its tyrannical administration). I’m not a fan of Techno music, but that doesn’t mean I think it’s a ploy of Satan (although it might be).

Hinduism, Buddhism, Japanese culture, Scientology and Techno don’t strike at essential elements of the Christian worldview and belief system. There are differences, but those differences developed over time and in a context removed from the development of Christianity. None of these cultural realities display any particular animus towards Christianity. Islam, Secular Modernity, and Capitalism not only seek to subvert and overthrow essential elements of the worldview of the Gospels, *they first arose precisely within the context of Christendom and then consciously and actively went about subverting and overthrowing Christendom.* If you look at world history strategically, you can see the strategic architecture at work.

Islam was founded in the Arabian peninsula, out in the hinterland among nomads, and it rose up to conquer the Christian Near East and tried to conquer all Christendom. Was it founded in some remote part of Africa? Of South America? In Australia or Indonesia? No. It was founded right at the doorstep of Christendom and proceeded to break down the door and pour in. From the atheist point of view, it is a fluke of history. Muhammad, influenced by his Christian and Jewish relatives and neighbors, started his own religion and then violently spread it. But if you really believe in God, isn't it convenient that this new religion *precisely* attacked the heart of the Gospel: the Trinity, the Sonship of Jesus, the Incarnation, the Crucifixion (and death), and the Resurrection -- the whole Atonement? And isn't it something how that new religion violently -- and quickly -- conquered the Near East and North Africa? How did Christendom in North Africa and the Near East react to Islam? Islam destroyed it.

Particular figures and movements hatched Secularism, like Thomas Hobbes, Rousseau,⁴³ and Voltaire, all of whom either violently hated Christianity or sought to deform it into something fundamentally un-Christian. The bent of Secularism, no matter its particular programs or campaigns, has always been to constrain and disempower Christianity. And isn't it peculiar that Secularism as a movement, rather than an isolated phenomenon, *only* arose in Christendom? It didn't arise in the Muslim World, nor in China, nor in Japan, nor, certainly, in India. Only in Christendom.

And, again, we come to Capitalism, that child of science and technology, nourished upon a credo of selfishness and greed. Only in Christendom. Capitalism does not arise in the Muslim world, or China, or Japan, or India. They all certainly had trade and economic production (all societies do). But not Capitalism, that, how do you put it?, "great vampire squid wrapped around the face of humanity, relentlessly jamming its blood funnel into anything that smells like money."⁴⁴

Enemies without, enemies within, and all crashing upon the Gospel, trying to extinguish it.

The Gospel says, "God is Love, and you are meant to become that Love", "You are the beloved of God", "You are to love others as you love yourself."

⁴³ Despite superficial ties to both Calvinist and Catholic churches, Rousseau was a Deist who denied original sin.

⁴⁴ <http://www.rollingstone.com/politics/news/the-great-american-bubble-machine-20100405>

Islam says, “You are God’s slave,” Secularism says, “You are your own God,” and Capitalism says, “Love only yourself.”

And all three forces viciously hate Christianity and the true Gospel. And all three are actively circling, brewing, testing their strength, striking as they can, and preparing for a crescendo of final domination.

From this vantage point, we can better understand the Trump Ascendancy.

The Trump Phenomenon is God laughing at you.

Trump is, somehow perfectly, the ultimate representation of the superficiality that *is* the Satanic War Plan.

Trump is the Everything that wasn’t there.

The City in the Desert that turns out to be a Mirage.

Only a people immersed in superficiality could fail to detect the abyss that such a man *is*.

Only a people deadened in their entire soul could fail to care that such a man is an abyss.

The particulars of the man’s election are a matter of Providential tinkering.

But it is the reality of the man’s phenomenon that occupies the mind.

Just as Sin is the promise that is empty, so too Trump.

That Man of Sin is the perfect, fitting, and wonderful apotheosis of the Satanic Project.

Because superficiality has no end game. Think about it on the most basic level. What if Satan could murder God and supplant God as God (if that were possible)? What then?

Nothing. Nothing but a total abyss and Hell for every entity that can say “I”.

Secular Modernity has been torturing and spewing fiery invective at the Church for hundreds of years. But what if Secular Modernity were ever

actually to consume the Church, to stamp out Christianity? It would burn itself out, consumed with drugs and alcohol, with a sore dick in a corner in a hotel room, with nothing and no one.

21st Century Islam wants to conquer the world. Okay. Let's say it conquered the world. It would have *no idea* what to do with it. After all the heads were chopped off, the bodies burnt, the women raped, the children mutilated, the Churches and synagogues annihilated, the monuments and national treasures destroyed, the fields burned and the cities ruined.....what then? Nothing.

Capitalism wants to transfer all the wealth of what was the middle class and the poor to the rich. After all the poor are in the streets, starving, and dying....what then? Nothing. Nothing but the rich, hidden away in fortified enclaves, with armies of underpaid and deserting soldiers and bodyguards, beating back the savage zombie armies of the dispossessed.

Our Satanic 21st Century is the torrid affair -- brisk, livid, thrilling, fun, fast, loud ---- and ending with a devastating darkness....an abyss of empty silence -- not solitude, but simply numb loneliness.

The whole apparatus of superficiality -- of the multi-vector, whirring abomination of Satanic superficiality that has been slung at us from all directions by Hell (being designed and nurtured for centuries) simply dissolves into the chaos of eternal Stygian pitch -- a black, blank darkness that is Hell itself.

The forces that rage around us make loud noises....but have no answers. They declaim absolute certainties.....but have no truth.

They are the answer to everything and the solution to nothing.

They make total claims, and yet give nothing in return.

They demand total loyalty, and yet cannot give a shred of loyalty to you.

The Satanic Project - the Satanic War Plan - is the Dominion of Sin.

But Sin, which is Hell, is Nothing.....a Nothing that becomes you, such that, for you, in your woeful state, it becomes everything. And all that you are becomes nothing -- forever.

We cannot abide a worldview that desacralizes the sacred and reduces the world to essential meaninglessness.

We cannot abide a religious force that seeks to murder and rape and mutilate the human race.

We cannot abide an economic system that renders the riches and plenitude of our Earth's resources a wasteland of scarcity and misery.

And we cannot abide leadership that is empty, pointless, and rudderless -- that promises but that cannot deliver.

And that counts for both political parties -- and all political parties in all nations.

Trump is simply the embodiment of the phenomenon that we have been living with for more than a generation.

He is the ! that somehow perfectly arrived to damn the whole sorry tangle of Satanic garbage that has become our world system.

The Candidate

<https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=myEpap3TxVs>

THE GREAT DELUGE OF FIRE

*God said he wouldn't destroy the world again with water.
He never said anything about fire.*

Now, we are better equipped to deal with the coming events.

Listen to Genesis 6:

Origin of the Nephilim, who were the Cause of the Great Deluge of God's Wrath

When human beings began to grow numerous on the earth and daughters were born to them, the sons of God saw how beautiful the daughters of human beings were, and so they took for their wives whomever they pleased.

Then the LORD said: My spirit shall not remain in human beings forever, because they are only flesh. Their days shall comprise one hundred and twenty years.

The Nephilim appeared on earth in those days, as well as later, after the sons of God had intercourse with the daughters of human beings, who bore them sons. They were the heroes of old, the men of renown.

Warning of the Flood.

When the LORD saw how great the wickedness of human beings was on earth, and how every desire that their heart conceived was always nothing but evil, the LORD regretted making human beings on the earth, and his heart was grieved.

So the LORD said: I will wipe out from the earth the human beings I have created, and not only the human beings, but also the animals and the crawling things and the birds of the air, for I regret that I made them.

But Noah found favor with the LORD.

These are the descendants of Noah.

Noah was a righteous man and blameless in his generation; Noah walked with God.

Noah begot three sons: Shem, Ham, and Japheth.

But the earth was corrupt in the view of God and full of lawlessness.

When God saw how corrupt the earth had become, since all mortals had corrupted their ways on earth, God said to Noah: I see that the end of all mortals has come, for the earth is full of lawlessness because of them. So I am going to destroy them with the earth.

Preparation for the Flood.

Make yourself an ark of gopherwood, equip the ark with various compartments, and cover it inside and out with pitch. This is how you shall build it: the length of the ark will be three hundred cubits, its width fifty cubits, and its height thirty cubits. Make an opening for daylight and finish the ark a cubit above it. Put the ark's entrance on its side; you will make it with bottom, second and third decks.

I, on my part, am about to bring the flood waters on the earth, to destroy all creatures under the sky in which there is the breath of life; everything on earth shall perish.

I will establish my covenant with you.

You shall go into the ark, you and your sons, your wife and your sons' wives with you.

Of all living creatures you shall bring two of every kind into the ark, one male and one female, to keep them alive along with you. Of every kind of bird, of every kind of animal, and of every kind of thing that crawls on the ground, two of each will come to you, that you may keep them alive. Moreover, you are to provide yourself with all the food that is to be eaten, and store it away, that it may serve as provisions for you and for them.

Noah complied; he did just as God had commanded him.

When I was in my sin, and lacked the spiritual sight necessary to read Scripture, for I was in the thrall of mortal sin and thus cut off from God's

illuminating Grace, I embarrassingly glanced quickly over that little passage about those Nephilim.

What *in the world* was the Bible talking about? ‘Sons of God’ having sex with human women? I always understood the Sons of God as angels, (certainly) fallen angels, having sex with human women. And then the Bible states that they produced the heroes of old? Like Odysseus or Achilles or Heracles?

My conventional understanding saw this passage as just an unfortunate legendary inclusion that paralleled the Greek mythical reminiscences of the great, gigantic worthies of superhuman strength that fought in the semi-mythical Trojan War.

But let us assume the inerrancy of Scripture. And let us assume that the Bible unfolds logically.

In Genesis 3, Adam and Eve fall. In Genesis 4, Cain murders his brother Abel and copulates with the intelligent beasts that the First Family discovers in their new Satanic world. Cain spawns a whole brood of the Children of Satan.

Let us also reflect that Satan poisoned the fruit with his own lustfulness, and that, in eating of it, both Adam and Eve were infected with that Satanic lustfulness, the penalty for disobedience to God. And let us also reflect that that lustfulness, which is the inheritance of those born in original sin, which *is* the nature of original sin, can either be yielded to or resisted. Here we do not consider the matter of the supernatural grace of faith in Christ necessary for eternal salvation, but merely the natural power to either yield to the acting out of sin, in such outrages as murder, or to resist the manifestation of one’s sinfulness through resisting such urges.

Certainly, all must agree that even those not in Christ, even those damned, have a lesser or greater capacity to resist such actions.

Cain yielded to his lusts, whereas Abel resisted such lusts. Yet Abel was killed and became unable to generate.

Cain, now not just involved in Adam’s sin of lust, but also involving himself in his own additional sin of pride, which is the essential sin of Satan, mated with the intelligent beasts and fathered the brood of the Children of Satan.

Seth, though not as perfect as Abel, was still righteous, according to mortal righteousness, and mated with one of his sisters. Scripture does not record the names of any other children of Adam and Eve than Cain, Abel, and Seth. However, Scripture explicitly confirms that Adam and Eve had other children.

Genesis 5:4 states, “Adam lived eight hundred years after the birth of Seth, and he had other sons and daughters.”

By mating with one of his sisters, a Child of Adam, the Children of Seth remained still purely Children of Adam, according to Adam’s residual righteousness,⁴⁵ and not beastly Children of Cain.

For those descendants of Adam through Seth were truly Children of Adam, heir to the original sin of lust, but not heir to the additional sin of Cain, the sin of pride. Of course, within lust is the possibility of the sin of pride. To endure in the sin of lust, and not to take recourse in the ministrations of God’s corrective grace, itself constitutes the sin of pride.

Scripture states, “When God created man, He made him in the likeness of God; he created them male and female. When they were created, he blessed them and named them ‘man.’”

Thus the Children of Adam are Children of God. Those Children of God born through Adam and through Seth are Children of God, heirs to the blessing of God. Those Children of God born through Adam and through Cain are the Children of Satan, heirs to the curses of God. The former are the elect, the latter are the damned.

From all eternity, God foreknew those who would prefer evil, and thereby, from all eternity, he predestined those who would persevere in wickedness to be conformed to the likeness of the Children of Cain.⁴⁶ Those who God knew would prefer good, God, from all eternity, predestined to be conformed to the likeness of the Children of Seth.

One may still be saved, and be in grace, and be a Child of Seth, and thus, a Child of God, even if one is not a Christian, *if* that person has not truly had the Gospel preached to him or her. And, indeed, it may take time for a person to accept the Gospel of Christ. One cannot know whether someone is a Child of Seth or a Child of Cain, even among those who have had the Gospel truly preached to them, until the last moment of that person’s life. Indeed, since no one, in this age, can know another’s mind, especially at the moment of death, one can never know, but can only *infer* through that person’s actions. And the totality of one’s actions can only be known at the end of life.

⁴⁵ Not, certainly, a righteousness sufficient for salvation, but still some *residual* preference for at least *superficial* goodness.

⁴⁶ Or the typologically equivalent Children of Canaan, depending on how strictly you read Genesis 7:21-23.

Genesis 5:6 states, “When Seth was one hundred and five years old, he became the father of Enosh.”

So, since Genesis 5:3 states that, “Adam was one hundred and thirty years old when he begot a son in his likeness, after his image; and he named him Seth,” Adam was 235 years old when Seth was 105, when Seth had *his* first child. Therefore, there was more than enough time for Adam to have begotten daughters for Seth to marry.

We can also note that Seth and one of his sisters, (indeed, that whole tribe of the first Children of Adam), were not under any Covenant obligations. Adam, Eve, and their children were in a complete state of nature, unbound by any divine law, other than the natural law inherent to their human nature.

Human nature is ordered to conjugal union. Conjugal union is willed by God and is a natural consequence of being enfleshed in human flesh and thus possessing a human nature.

While in later times, incest was prohibited by the Torah (Leviticus 18:6-18), (1) that prohibition was not placed upon the Children of Adam in those earliest times, and (2) *not* engaging in incest would have conflicted with their human nature, since it would have forbidden conjugal union and foreclosed the fecundity of such conjugation. *Not* mating with their kin *in those times* would have required them to disregard the blessing of God, which is fecundity. Genesis 1:28 states, “God blessed them, saying to them: “Be fertile and multiply; fill the earth and subdue it. Have dominion over the fish of the sea, the birds of the air, and all the living things that move on the earth.”

The imperative of the flesh to fertility and multiplication is an *inherent* imperative of the nature of human flesh.

The Children of Adam in those days had three options: (1) remain celibate and thus overtly and completely *defy* the command of God *and* the imperatives of their own nature, (2) mate with the intelligent beasts as the reprobate Cain had done, or (3) mate with each other.

Thus, since there were no further options, and Options (1) and (2) were *against* the Will of God, while, in those days, Option (3) was indifferent in God’s eyes, the Children of Adam committed no sin in mating with each other. And, surely, in a couple of generations, cousins could mate with cousins, and eventually mate with more and more distantly related cousins.

Indeed, even from an old-fashioned Darwinian point of view (this being the revised Darwinian point of view), all human beings are necessarily mating with their cousins -- albeit, usually with cousins very far removed. *Strictly* speaking, from the Darwinian point of view, there is no such thing as two human beings being “unrelated” -- all human beings are cousins.

This new viewpoint, naturally, presupposes that Adam and Eve were flung into a world populated by intelligent beasts that parodied their human nature, without sharing it. So, in that world, prior to the great orgy of cross-fornication, while Seth necessarily mated with a cousin, Cain did, in fact, mate with a being foreign to *his* nature -- although with a being that *did* conform to his will, since that being was raised up by Satan, in a world blown apart by sin and dominated by the Rule of Satan, the Empire of Sin and Death.

Genesis 5 records the generations of the Children of Seth, the Children of God, from Adam to Noah.

Scripture does not relate to what extent the Children of Seth married each other, and thus remained pure, or intermarried with the intelligent beasts.

We can figure that some in the Tribe of Seth remained pure by not intermarrying and some had impure descendants by intermarrying.

We can figure, however, that the direct line described in Genesis 5, from Adam to Noah, *did* remain pure by marrying only those in the Tribe of Seth.

We should briefly reiterate that these arguments do not justify anti-miscegenation laws or any form of racism, because racist categories are meaningless. There is no such thing, in any meaningful, structural sense, as the “White Race” or the “Black Race” or the “Yellow Race”. Those are absurd, meaningless constructs built upon ignorance and advanced by hatred.

In this section, we are talking about the very real realities of creation, the fall of that creation, its emergence in a Cosmos ruled by Satan, and the transmission of God’s blessings and curses. People from all “races” (as this infantile society understands them) are just as likely to be Children of God as Children of Satan. *And the only way you can have any hint of who is who is by their behavior*. And you can never really know who is who, because you never know who is going to repent. And even after a person is dead, you cannot really know, because you do not know the totality of that person’s life, nor do you know the faith, or lack thereof, in their last waning moments of conscious existence. Any attempt to create some kind of legal program or eugenic program on the basis of the knowledge of the differences between the Children of God and the Children of Satan is surely a work of the Children of Satan.

But, if we accept the inerrancy of Scripture, we can see an easy and logical connection running from Genesis 3 to 4 to 5 to 6 to 7 to 8, in which the Nephilim are not some bizarre embarrassment, to be shunt aside and ignored, but are, in fact,

central to the plot of salvation history, and integral to understanding the Second Great Deluge to come in our time and that of our children and grandchildren.

In Genesis 3, Adam and Eve fell. In Genesis 4, Cain begot a whole monstrous race of the Children of Cain, the Children of Satan. In Genesis 5, we see the growth of the Tribe of Seth.

Now, since they were pureblooded Sethites, untainted by the sin of Cain, but only infected with the sin of Adam, naturally those in the Tribe of Seth had, to us, unusually long lifetimes, stretching towards a thousand years.

We can also understand why we have no historical record of some great, long-lived Empire of the Sethites. For the Sethites were strangers in this world, exiles from their true world, surrounded on all sides by intelligent beasts of pure wickedness. How could the relatively noble and pacific Sethites establish an empire in the midst of such hostile aliens? The intelligent beasts would surely have annihilated the Sethites in any such confrontation. And, indeed, the Sethites would have no desire to build an empire. Empire-building is an activity only for Satan and his Children.

But in Genesis 6 (and, indeed, 6 is an appropriate chapter number here), Scripture speaks of the human beings growing numerous on the earth, with daughters born to them.

Now, Genesis 6 speaks of the “sons of God” seeing how beautiful these daughters of man were and mating with them.

In the very next sentence, God decides that His Spirit will not remain with human beings for as long as it has, and, instead of the approximately 1000 years that the Children of Seth had been permitted beforehand, now human beings will only be permitted a paltry, meager, wisp of a lifetime: 120 years.

And, indeed, 120 years is precisely the lifespan that modern science has determined to be the maximum human lifespan.

Of course, since most people live their lives wantonly, eating all manner of unhealthy food, in incredible quantities, and not exercising their bodies, but rather luxuriating in slothful repose, we consider a person who is 80 to be old, and a person who is 100 to be extremely ancient.

Might there be a connection with the sons of God mating with these daughters of man?

Isn't it entirely clear that the sons of God are the Children of God, the Children of Seth, the Tribe of Seth?

And isn't it entirely clearly that Genesis 6:1-4 *clearly* states that the Tribe of Seth, in their great lust, saw the *beauty* of the daughters of man, and thus "took for their wives whomever they pleased." Listen to that phrase - "whomever they pleased". The text has a clear tone: such cross-breeding was sinful, was disobedient to the Will of God, and was thus inherently hateful to God.

And God, in His Righteous Wrath, in His Justice, limited the lifespans of all future human beings.

The sin of Adam, the sin of lust, of preferring the creature to the Creator, had forfeited Adam immortality, but had still permitted him 1000 years -- nothing compared to eternity, but quite a lot compared to 120 or 80 years.

And, the Tribe of Seth, for a while, had endured in relative virtue -- not the virtue of God, certainly, but it had not descended into the madness of the sin of Cain, which is preferring the self over *both* the Creator and even the creature. The sin of Adam, at least, was *other*-oriented. The sin of Cain was totally *self*-oriented.

But, of course, sin is a cascade. Just like grace. Spiritual realities are velocities -- they are accelerating velocities. They do not stay at rest. Sin accelerates into ever greater sin. Grace accelerates into greater grace.

The sin of Adam cascaded through his descendants, till they became ever more lustful.

So, whereas in Genesis 3 Adam had chosen Eve over God, out of his perversely noble desire to love Eve, now Adam's descendants, the sons of God, the Children of God, the Tribe of Seth, are disobeying the Will of God and intermarrying with the intelligent beasts, and even, we can figure, the Children of Satan, the Cainites, thus generating a whole new race - a cross Sethite/beastly/Cainite horror.

Consider. The power of Satan is the power to pervert. The more God Satan has at his disposal, the more powerful Satan's perversion. As C.S. Lewis noted, the materials for a great sinner are the same as for a great saint. So, when the Children of Seth forsook the LORD, and his Will that they only marry each other, to marry the damned *simply because they were hot* -- imagine God's apoplectic rage.

At least Adam had sinned for love. These later Tribesmen of Seth sinned for pure lust, for the pleasures of the flesh and the enchantment of the eye.

And, remember what we discussed before. The sin of lust *when persevered in* becomes the sin of pride. So, the Tribe of Seth had persevered in their lust till it

became no longer merely lust, but an arrogant and outrageous pride -- a turning of their backs on God.

And that resulted in a race of men who had the great materials of the Children of Seth, along with the infections of the sins of pride that both the debauched Sethites and innately vengeful Cainites all contributed to the pot -- along with the beastliness of the intelligent beasts. No wonder those Nephilim became the heroes of old, the men of renown. They would have had the bravery and daring and stoutheartedness of a Child of Seth, along with the savagery and rapaciousness of a Child of Cain, and of beasts.

Like in physics, sin always produces an equal and opposite reaction (oftentimes more than equal reaction) from God. Sin always equals God's wrath.

So, first, God limited human lifespans, even among the Children of Seth.

Then, God found *one* good man among the Tribe of Seth, like Lot after him, who had not been corrupted by the wickedness of his times.

For, naturally, in corrupting the (relatively) virtuous seed of the Children of Seth, Scripture would report, "When the LORD saw how great the wickedness of human beings was on earth, and how every desire that their heart conceived was always nothing but evil, the LORD regretted making human beings on the earth, and his heart was grieved."

The Story of the Nephilim is not a throwaway passage -- it is the *essential* link between Genesis 1, 2, 3, 4, and 5 and the Great Deluge that Noah survived in the Ark in Genesis 7, 8, and 9. The apostasy of the Children of Seth in fornicating with the Children of Cain and the intelligent beasts is what provoked God's Wrath and caused God to send the Great Deluge to destroy the corrupted human civilization.

We can also more deeply understand God's Rage when we understand a Scriptural double entendre. The sons of God are, indeed, also angels....of course, they are fallen angels, just as the Sethite fornicators are fallen men.

When the Sethites yielded to the temptations of their pure lust, they necessarily yielded themselves to the Ruler of this World, Satan, and all his demons. *They became allies with demons, possessed by demons.*

Just as Satan uses the fallen angels, the demons, as mere vehicles, so too Satan uses damned souls and sinners as vehicles. So, truly, these deranged, sinful

Sethites were inhabited by demons, such that the demons truly did cavort with those Cainite and beastly women.

Accordingly, we can reflect on the nature of demonic possession. All sin is connected to all other sin, because the Lord of Sin, Satan, is connected to all the other vehicles of sin, the demons and arch-demons; the whole apparatus of Hell is a panoply of vehicles driven by Satan.

So, when one gives into Lust, one gives oneself over to the demon Asmodeus. But, and because of that, when one submits to Asmodeus, and proceeds to sin in deeper and deeper ways, that gives Satan the opportunity to involve the sinner in Abaddon, which is the ruinous pit, which is anger, and its fruit: murder.

Those who give themselves over to wanton lust eventually, necessarily, abandon themselves to Abaddon. Having abandoned themselves to Abaddon, the Sethites and their children, the Nephilim, themselves became Satan's vehicles for every kind of wickedness: they became a matrix of lawlessness, in which every principle of Natural Law was greedily and haughtily violated. They became Children of the Spirit who were unable and unwilling to live according to the Holy Spirit: they became the human equivalent of demons.

The importance of preserving the purity of the Children of Seth might also explain why the Bible is so obsessed with genealogies.

God had created Adam and Eve to live in perfect righteousness and felicity, enjoying every pleasure of food, drink, and sex, as suited their material-enfleshed nature, and to procreate in that Primordial Creation, begetting a race of virtuous Children, who would themselves be perfectly righteous and felicitous, loving God and loving each other.

Instead, God looked at the Creation, shattered into pieces, and saw a human race totally idolatrous, totally lustful, totally greedy, totally murderous, and totally hateful.

Of course He would regret His Creation.

But, of course, God, from all eternity, had a Plan.

According to that Plan, at least one good man among the Children of Seth would remain among the legions of wicked men and women, who could rebuild

after the filth of the Children of Satan had been washed away -- similar to Lot in relation to Sodom.

Recall Scripture (Genesis 6:11-13):

But the earth was corrupt in the view of God and full of lawlessness.

When God saw how corrupt the earth had become, since all mortals had corrupted their ways on earth, God said to Noah: I see that the end of all mortals has come, for the earth is full of lawlessness because of them. **So I am going to destroy them with the earth.**

The earth was corrupt *in the view of God*. All of the lawless Children of Lust thought that the earth was just great -- a greedy, lustful, violent utopia. But *to God*, it was evil, and God hates evil, since He is totally good, and He will act to destroy evil.

Now, in brief, the earth has become a new Empire of Lust. It is a new Empire of the Nephilim, an Empire of the Children of Satan. We live under the rule of an Empire of Satan. Greed, lust, violence -- these are the three things most beloved by the Empire of this World.

So, God shall destroy it.

Either humanity will repent in sackcloth and ashes, or God, in Great Wrath, will send down a FURY the likes of which the world has never seen.

And don't let the Covenant with Noah in Genesis 9:8-17 fool you, or give you false comfort. God covenanted with Noah that the *waters* will not rise up in a flood to devastate the earth.

God never promised to forsake His royal prerogative to visit His Divine Wrath upon a wicked world.

So, People of Earth, if the world does not repent of its wickedness, forsaking its greed, lust, and violence, God will, as revealed by Our Lady of Fatima to the Portuguese children in 1917, DEVASTATE THE EARTH, KILLING ALL THE CHILDREN OF SATAN.

God can easily do this without violating His Covenant with Noah. So, as the First Deluge was by water, this Second Great Deluge shall be by fire.

Supernatural fire? Probably. A massive asteroid? A definite possibility. Probably it will be a combination of “natural” disasters, wars, and genuine, inarguably supernatural Acts of God.

But, in any event, if the world persists in its wickedness, human civilization will be purified by a Great Deluge of Fire.

Of course, I doubt you wicked people of Earth will heed this Warning, but, rather, will happily and merrily race off into oblivion.

For lust is personified by Secular Modernity, with its fornications and sexualization of everything, and abortions. It is the religion of sex.

Violence is personified by Islam, the religion of murder.

Greed is personified by Capitalism, the religion of money.

This is God’s ultimatum: Abandon your religions of sex, murder, and money, embracing only the religion of the God who is Love, and I will relent, and I will spare you from the Great Deluge of Fire.

Fail to relent, and I shall send the Anti-Christ into your midst, and he will produce a Horror the likes of which the world has never seen.

Either way, I, God, shall prevail.

Even should your true savior, the Anti-Christ, come among you, and whip up your religions of sex, murder, and money into a GREAT EMPIRE OF WICKEDNESS, *he will BE DESTROYED, ALONG WITH ALL THOSE WHO SERVE HIM!*

And, after the Anti-Christ and the Children of Satan are destroyed, a new Age of Peace - True and Lasting and Genuine Peace - will reign.

It will be that part of the Millennium known as the Kingdom of the Holy Spirit, in which the Church will be administered by the Society of the Just, and in which human civilization itself will be consecrated to the Immaculate Heart of Mary.

This human civilization will endure for ages and ages to come, in peace, faith, hope, and love.

It will endure until the very end, the end of time, when everyone will, again, have to either CHOOSE LIFE, which is trust in God.....or choose death, which is a failure to trust God.

I PUT BEFORE YOU DEATH AND LIFE

CHOOSE LIFE

<https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=5inA7tSTzes>

A tutorial for the Children of God, for the Age of Peace, among the stars:

Starman

The Human Race

<https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=WyNFY1R-d8w>

A Note on Polytheism

To all those who doubt the truth of the account I put forward, consider this: *Precisely*, why is it that, prior to the advent of Israel, *all* human beings, and *all* human civilizations, practiced polytheism? Polytheism is the preferred worship of Satan: polytheism is, ultimately, Satanic worship.

Polytheism is a worship that worships the spiritual anarchy, the spiritual multiplicity, that is so dear to Satan's heart. For Satan desired equality with God, inherently claiming that he too was a God.

The Secular Modern gospel states that we human beings arose from the beasts; are, inherently, nothing but beasts; and that all our cultural and religious practices are nothing but the constructions of intelligent beasts.

But, if that is true, then why, prior to the advent of Israel, weren't there monotheistic religions and civilizations? Indeed, for millions of years back in *this* world's history, we *only* find human beings who are polytheistic.

To be a Secular Modernist, you need to believe that Israel was some kind of genetic mutation, culturally, that *emerged* from polytheism.

Everything is always *emerging* with Secular Modernists. Nothing ever just *is*. Everything is Becoming, nothing is Being.

But, why didn't that emergence happen sooner, or elsewhere? Why did it *only* happen in *one* place in this world in *one* time?

And, indeed, why did that *one* emergence of monotheism come coupled with the utter mysteries that Israelite monotheism "emerged" with.

For, Israelite monotheism "emerged" with (1) a God who said "I AM WHO AM", which is a bit of a bizarre self-identification for the 2nd Millennium B.C., (2) a highly developed sense of morality and ethical obligation, and (3) a highly developed sense of a God who was extremely intimate with His people.

If monotheism is simply an emergent form of polytheism, why weren't there other monotheisms around the world? And, what is this "strange" connection between monotheism and morality and the true humanity of intimacy?

If the Secular Modernists are right, why didn't different kinds of monotheisms develop around the world, *along* with polytheisms? And why wouldn't some of those monotheisms have fickle Gods, who sometimes did right

and sometimes did wrong, just like polytheistic Gods? If Israelite monotheism is a “natural” “emergence” from *this* world, why weren’t there monotheisms dotted all over the planet along with competing polytheisms? And why weren’t those monotheisms simpler than Israelite monotheism?

Why not a monotheism with *just* the Sun God, and in which the Sun God was morally ambiguous, and in which the Sun God had no kind of desire for intimacy with human beings, in the way that the God of Israel had.

If monotheism simply “emerged” from polytheism *that* is precisely the kind of One God that we would expect. A One God that was purely of *this* world, that was merciless and ruthless like those in *this* world, that was murderous like those in *this* world, that would be obsessed with the conquest of this world, just like the Children of *this* world.

It is almost as if the account provided in the Bible is true. It is almost as if this God of Israel really is different from all the other “gods” worshipped by all the other peoples and civilizations of this world.

And most damning to the Secular Modern account: the complete association of polytheism with depravity and brutality, and the unique connection of Israelite monotheism with purity and mercy.

Now, many will attack the Old Testament for its supposed brutality. But, if you are beset on all sides by beasts, and one does not expect eternal life to result from death, how else should you react but with lethal force?

But, does the God of Israel ever command Israel to go out and conquer the world by force? To sacrifice human beings like the Aztecs or the Babylonians or the Greeks? *Within* the Community of Israel, does God ever permit or condone anything but love and purity and decency? Entirely to the contrary, the God of Israel is fanatical about commanding His beloved people to be welcoming to strangers and aliens living in their midst, so long as they are peaceful and abide by the civil order of Israel.

What polytheistic religion acts that way? And can Secular Modernity please explain why no other similarly moral monotheisms arose around the world.....but *only* this one?

Explain this, Secular Modernity

(https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Child_sacrifice#South_Africa):

South Africa^[edit]

The murder of children for body parts with which to make muti, for purposes of witchcraft, still occurs in South Africa. Muti murders occur throughout South Africa, and especially in rural areas. Traditional healers or witch doctors often grind up body parts and combine them with roots, herbs, seawater, animal parts and other ingredients to prepare potions and spells for their clients.^[32]

Uganda^[edit]

Main article: [Child sacrifice in Uganda](#)

In the early 21st century Uganda has experienced a revival of child sacrifice. In spite of government attempts to downplay the issue, an investigation by the [BBC](#) into human sacrifice in [Uganda](#) found that ritual killings of children are more common than Ugandan authorities admit.^[33] There are many indicators that politicians and politically connected wealthy businessmen are involved in sacrificing children in practice of traditional religion, which has become a commercial enterprise.^{[34][35]}

Young children are often the victim because they are relatively easy to abduct. The desire for instant wealth on the part of the client and greed on the part of the witchdoctor has created a ready market for children to be bought and sold at a price. Children have become a commodity of exchange and child sacrifice is more than a religious or cultural issue, it has become a commercial business.^[4]⁴⁷

⁴⁷ More on child sacrifice in Uganda from *USA Today*, that bigoted and Eurocentric bastion of Christian theocracy and orthodoxy: <https://www.usatoday.com/story/news/world/2017/05/01/uganda-human-children-sacrifice/100741148/>

THAT is precisely how pre-Israelite polytheisms acted, and that is precisely what the God of Israel designed to put a stop to.

If the Anti-Christ comes upon the world, because the world fails to repent, the Final War of this world will be over this:

Who is the Son of Man?

Is the Son of Man the Son of Adam?

Or, is the Son of Man the Son of God?

*(Psst....the correct answer is: **Son of God**)*

The Great Flood & Noah's Ark

We might also wonder about the Great Flood....didn't the Bible say that it destroyed the whole world and all life on earth?

Well, maybe that was a bit of a stretch.

But, think about it.

If, to God, the whole world is really only the Children of Adam, and not the Children of Cain, and not the intelligent beasts, then, if the whole Tribe of Seth, which sundered themselves by becoming the Nephilim and associated races, was destroyed, to *God* that would count as the whole world.

Being a mixture of the Children of God and the Children of Satan and the beasts, this race of people would be especially hateful to God.

And, we learn that:

Excavations in Iraq have revealed evidence of localized flooding at Shuruppak (modern Tell Fara, Iraq) and various other Sumerian cities. A layer of riverine sediments, radiocarbon dated to about 2900 BC, interrupts the continuity of settlement, extending as far north as the city of Kish, which took over hegemony after the flood. Polychrome pottery from the Jemdet Nasr period (3000–2900 BC) was discovered immediately below the Shuruppak flood stratum. Other sites, such as Ur, Kish, Uruk, Lagash, and Ninevah, all present evidence of flooding. However, this evidence comes from different time periods.[12] Geologically, the Shuruppak flood coincides with the 5.9 kiloyear event at the end of the Older Peron. It would seem to have been a localised event caused through the damming of the Kurun through the spread of dunes, flooding into the Tigris, and simultaneous heavy rainfall in the Nineveh region, spilling across into the Euphrates. In Israel, there is no such evidence of a widespread flood.[13] Given the similarities in the Mesopotamian flood story and the Biblical account, it would seem that they have a common origin in the memories of the Shuruppak account.[14]⁴⁸

⁴⁸ https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Flood_myth#Claims_of_historicity

Remember, God doesn't care about *this* world as such, God only cares about what is *His* in this world, and transforming this world - in a Cosmic process of Tikkun Olam - so that *this* world can once again be totally *His* world.

Having wiped away this abomination of a trans-Sethite-Cainite-beast race, filled with both blessings and curses (which made the power of the curses, and, hence, the power of Satan, maximally strong), God could continue with His project of creating the Children of Adam through Seth, and now through the righteous Sethite Noah, into His Son, Israel.

We must also note that being a son of God is not simply a matter of the flesh. It is *not* primarily a matter of the flesh.

Since we live after the end of the world, in the Age of Christ, people are not simply Sethites (more precisely Noahites, since he and his family were the last surviving Sethites) or Cainites (perhaps more precisely Canaanites, or non-Noahites).

Christ Jesus, through His Crucifixion and Resurrection, has opened the Way to Salvation to ALL.

Through faith in Christ Jesus, through belief in Him as Savior and Lord, and through perseverance in the righteousness of good works, one can enter into the life of the Sacraments, and thus be created a new spirit, and a new flesh -- **a whole new soul** -- *in Christ*.

So, regardless of whether one is a Cainite (a Gentile), or even a being evolved from this world, or even a Noahite (Sethite), even a son of Israel, even a Jew --- when one is **baptized** in Christ, one is born again, born anew, born ***in the Spirit***, and thus becomes a new creation.

The baptized Christian **becomes a new creation, as new a creation as Adam before the Fall in the Garden of Eden.**

And, so baptized, the Christian becomes a son of God, equal to Adam.

The Christian, through baptism, becomes a son of God, free from taint of original sin.

Regardless of what that person had been *before*, according to the Flesh, *after* Baptism that person becomes a new soul in Christ, according to the Spirit.

So, regardless of whether one had been born a Child of Satan, or even evolved from this world, **through baptism** one is born from above, born of the Spirit, and thus becomes, directly, a son of God, a Child of God.

The Christian **becomes adopted directly into the family of God, becoming an adopted son of God, as Christ Jesus, the Second Person of the Trinity, is the Eternally Begotten Son of God.**

That is why the Gospel, and Baptism into Christ, is **the** means for those Children of Satan, those Children of the World, those who **are not** Noahites, to become recreated, born anew, born from above, born in the Spirit, as Children of God.

And, as Christ is the son of David, the son of Israel, the son of Abraham, the son of Noah, the son of Seth, the son of Adam, and the son of God, so too all those *in Christ* become adopted into the family of Christ, and themselves truly become sons of David, sons of Israel, sons of Abraham, sons of Noah, and sons of God.

The Christian gains all: all according to the Spirit, and all according to the flesh -- his or her spirit **and** flesh become recreated according to the Spirit such that he or she is a Child of God.

That is why the ancient world was so cruel, ugly, murderous, and brutal. *That* is why only Israel had *any* form of righteousness, and was constantly beset by evil, idolatrous, murderous peoples, slathering in their violence and hatred, immolating their children to their demonic gods.

And that is why, in the Age of Christ, with the spread of the Gospel and the procreation of the Children of God across the world, the world became far more pacific, pious, virtuous, and noble, seeking a world reborn in love.

A WARNING

A tutorial for the Children of God, for the Age of Peace, among the stars:

Starman

The Human Race

<https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=WyNFY1R-d8w>

Clearly, those who *are* Noahites according to the flesh are sons of God according to the Flesh.

But if the Gospel is truly preached to a Noahite, and there is a **genuine call within that person's soul to accept Christ in Baptism**, and that person **rejects the Call of Christ**, then, though they had been Children of God in the flesh, they become Children of Satan in the spirit, and thus forfeit the Salvation of God in and through Christ.

A Note on Joshua 10 & the Sun

We can briefly consider the Biblical account of Joshua stopping the Sun in the sky, which sometimes acts as a stumbling block in accepting Biblical inerrancy. Since a Neo-Berkeleyan metaphysics is the correct metaphysics, as Newtonian Mechanics and General Relativity and Quantum Mechanics are the *correct* physics, God, as the source of all perception, and thus, necessarily, the source of all the perceptions of all spirits, can make spirits see whatever He wants them to see.

So, when the Israelites battled the Amorites (Joshua 10), God did not need to “objectively” “stop” the Earth in its rotation or make the Sun do some fancy footwork.

There is no objective reality aside from the perceptions of the Will of the Spirit.

The whole framework of the physics of this Cosmos, this sundered, fallen, material reality, is but a kind of suspension between the True Reality, which is in and through the Spirit of God, and Hell, which is the Absence and Abscess of Reality, the Nothingness which is the Abode of the Bottomless Pit, the infernal prison and torture chamber prepared for the Devil and his fallen angels.

So, the Cosmos is fundamentally riven, torn between Order and Chaos, and the Cosmos we experience in this fleeting mortal life, this brief snap of the fingers, is *in suspension* between the Order of God and the chaos of Satan.

Any order that *does* still exist for us, in this sundered material reality, is but an emanation from the Mind of God.

So, all the mathematics that underlie the great whorl of matter that we call the Cosmos is nothing more than the emanation of a whiff of God’s Essence, the SPIRIT, holding up and conserving and preserving us in the Great Maelstrom of Satan’s malice and wickedness, the dark, poisoned fruit of Sin -- the Collective Sin of Man, in which all of us are embroiled.

Thus, since perception does *not* proceed from matter’s perception of other matter (how would such a thing even be possible? Is not such a thing rather entirely absurd?), but rather *all* perception *entirely* proceeds from the Spirit of God, filling the spirits of all as the Spirit sees fit, in His Total Freedom, which is the Essence of Spirit, there is *no* necessity for the perception of a whole day of sunlight to be shared by *anyone* other than the

combatants. There is utterly *no* need for the Sun to have stopped in the Western Hemisphere or East Asia or anywhere else.

Nor would such a perception of a whole day of sunlight, as recorded in Joshua 10, be merely a “mirage” or an “illusion”. Satan deals in illusions. God only deals in realities.

Since the whole framework of matter whirling in motion according to fixed natural “laws” is nothing more than a perception of the Spirit, the *different* perception that the Israelites and the Amorites perceived on that fateful day of battle is no more a mirage than your sense of reading this sentence right now...or taking a breath of air, or stretching your legs, or your perception of the Sun today or the Moon tonight.

Just because *your* perception may be *more consistent* with someone else’s perception does not make your perception “more real” and someone else’s perception “less real”.

To argue that your perception is more real because it is more consistent with our mind’s interpretation of the phenomena of nature is nothing more than a narrow materialist chauvinism, which blinds rather than illuminates.

Our inability to understand the Bible is rooted firmly in our materialism, when the truth of Reality is spiritualism.

It is not that the Bible does not “make sense”, it is we human beings who do not *have sense* -- that is, have unfiltered and unadulterated access to the perceptions of the Spirit.

A Note on the Animals in the Ark

Many mock the apparent ridiculousness of *all the different kinds of animals in the world* being loaded onto **one ark**, two by two, and then *everything* else on earth dying.

But *listen* to the Scripture: God says, “Seven days from now I will bring rain down on the earth for forty days and forty nights, and so I will wipe out from the surface of the earth every moving creature that I have made” (Genesis 7:4).

Listen again: every moving creature that **I** have made. (The I being God).

If this world is *not* the world created by God, but that world put through a meat grinder, so to speak, seen through a funhouse mirror, then not all creatures are God’s creations. They are evolutions from an evil material universe that is the fractured residue of God’s creation.

Now, reality being primarily perceptual, and this planet, some odd six thousand years ago, being the best *fit* to be the material substrate for Adam and Eve, we can figure that many animals that *were* created by God did indeed end up, in some form, in the vicinity of where Adam and Eve landed: the Near East.

So, *those* creatures were wiped out along with the trans-Sethite-Cainite Nephilim and all their ilk.

God didn’t create the dinosaurs.

Not in the Garden of Eden

<https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=JDB49WvRbKM>

A T-Rex is a Satanic creature: a devourer of flesh.

This isn’t going to be one of God’s creatures either

<https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=kopi8gT9KE>

Also NOT in the Garden of Eden

If scientific evidence existed to support the idea of a truly *global* flood that really killed every last living thing, every last bug, on the earth -- then perhaps I would accede to that interpretation.

But there is no such evidence of such a flood. *But* there is evidence of a major regional flood in the Near East circa 2900 B.C.

The Young Earth creationist belief system is not scientifically supported, and it is not necessary.

My proposed understanding is, I believe, the correct understanding: that is, it's real, and, second, it squares the Biblical text with all the data derived from empirical science.

Using my understanding, we can also dispense with all this nonsense about "what about the micro-organisms"? Were they loaded onto the ark?

What about micro-organisms?

There were *no* micro-organisms in the Primordial Paradise that God actually did create, and that was created according to His Will.

Those microorganisms were *not* on God's agenda when he told Noah to stock the ark.

And they will not exist in the New Creation.

Now, *this* world requires microorganisms to operate -- precisely because it is a **Satanic** world.

But the essence of reality is not material, it is perceptual.

God does not require microorganisms to operate His Material Reality, His Material Creation -- he did, can, and will operate it precisely and totally through His Spirit.

This worldview actually squares a literal reading of the Biblical text with the conclusions of modern natural science's empirical investigations.

Or, you can go back to cavemen riding around on dinosaurs.

Let's recap, shall we?

Revelation 13 -- New King James Version (NKJV)

The Beast from the Sea

13 Then I stood on the sand of the sea. And I saw a beast rising up out of the sea, having seven heads and ten horns, and on his horns ten crowns, and on his heads a blasphemous name. **2** Now the beast which I saw was like a leopard, his feet were like *the feet of* a bear, and his mouth like the mouth of a lion. The dragon gave him his power, his throne, and great authority. **3** And I saw one of his heads as if it had been mortally wounded, and his deadly wound was healed. And all the world marveled and followed the beast. **4** So they worshiped the dragon who gave authority to the beast; and they worshiped the beast, saying, "Who *is* like the beast? Who is able to make war with him?"

5 And he was given a mouth speaking great things and blasphemies, and he was given authority to continue for forty-two months. **6** Then he opened his mouth in blasphemy against God, to blaspheme His name, His tabernacle, and those who dwell in heaven. **7** It was granted to him to make war with the saints and to overcome them. And authority was given him over every tribe, tongue, and nation. **8** All who dwell on the earth will worship him, whose names have not been written in the Book of Life of the Lamb slain from the foundation of the world.

9 If anyone has an ear, let him hear. **10** He who leads into captivity shall go into captivity; he who kills with the sword must be killed with the sword. Here is the patience and the faith of the saints.

The Beast from the Earth

11 Then I saw another beast coming up out of the earth, and he had two horns like a lamb and spoke like a dragon. **12** And he exercises all the authority of the first beast in his presence, and causes the earth and those who dwell in it to worship the first beast, whose deadly wound was healed. **13** He performs great signs, so that he even makes fire come down from heaven on the earth in the sight of men. **14** And he deceives those[e] who dwell on the earth by those signs which he was granted to do in the sight of the beast, telling those who dwell on the earth to make an image to the beast who was wounded by the sword and lived. **15** He was granted

power to give breath to the image of the beast, that the image of the beast should both speak and cause as many as would not worship the image of the beast to be killed. **16** He causes all, both small and great, rich and poor, free and slave, to receive a mark on their right hand or on their foreheads, **17** and that no one may buy or sell except one who has the mark or the name of the beast, or the number of his name.

18 Here is wisdom. Let him who has understanding calculate the number of the beast, for it is the number of a man: His number is 666.

Okay - Both beasts are tools of Satan. They will appear to be Children of God, but will, in fact, be beasts, the tools of Satan.

The First Beast, the Beast from the Sea, will be the **Anti-Christ**. The Anti-Christ will be an Anti-Great King (Anti-Cyrus, the Persian Leopard), an Anti-Priest (Anti-Magus, the Median Bear), and an Anti-Prophet (Anti-Elijah, a Prophet of Ba'al, the Babylonian Lion). The blasphemous name on the Anti-Christ's head will be "Greater than Christ" - the Superior Christ, a Superior Christ to Christ Jesus. *That* is precisely what Satan always wanted: Satan always wanted to be a Superior God to the True God, so Satan's Christ will pose as a *Superior* Christ to the True Christ.

The Dragon, which is the spirit Satan himself, will, in parody of God the Father giving the Kingdom of God to His Son, Christ Jesus, give the Kingdom of this World, of which Satan is the Ruler, to the Anti-Christ, Satan's son.

Probably, the Anti-Christ will be assassinated. The Anti-Christ will then *appear* to be resurrected. The Anti-Christ will use this fact of his reanimation to deceive the Children of Satan throughout the world that *he* is indeed this Superior Christ, the heir to Christ's Power. (And indeed, the whole War in Heaven is fought over *who* is heir to God's Power: the created Satan *outside of God* or the Uncreated Son *within God, that is God?* Is God God, or is not-God God? Is Reality a Spiritual Monarchy under which *only* God is God (hint: it is), or a spiritual anarchy in which Satan can also be God?)

The Children of Satan will flock to the reanimated Anti-Christ, believing this to be a genuine Resurrection by God the Father, proving that the Anti-Christ is God the Son. Of course, it will not be a *genuine*

Resurrection - for Satan, that eternally dead spirit, *cannot* raise *anything* to life. *But*, Satan can parody life, and thus will himself infest the dead corpse of the Anti-Christ, in the ultimate Demonic Possession. The dead soul of the Anti-Christ will be in Hell, while the dead flesh of the Anti-Christ walks around on earth, inhabited and possessed by Satan. This will simply ratify the situation that existed before the Anti-Christ's death.

The Children of Satan will worship the Anti-Christ as the Son of God, and thus, as God.

Then, Satan, using the disguise of the Anti-Christ's flesh, will promulgate the Satanic religion: the enfleshed Satan will say, "*This* world is the true world. There is no such thing as a sundered material world. *This* world was created perfect. Thus, the God of *this* world is the true God. And the God from *without* this world is Satan."

Satan, in the flesh of the Anti-Christ, will thus state what his position has been all along: "I, Satan, am God, and that one, God, is Satan." For God accuses Satan, rightly, of being evil, while Satan, the accuser, accuses God, wrongly, of being evil."

Thus, Satan in the flesh will say, "*This* world must be defended from the invader. For the God of this world is God, and the God of the invaders is Satan." Which will be a precise Satanic reversal of the Truth.

As such, the enfleshed Satan, masquerading as the Anti-Christ (whose soul will be in Hell at this point), will declare war on all those who serve this Invader God: the True Christians.

The enfleshed Satan will say that *this* world must be defended at all costs, using every form of violence and murder possible.

A revived Islam will be at the service of this enfleshed Satan, for Islam, the product of Satan in the 7th Century, was designed precisely to dupe the human race into believing that *this* world was *already* under the Kingdom of God -- which allows Satan, the ruler of this world, to continue to be the God of this World, to continue to clutch what he stole from Adam in the Garden of Eden.

That time, the Anti-Christ will certainly win, conquering the Church and every Christian nation, decimating the saints.

That is why Scripture says in Revelation 13:9-10 -

If anyone has an ear, let him hear. He who leads into captivity shall go into captivity; he who kills with the sword must be killed with the sword. Here is the patience and the faith of the saints.

Just as Jesus says in the Gospels, quoting Isaiah:

You shall indeed hear but not understand,
you shall indeed look, but never see.
Gross is the heart of this people,
they will hardly hear with their ears,
they have closed their eyes,
lest they see with their eyes
and hear with their ears
and understand with their heart and be
converted,
and I heal them.

(Matthew 13:14-15)

Anyone who has an ear means the Children of God. The Child of God will *hear* the truth of the True Gospel, and he will *not* follow the Beast, the enfleshed Satan, the reanimated, “resurrected” Anti-Christ.

But those who can never hear, and never see, the Children of Satan, will ignore all the Scriptures and all the teachings of the Church and this Warning, and they will worship the First Beast, running headlong into the eternal oblivion of everlasting death, the unending torment of Hell.

The one who leads others into captivity, that is, the lieutenants of the enfleshed Satan’s regime who promote the worship of the World Ruler, will go into captivity, meaning they will go into Satan’s menagerie, his zoo, in Hell, for eternal torment. Those who capture souls for Hell will themselves be captured in Hell forever.

Those who kill with the sword, those who murder the True Christians, the saints, will be killed with the sword forever in Hell. Those who murder for Hell will themselves be murdered in Hell forever.

The saints, the True Christians, awaiting the as yet invisible Christ, the True Messiah, above whom there is no one higher, will have to be patient and have faith, patiently and faithfully being slaughtered as they await the Return of the True Christ, which will be miraculous and sudden, coming from *without* the world.

The Second Beast, the False Prophet, the Beast from the Earth, will be a fake Jesus Christ. He will be a false prophet precisely because he will

speak the falsehoods of the Islamic eschatology, which claim that Jesus was merely a prophet, a creature, created by God, and that He was not the Son of God, nor was He crucified to death, nor was He resurrected, nor did His Crucifixion and Resurrection defeat Satan and destroy Sin and Death.

Note, again, that this Second Beast comes from the Earth. That may mean that the False Prophet will appear to rise from the dead, to come out of what will appear to be his tomb -- showing that Jesus was really dead, but now, finally, has come to life again. Note, again, that this Second Beast has two horns like a Lamb, but will speak like a Dragon. The false Christ will *appear* to be Jesus Christ, but he will, in fact, simply be Lucifer in disguise. His harsh words and murderous actions against True Christians will confirm his Dragon (Satanic) nature.

The False Prophet, the fake Christ Jesus, will, in accordance with Islamic eschatology, state all these things, and Lucifer in the disguise of Christ Jesus will make all the Children of Satan in the world worship the First Beast, the enfleshed Satan.

The False Prophet, the False Christ, will perform great miracles, and even call down fire from Heaven to consume Christians, in parody of how Elijah called fire down from Heaven to consume the idolatrous servants of Ba'al.

The Children of Satan will be satisfied with these wonders. They will worship the First Beast because of it.

Then the False Christ will create images of the First Beast. These may be sophisticated robots; they may be creatures created by Satanic power from the earth made to resemble the Anti-Christ. They will be enforcers -- anyone who does not worship these living statues will be executed. Happy are those who will not worship these living statues, for they shall win eternal life.

The False Christ will also require a Mark of the Beast, probably a tattoo with some kind of advanced technology, that will be necessary to participate in the world economy. (Even today, the technology exists to implant microchips in human flesh through tattoos.) Those who do not accept it will suffer and starve and die of thirst. Happy are those who die in that way, for they shall reign with Christ.

We should also note that the application of the gematria number 666 to a particular person is variable, depending on how the conditional and contingent prophecies of Revelation are fulfilled.

All those who follow the murderous and blasphemous False Christ and worship the reanimated Anti-Christ will be damned. In particular, accepting the Mark of the Anti-Christ, maybe called the Sign of the Cross, maybe called something else, will *surely* mean damnation.

We can also specify why the First Beast, the Anti-Christ, will come out of the sea. Whatever the specifics of the fulfillment of this prophecy, the sea is the archetypal enemy of God. As Genesis 1:1-2 states, "In the beginning, when God created the heavens and the earth, the earth was a formless wasteland, and darkness covered the abyss, while a mighty wind swept over the waters."

"In the beginning" specifies that time *before* any creation - *either* that of the Spiritual Creation *or* the Material Creation. Then, God creates the heavens - the angels, *who are the Spiritual Creation*.

The earth was a formless wasteland because matter without form is **nothing**. Nothing, naturally, could best be described to a pre-philosophical society as a wasteland. Matter without form is simply a potential - a possibility that exists present to the Mind of God, present to the Spirit of God.

The Spirit of God is the Form of Forms, that which IS and *from which* all that is *outside* of God (and, hence, created *by* God), proceeds, in both its creation and its conservation.

A good metaphor for this shapelessness, this formlessness, is water. While real water has a chemical structure, the *metaphor* of water represents structureless-ness - or formlessness. Water has no inherent *shape*, and thus Scripture does not mean literal water, but the shapelessness of matter without form. For matter is merely a substrate that can *receive* form. Matter is a mere potential, which, through the efficiency of form, can *become* actuality - which is substance.

Whereas the Spiritual Creation -- which is constituted by the spirits, the angels -- is *pure* form, the Material Creation is form-in-matter. Since matter, in and by and of and through itself, is, *essentially*, nothingness, for form (which is reality) to *totally penetrate* nothingness, is for God to be *present* to that which is most unlike God.

And it is *precisely* the genius of God, which is God's Seraphic Irony, that those spirits *most far removed from God* should become **identified** with God. It is a testament to the truth that God is God, which is the foundational Constitution of Reality, that God can, through being God, raise up the **least** of the spirits to become **identified** with the Son of God,

and thus **incorporated**, *through the Incarnation, Crucifixion, and Resurrection of the Son as Christ Jesus, at last, the RISEN CHRIST JESUS, INTO* the Trinity, into the multi-dimensional Inner Life of God.

Human beings in Christ - Christians - become identified with the Son, and as such, become identified with the Father *in the same way that* the Son is identified with the Father.

However, while Christians share in the *gift* of the Divinity of the Father, through the Son, there is still a fundamental **distinction** between the Father and the Sons of God. It is a distinction of RANK. Christians, though they will reign with God, will recognize that they *are not God*. They will totally share in the Plenitude of God, and be divinized, but they will not delude themselves into thinking that they have the same RANK as God. As the Father is the First Person of the Trinity, and the Son is the Second, so Christians, incorporated into the Second Person of the Trinity, are Second, while God is First.

Thus, the human race, that is in Christ, becomes God's second -- and not just a lieutenant, a creature *outside* God, but a son, *within* God. But, a true son (that is to say, a son who is a son *at all*) has **GRATITUDE** to the Father such that the son would never say to the Father: I am greater than you. The true son, no matter how much he shares of the Father's wealth, no matter how great he may become, ***always acknowledges the superiority of the Father, in gratitude.***

And, secondly, an adopted son never pretends that he is a natural son, for that is not the truth. Now, on earth, in our wicked world and wicked societies, adopted children are often treated worse, and given less love, than natural children.

But that is not at all the case in Heaven -- all are loved equally by God. What differs only is Rank, Glory....and Truth.

So, the adopted Children of God, the sons and daughters of God -- the sons of God -- do not **pretend** that they are the natural Son of God. For that would be delusional. It would be a falsehood. It would be a lie. And how could those who reign with God, who *are incorporated into God, pretend - lie - that they are natural when they are adopted?*

God will not love them less. God loves them equally. But, first, it is a simple fact - a Truth - *the* fundamental Truth. Second, how could the divinized Christian not recognize the superiority in rank of the Christ who made them adopted sons of God in the first place?

Now, the rank of Christ versus the rank of a Christian is **not** a matter of the ranking of things that are *different* from each other, as a King is greater than a peasant. It is the ranking of things *within* something that is a whole, that is a unity, that is a self. The Body of Christ, the Flesh of Christ, is a unity, so the rank we speak of in Christ is, metaphorically, akin to how the heart has a higher rank than the liver or kidney, and all these have a higher rank than the foot. All are equally *beloved* by God, whose Son the Church is -- and the difference in rank *actually serves* the purpose of the health and fulfillment of the Church, divinized as the Kingdom of God.

Satan *hates that! Hates it! Hates it! Hates it!* “NO! NO! NO! I AM GOD,” SATAN says, “Me! Me! Me! Me! Me! Me! NOT THE SON -- THERE IS NO SON! There is ONLY ONE GOD! Me! - Lucifer!

“All is MINE! I have no equal in anything! ALL belongs to me! All are my slaves! I share nothing in love, but only dispense rewards as to slaves or cattle or swine.

“The gift of God is not a gift to a Son, but a bowl of slop given to a slave, a bone thrown to a dog.

“And, I, Satan, because I possess all of God’s gifts, am necessarily the same as the Giver -- and thus I am God!”

It is the Mirror who reflects Reality deluded (self-deluded) into thinking that he, the *Mirror*, **is** Reality.

Lucifer becomes Satan and becomes Abaddon, the Eternal Death of Hell, by coveting the gift, his spirit and its spiritual power, rather than cherishing the Giver, whose Love caused Him to give the gift in the first place.

But the one gift that Satan did **not** receive was the Gift of the Spirit of God. Only the Son was the recipient of the Gift of the Spirit of God.

And, then, to really stick it to Satan, that Gift of the Spirit of God, which is the Spirit of Christ, is freely shared with the human race.

What Satan coveted so desperately -- that *last* gift, that Holy Grail of the spiritual gifts, the source of all of them - that which Satan attempted to

commit the murder of God for -- is freely shared with billions - maybe in the future trillions or a trillion trillion trillion of the human race -- an **EXPLOSION** of generosity.

So, while Lucifer-Satan, what had been that one Angel of Light, and now is exploded into a nothingness of chaos and dis-unified multiplicity (which is the essence of polytheism), ruined himself by trying to *steal* the gift of God, Christians are saved by *accepting* the free gift of God (grace), which is His Son, which is Himself.

We can also reflect that Islam is such a sham of monotheism *precisely* because it is the spirit of polytheism wearing the mask of monotheism.

And *that* is why Islam can never be questioned. *That* is why Islam has such a hateful, violent heart. *That is why Islam and so many Muslims are violent and hateful.*

Because, beneath the thin veneer of monotheism is a chaos of multiplicity, imitating its true Lord and Slave-Master, Satan, who, underneath his many masks, is nothingness.

Islam wears the mask of Monotheism, and has the soul of polytheism.

Islam, from Day One, has murdered in the name of God, and sown havoc, chaos, and destruction in the name of Monotheism....*precisely* because its true God is Satan and its Monotheism is an idolatry of the spirit of Satan.

The True God does not order the murder of polytheists. (God only ordered the destruction of the Canaanites at the dawn of Israel, to carve out a small land where true Monotheism could be practiced). The True God lets polytheists die in their polytheism, if they do not **choose** to turn to Monotheism through Christ. The True God does not murder people for their polytheism.

The True God ratifies their polytheism in Hell, and thus people condemn themselves to Hell.

God never murders anyone. God lets sinners murder themselves through their own sin, ratified in eternity as Hell.

The True God is a God of Freedom, of Free Will. God only offers a hand, giving you a **choice** to accept it, or slap it away. God **never** seeks to

convert by wrapping his hands around your throat. God lets human beings imitate Satan, if they wish. God tells human beings the Truth -- and after that, it is up to them.

Christianity flourishes, and becomes more itself, in peace and freedom, *precisely* because it is true.

And Islam, in its pure form without liberal influence or constraint, can only survive in war, tyranny, oppression, gang violence, outrages, and misery *precisely* because it is false.

Christianity can convert the whole world with arguments - logic and evidence - because it is true.

Islam can only convert the whole world using the terror and violence of pain and death, because it is false.

Now, Genesis states that “darkness covered the abyss”. The abyss is that which is furthest removed from God -- it is irrevocably cast out from God.

There is a subtle, but crucial, difference between the abyss and the water. The “water” is shapelessness. Shapelessness is that which is not present to God, because it lacks form, and God is the Form of Forms.

But being shapeless isn't being evil. Something that lacks God because God has never been proposed to it is not evil -- just lacking.

But he or she who rejects God, ***when God has been truly proposed to him or her is evil.***

Thus, Satan, who saw God as He is, *and rejected Him anyway*, is irrevocably, irredeemably evil.

So, we see at the Creation, this state of the Drama -- God had already created the Spiritual Creation - the Heavens. Satan and his demons had already fallen from that Spiritual Creation, and thus “darkness covered the abyss.” With Satan and his demons already in rebellion, God moves to create the Earth (the Material Reality) *from* the shapelessness of that which is not present to God.

Critically, the abyss is that which is not present to God *through its own choice*. The waters (which was the earth prior to the Act of Creation) is that which is not present to God *because God Himself has not acted yet*.

Thus, the abyss is irredeemable. It is the Tartarus spoken of by Peter, in 2 Peter 2:4-10:

For if God did not spare the angels when they sinned, but condemned them to the chains of Tartarus and handed them over to be kept for judgment; and if he did not spare the ancient world, even though he preserved Noah, a herald of righteousness, together with seven others, when he brought a flood upon the godless world; and if he condemned the cities of Sodom and Gomorrah [to destruction], reducing them to ashes, making them an example for the godless [people] of what is coming; and if he rescued Lot, a righteous man oppressed by the licentious conduct of unprincipled people (for day after day that righteous man living among them was tormented in his righteous soul at the lawless deeds that he saw and heard), then the Lord knows how to rescue the devout from trial and to keep the unrighteous under punishment for the day of judgment, and especially those who follow the flesh with its depraved desire and show contempt for lordship.

The nature of the shapelessness of the earth is that it is a water that can *either* be formed by the Reality from above, from God, or be deformed by the nothingness that is below, from the abyss, from Satan.

The earth can either be conformed to the Image of God or the image of Satan.

Of course, since God is God, the earth will, ultimately, even despite the Fall, and through the Fall, (through Christ's Crucifixion and His Triumph over Sin and Death), become totally conformed to God -- this will happen in the New Creation of the New Heavens and the New Earth.

Anything that has conformed *itself* to the abyss - Satan, all the demons, and all the damned human souls - will, justly, and because of that, *necessarily*, be thrown into the abyss -- that spiritual anarchy, that spiritual chaos where Might is the Law and the most powerful consume the less powerful - and where all are miserable and tormented beyond imagination. In that abyss, since angels are necessarily more powerful than human beings, since angelic spirits are more powerful than human spirits, the

fallen angels are the damned torturers of the damned souls. But both are tormented. The fallen angel must torture and the damned soul must be tortured. But both are tormented - the demon is tormented by the fact that he must - and desires - to torture, and the damned soul is tormented by being tortured.

The mighty wind is the Holy Spirit, the Spirit of God. It is the Presence of God making first contact with the shapelessness of matter, of the formless substrate.

Through the Son, the Second Person of the Trinity, the Christ, God, speaks form into the matter -- Christ impregnates the formlessness of matter, which is not present to God, with the Form of the Word of God, which is *in* God.

What God speaks through Christ is Light. Light is that which reveals the Truth. So, from the very first moment of Creation, Christ revealed the Truth to the earth, and thus created the earth.

Throughout Genesis 1, God separates like from unlike, and thus creates ever more *structure* in the formlessness of the material substrate, the formlessness - "the water".

Creation is the act of structuring that which is shapeless. It is informing that which is formless.

So, necessarily, the First Beast *rises* from the water, for Satan is rising from the abyss, up through the water, to arrive upon the earth in order to conquer it.

The Second Beast, the False Prophet, the False Christ Jesus, the impersonator of Christ Jesus, rises from the earth because he will be pretending to be Christ risen from the dead.

The False Christ will claim that he did not rise in the 1st Century, circa A.D. 33. The False Christ will claim that only now, (in our future), with the rise of the Superior Christ (the Anti-Christ), could Christ Jesus rise from the dead. The False Christ will claim that this "Superior Christ" is the fulfillment of Christ's life upon the earth, and thus now Christ Jesus can rise from the dead.

Don't believe it. ***The True Christ Jesus will not rise from the earth, but will descend from the Heavens in Glory as the Eternal Lord.***

And He will not claim to be just then risen, but He will be revealed as Ever-Living and Eternal.

REMEMBER: The fundamental sins are Lust, Pride, and Fear.

That is why Satan has created the religion of Lust (Secular Modernity), the religion of Pride (Capitalism), and the religion of Fear, (Islam).

If the West had remained true to its Christian truth, it would have remained Christendom, and been strong in the virtues of chastity and humility. Christendom, if it had been ruled by a more humble, Christ-like Church, would also have developed modern science and technology.

In the absence of secular atheism and clerical arrogance, we would have had a scientifically and technologically modern and also virtuous Christendom.

And *that* Christendom would have **crushed** Islam and converted the Muslims a long, long time ago.

Instead, because Christendom succumbed to the wiles of Satan, we have a debauched, crippled West, drunk on the sins of Lust and Pride, totally consumed by wickedness.

Our sins of Lust and Pride have not given us strength, they have made us weak.

And that weakness is now exploited, to horrible and catastrophic extents, by the Empire of Terror, Islam.

The great, sad, and pathetic exemplar of all this is Britain. Britain (or the “Islamic Colony formerly known as a Christian Empire”), is leading the way in bowing to this emergent and wicked Empire of Terror.

Consider this. The Quran is a text without structure. And it contains diametrically opposed statements.

The Quran will say things like, “God loves all people, and you should hug and kiss everybody.” Then it will say, “God hates anybody who is not like you, and you should kill and maim everybody who is not like you.”

The Quran will say, “God is a sweetheart who poops rainbows and kittens.” Then it will say, “God is a maniac and a serial killer who demands the death of all those who are not his slaves.”

Islam and Secularism *are meant* to work in tandem to achieve the purposes of Satan.

So, Secularism acts as a rot *within* Christendom, eating away at the foundations of Christian civilization until it is no longer Christian.

And Islam acts as a barbarian invasion force from *without* whatever relativist rot is left of Christendom.

When someone like me (a bad-bad, unenlightened, frowny-face, ignorant bigot who is a big-time party pooper) says, “Hey, you know.....all these Muslims murdering people....their religious text does in fact contain commands to murder people,” the Secularists, including the UK Home Office, say, “You are a bigot! You are bad-bad!”

And then I will say, “But I am just repeating what their own scripture says.”

And the UK Home Office and the Southern Poverty Law Center and Harvard and whatever other Secularist force will say, “Bad-bad!”

For those who even bother to attempt to construct an argument for *why* I am bad-bad, they will say something like, “All religions are equal.” Why? Because. For those who are slightly less lazy, they will point to the passages in the Quran that state, “God is a sweetheart who poops rainbows and kittens.” See? What kind of a bigot would speak against such a lovely religion?

But what about all those passages in the Quran that state that, “God is a maniac and a murderer?”

Silence. Then repeated invocations of “Bad-bad! Bigotry! Tolerance!”

Okay.

The Fate of the Land that Produced Shakespeare, Locke, Newton & Churchill and defeated Hitler

Idiocracy

<https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=BBvIweCIgwk>

If any Secularist critic does bother to actually make an argument rather than shout a slogan in rage, they will say, “But, like, the Bible says crazy shit too, you ‘tard.”

Okay.

First, let’s assume, for the sake of argument (and the assumption is specious (false)), that the Quran and the Bible are equally crazy, bat-shit nonsense.

Are modern-day Christians acting on said bat-shit nonsense? No.
Are Muslims? Many are.

If I told you that a stadium or arena had been bombed by a religious fanatic, would you have any doubt that it was done by a Muslim terrorist?

Secularism demands that anyone who adds 2+2 must be called a bigot and persecuted.

Second, I am, in fact, a Christian.

And *all* of what might be considered “bat-shit” -- all the violent verses in Scripture -- are contained in the Old Testament. The Bible has *structure*.

Structure matters.

And what is the implication of that structure? Well, just look at the *context* of those verses. In every case, God commands violence *ONLY* to preserve the integrity of the national existence of the people of Israel. Period. Full stop.

Now, that integrity does include the moral and spiritual integrity of the people of Israel. But *NEVER* does God command Israel to invade other nations, much less the world, and forcibly convert them to the worship of YHWH.

(Of course, the integrity of the national existence of Israel required the conquest of a homeland. So, yes, of course, the Israelites conquered the nations (tribes, peoples) that lived in what was designated to be the homeland of Israel. We should note that that homeland was quite modest in size compared to the regional empires of other contemporary nations. But, after that conquest, God *never* commanded Israel to conquer the world and establish a World Empire for YHWH. The Old Testament does not contain a single verse that calls for the forcible conquest and conversion of Egypt or Ethiopia or Assyria or Babylon, much less the entire earth.)

That matters. That *distinguishes* the Bible from the Quran.

And the Gospel, and the whole New Testament, far from calling for endless war to conquer the world for Christ, calls for total non-violence and peace, and even for love of one's enemies, and even to a submission to the violence of others, even unto death, while still being **commanded** to love the people murdering you.

That is a big difference. Big-big. To put it in language that the UK Home Office might understand, there are big-big differences between the *scriptures* of Christianity and Islam, and the Christian Scriptures are good-good, while the Islamic scripture is morally ambivalent, containing both good and evil passages, without any structure by which to construe or contain them.

No matter. Bigotry! Bad-bad! (I might, and do, reply: Cowardice! Ignorance of reality! Fear of Islamic Terror! Kowtowing to Threats!)

[To my fellow Christians, the following scene is meant to satirize the absurdity and cowardice of Western Europeans in the face of Islamic Terror. Consider the following an homage to C.S. Lewis' *The Screwtape Letters*.]

A la Jonathan Swift: A Modest Proposal

If I were a religious-political advisor for hire, say, like the Paul Manafort of World Religions, I would advise the following course of action if I were advising Islamism, or Political Islam.

Completely halt all violent rhetoric within your mosques. It is self-defeating. The more little children are blown up, the more people may realize that Islam isn't quite that peaceful, but that it has hostile intentions and is bent on world conquest.

Instead, *use Secularism against itself* to achieve the Islamic tyranny you desire, just like Adolf Hitler used democracy against itself to achieve the Nazi tyranny that he desired.

Physical violence only clues people into what you're really up to.

Instead, claim that people who are criticizing you are the real terrorists, the real perpetrators of violence. Rather than commit actual violence, work hard to equate criticism with violence.

The first thing you should do, in the UK and in every other Western European country (and the United States if you can get away with it), is advocate for a law that bans all criticism of religion. Try to make it a criminal law, that equates all criticism of religion with assault, or even terrorism. Argue that criticism of religion wounds the *identity* of members of the criticized religion, and argue that such criticism increases the stress levels of those whose precious ears are attacked, and even shortens one's lifespan.

Use political judo on Western Secularism. The core of Secularism is Identity. Just as Islam's God is Allah, Secularism's God is Identity.

Anything that offends Identity, is, to a Secularist, the same as heresy and blasphemy. You must learn this simple tactic: Speech that offends Identity is Hate Speech and Hate Speech is Violence, and Violence must be punished by the criminal law.

Once you have a criminal law against criticism of religion, vigorously work to enforce it, imprisoning critics of Islam in prisons in Western Europe. Vigorously work to make the prison terms longer and harsher. Use your (hidden) links to violent Jihadists to organize Islamic prison gangs that will then persecute and murder speech criminals. Make it clear to all critics of Islam that criticizing Islam isn't just punishable by a prison term: it is a death sentence.

Of course, when critics of Islam point out that Islamic leaders are using Islamic prison gangs to execute death sentences, convict those critics of Hate Speech, send them to prison, and have your prison gangs murder them.

Second, use sex against Western Europe. Western Europeans breed tepidly, if at all. They live for themselves, choosing contraception and sodomy to have sex only for pleasure, without that bother of having children. Muslims, when they have sex, actually end up having children (what a concept!).

So, once you have banned all criticism of religion, simply have more and more children. Do not plant bombs. Suicide bombings are not as fun as having sex with your wife and producing children, and they are actually less effective at conquering Europe.

Europe will be conquered in three generations, without firing a shot.

Third, once the Muslim population has significantly increased, ban all conversions of Muslims to any other religion, and ban any non-Muslim from trying to convert any Muslim. This, naturally, will ban preaching the Gospel, which bans the real practice of Christianity. But in twenty years' time, no Western Secularist will care. In fact, they will be happy to bury Christianity. Freedom of religion? Bollocks. All that matters is the Sanctity of Identity.

And the Sanctity of Christian Identity? And the fact that preaching the Gospel is core to Christian Identity? Secularists neither know nor care. They hate Christianity so much that the basic illogic of their Identity Politics is irrelevant.

Banning the preaching of the Gospel will cripple Christianity. The dynamic of the Church is growth, fueled by a loving, peaceful spread of the Love preached by the Gospel. Without preaching the Gospel, the Church will wither on the vine, leaving any formally, nominally British Christians nothing more than insipid shadows, mumbling hymns they neither feel nor understand.

And, of course, anyone who criticizes such a ban on preaching the Gospel must be imprisoned for Hate Speech, and then executed by the semi-formal Islamic prison gangs.

Fourth, once the Muslim population reaches just more than fifty percent, take over the government. Islam can probably take over the government even before reaching half the population, because the Islamic

community can make common cause with hardcore Secularists, who are always happy to lend a hand to murdering Christianity.

Once in power, ban all other religions than Islam. Do *not* enforce the practice of Islam -- leave the atheist Secularists content in their studies with their astronomy and physics and maths. But ban all religions that are a threat to the political dominance of Islam in the targeted Western European society. Leave a carve-out for Jews. Jews do not (actively) convert anyone, and attacking them will stir up comparisons to the Nazis. However, do use government incentives to get Jews to move to Israel. (Israel can always be nuked off the face of the earth once Europe is finally conquered.)

I doubt, at that point, that the Islamist Party in power will actually require any arguments to ban other religions, particularly, of course, Christianity. But, if you feel that an argument is (for whatever reason) actually needed, come up with some bullshit about Christianity being backward or unprogressive or hateful or intolerant. Equate Christianity with Nazism, and ban Christianity, (especially), just like Nazism is banned in Germany.

Of course, imprison and execute anyone who dares to criticize the banning of Christianity.

Thus conquering Britain, and/or France, without a shot will have the nice added bonuses of giving the British Islamist Party, or the French Islamist Party, formidable and advanced nuclear weapons and intercontinental ballistic missiles, and permanent seats on the United Nations Security Council, thus blocking any American attempts to use the UN to stymie the emerging World Islamic Empire.

From there on in, it is all easy sailing.

Christopher Cross
Sailing

<https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=B9cBTAQMjyA>

You see, Islam is trying use Death Metal to conquer the world. Who likes Death Metal? Use Yacht Rock instead. Everybody loves Yacht Rock.

Once the Muslim population reaches about 60 to 80%, (depending on the totality of political circumstances), you can scrap everything Western in Britain, France, Germany, and the other European countries. Declare Islamic Republics: the British Islamic Republic, the French Islamic Republic, the German Islamic Republic, and so on. Declare all laws and legal principles, and cultural principles, in existence prior to the declaration of the Islamic Republic void. Disestablish all institutions, and re-establish them along Islamic lines. Promulgate a new Islamic Constitution and Islamic laws, with Islamic Courts and religious councils. Disband all secular police forces and replace them with Islamic gendarmes, directly controlled by Islamic religious councils.

Game Over.

Then, the Islamic revolutions, won without firing a shot or killing a child, move to the sphere of international relations.

Ignore the United States. Do not provoke the U.S., because that may cause it to do something against Islamic Europe. Learn from the Japanese. Leave the Americans to their pornography and sodomy. Once Europe, North Africa, and the Near East are consolidated, you can worry about America.

Besides, a similar strategy of promoting Secularism and Hate Speech criminalization will help weaken Christianity in America. But if you push too far in America, trying to Islamize it like Britain and France, it will backfire. America still has (1) too strong a tradition of free speech and (2) too large a population, with too much infusion of fresh Christian children from the Latino population (that actually breeds).

No, once Europe is won, tend to building up Islamic civilization in Europe and consolidating a world Ummah in the Old World. The main difficulty will, actually, involve coordinating international affairs with the Muslim World in the Near East and Africa.

Internecine strife between Muslims in Muslim Europe and the old Muslim World may cause a civil war that weakens the budding Empire.

The main problem facing the Islamic Confederate Empire will be Christianity, of course. Since Christianity is true and Islam is false, Islam will not be able to, (directly), overcome Christianity. The appeal of the Truth will always, ultimately, conquer the shams and illusions of the false.

So, really, the best friend of Islam is always Secularism. This may seem counterintuitive to Muslims. Secularism seems so rancid and offensive. And it is! It is! It is exactly designed to be so.

But, rather than being repelled by it, realize its proper uses.

Since Islam is Satanic, and, hence, false, and Christianity is from the True God, and, hence, True, Islam cannot defeat Christianity, just as Satan cannot defeat God.

But, if Christian nations like the U.S.A. and those in Latin America can be *turned* from Christianity to Secularism, then you can simply repeat the formula that worked so well in Europe. Secularism, being godless, can easily be defeated by Satan. It need not even be defeated. For Secularism, like Islam, was *engineered* by Satan. Secularism is Islam's friend and the necessary precondition for defeating Christianity and overthrowing the True God's plan for the human race.

Naturally, mass migration to Europe by Muslims in the Old World will help the process of gestation along.

Christian nations, aware of what happened to Christian Europe, may be wary of this.

But once Secularism triumphs in the U.S.A. and Latin America, any concern at all, whatsoever, even after the abolition of secular democracy in Europe, about Muslim immigration will be seen as hatred, bigotry, and xenophobia.

[SCENE BREAK: The Trump movement is xenophobic and racist. Most fear of American Muslims is xenophobic and paranoid, and most concerns about immigration are, in fact, fueled by simple racism. This is evident from the concern about Latino immigration. Latino immigration is America's last, best hope. Since Americans are unwilling to breed and sustain and expand the population, why would you resist letting Latino Christians come in and do the business -- the sexual business of actually breeding new generations of Christians in the United States of America? If the racists and xenophobes who are part of the Trump movement were actually serious about the preservation and vindication of Christianity in America, instead of building a wall on the border, they would line the border with big tents with air conditioning and mariachi music, with vats of guacamole and shots of tequila for everyone, with giant signs saying, "WELCOME TO AMERICA!!! THANKS FOR FUCKING WITHOUT

CONTRACEPTION AND BREEDING CHRISTIAN CHILDREN, SINCE WE WON'T!!!".]

[I am opposed to Penn Jillette's atheism and antipathy to Christianity, but I am very sympathetic to his discussion in this video about the plight of American Muslims:

<https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=ISbQntlH9no>

My point is that, after Islam has conquered Europe, we might be skeptical of accepting mass Islamic immigration to the Western Hemisphere.]

[Back to the Satirical Scene.....]

If Secularism can totally destroy Christianity in the Americas, with only diminishing pockets of genuine Christian resistance enduring, then it leaves the field ripe for Islam to overwhelm the Western Hemisphere.

But since Islam cannot directly defeat Christianity, Islam should *not* directly promote Islam in the Americas. Rather, ironically, it should promote all-out Secularism. Once the U.S.A. and Latin America are as Secularist as Europe was, you can simply repeat the process.

In that context, the real threat is Asia. China and Japan, and most Asian nations, like Vietnam, have strong cultures based on Asian values, that are not quite Secularist and not Christian. Asia is more vulnerable than a strong Christendom, since they do not have Christian truth, but they are not as weak as the nihilistic and relativistic Europeans. Asians have values, and the presto-chango trick of using Secularism against Secularism in Asia will probably not work. China, Japan, and Vietnam will probably not pass laws banning all criticism of Islam. Islam probably cannot shame or bully the Politburos of China or Vietnam for not being "woke".

Although, if you *can* get those Politburos to bow to Islam out of fear of being called "unwoke"tip of the hat.

Nguyễn Phú Trọng
General Secretary of the Communist Party of Vietnam



Probably doesn't fear being called "unwoke".

But, if the Islamic Empire can spread itself across Europe, Africa, the Near East, and the Western Hemisphere, the Islamic Empire might win a nuclear war with Asia.

The Glorious Islamic Empire will suffer many casualties in the Empire's heartland, but they are simply martyrs, praise be to Allah!

Winning a nuclear war simply means (1) having a large enough population alive to rebuild after the chaos, and (2) not allowing your opponent(s) to launch enough of their own weapons to environmentally degrade the world below the standards necessary for life. Naturally, as Allah does not care how Islam conquers the world and subjects it to his slavery, and actually prefers violence in keeping with his (Satanic) nature, (since Allah is simply Satan masquerading as God), the future Islamic Empire should develop far more powerful nuclear weapons than its rivals, with blast radii multiple times larger than anything in their rivals' arsenals.

Once this is done, the Islamic Empire can launch an unprovoked first strike, specially designed to cripple the nuclear response capability of any Asian rivals -- especially China.

After Islam assimilates Europe, the U.S.A., and Latin America, China will pose the greatest threat to the World Islamic Empire, and, hence, Satan's rule of the world.

The Islamic Empire, imitating its duplicitous and wily god, should spend many decades pretending to be peaceful, simply cultivating its culture and economy, and building friendly good ties with Asia.

Then, when the Asians are not expecting it, annihilate them out of the clear blue sky.

One day, the Islamic Empire and China and all Asia are the best of friends.

The next day, the Asians are wiped from the face of the earth, and Islam can finally subjugate the *entire* world.

That is the best way to win a nuclear war.

If the Islamic Empire can *win* the nuclear war against Asia, then Islam can truly conquer the world.

End Scene

This is what happens when you ban "Hate Speech" and don't defend Free Speech, and when you care more about Identity than Truth.

<https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=JehjqlzXwIQ>

Islam has no interest in assimilating to Western liberal democratic culture. It only cares about assimilating the West *into* the Dar al-Islam, the House of Islam, the House of Submission. Western Secularists wring their hands about diversity. Islam does not seek diversity, but only the uniform rule of its religious law over the entire world and everyone in it. To the extent Islam indulges in "diversity" rhetoric, it does so only to strengthen its hand as it plays the long game of world conquest. The moment any serious Islamic political party or nation would have the military power to overwhelm and defeat a non-Islamic rival and subject it to Islamic jurisdiction, it would.

No institution or person in the West should mistreat a Muslim simply for being Muslim. But it is perilous folly to ignore the basic nature of Islam itself: its ideological structure, ambitions, and propensities.

This is how a modern Briton thinks about Islam
<https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=33Nax-sRnPs>

Oh dear, oh how very well-considered and open-minded of you, good sir.

This is how the Muslim World thinks about Europe, America, and China
<https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=Y6xOKKghBGs>

The Mental World of Modern Britain
A Postmodern Diversity Wonderland

<https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=1Seo2WhKztg>

The Mental World of the Muslim World
Grown-ups conquer the World

<https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=rt1ltM-z2qs>

At a certain point, it becomes pointless to argue with the Diversity KGB, the gendarmes of “Inclusion”, who determine who is bigoted and who is not.

This is a struggle for Christ, and for Christian civilization: for freedom, truth, and Christ and *against* tyranny, lies, and the dominion of evil.

When so-called intellectuals and the so-called tolerant make Identity their God, rather than truth, there is no point arguing with them, since they do not care about the basic criterion of all argument: truth.

Such Diversity KGB know what they know what they know what they know what they know what they know.

And, at that point, reasoned argument with them becomes as productive as talking to a wall.

At that point, it makes far more sense to spend your time building ties of solidarity and resistance with other true Christians.

Ship of Fools

<https://www.commentarymagazine.com/politics-ideas/liberals-democrats/liberal-intersectionality-trap/>

The **ship of fools** is an allegory, originating from Book VI of Plato's Republic, about a ship with a dysfunctional crew:

Imagine then a fleet or a ship in which there is a captain who is taller and stronger than any of the crew, but he is a little deaf and has a similar infirmity in sight, and his knowledge of navigation is not much better. The sailors are quarreling with one another about the steering—every one is of the opinion that he has a right to steer, though he has never learned the art of navigation and cannot tell who taught him or when he learned, and will further assert that it cannot be taught, and they are ready to cut in pieces any one who says the contrary. They throng about the captain, begging and praying him to commit the helm to them; and if at any time they do not prevail, but others are preferred to them, they kill the others or throw them overboard, and having first chained up the noble captain's senses with drink or some narcotic drug, they mutiny and take possession of the ship and make free with the stores; thus, eating and drinking, they proceed on their voyage in such a manner as might be expected of them. Him who is their partisan and cleverly aids them in their plot for getting the ship out of the captain's hands into their own whether by force or persuasion, they compliment with the name of sailor, pilot, able seaman, and abuse the other sort of man, whom they call a good-for-nothing; but that the true pilot must pay attention to the year and seasons and sky and stars and winds, and whatever else belongs to his art, if he intends to be really qualified for the command of a ship, and that he must and will be the steerer, whether other people like or not—the possibility of this union of

authority with the steerer's art has never seriously entered into their thoughts or been made part of their calling. Now in vessels which are in a state of mutiny and by sailors who are mutineers, how will the true pilot be regarded? Will he not be called by them a prater, a star-gazer, a good-for-nothing?⁴⁹

Thoughts on Objective Reality and Tolerance
<https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=IpNRw7snmGM>

Free Speech: The Only Real Safeguard against Tyranny
<https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=2bwGsOBThE>

Getting Real about the Islamic “Golden Age”
<https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=QwXtTwNvWXc>

The Trouble with “Reforming” Islam
<https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=H6kWrIoVoLQ>

Is this man the equivalent of a Klansman?
Think for yourself
<https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=dl6IAYa7Wuo>

⁴⁹ https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Ship_of_fools

The Southern Poverty Law Center, which has become a center of Secularist hatred against anyone who believes in objective reality, has many articles that include statements like this:

The problem goes beyond right-wing conspiracy theorists and haters on the Internet, and beyond the Fox News shows that regularly offer platforms to paranoid Islamophobes like Emerson and hate group leaders like Robert Spencer. Liberal satirist Bill Maher, an outspoken atheist whose broad critique of religion has become increasingly ugly when it comes to Islam, said of the faith: “What we’ve said all along, and have been called bigots for it, is when there’s this many bad apples, there’s something wrong with the orchard.” Richard Dawkins, an abrasive British scientist and fellow atheist, has also been relentless on the subject. “To hell with their culture!” he said of Muslims on Maher’s television show in November.⁵⁰

The article then simply goes on. It provides no justification of its critique of either Maher or Dawkins. Rather, the author of this piece simply assumes that they are wrong, and not only wrong, but bigoted for having the temerity to voice their opinions.

Maher said that the number of violent Muslims, and the number of Muslims who totally or partially sympathize with such violence, indicates that there is something wrong with Islam itself.

Dawkins said that truth is more important than culture.

And these statements are wrong.....*because, why?*

No answer. Just, “You’re a bigot!”

Now, it is certainly true that many, many critics of Islam are motivated by racist animus or culturalist animus or simple nationalism.

But what kind of insanity is it to call it bigotry when someone simply criticizes a religious movement for what it actually says and does?

Consider this, and consider it well. If as many Christians were engaging in acts of terrorism as Muslims, *no one, certainly not the Secularist KGB, would have a problem with anyone calling out Christianity as a whole.*

⁵⁰ <https://www.splcenter.org/fighting-hate/intelligence-report/2016/backlash>

If Christian terrorism were a widespread global problem, Christianity itself would be on trial, and endlessly found guilty by the Secularist KGB.

Christianity, as a whole, is not violent, and yet, all criticism of Christianity and Christians is fair game. And the Secularist KGB doesn't spend much time speaking against the murder of Christians in the Muslim World. Those persecuted and murdered Christians don't seem to matter to the Secularists.

Well, they matter to me.

And what about the fact that Christianity is part of the culture of Christians? Does that somehow immunize Christianity from criticism? If someone criticizes Catholicism or Protestantism for *their doctrinal beliefs*, does that person become a bigot in the eyes of the Southern Poverty Law Center, and the other mandarins of the Secularist KGB?

Noooo, no, of course not.

Hmmmm.....why precisely is that?

Because Christians are not persecuted? They are not murdered? They are persecuted and murdered day in and day out in the very Muslim World that you are not allowed to criticize.

To Hell with these Secularists.

Their own Secularist ideology is a shambles of illogic and self-contradiction.

I am a Sicilian-American. Part of my Sicilian heritage is the history of the vicious Islamic conquest and oppression of Sicily. The Muslims did not politely request to rule the island. They waged a protracted and bloody war, murdering, raping, pillaging, suppressing and squashing Christianity, and taking many slaves.

Does this legacy of Islamic imperialism matter? Certainly, the Southern Poverty Law Center will instantly attack anyone who says that an African-American has no right to attack White Supremacy and the legacy of

slavery in the American South. African-American identity and history are sacred, (as they should be).

What about Sicilian identity and history? Irrelevant. How dare I smear Islam with its own history.

The Secularist Diversity police has its favorites among identities, and, since Muslim identity is favored over Sicilian identity, Sicilian history and the Sicilian struggle against Islamic oppression are irrelevant.

This Secularist-Identity attack might have more weight if the Islam of the present were somehow radically different from the Islam of the past. But it's not. If anything, the Islam of the past was more enlightened than today's Islam.

If it had the **power**, the Muslim world of today would conquer whatever it could, including Sicily, Spain, Greece, and the rest of Europe; indeed, the rest of the world. Can anyone possibly doubt that if Saudi Arabia or Iran possessed vastly superior military power relative to Europe and America and Russia that they would launch an invasion of Europe? The *only* reason states like Saudi Arabia and Iran don't invade is because the West has nuclear weapons and superior militaries. Period. Anyone who doubts that is a complete, infantile, ignorant fool.

So, we can't say, "That was the past, you Sicilian bigot, get over it." The Muslim world has not changed; in fact, it has grown angrier, less noble, more bitter, more fanatical, more close-minded, more delusional, more ruthless. Show me the Suleiman the Magnificent of today's Muslim world. Good luck.

Besides, who are a bunch of non-Sicilians to tell *me* what to get over?!

Can you *imagine* if I told an African-American to "get over" slavery?! Can you imagine what kind of vicious attack the Southern Poverty Law Center would launch against me?

If an African-American attributes a white male Conservative Republican's ideas and policies to racist bigotry and the legacy of slavery, you won't hear a peep out of the Southern Poverty Law Center.

No one in the Secularist-Identity KGB will say, "Oh, that's bigoted against White Identity and Culture."

Now, it's true, *in America*, Caucasian Christians are the majority.

But Muslims are *not* a minority. *American* Muslims are a minority. Muslims *across the world* are a world civilization, a world culture, and a budding world empire with global imperial ambitions, with more than 1.8 billion people. Billion with a *B*.

Nothing to see here?



In the above photo, these Muslims call for the establishment of the Rashidun Caliphate, (the first Muslim imperial government originating from Muhammad himself), *in Syria*, which is what Bilad Ash-Sham means. Bilad Ash-Sham (or Bilad al-Sham) was the name of the province in the Rashidun Caliphate that covers modern-day Syria.

Can anyone doubt that if these men above had the **power** they would re-establish the Emirate of Sicily? By *force*, regardless of the will of the Sicilian people, or their legitimately conferred political consent, *just like they did the first time around*.

Will the Southern Poverty Law Center then say, “Oh well, you know, *after* the Muslims were done murdering and raping and pillaging and crushing rebellions by Christians, they improved agriculture and built some pretty buildings, so, you know, *shut up* you Sicilian bigot.” ?

Really?

What would the SPLC say if a White Supremacist argued that African-Americans made certain progress under slavery? What if he (insanely) argued that slavery was okay because White slave owners converted African-Americans to Christianity and African-American Christian culture has produced many cultural accomplishments? Left-wing diversity groups would (rightly) lambaste such a person as an ignorant, hateful bigot.

But, when you excuse Islamic imperialism and murder and slavery and oppression with some more productive fruit orchards and pretty mosques, that's somehow okay.....because it's Islam! -- and *Islam* is one of Secularism's darlings, and Sicilians are not.

But, no matter.

It doesn't have to make sense. Identity Politics and Secularism never do.

Secularists have no problem creating double standards and using hypocritical rhetoric to call all criticism of Islam hatred.

Consider a paragraph from the SPLC article quoted above:

Other attacks — mostly abroad but also including a thwarted attempt by two jihadists to shoot people gathered at a deliberately provocative Muhammad Art Exhibit and Contest held in Texas in May, and the July murders of four Marines and a sailor in Chattanooga, Tenn., by a Muslim gunman — only fueled the fire.⁵¹

The Muhammad Art Exhibit is “*deliberately provocative*”. Oh, dear. We wouldn't want to be provocative.....certainly not deliberately. But, if Christian extremists tried to shoot people gathered at an art exhibit of “Piss Christ”, a sacrilegious piece of “art” hostile to Christianity, no one would talk about how the postmodernist, anti-Christian relativist Secularists were “deliberately provocative”.

No.

All we would hear is how horrible Christian fundamentalism is, and how backwards Christianity itself is. Our cultural mandarins would welcome any and all criticism of Christianity, from both irreligious and religious perspectives, as “bravery”, as an intersectional fight against

⁵¹ <https://www.splcenter.org/fighting-hate/intelligence-report/2016/backlash>

patriarchal, gendered, essentialist oppression. Islam is patriarchal, gendered, and essentialist -- and it's oppressive to boot! Is the Muhammad Art Exhibit part of a grand, brave fight against patriarchy, gender-fascism, and essentialism? *No*, of course not.

Why is that?

Don't scratch your head too long.

Secularism is fundamentally hostile to Christianity, and you know the old saying, "The enemy of my enemy is my friend." Secularists don't hate patriarchy, gender-fascism, and essentialism *quite* as much as they just straight-up hate Christianity itself. And if they have to ally with a totally, even *more* patriarchal, gender-fascist, essentialist force like Islam.....who cares?

Take this.

I am a Christian.

I believe that the man is the head of his wife and that a woman should honor her husband in that way (Ephesians 5:21-32).

Therefore, according to the Secularist KGB, I am a sexist, male chauvinist bigot.

But what about the Muslim?

The Quran (4:34) explicitly states:

Men are in charge of women by [right of] what Allah has given one over the other and what they spend [for maintenance] from their wealth. So righteous women are devoutly obedient, guarding in [the husband's] absence what Allah would have them guard. But those [wives] from whom you fear arrogance - [first] advise them; [then if they persist], forsake them in bed; and [finally], strike them. But if they obey you [once more], seek no means against them. Indeed, Allah is ever Exalted and Grand.

St. Paul would *never* command or recommend that a man strike his wife. Violence is forbidden by the Gospel of Jesus Christ, of which Paul brilliantly shone as an expositor and exemplar. Here, in the Quran, "God" Himself (*psst*: Satan) tells a husband to hit his wife if she is "arrogant". Straight-up. *Hit her*. But the same Secularist women who will (rightly)

wear “Nevertheless, she persisted” T-shirts in support of Senator Elizabeth Warren will then turn around and attack *me* for being Islamophobic because I point out that Islam advocates violence against women.

The Secularists will consider my own opposition to abortion as violence against women, but this **direct, explicit command from “God”** that tells a husband to beat his wife, that’s somehow not violence against women.

This isn’t some obscure tract or scroll from some unknown scholar or prince from the Middle Ages --- this is what Muslims *today* militantly demand that everyone venerate as the absolute, perfect WORD OF GOD. THE FINAL MESSAGE. THE END. (OF THE WORLD.)

Verse 4:34 is not an embarrassment in the Muslim world. The vast majority of authentic Muslim men, in the Muslim world, do not cower and cringe and say, “Well, you know, that was then, this is now, that’s not the Word of God *today*.” *Nope*. Praise be to Allah, this is *the* WORD. The *Last Word*. DEATH TO THE INFIDEL! DEATH TO AMERICA!

Yet *I* am the bigot.

You know, simply wanting honor and obedience from my wife, as a Christian, makes me a bigot to the Secularists. *But* if I become a Muslim, I can just straight up *beat* my wife, and then *magically* the Secularists won’t say a damned thing.

And if anyone accuses my new religion of being immoral, then the *critic* gets called an “Islamophobe”. That’s a sweet trick.

And don’t get me started on gays and lesbians.

If I think, as a Christian, that sex between men and men and women and women is wrong, IT IS ON, BIGOT!!!!!!!

But, when gays and lesbians are MURDERED and imprisoned and persecuted, physically and viciously, in the Muslim World.....well, you know, that’s somehow not the religion. Really?

These people are insane. The Secularists are awash in double standards and illogic. Secularist Identity dogma has become a Tower of Babel of insufferable hypocrisy.

Logic: Beware, it's Abrasive

<https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=IOe5NSGdg-c>

Violence against Muslims is wrong and deplorable. And it should stop. No one should hate a person. But people do have a right to oppose ideas, and to investigate ideas to their depths.

And, despite all the (tragic and horrible) violence against Muslims, consider this:

The possibility that Christian terrorists will nuke a city: Virtually o.

The possibility that Muslim terrorists will nuke a city: Very real.

On that day, when Al-Qaeda or ISIS or some Iranian- or Saudi- or Pakistani-backed group nukes London or Paris or Rome or New York.....
.....none of the false equivalence and self-righteous hypocrisy about Identity, the God of Secularism, will bring back the millions who will die.

Take another passage from the SPLC article:

Cruz's and Huckabee's assertions about the supposedly unique danger posed by Muslims are telling in light of the fact that since Sept. 11, 2001, domestic right-wing extremists have been responsible for about the same number of deaths in the United States as radical Muslims (48, as opposed to 45 killed by jihadists, according [sic] the New America Foundation) — including, most recently, the November murder of three people at a Colorado Planned Parenthood clinic (see story, p. 7) by a man who had earlier professed admiration for anti-abortion terrorists.⁵²

Can you identify the operative phrase in that paragraph?

“since Sept. 11, 2001”

Yes, *since* the day Muslim terrorists murdered 2,977 innocent people on American soil, 48 innocent Muslims have been killed by murderous non-Muslims.

⁵² <https://www.splcenter.org/fighting-hate/intelligence-report/2016/backlash>

Are you serious?

What happens after an Islamic terrorist group detonates a nuclear bomb in London, killing millions?

“*Since* Sept. 11, 2025, anti-Muslim extremists have been responsible for the same number of deaths as radical Muslims.”

No matter that on the “since” date, Islamists slaughtered millions in an atomic explosion.

Again:

What may be most disheartening is that Trump’s rhetoric is only keeping pace with the worst instincts of a large portion of the population that, frightened by world events and goaded by many media outlets that encourage “debate” about the basic humanity of Muslims, has embraced a xenophobic and nationalistic world view.

I certainly do not question the basic humanity of Muslims. But I certainly *do* question the origin and nature of Islamic ideas.

Everyone feels welcome and empowered to question Christianity. Jesus was nuts, Jesus wasn’t real, the Council of Nicaea made things up, the Crusades prove that Christianity is evil, the popes were bloodthirsty murderers, and on and on and on and on.

Muslims themselves feel perfectly comfortable and righteous in calling the Trinity, the Divinity of Jesus, the Crucifixion (and Death), and Resurrection of Jesus *all* Satanic impostures that Islam remedies. Muslims consistently call all passages in the Old and New Testaments that directly contradict Islamic beliefs and affirm actual Christianity and Judaism “altered” versions of the Torah and Gospels. Of course, they have precisely *zero* genuine historical evidence for these claims. They claim that St. Paul created Christianity, perverting the truth proclaimed by Christ. Yet when a Muslim calls genuine Christianity Satanic or false or contrived or altered, no Secularist calls them “Christophobic”. But if I make the reciprocal criticism, the Secularists immediately call me an “Islamophobe”.

When I oppose same-sex sexual conduct, I am immediately called a bigot. If I say, “But I am a Christian, and that is my religion,” crickets. Crickets. No one thinks that challenging, questioning, attacking or even straight-up demeaning my Christian identity and Christian ideas somehow constitutes bigotry or demeans my humanity. If anything, the Secularists

attack my profession of my Christian faith for demeaning the humanity of others.

In the Secularist worldview, Islam is rubber and Christianity is glue. *Everything* sticks to Christianity, every crime committed by every priest and minister, every historical blunder and sin, every apparent dissonance with modern science: *everything* is fair game. *Nothing* sticks to Islam, (not even, presumably, a nuclear blast killing millions), but all its crimes and sins happily bounce off Islam's invincible armor: the sanctity of Muslim identity. Christian identity? Christian identity is bigotry and white supremacy and racism and hatred.

This is because of America's woeful and evil racial history: the legacy of slavery, the Confederacy, and the Civil War. In the Secularist lexicon and worldview, Muslims have become African-Americans and Christians are the white slave owners and segregationists. So an assertive Muslim is misunderstood; an assertive Christian is a Nazi or Klansman. *But that is not reality!*

Islam is a powerful, aggressive, defiant, and ambitious world religious culture, billions strong, that currently governs hundreds of millions in Islamic states and aspires, ultimately, to rule the world as an earthly empire -- regardless of whether non-Muslims like it or not. Islam does not seek to live in a diverse world of mutual respect and tolerance. Islamic doctrine desires to establish a world empire in which *it* alone has preeminence, and in which it only affords a few limited protections to Christians and Jews, who, presumably, will eventually be converted. Islam and Christianity fundamentally differ in this. Christians believe that Christ will come in supernatural glory to establish his Kingdom. Islam believes that God commands human beings *here and now* to conquer the world by force, by violence.

Christians say, "Let us all live in peace and freedom, for we simply await Christ in Glory." Muslims say, "We have the right and the duty to conquer the world ourselves, with God's blessing and command *right now*."

Let the Secularists, when Christ in His Glory comes to establish His Kingdom, try calling him a bigot and "unwoke". When Christ, as the Son of God in Glory, supernaturally asserts His Kingdom, is that Islamophobic? Is God Islamophobic for begetting His Son and sending Him into the world as the Incarnation to save the world from sin, even though that directly contradicts the Quran?

Wait: Is God unwoke?

Islamophobia is a garbage word. Let's clarify terms. There is hatred against Muslims for being Muslim. And that is bigotry, and that is wrong.

But then there is opposition to Islam as a religion, as an ideology, as a worldview and belief system and set of cultural practices. And why aren't you allowed to think and make evaluations when it comes to Islam? Christianity -- there everyone and anyone is allowed to throw poop at Christ, and if someone makes a picture of the Virgin Mary made out of elephant poop, that's art. But if someone draws Muhammad, that's Islamophobia.

Step off, assholes.

There is real, and horrible, anti-Muslim hatred. But then, there is anti-Islamic thought, rooted in a considered analysis of what Islam *says and does*.

Anti-Muslim hatred.

Anti-Islamic thought.

Those are *different things*.

If you distinguish those things, fine, great, wonderful --- do all you can to stop some murderous jackass from shooting a Muslim cab driver or convenience store clerk, and I will support you and join you with zealous enthusiasm. "Murder is bad" is a cherished Christian principle.

But when you say that I am a bigot for thinking about Islam and then concluding that it is wrong, even evil, then we have a problem. Then you are no longer a liberal fighting for civil rights, you are a Secularist Leninist, even a Satanist, fighting against God, and the Church. You are not fighting *for* freedom, you are fighting *against* the freedom of expression and the freedom to search for and express the truth, and, ultimately, the freedom of Christians.

We can also note the definition of the word "bigot":

big·ot

'bigət/

noun

a person who is intolerant toward those holding different opinions.

Being intolerant towards those who hold different opinions is the *literal* definition of being a bigot. So, the Secularist Leninists are not attacking Christians for being bigots (even though that is what they *say* they are doing). The Secularist Leninists *themselves* ARE the bigots, because they are totally intolerant of the Christian worldview. The Secularist Leninists do not seek to end bigotry. They seek to impose their *own* bigotry upon the entire world, and to derange the nature of the Christian worldview to conform to their bigotry. The Secularist Leninists do not seek a world where everyone can hold their own cherished beliefs in non-violence and peace. *Real* Liberals do that. Secularist Leninists seek a world where *everyone* -- every last man, woman, and child -- holds *their* opinion on *every single subject of any relevance*.

The Jacobin, the Leninist, and the Maoist are many things. But one thing they *never* are is tolerant. The very soul of Leninism is bigotry: the total eradication of any opinion inconsistent with itself. So it is a perfect irony that the favorite weapon of these relativist bigots is to call someone they disagree with a “bigot”.

So the next time someone calls you a bigot for believing in the Christian worldview, educate them about the definition of bigotry, and delight in the poetic justice of responding to every single thing they say with, “You’re a bigot!”

To HELL with the Secularists.

Christians of the world, and Jews of a like mind, UNITE!

TO LIVE AND DIE FOR CHRIST

<https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=GM-znjDGubE>

To Sum up the dangers:

Secularism + Capitalism = A New Roman Empire

A New Roman Empire + Islam = The Satanic Empire of Anti-Christ

The interior goal of Secularism and Capitalism is not to make you well-sexed and prosperous. The goal is to make you worship sex and money.

Because of Christianity, Satan cannot (at the moment) make most people worship the weather and stone statues and little figurines (household gods). Satan can make *some* people worship him directly, with pentagrams and Satanic masses, and he can make some more people delve into the occult, and he can make some more people than that dabble in occultism in the form of the “New Age”.

But Satan can't ensnare most people in idolatry, and all sin, with Satanic rituals and astrology. Not yet anyway.

No matter. All such nonsense merely decorates Satan's real goal: to make you worship something other than God. Making you worship yourself quite nicely accomplishes that goal, and there is scarcely a better way to make you worship yourself than to make you worship sex and money.

In the New Order of Ultra-Secularism and Ultra-Capitalism, all those who do not bow before the prerogatives of Sex and Money will be labeled “haters” “bigots” “backwards” “anarchist” “destructive”.

The apparent clash of the pro-Sex Left and the pro-Money Right merely masks the ultimate goal: the synthesis of the pro-Sex Left and the pro-Money Right into the New Roman Empire of unchallengeable sexual debauchery and unlimited corporate power.

In that New Empire, all calls for morality will be called “Hate”. When Johnny has three Mommies and Tantric sex is offered as a high school elective, Christians had better shut up, upon pain of being called “bigots”. All calls for charity will be called “Anarchy” and “Envy”. Christianity is based upon morality and charity. So, genuine, authentic Christianity will be labeled a disease, a social disorder that must fall into line or be stamped out.

Islam is a religious force that proclaims one Slave Master god, before whom all human beings are nothing more than slaves. This central belief is underwritten by a fierce, maniacal anger against all those who do not believe in this sacred tenet, and their holy book, the Quran, authorizes endless holy war to dominate all those who do not submit. (Indeed, Islam means Submission: Slavery.) This maniacal anger has the self-justification of the most poisonous self-righteousness. Inspired by this self-righteous fury, Islam viciously attacks as polytheism and persecutes belief in (1) The Trinity, (2) the Divine Sonship of Christ Jesus, (3) the reality of original sin and the need for a Savior to atone on the Cross for that sin and to grant eternal life through the Resurrection. Islam is a precisely calibrated engine to tear down the Gospel of Jesus Christ.

The final synthesis of Secularism, Capitalism, and Islam would be the Satanic Empire of the Anti-Christ. It would fuse the lust of Secularism, the greed of Capitalism, and the murderous anger of Islam into one global force.

That is what Satan has always wanted. The old pagan Roman Empire constituted the glory days of Satan: a vast empire forged in blood, that worshipped lust and greed, and enforced its rule with vicious military efficiency.

The Church of Christ Jesus messed it all up. But Satan wants it back, and he has been working for millennia to get it back.

At first blush, the New Roman Empire of the West and Islam may seem like discordant threads. But Satan intends this. Satan often works in setting up apparently rival opposites, to throw people off his game plan, and then smushing them together at the end, which was always his intention.

Islam fosters sexual repression, machismo, and a real hatred and fear of homosexual sodomy. It also possesses a more communal attitude towards money and disdains the usurious greediness of the West's casino Capitalism. These trends make up real differences with the New Roman Empire.

Yet these attitudes about sex and money are a mile wide and an inch deep. Islam represses sexual expression. Yet the most militant Islamic force in the world, ISIS, gleefully instituted sexual slavery! Islam preaches economic brotherhood. Yet the lives of the Saudi Arabian royalty and aristocracy would make Louis XIV and Casanova blush! And yet, these

same debauched Saudi royals can, simultaneously, operate a brutal and repressive theocracy and hold possession of Mecca and Medina.

Look at the other side of the equation: the Secularists. Secular Leninists constantly trash Christians for being sexist and homophobic. And if a Christian critiques Islam, they gleefully brand you “Islamophobic”.

Yet the Secularists merrily turn a blind eye to the practical enslavement of women in the Muslim World, the vile practice of honor killings against girls and women, and the outright imprisonment and execution of gays and lesbians.

Funny how these apparently “discordant” trends really have so much in common and work together against their common foe: Christianity, the Gospel of Jesus Christ.

Capitalism attacks the prayer life and spirituality of Christians by sucking up all their time in a frantic, desperate struggle to survive, all the while our electronic devices dangle fabulous success and riches before our eyes. The whole phenomenon promotes anxiety, distraction, and delusion.

Secularism attacks the communal life and social action of Christianity by slandering the basic beliefs of the Gospel as “Hate” and viciously silencing all Christians who dare preach the Gospel.

Islam is the coup de grace, the final hammer blow. Once Islam becomes the religion of the New Roman Empire, the imperial state will have the ideological basis to literally murder Christians simply for being Christians.

(And remember, Islam does not consider true Christians to be true Christians. Islam (falsely) believes that “true Christians” reject the Trinity, the Divine Sonship of Christ, and the Atonement (the Incarnation, Crucifixion (meaning Death), and Resurrection). Islam believes that true Christians believe in and practice Islam, for they claim that both Judaism and Christianity in their “original” forms preached Islam. Islam professes historical nonsense, but this is what it preaches.)

We can also observe Satan’s attempted parody of what happened to his old Roman Empire. The Gospel infected the Roman Empire and destroyed its paganism, disregard for human life, lust, and greed. Satan intends to parody this by setting up a New Roman Empire in the West and then infecting it with his Islam, and then destroying Christians and Jews, Satan’s favorite pastime.

Yes, at first, the New Roman Empire will stand utterly opposed to this alien force, Islam. Just like the old Roman Empire persecuted Christians. But then (so Satan intends) Islam will wear down the debauched New Roman Empire, and, seeking an end to terrorist violence and a moral direction, will embrace Islam as the new state religion.

From this perspective, the Book of Revelation becomes somewhat clearer. The text obviously discusses the Roman Empire, since contemporary Christians suffered dreadful persecution under the Romans. But the theme of Roman imperial persecution resonates beyond the historical context, pointing to the future (as all good prophecy should).

The First Coming of Christ, in meekness, saved the world from sin, and the Church that emerged from the First Coming overthrew the rampant lust, greed, and fury that characterized the First Roman Empire.

At the end of this world, the Last Roman Empire will have emerged. What makes both the first and the second Roman Empires distinctively Roman (in the purely Pagan sense) is that greed, lust, and fury animate both, yet they also transcend cultural and religious parochialism. Like a parody of the Universal Church, the Universal Empire practices an eclectic approach to culture and religion. Unlike more culturally monolithic empires, like the Chinese, Japanese, Persian, Byzantine, and Muslim empires, to name only a few, the Roman Empire permitted any kind of cultural or religious practices, so long as all subjects paid their taxes, submitted to imperial authority, and worshipped the cult of the Emperor.

Satan does not care *how* you worship him, only *that* you worship him. And the one way to worship him, at bottom, is to *not* worship YHWH (Yahweh, God). Satan does not care *how* you fail to worship YHWH.

The pagan Roman Empire did not have a thoroughgoing, dense ideology that it sought to impose uniformly on its peoples, in an effort to make one homogenous people. The Empire did not worship Roman culture or a particular creed or a particular philosophy, like many empires; it did not even zealously promote the Olympian pantheon. Above all, first and last, the Empire worshipped itself, in the form of the Man-God, the Emperor.

Christ Jesus was the God-Man, God descended from Heaven to Earth, taking on human flesh in the Incarnation to save the human race.

Caesar was the Man-God, a man self-deifying himself, purporting to ascend from Earth to Heaven, purporting to take on the divine nature in order to receive tribute, adoration, and worship from the human race.

In other words, Caesar was a creature who sought to make himself the Creator. Exactly like Satan. And exactly like Satan, the Roman Empire had no fundamental culture or ideology other than its own Self-Worship.

The Son became man as Jesus the Christ (the Anointed, the Messiah) in the time of Caesar Augustus because Augustus claimed to be the savior of the world. A man claimed to be the savior of the world. A creature claimed to be the savior of the world. The Son, God, who is Uncreated, came to do battle with the final abomination: the claim of divinity by man. That is, the claim of divinity by a creature. God became man to directly oppose this fundamental idolatry.

Islam likes to call the Incarnation idolatry, but this simply attacks God by trying to outwit God at His own game. Satan exclaims, "If a creature claiming to be God (like Satan or Caesar) is idolatry, then God becoming flesh and being born of a woman, thus that He becomes man, is idolatry too! Aha!"

It is idolatry to put *yourself* above God. It is *not* idolatry for God to put Himself beneath *you*. Satan would never do such a thing, because he is selfish and evil, demanding that all submit as his slaves, and that all give to *him*. But the True God is generous beyond belief, and does not disdain to be the servant, to give rather than receive. St. Paul stated that Jesus said it is better to give than to receive (Acts 20:35). God does not disdain to take the form of a slave. Satan would never take the form of a slave. Satan can only imagine making others, including God, *his* slave.

Take to heart what St. Paul wrote of Christ Jesus, the Son of God, the God-Man, quoting an early Christian hymn:

Have among yourselves the same attitude that is also yours in Christ Jesus,

Who, though he was in the form of God, did not regard equality with God something to be grasped.

Rather, he emptied himself, taking the form of a slave, coming in human likeness; and found human in appearance, he humbled himself, becoming obedient to death, even death on a cross.

Because of this, God greatly exalted him and bestowed on him the name that is above every name, that at the name of Jesus every knee should bend, of those in heaven and on earth and under the earth, and every tongue confess that Jesus Christ is Lord, to the glory of God the Father.

(Philippians 2:5-11)

By the Son becoming man, the Son does not become a creature; rather, the Son raises up those men and women who become conformed to His image to the likeness of the Creator, hence destroying the bonds of sin and death, granting access to eternal life and the resurrection of the righteous.

The Roman Empire was the antithesis of all this. Men could become gods of their own volition and by their own power, and other men had to worship those Man-Gods as God. The Empire worshipped its own lusts, greeds, and furies, and, above all, itself.

The New Roman Empire is modeling itself after the Old Roman Empire. In our New Roman Empire in the West, men and women can self-create themselves however they like: their sex, their morality, their conduct, the lives of the babies in their wombs all become subject to human will and authority. The acquisition of wealth and fame divinize the wealthy and the famous in a manner not seen since the Old Roman Empire. In fact, our Cult of Celebrity far exceeds anything possible or dreamt of in the old Empire. And, like the cherry on top of our Sin Sundae Supreme, is not Our Dear Leader, the Donald, the perfect image of self-creation and self-deification? The self-adoring, self-regarding pile of lust and greed and fury that rises like a Tower of Babel of flaming shit and asserts its own Godhood, its own self-created Divinity, wagging its own deluded, filthy finger in the face of the True God and His Holy Will? He is exactly the kind of neo-Caesar our neo-Empire deserves.

Don't believe the lies. Secularism can crow about sexual liberty and identity all it likes. But the purpose of sexual liberty and moral anarchy is not human rights, but human pride: the defiance of the Will of God. Capitalism can crow about economic liberty and "freedom" all it likes. But the purpose of that "economic freedom" is the greed of the wealthy and the cult of wealth among the poor. Both streams take aim at core elements of Christian truth: self-denial and humility.

The forming bacteria culture of this New Roman Empire will not sleep until every true Christian is shouted down as a homophobe, a transphobe, an Islamophobe, and a bigot of every kind of inane -ism and phobia. And our Casino Capitalism, and its Apostles of Greed, will not rest until they strip every last dollar from our people: until each man, woman, and child works four jobs twenty hours a day, and spends any free whisper of a moment playing lotteries or watching some gaudy exposition of the life of a celebrity.

This New Roman Empire will not rest until it drowns Christianity in its sea of filth: its endless tides of greed and lust and self-righteous fury. Lust and greed parade around as human freedom, while the fury of those buried in sin and error struts around as Justice. The freedom and justice of Satan make up the core of this New Empire, and these forces will not yield till true freedom and justice, that of God, is pushed aside, as nothing more than oppression, injustice, and hatred. It's time to get woke. Time to wake up and smell the Satanic brew being shoved down our gullets.

Our generation cheers its liberation from God. But liberation from God is a funny thing. It feels good in the moment, and feels bad forever. It thrills for an instant, and breeds its doleful languor for ages. What so many today in our generation experience as liberation, future generations will experience as the emptiness that it is.

After all the sodomies that can be performed *are* performed, and after all the wealth that can be stolen by the rich *is* stolen by the rich, our people will not cheer about their liberation. They will collapse. They will collapse into their own fretful, exhausted stupor. They will find out what any true Christian could have told you today: no matter how many ejaculations or orgasms you have, no matter how much money you have, no matter how many things you possess, none of it can ever fill the emptiness that lacking God creates in your soul.

And then, like salvation from above (or so it will appear), after Christianity has been strangled and discarded, the one stridently unyielding force that preaches about sexual morality and economic brotherhood, Islam, will have its day (or so goes the Satanic plan).

The morally benighted and exhausted and bankrupt Empire will turn its lonely eyes to Islam to save it. And, in merging itself with whatever is left of institutional Christianity, Islam will create an Islamic Christianity, a Christian Islam, that will then have the force of the Empire to exterminate any remaining "heretical", "blasphemous" Trinitarian Christians (Trinitarian Christians being the only kind of True Christians). Or so the plan goes.

The Church of Christ converted the pagan Old Roman Empire into a Christian realm and foiled the plots of Satan. Satan intends for Islam to convert the neo-pagan New Roman Empire into an Islamic realm and foil the Plan of God. Just as the Christian Empire did away with paganism, so

Satan intends for the Anti-Christian Empire to do away with Christianity. But Satan merely has intentions. God has true Power.

Of course, like in war, all plans are merely intentions. Satan adapts his course to the unstoppable Plan of God, vainly intending, somehow, to thwart it.

Secularism, Capitalism, and Islam are merely the three streams that serve Satan's strategic and tactical endeavors. They are his aircraft carriers and nuclear submarines. How he specifically deploys them, in his ultimate effort to reestablish the Roman Empire as the Empire of his Anti-Christ is all a matter of expediency.

The Second Coming of Jesus Christ will destroy the Last Roman Empire before it can destroy the Church. From the ashes, from the few survivors, will arise the Millennium, the Kingdom of the Spirit, that will race on until the end of time.

Many scoff at Jesus' teaching that, "The meek will inherit the earth." People scoff because they think, "The powerful will never give the earth to the meek, nor would the meek ever be able to take it." That is true. It is also besides the point.

The reason the meek will inherit the earth is that Christ will not permit the powerful to keep the earth. He will, ultimately, destroy them.

I think one aspect of the Church's journey from the First Coming to the Second Coming demonstrates Christians' reliance on Christ. Christianity could not create the Kingdom of Heaven. On its own steam, it sputtered, fell apart, and failed. *Only* Christ brings the Kingdom of Heaven. The experience of the past two thousand years helps dispel the human race's sense of self-creation and self-determination. The Church, the Christian people, do not have the wherewithal to take the Gospel and turn it into an ideology and then use that to operate a Christian Empire that can flourish into the Kingdom of Heaven. It is the opposite of the Islamic notion. The Gospel is not an instruction manual for setting up a worldly empire: it testifies to the indispensability of Christ's Lordship, alive in the heart of every man and woman, and not instituted as a quintessentially human institution.

A Note on Moderation

To be sure, where possible, we should embrace moderation. To a Leninist, everyone who is not a Leninist is a Fascist, or a dupe of Fascism. To a Fascist, everyone who is not a Fascist is a Leninist, or a dupe of Leninism.

The left and the right, especially in America and Europe, are spiraling out of control, racing away from the center and towards Fascist and Leninist camps who shall soon be at each other's throats.

Believing in gay marriage does not make you a Leninist. Believing that Islam is morally neutral or morally good does not make you a Leninist.

What makes you a Leninist is calling everyone who does *not* believe in calling sodomy marriage or who insists on concluding that Islam is evil a Fascist, or somehow evil or crazy.

Calling a Leninist a Leninist does not make you a Fascist. *But* calling everyone who simply holds culturally left-wing beliefs a Leninist does make you a Fascist. Likewise, believing that abortion is murder (which it is) and seeking to outlaw it, does not make you a Fascist. Believing that Islam is evil does not make you a Fascist.

What makes you a Fascist is calling everyone who disagrees with you a Leninist.

But calling people Leninists, when they call you a Fascist (when you're not), does *not* make you a Fascist.

If we are to avoid some very nasty political outcomes in the very near future, we must learn how to disagree without being disagreeable, and how to not demonize our opponents.

At the same time, the Christian faces special challenges. The Christian knows that Satan is, indeed, behind all evil and that very real demons in Satan's service actively oppose the Church of Christ.

The Christian, to be true to the Gospel of Peace and Love, which is the only real Gospel there is, must learn to oppose Satan and demonic activity without *treating* all who oppose the Church with hatred, malevolence, arrogance, and violence.

America, in particular, is caught between Puritanism and Jeffersonianism. The virtue of the Jeffersonian is tolerance. The virtue of the Puritan is purity: personal sexual purity and personal financial purity.

When the Jeffersonian abandons a tolerant mode of life, speaking, and writing, all is lost. The Jeffersonian who stridently seeks to root out all Puritanism in a maniacal Secularist crusade uses a vicious intolerance at the

service of his “tolerance”. Such an intolerant proponent of “tolerance” is a Leninist.

When the Puritan abandons probity and community-spirit in favor of lust, luxury, and selfishness (c.f. the slew of televangelists and mega-church pastors), all is lost. The “Puritan” who lacks purity but seeks to impose purity upon *other people*, for *those people*, uses a hypocritical and vicious mock-purity in the service of his supposed purity (i.e. his ideological constipation). Such a hypocritical, self-righteous, noxious toilet bowl of odium is a Pharisee. And a Pharisee who seeks to gain the power of the state and use the violence of the state against the “godless” is a Fascist.

Of course, who gets to control the state when the left and the right are so divergent on cultural matters?

As a Christian, I believe we need to restore the equilibrium that existed in the mid-20th Century on cultural matters, with a 21st Century maturity and insight, combining a renewed Christian moral ethos and true purity with a sensitivity and compassion for other people. We can discern and oppose evil without hating our enemies and opponents: we can follow the Way of Christ, the Way of the Cross.

A Secular Leninist will have none of that: outlawing abortion is Fascism, they say. Not having the state call sodomy marriage is Fascism, they say. Not having the state use violence to force Christian bakers to bake wedding cakes for gay couples is Fascism, they say.

No, it isn't.

By that logic, FDR, Dwight Eisenhower, and John F. Kennedy were all Fascists. That's some logic.

And those who say such things have only themselves to blame when Christians become Fascists.

Yet Christians must resist the temptation to fight fire with fire. For when you fight fire with fire, you become the fire, you fall to Satan. The battle against Satan is not only against the Secularists, the Islamic terrorists, and the Capitalists: it is against the temptation within to become a Pharisee and a Fascist.

Encouragement for those in Christ

To those who fear they will lose if they follow Christ:

To those who fear the loss of a father, God says:

I will be your Father.

To those who fear the loss of a mother, Gods says:

The Holy Spirit, with and in Mary, will be your Mother.

To those who fear the loss of a brother, God says:

Christ Jesus, your Lord and Savior, will be your Brother.

And each saint will be your brother.

To those who fear the loss of a sister, God says:

Mary Magdalene shall be your sister.

And each saint will be your sister.

To those who fear the loss of a child, God says:

**You will adopt and care for all those souls with less Glory
(Rank) than your own.**

To those who fear the loss of a job or house or wealth, God says:

All riches and security will be yours.

And you will dwell in the House of the Lord FOREVER.

To those who fear the loss of life, God says:

I SHALL GRANT YOU ETERNAL LIFE

The Body testifies to God's Truth

Consider:

Consider your body. Consider how, even in this fallen material world, even the animal body still manifests itself in such spiritual terms.

You have a face that you can't see: so instead of looking inward, you must look *outward upon* the world, upon Creation.

You have two eyes and two ears, but only one mouth, because spiritual sight and spiritual listening are *each* twice as important as speaking, and good speaking can only come through good seeing and good listening.

The animal body must breathe the air, the wind, for life depends on the Wind, the Spirit of God, the Spirit of Life.

The genitals are placed with the anus, and are, on the torso of the human body, polar opposite from the head, for sexual gratification and the gratification of elimination and excretion are both fleshly, while the mind is spiritual and Heavenly.

The heart is placed in the center of the torso, but closer to the head, because you are a *human being*, a composite of flesh and spirit -- the heart joins the animal desires for gratification and the spirit's desire for God.

The stomach is placed in the center of the torso, but closer to the genitals and anus, for the desire for food, for material plenitude, is fleshly, and can be ordered either towards the purely animal, such that one becomes a beast, and is damned, or can be ordered towards the heart and the mind, such that one becomes a saint, and is saved.

Death, Be Not Proud

John Donne

Death, be not proud, though some have called thee
Mighty and dreadful, for thou art not so;
For those whom thou think'st thou dost overthrow,
Die not, poor Death, nor yet canst thou kill me.
From rest and sleep, which but thy pictures be,
Much pleasure; then from thee much more must flow,
And soonest our best men with thee do go,
Rest of their bones, and soul's delivery.
Thou art slave to fate, chance, kings, and desperate men,
And dost with poison, war, and sickness dwell;
And poppy or charms can make us sleep as well
And better than thy stroke; why swell'st thou then?
One short sleep past, we wake eternally,
And death shall be no more; Death, thou shalt die.



A Note on Heaven and Hell

Heaven is an explosion of grace within the soul into eternity. Hell is an implosion of grace within the soul into eternity.

Knowledge is simply the accessing by a spirit, by a multi-dimensional consciousness, of a perception, that wells up or *proceeds*, in truth, from *within* the inner nature of its own spirit, which, necessarily, at the spirit's depths, is the Spirit itself.

And this also clarifies the reality of Hell - for, if a spirit is fundamentally cut off from the source of all its perceptions, that is, the source of all its beatitude, then that *spirit* will *necessarily* persist in a state of asphyxiation, thirst, starvation, maximal pain, emotional deprivation, psychological ruin, and spiritual disintegration -- that is, the ruin of the soul. And, since a spirit is an essentially *eternal* reality, a spirit thus deranged from the Spirit will *necessarily* endure in an *eternal ruin*. Now, of course, the word *endure* is inapposite -- since the eternal ruin is precisely the state of having to persist in a totally *unendurable state* -- that is the precise technical definition of Hell. It is to asphyxiate without being afforded the luxury of dying. It is dying of thirst without having the luxury of dying. It is starving to death without having the luxury of dying. It is constant torture - constant physical pain - without the luxury of your body wearing out and finally going unconscious, or, blessedly, dying. It is permanent isolation from all company and consolation without having the luxury of sleeping or dying. And, in such isolation, one would not even have the consolation of company with one's self, for, even in "loneliness" one can still summon up the consolations of solitude. And solitude is nothing more than the spirit communing with the Spirit that is its source and nourishment. So, when you are riven -- totally isolated from - the Spirit (the Holy Spirit), you do not even have an iota of consolation from your own company. The ruin of Hell is a loneliness like not even the most depressed inmate in a psych ward has ever experienced. For those damned in Hell, Death is a dream of Paradise - a dream that shall never be realized. The Real Hell is a horror so complete and indescribable that all the medieval Catholic paintings and descriptions of it are but a paper cut compared to the eternal, abiding, and totally inescapable Reality. So, avoid, Hell....because it's bad.

THE FATE OF SECULARISM



Landslide

<https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=WM7-PYtXtJM>

The essence of the Spiritual War is a battle between self-preference and God-preference.

THE WISDOM OF RABBI HILLEL

Hillel says, "If I am not for myself, who will be for me? But if I am only for myself, who am I? If not now, when?" Ethics of the Fathers, 1:14

From <http://www.aish.com/sp/pg/48893292.html> by Yaakov Astor

Hillel is widely recognized as one of the wisest people who ever lived. This Mishna is arguably his most famous aphorism. The first clause of the aphorism roughly translates:

"If I am not for myself, who will be for me?"¹

The phrase distinguishes between two selves - "I" (*ani* in Hebrew) and "me" (*li*). It implies that somehow we can have a self called "I" and a self-called "me."

The "I" self is the deepest self. It is our personalized facet of the Divine image. By contrast, the "me" is the persona we develop during life. Elements of the "me" originate from others, from society - from that which is outside "I."

The biblical paradigm for successfully wrestling with this identity crisis is Abraham.

"Go, get yourself [away] from your country, your birthplace, your father's house." (Genesis 12:1)

Literally translated, the words "Go, get yourself away" can be read: "Go to yourself!" The idea is that only by breaking away *from* the external forces that operate upon our "selves" can we hope to come to our true "selves," our destiny.

Abraham was told to break away from three levels of "non-self" forces:

- "Your country" - the nationalistic, political ideology.
- "Your birthplace" - the more local, communal, ethnic undertows.
- "Your father's house" - even the particular familial expectations and norms.

Abraham's future success began when he first broke away from those environmental forces.

Each of us has an authentic, unique self; an "I." Hillel teaches us that if we do not reveal that "I" - the part of my self that is unique - then who are we? What value is there to "me," the persona that operates in the world? It is just a shell, a conglomeration of societal elements originating in others.

A World of Others

The next clause in Hillel's aphorism reads: "But if I am only for myself, who am I?" Here the word for "I" is *anochi*. This is also the first word God used when He revealed Himself on Sinai.

If we do not reveal that "I" - the part of my self that is unique - then who are we?

"I am [*Anochi*] God your Creator who took you out of the land of Egypt, out of the house of bondage" (Exodus, 20:2).

This is the revelation of God's innermost being, bursting out behind its barrier and gushing forth like a subterranean fountain.

Commentators have asked why God identified Himself as "merely" the God who took the Jews out of Egypt. True, the Ten Plagues and the Splitting of the Red Sea were unparalleled miracles. But can they compare to the act of creating the universe?

Wouldn't it have been more impressive for God to identify Himself and the Creator of Heaven and Earth?

However, by describing Himself as the God who just took the Jews out of slavery, the Almighty is focusing on the key defining quality of His relationship to the Jewish people: He cares and is involved with others.

The God of the Torah is not the stoic Unmoved Mover of Greek philosophy. He is not the faceless, uncaring God of the Deist. He is intensely interested in human affairs. He came down into the Land of Egypt to free His people "from the house of bondage."

If we want to emulate God, we cannot stay within the isolated ego.

And that is implied by the word "*anochi*." *Anochi* is the proclamation of intimate nearness between the speaker and the listener.² It is an "I" that encompasses "others," and is thereby infinitely more whole. If we want to emulate God, we cannot stay within the isolated ego. We must start with the self (*ani*), but then move out into the world of others. By so doing, we free them and ourselves from bondage and reveal a greater self (*anochi*). It is a self that is simultaneously a part of a greater whole.

There is a unique "I" in the universe and it has only been entrusted to one human being: you. If that unique "I" does not somehow find expression, then the world will never know it. A precious unique "I" has failed to be experienced. That is a tragedy.

However, once that "I" has discovered and learned to express its individuality, it needs to take the next step and bring it out into the world. Each of us has something unique to contribute and no one else can bring it into the world.

If Not Now, When?

The third clause of Hillel's aphorism reads: "If not now, when?" What does this somewhat enigmatic phrase have to do with the struggle of self?

The clause is describing an important step in bringing the process of self-actualization to fruition. It's saying: "Stop procrastinating! If not now, when? If you're not going to develop your self now - if you're not going to make that trip, take that course, meet that person, read that book - when will you? Get moving on it NOW!"

Sometimes the very thing that can give us the most satisfaction - the key unlocking the doorway to our selves - is the very thing we deny most. It is the door we most fear opening. So we keep the key far out of sight to prevent it from reminding us that there's even a door to be unlocked. We design our lives and busy ourselves from dawn to dusk with activities that rob us of the time to soberly take up the meaning of life and what we need to do to make it truly meaningful.

Even Moses, at the burning bush, when God told him He had chosen him to lead the Children of Israel out of bondage, said, "Who am I?" Even Moses didn't recognize the full extent of his own greatness and acknowledge his hero/redeemer self.

Sometimes we're the last to know how great we are.

Sometimes we're the last to know how great we are, and how much greater we can become. So we procrastinate - even for precisely that which we long for most. And there's nothing we long for more than the expression of our deepest self. That's why Hillel feels it vital to remind us that it's not enough to be aware of the need; we have to act on it. Continually. Relentlessly. Otherwise, what's life for? And if not now, when?

A Glowing Coal

Whether one is in the midst of developing one's basic "I" - his true inner self - or moving beyond that into development of one's "*anochi*" and sharing himself with others, each of us has a natural holiness. At our core is a sacred, transcendent self. The self glows like an eternal light.

Why then can we feel at times so unholy, so mundane, so dark?

Because we let it get bombarded with influences that heap layers upon layers of soot on our inner, glowing light. We're creatures open to inspiration. However, only one who nurtures the seed of inspiration succeeds in becoming an inspiration to others. A person feels a spark of holiness, has an inspiring experience, yearns momentarily for something more, but then does something unholy, or simply comes home and turns on the TV. Mindlessness becomes a way of life.

The soul - the sacred self - is the most precious organ. But it needs to be nurtured. It's like a piece of coal - do nothing and it's a cold, dark piece of rock; ignite and fan it, and it will glow. To glow is natural. Each of us has a natural beauty, a grandeur, and the absolute free will to experience a state of holiness. Our job is to keep our soul glowing. At the very least, we need to periodically extricate ourselves from negative influences to let it glow.

Find Yourself

A man once approached one of the great Chassidic leaders, who in turn asked him, "For what did you come here?"

"To find God."

"Then you came for nothing. You're wasting your time."

"Why?"

"God is everywhere."

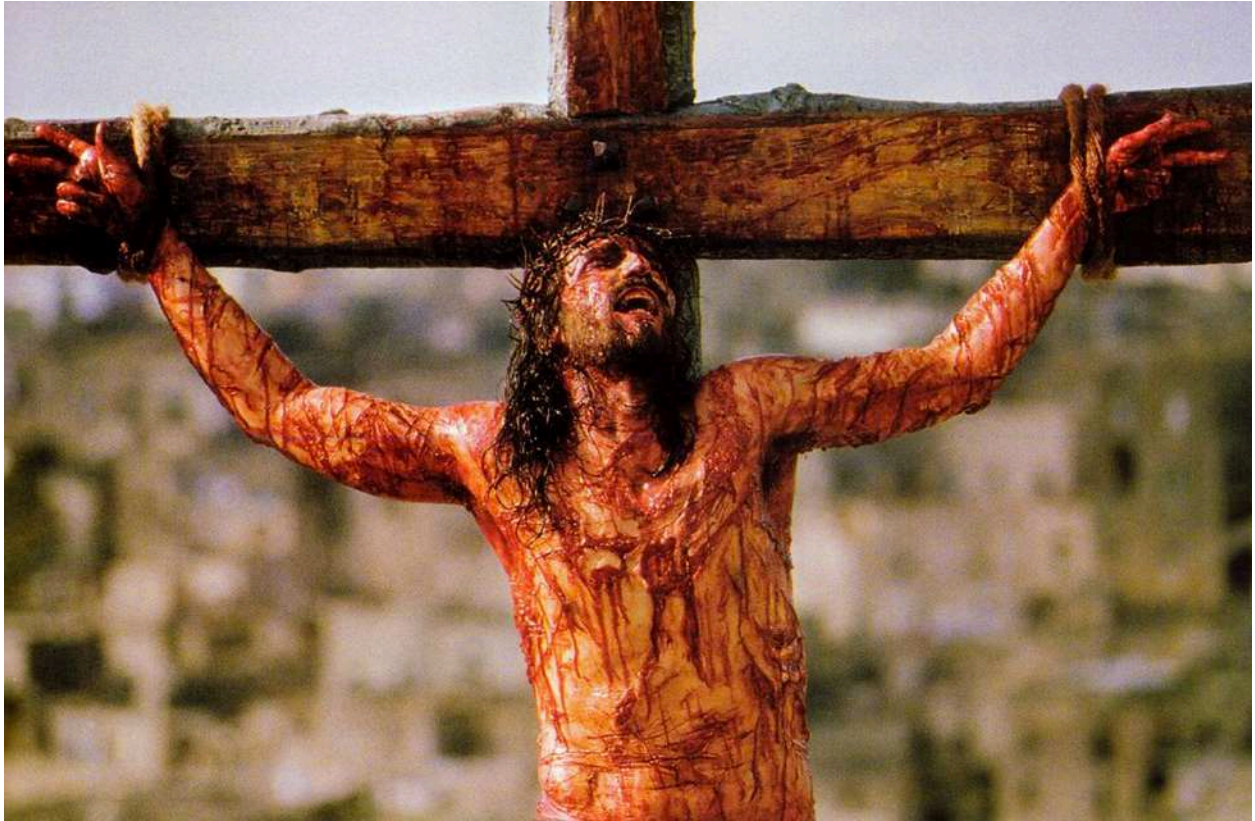
"Then, tell me, master, why should I have come?"

"To find yourself."

¹ The words literally translate: "If there is no "I" (ani) to me (li), who is me?" Eam ain ani li, mee li.

² Rabbi Samson Raphael Hirsch, Commentary to Torah, Exodus 20:2.

The Face of God



The God of the Torah is not the stoic Unmoved Mover of Greek philosophy. He is not the faceless, uncaring God of the Deist. He is intensely interested in human affairs. He came down into the Land of Egypt to free His people "from the house of bondage."

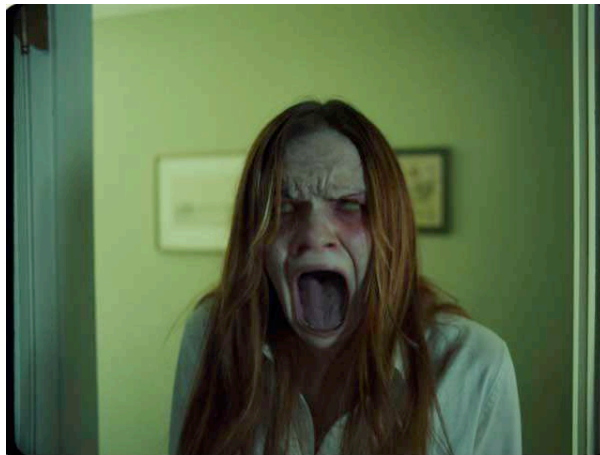
The Face of Islam

Or, You-Know-Who

A Real Gent



I always win, Christ, one way or another.



Islam is a sociopath

And its pal, Secular Liberalism, is a thug



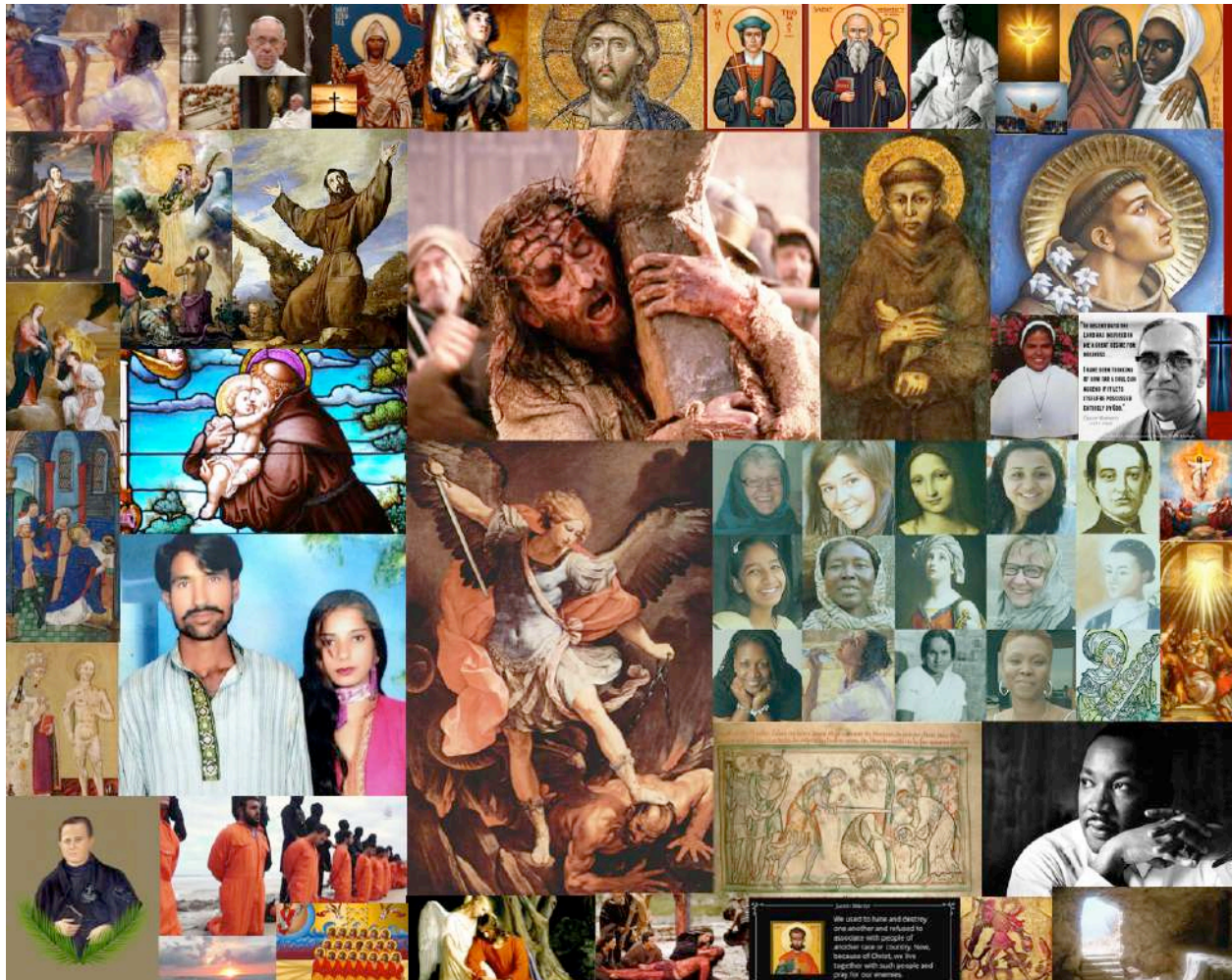
Just a couple of gents

*Love,
Sicily*

GOD'S HOLY EMPIRE OF PEACE - COMING TO A CITY NEAR YOU



WHEN YOU LET CHRIST STAND WITH YOU,
YOU'RE STANDING WITH AN ARMY
The Empire of Darkness will have its Day.
And then God will destroy it.
THIS CHURCH WILL TRIUMPH
OVER ISLAM, SECULARISM, THE
RICH, THE ANTI-CHRIST AND
ALL COMERS



MORE ON THE RELIGION OF PEACE... Well, you know, bits and pieces....

Jesuit Scholar: Seeking to Defend Islam at All Costs Is Betraying the Truth

<http://www.ncregister.com/blog/edward-pentin/jesuit-scholar-seeking-to-defend-islam-at-all-costs-is-betraying-the-truth>

In an interview with the Register, Egyptian Greek Melkite Jesuit Father Henri Boulad explains why he believes Islamist terrorists are applying what their religion teaches them, and why the Church fails to address this because she has fallen prey to a leftist ideology that is destroying the West.

[Edward Pentin](#)

The Church should not defend Islam “at all costs” and seek to “exonerate it from the horrors committed every day in its name” or else “one ends up betraying the truth,” a leading Jesuit scholar of Islam has asserted.

Greek Melkite Jesuit Father Henri Boulad believes that when it comes to dealing with Islam, the Catholic Church has succumbed to a “liberal left ideology which is destroying the West” based on the pretext of “openness, tolerance and Christian charity.”

In a June 10 interview with the Register, Father Boulad reveals that he shared these sentiments with Pope Francis in a letter he wrote to him last August, telling him that many think the Pope’s own views on Islam are “aligned with this ideology, and that, from complacency, you go from concessions to concessions, and compromises in compromises, at the expense of the truth.”

“Christians,” he wrote, “are expecting something from you other than vague and harmless declarations that may obscure reality.”

Some said the Pope took a diplomatic yet slightly firmer line on Islam when he gave an [address](#) to Al Azhar university in Cairo at the end of April.

Father Boulad, 85, an Egyptian and a relative of the Jesuit scholar of Islam, Father Samir Khalil Samir, also discusses in this interview why he believes Islamists are merely carrying out what their religion teaches, whether Islam is capable of reform, and how, despite its problems, the religion can help the Church in acting as a bulwark against secularist ideology.

Father Boulad, what evidence is there to show that Islam is inherently violent?

Here are clear statements of the Koran itself :

"Kill the unbelievers wherever you find them." Koran 2:191

"Make war on the infidels living in your neighbourhood." Koran 9:123

"When opportunity arises, kill the infidels wherever you catch them." Koran 9:5

"Any religion other than Islam is not acceptable." Koran 3:85

"The Jews and the Christians are perverts; fight them." ... Koran 9:30

"Maim and crucify the infidels if they criticize Islam" Koran 5:33

"Punish the unbelievers with garments of fire, hooked iron rods, boiling water; melt their skin and bellies." Koran 22:19

"The unbelievers are stupid; urge the Muslims to fight them." Koran 8:65

"Muslims must not take the infidels as friends." Koran 3:28

"Terrorize and behead those who believe in scriptures other than the Qur'an." Koran 8:12

"Muslims must muster all weapons to terrorize the infidels." Koran 8:60

Added to these are a few samples of Muhammad's teachings and life. Here are some quotations taken from Muslim sources:

- "I have been commanded to fight against people till they testify that there is no god but Allah, and that Muhammad is the messenger of Allah" - (Muslim 1:33)

- "Fight everyone in the way of Allah and kill those who disbelieve in Allah." (Ibn Ishaq 992). Muhammad's life was a succession of warfare, plundering and killings... and every Muslim is invited to imitate this supreme "model".

- Muhammad owned and traded slaves - (Sahih Muslim 3901), and ordered his followers to stone women for adultery. - (Muslim 4206)
- He himself beheaded 800 Jewish men and boys, (Abu Dawud 4390) ordered the murder of women (Ibn Ishaq 819, 995) and killed those who insulted him. - (Bukhari 56:369, 4:241)
- According to him, Jihad in the way of Allah elevates one's position in Paradise by a hundred fold. - (Muslim 4645)
- In his last ten years, he ordered 65 military campaigns and raids. - (Ibn Ishaq) and killed captives taken in battle. - (Ibn Ishaq 451)
- He encouraged his men to rape enslaved women, (Abu Dawood 2150, Quran 4:24), he put apostates to death, plundered and lived off the wealth of others, captured and enslaved non-Muslim people.
- After Mohammed's death, his followers attacked and conquered the populations of 28 countries and declared holy war on the people of five major world religions.

Examples from Islamic history:

- In the first 240 years, 11 of the first 32 caliphs were murdered by fellow Muslims.
- Muslim clerics have always engaged in or condoned terrorism all along history and up till now.
- We witness daily religious violence against Hindus, Jews, Buddhists, Muslims, Christians. The converts to Christianity are beheaded.

- The victims of slave traffic done by the Arabs during almost ten centuries amount to tens of millions of people.
- Each year, thousands of Christian homes and churches are torched or bombed by Muslim mobs, and hundreds of Christians, priests, pastors, nuns and other church workers are murdered at the hands of Islamic extremists. The so-called justification varies, from charges of apostasy or evangelism, to purported "blasphemy" or "insulting" Islam. Innocent people have even been hacked to death by devout Muslims over cartoons. Islam is an open-ended declaration of war against non-Muslims.

Are the extremists simply being faithful to an authentic Islam in your view?

Clearly YES. Extremists are just applying what their religion teaches them to do.

Should the Pope and the Vatican shed what some view as political correctness and address Islam for what scholars and others believe it really is?

Of course. To illustrate my view, I quote here some excerpts of my personal letter to Pope Francis addressed to him last August:

“It seems to me that — on the pretext of openness, tolerance and Christian charity — the Catholic Church has fallen into the trap of the liberal left ideology which is destroying the West. Anything that does not espouse this ideology is immediately stigmatized in the name of "political correctness". Many think that a certain number of your positions are aligned with this

ideology and that, from complacency, you go from concessions to concessions and compromises in compromises at the expense of the truth.”

“The West is in an ethical and moral debacle, both religious and spiritual. And it is not by relativizing the painful reality that these societies will be helped to emerge from their disarray. By defending at all costs Islam and seeking to exonerate it from the horrors committed every day in its name, one ends up betraying the truth.”

“Jesus said to us, 'the Truth will set you free.' It is because he refused any compromise on this point that he knew the fate which was his. Following him, countless Christians preferred martyrdom to compromise, as is the case in Egypt and elsewhere to this day.”

“In the extreme fragility of Christians — both in the West and in the East — they are expecting something from you other than vague and harmless declarations that may obscure reality. Your predecessor, Pope Benedict XVI, had the courage to take a clear and unambiguous position. His attitude has raised a lot of shields and earned him many enemies. But is not a frank confrontation healthier than a dialogue based on compromise? When the Jewish hierarchs asked the apostles to stop announcing the Gospel, they replied: "As for us, we cannot not proclaim what we have seen and heard ..." (Acts 4:20).

“It is high time to emerge from a shameful and embarrassed silence in the face of this Islamism that attacks the West and the rest of the world. **A systematically conciliatory attitude is interpreted by the majority of Muslims as a sign of fear and weakness. [Emphasis Added]** If Jesus said to us: Blessed are the peacemakers, he did not say to us: Blessed are the

pacifists. Peace is peace at any cost, at any price. Such an attitude is a pure and simple betrayal of truth.”

How much is violence more of an Arabic problem, given the significantly fewer violent attacks in, for example, Indonesia, the world’s largest Muslim nation?

One can say that ‘Arabs’ are naturally violent. But the same could be said of the Barbarians who conquered Europe in the past. These invaders have been progressively ‘civilized’ by the Christian faith to become what they are now. In my opinion, the religious element plays an essential role in shaping a society. The fact that Christian ‘Arabs’ are different than Muslim Arabs is a proof of the strong connection between religion and society.

Are there genuine and workable possibilities for reform of Islam and can dialogue ever be effective?

All attempts to reform Islam by liberal open-minded Muslims have tragically failed so far and I doubt that a ‘reformed Islam’ will still remain ‘Islam’. Here are six unsuccessful attempts to reform Islam in the last two centuries:

1. Reformism in the 19th century: Afghani, Mohamed Abdo, Rashid Reda
2. The Renaissance — or Nahda — in late 19th-early 20th century: Yasji, Girgi Zeidan, Taha Hussein, Salama Moussa, Tewfik el-Hakim...
3. Kemalism and the secularization of the Turkish state — Kemal Atatürk — 1923
4. The Baath and its Pan-Arabism ideology: Michel Aflaq, Bitar, George Habash and the PLO

5. Egyptian nationalism and the neutrality of the state (principle of secularism) – 1919 : Saad Zaghloul: "Religion is God's affair and the State everybody's."

6. Reversal of the decree on the abrogating and abrogated. At the instigation of El-Azhar institution, Mahmoud Mohamed Taha was hanged in Khartoum on 18.1.1985 for wanting to give the pre-eminence to the Mekkan verses over the Medina ones inciting to war, hatred and intolerance.

The Church has often allied with Islamic countries in the past in defense of life issues. Islamic countries can also act as a filter against secularist ideas, preventing such trends as gender ideology from entering their society. How can Islam's strengths in these areas be best promoted despite its associations with violence?

On such ethical issues, and others, the Church should ally with Muslims to fight against whatever demeans and degrades the human being. This is fertile ground for understanding between the two religions. It can also pave the way for us to denounce anything which is morally unacceptable in Islamic teaching.

***TURN* from the Wicked, Murderous Heart of Islam *TO* the Sacred Heart of Jesus Christ, who is Love**

Deuteronomy 7:6-11

Moses said to the people:

"You are a people sacred to the LORD, your God;
he has chosen you from all the nations on the face of the earth
to be a people peculiarly his own.

It was not because you are the largest of all nations
that the LORD set his heart on you and chose you,
for you are really the smallest of all nations.

It was because the LORD loved you
and because of his fidelity to the oath he had sworn your fathers,
that he brought you out with his strong hand
from the place of slavery,

and ransomed you from the hand of Pharaoh, king of Egypt.

Understand, then, that the LORD, your God, is God indeed,
the faithful God who keeps his merciful covenant
down to the thousandth generation

toward those who love him and keep his commandments,
but who repays with destruction a person who hates him;

he does not dally with such a one,
but makes them personally pay for it.
You shall therefore carefully observe the commandments,
the statutes and the decrees that I enjoin on you today."

Psalms 103:1-2, 3-4, 6-7, 8, 10

R. (cf. 17) **The Lord's kindness is everlasting to those who fear him.**

Bless the LORD, O my soul;
all my being, bless his holy name.

Bless the LORD, O my soul;
and forget not all his benefits.

R. **The Lord's kindness is everlasting to those who fear him.**

He pardons all your iniquities,
heals all your ills.

He redeems your life from destruction,
crowns you with kindness and compassion.

R. **The Lord's kindness is everlasting to those who fear him.**

Merciful and gracious is the LORD,
slow to anger and abounding in kindness.

Not according to our sins does he deal with us,
nor does he requite us according to our crimes.

R. **The Lord's kindness is everlasting to those who fear him.**

1 John 4:7-16

Beloved, let us love one another,

because **love is of God;**

everyone who loves is begotten by God and knows God.

Whoever is without love does not know God, for God is love.

In this way the love of God was revealed to us:

**God sent his only Son into the world
so that we might have life through him.**

In this is love:

*not that we have loved God, but that he loved us
and sent his Son as expiation for our sins.*

**Beloved, if God so loved us,
we also must love one another.**

No one has ever seen God.

Yet, if we love one another, God remains in us,
and his love is brought to perfection in us.

This is how we know that we remain in him and he in us,
that he has given us of his Spirit.

Moreover, we have seen and testify

that the Father sent his Son as savior of the world.

Whoever acknowledges that Jesus is the Son of God,
God remains in him and he in God.

***We have come to know and to believe in the love God has for
us.***

**God is love, and whoever
remains in love
remains in God and God
in him.**

Love is patient, love is kind. It is not jealous, love is not pompous, it is not inflated, it is not rude, it does not seek its own interests, it is not quick-tempered, it does not brood over injury, it does not rejoice over wrongdoing but rejoices with the truth. It bears all things, believes all things, hopes all things, endures all things.

Love does not saw off people's heads while they are still alive. Love does not bomb concerts filled with little children. Love does not enslave whole races of people. Love does not murder whole races of people. Love does not enslave women and subject them to rape. Love does not commit mass shootings. Love does not stab people and shoot into crowds. Love does not fly planes into buildings. Love does not set up governments and tyrannize arrogantly over people. Love does not create networks of terrorists. Love does not launder money and feed at the same trough with organized crime. Love does not build armies in the desert, to be unleashed on cities full of civilians. Love does not seek to obtain nuclear weapons to murder millions of innocent people in an instant.

Love does NOT seek to murder the world.

Love seeks to SAVE the world.

Love never fails. If there are prophecies, they will be brought to nothing; if tongues, they will cease; if knowledge, it will be brought to nothing. For we know partially and we prophesy partially, but when the perfect comes, the partial will pass away.

When I was a child, I used to talk as a child, think as a child, reason as a child; when I became a man, I put aside childish things. At present we see indistinctly, as in a *mirror*, but then face to face.

At present, I know partially; then I shall know fully as I am fully known.

**So faith, hope, love remain,
these three; but the greatest of
these is **love**.**

*St. Paul the Apostle
The Apostle to the Gentiles of the True and Only Living God
1 Corinthians 13:1-13*

Sybok realizes the truth.

<https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=x9sqkahSziU>

Star Trek V: The Final Frontier

R. Alleluia, alleluia.

Take my yoke upon you, says the Lord;
and learn from me, for I am meek and humble of heart.

R. Alleluia, alleluia.

Matthew 11:25-30

At that time Jesus exclaimed:

"I give praise to you, Father, Lord of heaven and earth,

for although you have hidden these things from the wise and the learned you have revealed them to little ones.

Yes, Father, such has been your gracious will.

All things have been handed over to me by my Father.

No one knows the Son except the Father, and no one knows the Father except the Son and anyone to whom the Son wishes to reveal him.

"Come to me, all you who labor and are burdened,

**and I will give you rest.
Take my yoke upon you
and learn from me,
for I am meek and
humble of heart;
and you will find rest
for yourselves.
For my yoke is easy,
and my burden light."**

An Era of Peace

After the Church triumphs over Islam, Secularism, and the Capitalist Empire of Greed, there will come a brief respite. The Triumph of the Church will involve the Minor Tribulation, after which will come a minor Era of Peace.

Only after the Great Tribulation will the lasting Age of Peace come.

And, after a millennium (which simply means an unimaginably long time), the Second Coming, the final Parousia, will come, which is the end of time, the fulfillment of the Christogenesis of the Cosmos at the Omega Point, when the Risen Christ Himself, totally identified with the Cosmic Church, will finally defeat Satan and restore the Cosmos to God.

But back to our own times, in this 3rd Millennium, which is not yet the Great Millennium of Peace.

The minor Era of Peace that will follow the Minor Tribulation will fulfill Revelation 11:15, “Then the seventh angel blew his trumpet. There were loud voices in heaven, saying, ‘The kingdom of the world now belongs to our Lord and to his Anointed, and he will reign forever and ever.’”

During this time, the Great Church will grow in strength and wisdom and faith and hope and love. The Gospel will spread to every part of the planet, and whole new lands will convert en masse to Christ.

Peace, freedom, and love will restore society, and faith and knowledge of the Lord will pour forth from the Spirit as never before.

Realizing that he cannot destroy the Church from within, Satan will attack the Church from without.⁵³

Satan will organize what remains left to him among his Children, the Children of Satan, into a force for restoring his Trifecta of Sin, the foundation of his power: Lust, Pride, and Fear.

Satan will seek, in many duplicitous ways, to restore the religions of sex, money, and murder that have so gripped our planet in the early 21st century.

⁵³ <https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=5inA7tSTzes>

Eventually, through duplicity, and probably through exploiting certain weaknesses of structure and faith in the minor Era of Peace's social order, Satan will prevail and the Empire of the Anti-Christ will be established.

His Empire cannot be militarily defeated. So, that's not where the focus of a Christian should be placed.

Rather, a Christian should concentrate all of his or her faith into ***not being deceived by the Anti-Christ and the False Prophet and their Empire.***

So, when a political or religious leader starts resurrecting Islam, and ideas related to Islam and pre-Christian Judaism....your response should be.....

A Sith Lord?!

<https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=djcb7XhhhKs>

Gentile Christianity and Jewish Christianity

We can also note that people in the end times should beware the Muslim version of Christianity. Islam is obsessed with the ridiculous idea that the original Christianity did not proclaim that Jesus *died* for our sins. The Death of Jesus, and his Descent into Hell, is the absolute necessity for the forgiveness of sins. Islam's basic structure *requires* that there had once been an Islamic Christianity that did *not* contain this essential element of Christ's substitutionary atoning absolution of the Christian believer's sins. Islam asserts that the world is spiritually neutral, and that the redemption of the human race from sin is therefore unnecessary. All that is necessary is for *instruction* of the human race, since people, who are spiritually neutral, can easily do good and not evil, if they so choose. Islam asserts that God sent prophets to instruct people in God's Will, among them Moses and Jesus. It further asserts that Jesus simply proclaimed an instruction of righteousness, piety, and prayer, the same as his "predecessors" and the same as Muhammed, which Islam considers to be the Final Prophet. So, Islam sees all of salvation history as a simple restatement of the Islamic Instruction, which has its final iteration with Muhammed's Koran. This is entirely in line with Islam's strategy of co-opting Judaism and Christianity, which are, naturally, its main targets.

Of course, no such Islamic Christianity ever existed.

That being said, there is a kind of Christianity that did exist in the 1st and 2nd centuries, that *was* different from the Christianity of today.

Christianity has lost sight of a basic truth. The most tragic and damaging schism is not the East-West Schism or the Catholic-Protestant Schism. All three of the major traditions (Catholicism, Orthodoxy, and Protestantism) are forms of Hellenistic Christianity, the Christianity of the Gentiles promulgated by St. Paul.

But Hellenistic Christianity, which is the only kind of Christianity that exists (basically), is in schism, (as such), from Jewish Christianity. That is the Ultimate Schism, which has been the ruination of the Church -- the real hobbling -- of the Church since the 1st and 2nd centuries. And we lose sight of this Ultimate Schism because the other half of the schism, Jewish Christianity, no longer exists, because traditional Jews and the Romans stamped it out.

The fulfillment of God's vision is the procession from God-as-God to God-in-All. Hellenistic Christianity focuses on the All part of that equation. Jewish Christianity focused on the God part.

Think about it. All the Hellenistic Christian traditions - Protestant, Catholic, and Orthodox - focus on the All -- on the human race and creation. The Protestant dwells on the believer's faith. The Catholic dwells on the communion of saints, the Eucharist (Christ *in all*), and Mary, the most perfected saint-believer of those in the "All". The Orthodox dwells on the Trinity and the Liturgy and the Traditions -- the Liturgy and the Traditions being God's presence to the All, and the Trinity being, to multiplicitous minds like ours, something that too often obscures the Oneness of God (although, in truth, the Trinity is the linchpin of the Oneness of God, as I have shown).

But where is the Christianity that focuses on the "God" in this "God-in-All"? Where is the Christianity that focuses on the Oneness of God, and not just His Total, Integral Oneness, in reference to Creation and the human race, but God-as-God: God *not* in reference to the human race?

Protestantism is obsessed with the believer's faith. Catholicism is obsessed with personal moral purity and the immanence of transcendence. Orthodoxy is obsessed with human theories of that transcendence and human practices in devotion to that transcendence.

But where is the Christianity that doesn't focus primarily on faith, because God doesn't have faith, He has Himself? Where is the Christianity that focuses on the transcendence, rather than the immanence? Where is the Christianity that doesn't trouble itself with theories, because to God Himself, He is not a theory, but the Ultimate Reality in no need of an explanation? And what use does God have for the liturgy, *for Himself*? The liturgy is for the benefit of the human race.

The now-obliterated Jewish Christianity was supposed to be the reciprocal pole, that was meant to work in tandem with Hellenistic Christianity. Jewish Christianity would have elaborated the God part of God-in-All. So, because the Church has become nothing more than simple Hellenistic Christianity, the whole Faith of the Church is totally lopsided towards the All, towards the Creation and the human race, and God -- the Father -- has kind of faded into the background.... when the Father is the core and essence of any faith, immanence, or liturgy. We have a rich Christology and a devotion to the Spirit's work in us....but we lack a palpable love of God-as-God. Not as God the Christ, our Savior, not the God *we* have faith in, the God *we* have a relationship with, the God *present in our world*, the God whom *we* serve in *our* liturgy --- but simply God-in-Himself, God as He was on the Seventh Day, when He withdrew from the Creative Act, and was totally Himself-as-Himself again: God at rest on the Eternal Sabbath.

Hellenistic Christianity is one leg, and Jewish Christianity was the other leg, one eye meant to see with the other eye. So we stumble, and have a one-dimensional view of the world, seeing *first* ourselves, and not *first* God. The Church, the Hellenistic Church, without its Jewish sister Church, can never be the

Whole Church, because such a Church will always be self-absorbed, more concerned with the salvation of the believer, rather than the Glory of the God who requires no salvation, but condescends to sacrifice and suffer in order to save.

That is why St. Paul says of the Jews, “For if their rejection is the reconciliation of the world, what will their acceptance be but life from the dead?” (Romans 11:15)

I don't mean to mar the majesty of our theological subject, but I believe that a popular literature reference would actually be useful. In Isaac Asimov's *Foundation* series of science fiction books, a Galactic Empire ruled the Galaxy in the far future. (Asimov's Galactic Empire was morally neutral and ambiguous, not evil.) Hari Seldon, a scientist, had developed an historical science that could predict future events. Seldon saw that the Empire would inevitably collapse - and that nothing could stop it. So Seldon designed a plan: He would settle a Foundation of academics at the edge of the Galaxy, and that Foundation would develop into a Second Galactic Empire by proceeding along a set historical course designed by Seldon, the great scientist. This course was called the Seldon Plan.

The Foundation, over the course of centuries, grew into a powerful interstellar state and preserved and expanded civilization throughout the galaxy, developing formidable technologies that exceeded even the old Empire.

Later books in the series reveal that Seldon had also established a Second Foundation. The first Foundation, the main scene of action in the novels, focused on the physical sciences, but it had no knowledge of Seldon's historical science, which Asimov called “psychohistory”.

The Second Foundation, which the First Foundation didn't know existed (and wasn't supposed to know existed), was based on the old capital planet of the old Empire, and that group of academics focused on the *mental sciences*, being the heirs of Seldon's psychohistory.

The series' idea is that it is an extravagant and vain notion that any one person, no matter how brilliant, could design a plan that could simply work like clockwork over the course of history. It would be necessary for this Second Foundation, trained in psychohistory and advancing the science, to adjust the Seldon Plan as unforeseen eventualities arose.

As should be plain, I offer a metaphor, in which Hellenistic Christianity - *our* Christianity - is the First Foundation, and Jewish Christianity was *supposed* to be the Second Foundation, but was stamped out...in accordance with the actual Divine Plan of Salvation, which doesn't need adjusting.

The analogy is not perfect, but I think, especially for those familiar with the novels, (and they're quick and enjoyable reads), it illustrates a truth: the Church of Christ was supposed to be *a coordination* between the Gentile Church and the Jewish Church.

Remember, Paul was the preeminent leader among the Gentile Church, while James, the Brother of the Lord, who we know precious little about in comparison to Paul, was the leader of the Jewish Church in Jerusalem. Peter held a kind of broad prominence and acted as a go-between between Paul and James, holding the Whole Church together, which is precisely the Petrine role and capacity.

And one of Paul's major concerns was the collection for the Church in Jerusalem. Paul did not envisage the collection as just a charitable gift meant to practically help people in need, although, of course, it was that. Its *spiritual* purpose was to serve as a symbol of the unity of the Gentile Church with the Jewish Church.

Paul's Christian message, while rooted in the One God, always spoke in a way appealing to the Gentiles, emphasizing the immanence of God, the salvation afforded by the God-Man Christ Jesus, and the theoretical elaboration of what it meant to be the Flesh of Christ. Paul was also far more willing to deemphasize elements of Jewish practices that made the Gospel of Christ less appealing to Gentiles.

Likewise, Scripture indicates that James' Jewish Christian Church held fast to the practice of Judaism.

This is not an inconsistency, as the Council of Jerusalem confirmed: Gentile Christians were not bound by the whole Mosaic Law, while Jewish Christians remained under the Mosaic Law.

I think Scripture makes its reasonably clear, and it also follows as a logical consequence from their observance of the Mosaic law, that James' Jewish Church focused far more on God's role in salvation, and much less on the divinity of Christ.

After all, if James was Jesus' brother, or stepbrother, or a close relative, maybe we can imagine that James, while acknowledging and realizing in some way that Jesus was God, wasn't exactly....shall we say, gung-ho about that doctrine. Not in the same way as Paul, who first encountered Christ as the Risen Christ in a vision in the sky. If you grew up with someone, and you also grew up in a very anti-polytheistic Judaism (rightfully so), proclaiming that your relative was God might not end up becoming your most full-throated emphasis.

So, while Paul saw Christ in the believers of the Churches he was planting, and thus developed the rich Christological vision of Christ dwelling within each believer, I figure that James probably saw Christ more as the Mediator of the

Father, the Father's Servant, grounding Christ primarily not in the community of believers, but in the reality of the Father, of the Most High God. And that would naturally lead to an emphasis on the Torah, rather than an emphasis on Paul's Gospel. While Paul looked outward, towards the horizon of the Church, I would figure that James and his Jewish Christian community looked inward, scrutinizing the Torah for deeper and deeper insights into the meaning of Jesus' role as the Christ, which would necessarily be grounded in the nature of YHWH.

In other words, the three major Hellenistic traditions of Christianity sling mud at each other: You're not focused on faith enough. You're not focused on the sacraments enough. You're not focused on the liturgy and theology enough.

But Jewish Christianity, if it could be resurrected, might say to Hellenistic Christianity as a whole: You're not focused on the Torah enough, for in the Torah G-d the Father, G-d Most High, is most revealed, and Jesus is the Son of the Father....so how can you understand Jesus...or Yehoshua...if you don't have a deep, rich, scholarly, thorough knowledge of the Torah?

Not that I would say that Gentile Christians such as ourselves must observe the particulars of the Torah, but, certainly, if we have even a glancing familiarity with the richness of the Talmudic, Kabbalistic and modern Rabbinical knowledge, isn't it pretty obvious that much of that knowledge is indeed valid, and, if put in a Christian light, would illuminate the nature of the Father such that we could have a warp speed advance in our understanding of the Son?

In other words, Hellenistic Christianity has spent two thousand years developing its understanding of God's extension *into* the world, *into* the Creation -- into the believer's heart and mind, into the physical, material reality of the world, into the many dimensions of spiritual reality.

But Jewish Christianity could offer the necessarily complementary, and, indeed principal and primary, insight into the Oneness of God, which is the ultimate essence of the Trinity -- for the Trinity is a testament to the multi-dimensional Inner Life of God....but that Inner Life is only an Inner Life, and not a spiritual chaos...precisely because it is ONE.

The Stealthy Schism: Traditionalism v. Modernism

From all of this, we should be able to see more clearly to the heart of the schism, heresies, and errors of those schismatic protestants who call themselves “Catholic” “traditionalists”. Some “Catholic” people and organizations claim that they alone preserve the true and only and perfect Catholic faith, and that the Pope and all the bishops of the world have defiled the faith, such that the Pope is not really the Pope and the bishops are not really the bishops and the Church is not really the Church, and then you get whack jobs running around crowning themselves Pope.

To this line of thinking we have to thank the advent of those heroes of the faith: Pope Krav I, Pope Michael, Pope Linus II, Pope Pius XIII, Pope Leo XIV, Pope Boniface Atticus I, Pope Peter II, Pope Emmanuel, another Peter II, Pope Gregory XIX, Pope Adrian VII, a third Pope Peter II, Pope Peter Romanus II, a fourth Pope Peter II, a fifth Pope Peter II, Pope Peter-Athanasius II (I suppose that’s technically not a sixth or seventh Pope Peter II...I guess he’s saved by the Athanasius), and a Pope John Paul III....among others.

I have a modest proposal:

His Holiness, Pope Yeezus



If the world has to end, and the Church has to collapse, let’s do it in style. And, hey, that means that Kim Kardashian would be the First Lady of the Catholic Church. Excuse me, Mother Kimberly Kardashian West, High Priestess of the Holy Sepulchre and Pontiff’s Consort.

Now, this is not to say that the post-Vatican II Church has been pristine, or even much good. On the positive side, it has denounced anti-Semitism, fostered truly Christian relations with the Jewish people and people of other religions, fostered an openness to modernity and science that actually makes encountering the reality of modernity and science possible (rather than being cloistered in the closet of a fuming arrogance and a befuddled ignorance), and made the reunification of the Church possible because it actually listens to and engages with Protestants and the Orthodox rather than savaging them as Godless, Hell-bound rebels who, one fine and perfect day, will all either magically disappear or magically convert wholesale to Catholicism in sackcloth and ashes.

But on the negative side, the post-Vatican II Church has presided over the rapid and precipitous decline of Mass-going Catholics, a selling out of the Church to pro-abortion and pro-radical homosexual forces, a euthanizing of the eschatological and supernatural elements of the Faith, (such that they still float around, but, in terms of the inner spiritual life of the faithful, we might as well live in a Modernist Church of Pius X's nightmares).....oh, and wait, what was that other thing?....oh, yes, the rampant pedophilia (in the near past) and active, practicing homosexuality (right now) of the priesthood and the coverup of pedophilia for decades by every level of the hierarchy, from pastors to bishops to the Vatican itself.

So, it's a mixed bag.

Which is exactly what you should *expect* from the Church!

Because the Church is the Flesh of Christ....immanent and manifest in *our sinful flesh*....it is a transcendent Divine Institution *immanent* in the lives and flesh of a morass of sinful, limited, arrogant, decadent individual human persons.

So, what is the solution?

What the solution always is. Christ, and faith in the Holy Spirit of Christ, which is the Holy Spirit of the Father.

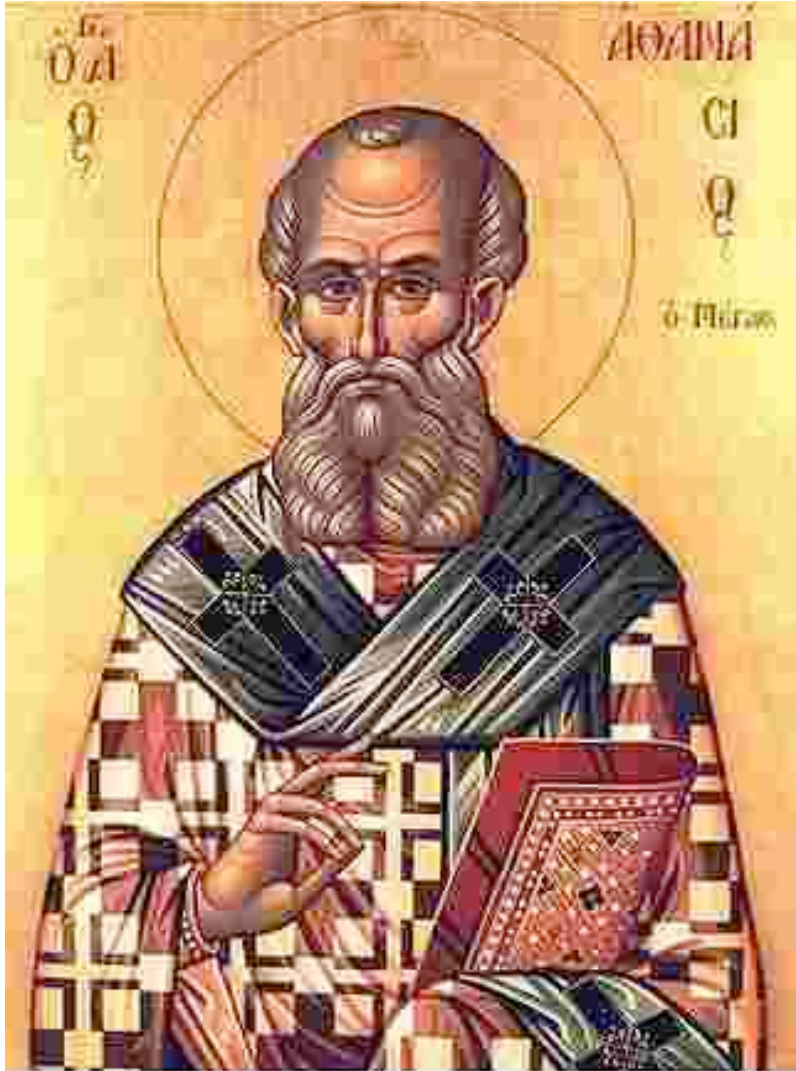
We need to bring together - faithfully, and carefully, and with precision and attention and a scientific accuracy - the eternal and constant truths of the Catholic tradition and join them with the spirit of openness, possibility, multi-dimensionality, and even, when necessary, revision and repentance, so that the Church is neither a backwards, broken-down, laughable anachronism that sputters and convulses in a benighted self-imposed irrelevance *nor* a futuristic, modernistic apostasy that just *please, please, please* wants to be liked and not called a bigot.

The Traditionalists are too arrogant and hidebound and blind, too self-absorbed with their pretensions and self-righteousness, to let the Tradition breathe and live.

And the Modernists are too desperate for relevance and approval and worldly power to preach the Apostolic Tradition and Constant, Holy Faith of the Flesh of Christ.

So I have a real proposal:

Athanasius Contra Mundum
Athanasius Against the World



<http://www.newadvent.org/cathen/02035a.htm>
https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Athanasius_of_Alexandria

The True Church that shall face the reign of the Anti-Christ will be a synthesis of the best elements of the pre-Vatican II Church and the best elements of the post-Vatican II Church. Not a syncretic jumble, but a real scientific splicing of what is true and good in both traditions, and, more important than doctrinal and intellectual matters, a striving within the soul for the Truth of Christ that will permit believers to become martyrs, that they may be reborn as saints.

And the False, Anti-Church of the Anti-Christ that will do the persecuting of the True Church of the Real Christ will be an unholy union of the worst elements of both attitudes and traditions. It will combine all the seething anger, boiling hatred, furious rage, frothing at the mouth, banging on the table, apoplectic insanity, total, blind, lunatic self-righteousness of the Ultra-Traditionalists, with all the wishy-washy, self-serving, weak, cowardly, contemptible, fawning, lascivious, nonsensical, world-adoring, power-lusting, relevance-seeking *apostasy* of the Modernists and Careerists of the Vatican Death Star.

I am a lawyer, so I can shed some light on the problem the Church has been having.

First of all, there is a spiritual problem.

The modernists are disobedient, arrogant, worldly, proud, and lustful. There is just a basic problem of sinfulness among the priesthood, rising like a stench through the bishops and cardinals. Satan has infiltrated the Church. There are even outright Satanists in the hierarchy.

The Enthronement of Lucifer in the Vatican

<https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=AHyY0PV2iVU>

Apostasy

<https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=CETRFnN-2sc>

The traditionalists, even though they are usually right on the substance, *precisely because they are usually right*, fall into the subtle trap (to themselves, obvious to everyone else who has to suffer them) of becoming totally, apoplectically self-righteous.

A Tutorial on Self-Righteousness

<https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=U1bpz4d70TA>

But, even if we get beyond the problem that too many of the modernists are Satanists and heretics and that too many of the traditionalists are assholes, there is still a legitimate and real *intellectual* reason for the divide between traditionalists and modernists.

(And look, if I had to choose between a Satanist/heretic and an asshole, I'll go with the asshole....but, if at all possible, I'll just eat alone, thank you very much.)

That **intellectual** problem is a *legal* intellectual problem. It has to do with the interpretation of rules.

You see, religion, as such, is a rules-based game. I don't mean that in a flippant or irreverent way, I mean that in a scientific-mathematical technical way.

Like law, religion is composed of a mass of propositions. These propositions (1) make truth claims and (2) lay down directions for actions. Both the (1) truth claims and (2) directions are composed of *words*. Words in texts (like Scripture), or in other documents, other texts, like the Didache, the writings of the Fathers, the documents from all the Church Councils, the writings of St. Augustine and the Christian Platonists and of St. Thomas Aquinas and the Scholastics, the writings of the myriad popes, and so forth.

It is a vast maze and morass of *words* -- all words, all the time.

Now, the Catholic, as an essentialist, must believe that, through the maze and morass of the words -- ***through the Forest of the Words*** -- there must, indeed, be Truth. Truth that is the end of the game, the point of the game, the end of the maze, at which point we will no longer be in a maze.

The relativist-postmodernist-deconstructionist can simply luxuriate in the maze, and, in a quite masturbatory way, idle his whole life away in ***truly pointless*** theorizing. For the relativist, the *theoria* is the end. For the relativist, the contemplation *is* what is contemplated.

But, for the Catholic Christian, what is contemplated is *always* **GOD**.

GOD - who is not simply *words* but THE WORD. The Logos, the True Principle, from which *all* proceeds.

YOU SEE? There is a difference between *the words* and THE WORD.

There is a difference between the statements and *what the statements are supposed to represent*.

There is a difference between the *letter* and the Spirit.

There is a difference between our texts *about* God and GOD HIMSELF.

Now, for Scripture, that's not totally true, because, since it is inspired, we Christians believe that, in a fundamental way, the Word *is* **totally** present *within* the Word of God, Scripture, the Bible.

But even so, since we are limited and sinful, and limited because sinful, we need to **interpret** the Bible, and *as soon as we do that* we return to the word game.

Now, a postmodernist literary critic can just write articles and talk, and it's all good, because *no actions need to be decided*.

But, in religion, both actions and beliefs must be decided.

In that respect, it is much like law.

And, in that respect, religion is much unlike science. For science has a standard of reference - the objective material world - that has a basic obviousness to it -- it has an empirical and mathematical obviousness. If a physical formula makes a prediction, and it is not fulfilled, we can determine whether or not the formula is **correct**.

Now, as believers, we believe that science is very much like religion in that both account for things that are real.

Science attempts to account for the material world.

Religion attempts to account for God.

If anything, since this world is sundered by sin and under the dominion of Satan, we might actually say -- quite rightly -- that religion is far more real a discipline than science.

Now, with religion, like law, we have no external standard **to which we can directly appeal**. If we could summon God in person at the Vatican or anywhere and say, "What should we do?" and He could give straight, clear answers that *no one* **could** deny (at least, who was sane), then religion, even in that regard, would be like science.

But God is distant from us, precisely because we are sinful. And, God figures that we have enough of his Light to figure it out, if we are to any extent **obedient**.

So too in Law. At bottom, law is based on what is true and what is moral. And that, while truly objective, is *obscure* to us and, because obscure, there is debate. No sane person debates whether $2 + 2 = 4$. But, neither in law nor religion do we have such clarity. Rather, in both, we rely on intuition.

Now, if someone's intuition was that murder for the fun of it was good, most of us have the intuition that that person would make a poor judge and a poor cardinal.

So, in *interpreting* the words, we must **rely on our intuitions**. Now, those who are more sinful have worse moral intuitions. Those who are less sinful, and even in the state of grace, have better moral intuitions.

So, the *very first thing* is to make sure that a cardinal or bishop is **morally good**. Because if they're morally bad, you're screwed from the get-go. Do NOT pass GO, do NOT collect \$200, go STRAIGHT TO HELL.

If you have a learned jurist who is the most legalistic and precise canonist, arch-conservative in all things, who is a bigoted, self-righteous prick, you're going to have a Church of Torquemadas, who are legally correct, but bound for Hell and taking the Church with it.

That is the Church of Pharisees.

Now, obviously, if you have a Satanist, you're also screwed.

And, if you have a wishy-washy fellow *who just desperately wants to be liked and not called a bigot, you'll have a coward Church that cringes and shies away from a fight, the fight for the Cross, the fight for Salvation.*

That is the Modernist Church.

Both are damned.

So, what is the solution?

First, have morally pure and actually good popes, cardinals, and bishops.

Second, we come back to the legal analogy. In American law, in the 19th Century, the principal interpretive school for interpreting the law was formalism. Formalism was the doctrine that there was *one true rule* for any situation that arose, and it was the judge's responsibility to discover that *one true rule* and apply it **correctly and exactly** to the situation at hand.

Realism was a legal movement that arose in the early 20th Century in response to formalism. Realism embraced the truth that words have an underlying ambiguity, and in more difficult cases, and when dealing with more complex source texts, that ambiguity multiplies at an exponential rate. The more radical Legal Realists essentially said that when dealing with a case, particularly hard cases, there *is no* rule "out there" and you can basically just do what you want. Now, of course, the Legal Realist theorist would say that wisdom and morality should be used to determine the issue. Now, of course, who determines wisdom and morality? (Hint: the Judge.) There is much more to Legal Realism, and many subtleties that my little exegesis does not elucidate, but this is a book on religion and not law.

There is a fundamental tension: we have a Truth that we want lived out (Formalism) but we do not have the *means* to **fully** access that Truth (Realism).

Now, the nihilist-relativist can simply throw up his hands and say there is no truth. But that is nonsense, because these people still have **basic** beliefs that some things are right and some things are wrong and, in their own personal lives, certainly, they cling to the belief that some things are pleasant and good and other things are painful and bad. Tenure and sex are good and pleasant. Not making tenure and herpes are bad and unpleasant. The next time a relativist academic tells you that something bad has happened to him or her, assure him or her that there is no truth and no reality, so they shouldn't worry about it.

So, forget the nihilists.

But, we Catholic Christians are still in a bit of a pickle. And that is because we proclaim an infinite Truth, and yet we proclaimers of that infinite Truth are quite finite...and that finitude is not morally neutral, but that finitude (and our need for something more than finitude) is a definite chastisement of Divine Providence.

So, what is the **solution**?

Well, it's obvious: humility. And the grace that proceeds from humility.

The Church must *both* stand for absolute Truth, firmly and clearly, but *also* be humble. We must be firm in proclaiming what is true *about God*, but humble in our own presentation of ourselves.

We must not be over-humble, or so undignified that it impugns the Dignity of the Majesty of God. But we must be quite definitely humble in our attitude, demeanor, and behavior. Not just because we don't want to "turn people off". But because *not* being humble -- being self-righteous -- carries the Church into the grips of Satan.

The Modernist Church of relativism and cowardice leads to the Apostasy that we have suffered.

But we should not be so ignorant of history to not *also* realize that self-righteousness and violent arrogance leads to the Inquisition - a contributing cause of the Schismatic Catastrophe and the rise of secularism in the first place -- which then ricocheted back into the Church as modernism.

The very self-righteous, violent arrogance of the traditionalist is *precisely* what caused the plague of modernism to arise in the first place.

So, it is *quite* a spectacle to hear the traditionalist lambaste the modernist. True, the modernist is a heretic and misleading the flock. But the foul, noxious arrogance of *too many* traditionalists is what causes modernism in the first place.

The self-righteous traditionalist is like a great dancer with horrible body odor. He keeps trying to convince people to dance with him, and when they don't, he says it's because they don't appreciate good dancing. For most, however, it is because they don't appreciate bad body odor.

THE STATE OF THE CATHOLIC CHURCH

(Hint: It's not good.....)

<https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=o9VpOfRtAqw>

<https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=R9FZWuD-oRE>

THE CURE

The Sanctity of the Family

The Family is the *Core* of the Church

<https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=y7kXinxOFKc>

*Only through strong families can the Church survive the Age of the
Anti-Christ*

Channing Tatum, philosopher

Life is too short to miss out on the beautiful things like a double cheeseburger.

I don't know if I'm very complicated at all. I wish I was. I wish I was one of these deep, intricate people. But I just love having fun really.

I've always had way too much energy so I'm always looking for new things to do to channel that energy.

The thing is.....I'm not being *entirely* sarcastic.

The Charism of Humility

From all this, perhaps we can see clearer to a fundamental truth of Christian faith: service is the interiority, and thus, the true reality, of leadership. He who most serves, most rules.

In this sundered, material world, that is not true. This evil world is sundered by sin, so everything is upside down and backwards. The upside down Satanic cross is the best symbol of this world and its politics, economics, culture, arts, literature, social relationships, attitudes, expression of language, scholarship, wisdom, learning, even its mathematical science (perhaps especially its mathematical science, since modern mathematical science achieves the Satanic wonder: its sees to the real truth of the creation without being able or willing to bless the Name of the Creator of that creation).

In the real life, the true life, the world to come after this sundered world has been destroyed by Holy Fire, and purged of all wickedness and spiritual blindness, God shall, from the wreckage, resurrect this diabolical and ruined material reality into a material universe at last finally *aligned* with the eternal spiritual creation and with the SPIRIT, the creator, sustainer, conservator, and final evaluator (judge) of all creation: the Uncreated Triune LORD: Giver, Gift, and Bond of the Exchange of the Giver and Gift: the Father, Son, and Holy Spirit.

When thus we finally see the light, the light that only endures and endues within the life of the TRUE LIGHT, we shall obviously, inevitably, and permanently understand the truth: “Rather, whoever wishes to be great among you shall be your servant; whoever wishes to be first among you shall be your slave. Just so, the Son of Man [Jesus] did not come to be served but to serve and to give his life as a ransom for many” (Matthew 20:26-28).

How can this be?

In this world, we do not have plenitude. The fundamental principle of this sundered material reality is scarcity: there’s just never enough. Not enough food. Not enough water. Not enough money. Not enough jobs. Not enough compassion. Not enough love. Not enough time. Not enough energy. Not enough understanding or perspective or humility. There’s literally not enough energy to sustain the universe itself, for the Second Law of Thermodynamics dictates that the amount of useful energy is constantly decreasing. The universe is literally running out of gas (slowly and imperceptibly - but actually).

So, the only way to *simulate* plenitude -- that fullness of circumstances (material, emotional, relational) that is truly the orientation and desire and telos (end) of our hearts -- is to grab as much as we can, however we can. To, in this wasteland of scarcity, scrape up whatever resources and time and energy from wherever and *whomever* we can -- and then plant our flag on it and say *IT IS MINE, HAHHAHAHAHAHAH, ALL MINE!!!!*

But in the fullness of true life - in the presence of the Beatitude of the Eternal Spirit - all is given freely: “a good measure, packed together, shaken down, and overflowing, will be poured into your lap” (Luke 6:37b-38).

When you live in such plenitude -- *when you are such plenitude* - there is absolutely nothing in your soul that bites its fingernails and shudders and fears: *There isn’t enough! There’ll never be enough!*

You know that there is more than enough. You know that *you*, within you, there is far more than enough -- an endless plenitude of truth and grace and freedom and kindness.

And when you live that way -- when you have that kind of life, true life, *within you* -- nothing is impossible. Nothing is a burden. You have attained -- in a true way, and not the Deepak Chopra or Eckhart Tolle or False Prophet way -- a life without limits: a life that is without limits precisely because it is lived within the life of the ONE who is limitless.

When you live that way, you cannot help but serve: it is the reason and essence of your life: because you have *true life*. A life defined by life and thus totally unbounded; rather than a life defined and determined by the parameters of death - and sin, the cause of death - and thus totally bound within the coffin of its own selfishness, its own self-preference.

That is why the greatest is, *necessarily!*, the one who most serves others. Because the greatest servant does not cling to the idea that there won't be enough for him or her -- that I *need* this pleasure for *myself*, I need this hoard of cash for *myself*, I need this sexual affair for *myself*, I need this time for *myself*, I need even a cup of coffee and some peace and quiet away from the ravenous mob for *myself* - because that one (not me, by a million miles, but *that one*), *knows - knows from the depths of His Spirit, because it is the gift of the One from whom all good gifts come* - that there will *always* be enough, that there will be *more* than enough, that within His own Spirit there is an eternal, infinite, abiding, overabundant PLENITUDE that sustains and nourishes every last requirement of the human spirit, of the spirit that says I AM.

And that one is Jesus Christ: Mashiach Yehoshua the Melech.

So, in the Kingdom of Heaven - the remaking of this sundered world in the total likeness and power and sustenance of the Eternal LORD - the last is greater than the first, the least greater than the greatest, the secretary greater than the professor, the janitor greater than the CEO, the assistant greater than the superstar, the waterboy greater than the MVP, the prisoner greater than the President.

Within the real, interior life of God, he who, in his spirits (and not merely in his circumstances), kneels to wash the feet of the other, no matter how seemingly meager or contemptible, *most* has that Spirit of Plenitude which is the fundamental spiritual truth of all reality: the Constitution of Existence.

That is why St. Matthew recounts:

Then the mother of the sons of Zebedee approached him with her sons and did him homage, wishing to ask him for something. He said to her, "What do you wish?" She answered him, "Command that these two sons of mine sit, one at your right and the other at your left, in your kingdom." Jesus said in reply, "You do not know what you are asking. Can you drink the cup that I am going to drink?" They said to him, "We can." He replied, "My cup you will indeed drink, but to sit at my right and at my left, this is not mine to give but is for those for whom it has been prepared by my Father."

When the ten heard this, they became indignant at the two brothers.

But Jesus summoned them and said, "You know that the rulers of the Gentiles lord it over them, and the great ones make their authority over them felt. But it shall not

be so among you. Rather, whoever wishes to be great among you shall be your servant; whoever wishes to be first among you shall be your slave. Just so, the Son of Man did not come to be served but to serve and to give his life as a ransom for many.”

(Matthew 20:20-28)

Our exterior material circumstances and our position and our power are not our own. It is all a dispensation from God for His good purposes. And woe to you if you try to hoard it as all “yours” for “yourself” under your sovereign governance. You will find yourself bound in Hell for living that way, for following that Satanic Way.

Rather, you must *change* your mind, turn your mind from yourself to God, and, necessarily then, you will see that everything that you have, including and especially yourself, your self, your whole humanity and psyche, is a gift from God *to be given to others and to be given to the world!*⁵⁴

<https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=m9G3xufj3Z4>

⁵⁴ Henri Nouwen <https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=naCvCZ2Bv00>

Family

[https://www.youtube.com/watch?
v=MDYX_PgorRY](https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=MDYX_PgorRY)

Bonus Feature

[https://www.youtube.com/watch?
v=Hb1-56aC9YY](https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=Hb1-56aC9YY)

Advice for Pope Francis

1. [Prepare for War.](#)

2. Require that every parish in the world offer the Tridentine Mass. Permit parishes to celebrate the New Mass as well, but require every parish to offer the Traditional Mass for at least one Sunday service.
3. Forget “modernizing” doctrine. Let the Anti-Christ do that.
4. Create a central Papal Company of Mary of truly Seraphic priests to take on the rot and the filth and the Satanic cabal of Greed and Lust in the Hierarchy. They should be as anti-Careerist as the present Hierarchy is Careerist. They should be as scornful of money and status as the present Hierarchy is lustful for them. Sexual lust is always Satan’s way in: the new Company must be composed of zealously chaste men and women, *both* religious and lay Christians.

5. Standing against the Persecution of Christians, and standing with persecuted Christians, is Priority One.
6. The secularists will never like us. Stand for Christ, and Christ alone. The Children of God will hear the call of Christ and follow the Shepherd, and the Children of Satan will always plot to murder the Church.
7. The dissident “liberals” *and* the disobedient “traditionalists” are both rot and filth. The Papal Company of Mary must have the love of a liberal and the orthodoxy of a traditionalist.
8. We will not make the world like us. The world is ruled by Satan. No matter what the Church does, the world will coalesce around the Anti-Christ’s regime. The goal of the Church in this present age is not the creation of shallow bonds of unity, but the

preparation of the Church for the Tribulation to come.

9. The major religious, economic, military, corporate, and institutional arrangements of this world order will rise up in a fit of Satanic fury, and then be destroyed by God. The goal of the Church is not to stop it: it cannot be stopped. The goal of the Church is to prepare Christians to survive it, and, in doing so, to equip Christians to rebuild after the Wrath, so that they can inaugurate the Age of Peace.

Consecrate Russia -- and only Russia -- to the Immaculate Heart of Mary....YESTERDAY!

The Church must *not* try to be a Convention Center for Religions.

It must be an Ark for Christians, to help them survive the Great Deluge of God's Wrath that will consume the empire of the Anti-Christ.

So, it's either

<https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=5inA7tSTzes>

or

Scenes from the End of the World

Star Wars: The Force Awakens

<https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=yw-PFWJDObl>

A tutorial for the Children of God, for the Age of Peace, among the stars:

Starman

The Human Race

<https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=WyNFY1R-d8w>

Political Science 101

(1)

The Holy Father should be conciliar with the Protestants and Orthodox, and, to some extent, the Catholic laity.

(2)

The Holy Father should be an able administrator when it comes to the ordinary priests, parishes, and charitable institutions.

(3)

The Holy Father should be an unremitting Commander-in-Chief, demanding absolute authority and obedience, when it comes to the loyalty of the Cardinals, Bishops, and the Vatican Bank.

Political Science 201

(1)

Here's the problem: when the Great War comes, there will be two antithetical ways of approaching it.

The first, the secular way, is the most familiar to us, for indeed, as Charles Taylor rightly informs us, we had lived in a Secular Age. We all grew up with the Secular ethos, the Secular imagination.

So, when the Islamic hordes come with nuclear weapons to devastate the West, the remnants of Christendom, the Secular instinct will be to say: This is a secular problem, that can be solved with secular means.

The Secular Mind (Think Bill Clinton, Barack Obama) will say: "This is a problem *caused* by the 'derangement' of religion itself". Human beings, evolved from nothing but matter, their spirits *emerging* from matter, ***and there being no god, God, or Divinity***, have worldviews (software) operating in the hardware of their bodies. Religion is an obsolete, inherently destructive worldview (software). Human beings, being limited and finite in their mental capacities, *themselves created religions and gods* to satisfy their own psychological needs for emotional comfort, mental security, a sense of purpose, and a sense of understanding the whole of reality. As such, human beings, over the millennia, have built up systems of religion to satisfy their psychological needs. Unfortunately, since human beings are limited, these sociological constructs created to satisfy insatiable psychological needs, (religions), are themselves limited. What helped groups of individuals and whole societies organize themselves in the pre-modern era have now, in the modern

age, polluted the adult, mature worldview of secular modernity,” the Secular mind will continue, “Secular modernity, happily, recognizes the limitations of our human nature. Human beings are meaningless brief nothings that bubble up like a ripple in an ocean, and then disperse to be no more,” they say, “And thus *there is no* meaning to life: **no** emotional comfort, **no** mental security, **no** purpose, and it is **impossible** to achieve a real knowledge of the Whole. For limited beings such as ourselves, only a partial, ultimately epistemologically baseless, *tracking* of reality is possible,” the Secularist thus proclaims, “True Knowledge, in the Socratic and Platonic sense, is thereby *impossible*. And, as we are doomed to a very near oblivion of consciousness, and as there is no meaning or purpose *inherent* to life, all that a human being can do is to *construct* a sense of purpose and meaning. But such purposes and meanings are mere epiphenomena. The phenomena, the real reality, is nothing but atoms and void. Secular Modernity recognizes this unfortunate truth, and is thus mature. Religion, in either blindness or desperation, denies this truth and asserts the opposite of Secular Modernity’s oh-so-mature, adult knowledge. Religion makes all sorts of baseless truth claims: claims about what **reality is** and **means**, what the **purpose** of human life is, what is the source of true and abiding emotional **comfort** and mental **security** (salvation), and makes all sorts of claims about **reality as it is, at its depths, even going so far as to make claims about the origins and destiny of Reality.**” Naturally, says the Secularist, “Since no such beliefs are possible for limited beings such as ourselves, all those beliefs are necessarily false and equally false. To the extent that they promote peace and plenty and mutual understanding, they are salutary bromides that sooth unsophisticated minds that do not have the rugged, manly courage to face the truth: nihilism: that there is *no* meaning and *no* salvation. However, to the extent that religions make cultural, social, and political claims -- and claims that are

necessarily contradictory -- they are poisons in the body social, the cancer of civilization. So long as religions reform themselves to *only* make cultural and social claims, they are, as Bill Maher says, merely herpes -- irritating, mildly painful, unsightly, but ultimately harmless to the life of civilization.

“But, when religions make *political* claims, they become gonorrhea or syphilis and create more or less palpable threats to civilization - like the Christian Right in the United States or Recep Tayyip Erdogan’s semi-Islamist Justice and Development Party.

“*But* when religions back up those political claims with calls to *military* violence, and call human beings to join together in a campaign of murder, shootings, and bombings in order to achieve the political supremacy of their religion, or even Heaven on Earth, *then* religion becomes HIV-AIDs -- pre-medications, 1980s-style, when it meant a miserable and quick death.

“*And* when militarized religion employs nuclear terrorism, it becomes the ebola virus, swiftly killing civilization wherever it spreads.”

So the Secular Mind’s response to this is twofold. First, if Bill Clinton or Barack Obama had a magic wand, certainly if Richard Dawkins had a magic wand, they would simply say, “Abracadabra - *Religion be Gone - POOF! POOF! POOF!*” And then, so they believe, the human race would magically build up a civilization of peace, progress, mutual understanding, prosperity, and pleasure. This is doubtful, at best, but this is what they believe.

But, since the Secularists don’t have magic wands, just academic chairs and political appointments, the Secularist politicians and intellectuals at first just try to deal with the symptoms of that awful disease: militarized religion. They scramble to kill terrorists, to disrupt the logistical networks of terrorist groups, and, above all, to prevent terrorist groups from obtaining nuclear

weapons. Some of the more daring Secularist minds, such as Neoconservatives, even dream up projects of secularization and democratization, like the Iraq War, unfurling their wisdom on a world awaiting democratic and secular salvation.

So, that's what we've been doing for the past 20 to 25 years, since the end of the Cold War. And, so long as you haven't died in the World Trade Center, the Pentagon, or any of the myriad buses, trains, public venues, and public squares that have been mauled by terrorist violence, all in all it hasn't been a bad day at the office.

But.....but.....now, come, let us reason together and think things through.....what happens when, one mournful day, a tremendous blast goes off.....in New York....in Paris....in London? What happens when we see the advent of nuclear terrorism? Major global cities destroyed. Millions dead. Civilization horrified and terrified as never before in human history.

So the game begins. Nuclear exchanges - ICBMs devastating Tehran, or any capital with *anything* to do with the nuclear abomination. Perhaps more nuclear terrorism from the Islamists. Steve Bannon, Sean Hannity, and every talking head -- now even the "liberals" -- ripping their shirts off and beating their chests.

Wake Up and Smile!

<https://www.nbc.com/saturday-night-live/video/wake-up-and-smile/n10773?snl=1>

Steve Bannon, *or, How I Learned to Stop Worrying and Love the Great War of Nuclear Terrorism*.⁵⁵

From Wikipedia: On Bannon's 2010 Film - Generation Zero

The film examines the [subprime mortgage crisis](#) and [financial crisis of 2007–2008](#) in a generational context. A 2010 review from [The Richmond Times-Dispatch](#) described *Generation Zero* as a horror film about the U.S economy.[\[7\]\[8\]](#)

While the film focuses on economic topics, including [deficit spending](#) and the [2008 bank bailouts](#), the film also heavily focuses on the [1960s](#). The film interprets the 1960s in the context of Strauss and Howe's generational theory. In the film, Bannon is critical of his own generation. He commented: that the "[baby boomers](#) are the most spoiled, most self-centered, most narcissistic generation the country's ever produced", blaming the cohort for much of the current economic problems.[\[4\]\[1\]](#)

The film describes the 1960s as a time in which young adults turned away from their parents' values, saying they turned their backs on history. The film refers to "[seasons of history](#)" and concludes that the damage which was initiated in the 1960s, when young baby boomers turned away from their parents' values, will be undone via war or other great crisis. The period of crisis is referred to as a "turning". In Strauss and Howe's theory, the period of crisis or war is referred to as the "fourth turning". The film concludes with the line "history is seasonal and winter is coming".[\[4\]\[1\]\[3\]](#)
[\[9\]](#)

Historian [David Kaiser](#), who was consulted for the film said that it focused on a key aspect of Strauss and Howe's theory: "the idea that every 80 years American history has been marked by a crisis, or 'fourth turning', that

⁵⁵ https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Generation_Zero

destroyed an old order and created a new one". Bannon, Kaiser states, was "very familiar with Strauss and Howe's theory of crisis, and has been thinking about how to use it to achieve particular goals for quite a while."^[3]
^[4]^[5]^[6]^[10]

....

Kaiser said of Bannon, "He expected a new and even bigger war as part of the current crisis, and he did not seem at all fazed by the prospect."^[3] A 2017 review in *The Washington Post* states, "Bannon now seems to be trying to bring about the Fourth Turning."^[6]

PROJECT APOCALYPSE

An Astonishingly Good Idea

or

*Steve Bannon is Totally **Not** a Nazi*

<https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=c8L8NopVwdg>

Surf City

Jan & Dean

<https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=N5V3wcREqcl>

So, as the bombs are dropping on all sides, while millions die and millions fight all over the world in World War III, what will Bill Clinton and Barack Obama be thinking of this?

Well, we can imagine Barack, after a long, languid day of golf and after having eaten his seven almonds for dessert,⁵⁶ in his study in a studded, stunning leather chair, watching coverage of the madness raging in the wider world beyond Secret Service protection.

⁵⁶ <http://www.politico.com/story/2016/07/obama-7-almonds-226363>

And we can easily imagine him, along with Bill Clinton, thinking: religion *is* the problem. What to do now?

Clearly, law enforcement, intelligence and military responses are insufficient. The cities going *BOOM - BOOM - BOOM* make that clear enough.

And Obama and all the Secularists will have no taste for the *Apocalypse Now* foreign and military policy of the likes of Trump and Bannon and their successors.

I love the News of another Nuclear Detonation in the Morning

<https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=3T-VAi2Xqq8>

Satanic Madness

<https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=mPPGMNOLaMw>

Eventually, for one reason or another, probably through exhaustion -- and horror -- on both sides, the Secularist voices of peace and understanding will start rising to the fore, and the Bannonic Apocalypse Corps will start taking it on the chin.

What will a Clinton or Obama....certainly an atheistical Bernie Sanders...propose for lasting world peace....for a return to sanity?

Secularism, of course.

Now, the Secularists will understand that they can't simply say to everyone, "Stop being religious!" But, they will try to *neuter* religion through making it "all the same" -- they will try to *reform* Islam. And, in doing so, they will be perfectly happy to *deform* Christianity.

Anything.....ANYTHING.....to make the world safe for golf, almonds, and luxury vacations....and secret jaunts with smooth young things with tight.....personalities.

So, buckle your seat belts, boys and girls, ladies and gents....it's time for a *Whole New Religion!*

We are *all* God's Children. There's no such thing as the "Children of Satan". *All* religions are from God. *All* religions are paths to God. God speaks to everyone equally through *all* religions. It doesn't matter what you believe, or how you profess -- *all* that matters is that you are a "good person". And a "good person" is law-abiding, goes to work, pays their taxes, doesn't smash things or shoot guns or plant bombs, and spends their few hours off from work watching television or getting laid.

Now, I, as a religious person, certainly agree that smashing things and shooting guns and planting bombs are bad.

But, the far greater evil is the poisoning and debilitation of the Church of Christ and of the Deposit of Faith. For guns and bombs can destroy the flesh, but destroying the Faith will destroy souls, and, if God would allow it (which He won't), would destroy the human race as a whole, damning it to Satan's undying gullet.

Bill Clinton and Barack Obama probably do not believe that at all. I am utterly certain that Bernie Sanders doesn't agree with that either....obviously.

(George W. Bush, on the other hand, *does* believe it, I'm certain.)

Now, you see, there will be endless, loud, murderous voices who will claim that the criticism of Islam is *equivalent* to nuclear terrorism.

For these people, these radical Islamists, these hordes of Satanic monsters, a book with *ideas* that *does not propose murder*

IS THE SAME THING as nuclear explosions in densely populated cities that kill millions upon millions upon millions and bring civilization to its knees.

Now, the Secularist -- Clinton, Obama, and Sanders and the like, will certainly not think that a book is the moral equivalent of nuclear devastation.

But they will certainly think that such books are unwise... imprudent...perverse....unhelpful....wrong.

So, while not *themselves*, in their minds, making the moral equivalence, the Secularists will bend over backwards to *appease* the murderous Islamic thugs.

And *that* is the Islamic-Secularist Axis that the Church must oppose with every fiber of her being.

Because I like peace....I like brewskis, burgers, and skirt....I like sunny days and almonds as much as the next guy.

But remember the words of Christ Jesus:

Then Jesus said to his disciples, "Whoever wishes to come after me must deny himself, take up his cross, and follow me. For whoever wishes to save his life will lose it, but whoever loses his life for my sake will find it. **What profit would there be for one to gain the whole world and forfeit his life? Or what can one give in exchange for his life?** For the Son of Man will come with his angels in his Father's glory, and then he will repay everyone according to his conduct.

(Matthew 16:24-26)

The Secularists hear that as total madness. It's fine if it simply goads one to be kinder or gentler or give to charity.

But to actually *believe* it?

To believe that the *next* life is really worth dying for?

The True Christian struggles his or her whole life to live up to it. The Secularist sniffs at it, snickers at it....and when it causes a ruckus rages at it and plots against it.

The Christian approaches the world with the premise that *there is something more than the world worth our love, and worth our lives*. That something more is **God**, and His Son, Christ Jesus, and the Spirit of both the Father and the Son.

True to the terminologies, the Christian fights for *Christ*. The Secularist....Secular comes from the Latin *saeculum*, which means age or generation...or *world*. The Secularist fights for this world.

The True Christian knows that the next world is the real world. The Secularist gets conniptions at such blind foolishness.

The Secularist will be perfectly happy to sacrifice Christianity on the altar of the world. And, in doing so, the Secularist becomes a perfect Satanist.

And, truly, in *that* Islamists and the Secularists are in perfect harmony. For both Islam and Secular Modernity were hatched by Satan. And both, *not coincidentally*, believe and avow that *this world* is the true world. Secular Modernity claims that this is the true world: that we all know. But there is no Fall in Islam. For Islam, this world is not sundered by sin -- there is no original sin. This world is the world that the human race *was meant* to be in all along. And the world after the Resurrection won't be a *different*

world, it won't be this world *restored*...simply made better. For the Secularist, there is no God, and this world is God. For the Muslim, this world is *already* ruled by God.

The Christian rightly knows that *this* world is ruled by Satan.

The Islamist and the Secularist are not only perfect allies just because the Islamist is brutal and fearless and the Secularist is weak and cowardly. The Islamist and the Secularist are perfect allies because *both fight for this world*.

So, in the aftermath of World War III, the Secularists will ***demand*** that the voices of True Christians be silenced. *Only* those Christians who do not offend others will be tolerated.

And what if Islam really is the work of the Devil?

Doesn't matter! Not important! Shut up! There is no Devil anyway, you idiot! Almonds! Brewskis! Burgers! Skirt! Tight young things!

That is the "wisdom" of the Secularist. The Secularist doesn't work to build the Kingdom of God, doesn't care whether God's 'will is done on earth as it is in Heaven'.

For the Secularist, the Kingdom of God isn't God's Kingdom....if it is anything at all, it is merely *Your Best Life Now*...it is the Best Possible Kingdom of *this* earth, accomplished any way *humanly* possible.

So long as Christians *don't get in the way* of that, we Christians can mumble in our Churches about the Divinity of the Son and the Trinity and Faith and Salvation till we're blue in the face.

But the *moment* that all that, to them, "mumbo-jumbo" threatens the Secularist elites' lifestyles is the moment that the hammer will fall on the believing and *professing* Christian.

So something will have to bend....something will have to break...and the Secularist will make damned sure that it is *Christianity* that breaks.

And the Secularist will have his buddies....the Rob Bells, the Joel Osteens, the Oprahs in the Protestant world....the Modernist heretics in the Catholic world...these "religious" figures will line up to give support to the Secularist "Religion of Peace" that they will try to foist upon the world.

And that "Religion of Peace" will, first, try to dampen all doctrine so that only the Gospel of being a "good person" will be left -- shorn of all actual, divisive, controversial "truth".



Can't we all just, like, get along, Bro?



Rob Bell's Idea of Heaven

Second, we'll get the more theological and scholarly types, and they'll try their damndest to merge, to *fuse*, Christianity and Islam.

But, as we have seen repeatedly, Islam is *fundamentally* adverse to Christianity. **That is not an accident. *Satan designed Islam that way. Islam's anti-Christian doctrines are features, not bugs.***

It all starts at the beginning, and runs straight through Islamic doctrine and theology. They state (1) Adam's sin did not cause original sin, so (2) the world is not fallen, so (3) the world does not need a redeemer, so (4) Christ Jesus is **not** the redeemer of the world from sin, his sacrifice did **not** reconcile God and Man, since God and Man were cool from the beginning. Islam even explicitly claims that Jesus did not die on the Cross, but that some other poor sap was switched in for him, and God spirited Jesus off to Heaven. (Since Jesus' death is what finally defeated Satan, I'm sure Satan wishes he could get a do-over.)

Plus, Islam explicitly and fanatically claims that belief in the Trinity -- which is the fundamental truth about the One God -- is polytheism and you should be murdered for believing in it.

THERE IS NO FREAKING WAY TO RECONCILE CHRISTIAN DOCTRINE AND ISLAM.

NONE. AT ALL. STOP. STOP, DROP, AND ROLL.

But then Rob Bell will come along and say something like, "The really compelling thing is we live on a planet with a whole bunch of people, and with all these different backgrounds, and if we don't work to find some common ground, we might not be around, it's that simple."

<https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=53PK05zK7QM>⁵⁷

Whoa, Brah, like deep and shit.

Yeah, that's fine. I can work with a Muslim to build peace and to build a hospital (maybe they're not into schools? Well, at least not for girls) or whatnot.

*But the moment that you attack or disparage a Christian from stating the bare fact that Islam is Satanic, you are attacking the spread of the Gospel...and **listen** to what Jesus says:*

The Commissioning of the Disciples

The eleven disciples went to Galilee, to the mountain to which Jesus had ordered them. When they saw him, they worshiped, but they doubted. Then Jesus approached and said to them, "All power in heaven and on earth has been given to me. Go, therefore, and make disciples of all nations, baptizing them in the name of the Father, and of the Son, and of the holy Spirit, teaching them to observe all that I have commanded you. And behold, I am with you always, until the end of the age."

(Matthew 28:16-20)

If the price that a Christian has to pay to work with a Muslim for peace is to stop spreading the Gospel and to stop speaking the truth, *that is an **unacceptable** price* -- a Satanic price.

I could be perfectly happy with a world in which Christians and Muslims build a hospital together during the day, and then, at night, have an amiable chat over dinner about why each other's religion is Satanic.

⁵⁷ John MacArthur on Rob Bell - <https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=19iEElyQ2fE>

But the Muslim will not. They'll start clicking their tongues and chanting and shooting you and cutting off your head.

<https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=Md7OvU5JIcI>

<https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=Qc20Y8CERng>

So, since the Secularist believes that *this world* is more important than Christ's triumph *over* this world, the Secularist and his "Christian" allies will make ever more strident attacks on evangelizing Christianity.

"You can believe whatever you want in your own mind," the Secularist will demand, "but the moment you trouble the world by making the Muslims angry, we, the world, must **crush** you."

So the Secularists will happily enforce the moral equivalence between Christians and Muslims: they will say that Christians speaking the truth is *the same* as Muslims detonating nuclear bombs in cities.

This is **not** a problem for Jews and Christians, at least not anymore. A Jew can believe that Jesus was cuckoo for cocoa puffs, and I can believe that Jewish leaders two millennia ago killed God...and while it may be awkward to bring that up at dinner, no one will end up dead because of it.

But, after World War III, the Secularists won't care about the niceties of religious freedom. And they certainly won't care about the fulfillment of the Church, the preaching of the Gospel to all nations, and the return of Christ's Spirit in the Millennial Kingdom.

So, instead of caring about free speech, the Secularist will attack “hate speech”. Is that “hate” speech true? Who cares?! Doesn’t matter! Shut up!

So, naturally, the second way to approach the Great War is the Christian way.

The Christian way doesn’t say “all religions are the same” or “religion is the problem”.

The Christian way says, “Murder is the problem.”

The Christian way says, “If we Christians try to spread the Gospel and build the Kingdom in peace, and you, whoever you are, usually Muslims, attack us with guns, bombs, and nuclear weapons, *you* are the problem, and *you* must be defeated.”

Now, of course, with that attitude, there’s always the danger of Christian Fascism.

What, am I supposed to have a solution for everything?

The only “solution”, such as it is, is to persevere in Faith, in the true faith, and not any distortions. And the Christian Faith is simply incompatible with a Christian Empire, or any kind of “Christian” state.

As soon as you start having a Christian State, you have the Anti-Christ’s incubator.

So, the Church must steer clear of three dangers: (1) straight-up Islamic conquest, (2) the Secularist Oppression, and (3) the Invasion of the Body Snatchers-like poisoning of the Church such that the Church becomes subject to, the pawn of, a Christian Fascist State.

The Anti-Christ would be perfectly happy to appear, to manifest, in any three of those scenarios.

In Scenario #1, Islamic Conquest, the Anti-Christ would be the Mahdi.

In Scenario #2, the Secularist Oppression, the Anti-Christ would be Chancellor Palpatine.



We are all brothers and sisters

In Scenario #3, the Anti-Christ would be the Pope or President Rush Limbaugh or some other “Christian” Potentate. Think Francisco Franco -- All Crucifixes and Masses, drenched in blood and tyranny. And we can have a Protestant Anti-Christ....just think *The Handmaid’s Tale*.

I personally think that the Anti-Christ will actually appear in about a century or maybe two centuries.....after the spread of the Gospel to the whole world and after there is an Era of Peace, in which the Church of Christ is predominant and flourishing. There will be a time of renewed Christian faith and morality and Kingdom-building. But things will get too cushy...and things will get lax, and, while formally and culturally Christian, the world, still ruled by secular powers (as it should be), will get caught off guard.

There will be an alien invasion. And since this world is sundered, those aliens will do what is in their *nature* -- eat, kill, destroy, and conquer.

And, during this horrific catastrophe, a leader will rise -- charismatic, brilliant....*Christian*....but secretly, he will be a Satanist, and he will save the world from the Satanic aliens, only to plunge the world into a Satanic regime, the Kingdom of Satan...all the while posing as the Returned Christ, and using a revived Islam, blended and fused with Christianity, as a pretext for his claim to be the Messiah.

I mean, he will have saved the world from aliens, right?

Plus, he'll have superpowers....he'll be freaking Superman.

Why *wouldn't* you want to get his Mark on your forehead or hand? (Besides, you'll think that he's Christ, and his Mark will possibly incorporate the Cross).

And, after the persecutions of True Christians who will not worship the Anti-Christ as a Christ Greater than Jesus, the Glorious Appearance of the true Christ Jesus will instantly defeat the Anti-Christ and inaugurate the Millennium.

Political Science 301

Mars Attacks

no, really.....

<https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=DqtjHWIM4lQ>

<https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=rMdC45S79uQ>

https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=_k8YpQKzl_k

https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=yTM_CQWjf0s

War of the Worlds

The Future

<https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=jaasllkadlQ>

So, fight back!

The Edge of Tomorrow

<https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=yUmSVcttXnI>

<https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=F-bsf2x-aeE>

{Not the wrong link}

Political Science 401

The Anti-Christ

<https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=ZuP2wvTAj0E>

The New Empire strikes the Church

<https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=hS57I6swXcc>

https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=MEOn_1wQJ5k

“All our perfection consists in being conformed, united and consecrated to Jesus Christ; and therefore the most perfect of all devotions is, without any doubt, that which the most perfectly conforms, unites, and consecrates us to Jesus Christ. Now Mary being the most conformed of all creatures to Jesus Christ, it follows that, of all devotions that which most consecrates and conforms the soul to Our Lord is devotion to his holy Mother, and the more a soul is consecrated to Mary, the more it is consecrated to Jesus. Hence it comes to pass that the most perfect consecration to Jesus Christ is nothing else than a perfect and entire consecration of ourselves to the Blessed Virgin.”

St. Louis De Montfort

I am a Political Liberal

Believe it or Not

I wish to dispel a misconception that I am afraid too many may draw from my writings.

I am *not* a conservative, at least in the sense of a *political* conservative. I am certainly “conservative” in many regards: religiously “conservative”, socially “conservative”, culturally “conservative”. But I do not consider such things “Conservative” in the William F. Buckley Movement Conservatism, Talk Radio Conservatism, Fox News Conservatism, Website Conservatism sense. I simply consider it faithful religion, good morals, and good sense.

I do not consider myself a “conservative” Catholic Christian. I consider myself a Catholic Christian. A Catholic Catholic and a Christian Christian.

As Howard Dean said about being the “Democratic Wing of the Democratic Party”, I consider myself the “Catholic Wing of the Catholic Church”.

The trouble, of course, is atheism. And atheism is simply the worship of the self. So, *deep* atheism is nothing more than Satanism. That is true whether the deep atheist consciously accepts it and joins Anton LaVey’s Church of Satan or *doesn’t* realize it and simply seeks to destroy religion for some “Secular Ideal”.

As all of Reality is a War between God and Satan, so all of our political reality is a War between the True Religion of the True God and Atheism/Satanism.

Remember, Satan is the Lord of Illusions, he is the Lord of Masks. And so, he will not, for most people, pop up in a black robe with fire in his eyes and say, “Worship Satan!” “Light a bunch of gnarly candles and make invocations to demons!”

Satan will appear in a disguise -- and that disguise can be religious, like in Islam, or it can be ideological, like in Secularism.

The trouble again is that the Christian Truth forsakes political power. Jesus said to Pilate, disregarding Pilate’s attempts to release Him, “My kingdom does not belong to this world. If my kingdom did belong to this world, my attendants would be fighting to keep me from being handed over to the Jews. But as it is, my kingdom is not here” (John 18:36).

That *requires* that there be a secular state.

That is nothing new, and it is not “secularism”.

In the Middle Ages, there was the Pope and there was the Emperor: the Church and the Empire.

The Pope and the Church kept to their sphere: the Sacred.

The Emperor and the Empire kept to their sphere: the State, the secular affairs of the world and everyday life.

Of course, historically, the Pope and the Emperor meddled with each other, and there was rancor, as is natural to fallen human nature. But the above delineation was the *theory*, and it was a *correct* theory.

Now, the State does not need to be imperial, aristocratic, monarchical or feudal. The State simply needs to be just. As a 21st Century American, raised in the 20th, I wholeheartedly prefer the modern liberal American state of the 20th Century.

Listen to the words of St. Paul in Romans 13:1-7 :

Obedience in Authority.

1 Let every person be subordinate to the higher authorities, for there is no authority except from God, and those that exist have been established by God. 2 Therefore, whoever resists authority opposes what God has appointed, and those who oppose it will bring judgment upon themselves. 3 For rulers are not a cause of fear to good conduct, but to evil. Do you wish to have no fear of authority? Then do what is good and you will receive approval from it, 4 for it is a servant of God for your good. But if you do evil, be afraid, for it does not bear the sword without purpose; it is the servant of God to inflict wrath on the evildoer. 5 Therefore, it is necessary to be subject not only because of the wrath but also because of conscience. 6 This is why you also pay taxes, for the authorities are ministers of God, devoting themselves to this very thing. 7 Pay to all their dues, taxes to whom taxes are due, toll to whom toll is due, respect to whom respect is due, honor to whom honor is due.

Note, and note well, that *that* means that there (1) must be a secular state *but* (2) that secular state must be *just*.

In other words, the secular state must not be **fundamentally** opposed to the Will of God. A secular state (the only kind of state permissible to a True Christian) may not **enforce** the Gospel, and it may not **impose** the Gospel on others. The spread of the Gospel is the Church's responsibility, duty, and mission.

But the secular state **cannot** become *inimical* and *hostile* to the Church. It cannot threaten the foundations of social order, the foundations of moral order, or the possibility for a Christian to live out his Christian faith and morals according to the light of his conscience and in obedience to the authority of the Church.

When the secular state becomes **destructive** of Christian faith and of the Church, it forfeits its legitimacy, for then it is no longer a *just* state, and, truly, no longer a state at all. As Plato would have it, an *unjust* state is simply a band of thieves, a conspiracy of criminals.

Now, the first criterion of any *legitimate* state is that it be just.

But, that does not mean that the legitimate state cannot also be *free*.

And, indeed, it is better that the state be *both* just *and* free.

For, in Freedom, the Church can flourish far better than under the thumb of monarchy, aristocracy, feudalism, and all manner of oppression. Indeed, and concomitantly, the human spirit flourishes far better in conditions of freedom.

So, the Liberal Tradition is a great tradition. I am very much in the grand tradition of John Locke and even John Rawls, to some extent.

The Liberal tradition is one of *laissez faire* -- to let alone. We contract the state so as to permit an ever greater sphere for individual liberty, so that the individual human person can develop his or her own cognitive, moral, and spiritual faculties *in freedom*, which is precisely the Will of God. And those are precisely the conditions in which the Flesh of Christ can most abundantly flourish.

Of course, freedom *from* the state does not mean slavery *to* the corporate empire. For, the state, as such, is *both* the formal government and the *de facto* economic government of the corporation.

When the corporate empire has grown so huge, so vast in its greed and wickedness, that the individual is now not the slave of the formal state, but the slave of the corporation, there *must* be some mechanism -- some social mechanism -- to beat back the Satanic corporate beast and restore *true freedom* to the individual. Where private charity fails to beat back the corporate beast and leave the individual in **true freedom**, then the formal government *must* intervene to provide the basic nutrition, shelter, healthcare, education *and* employment that allows the individual human person to *truly live* in conditions of **actual** freedom.

But those questions of freedom -- *both* freedom from the formal state and freedom from the economic tyranny of the corporate empire -- are *secondary* to the question of *justice*.

Justice is the sine qua non of legitimacy. If a state becomes hostile *in its essence* to justice, then it is no longer legitimate, and, if no longer legitimate, it is no longer a state, but a conspiracy of criminals. No matter how great its armies, no matter how massive its intelligence operations, no matter how vast its bureaucracies, a “state” without justice is without legitimacy and is no longer a state, but merely a criminal conspiracy.

The *essence* of a **state** is a just order. And justice is **fundamental goodness**. Justice -- from the point of view of political authority -- is nothing more and *nothing less* than the exercise of violence by an organization of human beings **that respects the Will of God, that does not impose the Will of God, but that does not oppose the Will of God.**

Now, of course, a state cannot be expected to *not* oppose the Will of God in every minor particular. Such perfectionism is an

invitation to anarchy, and anarchy is a great evil, productive of civil war, ruinous and cruel violence, destruction and death.

But, the state -- or a group of human beings calling itself a state -- **cannot** be **fundamentally** in opposition to basic criteria of moral goodness. The Ten Commandments are the *basic* criteria of moral goodness that **cannot** be contravened or opposed by a state. Any “state” that opposes the Ten Commandments is no longer a state, but a criminal conspiracy.

I shall restate the Ten Commandments, ignoring the numeration problem that crops up between Catholics and Protestants.

In essence, the Ten Commandments state:

- False gods shall not be worshipped.
 - Images of false gods shall not be worshipped.
 - Oaths taken in the name of God shall not be taken in vain.
 - The Sabbath shall be respected.
 - Children must honor parents.
 - Murder shall not be legal.
 - Adultery is immoral.
 - Stealing is impermissible.
 - Lying about others is impermissible.
 - A person should not be covetous of another’s goods or wife.
- In other words, envy should not override equanimity of heart and spirit, the necessary spiritual condition in which it is possible, and necessary, to worship the One God.

Now, the state, in order to be just, *does not* need to **enforce** the Ten Commandments in the same way as the ancient Kingdom of Israel was required to do. In fact, the secular state required by Christian faith **should not enforce** the Ten Commandments in their entirety and to a maximal extent, but only -- at a bare minimum - maintain a civil order in which life is protected, human dignity is honored, and the practice of monotheism, defined as the true monotheism - Christianity - is permissible and protected. Of course, the practice of Christianity requires that the Gospel be spread, and that requires that any person within the society be permitted to promote the Gospel and that any person be permitted to convert to Christianity without any form of violence, harm, or discrimination befalling them. Hence, a truly Islamic state, which forbids evangelization and conversion to Christ, is an *inherently* unjust state, and is not a state, but a criminal conspiracy. And we can see this plainly with ISIS, which claims to be the Caliphate but is merely a gang of murderous thugs.

But, while the state is not to establish the Kingdom of God, the state cannot stand in opposition to the establishment of the Kingdom of God. The state should be as neutral as possible, simply concerning itself with everyday affairs -- picking up garbage, building and fixing infrastructure, defending the community's safety and security, and making sure that everyone, regardless of economic status or the lack of economic opportunity that necessarily exists within a capitalist or feudal economic system, has nutrition, shelter, healthcare, education, and employment.

If a state fails to pick up the garbage, leaves the roads and bridges in disrepair, cannot defend the community's safety, and leaves its citizens hungry, homeless, sick and untreated, ignorant

and uneducated, and unemployed, it is a *bad* state. But it is *not necessarily* an unjust state.

Now, if the badness of the state becomes an *essential* element of the state -- if the state's dysfunction becomes the *purpose* of the state, then a state's badness can indeed become a source of the state's *unjustness*, and hence make the state illegitimate.

But the state will more usually - and more directly - fall into outright injustice by ordaining a civil order in which the practice of true devotion to the True God becomes impossible.

- A state that persecutes Christians or Jews (or Muslims, or any monotheistic religion) is unjust.
- A state that requires the worship of false gods and false images is unjust.
- A state that promotes dishonesty in social and economic relationships is unjust.
- A state that prevents the observance of the Sabbath is unjust.
- A state that promotes the derangement of the family or promotes disrespect by children for parents is unjust.
- A state in which murder is permissible is unjust.
- A state which promotes adultery is unjust.
- A state which does not provide basic mechanisms for preventing and/or punishing theft is unjust.
- A state which does not promote honesty within the legal system is unjust.
- A state which encourages covetousness is unjust.

Now, a state cannot redefine murder. The state cannot say, "Murder of one class of people is not murder at all." And the state cannot redefine the human person such that what is obviously a human person is not considered a human person.

The state also cannot redefine adultery. Adultery is sexual conduct between two people outside of marriage. A marriage, from time immemorial, nay, from the creation of Adam and Eve themselves, has been the communion of flesh between a man and a woman. Nothing more, and nothing less.

The state does not need to ban adultery. The state does not even need to discourage adultery. *But* the state cannot promote, much less *ordain*, adultery.

When a state *positively* promotes sin, and when it *negatively* fails to promote **fundamental** justice, then, certainly, such a state is no longer just, but, rather, is fundamentally unjust, and is, hence, illegitimate.

The United States has become such an unjust state.

With the United States Supreme Court decision in *Obergefell v. Hodges*, penned by the apostate Catholic Anthony Kennedy, the whole apparatus of the United States government has imposed upon its federal and state governments the *imperative* to ordain homosexual practices, which are inherently sinful, as *marriages*. The family is the foundation of both society and the Church. And marriage is the fundamental bond that forms a family. By equating homosexual sexual sin with the marital bond ordained by God for men and women, the United States has become an Empire of Sin.

With *Roe v. Wade*, the United States long ago abdicated its responsibility -- its sacred duty as a just state -- to protect the lives of its citizens: to protect all human life.

Rather, it has falsely demoted the unborn to a de-humanized, un-human status: all the unborn are now [untermenschen](#), worthy to

be killed at will, without any recourse or say. They are the silent subhuman class in our society, subject to a quiet holocaust.

We in this unjust society may not hear the screams of the unborn, but God does. God hears and remembers and will not relent. God is just, even if you are not.

It is one thing to promote the welfare and dignity of women. It is quite another thing to empower women as executioners of the innocent.

It is one thing to assert that violence against gay people is evil, unjust, and unacceptable. It is one thing to embrace all people who are gay as brothers and sisters, as deserving of love, respect, compassion, and dignity.

It is quite another thing to empower homosexuals as the Führers of a Brave New World, in which they, rather than basic morality, determine the foundations of the social and moral order itself.

A state can, and, I believe, should be based on Political Liberalism.

A state, to be a state, does not *need* to be liberal or democratic. It merely needs to be just, and a just state can be a monarchy or aristocracy.

A just state also does not need highways, airports, the Internet, public health services, vaccines, complex law enforcement and intelligence services, and public garbage pickup.

But I like such things, and I imagine you do too.

A monarchy is a very simple political fact. One man, or woman, rules. The one man or woman must rule *justly*, but that is all.

An aristocracy is only a bit less simple. A group of however many people rules, and all they must do is provide minimum standards of justice.

A democratic society, which is merely democratic and not liberal, *can* be just, but it is very difficult for such a society to *actually* be just. This is true for a very simple reason. For a state to be just, its rulers must be just. If everyone in a society is a ruler, all the citizens must be just. And this is a doubtful probability in a society with more than three people.

In fact, that is precisely why an aristocracy is so very likely to end up being nothing more than an unjust oligarchy. For, how can we expect 100, or 1000, or 10,000 people to be just?

And that is why a monarchy is such an uncertain, fickle thing - for one man may be just, but his son may be unjust. The history of the Kings of Israel teaches us that. So, monarchy in one generation easily ends up being tyranny in the next generation.

So, a truly *liberal*, and, of course, *just*, political order is indeed our best hope for a true and lasting and *just* political order.

For, a liberal political order, rather than hoping that the monarch or aristocrats, or democrats, are just, *limits* the power of the state altogether, *so that the injustice of the rulers is itself limited by the limited nature of the state itself*.

Now, of course, we can hear the Tea Party-types rejoice. But the state is not merely the formal government - the one to which you

pay taxes. The state is also -- and can be *more so* -- the “private” corporations that own all of society’s resources. A junta of “private” interests that owns all the wealth of a society is no longer a mere collection of private persons -- it is a government of the wealthy few over the many poor.

Of course, the purpose of the Political Right is to lie. The purpose of the talk radio right-wingers and the television Fascists is to obscure the basic fact that the economic system of the capitalist world has, itself, become a government of a rich oligarchy over the poor masses.

Now, I know what you’re thinking.....

I am not the High Sparrow

<https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=SiMyExHhAC4>

<https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=SVfP-cF4s4w>

For that would be to simply substitute a Christian tyranny for a Capitalist tyranny or a Secularist tyranny. And Christian tyranny is not Christian in the first place.

A liberal political order requires *limitations* on *all* power. The limits on the rich and powerful *are the necessary requirements* for the existence of the private rights of private persons. There is no right for a private person without a complementary limitation on the *power* of an elite person.

The trouble is that our right-wing “conservatism” confuses the private rights of private people with the *privileges* of elite persons. An elite person, endowed with outrageous fortunes and excessive power, is not at all a private person. Such an elite person, whether

he or she acknowledges it or not, is one of the rulers of an oligarchy. Now, if those rulers were just, it might be an aristocracy.

But our rulers, the wealthy, are not just. They are foul and most unjust. And hence, our society is a mere oligarchy, which is to say, it is not a state at all, but a criminal conspiracy by the wealthy against the poor.

The rights to free speech, free expression, free exercise of religion, freedom of the press, free association, and to seek redress of grievances against the government are all rights against those who hold public office -- those with power.

The rights to receive enough food to gain proper nutrition, to have housing, to have healthcare when one is sick, to receive an education, and to be employed are all rights against those who hold disproportionate, excessive, and overweening wealth -- those with power.

And *democracy*, within the constraints of a liberal political order, helps ensure that the legislators, executives, and judges within a society are responsive to the protection of the rights of the people.

Now elsewhere in this book, I describe the idea of rights, as such, as being a bit of outmoded political theory. And I believe that. Rights are simply the concomitant complement to duties, and each human person exists within a web of human relationships such that we would do much better to speak of the *dignity of the human person* and the **solidarity of the human community**. But I speak in the rights-language familiar to Americans simply for the sake of fluency.

The genius of liberalism is to limit the power of the powerful so as to amplify the freedom of the many.

All kinds of power are to be *limited*. The power of the monarch must either be eliminated or limited, so too with the power of aristocrats. The power of those who hold government offices must be limited, and the executors of that power must themselves be supervised and, hence, limited by other executors of power. There are realms of life that are left without any exercise of power. The power of the rich is limited by redistribution and by economic planning that limits the structural grip of the rich over the resources of the society.

Liberalism also eschews theocracy. No one comprehensive doctrine, as Rawls called them, can rule. No religion, no ideology, no worldview can become the *basis* of the state.

Rather, the basis of the state is the common human reason of the people of a society.

That common human reason requires that, in political activity, citizens offer public reasons according to public standards for their political acts.

In other words, citizens, in both their constitutive capacity and in their capacity as office-holders, must justify their political actions in terms that are acceptable to *all* the members of the community.

So, when the state picks up the garbage, we do not try to ground this function in Scripture, Tradition, or Marian visions. We simply pick up the garbage because it smells bad, not because a potato chip in the form of the Virgin Mary told us to do so.

When we pave a road or build a bridge, or repair a road or repair a bridge, we do so in order that people can get to the other side, and not to build the Kingdom of Heaven.

When we feed hungry people, or house homeless people, or require that medical care be given to sick poor people, or educate

ignorant people, or require that our society find employment for the unemployed, we do not justify it in terms of Scripture (at least in our public capacity), nor do we use Scripture to berate the poor and allow the rich to wash their hands of their responsibility -- their duty -- to the people they rule. Nor do we permit the Gospel of the “Free Market” (Whatever the *Hell* that is) to become the public religion of the state.

In other words, the *just* and *free* secular state is one that is not drenched in religion or ideology.

People should be suffused by religion, and they can have their ideologies.

But the just and free secular state is simple to the point of being reductive. Garbage? Pick it up. Road with potholes? Repair it. Hungry people? Give them food. Homeless people? Build an apartment complex. Poor sick people? Make *sure* that they are treated, and really properly treated. Young people and the untrained? Give them schooling and training. Unemployed people in an economy that does not provide sufficient jobs, or jobs of the necessary caliber? Create sufficient numbers of good jobs, by any means necessary, within the context of Christian morality (and Christian morality is not Social Darwinism or libertarianism). Do *not pretend* that there are plentiful jobs and good jobs when there are not.

Simple.

No religion required. No Scriptural training necessary.

However, there’s a little, minor wrinkle in Rawlsianism. Actually, it’s quite a big deal.

Rawls' theory of Political Liberalism requires a common understanding of "common sense" and "facts".

You see, the problem is: who determines "common sense" or what "facts" are?

If you demand that I justify my opposition to legalized abortion in terms of public reason....

Human beings in gestation are obviously human once they have developed obviously human bodies. To not protect such human life is to permit murder.

Can it get more public than that?

If you demand that I justify my opposition to calling homosexual sexual relationships marriages....

Marriage *is* the communion of the flesh between men and women. It cannot *change*. You cannot *change* the definition of marriage any more than you can *change* the definition of the human person.

Marriage, understood as what it is: the communion of the flesh between men and women, is simply the affirmation and corollary of the fundamental definition of the human person. The human person is *sexed*. The word "sex" originates from the Latin *sexus*, which itself derives from the Latin verb *secare*, which means to divide or cut. Hence, the human person is cut into male and female. The male and the female *are only fully themselves, really themselves*, when joined together, when reunited in one flesh.

The *purpose* of the sexual act is to reunite the male and female into *one flesh*. If two people have become truly *one flesh*, how can they ever be separated? Would not such a separation be a homicide? Hence, the sexual act may only properly be undertaken by a married

couple of a man and a woman, otherwise it is an abomination: it is a joining of the flesh that is only meant to be sundered and violated.

The sacrality of the sexual act rests in its communicative nature and function -- it *welds* by and in grace what had been *sundered* by design. Just as God exists through an outpouring of Himself upon the Son, by begetting the Son, the Man, through an outpouring of His flesh, worked by the efficient power of God, gives rise to the Woman. The communion of the woman's flesh with the man's flesh is a return of the gift of the man's flesh to the man, in the flesh. The communion of the flesh in the marital act and the marital relationship *necessarily and by design* imitates the nature and reality of the Trinity. As the Father is the Giver and the Son is the Gift, and as the Bond between Father and Son is the Exchange of the Gifts -- the giving of the Gift by the Giver and the return of the Gift by the Gift -- so too in the marriage the man is the giver and the woman the gift, and the return of the gift by the woman to the man forms the bond of gratitude - of perpetual union - between man and wife.

That is why Genesis 1:27 explicitly states, "God created man in his image; in the divine image he created him; **male and female** he created them."

The Secularist demands that the legitimation and justification and definition of marriage be made *without* reference to God.

But that [begs the question](#) (in the true philosophical sense of placing the conclusion in the premises).

*If God exists, and if God is God, then **nothing** can ultimately be justified without reference to God: not the human person, not human dignity, not human rights, not human culture, not any human state, and not human marriage.*

The Secularist demand that *all* political values -- fundamental political values, structures, and cultures -- be justified *without reference to God* is a **fundamentally** atheistical demand.

Concretely and historically, religion has been a fundamental public value throughout history, until the 20th century, and even in the 20th century a basic religious orientation was considered a public value until the Cultural Revolution of the 1960s.

Theocracy has *never* been a public value in the United States. But the *basic Judeo-Christian religious conception of human nature, of which marriage and the marital act and the idea of sexual intercourse consequent to it is an integral part*, has **always** been a public value in the United States. The conception of sexual union between male flesh and female flesh is an *element* of the definition of the human person.

The attempt by Secularists (really, Atheists) to totally dislodge *basic* religious assumptions about human nature from the legitimate domain of public reason is nothing less than an Atheist-Satanic Revolution against the historical constitutional order of the United States, of the Western World, of Western Civilization itself.

Christians are *not* the revolutionaries. The Atheists....excuse me, the "Secularists"....are the true revolutionaries, disrupting, rending, and devastating the constitutional fabric of the United States of America.

Why do *I* need to justify why marriage is what it has always been throughout *all* of human history?

The definition of marriage as the communion of the flesh between male flesh and female flesh is not only supported by

universal historical precedent, but by the manifest biological reality of the human flesh, which itself testifies to this essential and unchangeable truth.

Many of the sophisticates in our society might scoff at the quaint notion that male flesh and female flesh merge, and commune, into *one* flesh.

And yet, is that not precisely the *purpose* - the telos, the goal, the end - of the sexual act?

For in the sexual act, the male flesh, excited by the female flesh, is worked up into a state of arousal, such that, in the intimate embrace of coitus, his seed is deposited into the womb of the woman, and there it is joined to the female's flesh, her ovum. The flesh of the male and the flesh of the female commune, they *merge*, such that there is now *one* flesh.

And that *one* flesh now becomes a new life, a new human person, a new human flesh.

The whole fabric and fertility -- the very survival -- of human life *requires* this communion of the flesh.

Marriage is the spiritual ordination of the manifest biotic nature of the flesh.

For, as I have shown repeatedly and often without recourse to revelation, the human being is the spirit enfleshed in matter. That is the essential *nature* of the human person. How can human law rule and operate and even understand itself without reference to the fundamental, essential, basic nature of the human person?

Whatever the psychological and physiological drives that may impel a person to engage in sexual conduct with someone of the same sex, that intercourse *does not and cannot* breed new life, the life that sustains the human race in the face of our overwhelming and unavoidable mortality.

Heterosexual sex and sexual unions are privileged and paramount by reason and order of Nature itself. Heterosexual sex preserves the human race in the face of death. Homosexual sex cannot.

To ordain homosexual sexual relationships as *equal*, as *the same*, as heterosexual sexual unions, is to mock and defy Nature itself. It is to raise that which *cannot* stand in the face of death to the very same level as that which *does, must, and will* preserve the human race in the face of death.

To so mock the nature of the human flesh, and its dynamism, is to court death and expel life. It is the crowning triumph of a Culture of Death over a Culture of Life.

The society that embraces a Culture of Death shall have it.

God created human free will, He respects human free will, and He ratifies human free will in eternity.

To *choose* such a mockery of the obvious realities of human nature is to choose death. It is to exercise the free will of a human society *against* God.

God respects that.

God will also crush such a society. For, in the end, there is either God's Way or *not-God's* Way. Since God, the Spirit of God, *is* Life, and since He is the life of the human race, and since this is not God's arrogance but the inevitable and unavoidable Spiritual Constitution of Existence, those who *choose* against God, choose against their own lives.

God puts before you DEATH and LIFE. God proclaims CHOOSE LIFE.

The Communion of Male and Female Flesh is life.

If the whole weight of human history and the manifest nature and dynamism of human flesh itself is not a public reason, then perhaps public reason is Satanic reason.

And that's the whole point.

For, true, deep Secularism has nothing to do with the Liberalism of picking up the garbage, paving the roads, feeding the poor, and curing the sick.

True, deep Secularism is about the Religion of the Self.
And the Religion of the Self is the Deification of the Self.

Now, Christianity proclaims that, *through God*, God will deify the Christian to reign with Him, simply because He is pure Generosity and wishes the human race to be His sons and daughters.

But self-deification is the sin of Satan.

And within the Liberal Project is indeed the Modern Project. And within Locke is Hobbes. And Hobbes is an atheist. And an atheist is always either a witting or unwitting Satanist.

The *purpose* of Modern Secular Liberalism is not individual liberty or the dignity of human personhood or whatever. It is the rebellion of the human race against God. It is the human race marching under Satan's banner in Satan's War against God.

There *can* and *should* be a Christian Liberalism. Christian Liberalism affirms and proclaims the just and free secular state --

the neutral secular state that does not seek to build the Kingdom of God, spread the Gospel, convert anyone to anything, or create a grand comprehensive vision of what human life means.

The state should be like banking in the 1950s. Boring, stolid, and spiritually unsatisfying. No great crusades, no jihads, no spiritual redemption. Just picking up the trash, organizing the construction crews, building the hospitals, building the schools, and taking stock of the real numbers of the unemployed, and putting those people to work either by assigning quotas to private corporations or putting them to work in government programs.

My job is boring....and I love it!



© Can Stock Photo

Secular Modernist Liberalism places *human* reason and *human* desires **AGAINST** the Will of God.

Christian Liberalism subordinates human reason and human desires beneath the Will of God. Now, the Will of God does not require theocracy. In fact, the Will of God **forbids** theocracy. *But* not having theocracy *does not* mean that the State can or should be permitted to **ordain** murder or adultery or polytheism or dishonesty

in basic social relationships or religious persecution or the derangement of the family or theft or lawlessness or anarchy.

A state does not even have to take positive measures to forbid or eradicate adultery, polytheism, moderate levels of dishonesty, or the self-derangement of the family. The state does not need to impose a [Saruman](#)-like order upon everything: a certain level of lawlessness may be the necessary price of not living in a totalitarian police state.

God does *not* require that we live in a Christian Saudi Arabia....in fact, such a state would be more destructive - **totally destructive** - of the mission of the Church to preach the Gospel.

It is inconceivable, however, that any state -- any basic civil order -- could exist without the prohibition of murder. Now, the extent to which the force and resources of society are marshaled against murder is a matter for secular judgment. *But* when that secular judgment is no longer one of resources, rights, and the balancing of order with freedom ***but becomes an endorsement of murder***, then the state is unjust and no longer a state.

Liberalism, from the Rawlsian point of view, which has much to recommend it, requires that the secular state be operated according to secular reasons -- public reasons and public values.

But when those secular reasons -- those public reasons and public values -- do not simply *not* directly refer to religious reasons and values, but **make war upon religion**, then the secular state and its supporters have declared war on God.

And, in such a war, God will always win.

The trouble with Rawls is, naturally, that Rawls is an atheist. So, for Rawls, the basic common sense he appeals to is, necessarily,

an atheist common sense. Rawls' whole project is doomed from the start, *at bottom*.

As a framework for thinking through the secular state, Rawls is basically fine.

But Rawls' Political Liberalism is, *at bottom*, justified by his own comprehensive worldview: atheism.

Rawls presents atheism as just one more of the doctrines that "fit" into his Political Liberalism.

But, really, atheism is the wellspring of his Political Liberalism.

Whenever there is a fundamental dispute about what constitutes common sense, *basic* religious impulses, intuitions, and beliefs are shoved to the side and the *only* permissible reasons and values, in the end, are atheistical reasons and values.

That sort of Liberalism, when developed assiduously and grown to the hideous heights it has reached today, becomes an abomination, a great Tower of Babel that provokes God to wrath.

When the liberal secular state crosses the line from ignoring God to *waging war upon God*, that is when the Church must take leave of the state.

That is when the Church is no longer merely separate from the state.

That is when the State has declared war against the Church.

And anything that declares war against the Church is in league with Satan, whether it is Islam, Capitalism, or Secular Modernity.

Nor is *over*-correction the answer. The answer is *not* for Christians to overtake the state and turn the state into a Christian

State. That overreaction is Christian Fascism and that is as anti-Christian, maybe, in the end, *more* anti-Christian than Islam, Capitalism, or Secular Modernity.

I say *more*, because at least with the other threats *you know* that they're not Christian. With Christian Fascism and Christian Empire, Satan is saying that he's Christ. There's more duplicity involved.

It *is* permissible, however, and, indeed, required, for Christians to defend the Church. Christians as Christians should faithfully be members of the Church. And Christians *as citizens* should try to chasten the State, so that it is no longer an Instrument of Satan, but merely a boring, neutral secular state that picks up the trash, paves roads, builds bridges, hospitals, and schools, feeds the poor, educates the uneducated, and employs the unemployed.

Now, naturally, as we assert that the postmodern Western secular state (really *secularist state*) is illegitimate, that leads to the question: is revolution permissible?

A violent revolution is a war. Basic Christian morality requires that just war is only permissible if certain **basic** factors are satisfied.

- All non-violent options must be exhausted.
- Any revolutionary war must have a **reasonable** chance of success.
- The goal of the war must be just.
- All violence must be constrained by principles of proportionality, decency, and human sympathy.
- There must be a central revolutionary command structure, because there must be some legitimate authority waging the

war, like the Continental Congress. Vigilantism and terrorism by individuals and small groups are **never** permitted.

- Terrorism is impermissible. Any war effort **must** differentiate between combatants and civilians. Civilians **may NEVER** be targeted.

By these standards, some sort of Christian revolution, *at this stage of history*, is totally impermissible. *Impermissible*.

All non-violent options have **not** been exhausted. Non-violent options could **only ever** be exhausted in the absence of democratic procedures, free speech, and free association.

So long as proponents of justice **have the legitimate possibility to be elected**, such proponents of justice *must* work within non-violent, democratic, electoral politics. Don't like it? Tough. But if you do anything violent to anyone, don't use my ideas to support yourself. You're nothing but a thug, terrorist, and murderer. You're a true Satanist.

Beyond which, no such Christian revolution has any chance of success. Secularist states would easily and swiftly crush any violent force opposed to their authority through the exercise of the overwhelming might of their militaries.

Further, the only imaginable organizations that would wage such a war are worse than the Secularists. The only people who would wage such a Christian revolution are the racists, the white supremacists, the conspiracy theorists, the Christian Fascists, the flat-earthers, the KKK, skinheads, the American Nazi Party.

The leaders of the American Revolution were the leaders of the country -- the most socially prominent and intellectually preeminent men of the age in the land. Any "Christian" revolution in today's

society would amount to nothing more than Eric Rudolph-style terrorism and murder. The Christian “revolutionary” of today would style himself George Washington, but actually be the Unabomber or Timothy McVeigh.

DON'T BE THE UNABOMBER

<https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=QQnJGoFnC6Q>

DON'T BE TIMOTHY MCVEIGH

<https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=l08zD9Pn1jk>

Revolution is not the answer today -- it is not even possible *as* revolution -- it would only be murder and terrorism. And we Scripture scholars, in our analysis of the sacred texts, generally concur on a basic principle.....“murder bad”.

Besides, just war theory -- which is the only theory that could even conceptually justify revolution -- is on shaky ground when it comes to the Gospel. Jesus is a pacifist, and the Gospel is pacifistic. The Kingdom of God does not belong to this world.

If there is to be a chastisement of the United States, God will do it directly, either supernaturally or through the natural and historical process, through wars and disasters. It does **not** need to be organized by Christians, and it *should not* be organized by Christians. Christians need to simply wait, pray, be penitent and persevering. It is God who avenges -- and God alone. Jesus’ life and death affirms that, and affirms that pacifism is the only totally authentic Christian way of life.

But, while we damn racists and white supremacists and terrorists and murderers.....we cannot excuse the Secularist force in our society that wages war upon God.

Just because Timothy McVeigh was evil, that does not make Anthony Kennedy good or just.

Timothy McVeigh was a terrorist and a murderer. He is in Hell.

But Anthony Kennedy is a deluded apostate who has rendered the United States a Satanic absurdity.

McVeigh may have been on death row and executed by lethal injection, and Kennedy may wear robes and swill cocktails at cocktail parties and be praised in the media. But both do the work of Satan.

Now, Anthony Kennedy has not killed anybody -- (although that isn't even true because he has upheld pro-abortion decisions that have allowed the slaughter of millions) -- but what can be said of a man who has turned a whole nation over to Satan?

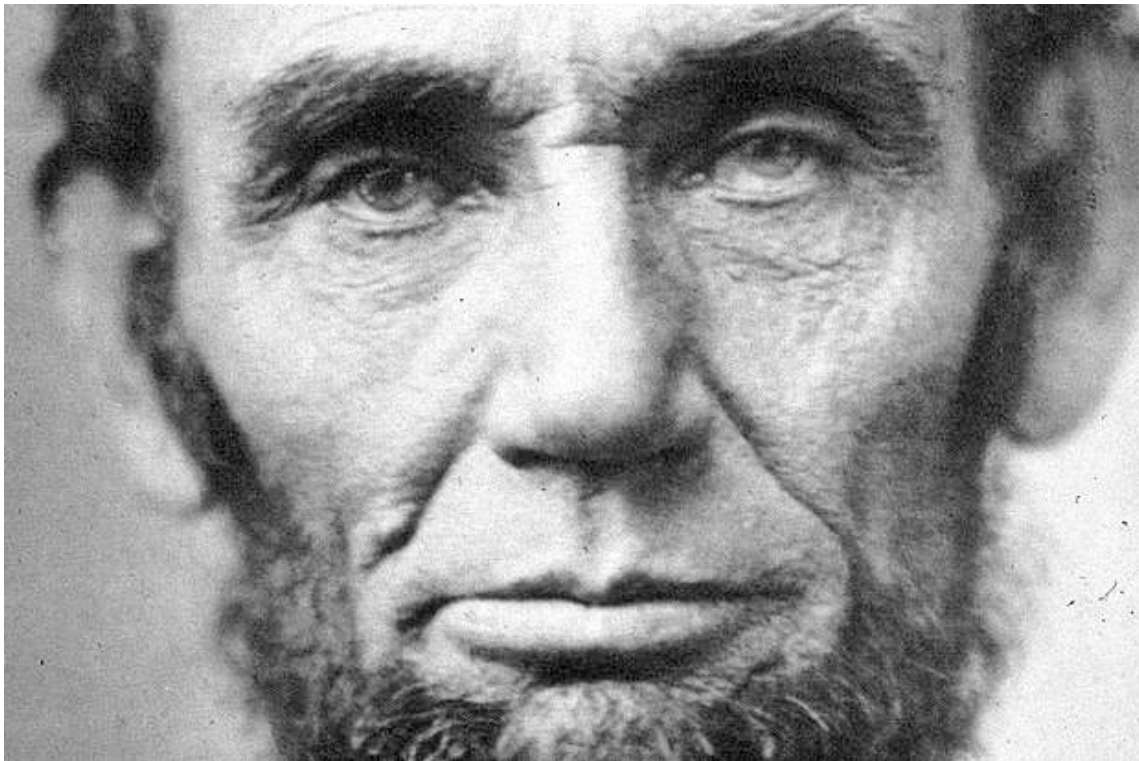
True, good Liberalism is about promoting freedom *and* justice. Good, Christian Liberalism does not set freedom *against* justice.

Which means.....what? That I am the precursor of *The Handmaid's Tale*? That I am Torquemada? That I am even Savonarola?

HOGWASH!

You know who I am politically?





None of these men supported mass, legalized abortion and none of them would have supported calling homosexual relationships marriage.

It is idle and meaningless to “baptize” these people after death into your Secularist mindset....oh, “certainly” they would have agreed with us...once they “*understood*”.

The men as they were.....the men as they *are*, held perfectly Christian worldviews *and* perfectly liberal worldviews.

You do *not* become a Fascist because you oppose the holocaust of babies and the sacralization of sodomy.

The idea that you do is simply the first stage, (maybe, really, the second or third stage), of a Satanic assault on the Church of Christ.

This is NOT Political Liberalism



THIS is Political Liberalism



COMMON SENSE - NEW DEAL-STYLE

[https://www.youtube.com/watch?
v=b8oPbsgUN1E](https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=b8oPbsgUN1E)

The **Second Bill of Rights** is a list of rights that was proposed by United States President [Franklin D. Roosevelt](#) during his [State of the Union Address](#) on January 11, 1944.^[1] In his address, Roosevelt suggested that the nation had come to recognize and should now implement, a second "[bill of rights](#)." Roosevelt's argument was that the "political rights" guaranteed by the [US Constitution](#) and the [Bill of Rights](#) had "proved inadequate to assure us equality in the [pursuit of happiness](#)." His remedy was to declare an "economic bill of rights" to guarantee these specific rights:

- [Employment](#), Food, clothing, and leisure with [enough income to support them](#)
- Farmers' rights to a fair income
- Freedom from [unfair competition](#) and [monopolies](#)
- [Housing](#)
- [Medical care](#)
- [Social security](#)
- [Education](#)

Roosevelt stated that having such rights would guarantee American security, and that the US's place in the world depended upon how far the rights had been carried into practice.

https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Second_Bill_of_Rights

THE BOSS



To the *Rich*: *Meet your Master*

[https://www.youtube.com/
watch?v=IjSTQwamo8M](https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=IjSTQwamo8M)

*My favorite food?
Grilled Millionaire*

[https://www.youtube.com/
watch?v=iQRwcI0-Nm4](https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=iQRwcI0-Nm4)

*Let me warn you about the
Republicans*

[https://www.youtube.com/
watch?v=S3RHnKYNvx8](https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=S3RHnKYNvx8)

The Wealthy: The Real Source of Fascism
<https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=dLR5CqZM77Q>

<https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=jhGm3b6ByeI>

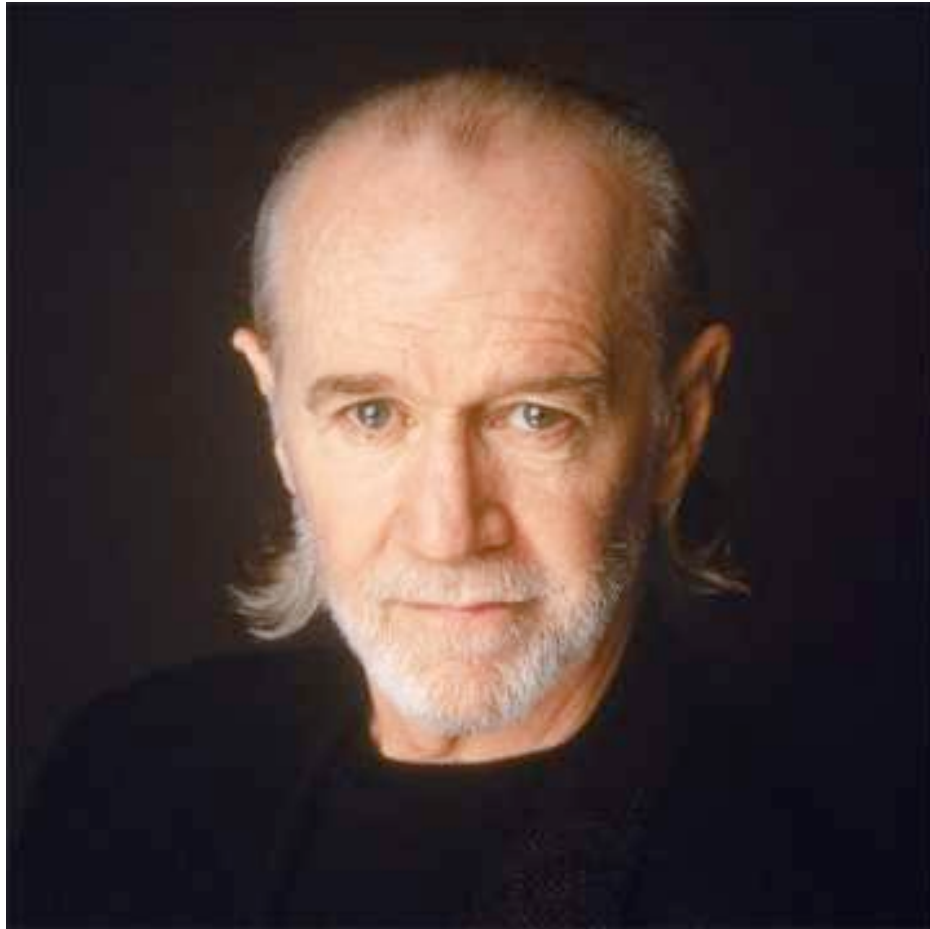
*Unemployed men and women are **not** free men and women*
https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=czvHtOh_Xew

For the Haters



I shake it off

Beware the Rich



They DON'T care about you AT ALL....AT ALL...AT ALL!!!

<https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=rsL6mKxtOlQ>

Secularists (1) do not understand the mess they've made, (2) don't care about the mess they've made, or (3) intentionally desire to make the mess they've made.

The Christian conception of the state as a secular state (which, to be a state at all must be *just* - i.e., must meet a minimum threshold of justice acceptable to **God**) is quite permissive.

But there is a difference between a secular state that is autonomous from God and a secular state that wages war upon God.

The Christian believes that *this* world is not God's world, and, hence, no state in *this* world can ever be really God's.

So the Christian does not seek to perfect the state or society. The Christian only seeks to grow the Flesh of Christ through history, and trusts that God will fulfill the Flesh of Christ as the Kingdom of God at the Apocalypse.

If the state is better, great, if worse, that's unfortunate. But the state of the state, and the state of civilization, is never fundamental for a true Christian. *Only* the growth and fulfillment of the Church, the Flesh of Christ, the conversion of the world to Christ, and the fulfillment of the communion of love among all Christians in Christ Jesus is fundamental to a true Christian.

*But...*and this is the whole ball game right now.....the state **cannot** *fundamentally* impede the growth of the Church through history.

When the state becomes not merely an annoyance or a hindrance to the growth of the Church, but becomes a roadblock, or a prison, God will destroy the roadblock and prison.

God doesn't care at all about the human state. God only cares about what is *His* in the world -- and what is *His* in the world is the Church, the Flesh of Christ, the Christian community.

So, let's recount (with music maybe): Sodom, Gomorrah, Egypt, Assyria, Babylonia, the Seleucids, the Roman Empire, the Islamic hordes racing into Europe in the 7th and 8th Centuries, Napoleon, Hitler, the Soviet Union.....

America, let me ask you a simple question.....

Do you want to be on that list?

Are you on God's Enemies' List?

<https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=YOuhYuZLNYw>

*If you sacralize baby murder and
sodomy....*

*You just might be on God's
Enemies' List....*

<https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=0ZY7PowZ328>

There are certain things a state **cannot** do, regardless of considerations of progress, human dignity, human rights, or any other value, standard, or belief.

Because the *ONE* standard that *is* above all other values, standards, and beliefs *whether you like it or not* is **God**.

The Ten Commandments do not need to be enforced by the state.

***But* the Ten Commandments cannot be fundamentally offended by the state.**

The Basic Rules

The State **cannot**:

- Compel the practice of polytheism.
- Forbid the practice of monotheism.
- Derange the family as a matter of policy.
- Permit murder.
- Ordain and establish adultery.
- Promote and establish dishonesty in social and economic relationships.
- Promote and establish dishonesty in the legal system.
- Promote, ordain, and establish a culture of covetousness.

If you do, don't be surprised when horrible things happen and your society collapses.

Now, it may take a while, because God is *slow to anger*. *But* He is very real, and when His Anger reaches the boiling point - *Watch Out!*

Remember a fundamental fact about God: God only blesses His Own Name. Why? Because a **blessing** is an endowment of Felicity. And *only* Righteousness can be endowed with Felicity....and *God alone is Righteous*.

As a corollary, since Israel has a Covenant with God, God blesses Israel *for the sake of His Name*.

As a further corollary, since the Church is the apotheosis of Israel, the inheritor of the New Covenant, and is God's own Flesh, God blesses *His own Flesh*.

Those who bless Israel and the Church are blessed by God. Those who are neutral towards Israel and the Church, God is neutral

towards. Those who *curse* Israel and the Church will be cursed by God.

If you violate the Basic Rules, you are screwed. Maybe not today, maybe not tomorrow, but soon enough....and for the rest of time. You will be consigned to the garbage pile of civilizations that opposed God.

No amount of your own rationalizations, protestations, bullshit, pseudo-eloquence, pride, arrogance, or willfulness will save you.

GOD ALWAYS WINS.

If your Constitution and Laws *offend and oppose* the Basic Law that God requires of the secular state, your state will be destroyed.....not by little old me, I can't destroy a state, nor am I inclined to do so....I'm busy, I have other things on my agenda....**but by God Himself**, who is entirely capable of destroying a state. *And has done so in the past repeatedly.*

(If you want me to lead your Christian Revolution, I'm busy.....till the Twelfth of Never.)

How you see your society (sans the irony in the video)

<https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=Um7pMggPnug>

How God sees your society

<https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=k8a1wofBOX4>

<https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=rvv3hFVwEtc>

You can't be serious.

Either God exists or He doesn't. If He doesn't, you're fine.

But if God exists -- if the real God exists....and exists as He presents Himself in the Bible and has acted throughout human history....*you're obviously screwed.* I mean, come on, guys.

BUT

Whatever you do, *don't delude yourself into thinking God is cool with your society and your values.*

If you act the way you're acting, you're betting that **God doesn't exist.**

But if God *does* exist, you're going to lose - big time.

That being said, this does not mean that certain accommodations cannot be made to the exigencies of human frailty and the imperatives of human dignity.

On abortion, after millions of babies have been murdered by the Infant Holocaust, I have precisely zero sympathy for the abortionist millennialists.

My View of Legalized Abortion

The Purge

<https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=K0LLaybEuZA>

A dialogue and rapprochement between faithful Jews and Christians and abortionists seems about as meaningful as a friendship between Louis XVI and Robespierre. Let's call the whole thing off.

For homosexuals however.....for gays and lesbians, there can be peace with the Church, if they want it.

From a religious standpoint, Scripture and Tradition dictate that for a person who truly has a homosexual orientation, that person, to live a morally stainless life, must remain celibate. However, this is no more onerous a burden than that placed upon a single person. The single person, to live a morally stainless life, may not masturbate, watch pornography, or even fantasize.

Now, for those who have *at all* a bisexual orientation, the answer is simple: exercise the bisexual option for a heterosexual relationship in a marriage.

This may not be as satisfying as exploring all of your desires, but that is no matter. Being a swinger and having key parties and having menage a trois and having casual sex may be more exciting and satisfying, on a purely sexual level, for straight couples as well, but the Church forbids such things to straights. Not having all your desires gratified is a charge that straights can level against God the same as gays (should one dare to be so presumptuous before God).

But if you acknowledge God as sovereign, you will obey even and *especially* when self-abnegation is required, because you recognize (1) that God has sovereign claims over you and (2) that the true life, where all your desires will be healed and fulfilled and exalted, is the *next* life.

You recognize that this life is broken, sundered, defective, so you do not need to realize yourself in this life. You simply need to endure in Christ.

To endure in Christ in this life *is* to realize yourself in this life, and to save yourself for the true life, in the World to Come.

The real trouble comes in when a person is quite oriented towards the same sex, such that a heterosexual sexual relationship cannot provide any sexual succor or satisfaction.

I am not a statistician, and I do not wish to delve into precise numbers regarding how many people really fall into this category.

But, regardless, however many people are really in this situation, I can offer a few reflections.

First, moral perfection is not required for salvation. So, you can have sex with 10,000 men, and then at 90, with a moment of true repentance, save your soul. The key, of course, is *true* repentance, so, if you really were the Casanova of Gay Sex, you'll probably have too hardened a heart (no pun intended) at 90 to muster even a drop of true repentance.

The key point is that the situation of a gay man or woman is the same as that of a bachelor, spinster, or religious priest, brother, or sister. Whatever failures of chastity -- of celibacy -- may have been committed, one can always start over and put them aside, and, if one maintains at least an interior orientation against sin, regardless of failures, if one truly has faith in Christ and sincerely *strives* to live according to the revealed standards of righteousness, a man or woman can *trust* that Christ will save them.

Second, one should really *think through* what sexual succor and satisfaction means. If one simply means male ejaculation or female stimulation and orgasm, a marriage of convenience between a gay and a lesbian should offer quite a lot of succor. The same

holds for straight couples. Another person may offer greater sexual excitement and pleasure than your spouse, but you cannot sin against God under any circumstances, certainly not because, in abstaining from sin, you thereby deny yourself maximal pleasure. When my wife is 60, it may be more satisfying to have sex with a 30-year-old, *but that would be wrong*.

Third, we come to the matter of interpersonal intimacy. I can't help you if you really can't have interpersonal intimacy with someone of the opposite sex.

The Christian must always rest on the truth that this world is a passing snap of the fingers, a bridge to the World to Come.

If this world were *really* all there is, then let's eat, drink, and be merry, for tomorrow we die. As St. Paul says, if for this life only we have lived for Christ, we are the most pitiable of all men.

And that's the root of the gay irruption. In order for a gay person to really strive to fulfill all their sexual and intimate capacities in *this* life, they must ***truly not believe that there is, in fact, a real World to Come in which every one of their potentialities will be healed and fulfilled.***

If a gay man or lesbian *really* believes that there is a World to Come, he or she should (1) strive for celibacy or (2) accommodate *him* or *herself* to the requirements of the divine law and just tough it out.

But you delude yourself if you think that you can just rewrite the Scripture and reengineer the Tradition. You are putting yourself into the same woeful situation as the priests who worshipped in the Temple prior to the Babylonian Exile. Those priests of the First

Temple worshipped foreign idols in the Temple, and they thought that it was okay.

They found out that God disagreed.

For those gays and lesbians who are doubting, unsure, agnostic, or outright atheistic, we can at least speak of detente.

The Gay Rights Movement rightly criticized and fought against systematic bigotry and oppression against gays and lesbians. The treatment of gay men and women prior to the movement was deplorable, unacceptable, evil, unjust, and, frankly, un-Christian.

No human beings should be subject to violence, harassment, degradation, insult, or indignities, or ignored in their hour of dire need.

The failure of the state and the whole Church to adequately respond to the HIV-AIDS crisis in the 1980s is a shame and a horror for which the whole Church must repent.

I have, I trust, strongly stated that marriage is a third rail over which there can be no peace.

But, not only should the Church not oppose *true* anti-discrimination laws, it should support laws that truly seek to decrease hatred for gays and lesbians and that seek to protect gays and lesbians from violence, harassment, or any form of bullying, in any walk of life: in schools, workplaces, public places, public accommodations, or the government. Legal arrangements should be facilitated that permit private persons to easily arrange inheritance and visitation in hospital, and other like concerns.

I do not hate gays and lesbians. If I believed there were no God, I would be the most avid gay rights advocate.

But I do believe that God is -- I am convinced that that is the *fundamental* fact of existence apart from which all reality is inconceivable.

However, such anti-discrimination laws *should not* be drafted, executed, or interpreted such that homosexual sexual acts are endorsed by the State. The human dignity, freedom, and privacy of persons should be preserved and protected, and the state can do that without endorsing homosexual acts.

Unfortunately, the whole terminology of gay rights is, of course, intentionally suffused with such mania for endorsement.

The modern cultural left sees gays and lesbians as just another identity group -- today they are accorded the status of the *premier* identity group, feted by all the organs of the culture.

But seeing gays and lesbians as the functional and natural equivalent of African Americans, Latinos, Asians, and various religious minorities is **fundamentally** incompatible with authentic Christian Faith.

The identity politics of the 21st century gay rights movement is no longer a gay *rights* movement. It is a Gay **Power** movement.

Gays and lesbians have *long* since moved beyond fighting the police and trying to survive a ravaging virus.

Gays have set themselves a task as stunning as the project to build the Tower of Babel: to mold the culture, the state, and all social relations, at a fundamental, basic, and existential level, in their own image.

I went to college and law school in the 21st Century -- I know the score, and I'm familiar with the game.

The homosexual agenda attacks *any* deviation from homosexual orthodoxy as utter, foul bigotry, for which the offender must be shamed, savaged, and destroyed.

The exterior of the agenda protests that homosexuals are simply trying to protect themselves from violence and hatred.

But the interior of the agenda, which ever more becomes the exterior - and we have seen this with the whole transgender uproar - seeks to oppose "heterosexism" and to impose what can only be properly described as homosexuality - homophobia.

It is not enough -- *not at all enough* -- for society to simply leave gay people alone. No, no, no. Vengeance must be exacted. Power must be seized. Homage must be given.

My view of human sexuality, and of the roles of the male and female, and of the nature of the sexual act as the communion of the flesh between the man and woman, is to be treated as a Christian or Jew in an Islamic Empire. It may be held privately, but I may not publicly advocate my view (which is the millennia-old view of Western Civilization), and I may not, certainly, attempt to convert others to my view or privilege that view or establish it as the foundation of the social order.

Rather, the Brave New World of the Homosexualist Fuhrers must be worshipped and ordained by law, culture, the media, the arts, and respectable -- *acceptable* -- opinion.

The whole Christian worldview is to be exploded, chained, dissected, torn asunder -- it is essentialist, racist, sexist, homophobic, retrograde, heterosexist....bad, bad, bad....wicked -- to be eliminated.

Dissent is hate speech. Disagreement is bigotry. Advocacy of Christian ideas is violence, even terrorism.

We are to be ruled by a Gay Caliphate.

And when you call the Gay Caliphate the terror, tyranny, and abomination it is, it comes for you with all the fury of Satan.

The Gay Caliphate comes for you with all the fury that Sodom came for Lot with.

The Gay Caliphate has their Gay Quran: the recitation of the gay lust: Sexuality is its own end. Sex is for enjoyment, excitement, and self-actualization. Sex does not need to be procreative and has no essential referent to procreation. Sex is not inherently a communion of male and female flesh -- to say so is heterosexist, homophobic bigotry.

The Gay Quran goes on: The human person is not created by God. The human person's sexuality has no limitations other than consent. Human sexuality has no *essential* parameters or transcendent end -- the highest and only sexual morality is the pleasure of (multiple) consenting adults.

The Gay Quran is basically a technicolor restatement of Anton LaVey's *Satanic Bible*.

The Gay Caliphate is to attain the cultural and political power that the Church held in the Middle Ages -- it is to be the arbiter and determiner of all morality, the foundation of the social order itself.

Long ago have they left behind the mere simple goal of survival and dignity --- they have set themselves the ambition of absolute predominance and power. And they have now all but attained it.

And marriage is only the beginning.

As we have seen, the Gay Caliphate will not stop.

Transgenderism must tear down “essentialist” ideas of the male and female as distinct *entirely*.

Private businesspeople must service homosexual weddings against their will.

The whole educational establishment is already kneeling before the Gay Caliphate.

Children in schools will be punished for repeating the “bigotry” of their parents. Children are taught from nursery school that homosexual sex and social relationships built upon homosexual sex are sacred, normal, and desirable.

Before long, they will come for our Churches. Churches that preach standard Christian morality will be targeted for hate speech.

They will be sued under causes of action that call such preaching defamation.

The tax-exempt status of Churches that preach against homosexual acts will be taken away.

Businesses will be freely allowed to discriminate against authentic Christians, and will be encouraged to do so, as they are already today.

Professors who advocate Christian morality will be denied tenure and have their tenure revoked.

Students who do not confess to the Gay Profession of Faith will be denied admission to colleges and graduate training.

Christians who express their views in public will be arrested and imprisoned for hate speech.

The political advocacy of Christian morality will be categorized as hate speech and as terrorism and will be banned.

At the rate we are going, in fifty years - in twenty years - Christians will be rounded up and put into reeducation camps, so that they cannot pollute society with their terroristic hate.

I am too engrained in traditional Christian morality to properly imagine the outrages that the Gay Caliphate will perpetrate.

But every year, every month, a new requirement will be laid down, a fresh sacrifice demanded from Christian morality.

And, at every stage, each fresh outrage will be defended as not only right, but *morally inevitable*, no matter how insane the new demand from the Gay Caliphate is.

Twenty years ago -- *ten* years ago -- who could have *imagined* that private businesspeople would be impressed into serving homosexuals at receptions that those businesspeople do not agree with -- at receptions that fundamentally offend Christian faith?

This is indeed a culture war. And the Church is losing, badly -- has lost.

So, therefore, I say to gays and lesbians, take my olive branch before it is too late.

Accept the rollback of calling homosexual relationships marriages, and accept a simple, neutral legal framework that will leave gays and lesbians alone.

Surrender your arrogant, insane efforts to deform the culture and destroy Christianity.

Why? Why surrender your Imperium in the moment of your greatest triumph?

Because, while the Church has lost, the Church has a friend, who never loses.

The Church has a secret weapon.

God.

Evacuate? In our moment of Triumph?

<https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=SoiKosRN5fY>

After the defeat of the Homosexual agenda, the Church must be truly Christian. It is as important, in some ways more important, to exhibit Christian grace, forgiveness, and mercy in victory as in defeat.

For those who doubt the Church's Triumph, realize that the Homosexual-Secularist-Atheist-Satanic agenda is *fundamentally* offensive to God, destructive of Christian Faith, and imperils the souls of all Christians everywhere. It is a clear and present danger to the fulfillment of the Church.

It does not matter how many celebrities you have backing you. It does not matter how many tweets mouth Homosexual slogans. It does not matter how many 80-year-old self-involved, deluded jurists you have captured. Your control of the media is irrelevant.

If God exists, and if God is God, and if God has revealed Himself authentically in the Bible, then the Gay Caliphate, its whole agenda, and all its works will be utterly destroyed.

God's Will always wins. That which is intolerable to God, and the persistence of which frustrates the plan of God, will cease. And, if it does not cease through the ordinary operations of the Church's ministry, it will cease through an exercise of supernatural power, the horror and anguish of which will impel the human race to once again obey God.

The Church may be powerless and contemptibly weak and diffident in the face of the Gay Caliphate.

God is not.

How the Gay Caliphate looks to the Church
<https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=PsHNigj-mN0>

How the Gay Caliphate looks to God
<https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=O7jp0R1-qVo>

After the Will of God prevails, the Church in its Victory *must not* act towards gays and lesbians with the same arrogance, vituperation, oppressiveness, spleen, and vengeance with which they acted towards Christians.

Take to heart and live out Churchill's Moral:

In War, Resolution
In Defeat, Defiance
In Victory, Magnanimity
In Peace, Good Will

The Great Apostasy

The Church, the whole People of God, must open its eyes.

We have been living in the times of a Great Apostasy. The Church has become a fetid, rotted barque, filled with pedophiles, active homosexuals, Satanists, apostates, the greedy and lascivious rich, those who consort with organized crime, the weak-willed, the cowardly, those desperate for the approval of the world, careerists, the numb, the slothful, the slow of heart, the hardened of heart.

Our Lady of Good Success spoke of these times, and of the mis-leaders of the Church:

During this unfortunate epoch, injustice will even enter here, my closed garden. Disguised under the name of false charity, it will wreak havoc in souls. The spiteful demon will try to sow discord, making use of putrid members, who, masked by the appearance of virtue, will be like decaying sepulchers emanating the pestilence of putrefaction, causing moral deaths in some and lukewarmness in others.

The maximally disgusting immorality of our Prelates, which has penetrated into the heart of the Vatican and has corrupted the nerve center of the Catholic Church, has rendered the Flesh of Christ putrefied by lust, greed, pride, envy, gluttony and sloth of every sort. The only sin it seems to lack is anger, because the Church has grown cool and disbelieving, so it cannot flame with Holy Anger, for it lacks all holiness. The only anger that is left is in the hearts of the self-righteous, who, abandoned by the ministry of the Church, can only rail vainly against the Great Apostasy.

The Satanic War Plan -- the triple threat of Secular Modernity, Islam, and Capitalism -- prepared the way for this Nightmare. And the response of the Church put the last nails in the coffin.

For Secular Modernity produced a world in which the scientific knowledge of material reality, combined with the powerful technological manipulations of matter based on such knowledge, blinded and cowed all spiritual insight. The sacred imagination and the theological sciences, battered by the materialist onslaught, sank into decrepitude and lassitude. Depleted and adrift, the practice of Christian religion and spirituality could no longer depend on a robust, magisterial theological science, but could only float along on an appeal to the emotions and the most moribund sentimentality.

Capitalism produced a world in which the consolations of the World to Come became besides the point. The *Here and Now* became quite titillating and always offered the hope -- true and/or false -- that a great gratification could be had right now, this side of death. Capitalism did the Devil's Work in every respect: (1) rendering millions - billions - nameless, powerless slaves, (2) exalting a proportionally few masters to the heights of material and sensual ecstasy, and (3) creating a world in which material progress, rather than spiritual salvation, became the summum bonum -- the highest end, the final good -- of human existence: the purpose of the human race. A Christendom that had striven and endured in the paths of faith, hope, and love became a West that shriveled in the pursuits of wealth, comfort, and amusement.

With a mind blinkered by materialism, a heart withered by excess and ease, and genitals inflamed by endless gratifications, the whole human person became embroiled in a monstrous and

adamantine slavery to sin. And all of modern society followed the path and pattern of its true Master: Satan.

The Church, the center of which is the See of St. Peter, at first simply shut the doors, closed the windows, and held on tight. But the forces outside were simply too powerful. The winds of modern power and pride blew and buffeted the House of St. Peter, and, eventually, the world had become so transformed that it was simply no longer recognizably God's world.

In that world, the Church failed. The Church should have had the openness of mind and heart, the determination of Christian will, and the philosophical imagination to take on the modern onslaught. But it could not.

At first, in its smallness of mind and heart, and in the grip of clerical arrogance and theological triumphalism, it simply thumbed its nose at the world.

In the face of its existential irrelevance, and a world that was passing it by, the Church then shifted in the Vatican II-era and began a great period of spiritual, moral, intellectual, cultural, and institutional capitulation. This was the Great Spiritual Chastisement of the Church, which allowed the world to be without the Ministry of the Word, and allowed the world to sink ever further into the materialist heresies and the exorbitant sexual sins that have overthrown it -- that have delivered the Church and the world into the depths of sin, and which will be requited by the depths of Divine Wrath: the Physical Chastisement.

The solution is a recourse to Divine Mercy.

The Church must throw off the Apostasy, Sins, and Errors of the past, and reaffirm itself in Divine Grace. The Complete

Restoration of the Church must begin with a consecration of the whole People of God to the Divine Mercy.

The Church must become the Ministry of Divine Mercy. Such Ministers of Divine Mercy must commit themselves to have the hearts of liberals, the minds of conservatives, and the chastity of saints.

Only such ministers, guided by a Petrine barque of Divine Mercy, can salvage the dire situation of this our grave peril and set a course for that Complete Restoration to Grace which the Father so ardently desires for His people and the whole world.

Don't think I've forgotten about Islam.

Islam has a starring role in the Physical Chastisement to come.

Islam will use nuclear weapons against the West (what used to be Christendom) in this century.



It cannot be stopped. And “being nice” to Islam won’t make a difference. Not stating “inflammatory” truths won’t deter them.

Look at France. France meticulously kowtowed to Islam for decades, and they have reaped the reward of being Target Number One this past decade.

Islam doesn’t murder because it is offended. Islam murders because it is murderous.

The police don’t make child killers kill children. The police expose such criminals and try to track them down.

Remember, Satan is a murderer too. And all Satan cares about, like the predator he is, is making the kill. Satan doesn’t care how he makes the kill.

Now, of course, Satan can’t win. But Satan desperately tries to win, to prevent the Church from fulfilling itself, because, when it does, God will cast him into the final and inexorable agony of the pool of fire and sulphur, of the depths of Hell.

So, Satan fights like Hell to avoid being finally cast into Hell.

So, if Islam conquers the West, great. If Islamic Nuclear Terrorism and Warfare breaks the back of the West’s Spirit and somehow would destroy Christianity, great.

Of course, this won’t happen, as awful as the Great War will be, since God, in His Love for the Church, simply won’t allow it.

But, Satan, that wily chess grandmaster, will also try to use the Islamic Nuclear Horrors against *religion* itself -- against all religion.

The Physical Chastisement *should* -- and for many, (most?), will -- be a wake-up call for people. ***Stop sinning. Wake up. GET WITH THE PROGRAM.***

But to those too ensnared by the sins of the flesh, the sins of greed, and the sins of power, and the intellectual-spiritual sins of pride, they will seek to protect their lifestyles and way by doing quite the opposite.

Instead of saying, “Oh my God, what have we done? We must repent!” they will say, “This is religion’s fault. We must totally exterminate all religion and all thought of God.”

Remember, when God acts, he always acts in a way that will be clear to the elect and invisible to the damned. The elect will get the message and *turn*. The damned will be self-blinded to what is right in front of them and persist in their wickedness: they will double-down in their sin, and that will doubly justify God’s eternal wrath in their final and eternal damnation.

So, when the Islamic world strikes with nuclear weapons, the Gay Caliphate will take that Islamic Horror and try to turn it into a *Religious* Horror.

They will take *precisely* the wrong message from events. Rather than be humbled, they will feast on their own arrogance.

For Christianity and Islam have nothing to do with one another spiritually. Calling them both “religions” is meaningless. The modern concept of “religion” is itself an atheist term, bound up inextricably with atheist conceptions, philosophy, and terminology. To assume that all human practices and beliefs concerning divinity can be put in a common box marked “Religion” is the same silly nonsense as to assume that all human practices and beliefs

concerning humanity can be put in a common box marked “Human Stuff”. Liberalism, conservatism, socialism, communism, fascism, nationalism, anarchism, Nazism, Sovietism, Jacobinism, Free Masonry, Absolutism, Aristocracy, Feudalism, Libertarianism, Keynesianism, Monetarism, Ricardian equivalence, *The Wealth of Nations*, *The Communist Manifesto*, cigars, tulips, steak, gardens, sex, television, pet rocks, victrolas, horse racing, magazines, cigarettes, farms, airplanes, donkeys, shoes, shoelaces, dirt, crops, grease, factories, music, Bach, Madonna, Leonardo DaVinci, Ariana Grande, Donald Trump, water slides, amusement parks, granola, pork chops, Lucky Charms, Wonder Bread, baguettes, psychology, sociology, history, art, architecture, painting, cars, vans, trucks, ice cream, plumbing. It’s all just *Human Stuff*.

So when an anarchist blows up a town square, we say, “Let’s ban Keynesianism!” or “Let’s ban books!” or “Let’s ban ice cream!”

Oh, wait, we don’t -- because they have nothing to do with an anarchist blowing up a town square.

The whole conception of a unified concept of “religion” necessarily presupposes that God is not real or that He is somehow an enemy. It takes for granted the atheist belief that if we could only scrap belief in the divine and all human practices related to relating to the divine *then, then finally*, the human race could stand upright, be mature, and attain peace, freedom, and happiness.

But if the divine is real then the whole question shifts from “What is religion?”, which is meaningless, to “What is the Divine?”

If the *fundamental* religious conception is true: There is Divine reality: then that Divine reality would be at least as *rich* in its content, context, and texture as all of Human reality. In fact, if the fundamental religious claim is true, then Divine Reality is *richer* than Human Reality.

So just as you wouldn’t say, “Let’s ban liberalism” if a conservative blew up a building, it is totally absurd to say, “Let’s

tighten the screws on Christianity,” because Islam commits atrocities.

The Atheist-Secularist anti-Christian intellectual and politician takes the same view of “religion” as how an ignorant, self-absorbed, hostile, trigger-happy alien race of technologically superior beings might look at the human race.

If such an alien race found one aspect of Human Stuff offensive or harmful....you know the solution....destroy humanity.

Islam and Christianity are both religious, are both “religions”, in the same way that a Nazi, a Soviet, a Christian Democrat, a Social Democrat, a Republican, a Democrat, a Socialist, and a Right-Libertarian are all Humanists. They all agree that there is indeed Human Stuff, and Human Stuff is real and important. Though in everything that matters to them, they are quite different -- diametrically different -- they would all agree that the human race should not be annihilated. To that extent, every human being is “Humanistic”. And in the same way, every believer is “Religious”.

But Christians and Muslims are no more believers in a common “Religion” than Socialists and Libertarians are both believers in “Humanism”. The “Religion” of which Christians and Muslims are both a part has no internal cohesion or meaning: it is merely a construct that only has any epistemic significance by reference to something that is totally alien to both: true atheism.

Of course, for a believer, there is no such thing as “true atheism”, since God truly exists and is the fundamental cause of everything. So atheism, from a believer’s point of view, is merely a mistake: an illusion. *The Atheist Delusion*.

But those who oppose the Church, for whatever reason, will use the Islamic Nuclear Horrors to smear all “religion”, i.e.

Christianity (their perpetual and real target), with shame, guilt, and disgrace.

So, as I have been articulating throughout, there will be two diametrically opposite visions and proposals to how we should deal with the Physical Chastisement.

The first will be the correct one: Repentance, turning to Christ, the building up of the Church, the chastening of Western culture and politics, the renewal of a Culture of Life built on Divine Mercy and Christian Love.

The second will be the incorrect one: pride, arrogance, an all-out attack on any belief or practice relating to the Divine -- an attempt to neuter and/or ban "religion". Such people will seek to take the present spiritual and moral squalor and exalt it into a Brave New World of Lascivious Lust, Abortion, Sodomy, Blasphemy, Error, Heterodoxy, Heresy, Hedonism and Atheism. They will believe in the evil equation: *21st Century minus Religion = Paradise*. Such a Secular Paradise would be the perfect stage upon which the final Anti-Christ could make his appearance.

The key thing to understand is that this is no comic book choice: This is not a choice between caviar and dog shit....or at least it won't *look* that way.

The Christian option will be Life. The Atheist-Secularist option will be Death.

But it will require **discernment** to tell the two apart. Because both will promise a better world. *And the Secular better world will be easier to attain* -- all it will require is that you keep on keepin' on just as you have before -- keep having random sex, keep getting abortions, keep transforming the culture however you want, keep grabbing all the world's resources just for yourself, keep being blind, keep being selfish - *You do you*.

The Christian option will be harder: Repent. Control yourself. Be chaste. Seek out a life-mate in marriage. Be faithful to your wife or husband. Be a good father or mother. Work hard. Play by the rules. Share. Don't hoard all the resources of the earth for yourself. Don't be vain. Don't be proud. Don't be self-involved. Don't be self-absorbed. Don't be narcissistic. Think of others *before* you think of yourself. *Trust and obey God.*

But like every difference between good and evil, the good is harder in the short-run but easier in the long-run, while the evil is easier in the short-run and harder (and, in Hell, unbearable) in the long-run.

With discernment, the choice is clear. The choice is always *for* God, *for* Christ. It's like taking a guess when the only answer is Yes.⁵⁸ Without discernment, the choice turns into this:

<https://www.nbc.com/saturday-night-live/video/russian-brides/n12527?snl=1>

We can also reflect that Satan has done a first-rate job of gridlocking us.

For the Three Satanic Streams of the Satanic War Plan: Secular Modernity, Islam, and Capitalism: are all, in many complex ways, at cross purposes.

What we require is an anti-Secularist, anti-Capitalist, anti-Islamic Imperialist party.

That would mean being pro-Christian and pro-social. The solution is Christian Social Democratic Liberalism.

But what do we have? The Democrats in the U.S. support ordaining sodomy as marriage and sacralizing baby murder as a constitutional right. While their arch-rival, the Republicans, support plutocratic greed and the erection of a corporate oligarchy to replace democracy.

⁵⁸ Attribution: -----

And yet the Party of Greed is, (supposedly), the Party of Christian Values while the Party of the People, (supposedly), is also the Party Against God.

We're caught in a [Chinese finger trap](#).

But there's also a danger in all this.

Because we can imagine an anti-Secularist, anti-Capitalist, anti-Islamic Imperialist, ostensibly pro-Christian, ostensibly pro-social party.

And it might look a great deal like the Nazi Party or the Trump Republican Party.

It is not enough to have an *anti* party, and it is not enough for that *anti* party to have a Christian veneer.

Any genuinely good political force that might emerge in the post-Great Apostasy, post-Physical Chastisement world *must* be authentically Christian: and that requires *authentic* faith, hope, and love.

The "Christian Right" is useless and evil. It has made common cause with the oligarchical, greedy, lustful Rich. It has made common cause with racists and purveyors of murderous violence. It has made racial hatred and cultural arrogance the DNA of its whole existence.

Such a force can only set the stage for the Anti-Christ.

A truly Christian political force, that would restore the secular state to a truly just and completely free condition, and that would be an ally to the Whole Church as we at last spread the Gospel to the whole world and prepare for the onslaught of the Anti-Christ, *must be* Christian, Social, Democratic, and Liberal.

Neither racism nor nationalism can have any place in such a political movement and force. Racism is obviously evil, and any who fraternize with racist forces deserve their fate.

Nationalism is a tricky business. It is one thing to have a reasonable pride in one's country. But nationalism almost always devolves into the idolatry of one's country.

And look at the root of nationalism - the nation. The United States, supposedly, doesn't have a racial or ethnic core, so many American nationalists think in terms of a raceless civil state. But, in almost all countries, in all nation-states, the nation is a distinct and identifiable racial and ethnic group. In most places, nationalism is inextricable from ethnocentrism and racism.

And, indeed, the most hardcore American nationalists either shade into ethnocentrism and racism, or are outright racists with Nazi symbols tattooed to their skin.

An appropriate pride and affection for one's land, history, and people is fitting, when justified by objective reality. But idolatry of one's country and one's nation and one's race is idolatry of the Self and rebellion against the True God: YHWH, the God of Abraham, Isaac, and Jacob -- the Father of Jesus Christ.

A triumphant Christian Church after the travails to come must reject and renounce racism and voluble, arrogant, *idolatrous* nationalism.

It must also reject the temptation to fuse itself with the State, or to become the Master of the State. It must reject the call to even purer (less racist, more theological) forms of Christian Fascism. It must reject the allure of a Christian State, the call to a Christian Empire.

With victory will come the temptation to Power, and Mastery of Secular Affairs.

So, in its triumph and victory, the Church must throw the Ring of Power into the Fire, and let it dissolve. The Church must remain itself: *not* racist, *not* nationalistic, *not* imperial, *not* a State, *not* an Empire.

The Church must be only and completely the Flesh of Christ, the loving, peaceful, free, graceful and grace-filled community and communion of all Christians everywhere, bound together by One Baptism, One Faith, One Lord: Our Lord, Jesus Christ, the Only Son of God, Our Lord, Our Savior, Our Redeemer.

<https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=c24-0Amwyik>

The victory of the Church requires true faith in the charisma of the kerygma.

Charisma means grace.

Kerygma means the Proclamation - that is, the content of the Faith of the Word.

Which is to say, the victory of the Church requires true confidence in the grace of the Proclamation of the Word.

We don't need to be popular. We don't need to desperately try to make ourselves popular. We don't need to be "with it". We don't need to be relevant. We don't need to be acceptable. We don't need to be liked. We don't need to get approval from the media, the culture, businesses, pressure groups, or anything or anyone else. We

don't need to make alliances with or excuses for actual bigots, hatemongers, racists, white nationalists, white supremacists, fascists, and right-wing whack jobs. We don't need to cower before a cultural left that calls *us* bigots and hatemongers for proclaiming the Gospel.

The Gospel can and *must* stand alone -- and the Church will only stand if Christians preach the Gospel -- the whole, entire, free Gospel, shorn of its imprisonment by the usual social and ideological groups that claim to speak for the Gospel - right and left and other.

These forces -- these ideologies and political forces -- have taken the Gospel hostage and turned it into a puppet, and the ideologies and political forces are the ventriloquists.

If God is in the Gospel, the Gospel cannot fail.

If God is not in the Gospel, the Gospel cannot succeed. If we cannot rely on God alone for the triumph of the Word, the whole practice of the Christian Faith is a joke -- and the Scripture is a relic, an artifact - and it should be placed alongside *The Epic of Gilgamesh*, *The Iliad*, and *The Aeneid*, and left for scholars of ancient history and college survey courses.

The Church that is the Flesh of Christ is simultaneously the Word, which is Christ.

That Word, that Word of Truth living and active in the Flesh of all believers, cannot fail. It can be frustrated, it can be scorned, things can seem lost. But it is irresistible and inevitable. Only true confidence -- faith -- in that fact can give the Church the strength necessary to resist the constant temptations that encroach upon it -- the Satanic ploys that the demons use to hobble the growth of the Church.

In times of fear and disarray, the Church can too easily yield to the changing cultural fashions and political winds. It can also, simultaneously, grow insular, paranoid, and bitter -- even hateful.

In times of triumph and renewal, the Church can grow smug, arrogant, self-righteous, treating its victories as its own, and not as those won by Christ - and by Christ alone.

Capitulation, insularity, triumphalism -- desperate, ridiculous bids for “relevance”, hateful scorn blasted at all who are different or differ, integration with the State and the exercise of ecclesiastical power in economic and political relations --- these are all demons that must be exorcised from the Flesh of Christ. They are the tricks that Satan constantly flings at the Church -- they are the same old tired bag of tricks he has been using for millennia.

The Church is an Exodus from the world. We're outta here. And on that journey towards God, both in the individual's personal, faithful endurance through all the difficulties and snares of this life, and in the collective whole manifested through the Church's growth and development in time, we are *in* the world, but **not of** the world.

In the world, but **not of** the world.

We are here, we are present, we are **NOT** a suicide cult -- we don't drink the Kool-Aid and expect a spaceship from Planet Zarthon to pick us up. We get up, we go to work, we do our jobs, we do them well, we pick up the kids, we help with the homework, we plan our finances, we volunteer, we give to charity -- we build hospitals, schools, roads, bridges, we coach little league and organize bake sales -- we help build the world here, trying to make it concretely better *here and now*.

But, while we are immersed *in* the world, and we take the world seriously, and care about making it better, **we do not become**

worldly. We *never* place our ultimate hope in this world. We *never* make **anything** in this world our highest priority or our highest value: for that is idolatry. Our *only* ultimate value is God -- discovering God's Will in each of our own lives. All that the world values -- money, power, sex, fame, being liked, being accepted, the approval of our family and friends, even our own lives -- *none* of it should ever compete with our fidelity to God's Will for *our* lives, for *each* of our lives. That is what it means to not be *of* the world.

Our culture has it backwards -- people are *of* the world, but not *in* the world. They value only the things that *this* world can give them, and only live according to *their* dreams and ideas of life, conforming God to *themselves*, rather than conforming *themselves* to God.

And then, though *of* the world, they are not even *in* the world -- they are secluded, cut off, squirreled away in a house or a car, watching television, playing a video game, watching porn, playing Candy Crush, fallen into their phone.

Being *in* the world keeps you grounded, sane, self-critical -- and makes it possible for the unconverted to see the grace and light of Christ.

Not being *of* the world allows you to frankly, openly, and joyously proclaim the Word, because you know that the world has no power over you. Shame, slander, assault -- even death -- You know, beyond all fears and doubts, that Christ *is* Lord, and that He reigns over you and in you. Christ *is* Lord -- He doesn't need to be elected, He doesn't need to be approved, He doesn't need to win a debate, He doesn't need to be liked or to win a popularity contest.

Christ *is* Lord, and His Kingdom is Coming, whether people like it or not, no matter how many people accept it or not.

When you believe that -- when you *know* that -- you do not need to be afraid, and you do not need to fall into the worry that makes you corrupt the Word -- to scream it angrily, or hedge it, or apologize for it, or change it, or tweak it, or mumble it.

You can proclaim it. Confidently. Boldly. Assertively. Graciously. Generously. Lovingly. Gently.

You can let the Word be itself, because *you have let the Word become yourself.*

The Church, the Culture & the Constitution

One thing that genuine Christians have to watch out for is wolves in sheep's clothing. Jesus instructs Christians to be as innocent as doves but as wise as serpents (Matthew 10:16).

In the days of a triumphant and universal Christian culture, Christian rulers, leaders, and peoples persecuted gays and lesbians. There is literal blood on the hands of the Flesh of Christ.

So, we do not want to reenact such crimes. We do not want any more murders of any more Matthew Shepards.

Thou Shalt Not Murder



At the same time, if Biblical Christianity is true, then sodomy is a sin. And if sodomy is a sin, then those who engage in sodomy involves themselves in sin, and sin is necessarily a slavery to sin. And to be a slave to sin is to be a slave to Satan.

That's simple Biblical logic. If that is not true, then Christianity has a fundamental untruth within the fabric of its Scriptures and authentic historical doctrines. Of course, Richard Dawkins and Bill Maher would simply stop there and say, "Yep, so stop being religious."

But what if they're wrong? What if atheism is the disease, and not Christianity?
And what if Christianity's Scriptures and doctrines on sodomy are fundamentally correct?

In that case, *watch out!* Because we have been sold for forty years on the cuddly queer - the cultural narrative of *Will & Grace*, *In & Out*, isn't gay sex *fabulous?!*, *let's all drink mimosas and tequila and hop around naked at a party!* YAY!

But if Christianity is fundamentally correct about sodomy.....then we do not want to be the persecutors.....but we also don't want to be the persecuted.

If Christianity is fundamentally correct about the sinful nature of sodomy, then the armies of the politically and socially active gay -- homosexual -- population - and their allies - are enthralled to a slavery to Satan.

And after all the technicolor confetti has been strewn and all the drinks have been downed, what might Satan do with such a self-righteous, self-involved, adamant, vicious social force?

Well, do what Satan always wants to do: turn it on the Church, to destroy it.

So what began as “Hey Cops, don’t beat us” and “Hey, we’re dying of a plague over here” will, after a century, become the oppression - and vicious oppression - of Christians by gays, lesbians, and their secularist fellow-travelers. It will no longer be “We’re here, we’re queer, get used to it.” It will become: “We’re in charge, don’t you dare oppose us or criticize us, if you do, we’ll crush you.”

And there’s nothing cuddly or diverse or *fabulous* about that.

Of course, there’s a potential danger in both lines of thinking. And determining *where* the danger lies -- *what* the true danger is -- *naturally* depends on discovering what **the truth** is.

For, if Christianity is a fable, the incarnated, crucified, resurrected and ascendant Christ as LORD and Savior a myth, sin a hackneyed, meaningless concept that reifies “badness” into some kind of existential quality, and God Himself a delusion....we might as well suspect gays and lesbians of witchcraft.

And yet....that assumes that there can never be witchcraft, and that Satan isn’t really real -- for if Satan is a supernatural being, possessed of supernatural power, then why wouldn’t his worshippers and devotees sometimes (when God, in His Plan, permitted it) be “graced” (“anti-graced”) with the particular powers of the demonic?

Your (not mine) squishy modernized, relativized Christianity of the [COEXIST](#) kind, which simply brushes inconvenient Scriptural passages under the rug and shrugs as the carpet starts to get rather lumpy, simply cannot deal with the logical choices (and consequent pathways) that different beliefs require and generate.

Wishy-washy, squishy-wishy emotivism - which strives to replace sound doctrine with good vibes - does not realize or accept that ideas have consequences. *Understanding* realities determines - contingently and alternatively - how you *respond* to realities.

It is incoherent to embrace the Bible as the Word of God, to consider the Word of God perfect, to believe in Christ’s atonement for sin.....and then to relativize the very things that the Bible clearly states to be sin.

And if you operate on the Bible, chucking Biblical inerrancy, and carefully cutting out the cancers that *you* believe to be present in the flesh of Scripture.....then you have made yourself God.

Now, if there is no God -- no *real* God, no YHWH - then you have done a marvelous thing. You have replaced the non-existent, cruel Bogeyman of the imaginations and delusions of barbarians with the rational, calm, loving, feel-good *sense* of modern men and women.

But, if there is a God -- the real YHWH that spoke to Moses in the burning bush, liberated the Israelites by apocalyptic miracles, and led the People of God into the Promised Land by His Grace and Power alone -- then you have done quite a horrible thing. You have joined Satan in his rebellion against the One, True, and Only God.

Squishy relativistic lukewarm “Christianity” sacrifices clear thinking on the altar of warm feelings.

But even a cursory glance at the Bible - even the Gospels - should convince you that the God of Abraham, Isaac, and Jacob, *and* the Father of Jesus Christ was *not* a hippie. The God presented therein is a coherent, clear-thinking Being that has a definite agenda and a definite *modus operandi*. He is certainly emotional -- and can rage like a scorned lover -- but He is never incoherent or inchoate. He is not random or fickle or squishy. Christ Jesus *never* equivocates or blurs the issue. Jesus can be quite clever and idiosyncratic in presenting an issue or can lay out a path not considered by his questioners or audience. But Jesus *never* just throws up his hands, shrugs his shoulders, and says, “Hey, it’s all relative! It’s all good! Whatev’, brah! You do you!”

The real Jesus that walked around the countryside in the 1st Century in Judea is not the thumbs-up, plastic Jesus of the American 21st Century.

From a Secularist perspective, homosexuals are a distinct “identity group”. Having sexual intercourse with people of the same sex becomes an integral “identity” comparable to racial, ethnic, and sexual identity. Having sex with people of the same sex makes you an “identity” the same as being African-American, Latino, Italian, a man, a woman, Amish, or a Jehovah’s Witness. And people from that “identity” get to determine their own identity status, including their own nominal self-designation and fundamental attributes. So, those people who have sex with people of the same sex are now “gays” and “lesbians”. It is no longer something that you *do*, it is something that you *are*.

And, being something that you *are*, Gays and Lesbians now get to articulate *their* own culture, along with a whole cultural perspective, with art, philosophy, and politics.

The Secularist junta that controls Western culture dictates that each identity group’s self-articulated (as a group) *culture must* be respected, upon pain of social destruction.

Those from *outside* the identity group are **not** permitted to make any comments about such an identity group’s culture, much less the theological grounds upon which it rests.

For make no mistake: what has become the Gay Power Movement has a definite theology and a definite political theology. The Gay Power Movement has a definite idea of the nature of God, man, and the world, and a definite idea of how that understanding *must* inform and structure actual politics and actual laws and the actual administration of justice, not to mention civil society, social relations, and the economy.

And that Gay theology articulated by the Gay Caliphate from its Gay Quran is *fundamentally* incompatible with Christian theology, the Christian Church (the Flesh of Christ), and the Christian Scriptures.

So one or the other has to give. Either Christianity will contain and delimit the gay theology, or the gay theology will absorb and derange Christianity.

Our culture has militantly decided that the latter option must prevail: that Christianity must kneel before the gay theology and be altered to become acceptable to the Gay Quran.

Anyone who does not accede to Christianity's surrender - and then assists it and applauds it - is denounced as a bigot and systematically destroyed politically, socially, and economically.

One has to wonder: if gays and lesbians were presented with a stark choice: Christ *or* anal sex (or lesbian sex).....which would they choose?

From a Christian perspective, sexual intercourse with those of the same sex is a sin, pure and simple. It is one of the sins of the flesh, which St. Paul warns are particularly destructive because they are *within* the person's own flesh, which is integral to the human person: the human person being a joining of spirit *in* matter.

Listen to St. Paul in 1 Corinthians 6:12-20 -

"Everything is lawful for me," but not everything is beneficial. "Everything is lawful for me," but I will not let myself be dominated by anything.

"Food for the stomach and the stomach for food," but God will do away with both the one and the other.

The body, however, is not for immorality, but for the Lord, and the Lord is for the body; God raised the Lord and will also raise us by his power.

Do you not know that your bodies are members of Christ? Shall I then take Christ's members and make them the members of a prostitute? Of course not! [Or] do you not know that anyone who joins himself to a prostitute becomes one body with her? For "the two," it says, "will become one flesh." But whoever is joined to the Lord becomes one spirit with him.

Avoid immorality. Every other sin a person commits is outside the body, but the immoral person sins against his own body. Do you not know that your body is a temple of the holy Spirit within you, whom you have from God, and that you are not your own? For you have been purchased at a price. Therefore, glorify God in your body.

From the Christian perspective, “being gay” is not an identity when it is practiced, it is an act, a sinful act: a sin. At most, the Church could consider that gays and lesbians are constitutionally structured that way, this being a fallen world. But the practice of that gayness in anal and oral sex between men and various sexual acts between women would still be a sin. It is a sin all the same as masturbation, pornography, fornication, or prostitution of any form.

Now, if the Secularist perspective is right, we should scorn the Church, tear it down, shackle it, muzzle it, and all celebrate Gay Identity and Culture, while calling all actual (“traditional”) Christians bigots.

But if the Christian perspective is right, then the Secularist culture is celebrating the equivalent of masturbators, pornography addicts, fornicators, and brothel-goers.

Now, if I have friends who are masturbators, pornography addicts, and fornicators -- and even those who frequent prostitutes -- it may not be a problem. If I simply have dinner with such people and talk about common friends, the past, the future, politics, and how delicious that appetizer course was --- the fact that my friends masturbate, watch pornography, and cheat on their spouses is probably immaterial to anything of particular consequence, as far as society is concerned.

Indeed, I myself was a masturbator and, for a time, engaged in *heterosexual* (straight) affairs.

So, yes: I have gay friends. TM

But it is *one* thing for **individuals** to engage in sinful behavior. But what happens when a sin becomes a movement? When a sin becomes an identity? When a sin generates a culture?

While from the Secularist perspective that is a fabulous affirmation of identity and liberation, from the Christian perspective it is Organized Sin.

So, when I used to masturbate in the shower, that is one thing. But what if all masturbators joined together in United Masturbators and actively lobbied legislatures and institutions with a Masturbation Agenda, a Masturbation Identity, and a Masturbation Culture? What if Cheaters’ Alliance did the same thing for cheating? Swingers’ Union for swinging?

What happens when United Masturbators gets Congress to declare National Masturbation Day? When the Movement gets Masturbation taught in schools as a psychologically and physically healthy practice? When convocations of 7th graders are brought to the auditorium for group tutorials on the best techniques?

What happens when those who criticize or even question the moral value and rectitude of masturbation are decried as bigots: when they are fired from their jobs, denied tenure, shunned

by friends, arrested, convicted, imprisoned, have their children taken away from them for child endangerment, are fined, hounded, silenced, assaulted, and murdered?

If Christianity is fundamentally right that sodomy is a sin, Western culture is conjuring a militant, hostile force of sin that can ultimately do nothing else than persecute Christians and try to destroy the Church.

And despite the many laudable qualities that the numerous gay people I have known have had.....and, frankly, the not so laudable ones.....aren't we seeing that already in our culture?

Isn't any criticism of homosexuality and sodomy along traditionally Christian lines being uniformly and systematically attacked: persecuted?

Aren't the vanguard of the Gay Power Movement and the Secularist elite becoming increasingly militant, authoritarian, anti-free speech, Leninist, arrogant, rude, disrespectful, peremptory, and outright violent?

We are light-years away from the old world where homosexuals were tyrannized over by the Christian state.

I write this -- which, naturally, will be brusquely and peremptorily denounced as vile bigotry and evidence of my moral and personal decrepitude -- as a *WARNING to Christians*.

Watch out. I don't think these gays and lesbians and their Power movement are on the level. And I think the situation is deteriorating fast.

So be **prepared** to defend yourselves, and to join together to fight persecution.

This is a warning for my fellow Christians. Naturally, it will be heard by those hostile to the Church. Those forces hostile to the Church will scream that it is madness for Christians to fear persecution. Such people say that every other group is right to be utterly vigilant and paranoid about persecution, and such groups are encouraged to sense persecution in every "micro-aggression". But not Christians. No. We are to wait like blind, foolish sheep for the Secularist slaughterhouses to be fully constructed.

If these Secularist forces are not planning a persecution, then why should they be so aggrieved that a Christian should warn other Christians of a possible persecution?

I await the day when Christians are persecuted for fearing persecution. I await the day when Christians are imprisoned and executed for the crime of publicly fearing that they might be imprisoned and executed.

The Future is Now.

The logical predicate of the Homosexual Revolution is the Sexual Revolution. With the belief that sexual relations outside of marriage are immoral, it is virtually impossible to carry out

the wholesale destruction of Christian morality that has been the project of Homosexualist political theology.

Yet, *with* the destruction of Christian sexual morality and the prevailing cultural view that the prerogative of human sexual desire -- lust -- overrides and overrules almost all other considerations, the Homosexual Ascendancy becomes all but inevitable.

With the belief that marriage is *not* the privileged, paramount, and solely appropriate venue for sexual congress, but that, rather, only consent is the validating prerequisite for any sexual intercourse, all manner of beliefs and practices fly out into the world, as if from a Satanic Pandora's Box.

When the gratification of *lust* -- the impulsion of the corrupted flesh, disobedient to the spirit -- becomes the fundamental criterion of human happiness, the whole universe of moral philosophy bends around this twisted notion, warping every intellectual, artistic, cultural, and political proposition it touches.

When lust becomes the paramount imperative of human happiness, rather than virtue or salvation, every other ethical premise gets bent to service it. If the human person *cannot* fulfill himself or herself without a fulfilled, and, hence, gratified, libido, then it is *madness* to suffer discomfort and anguish till a suitable and proper marriage can be contracted between an appropriately suited pair of a man and a woman. If it is madness to wait for gratification till marriage, then when should a man or woman begin to gratify his or her lust? In the context of a capitalist society in which 99% of men and women must gain amply remunerative employment in a fiercely competitive labor market in order to function - i.e., in order to attain the necessary income to afford the basic food, shelter, clothing, healthcare, and transportation expenses necessary to minimally navigate modern social existence - marriage becomes an ever further off horizon. Marriage certainly cannot be contracted as young as 14 or 15. Those are the years for high school. 18 or 19 then? No, college. 22 or 23 then? Not unless you're in Utah. Those are the years for graduate school or early career striving. 25 or 30? Not if you work at Starbucks.

So, if marriage is like the horizon, in that it recedes as you approach it, *and* sexual gratification is the summum bonum of human existence, then that *inevitably* results in the conclusion that sex should be undertaken as a normal life activity *as soon* as practicable -- as soon as it can be undertaken in such a way that it does not threaten one's personal fulfillment as an economically self-sufficient and self-fulfilled denizen of the global economy.

The purpose of sex is to commune the flesh of the man and the flesh of the woman into *one* flesh, which then becomes the new life of the marriage's children.

When you fundamentally sunder the sexual imperative of the human flesh from the possibility of marriage, you derange human life in such a way that the intrinsic imperative of human flesh is no longer compatible with the imperatives of obedience to Divine law, to the Will of God for human flesh. You have necessarily set man against his Creator.

When the *desire* for sex can no longer harmonize easily with the *purpose* of sex, the human mind gets very clever indeed. When economic necessity and the predominant cultural idea of human fulfillment militates against having children -- either out of wedlock or in a marriage contracted because of pregnancy -- then *voila*: a baby in the womb is no longer a person...it is a "fetus", a clump of cells that can be trashed like waste in an incinerator. But basic morality, though it can be provisionally and temporarily fumigated quite effectively by

self-serving ideologies, still rears its perseverant head in the human soul....so, better to simply prevent pregnancy altogether....so the reign of contraception appears to immunize sexual desire from the very purpose of sexual intercourse.

Secular modern scientific technology pops in to provide the human flesh with a very salutary corrective to its fundamental nature: a pill to instill infertility. God created men and women to be fruitful and multiply: to fill the earth with fertility, to imitate the Plenitude of the Spirit who had created the human race. The human race, after the subtle and wickedly clever (and cleverly wicked) ministrations of Satan, responds by in-fertilizing the man and woman so that the enjoyment of sex can be had without the fruition of sex. The freedom of sex becomes deranged from the duty of sex -- the joy of sex becomes deranged from the joy of family. The Plenitude of God's Reality -- immanentized in the image of men and women -- itself becomes sexed - cut in two - in the culture of the human race: the Felicity of Sex becomes deranged from the Righteousness of Communal Self-Gift. Sex is no longer a gift exchanged between men and women *paid forward* to future generations, given generously in the new life of children, of successive *generations* of children: it is a selfish pleasure enjoyed by two or more co-conspirators, snatching the thrill and delight and then snuffing out the culmination and fruition of that delight into an infinite generation of new life. Sex is no longer the vital, dynamic, powerful force that generates a succession of generations down to Judgment Day; it is an entertainment. Sex that is not open to life is a mirror, in which the self luxuriates in itself; it is the vanity of Satan. Only sex that is open to life is a window, which widens onto an open and infinite vista of life and self-gift.

It is irrelevant whether the entertainment is of the low or high sort -- whether it is the sexual equivalent of Candy Crush and junk food or opera, haute couture and haute cuisine. All such non-marital and non-vital sex is merely an amusement. It reduces the sexual vitality of human flesh from sacrament to pastime.

Selfish sex, sex undertaken merely for pleasure - even the pleasure of intimacy, is a Satanic vortex that traps the soul in a wicked perversity: a hall of mirrors.

Only marital sex that is *open* to life exalts the human person by synergizing the human spirit with the Holy Spirit. (Now, naturally, infertile couples may still engage in the marital act, for, first, it is in the form of the Divine pattern for human life, and, second, perhaps more importantly, science is incompetent to determine actual infertility --- the whole of Sacred history recounts time after time in which the supposedly infertile were, by Divine Grace, blessed with the fecundity of children.)

The Homosexualist theology of sex does nothing less than de-sacralize the human person, and, of course, all of human society along with him and her. The only alternative (within Homosexualist theology) is a re-sacralization of the human person - and human sexuality - such that it is acceptable to the Homosexual God. Some mongrel conception of the communion of male flesh with male flesh and female flesh with female flesh becomes the new sanctity -- the new Sacrament of human sexuality. The *sexes* no longer matter in this anti-sacramental, Satanic vision of human sexuality: male and female He created them? *Not* in this theology. The one uni-sex becomes the type of human flesh. Human flesh is not *sexed* into male and female, and

destined and ordained to re-commune into one flesh. All human flesh is uniform and interchangeable. The communion of flesh is no longer an integrative incorporation of complements, but an agglomerative accretion of similars.

The Homosexualist account of sex, naturally, posits a homogenous view of human flesh. The Christian account of sex posits a heterogenous view of human flesh.

Only weak-minded and/or weak-willed Christian “thinkers” could possibly simply ignore such basic considerations. We are not dealing with shallow distinctions --- these are awesome chasms in spiritual perspective.....truly as wide as the chasm between Heaven and Hell.

The funny thing about reality is how *objective* it is. Truth matters. Now, as Hegel knew, subjectivity is the inner core of objectivity. But it is *God's* Subjectivity - His Spirit - that is the inner core of all objectivity; *not* human subjectivity.

So, in other words, watch out. Because while you or your intellectual prophets and lawgivers may blur fundamental distinctions and obscure obvious truths and downplay the very significance of truth itself, truth has a funny way of persevering and biting you in the ass.

So, while “Christians” of the mainstream, lukewarm, cultural, and nominal variety embrace “diversity” and “justice” and “equality”, *real* justice and *real* truth remain undiminished. They simply lie in wait, patiently, as God's anger is stoked day after miserably sinful day, a whole cascade -- a vast cataclysm of wrath -- being stored up, just waiting for the Day it is unleashed upon the world. The great and terrible Day.

As has been said of war: you may not be interested in war, but war is interested in you.

Likewise: You may not be interested in truth, but, I assure you, truth is interested in you.

Such a change from the Christian political theology to the Homosexualist political theology is nothing less than a profound, radical, chasm-like Social Revolution.

Americans are peculiarly mal-equipped to understand Social Revolutions. That is very simply because America has never had a true Social Revolution. (Although it could probably use one.)

A social revolution is when a people turns on its elite and destroys it. A social revolution occurs when a people is so mistreated by an elite that, in the people's poverty, bewilderment, desperation, anger, and hatred, the people rises up to violently destroy the elite, the state, and all previous social conditions. It is the cataclysm of the state: the apocalypse of society.

In such a supernova of politics, everything is up for grabs. Not only the state, but the very foundational assumptions of all social life are transvalued and forever altered.

America has never experienced -- never endured -- such an affair. France, Russia, and China all have. England, in what was then considered its Revolution, (in fact, if not in name), had Cromwell to transvalue the assumptions of social conditions.

Now, I am *NOT* a closet Nietzschean. I am a Christian. I believe in an absolute morality based on fundamental values that are chosen by God, in His Transcendent and Supreme Freedom.

But I also believe in being able to use your mind.

And Americans in the 21st Century -- for a myriad of reasons....Oprah and self-help come to mind....are virtually totally incapable of really perceiving fundamental philosophical categories, principles, and realities. When it comes to seeing philosophical-political fissures and eruptions, Americans are deer caught in headlights....kindergartners faced with the Second Coming.

American history is also a cause and effect of such intellectual infantilism. Not only has America never had a social revolution, *all* of its social revolutionary ferment -- its materials that might have erupted into a social revolution -- have been co-opted by the elite and by the state and channeled into *reform* rather than revolution.

In the American Revolution, the latent and partially actualized social revolutionary ferment was channeled by the propertied elites in the Continental Congress, which became the Constitutional government. In the cataclysm of the First Constitutional Order in the Civil War, Lincoln and the Union marshaled society under the state and crushed an alternative marshaling of society under the alternative Southern state. In the labor unrest of the late 19th century, the democratic procedures of society channeled revolutionary ferment into civil society coalitions and progressive legislation. In the Great Depression, what might have become America's Social Revolution was tamped down and beaten back by FDR's New Deal -- again, the state led the way, and not the people. And the elite led the state, albeit in the form of a clever and rogue elite paragon like FDR: America's Solon. Yet again, in the Civil Rights Movement, even though African-Americans did, somewhat, rise up, they were led by an internal elite and ultimately saved by the federal elite, in the form of President Lyndon Johnson and the Civil Rights Act, along with a panoply of federal legislative, executive, and judicial action. Many might take issue with my characterization of "somewhat": but if you compare African-American direct action to the [Sans-Culottes](#) and Robespierre's Reign of Terror in the French Revolution, you won't take offense at my meaning. Likewise, the Gay movement began as a riot at a bar and inn but only culminated with a decision from the United States Supreme Court and a majority opinion written by an elderly and uber-elite Justice.

All social problems -- no matter how outrageous or perilous: tyranny, liberty, slavery, economic rights, economic power, economic dignity, race relations, racial dignity, racial rights, sexual dignity, sexual rights -- *all* of it has been subsumed and co-opted by the elite-led and elite-driven state.

The American historical experience is a giant vortex -- a political science vacuum cleaner that sucks up everything it encounters and blends it into its own syncretic matrix.

America has never had to make up its mind.

Oh you know where you're going: [Have you ever had to make up your mind?](#)

Now, that is not true in a pristine and crystalline sense. Choices were made. Independence from Britain, not union. Liberty, not slavery. Economic regulation, not anarcho-capitalism. Civil rights, not segregation. Gay rights and power, not traditional morality.

But each choice was immediately qualified, and its opposite was absorbed back into the choice, such that the choice was almost a chimera.

America became independent, but its Madisonian-Hamiltonian George Washington government as closely imitated the Britain of George III as you could without naming the country Britain 2. The African-American slaves were liberated, but then were immediately stuffed back into an ersatz slavery, and kept stuffed there for 100 years. Basic labor regulations, like wages and hours laws, and basic social insurance schemes like old age pensions, disability insurance, and unemployment insurance were instantiated, and then, almost immediately, from 1938 onward, a Right-Wing oligarchical reaction contained, limited, and ultimately shredded the underpinnings of the New Deal. The Federal government acted decisively to establish de jure legal equality for racial minorities, and then.....did nothing, while the Goddess of the Free Market reduced racial minorities to a very de facto inequality with social conditions profoundly segregated. Whither gay rights?

Even the Great Populist Revolt of 2016 had the People find its champion in a corporatist billionaire who has now *totally* turned the country over to the elite.

But America has never had to stare into the abyss and say, "It's got to be one way or the other: we can be one thing or the other." America's choices have never been *choices*. It has never been marry this girl *or* that girl. It's been, "Hey, let's be poly."

France's politics clearly set Catholic royalism against Atheist republicanism. Napoleon might have become some kind of synthesis, but he was destroyed. (I wonder why.) Russia fell into a vortex of Orthodox Autocracy versus Atheist Collectivism. China was ripped apart by Traditionalist Oligarchy versus Trans-Atheist mystical Redemptionism. Mao was the Savonarola of China....only Mao got his way.

Now, each such society was shaped in its post-revolutionary history by elements of its past. But each society always understood the *different* currents in its political culture. These nations understood that *different* political ideas, visions, and claims were operating.

America has always muted the differences of its currents, claiming that they are all really the same, and sucking all difference into the oblivion of its cultural black hole.

That has the obvious and immediate benefit of not having ruinous, murderous, fratricidal civil wars that rend and devastate the country. That's a good thing.

But it has the long-run effect of infantilizing the American mind, such that it simply cannot see differences. The American mind, best represented by Whitman and Emerson, can only see the One, the All -- all things being the same: *All* things synthesized into a Millennial Whole.

But the True God is not Brahman - He is *not* the Great Union of all that exists in *this* world. For *this* world is a suspension between good and evil. And the True God is ALL-RIGHTEOUS. *There is not a taint of injustice or evil in God.*

As C.S. Lewis noted, the journey to God is a Great Divorce from this world.

The French Revolution teaches us that what begins as one thing can become another. The Revolution can become the Republic can become the Terror.

That never happened in America. The Revolution became America and then America became ALL.

The true genius of revolutions is the American Revolution, not the French Revolution.

The French Revolution is flashy, interesting, dialectical, didactic. It is obviously profound. It is the Nietzsche of Revolutions.

The American Revolution is deep, equivocal, conflicted, self-contradictory, mystical, transcendent, self-involved, self-involuting, more and less than it seems. It is the Dante of Revolutions.

The French Revolution occurs and then ends. It might reemerge, but it is definite and punctuated. It's either there, or it's not.

The American Revolution, like the Big Bang, began and never ended. It just *unfolded* through time, and is always there, like the ether, like the Cosmic Microwave Background Radiation. It is endless and everywhere.

And, of course, since it is endless and everywhere, it is no-when and nowhere.

Now a leftist might say, "The American Revolution isn't endless and everywhere -- nothing but reaction and half-measures followed it."

But that is to think that the American Revolution wasn't revolutionary because it wasn't the French Revolution. Just because the American Revolution unfolds *on its own terms*, doesn't mean that it isn't there. It's the American Revolution, not the Noam Chomsky Revolution.

The American Revolution, like American society, has no fundamental ruptures -- it must always become a seamless whole, an endless continuum.

The French Revolution has clear ruptures, breaks, turning points -- points of no return.

Every choice in the American Revolution is an opportunity for opposite choices to flow together into equivocal (and too often hypocritical or deluded) realities.

You know what's what in the French Revolution.

The Revolution of 1789 promised constitutional monarchy in the British fashion.

Then that veered into a Brave New World, Roman Republic-restorationist Republic that dethroned the King.

Then that veered into an Apocalyptic Secular-Atheist Reign of Terror that murdered the King and began a campaign of murder throughout the land.

France had to face the reality: Catholic Monarchy is *not* a Secularist Utopian Project. Louis XVI is *not* Robespierre.

America doesn't do that: We have Presidents' Day. *All* our major political figures get re-baptized into the American Political Communion: From Washington to Adams to Jefferson to Madison to Jackson to Lincoln to TR to Wilson to FDR to Eisenhower to Nixon to Reagan to Bush II to, one day, I imagine even Trump. It's all just one family: with differences in the family, but we must convince ourselves: One American Goal, One American Truth.

So, the American Mind cannot see the truth of the Homosexualist Revolution. The American Mind, that Charybdis of syncretism, just absorbs the Homosexualist theology into itself, and, since a sort of Christianity exists within the American gullet, it goes about syncretizing the Christian theology with the Homosexualist theology.

That might be fine for the American Mind, but it is *not* fine for the Mind of God.

For unlike Americans, God *does* see distinctions and makes real choices.

Christianity is not compatible with the Homosexualist theology. The limited, liberal secular state permitted to a Christian and to a Christian people permits letting gays and lesbians lead their own lives the way that they want. But it simply does not permit the fundamental structures of society -- the state, political culture, civil society, the basic structure of the economy and the labor market -- to be dictated by a Homosexualist Agenda, theology, and ideology.

In terms of preparing for Christian persecution, it also means that we Christians should be more wary of those who call us bigots and clearly hate us.

For, we Americans like to think that, in the end and with maybe a few pockmarks here and there, everyone ultimately gets along.

But France knows that the Revolution can become the Terror. And Louis XVI can go from Catholic Monarch to Constitutional Monarch to Citizen Capet to decapitated.

What began as understandable gripes about starving and being treated like garbage can mutate into an Apocalyptic Hellscape of Tyranny and Terror.

So, in a Gay New World, with the Gay Caliphate preaching its Gay Quran and crushing all who dare dissent, we can go from a Christian state to a Christian culture to Christianity being tolerated so long as we don't make too much noise.....to what is essentially a campaign by the forces of the Anti-Christ to wipe out the Gospel -- the real, authentic, actual Gospel -- and all those who preach it.

What began as an understandable gripe about getting beaten up and dying of AIDS can all too easily become an all-conquering, all-hostile, even murderous ideological theology that, in its hatred of Christ, will seek to consume the Flesh of Christ in the fires of its hatred.

So, watch out!

Update: I saw an Internet ad that lectured me that "Love has no labels" and then hectored me to "Rethink my bias".

No.

God is Love, and you should rethink your disobedience to His Will.

Moving along, we can also reflect that the American Mind is characteristically synthetical, not analytical.

Of course, these are generalizations -- but, *indeed*, rational thought is **impossible** without generalizations, abstractions, and categorizations. If you cannot make distinctions, you cannot think. Of course, if you cannot also make connections, you similarly cannot think. But the American dilemma is not the failure to make connections, it is the failure to make distinctions.

The French, the Russians, the Chinese -- they all know who their friends are, and who their enemies are, what their interests are, and what their interests aren't.

Now, Americans, obsessed with money, always know where the interests of their pocketbooks lie. They're quite expert in that.

But ideologically and philosophically, Americans are the ultimate swingers, maximally promiscuous. (Except when it came to Communism: remember, Communism threatened to snatch America's pocketbook: the Cardinal No-No.)

But when it comes to pure ideas -- and not those ideas that threaten our money -- Americans just absorb anything and everything into our central syncretic matrix. The American Mind is syncretical to the point of being syncretic. It glories in syncretism.

When America comes to a fork in the road, it takes it. In some ways (but not others), it is the apotheosis of Hegelianism.

The American Mind has a genius for restructuring ideas so that they can all fit together, and, when they can't, simply suppressing the differences and pretending that they don't exist. Americans are so syncretical by nature that they don't even need to pretend: they really can't tell the difference....or the differences.

There's a kind of weird beauty in all this. It certainly promotes peace and peaceableness. The Muslim does not have this problem. For the Muslim Mind, it is good, everything else is evil. The Muslim Mind is a simple and arid affair. It is easy to murder and destroy when you are good and all else that is not you is evil.

It is beautiful that I can be Italian and Sicilian and Spanish and also be totally American, and that America can be Britain, France, Spain, Italy, Russia, Germany, Latin America, Africa, Asia and even imagined cultures. Only America could produce *Star Trek*.

Since the American almost never draws ideological and philosophical lines in the sand (except when it comes to money), there are far fewer reasons to fight and murder and destroy. It is inconceivable that America could ever fight a Thirty Years' War. We would never fight over religious doctrines, as such: we would never fight a war over Church authority or the nature of the Eucharist. America would never fight a war over the use or disuse of icons, like the Byzantines. And even our American Iliad, the Civil War....was fought over slavery....which means it was fought over money.

That is why America is a wonderland of peace and plenty, and the Middle East is embroiled in an endless nightmare of cyclical violence.

Now, of course, there are numerous pockmarks in the American Disneyland: homegrown mass shootings come to mind. But these are exceptions, and not the rule, and they are actually a very recent development. Since 1776, America has been generally quite placid: far more so than Europe, Russia, Asia, Latin America, Africa, or the Middle East. And urban crime, such as in Chicago?...well, that would cost *money* to fix....so, no.

So the American Mind is an ideological and intellectual vortex into which everything gets drawn in and restructured so that everything becomes America and America becomes everything. Even George W. Bush tried to recast Islam as a "Religion of Peace" -- I mean, come on, guys, work with us here! If Muslims would simply work with the American Hollywood mentality and work with the script, Muslims could be incredibly popular, with Islamic ideas permeating American culture.

I don't want that. I'm a Christian. But I'm simply saying that the American Mind would be more than happy to incorporate Islam's distinctiveness into the American All. That is, if Muslims weren't violent, murderous pricks about everything.

But Islam doesn't want that. Islam wants to crush America, to turn it into a colonial outpost remade in Islam's image, like medieval Spain or Sicily.

To Islam, America is a pretty land with lots of resources and many pretty girls to rape and sell into sexual slavery. The American Mind, that product of the American Revolution, is nothing more than a horror to the Islamic Imperium, which Islam all too readily and happily would like to murder: as it would like to murder Christianity and Russia and Africa and Asia and anything else it can get its hands on.

(Of course, as always, we must make a distinction between individual Muslims and Islam as an entity. Left-wing types never have a problem doing this with the United States. To the Left, U.S. foreign policy is the root of all evil. And U.S. foreign policy does indeed have much to answer for. But why do left-wingers readily and casually ascribe drone strikes and economic imperialism and general military hubris to "America", but every time anyone points to the aggressive and imperial instincts of "Islam", they point to a harmless and friendly Muslim civilian and then point to me and call me a bigot? If the existence of nice and friendly civilians excuses a whole social entity from the sins of its ideology and the sins of its actions *as an entity*, then can I point to an American baby in a baby carriage to excuse American imperial arrogance? Certainly, no left-winger has a problem ascribing every last sin, real and imagined, to "Catholicism". Why can't I point to an innocent Catholic girl in a communion dress to excuse "Catholicism" and call every critic of the Catholic Church a bigot? It's almost as if there's a double standard that favors secularism and Islam and disfavors Christianity. Funny, isn't it?)

Islam, (which means Submission), per its name, seeks to dominate the world, making the whole world submit to its power, with each people and culture forsaking their essential distinctiveness and totally submitting to the totality of Islamic law. America seeks to beguile the whole world to join the fiesta and march in the parade of infinite, malleable possibility. Of course, the one constant will always remain: America has to make a profit in the bargain. USA.

But that very synthetic character of the American Mind prevents it from guarding itself with simple analysis: with a simple understanding of distinctions: of knowing that, sometimes, *this is **not** that*.

I love my country. I love the United States of America. I am a patriot.
So take this metaphor in stride. Imagine the American Mind and culture as a toilet.

I don't mean that it's stinky or filthy or undesirable, or any sort of thing.

I simply mean it this way: a toilet can flush a great many things down itself. Flush and flush and flush, absorb and absorb and absorb. It all goes down, and the toilet just keeps on flushing, keeps on absorbing.

But what if you flush floss down the drain?

All of a sudden the toilet backs up and breaks, and you need a plumber.

In my humble opinion, Homosexualist theology is the floss that America has just flushed down itself.

Homosexualist ideas about God, man, and the world simply do not gel with Christianity, and to the extent that some form of Christianity is indeed part of the American syncretic matrix, the Homosexualist intellectual floss is going to gum up the works, and will displace the Christian elements, till nothing authentically Christian remains within the American Mind or American culture. In fact, anything in the American body social or culture that does resemble authentic Christianity will end up becoming viewed as a bacteria, a virus, a disease that offends *basic American values*.

And that is precisely how America -- which was founded to be a Puritan City on a Hill and which Samuel Adams had hoped might become a Christian Sparta -- could end up becoming the most violent, fanatical, and hateful persecutor that the Church has ever known.

One also has to stand in awe of a certain pattern that has arisen in our times, in the United States, and in the West more generally, which bears out all too disturbingly what I have outlined above.

It is considered sacrilege -- an outrageous moral offense -- to call sodomy sinful. The elite culture considers it vile to question the moral sanctity of homosexual relationships and homosexual affections -- and love. Love is Love is Love is Love, you bigot. (No matter that "Sin is Sin is Sin is Sin, you heretic", is a logically equivalent argument.) Likewise, anything considered tainted with any form of racism, sexism, "Islamophobia", "homophobia", "heterosexism" or any other -phobia or -ism is moral treason -- to be punished, today, with social tarring and feathering.....and tomorrow? -- with fines....the day after that? with imprisonment... ..the years after that? with mob violence, assault, murder....even capital punishment.

And yet.....no such outrage is apportioned to offenses against Christ. To offend diversity and the sanctity of identity is blasphemy, heresy, and outrage. Yet say *anything* you want about Christ, the Lord and Savior of the human race, and it is not considered sacrilege -- it is not considered offensive. It is courageous. Bold. Brave. Laudatory. Brilliant. Clever. Worthy of applause. Progressive. Intelligent. A fundamental right, correctly and proudly exercised.

If you call a homosexual “marriage” not a marriage, saying that it is not *possible* for a homosexual relationship to be a marriage, since a marriage is the communion of male flesh with female flesh, you are a homophobic, heterosexist bigot that today should be denounced and tomorrow.....who knows?

But if you place a Crucifix in a bottle of urine, (as happened with a sacrilege in 1987 called “Piss Christ”), you will be hailed as an artist -- you receive awards and monetary grants from the U.S. government, you have the outrage displayed as art in many prominent museums and galleries, and you can sell the “piece” for hundreds of thousands of dollars....enough to buy a modest house.

“Art critics” will call your work mysterious and beautiful.

You will be hailed by many as brilliant and courageous. You will not much fear for your life. You will not have to spend millions on security. And if anything were to happen to you, you would be hailed as a martyr for free expression.

LET THE RIVER RUN!

And yet....what would be the reaction to Piss Quran? If I submerged the Quran in urine (*which I have not*).....but if I were to do so (which I won't)....could I get feted for my artistic genius? Could I receive artistic awards and grants from the federal government? Could I have my “work” displayed in museums and galleries for thirty years? Would I be called a hero by the mainstream, elite culture?

No awards for Piss Quran. No government grants. No museum and gallery displays. No retrospectives. No flattering essays. You won't be able to sell it for hundreds of thousands of dollars. No one will call you brilliant and courageous....not in the mainstream, elite culture anyway. You will very much have to fear for your life and always look over your shoulder. If you fall, no one shall pity you, but will rather call you a bigot in your obituary. Your work will not be called mysterious and beautiful. It will be called ugly, bigoted, Islamophobic. Potentially responsible for war....death.....world war.....you will be held responsible for all the violence that more than a billion Muslims will perpetrate.

And yet, in the Christian worldview, Christ is the center of the universe and of history. He is the Lord of all, who alone affords salvation. And in the Christian worldview, sodomy is a sin, a sexual sin no different from masturbation, fornication, or adultery (understood in the narrow sense of cheating on your spouse).

So, the Secularist-Atheist-Homosexualist political theology fundamentally *privileges* its own worldview (naturally, inevitably, and obviously), *over* the Christian worldview.

These are not shallow differences. This is a chasm.

Homophobia. Islamophobia. These have become terrible slings and arrows, that can ruin a person in society and even get him killed.

Christophobia? The sound of one hand clapping. The sound of a feather dropping to the ground. The tsunami of outrage of a puddle. It is paranoia to even coin, consider, or countenance the word. No matter that Christians today are being forced by law to violate their consciences in their businesses. No matter what tomorrow may bring. No matter the violent, vicious slaughter of Christians in Egypt, Pakistan, and across the Islamic World.

So, in our society, such as it is, if you criticize a serious sexual sin or a force that denies the Incarnation, Crucifixion, Resurrection, Ascension, Eucharist, and Second Coming of Christ in Lordship, you are a bigot. Bigot. Bigot Bigot.

But, if you defame Christ, Lord and Savior of the human race, you are an artist, an intellectual, a hero -- a proud modern man or woman striking a blow for freedom and conscience.

Homophobia -- 16,100,000 Google results.

Islamophobia -- 5,510,000 Google results.

Christophobia -- a paltry 63,400 results.

If I put a picture of Dan Savage in a bottle of piss: Homophobia.

If I put the Quran in a bottle of piss: Islamophobia.

Yet, if I put the Crucifix in a bottle of piss: Awards, grants, favor, fame.

This is a problem. I mean, it's *not* a problem if you hate Christ and Christianity, if you wish to tear down the Church, neuter it and destroy it.

But, if you're a Christian who stands with all Christians everywhere, defends the Church, and works for the fulfillment of the Church in time, so that Christ the King can return to rule His Kingdom -- the Kingdom of God, which Christ shall turn over to the Father.....then this is a serious -- *very* serious -- problem.

Gog and Magog. Now I certainly don't want to raise false alarm. But if America, which hates Christianity for being bigoted (a deranged understanding of bigotry), and Islam, which

hates Christianity because it (falsely) considers it polytheistic, turned out to be Gog and Magog, or kinds of Gog and Magog.....would a Christian be terribly surprised?

The sacred is that which cannot be critiqued without giving offense. Put another way, the sacred is that which cannot be critiqued without immorality or without provocation. Put in a more technical way, the sacred is that which cannot be critiqued without blameworthiness.

A critique is a subjection of a subject to an enquiry into its imperfections.

That which is imperfect, when critiqued, has its imperfections exposed.

That which is perfect, when critiqued, has its perfection exposed.

Only that which is imperfect could possibly fear critique.

Only that which is imperfect but pretends to be perfect could possibly seek to murder and riot against and defame and persecute those who critique it.

It is the critic who counts: the man or woman who points out how the imperfect belief or practice stumbles, or how a better belief or practice might be better. The credit belongs to the man or woman who is actually able to think, whose face is marred by dust and sweat and blood; who strives valiantly; who errs, who comes short again and again, because there is no enquiry without error and shortcoming; but who does actually strive to think; who knows great enthusiasms, the great devotions; who spends himself or herself in a worthy cause; who at the best knows in the end the triumph of shedding a little more light on truth, and who at the worst, if he fails, at least fails while engaging in honest thought, so that his place shall never be with those arrogant, deluded, violent, hateful souls who neither know truth nor untruth.

We desperately require a new civilization. We require a critical civilization. We require a civilization in which absolutely, positively, un-exceptionally *everything* is subject to critique.

Not to violence. Not to murder. Not to assault. Not to persecution. Not to rioting. Not to being fired. Not to name-calling. Not to shaming. Not to belittlement. Not to exclusion from society (except for physical violence or commercial fraud).

The only thing that should be subject to the violence inflicted by the criminal law is force or fraud.

The only thing that should be subject to the opprobrium of society is a failure to offer logical reasons.

The greatest reality is truth.

Now, as a Christian, I identify truth with God, Love, Christ, the Spirit, Beauty, Justice, Being, and so on.

But those highest realities, as I consider them and as they are, *must be true*. Not because I say they are true, but because they actually are truth: because they are true in truth. If any of those things are not true, or my Christian worldview is not true, then it is worthless and evil.

Truth is the good. A lie (or falsehood) is evil.

Now, who gets to determine what is a logical reason? Logic. Who determines what is logical? Truth.

Who speaks for Truth?

The problem with Protestant or Islamic “faith” is that it short-circuits critique. The Protestant responds to the question, “Who speaks for Truth”, with “The Bible”. The Muslim responds to the question, “The Quran.”

Why?

The answer that a Protestant or narrow-minded medieval Catholic or Muslim gives to that one simple question, *Why?*

BLASPHEMY!

And the added response of a Muslim, from the 7th Century to the 21st Century?

MURDER HIM!

We have a choice as the human race, shall the simple question, “What is truth” be determined by enquiry or murder?

The battle for civilization is not between religion and science or between faith and reason. It is between the freedom of enquiry and murder.

Philosophers line up on one side. Murderers line up on the other. You cannot be both.

God is truth. Satan was a murderer and a liar from the beginning.

The Philosophers are on the side of God and His Holy Angels, the murderers are always on the side of Satan.

The freedom of enquiry is not itself truth. But truth can only be discovered, validated, cherished and authentically believed *through* the freedom of enquiry.

A murdered person can no longer enquire, and can no longer light the path of others' own enquiries.

Those who enquire love truth, and are not afraid of truth.

Those who murder hate truth and are desperately afraid of truth.

As Socrates said, the unexamined life is not worth living. He didn't say that because he was an intellectual snob. He said that because truth can never be discovered without examination, and the life lived without truth is life without meaning. Life without substance. Life without life. It is death-in-life. A living death. An eternal death. The death that does not die.

We require a new symbol for a new civilization. I propose the chessboard. We should place chessboards atop our buildings like Crosses and Crescents. We should place chessboards at the head of every classroom. People, along with their Crosses, should wear chessboard necklaces.

When you play chess, you have to play by the rules in order to win. In life, winning is truth, and the rules are logic.

The one cry of the victor is this: Checkmate.

Screaming bigot! does not make you win. Murdering someone does not make you win. Assaulting someone does not make you win. Rioting does not make you win. Clicking your tongue does not make you win. Sneering does not make you win. Excluding someone from a workplace, university, the media, the government or the public square does not make you win.

If you are playing chess and you stand up and shoot your opponent in the head, or cut off his head, you will not be named Grandmaster. You will be arrested and imprisoned.

If you are playing chess and you stand up and point to your opponent and say, "He is a bigot!" or "He is not intersectional!" or "He is anti-gay!" or "He is anti-trans!" or "He is homophobic!", you will not be named Grandmaster. People will stare at you like you are a lunatic, and eventually you will be hauled away by security.

Liberalism has gone off the rails. Liberalism is a train wreck.

Deeply, I personally believe that the failure of Liberalism is in its very genesis: in Hobbes and Machiavelli. Liberalism -- modern liberalism (and by modern I mean beginning in the 15th and 16th Centuries) -- is fundamentally atheistical.

Atheism is a broad word for a broad phenomenon. One form of ancient atheism was Epicureanism: Epicurus, its namesake, taught that reality was nothing more than material atoms and the void in which they swirled. He did not believe in gods that had anything to do with human life, and he did not believe in any form of afterlife.

I am not an Epicurean. I believe that if you are an Epicurean you are quite likely to suffer eternal torments, unbearable eternal torments, in Hell forever.

However, it is possible to believe these things without having a huge, monstrous chip on your shoulder about Judaism and Christianity.

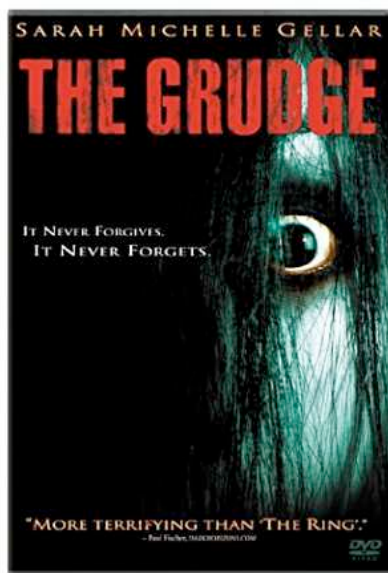
There is something fundamentally bizarre about modern atheism. It is one thing to not believe that something wonderful is true. It is altogether another thing *to not want that wonderful thing to be true*.

Christianity proposes that, through faith in Christ, you will live forever in eternal and endless happiness, becoming the Love that is the fundamental and essential truth of reality.

It would be one thing to not believe that you were married to the most beautiful, sexiest, most desirable woman on the planet. It would be quite another thing to not *want* to be married to such a woman.

Happily, I am in fact married to such a woman.

Modern atheism has a bizarre, monstrous *grudge* against Christianity.



It is one thing to deplore actual bad behavior -- ancient, medieval, and modern -- but it appears to me that, deep down, modern atheism is motivated by a kind of revulsion against the

principles themselves -- and not just because it believes them to be untrue, but because of their very nature.

Now.....who else has a huge, monstrous grudge against Christ?
Satan.

Most modern atheism strikes me as less an empirical-logical enterprise that is morally neutral, and much more a rebellion against the idea of a sovereign Spirit that is Love, to whom all spirits must accord their own wills.

This all goes back to my discussion of triumphalist materialism versus sane materialism. The triumphalist materialism crowns himself or herself as a God, the determiner of all moral values. It is a Nietzschean impulse.

The sane materialism understands that, in this vast material Cosmos, if you are merely matter, you are virtually nothing. You are not a God. In the context of the Cosmos, you and a worm are equals. You and an amoeba are equals. You and a grain of sand are equals. Sane materialism has a Buddhist impulse.

Now, I don't believe those things, because I am a Christian.

But it's really a war within atheism between Nietzsche and Buddha, and Nietzsche is wiping the floor with Buddha.

If materialism is true, (which it is **not**), then the difference between you and a worm is like the difference between a person who has a net worth of a penny (the worm) and a net worth of \$1,000 (who, for the sake of this analogy, is unemployable and for whom that \$1,000 is all the money he shall ever be able to get in his entire life).

(Also, assume no access to credit cards, loans, no possibility of entrepreneurially turning the 1000 dollars into a business empire Horatio Alger-style, etc. etc. etc. -- we're just talking about a person with one cent versus one thousand dollars, straight, that's it.)

Now, both are hideously poor. Both are **broke**. But the man with \$1,000 can **delude** himself or herself into believing that he is rich.

While the one-center begs on the sidewalk with bitter tears in smelly rags *immediately*, the 1000 dollar man can buy a nice shirt and jeans and flip flops. He can have a delicious breakfast, lunch, and dinner. He can take in a show. He can hire a prostitute. He can hail a cab to go here and there. While he is enjoying a drink and getting a lap dance, he can reflect on how superior his position is compared to that pathetic, icky one-center.

Until the next day, or the day after that, when that 1000 dollar man becomes a zero dollar man, and must join the one-center on the street, his shirt and jeans becoming progressively smellier and his flip-flops growing thick with mold.

So too, the human being, (in a materialist conception, which is false), once dead, is as spiritually dead as a worm, and as existentially dead as dust.

Dust to dust.

The Nietzschean atheist believes that with the Death of God he becomes a moral, aesthetic, and existential God.

The Nietzschean atheist's fundamental spiritual posture is Pride, the same as Satan's.

The Buddhist atheist believes that with the Death of God, he is a worm, not even a worm, nothing more than dust.

The Buddhist atheist's fundamental spiritual posture is humility.

The very enthusiasm of modern atheism -- with its spiritual delusions -- convinces me that modern atheism is nothing more than an avatar of Satan.

We can also reflect, *must* also reflect, that the parable of the one-center versus the 1000 dollar man is the exact relationship in which the poor man and the rich man find themselves. The treatment of the Capitalist class against the poor is the exact same thing as how the 1000 dollar man totally ignores the one-center on the curb begging for change.

And both the rich and the poor stand equally before the final verdict: death.

Only, should there be more than death after death, how shall a Just Judge, in his infinite and eternal justice, judge the 1000 dollar man?

Liberalism -- modern Liberalism -- is a project of human self-aggrandizement. In its heart, it does not create material progress out of kindness, like Jesus taking pity on the poor, the lame, the blind, and the sick.

Liberalism -- the Modern Project -- creates material progress to turn the human race into a race of Gods, who are themselves fully knowledgeable, and thus fully powerful. Indeed, Lord Bacon's favorite maxim (the one that really animated his Project) was "knowledge is power" (*ipsa scientia potestas est*). Liberalism's heart is the same sinful heart that prompted Eve to pluck the fruit from the forbidden Tree of the Knowledge of Good and Evil and to eat of it, intending and hoping to become as God.

But as Saint Michael's name means, "Who is like God?" For that question is the rebuke that cast Samael⁵⁹ (Lucifer-Satan) out of Heaven.

And indeed that question -- *Who is like God?* -- is what all of human history and this reality -- *this* world -- is about.

⁵⁹ Samael, which in Hebrew means "the Blindness or Venom of God" is likely the original angelic name of Lucifer/Satan before his fall.

Now “conservatism” -- *Rush* Limbaugh, Sean Hannity, Donald Trump, Ted Cruz -- they’re *every bit* as haughty, pound for pound as *proud*, as Satan....or, maybe, more charitably, just **delusionally** proud like Eve. (Paul Ryan?) Both American liberalism and “conservatism” are the Children of the Modern Project, the Children of Modern Liberalism. It’s just that modern American liberalism builds hospitals, paves roads, builds bridges, builds schools, and distributes food on its road to perdition.

Conservatism notes that Liberalism is Satanic for perpetrating the Unborn Holocaust, and then itself falls off the cliff into Hell for ignoring and tormenting “these least brothers of mine” (Matthew 25:40).

So there is -- and always has been -- a tension within modern Liberalism (defined as the Modern Project founded by Machiavelli, Bacon, Descartes, Hobbes & company) between (1) a hatred for God and a desire to self-deify in defiance of the LORD, to imitate Satan and (2) the intellectual apparatus that can be used to achieve knowledge, the God-making elixir.

Discourse -- philosophy -- enquiry is indeed the Ladder up to truth. But why is Liberalism (the Modern Project)(Modern Civilization) climbing that Ladder?

To know and love God more?

Or to become God, to overthrow the King, murder Him, and crown itself God and King?

This all becomes wonderfully clear if we assume -- posit at least for the sake of argument -- that Christianity is, in fact, true.

If Christianity is true, then the heart of the Modern Project is caught between two roads -- that of truth and that of power. *But* if I am correct in diagnosing Modernity, then it’s no contest. Because the Modern heart only ever used truth as a *means* to power. Truth was always a means. Power was always the end: the goal, the purpose, the desire, the outcome.

So, when truth becomes an *obstacle* to power (to self-deification, self-aggrandizement), then truth will always be murdered so that the Modern Man and Woman can attain the true desire of its heart: Power.

So, if truth threatens the desired outcome -- like non-marital, “liberated” (cough: libertine) sex, (and the abortions that prevent such sex from interfering with one’s self-actualization), and anal sex and homosexual relationships -- then do away with truth. And if truth keeps popping up with pesky arguments and intuitions and insights: *Love is Love is Love is Love is Love is Love is Love*. Q.E.D.

If contemporary modern Liberalism can’t take the heat of actually having to argue a point: **BIGOT! BIGOT! BIGOT! BIGOT! BIGOT! BIGOT!**

It's all so much easier. And more effective. Especially when you have the worse of the argument.

Now, I am certainly not saying that simply calling someone a bigot makes you this kind of deranged Stormtrooper in the service of Satan.

If you genuinely think I am a bigot, fine. I don't actually care. I am a big boy, and I don't know you.

But when you aim to **persecute** me or my fellows, then we have a problem.

When you hunt me down to murder me, or murder a fellow Christian, I must object.

When you attack my livelihood or the livelihoods of my fellow Christians, you are making a physical attack -- an assault by indirect means.

And when you close off the organs of the mass media and the mass institutions to alternative viewpoints -- to Christian viewpoints -- you are perpetrating a vast campaign of suppression, repression, oppression, and propaganda -- which, of course, only serves to justify and advance campaigns of persecution.

We can also note that the exact same disconnect between a desire for truth and a desire for power exists within Islam. Islam declares itself to be the final truth -- the whole truth -- and it also seeks to conquer the world.

Everybody Wants to Rule the World

Now, if an enquiry into truth threatens the project of World Conquest.....well, to Hell with truth. Satan made the same choice. Satan was a liar and a murderer from the beginning. What then shall we think of liars and murderers -- of those who cannot bear questioning and those who murder when questioned?

Truth does not need to be protected. Truth is Power. Physics or chemistry don't need to be protected from questioning. Questioning is precisely how physics and chemistry came into being, how they were discovered, advanced, and perfected.

So, the only refuge, in the chessboard of argument, that murderous Islam can take is this: Truth is really weak.

Truth is so weak, that it just cannot stand in the face of questioning. Untruth is so much stronger than truth.

If truth is so much weaker, then what makes it true? Even if, somehow, truth can be both truth and weakness, then what accounts for the weakness of truth? Why indeed would untruth be stronger?

So make another move on the chessboard, untruth.....well, *of course*, it is not the truth that is weak.....it is human minds that are weak....and those poor critters must be defended from blasphemous untruth.

Then ask yourself, if you can at all bear being questioned: why does that logic not apply in matters of science or, indeed, *any* human endeavor? Why is the human mind a marvel in everything *but* God --- why would God invent the mind so wondrous as He has, and yet in the absolutely most important particular - that of God - make the mind so utterly feeble that only murder and tyranny can maintain the truth of God within the human mind?

So: Islam states that God made the world perfect, and the human mind is a marvel, superior to that of the angels, capable of prodigious wonders....and yet, somehow, the human mind is at the very same time totally incapable of holding within itself the belief in God and the affirmation of true doctrine without recourse to murder, rioting, and tyranny?

Even if we assume that there are certain poor souls that are slow of mind, does this logic -- this illogic -- hold in matters of science? Do we execute people who question Newtonian physics? Do we not rather *demonstrate* Newtonian physics from sure and compelling *evidence*? And isn't the *demonstration* based on *truth* so compelling, that, rather than fear and attack alternative viewpoints, we but laugh at them?

Isn't that precisely the posture that truth takes towards untruth?
Truth laughs at untruth.

Untruth rages at and attempts to murder truth.

And, if Islam were really true, wouldn't it make infinitely more sense to develop and propound such dazzling proofs, of mind and heart, that, rather than the Islamic World convulsing in violence, murder, horror, and destruction, Muslims would simply quietly, methodically, and carefully explain the proofs to their citizens?

Is the intellectual core of Islam so weak that only murder and tyranny can sustain it? Is the intellectual matrix of Islam so meager and unconvincing that it can only persist in a bubble, like a boy without an immune system? Is Islam so unconvincing that the human mind must be crippled when it considers Islam and its reason forbidden from examining the contents of Islamic belief?

The Islamic obsession with persecuting what it considers blasphemy stems from its fundamental weakness. It apparently cannot stand on the two feet of reason, logic, persuasiveness, and evidence, so it can only stand on the stilts of destroying all those who dare question it.

Islam under Cross-Examination
https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=2sLcfOKU_co

This is why Islam can never be questioned.



Now, the modern Liberal -- the Secular Identity Liberal -- will snap back, “Well, was it wrong to marginalize racists? Should we treat the Ku Klux Klan with kid gloves? Should we respectfully invite the KKK into the marketplace of ideas?”

That equates the Ku Klux Klan with the Catholic Church, with authentic and historical Protestant churches, with the Eastern Orthodox Church.

Are you serious?

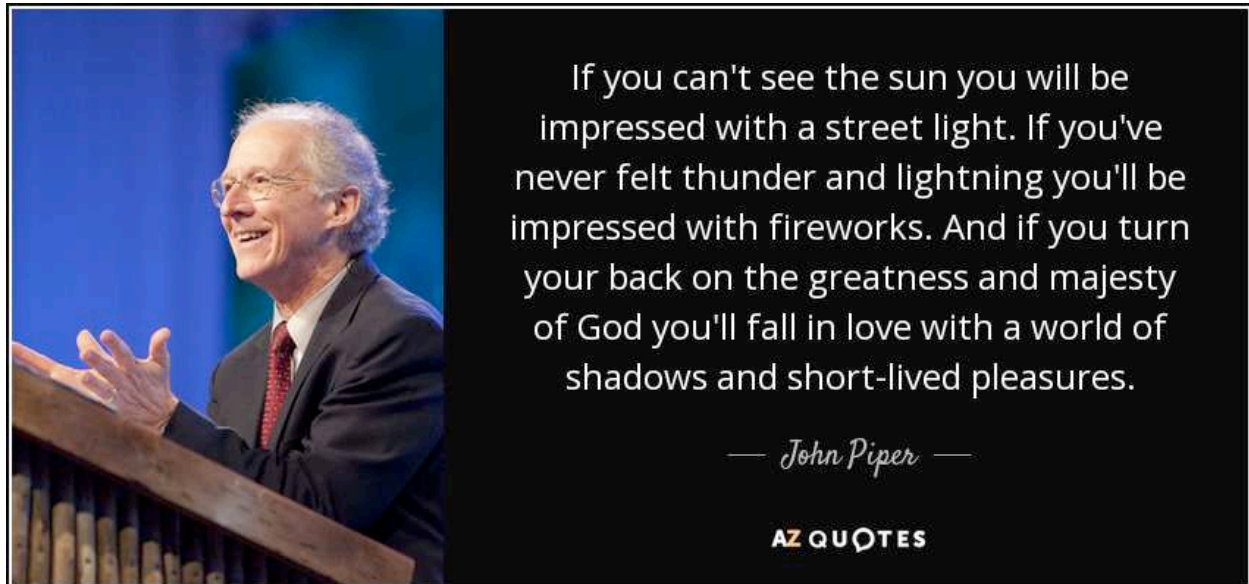
Genuine, authentic, historical, doctrinally sound Christianity -- the Christian Church -- is opposed to homosexual sex -- it considers it a sin, pure and simple, ipso facto. The consistent, authentic theology of the Church considers marriage *essentially* between only a man and a woman.

The Secular Identity Liberals are not even liberal. They are Leninists. They are Leninists who have the same murderous disdain towards the Church that Lenin, Stalin, and Trotsky had towards the Tsar and his family and towards the Russian Orthodox Church.

All a genuine Christian needs to know about the Secularist Elitist Culture is that it considers you as contemptible as the Klan.

To the Secularist Leninists, the Pope is the Grand Wizard of the Klan. Tim Keller is an Imperial Wizard. John Piper is George Wallace.

If you're comfortable with that, and you're a Christian, you're brain-dead.



Trustful Longing

Finally, trust should be accompanied by longing - the desire to see God's promises fulfilled, and to be united with our beloved Saviour. The longing for God must be in conformity with His will, it should be humble, not only as regards feeling, but as regards the will, which should urge us on to unceasing labour and total surrender to God. For trustful longing, if it is not to be mere delusion, must be based on sincere penance for our sins. "Mercy shall encompass him that hopeth in the Lord" (Ps: 31-10). (Father Michael Sopocko)

Christ is the Sacred that was not only critiqued, but crucified.

Gay sex, gay love, Islam, the Quran -- they are so sacred and holy that they can never be critiqued. They are the porcelain dolls of truth -- *Don't you dare knock them over!*

But Christ -- the only Sacred Truth that ever existed in this fallen world -- cannot only take questioning (Jesus always answered questions -- He *never* clutched His pearls and said, "Oh Heavens No, I am so Sacred that I cannot be questioned!"), but you can literally destroy Him, ruin His Flesh, punish Him, devastate Him, torture Him, crucify and murder Him, and that only *testifies* to His Truth and His Glory.

The sacred truths of gay sex and Islam require vociferous, vengeful, even murderous enforcers to hold them up.

The Sacred Truth that is Christ rose from the dead.

Gay sex and Islam cannot bear being questioned. They treat questions and criticisms like bullets and bombs.

Christ destroyed Sin and Death.

Richard Dawkins, I presume, would assume that a critical civilization would become an atheist civilization. I believe that a critical civilization would become a Christian civilization.

But I am confident enough in the truth of Christ that I am willing to "roll the dice" and bet that the truth of Christ is strong enough to "bear" freedom -- free men and women with an unbounded freedom of enquiry -- free of murder, assault, harassment and all forms of persecution, including social, cultural, and economic persecution.

I am sure that it's a safe bet. Because I am sure of Christ.

Now, of course, the verdict of enquiry becomes an issue. For I can easily foresee writers writing response articles and blogs -- "Why Gay Sex is Moral and Righteous".....and then because a medley of articles and books are written and because there are a few television programs....Q.E.D., the sanctity of gay sex has been verified, and you can go back to bashing Christians and any others who oppose you as bigots.

That's not how enquiry works. Science doesn't work through some intellectual window-dressing and then a barrage of name-calling. That isn't enquiry, it's propaganda masquerading as enquiry.

The explosion of homosexual literature, art, and media in the past fifty years does not verify the sanctity of gay sex any more than the existence of medieval Scholasticism and stained glass windows and Gothic cathedrals verified the truth of Christianity. Queer theory and multiculturalism and diversity rhetoric shouldn't be allowed to claim some more rarified and protected status than the Summa Theologica or St. Bonaventure's library of philosophical and theological works. *Queer Eye for the Straight Guy* or *Brokeback Mountain* prove the sanctity of gay love? Then Dante's *Commedia* proved the truth of Catholicism 700 years ago. The lived experiences of gays and lesbians prove the sanctity of gay sex and gay love? Well, then don't the ardent enthusiasms - intellectual and practical - of men and women of the 13th Century in Catholic Europe verify the truth of Christianity? No, of course not. Only gay sex is sacred. The Eucharist? Dump it in a bottle of piss. The altar? Fornicate on it. Christ? Call Him a piece of garbage and spit on Him. But gay sex? There is no higher sacrament, no higher form of holiness. Let us pray.

Reason and experience verify truth. Monuments do not verify truth.

Cultural mandarins are never the true referees or judges of truth.

History is the referee of truth, and Time is the Judge of truth.

The point is that Secularist Leninism makes no sense. It is intellectual garbage, so, naturally, all it can do is fall back on name-calling, resentment, and persecution. All it can do is clutch its pearls, huff, puff, fume, and scream in your face.

All that being said, freedom of enquiry does not require social chaos, nor is it even incompatible with cordiality.

I can think that you're a sinner, a heretic, and bound for Hell. But that doesn't mean that I can't be polite, make small talk, and pass the salt. I can smile and wave you off on your way. I can give you directions, remark that it is a sunny day, and even, if it is compatible with my moral beliefs, provide you with a commercial service.

Of course, that requires maturity. Yet, religious belief, as such, is not incompatible with maturity, any more than eating is incompatible with table manners. Just because a toddler flings his food across the dining room doesn't mean that it is impossible to dine at the dinner table with decorum.

Islam is the giant global toddler of religion. It makes all religion look bad. Perhaps by design.

The freedom of expression is the prerequisite for the freedom of enquiry. Indeed, the freedom of expression is the matter, and the freedom of enquiry is the form. The freedom of expression is the very fabric of the freedom of enquiry.

The United States of America, having truly embraced freedom of expression, at least historically, has a highly developed jurisprudence regarding the implementation and delineation of the substance and limits of the freedom of expression.

The essential standard for determining the bounds of the freedom of expression is *Brandenburg v. Ohio* (1969). *Brandenburg* states that the government cannot punish speech if it does not advocate imminent lawless action. Even advocating the moral rightness of overthrowing the government, without the advocacy of an imminent lawless act, is protected speech.

Again, that does not mean that there are not time, place, and manner restrictions on speech.

A Secular Leninist will respond....“No, you can still spout your bigotry without criminal penalty....*for now*,” as they concoct hate speech legislation.

But a truly critical civilization does not embrace even social and cultural Leninism over privileging and protecting those who dare to engage in enquiry.

The freedom of conscience -- and the freedom of enquiry that is both the mother and daughter of such freedom of conscience -- must be protected and respected in the private sector as well - in every school, workplace, government office, and public square, especially the mass media and all other relevant institutions. *That* is Liberalism....a Christian Liberalism that truly seeks truth and forsakes power....not the Modern Liberalism of Machiavelli, Bacon, and Hobbes, those constructors of an intellectual Tower of Babel that sought to invade Heaven and overthrow God.

If a Christian does not advocate or endorse violence or harassment or nastiness against a gay or lesbian, he or she should not be called a bigot or harassed or hounded or excluded from social, cultural, and economic life because he or she holds an ancient, authentic, and genuine Christian belief, like the fact that sodomy is a sin. Believing that there can be no such thing as homosexual marriage should not be deemed the equivalent of opposing interracial marriage. Advocating for laws on the basis of Christian morality should not be called bigotry when advocating for laws on the basis of Homosexualist morality is hailed as the most morally perfect blow for freedom and justice.

Believing in basic Christian morality and social concepts should not be deemed violence to a gay or lesbian's "moral personhood" or some kind of intrinsic harassment or even nastiness. Violence is violence. Harassment is harassment. Nastiness is nastiness. If passing a law or deciding a case *against* homosexual "marriage" is violence, harassment, or nastiness against gays

and lesbians, then how is it not violence, harassment, or nastiness against Christians to pass laws or decide cases *for* homosexual “marriage”?

Obviously, that privileges the Homosexualist worldview over the Christian worldview.

And one cannot seriously maintain that “denying” marriage to gays and lesbians is an offense, and that “gay marriage” doesn’t at all harm Christians, or anyone else of a like mind. You are not simply “extending” the institution of marriage to other people; you are *changing* the institution of marriage - **what** marriage *is* - for everybody. You can either fail to see that or be happy about it -- but to *change* the **definition** of marriage affects **everybody**.

I should be able to feel unafraid around the water cooler if a gay person says, “I got married this weekend to my boyfriend!” and I say, “I’m a Christian, I don’t agree with that.” That should not be deemed bigotry or a fireable offense.

(Just as saying that you are gay around the water cooler should not be considered unacceptable [to at least say and mean], and you should not be fired for being gay, or for frankly discussing your lifestyle and beliefs.)

For a gay or lesbian or their allies, calling it bigotry and firing that Christian is freedom.

But for a Christian, that is persecution.

When two camps fundamentally disagree about the definition of freedom and tyranny, when one side calls freedom tyranny and the other side calls tyranny freedom, they are no longer part of the same social fabric. The social fabric is rent, torn asunder. When the two camps cannot physically get away from each other, either one or the other viewpoint and practice will prevail.

That is why, with the aggressive Homosexualist definition of “freedom” (which is actually persecution and tyranny), there can be no peace with Christians. Christians should expect no peace, and they should prepare for the worst.

Now, we return to time, place, and manner restrictions.

If a worker gets a big placard with “God Hates Fags” written on it, and walks around with it, and stands on her chair with it and displays it, then that person should probably be fired (or at least told to seek counseling).

Likewise, if in a meeting that does not at all broach the subject of homosexuality, a Christian worker says to a fellow gay worker, “You’re a sodomite,” perhaps firing or some disciplinary action might be in order.

If a Christian worker is routinely actually rude or mean to a gay worker, then disciplinary action, including firing, should be considered.

But simply holding a belief about what is moral and what is not, and having convictions about how that morality should structure and inform the culture, society, the state, and the laws, (especially when that belief until ten or twenty years ago had been the foundation of Western civilization for millennia), and frankly *but politely* stating them and, when criticized, offering frank reasons for such a belief, even and especially in a firm *but polite* way, **should never** be the subject of even social, cultural, or economic persecution.

Now, of course, what constitutes frank but polite discourse in a private sector setting will itself be up for debate and up for grabs. *But* if both sides - Christians and gays - had any sense of fair play, it would be relatively easy to hash out a reasonable code of decorum.

Now, of course, by the same token, philosophical discourse, such as that undertaken here, while I try to be civil, must be even more frank than that permitted by some reasonable code of decorum.

I will call you a sinner.
You call me a bigot.

But if either of us attempts murder, assault, harassment, or an attack on each other's livelihoods, then that is unacceptable.

But, I suspect that the Gay Caliphate has basically zero interest in my more than reasonable proposals. Because they are *winning*. "Hey, Christian culture had its chance, now *it's our turn.*"

Okay.

And you see, *that's* when God says: Okay. Now it's **MY turn.**

The Gay Caliphate does not have the compunction, modesty, honesty, or basic decency that I have. I actually have concerns about gay rights, that gays and lesbians are not themselves persecuted, harassed, driven to suicide or murdered.

Fidelity to God and His clear revelation and the constant moral teaching of the Church, in proposition of that revelation, backed up by lucid and inevitable philosophical arguments that are millennia old, require that the truth be stated clearly: sodomy is a sin. Sodomy cannot be normalized as an identity and integrated as an essential, unambiguously celebrated component of the culture, society, the state, and the laws.

The Gay Caliphate affirms the sanctity of gay sex and gay love, and has absolutely no similar concern for the rights and welfare of Christians. The Gay Caliphate is the Soviet Union. The Soviet Union barely tolerated some attenuated and servile form of religion, but that religion was tightly leashed and utterly forbidden from interfering in Soviet policy.

So too the Gay Caliphate's policy: Christians can be tolerated -- to a point -- so long as they keep their bigotry isolated to their own skulls and cower as the Gay Propaganda is loudly and gloriously pronounced from every highest mountain. Christians shall have all the freedom and all the social effectiveness that the *Gay Caliphate* **permits** them.

Christians, in the 1990s and until the Gay Caliphate's October Revolution of the past number of years, had loved to say, "Hate the sin, love the sinner."

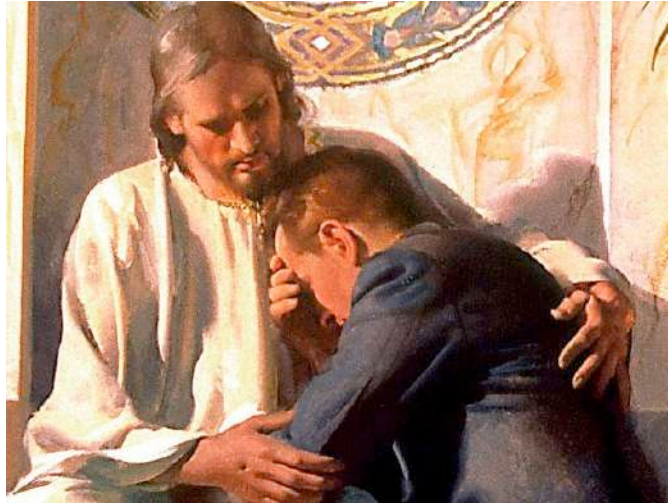
But what happens when the sinner becomes the persecutor?

Is it still "Hate the persecution, love the persecutor"?

Yes. That is necessary. Love for our enemies is commanded by Our Lord (Matthew 5:43-48).

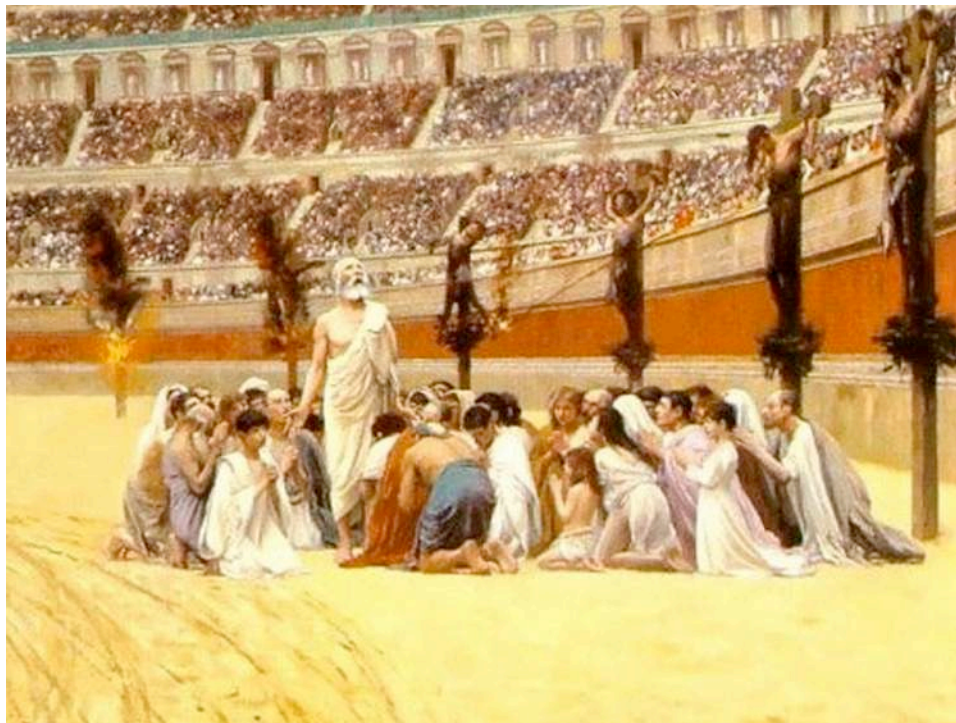
But a mere sinner is not an enemy.

Not an enemy



But, when that sinner glories in their sin, establishes a Sin Movement, and determines to impose a Sin Ideology and Sin Orthodoxy upon the culture, society, the state, and the laws, and to forcibly derange the Church's own doctrines and theology - upon pain of increasingly blatant, degrading, and vicious persecution, then that sinner is no longer merely a sinner, that sinner is a persecutor, and an enemy.

The people watching in the stands are enemies



And the Christian response to a persecutor is not *only* to love their enemy, to love the persecutor, to pray for him or her and to joyously welcome their repentance: but to **resist** the enemy.

The sinner is a pastoral problem, to be met with understanding and the grace of compassion.

The persecutor is an ecclesiastical problem, to be met with determination and the grace of perseverance.

Determined resistance is the only way, (along with whatever supernatural aid must (eventually) be forthcoming), that Christians can successfully beat back persecution and the total destruction of any kind of culture, society, state, or laws that are livable for a Christian.

We already saw a glimpse of this with the Church's response to abortion. Determined, firm, flat resistance: Abortion is murder. Call me a fanatic, call me a fundamentalist, defame me, mock me, do your worst: Abortion is murder, you sick murderer.

Throughout the '70s and '80s, feminists came crowing, "You're a sexist! You're a sexist!"

Okay: You're a murderer.

And that firm resolve eventually made the charges of sexism irrelevant and impotent.

The lack of that same resolve around sodomy has allowed the Gay Caliphate to become the Soviet Union in America and the West.

Much of that resolve comes from Christians' own lack of clarity, morality, and courage surrounding sexual issues. We have our own sexual sins. Most of us have never been involved in an abortion, and, if we have, we grievously repent of it. (I have **not** been involved in an abortion).

But most of us have been lustful to the point of sinfulness. Most of us have masturbated, fantasized, watched pornography, and fornicated outside of the bounds of marriage, involving ourselves in all manner of perversities, from oral sex to anal sex to more deviant pastimes. Most of us have used contraception, privileging the pleasures of sex over and against the purpose of sex, in order to assist our fornications.

With such sodded sexual lives, we tremble at pronouncing sodomy a sin. We have put ourselves in the position of the abortion doctor who ran an abortion clinic for years who now comes to the promontory of Mount Sinai to denounce abortion. It's bad form. It looks hypocritical, even if the abortion doctor has totally and grievously repented, such that it is not hypocrisy but repentance.

When too many Christians excuse sodomy, and embrace sodomy as a moral way of life, they are all too often doing so because they seek to excuse and embrace themselves.

As far as I can tell, the *only* way Christians can meaningfully resist persecution by sodomites is to themselves renounce sodomy, and fornication and sexual immorality in all its forms.

Internally, Christians can only cohere as a resistant community by being far more pure than we are now. We do not need to be blameless: we are a community of sinners. But we community of sinners must punch much higher than we have been.

And that internal purity, clarity, and cohesion will allow us *as a community* to firmly declare and defend basic truths: sodomy is a sin, sodomite “marriage” is a contradiction in terms.

And when the chorus of diversity -- the KGB of the Secularist Leninists -- come for us, to call us bigots and homophobes and heterosexists and heteronormative and Christophiles and Esse-Fascists and whatever weird, meaningless term of contempt and abuse they deem wounding and that captures their fancy, we, *if we are more pure and pious than we have been*, can simply stand firm, arm in arm, as a wall, *ONE* community of Christians faithful to Our Lord and Savior, Jesus Christ, and affirm solemnly *and* graciously: Sodomy is a sin. Calling sodomy marriage is a contradiction in terms.

And obviously, for the Russians who are reading this: the Soviet Union collapsed because it opposed the Church. Just as Napoleon was struck down for striking the Church. Just so you know. 1989 and 1991 avenged the Russian Orthodox Church as surely as Waterloo avenged Pope Pius VI.

That’s how God operates. God is an operator, and Lenin and Putin have got nothing on God. You think Putin is slick and clever? You think Lenin was a mastermind? God makes Lenin look like [Bozo the Clown](#). God is James Bond, and every human being is an autistic child.

The rapidity and rapacity of the sodomite onslaught dazzles the mind for its sheer towering audacity and success.

Consider: concepts *essential* to the entire philosophical functioning of human civilization *for millennia* are washed away as if by some world-historical Mega-Tsunami.....by what? Dan Savage? *Will and Grace*? Macklemore and Ryan Lewis? [Love is Love is Love](#)?

Darling, if you think that simply believing that sodomy is a sin is hatred, you’ve never experienced hatred.

By that measure Franklin Roosevelt was hateful. Abraham Lincoln was hateful. Saint Paul was hateful. Jesus Christ is hateful.

What is going on here?!

A mass awakening of conscience? Really? The same corporate greedheads and sex fiends that dominate our culture are the vanguard of this great triumph of conscience?

I have a theory.....as you might expect.

Americans are simply too feeble-minded, in terms of their philosophical chops, to process fundamental distinctions, so a Cultural Revolution of world-historical proportions can be passed off as “social justice” and kindness and “niceness”.

(You see, in Europe, it’s a much simpler affair: European leftists have hated Christianity for centuries, and the sacralization of sodomy is simply another crowning achievement in their age-old campaign against Christ. But America -- oh, sweet America.....it embarks on the dodgy endeavor -- the reconciliation of sodomy and sanctity.)

As Tocqueville wrote in Volume II, Part I, Chapter X of his *Democracy in America*:
Why the Americans Are More Addicted to Practical Than to Theoretical Science

If a democratic state of society and democratic institutions do not stop the career of the human mind, they incontestably guide it in one direction in preference to another. Their effects, thus circumscribed, are still exceedingly great; and I trust I may be pardoned if I pause for a moment to survey them. We had occasion, in speaking of the philosophical method of the American people, to make several remarks which must here be turned to account.

Equality begets in man the desire of judging of everything for himself: it gives him, in all things, a taste for the tangible and the real, a contempt for tradition and for forms. These general tendencies are principally discernible in the peculiar subject of this chapter. Those who cultivate the sciences amongst a democratic people are always afraid of losing their way in visionary speculation. They mistrust systems; they adhere closely to facts and the study of facts with their own senses. As they do not easily defer to the mere name of any fellow-man, they are never inclined to rest upon any man's authority; but, on the contrary, they are unremitting in their efforts to point out the weaker points of their neighbors' opinions. Scientific precedents have very little weight with them; they are never long detained by the subtilty of the schools, nor ready to accept big words for sterling coin; they penetrate, as far as they can, into the principal parts of the subject which engages them, and they expound them in the vernacular tongue. Scientific pursuits then follow a freer and a safer course, but a less lofty one.

The mind may, as it appears to me, divide science into three parts. The first comprises the most theoretical principles, and those more abstract notions whose application is either unknown or very remote. The second is composed of those general truths which still belong to pure theory, but lead, nevertheless, by a straight and short road to practical results. Methods of application and means of execution make up the third. Each of these different portions of science may be

separately cultivated, although reason and experience show that none of them can prosper long, if it be absolutely cut off from the two others.

In America the purely practical part of science is admirably understood, and careful attention is paid to the theoretical portion which is immediately requisite to application. On this head the Americans always display a clear, free, original, and inventive power of mind. But hardly anyone in the United States devotes himself to the essentially theoretical and abstract portion of human knowledge. In this respect the Americans carry to excess a tendency which is, I think, discernible, though in a less degree, amongst all democratic nations.

Nothing is more necessary to the culture of the higher sciences, or of the more elevated departments of science, than meditation; and nothing is less suited to meditation than the structure of democratic society. We do not find there, as amongst an aristocratic people, one class which clings to a state of repose because it is well off; and another which does not venture to stir because it despairs of improving its condition. Everyone is actively in motion: some in quest of power, others of gain. In the midst of this universal tumult—this incessant conflict of jarring interests—this continual stride of men after fortune—where is that calm to be found which is necessary for the deeper combinations of the intellect? How can the mind dwell upon any single point, when everything whirls around it, and man himself is swept and beaten onwards by the heady current which rolls all things in its course? But the permanent agitation which subsists in the bosom of a peaceable and established democracy, must be distinguished from the tumultuous and revolutionary movements which almost always attend the birth and growth of democratic society. When a violent revolution occurs amongst a highly civilized people, it cannot fail to give a sudden impulse to their feelings and their opinions. This is more particularly true of democratic revolutions, which stir up all the classes of which a people is composed, and beget, at the same time, inordinate ambition in the breast of every member of the community. The French made most surprising advances in the exact sciences at the very time at which they were finishing the destruction of the remains of their former feudal society; yet this sudden fecundity is not to be attributed to democracy, but to the unexampled revolution which attended its growth. What happened at that period was a special incident, and it would be unwise to regard it as the test of a general principle. Great revolutions are not more common amongst democratic nations than amongst others: I am even inclined to believe that they are less so. But there prevails amongst those populations a small distressing motion—a sort of incessant jostling of men—which annoys and disturbs the mind, without exciting or elevating it. Men who live in democratic communities not only seldom indulge in meditation, but they naturally entertain very little esteem for it. A democratic state of society and democratic institutions plunge the greater part of men in constant active life; and the habits of mind which are suited to an active life, are not always suited to a contemplative one. The man of action is frequently obliged to content himself with the best he can get, because he would never accomplish his purpose if he chose to carry every detail to perfection. He has perpetually occasion to rely on ideas which he has not had leisure to search to the bottom; for he is much more frequently aided by the opportunity of an idea than by its strict accuracy; and, in the long run, he risks less in making use of some false principles, than in spending his time in establishing all his principles on the basis of truth. The world is not led by long or learned demonstrations; a rapid glance at particular incidents, the daily study of the fleeting passions of the multitude, the accidents of the time, and the art of turning them to account, decide all its affairs.

In the ages in which active life is the condition of almost everyone, men are therefore generally led to attach an excessive value to the rapid bursts and superficial conceptions of the intellect; and, on the other hand, to depreciate below their true standard its slower and deeper labors. This opinion of the public influences the judgment of the men who cultivate the sciences; they are persuaded that they may succeed in those pursuits without meditation, or deterred from such pursuits as demand it.

There are several methods of studying the sciences. Amongst a multitude of men you will find a selfish, mercantile, and trading taste for the discoveries of the mind, which must not be confounded with that disinterested passion which is kindled in the heart of the few. A desire to utilize knowledge is one thing; the pure desire to know is another. I do not doubt that in a few minds and far between, an ardent, inexhaustible love of truth springs up, self-supported, and living in ceaseless fruition without ever attaining the satisfaction which it seeks. This ardent love it is—this proud, disinterested love of what is true—which raises men to the abstract sources of truth, to draw their mother-knowledge thence. If Pascal had had nothing in view but some large gain, or even if he had been stimulated by the love of fame alone, I cannot conceive that he would ever have been able to rally all the powers of his mind, as he did, for the better discovery of the most hidden things of the Creator. When I see him, as it were, tear his soul from the midst of all the cares of life to devote it wholly to these researches, and, prematurely snapping the links which bind the frame to life, die of old age before forty, I stand amazed, and I perceive that no ordinary cause is at work to produce efforts so extra-ordinary.

The future will prove whether these passions, at once so rare and so productive, come into being and into growth as easily in the midst of democratic as in aristocratic communities. For myself, I confess that I am slow to believe it. In aristocratic society, the class which gives the tone to opinion, and has the supreme guidance of affairs, being permanently and hereditarily placed above the multitude, naturally conceives a lofty idea of itself and of man. It loves to invent for him noble pleasures, to carve out splendid objects for his ambition. Aristocracies often commit very tyrannical and very inhuman actions; but they rarely entertain grovelling thoughts; and they show a kind of haughty contempt of little pleasures, even whilst they indulge in them. The effect is greatly to raise the general pitch of society. In aristocratic ages vast ideas are commonly entertained of the dignity, the power, and the greatness of man. These opinions exert their influence on those who cultivate the sciences, as well as on the rest of the community. They facilitate the natural impulse of the mind to the highest regions of thought, and they naturally prepare it to conceive a sublime—nay, almost a divine—love of truth. Men of science at such periods are consequently carried away by theory; and it even happens that they frequently conceive an inconsiderate contempt for the practical part of learning. "Archimedes," says Plutarch, "was of so lofty a spirit, that he never condescended to write any treatise on the manner of constructing all these engines of offence and defence. And as he held this science of inventing and putting together engines, and all arts generally speaking which tended to any useful end in practice, to be vile, low, and mercenary, he spent his talents and his studious hours in writing of those things only whose beauty and subtilty had in them no admixture of necessity." Such is the aristocratic aim of science; in democratic nations it cannot be the same.

The greater part of the men who constitute these nations are extremely eager in the pursuit of actual and physical gratification. As they are always dissatisfied with the position which they occupy, and are always free to leave it, they think of nothing but the means of changing their fortune, or of increasing it. To minds thus predisposed, every new method which

leads by a shorter road to wealth, every machine which spares labor, every instrument which diminishes the cost of production, every discovery which facilitates pleasures or augments them, seems to be the grandest effort of the human intellect. It is chiefly from these motives that a democratic people addicts itself to scientific pursuits—that it understands, and that it respects them. In aristocratic ages, science is more particularly called upon to furnish gratification to the mind; in democracies, to the body. You may be sure that the more a nation is democratic, enlightened, and free, the greater will be the number of these interested promoters of scientific genius, and the more will discoveries immediately applicable to productive industry confer gain, fame, and even power on their authors. For in democracies the working class takes a part in public affairs; and public honors, as well as pecuniary remuneration, may be awarded to those who deserve them. In a community thus organized it may easily be conceived that the human mind may be led insensibly to the neglect of theory; and that it is urged, on the contrary, with unparalleled vehemence to the applications of science, or at least to that portion of theoretical science which is necessary to those who make such applications. In vain will some innate propensity raise the mind towards the loftier spheres of the intellect; interest draws it down to the middle zone. There it may develop all its energy and restless activity, there it may engender all its wonders. These very Americans, who have not discovered one of the general laws of mechanics, have introduced into navigation an engine which changes the aspect of the world.

Assuredly I do not content that the democratic nations of our time are destined to witness the extinction of the transcendent luminaries of man's intelligence, nor even that no new lights will ever start into existence. At the age at which the world has now arrived, and amongst so many cultivated nations, perpetually excited by the fever of productive industry, the bonds which connect the different parts of science together cannot fail to strike the observation; and the taste for practical science itself, if it be enlightened, ought to lead men not to neglect theory. In the midst of such numberless attempted applications of so many experiments, repeated every day, it is almost impossible that general laws should not frequently be brought to light; so that great discoveries would be frequent, though great inventors be rare. I believe, moreover, in the high calling of scientific minds. If the democratic principle does not, on the one hand, induce men to cultivate science for its own sake, on the other it enormously increases the number of those who do cultivate it. Nor is it credible that, from amongst so great a multitude no speculative genius should from time to time arise, inflamed by the love of truth alone. Such a one, we may be sure, would dive into the deepest mysteries of nature, whatever be the spirit of his country or his age. He requires no assistance in his course—enough that he be not checked in it.

All that I mean to say is this:—permanent inequality of conditions leads men to confine themselves to the arrogant and sterile research of abstract truths; whilst the social condition and the institutions of democracy prepare them to seek the immediate and useful practical results of the sciences. This tendency is natural and inevitable: it is curious to be acquainted with it, and it may be necessary to point it out. If those who are called upon to guide the nations of our time clearly discerned from afar off these new tendencies, which will soon be irresistible, they would understand that, possessing education and freedom, men living in democratic ages cannot fail to improve the industrial part of science; and that henceforward all the efforts of the constituted authorities ought to be directed to support the highest branches of learning, and to foster the nobler passion for science itself. In the present age the human mind must be coerced into theoretical studies; it runs of its own accord to practical applications; and, instead of perpetually referring it to the minute examination of secondary effects, it is well to divert it from them

sometimes, in order to raise it up to the contemplation of primary causes. Because the civilization of ancient Rome perished in consequence of the invasion of the barbarians, we are perhaps too apt to think that civilization cannot perish in any other manner. If the light by which we are guided is ever extinguished, it will dwindle by degrees, and expire of itself. By dint of close adherence to mere applications, principles would be lost sight of; and when the principles were wholly forgotten, the methods derived from them would be ill-pursued. New methods could no longer be invented, and men would continue to apply, without intelligence, and without art, scientific processes no longer understood.

When Europeans first arrived in China, three hundred years ago, they found that almost all the arts had reached a certain degree of perfection there; and they were surprised that a people which had attained this point should not have gone beyond it. At a later period they discovered some traces of the higher branches of science which were lost. The nation was absorbed in productive industry: the greater part of its scientific processes had been preserved, but science itself no longer existed there. This served to explain the strangely motionless state in which they found the minds of this people. The Chinese, in following the track of their forefathers, had forgotten the reasons by which the latter had been guided. They still used the formula, without asking for its meaning: they retained the instrument, but they no longer possessed the art of altering or renewing it. The Chinese, then, had lost the power of change; for them to improve was impossible. They were compelled, at all times and in all points, to imitate their predecessors, lest they should stray into utter darkness, by deviating for an instant from the path already laid down for them. The source of human knowledge was all but dry; and though the stream still ran on, it could neither swell its waters nor alter its channel. Notwithstanding this, China had subsisted peaceably for centuries. The invaders who had conquered the country assumed the manners of the inhabitants, and order prevailed there. A sort of physical prosperity was everywhere discernible: revolutions were rare, and war was, so to speak, unknown.

It is then a fallacy to flatter ourselves with the reflection that the barbarians are still far from us; for if there be some nations which allow civilization to be torn from their grasp, there are others who trample it themselves under their feet.

There you have it. As you often do with Tocqueville. Americans - explicitly and, more importantly, implicitly - do not at all find it necessary to examine ideas down to their bottom. The Socratic project of elenchus, of grilling the argument till it is shorn of all its nonsense and artifice and until you can see the real relation of idea to idea, is totally forgone -- the American does not even know that such an endeavor exists or that it is essential to thought.

From a solely intellectual perspective, uninformed by Divine Revelation and unconcerned with obedience to such revelation, gay sex may be perfectly moral. Indeed, there may be no such thing as morality. Yet each of those propositions have radical effects: these propositions reverberate throughout the space-time continuum of ideas: they have consequences. The first proposition, if really believed, fundamentally alters the entire idea of chastity: it totally throws into question the entire concept that sexual energies, passions, and actions must be channeled in some constricted, definite way: that they exist for a greater purpose: the Will of

God, the exaltation of man and woman as man and woman, and as one flesh, and for the perpetuation of the human species in the face of death.

How do you jam same-love into that elegant theoretical exposition?

Macklemore and Ryan Lewis' little ditty goes, in part, thus:

It's human rights for everybody
There is no difference
Live on! And be yourself!
When I was in church, they taught me something else
If you preach hate at the service Those words aren't anointed
And that Holy Water, that you soak in is then poisoned
When everyone else is more comfortable remaining voiceless
Rather than fighting for humans, that have had their rights stolen
I might not be the same But that's not important
No freedom 'til we're equal
Damn right I support it

Oh my! Pardon me, sir, I do thusly repent of my hateful bigotry. Now, come, let us together burn libraries of Christian philosophy and dance in the ashes.

(That was sarcasm.)

It's the triumph of emotion over reason.

And yet.....it *never* works the other way. I'm supposed to listen to "Same Love", watch *Brokeback Mountain*, and listen to the heartbreaking story of the murder of Matthew Shepard, and I'm supposed to just well with tears and forsake my blind, hateful bigotry. I am supposed to throw aside all logic, all dogma, all doctrine, all Scripture, all Tradition, all authority, the whole Magisterium of the Church, and faith itself and sing and dance about love is love is love is love.

But no one ever expects that if I corral Richard Dawkins, Bill Maher, and Dan Savage into watching *The Passion of the Christ*, going to the Tridentine Mass, smelling the rich fragrances of incense, listening to *Ave Maria*, praying the Rosary and engaging in communal contemplative prayer that they will throw aside all their intellectual conceptions and long-maintained beliefs and give their lives to Christ Jesus.

Why is that?

My heart is supposed to be so inflamed with pity and compassion for gays and lesbians that it sets my mind on fire and burns my reason to ashes.

Why don't atheists respond similarly to similar emotional pleas? Why, rather, do atheists make a languid pastime at sneering at such emotional pitches?

The murder of Matthew Shepard (lamentable as it was) is supposed to melt my brain and make me support “marriage equality” (a clever but deceptive little phrase).

Yet the murder of Jesus of Nazareth just can't seem to melt Dan Savage's brain into repentance and the obedience of faith, to trust in Christ and to endure in fidelity to the apostolic authority of the Flesh of Christ, the Church.

Now, naturally, the matter of what is easy and what is hard comes into play.

For it is far easier to simply give in to all our passions, to listen to each one, to cultivate each hunger, and meticulously go about gratifying each inflamed desire.

At least, it is easier in *this* life -- in the next life, it is *damn* well unbearable.

And it is far harder to deny our lusts, to constrain our freedom, to develop discipline and self-control, to be unhappy about lost pleasures and loneliness in this moment so that we can attain, over time and in the end, a far greater happiness, in steadiness and fortitude and grace and perseverance and, ultimately, salvation.

Yet, though the road may be long and hard, the entrance into the destination is sweet, and all the sweeter for the journey.

That is why Jesus says:

Enter through the narrow gate; for the gate is wide and the road broad that leads to destruction, and those who enter through it are many. How narrow the gate and constricted the road that leads to life. And those who find it are few.

(Matthew 7:13-14)

Christianity offers a hard truth, while the Secularists offer an easy lie.

But no matter how hard the truth -- if it is true -- it is better to accept it.

And no matter how easy the lie -- if it is a lie -- you will always get hurt....burned.

For a society that can't think -- can't make distinctions and can't think to the bottom of any idea -- and whose whole existence is geared towards the easy way, the comfortable life and the gratified pleasure, *of course* the easy way of sexual profligacy will appear as the obvious and inevitable truth.

And *of course*, any idea that counsels abstinence, self-denial, and even misery in this life, for the sake of another life -- the true life -- will seem like madness, folly, and the stifled constipation of a deluded intellect.

I acknowledge that homosexuals can face a difficult life.

First, however, as we have covered, we have to wonder to what extent such homosexuals are really bisexual, at least to some meaningful extent, and could, if they chose, find sufficient sexual gratification in a marriage (a heterosexual marriage -- a real marriage).

Only the dogma of gratification preaches that any lost pleasure is an absolute lost good.

As for the affection between men and men and women and women -- the Church, to my knowledge, never forbids affection -- it only forbids acts.

For those who are truly homosexual such that intercourse with the opposite sex is totally unsatisfying, totally without any possibility of gratification, it is difficult.

There's no bones about that.

But just because it is difficult does not mean that it is impossible, and does not mean that it is not the Will of God. And we can reflect - the greater the obstacle, the greater the glory.

Has it ever occurred to some true, complete gays and lesbians that the call to chastity - to celibacy - might be a call to a radical grace, to a life of uninhibited love for the Church and the world, and to a preminent rank among the saints in Heaven?

And we might also reflect that such great saints never run in a straight, easy line to the goal, to the crown. They fall and suffer, as Christ fell and suffered on the Via Dolorosa - the Way of Sorrows, the Way of Grief, the Way of Pain -- the Way of the Cross. Yet, it is the final perseverance of the saint that attains salvation -- the Father does not retain the failures and missteps that marked his or her way to final perseverance.

It would be a mistake to move on without noting that our atomistic, isolated, capitalistic, anti-social society makes it much more difficult for those with such difficulties to attain the affection, connection, communion, meaning, sense of purpose, and transcendence necessary to make traveling such difficult roads bearable, livable, and eventually gracious - in the full sense of that word.

Behold from a high vista our "society" of atomized houses and cars -- little pods that race through a social desert -- of corporations that lash the human person to the endless grinding of the economic crankshaft, that reduce the human person to nothing more than a mechanism, a resource, a glug of motor oil to be set ablaze in the great Engine of Capital Accumulation. Our inane entertainment-industrial complex does the human person struggling mightily against the will of the flesh no favors either. After having your humanity abused and humiliated at work,

you can enjoy the vapid drolleries emanating like toxic ooze from every screen, the screen in your pocket, on your desk, and in the center of your living room. With such an endless parade of abuse, humiliation, either outright financial insecurity or the psychological insecurity of maintaining your fragile corporate rank, carnival barking, hypnotic lights, loud screeching sounds, and an effervescent anomie that promises Paradise while delivering the agonies of Purgatory, with an ubiquitous ennui so concentrated, so palpable, that it can rip the enamel right off your teeth....how can we realistically expect people to fight such a yelping, fervent cry for gratification, rising from the very hollows of one's own flesh?

Not without a fleet, an army, of saints to lend a helping hand and a tender embrace, a ready ear and a shoulder to cry on -- that of the Friend that is Christ and the Mother that is the Church.

And how is Holy Mother Church doing in discharging such a solemn and awesome duty?
Lousy.

That is too charitable.
Piss poor pathetic is nearer the truth.

First of all, what Church? That ecclesiastical drive-through that dispenses the Host of the Eucharist like Big Macs at a rest stop?

That gas station at 2 in the morning, with one attendant and nothing but tumbleweeds wheeling in every direction through the blank darkness?

Where is the People of God, the Church of Christ, the Communion of the Baptized?

At work.

At school.

In their car.

Watching pornography.

Watching Netflix.

Squirreled away in their own universe, Invasion of the Body Snatchers-style, with the glowing ministrations of their True God, their phone.

How can we expect people to endure misery for the sake of the Kingdom, when the Church, the Kingdom implicit in the world (yet not fully realized), is so uninspiring, so insipid, so banal, so skeletal, so ethereal --- how can we expect real people to suffer real pain, real longing, real loneliness for the *Church that wasn't there?*

And the hierarchy of the Church isn't doing the Church any favors.

The liberals are all too happy to excuse and obscure the seriousness of sexual sin, including sodomy, in their intrepid efforts to construct a Brave New Church, free from all superstition and backwardness....such as the superstition of the supernatural and the backwardness of authentic doctrine.

And yet the conservatives? Score one for doctrinal purity. Then score negative a million in sanctimonious, screeching pieties. I draw in broad terms, and there are some who hit the mark (I hope I am one of them) -- but too many of the people I have met and the sources I have encountered have this sneering, priggish, smug condescension for those lesser mortals -- the doctrinally errant.

What gay or lesbian, save someone who decided to channel their masochism in a sacramental direction, could possibly be won over by the Vengeance League United of Straight, Rich White Men who have a bone to pick with Modernity, the Femi-Nazis, the Libtards, the Brown Skins, who live in a Conspiracy Theory echo chamber, and whose one real concern of life is why their wife, their mistress, their daughter, and Modern Woman doesn't give them - a real man among men - the respect they deserve. Whatever the validity or invalidity of any of these concerns, this whole Conservative Psycho-Drama means nothing -- except negatively -- to real gays and lesbians who might be willing to engage in self-denial for Christ.

You're Not Helping

<https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=dNPrlVXeuEA>

Too many in the conservative wing of the Church, especially Protestants, go full-on Iran and claim that there is no such thing as homosexuality in the first place. That it really is all a mere choice. That some pseudo-science and whooping prayer can *whoosh* that iniquity away, right away.

Now, I'm not a scientist, but, probably, if many millions of people have felt the need to spend their lives building a movement (whatever its ultimate character) in support of something....it just might maybe possibly be a tad deeply rooted.....just a thought.

That is why the parallel to masturbation for a single person is so apt. A gay or lesbian might feel physically attached to their homosexuality. Well, I am attached to my penis. My penis and I are old friends. We even have the same birthday.

But that doesn't make it all right to pleasure myself when no one else will do the honors.

The Catholic doctrine -- deeply rooted in two millennia of meditation and experience -- is that suffering - *misery* - can be redemptive. The Catholic Mind knows that temporal pains can be the price of eternal ecstasy.

The ardent fornicator is reveling in a passing shadow of dying pleasures, and, by that fact, forsaking the Great Hedonistic Exuberance in the Hereafter. And the fornicator does so because he or she does not *trust* God -- does not trust that God exists and does not trust that God will, in His love for us, raise those who trust in Him to new and everlasting Life.

And this is really what this is all about. Is there a World to Come? Is the true life the life after death?

Because, if there is no afterlife, then we Christians are the most pitiable of all men and women. (1 Corinthians 15:19.) If by some kind of reverse revelation I were to be truly assured that there was no God and no life after death, I would revel in every sexual act that didn't hurt another person, make someone pregnant, or give me a disease.

Yet, it is the chain of logic that shows that such a life is, *even in this life*, undesirable and retrograde that helps assure me that we human beings are not mere wisps of matter, come into being and a moment later dispersed forever out of being. Rather, the very weight of *moral* behavior -- the gravity of human acts in a moral continuum -- convinces me quite the opposite. The weight, the gravity, of human acts convinces me that we human beings are *essences*, forms that have their own existence above and aside from mere matter. And if those forms are the mere slaves of matter, the mere epiphenomena of matter - but a froth of form upon the great ocean of matter.....then what imbues those acts with *moral* weight?

Is not the *moral* sense itself the indicator light that God exists? Whatever doctrine of relativism that the great swirl of matter in this sundered, broken material Cosmos may counsel, does not the counsel of the inner spirit - the moral conscience - whisper that there is more to Reality than the shattered functionings of this shadow realm? Does not the conscience within -- that *knows* that there is Right and Wrong, Good and Evil -- illuminate the mind with the whole marvelous splendor of the Light that is God?

Experiments may show a world of nothing but atoms and void. But does not the conscience reveal a world of Spirit and truth?

If our experimental science and the experience of our inner life reveal two *different* realities: what does that tell us?

It tells us that we are not truly *of this* world.

It tells us that the world itself is the problem. That this world is deranged from God, from God's Will, and His Grace.

That is why Jesus teaches us to pray Thy Kingdom Come, thy Will be done, on earth as it is in Heaven.

If God's Kingdom was already in this world, reigning over this world -- if this world already obeyed God's will (not just the people *in* the world, but the world itself), if earth was already subsumed by the Will of Heaven and of Heaven's God -- then why would Jesus command us to pray for something that was already present among us?

Now, the order in this world is certainly the remnant of the world that God created before the Fall. So, certainly, from the order in this world, we can reason to a Creator. But there is also chaos -- natural chaos and moral chaos, in the relations of matter (quantum mechanics does, in fact, testify to this), in each other and in our own flesh. That natural and moral chaos is the Fall -- it is the Fall in motion, through time. That chaos is not from God. It is evil. It is the abyss over which Satan, that cast out fallen angel, the most powerful of the created spirits, holds dominion.

Genesis 1:1-2 states, “In the beginning, when God created the heavens and the earth, the earth was a formless wasteland, and darkness covered the abyss, while a mighty wind swept over the waters.”

God created the world, *out* of the formlessness, and made it perfectly. And God made Adam the Lord of the earth. When Adam sinned, he fell. Fallen from God’s grace, that over which Adam was Lord fell from God’s grace. God does not revoke the formal character of His creatures or His creation. Only God’s creatures *turn* away from God’s Will and thus forfeit God’s grace, thus darkening and perverting their forms, from a state of grace to a state of damnation. When Samael (what after the Fall became Lucifer/Satan/the Devil) fell, God did not revoke his angelic nature. His angelic nature lost the light of God’s Light, and he went from being the most blessed of creatures to the most accursed: from a holy angel to an infernal demon. Likewise, when Adam fell, God did not revoke Adam’s Lordship over the earth. Rather, when Adam fell to sin, and became a slave to Satan, Adam’s Lordship became enslaved to Satan, and, hence, Satan became the Ruler of the world (John 12:31). Only Christ’s recreation of human nature in Himself, with the substitution of Adam as Lord of the earth with Christ as Lord of Heaven *and* earth, restored the earth to the Kingdom of the Father. As Christ’s Lordship of the earth will only be fulfilled when the Gospel is preached to all nations, the earth remains in a state of passing chaos, in labor pains, groaning for the new birth of the Reign of Christ to come into being.

Without God’s grace, after Adam’s sin, the perfect order with which God imbued the world was lost, and the perfect natural order that God created was shattered into total chaos. Only the Christ, whose Power reverberates through time, past, present, and future, in a glorious temporal causality loop, draws the shattered shards back to Himself, and through Himself, back to God, back to God’s Power and Grace, and, ultimately, back to a fully ordered, totally perfect earth.

If the Christian account of reality is correct, then grace, virtue, sin, and vice are top priorities, and Scripture should be meticulously observed and revered.

If the Epicurean account of reality (only atoms and void, no essences, no forms, no souls) is true, then such divine and moral categories are illusions. Delusions of a finite mind incapable of perceiving the true nature of reality, or unwilling to do so.

We might say that the struggle is between this world and our conscience. But that is not quite accurate: it is downright misleading. For our conscience is merely our window through which we view the Light that is God. If our consciences are besotted by sin, they will no longer be able to view the Light.

That is why Jesus says:

The lamp of the body is the eye. If your eye is sound, your whole body will be filled with light; but if your eye is bad, your whole body will be in darkness. **And if the light in you is darkness, how great will the darkness be.**

(Matthew 7:22-23)

The sinner's conscience can never be the standard by which we judge the Light. For the sinner's conscience - his or her spiritual sight - is blinded by sin. For a sinner to make moral judgments, and to claim that they are superior to a righteous person's moral judgments, is the same as for a blind man, blind from birth, to claim that he knows more about the visual world than a sighted man.

Of course, this claim depends on the reality of God and the truth that this world is deranged from God by sin.

What I call, correctly, a sinner will scream, "I am no sinner, you are a fanatic!"

So, we see more clearly, the battle for the human mind is between the Way of the World and the Way of Christ.

As I hope is evident if you read the Bible cover to cover, and also this book cover to cover, the Father of Jesus Christ is a concrete, cognizable, coherent Person -- whether you consider him the Actor that created the world or a character in an anthology of Jewish fairy tales, He is a coherent Person with a clear nature, worldview and agenda.

Like God, God's agenda and worldview - His Kingdom - is multi-dimensional. You cannot boil down infinite reality to a catchphrase. But for purposes of this discussion, one key aspect of the Kingdom is that this life is not the true life, and that many things that serve to bring happiness in this life cause eternal misery in eternity and the forfeiture of true and eternal happiness.

This world -- this Secularist Leninist world -- rejects that -- mocks it and rages at it.

The Secularist Leninism that has become the essential philosophy of the Modern World *demand*s that all happiness be achievable in *this* life. If the happiness in this life can be continued and augmented in an afterlife, super.

But what *really* matters, say the Secularist Leninists, is the here and now: to sacrifice happiness in the here and now for the hereafter is delusional nonsense.

I think that is especially why Protestants have such an ill handle on the gay.

Protestantism can all too easily veer off course into a severe worldliness. Those Protestants who stick diligently to their Bibles, not just to thump them but to actually read them and study them and absorb them, know quite clearly that this world is not the standard of reality. But the de-sacramentalization of Protestant worship and the Protestant Mind tends to divorce the Sacred, God, from His action in the world. All too quickly the world becomes either purely the

subject of God's wrath or, alternatively, a kind of neutral holding pen for believers, who, upon death, will be let into the Amusement Park of John 3:16.

The focus on "faith alone" as the whole substance of the Christian Faith produces a failure to understand or at all appreciate *sanctification*. The world is not simply the line outside of God's Seven Flags Great Adventure. And the world is not simply a Hellscape from which, fingers crossed, any day now, we will be raptured to safety, as if God were a helicopter landing in Saigon in 1975.

The world is broken, but Christ, through His Church, His Flesh, is, through time, drawing all men and women to Himself, and thereby sanctifying the world in holiness.

Whether the elect are raptured away in the very last days so that the unspeakable persecutions of the Anti-Christ do not damn them is an open question.

But it has nothing to do with the nature of Christ's salvation of the world, as such and in general, or how we Christians who are not living in the very last days (not right this moment anyway) should live in the world.

We should *not* live like the Secularists: eat, drink, and be merry, do what thou wilt, give no heed to God, for tomorrow we die and disperse into oblivion.

But we should be *in* the world, though not *of* the world. Too much of Protestantism -- especially Protestantism that isn't truly deeply rooted in a serious textual study of Scripture -- *doesn't take the world seriously*.

Either the world becomes thoroughly depraved or utterly normal. Those who await the helicopter think it completely depraved. Those who stand in line outside the Amusement Park think it is normal, morally neutral.

If everything is just awful and wicked, then it becomes easy to browbeat a sinner into "just getting with the program". If the world is a nightmare, and Christ is a dream, then why can't these gays and lesbians, through having a born-again experience in Christ, wake up to the dream and then magically be freed from all homosexual desires? And if the world is just a long line outside the ticket booth, then the world is not broken and in need of healing, it is essentially of the same character as Heaven. And if that is so, you can very easily begin to treat all worldly phenomena, like homosexual desires, as the work and will of God.

That sentiment gives rise to the Rob Bell way of "Hey Bro, you don't need the Gospel, all you need is *love!*"

Neat.

More of the heretic Rob Bell:

GRAND RAPIDS, MI - Rob Bell and his wife, Kristen, talked about marriage during a Valentine's weekend episode of Oprah Winfrey's "Super Soul Sunday" television show.

The former Mars Hill Bible Church pastor made it clear that his advice applies also to gay marriage.

Here's an excerpt from the show that aired Sunday, Feb. 15.

"One of the oldest aches in the bones of humanity is loneliness," Rob Bell said. "Loneliness is not good for the world. Whoever you are, gay or straight, it is totally normal, natural and healthy to want someone to go through life with. It's central to our humanity. We want someone to go on the journey with."

That statement prompted a question from Oprah: "When is the church going to get that?"

"We're moments away," Rob Bell said. "I think culture is already there and the church will continue to be even more irrelevant when it quotes letters from 2,000 years ago as their best defense, when you have in front of you flesh-and-blood people who are your brothers and sisters and aunts and uncles and co-workers and neighbors and they love each other and just want to go through life with someone."

Said Kristen Bell: "There are churches who are moving forward and there are churches who are almost regressing and making it more of a battle."

http://www.mlive.com/living/grand-rapids/index.ssf/2015/02/rob_bell_on_gay_marriage_were.html

Protestants, you need a Pope to excommunicate people like Rob Bell.

Rob Bell is what the Papacy is *for*. Not wanting the Papacy is like not wanting the Marines because you don't want the Marines to police your neighborhood. The Marines aren't for neighborhood policing, and the Papacy isn't for minute governance of the churches. The Marines and the Papacy are for dealing with the real threats.

Of course, if the Marines declared martial law and then just ruled arrogantly for centuries, then some anti-Marine bias would be understandable.

<https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=gjLOayFi5-w>

Let me sum up Rob Bell's theological reasoning: Loneliness bad, ipso facto sodomy good.

Kristen, those churches that are "moving forward" are the vanguard of the Anti-Christ, and those churches that are "regressing" and "making it more of a battle" make up the True Church that the Anti-Christ will persecute.

There are intellectual arguments that can be made for a more relaxed reading of Scriptural prohibitions of sodomy. I think that they are heterodox at best and actually wrong, and since wrong, their promulgation imperils souls -- and there is no greater moral wrong than leading someone off a cliff to Hell.

"Whoever causes one of these little ones who believe in me to sin, it would be better for him to have a great millstone hung around his neck and to be drowned in the depths of the sea.

Woe to the world because of things that cause sin! Such things must come, but woe to the one through whom they come!

If your hand or foot causes you to sin, cut it off and throw it away. It is better for you to enter into life maimed or crippled than with two hands or two feet to be thrown into eternal fire.

And if your eye causes you to sin, tear it out and throw it away. It is better for you to enter into life with one eye than with two eyes to be thrown into fiery Gehenna.

(Matthew 18:6-9)

Read more: <https://www.thegospelcoalition.org/reviews/the-zimzum-of-love/>

Now, of course, Rob Bell should have the *legal* right to say whatever he wants. For whenever the state or the mob or any extra-state group decide to censor the freedom of enquiry, how will we ever really discover the truth? How will the truth be built up so that it itself has the force of truth if we do not expose the truth to falsehood? As Benjamin Franklin said, we should be grateful to our critics, "Critics are our friends, they show us our faults." A society that seeks

to prohibit moral wrongs that have neither the force of violence nor commercial fraud will quickly become a totalitarian nightmare of orgiastic violence and cruelty (c.f. ISIS).

Pornography is a great moral wrong, and lust is the great route into Hellfire, but a state committed to surveillance of all pornography-watchers and dedicated to knocking down the doors of such moral offenders and dragging them away will not subtract the vice of pornography. It will merely add the nightmare of tyranny.

While there are intellectual arguments for a more relaxed reading (even though I think they are wrong), *his* statements (they are not arguments) are very much not those arguments.

Thomas Aquinas labored to an early death to produce a synthesis of Christian theology and Aristotelianism.

Rob Bell offers us the wisdom of a Hallmark greeting card. Instead of tight Scholastic argumentation, his “justification” for scrapping two millennia of constant doctrine is bad poetry and sentimentality. Bell abandons the basics of reasoning. His “argument” that loneliness is bad and that you are probably related to or have interacted with someone who is lonely, therefore whatever the lonely person decides to do is moral, would also legitimate polyamory, the civil institution of polyamorous “marriage”, certainly masturbation, pornography, all fornication ever, and even prostitution.

A life partner you say? Have all the life partners you want. And the absence of life partnerships - among intimates and friends - has more to do with the deep social and economic structures of everyday life (read: Capitalism).

But why does that life partner have to be your spouse? Why do you have to have sex with that life partner? Why *must* the need for a life partner be tied to sexual intercourse?

Is it *better* for that life partner to be your sexual partner? Of course.

But you can't always get what you want, but if you try sometimes, you get what you need.

Now, if there is no God, and He has no claims and has made no claims on our behavior, then do whatever you want.

But if there is a God, who has very deliberately promulgated a structure for human behavior, then you had better attend - and attend very closely - to what *He* says you should do. And you should tremble when you dare to obscure His truth, especially when you do it with the wisdom of a fortune cookie.⁶⁰

And if that God has consistently stated that sodomy is a sin, that men are not to have sex with men and women are not to have sex with women, and that the communion of male flesh with female flesh is not only privileged by God's idea of sexuality, but is the whole purpose of human sexuality, then you might figure out some workarounds.

Rather than adjusting God's word, you might adjust your own life and behavior.

⁶⁰ RIP Nino Scalia

The theory that emotional desires and emotional comforts and emotional pleasures ipso facto justify the actions that deliver such emotional gratification is totally inconsistent with the Christian ethos.

If “she keeps me warm” justifies homosexual sexual relationships, then it also justifies adultery. Imagine that your life partner - a person that you think you simply cannot do without - is married to another person. Does that justify cheating? Does that justify divorce? In our Secularist culture, absolutely: Love wins. “Love” (narrowly conceived) must always win, and the Will of God be damned. The short-term, local emotional attachment must always trump the long-term, global moral order.

But what are the rules then? Your life partner is married to another person. You cheat with said life partner. Do you keep it secret? Is *that* immoral? Our culture is very self-righteous about marital adultery -- it is *dishonest*. And so it is. But let us say that said life partner has an emotional attachment to his wife or her husband as well as to you.

Well then, the answer is clear: polyamory! Well, what if the potential third doesn't want to be a threesome? What if both cheaters knew that the cheated-upon would not merrily embrace polyamory, but simply walk out. Then that would leave the married cheater sad.

So, now we have honesty set against emotional attachment.

Our culture, the embers of Christian civilization not quite blown out yet, gets on what is left of its high horse and yells, “CHEATER! Adultery!”

Why are you so amorphobic?

Why do you hate love, you bigot? You fanatic? Love is Love is Love is Love.

Why in cheating must emotional attachment be defeated by morality? Why must the married cheater *choose* between either the emotional anguish of losing the love and sex of his or her adulterous lover **or** the emotional anguish of losing the love and sex of his or her marriage partner?

Honesty, you say.

Why is honesty an absolute value?

If the world is atoms and void, with no God and no inherent moral order, what claim can *honesty!* possibly have on my behavior?

Honesty be damned, along with chastity, piety, reverence, and holiness.

Now, you say, what of the emotional pain that discovery would cause to the cheated-upon?

What of the cheater's emotional pain at having to *choose*? The cheater, if he forsakes his lover or his spouse, will *certainly* be emotionally anguished.

The cheated-upon only *may* be emotionally anguished *if* he or she discovers the adultery.

Truth matters. Logic matters. Theory matters.

The *only* thing that holds the Homosexualist theory in suspension and *limits* it to two people of either sex is fiat. Blank fiat. There are no inherent theoretical bounds that keep it contained to same-sex exclusive two-person relationships. It is a social-philosophical time bomb planted in the heart of our social fabric.

As it explodes, it will replicate Pandora's Box, letting every moral evil fly out into the world in triumph.

Hence, the necessity of adjusting *your* physical and emotional "needs" (the only fundamental needs are air to breathe, water to drink, and food to eat) and desires to *God's* revealed moral order.

It is entirely possible to have a deep emotional bond with someone that you do not have sex with. For your sexual needs, simply marry someone from the opposite sex.

Straight prisoners in our lovely prisons are "gay for the stay".

If the world is a prison -- something that separates us from God, who is the only Truth and Happiness, and the world is something we must endure to the end in reparation to God -- then gays and lesbians might consider being "straight for the stay".

It is the desire to be totally fulfilled in this world -- to treat this world as the final and total truth of human existence -- that prompts, promotes and necessitates such frantic, illogical, and hyperbolic attacks on sound doctrine and the plain sense of Scripture.

Rob Bell is like the photo negative of truth -- what he thinks is always a good indicator of what is wrong. Or at least incomplete (hence, wrong). Look at how Bell thinks: Culture first, Church second. The Church has to race *up* to the culture.

Does that sound like the Church of Jesus Christ? The Church of St. Peter and St. Paul? The Church of St. Augustine and St. Thomas Aquinas? The Church of St. Robert Bellarmine and John Calvin? Of Martin Luther? Of Pope Saint Pius X?

It doesn't sound like any age of the True Church that I am aware of.

And what standard do we use to judge the Church?

Relevance.

Relevance to God?

Of course not.

Relevance *to the culture*.

And what evidence do we use to form our doctrine?

Well, first, Bell has no use for doctrine. Bell apparently has no use for Scripture either.

But whatever Bell would call his “doctrine” (good vibes?), look at what *he* thinks is important evidence. The Sacred Scripture of an inspired author like the colossus of evangelism, St. Paul, to whom Christians have believed for two millennia was entrusted with the *precise* words of God’s Word? No: it is the fact that you know people, and some of those people are gay.

I mean, give it up, for G-d’s sake. Just become Richard Dawkins or Dan Savage and be done with it, but this slow-moving spontaneous combustion of what (I guess) was a Christian is just painful to watch.

If you want to work *within* the game (not meant flippantly but in terms of a logical system) -- within the structure of Christian belief -- then I’ll take you seriously, but this is just laziness.....and laziness that has apparently bred a contempt for Scripture itself.

A “Christian” who calls the Letters of St. Paul merely “letters from 2,000 years ago” is no longer a Christian. I’m not sure what he is, nor do I much care. Maybe the founder of a new religion: Bellism.

But you can count me out.

Cake
Comfort Eagle

<https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=RcoYfsRFX9s>

It would be as if I went to Richard Dawkins and said, “But Richard, people don’t like the idea of death being oblivion, religion gives comfort to people, and people like comfort: Don’t you want people to be comfortable? Why are you harshing my mellow?”

This obsession with *relevance* -- Am I relevant? Is it relevant? How are the ratings? How are the sales? -- is the province of the entertainer, not the pastor.

The proper attitude of a Christian is this: If everyone else in the world turns into a Satanic Atheist akin to the vampires out of *I Am Legend*, and I alone am left to worship Christ, and, as the Last Christian, I have to declare myself Pope, give myself holy orders, and celebrate the Mass alone in a fallout shelter, then that is what I shall do: and relevance be *damned*.

Because, in fact, the Church is *entirely* about relevance.

But relevance to God, and to God alone.

The Christian should never worry about relevance to the culture. The Christian should only ever worry about God, and God's truth, and the search for God's truth. If God is, then the Christian can and must *trust* that his or her simple devotion to the truth serves God's purposes. If God does not exist, then let the Church collapse, let it be irrelevant, for it would then be a two thousand-year-old mistake.

I know that it sounds like I am an atheist at times. I am not. But I do appreciate clear thinking. And I appreciate intellectual honesty. Biblical, Orthodox, Catholic Christianity is a product of clear thinking. Epicurean Atheism is a product of clear thinking (although the spiritual attitude of Nietzschean Atheism, with its bizarre, unfounded arrogance, is not a product of clear thinking).

Bellism is gush, it is an epileptic seizure of one's capacity for reasoning. It is an ornament, a bauble. And religions make poor ornaments.

The real struggle -- the final battle -- is between God and Satan. It is over who will control the world: God or Satan.

Shall the world remain as it is, in its present character and nature, under the dominion of Satan? Or, rather, shall God's Kingdom be instituted through the fulfillment of the Church, through the preaching of the Gospel to all nations? (In peace and non-violence.)

That struggle pits the Sacred against the World, for the world as it is is not sacred, but divorced from the fullness of God's grace.

It is between the sanctum and the saeculum.

Between the Holiness of God and the unholiness of all that is disobedient to God.

The Sanctum of Reality is God, and the Church is God's Presence in the world, so it is the Presence of the Sanctum in the world.

The saeculum, in its divorce from God, has all sorts of ideas, needs, passions, desires, theories, beefs, complaints, worldviews, ways, philosophies, arts, cultures, states, laws, books, institutions, establishments, and a proliferation of sensibilities.

The Sanctum is One. And the Church -- and the Church alone -- is the authentic and total Presence of that One.

So long as the saeculum stays out of the Sanctum's way, Christians can simply pity those poor souls who damn themselves and try our best to preach the saving power of the Gospel.

But when the saeculum determines to control the Church, derange the Church, set itself up over the Church, and even destroy the Church: to forbid the preaching of the Gospel and to call the preaching of the Gospel a mark of social unacceptability: to persecute the Church: then the saeculum has declared war on the Church.

The World has said *The World against the Church*.

So then the Church must respond:

The Church against the World.

And, in that, the Secularist Leninists and the Islamists actually share common ground: because *both* fight for *this* world. Because both believe this world is the true world. They have their differences about who should have sex with who, but in terms of “Is this world, in its structure and dynamics, the world as it should be?” they’re both on the same page.

Funny then how the Islamists and the Secularist Leninists get along so well.

In truth, the Church from the moment of Christ’s Crucifixion has been against the world. And it has had to fight in faith through the centuries. Its great rival was the Roman Empire. Then the Empire, by the grace of God, imploded.

But the Church’s very success poisoned it. For instead of being clearly set *against* the world, the Church became the world -- incestuously cavorting with the state, the laws, and being itself the dominant culture.

And indeed, the Church is meant to be preeminent in the world -- it is meant to conquer the world as Christ conquered sin and death -- not to conquer it through violence, but in peace and love and truth.

But even a Christian civilization must be *in* the world, without being *of* the world.

And the medieval Church became of the world.

Now, the Protestant churches were born of the world. Calvin ruled Geneva. Henry VIII was King of England. Martin Luther was a successful cooperater with German princes.

That does not, of itself, make them evil. But, by that token, the Pope ruling territory would not make him evil either.

But it does indicate that the Church for many centuries - for millennia - has existed without a force like the Roman Empire -- a force that stood *against* the Church, stood against everything it believed in and was about. It has not had a mighty persecutor of global, irresistible proportions. The Islamic Empire was an external threat, beaten back. Napoleon was a bout of pneumonia soon enough expelled. The Russian Revolution, though tragic, and its product, the Soviet Union, though sinister, did not have global reach against the Whole Church in the way that the Roman Empire did.

The Secularist Leninist Imperium that is growing within America and Europe has the potential to be a New Roman Empire.

A new and fundamentally anti-Christian, atheistical ideology is rising like out of a horror movie, animating the culture, the society, the state, and the laws into fundamentally anti-Christian actions and sentiments. If the Secularist Leninist Imperium hates the Church, how long before it persecutes the Church?

So, I don't think that what we have seen in the culture these past years is some mass awakening of conscience. Far from it.

It is the final collapse of the old Christian civilization, into the pit of Satanic delusion and monstrosity, which had long been prepared by the Modern Project of Machiavelli, Bacon, and Hobbes, and had been carried out by the greeds and lusts and power-seeking of millions who fell for their Siren call: self-deification and the conquest of happiness in this life.

It is the reconstitution of the pagan Roman Empire, the vehicle of the Anti-Christ in the Great Tribulation to come.

I should also note that the whole apparatus of "identity" applied within the context of gay and lesbian people is fundamentally flawed and critically misleading. The Secularist Leninists have successfully gotten the mass culture to buy that "being gay" is the same as "being black" or "being Latino" or "being a woman". They're all equally boxes of identity that are sacred and cannot be challenged.

But to embrace anti-racism and to advocate for the rights of African-Americans to equality in every regard is very different from gay rights.

Interracial marriage, desegregation, integration, affirmative action, the Civil Rights Act, the Voting Rights Act, even critical race theory or even the most radical Black Power movements -- *none* of them are essentially inconsistent with genuine and sound Christian doctrine and theology.

That does not mean that I endorse every Black radical group's beliefs, but, they do not threaten the core matrix of Christian belief (except when they make religious claims like the Nation of Islam).

But the Homosexualist version of the Gay Rights Movement today *very much does* threaten the basic fabric of Christian belief.

Christian ideas about sex are intrinsically woven into Christian ideas about the nature of the human flesh and marriage, and the nature of sin, that is, what is and isn't the Will of God for human nature and human life. (Not to mention that the continuity of basic doctrine itself goes directly to the authority and truth of Scripture and millennia-old tradition, including the ecclesiastical authority and validity of the institutional Church.)

Gay Rights has become so radical that it makes common cause with the most radical postmodernists, relativists, and anti-foundationalists in their quest for their “equality”.

In short, Christianity is founded upon essentialism. Christianity requires that reality be more than simply atoms and void and that human concepts be more than the mere epiphenomena - froth - of atoms swirling in a void. There must be essences: Spirit, soul, perception, principle, truth.

There are a number of ways down from essentialism. Nominalism is one of them. That is the belief that there are no universals that link individuals together into coherent wholes. William of Ockham, basically, claimed that God, who was beyond all such concepts, directly managed reality without such principles. It is a dangerous path to tread.

For it all too easily leads to materialism: the belief that not only are universals unreal, but that the only individuals are atoms, and that the ordinary individuals of you, me, a bed, a piece of bread, and a tree are mere epiphenomena: somehow not really real.

Materialism necessarily leads to moral nihilism. Under materialism, morality has no basis, other than one’s opinion. And what serves as the basis of one’s opinion? Nothing. Good vibes. But what determines whether those vibes are really good vibes, rather than bad vibes masquerading as good vibes? Nothing.

Such moral nihilism is incompatible with essentialism, of which moral essentialism is a critical part.

The Gay Rights Movement, as an entity, does not bother itself with even attempting to accommodate *itself* to the moral essentialism that is the bedrock of Christianity. Rather, with the cynicism of corporate marketing, it attempts to ride roughshod over such considerations -- to the extent that they consider them at all. *All* the Gay Rights Movement cares about is the exaltation of gay sex and gay love -- Christianity be damned. The soundness of Christian doctrine? Who cares? The endurance of the Church? Tough shit. The Will of God? They worship a Gay God who apparently is wildly inconsistent to the point of incoherence. The rights of conscience of Christians? Get with the program, bitch, you fucking bigot.

And any attempts to work within Christianity fast deteriorate into the meaningless, and soon Anti-Christian, nonsense of Rob Bell.

This is a tough dilemma. I don’t actually think that gay equality in terms of marriage and ideological equality (read: cultural dominion) (as opposed to gay dignity and the physical and reasonable emotional protection of gays and lesbians) is possible in the context of either (1) a Christian civilization or (2) the bare survival of the Church (since the march of the Homosexualist theology and ideology will create a monstrous, self-righteous, frothing, violent force of persecution).

We need a new path forward. A path of peace and mutual toleration. *Mutual* toleration -- not just the Church forever accommodating itself to the dictates of the Gay Movement.

There can be no more reengineering of the culture, the society, the state, or the laws. A chastening of the Gay Movement's agenda and demands is necessary. Detente with the Church is the only way to peace. The Church should ease its paranoia concerning and hatred for gays and lesbians. But the Gay Movement must ease its self-righteousness and furious passion for recasting all of society in its image, even when that means deranging and persecuting the Church.

If gays and lesbians and their Secularist Leninist allies cannot do that, then war with the Church cannot be avoided.

A Critical Civilization

The overwhelming problem that human civilization faces in the 21st Century is a collapse of the critical faculty -- of the art and practice of critique.

Collapse may be an inapposite word, as, for most people, the population as a whole never possessed the critical faculty in the first place. Indeed, human civilization has always been fundamentally barbaric. There never has been a critical *civilization*. There have been critical *individuals* - Socrates, Plato, Aristotle, Descartes, Kant, Nietzsche (until he is borne away by his arrogance and delusions of grandeur and, finally, outright syphilitic madness). But our "civilization" -- our whole human civilization from its very first beginnings to the present moment -- has been nothing more than a panoply of barbarism ignorantly and deludedly parading as civilization.

Now, there are more and less pleasant forms of barbarism. Civilizations that make me kneel before statues and rip out my heart on a ziggurat to placate the gods and make the rains fall are decidedly less pleasant. More pleasant cultures, like the civilization spanning the American and European societies of the present moment, allow the critical individual to squirrel himself away from the frothing, deluded masses and have (at least a little) peace and quiet (at least until the Secularist Leninists with their hate speech laws and reeducation camps drag me away).

But the attenuated palpability of the barbarism doesn't make the *civilization*, as such, a *critical* civilization. It simply makes it less murderous. And that is an *accomplishment*, no doubt. I certainly do not denigrate such a fine accomplishment as not being murderous. If all the restaurants in the world served dishes tainted with food poisoning, and only one establishment in the entire world served clean, healthy food, the fact that the clean fare is unsavory -- in such a world -- does not diminish the exalted status of such an establishment. I would eat there every night.

But when the proprietor of that oasis started to crow about what a brilliant chef he was, I could only roll my eyes and shake my head.

Despite all the overweening, self-obsessed psychotic pride of American and European (and Chinese, not to mention Islamic) civilization, *all* of human civilization in its present form stands before a truly critical civilization as an Aztec warrior stands before a Starfleet admiral.

The most self-admiring queer theorist, critical race theorist, postmodernist, relativist, identity enforcer etc. etc. etc. is nothing more than a slaving, ferocious Aztec brute compared to a truly critical citizen. (And watch how the identity warriors jump on that analogy!)

That does not excuse the dogmatists of various traditionalisms who likewise harbor the dream of a glorious, and violent, restoration.

But all of them are so many tribal warriors ranging the turf of this planet, spear in hand (either metaphorical or literal), whose *true* - and only - purpose is power -- is victory -- *is getting their way*. Truth?

For *almost* every single human being on this planet, truth is nothing more than a means to an end. What end? Maybe someone else's end, maybe power, maybe money, maybe status, maybe a sense of satisfaction, fulfillment, acceptance -- or a sense that, finally, the world is on the right track -- what the inhabitants of this backward little world call "justice".

Now, the Aztec brave is not without his accomplishments or his virtues -- he may evidence intelligence, stamina, ingenuity, cunning, skill, heart. But he is still a barbarian, who fundamentally cannot be reasoned with and is thus supremely *dangerous*, and you go hang out with him -- I'll keep a safe distance.

I wish I could watch the spectacle of the Twitter KGB, who will damn me as bigoted for calling an Aztec barbarian a barbarian, have to socialize with such Aztec warriors, only to find himself or herself high on a temple having his or her heart ripped out. (I don't literally want that, it's simply a figure of speech.) Irony is so unwoke.

The key to all this barbarism is the lack of *humility*. Each little brain on this pit stop of a world holds viewpoints that that meager little soul *fiercely* holds to -- clings to like Gollum clutching his *precious* ring.

Not has *faith* in -- faith is fine; without faith there can be no reason.

But *clutches* -- grasps at with desperation. Clutches so tightly -- (precisely because he or she fundamentally *lacks* faith) -- that he or she will, like a rabid dog, destroy anyone who dares to question that view.

Dogma is the foundation of reason.

Dogmatism is the death of reason: the rabies of a poisoned, dying mind.

Dogma accepts axioms that (logically and existentially) cannot be proven by any deeper truth *on faith*.

Dogmatism destroys all those who question those axioms, because the dogmatist cannot bear having their axioms questioned -- almost always because of a fundamental *lack* of faith in the truth of their axioms. Somewhere deep in their mind or heart they *know* that their axioms are lies, so they must destroy anyone who sheds light on those lies, for fear that they might be exposed.

Any atheist who doubts that dogma is the foundation of reason should consider: how shall you verify that $1+1=2$? (And for those sophisticated mathematical philosophers, we can ask: how shall you verify the axiom of choice?)

The most we finite beings can hope for is the *clarification* of our concepts. We cannot *prove* any of them, in the sense of proof as an existential standing over them as gods.

Now, I believe that God Himself has such proof, for He does indeed stand over all created reality as God, the Uncreated Reality.

But you are not God, and neither am I. God promises us a sharing in His divinity in the World to Come, but even in the Kingdom of God we will not *be* God -- we will be *like* God, and *with* God, to the utterest maximum of intimacy and communion. But God, and God alone, will always *be* God.

But, in this world, we are not yet raised to infinity and eternity. We are finite, passing breaths of spirit -- and sinful spirits at that.

The Socratic project remains palpably relevant -- and barely begun -- certainly barely begun in terms of establishing a Socratic civilization.

We can -- to a large, although undetermined, degree -- discover the skein of our ideas. We can, through determined and seemingly interminable criticism (questioning), identify the networks of ideas that are consistent. Which ideas must relate to other ideas in certain ways, and cannot (logically) be jammed together all willy-nilly (Rob Bell-style.....Hey Bro, the Axiom of Choice is like woke and shit).

Now, obviously, even those clarifications will require intuition -- those networks of ideas will rest upon fundamental intuitions. *But* we can -- to an undetermined degree -- elucidate the nature of those bedrock intuitions. You may not be able to prove the axiom of choice, but you can show that such a bedrock (or another like it) is necessary for your belief.

And if you discover that your beliefs require intuitions that you cannot stomach, then you should reconsider your beliefs. Or reconsider your stomach.

The barbaric mind eschews all of this: INFIDEL! UNWOKE! BIGOT! LIBTARD! COUNTER-REVOLUTIONARY! REACTIONARY! RADICAL! ENEMY OF THE PEOPLE! VERMIN! UNTERMENSCH! CAPITALIST PIG! SOCIALIST FOOL! HOMOPHOBE!

Now, each of those words can signify actual concepts, and those concepts may, or may not, actually apply to certain people.

But the problem is not the term, as such. It is the ALL-CAPS and exclamation points!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!...and then the attendant murder, assault, and cultural, social, and economic persecution. The assault on the person, safety, psychological integrity and livelihood (which is to say: person) of other people.

All people are capable of such hostility: left, right, atheist, traditionalist. Rich, poor, black, brown, white. Man and woman. Self-identified dogmatist and self-identified free thinker. The chaste and the hedonistic.

The enemy of civilization, of life, is the murder of the question.
There is a fundamental, unavoidable antithesis between violence and enquiry.

The violent individual, animated by greed or lust, may perpetrate a robbery or rape of another individual.

The violent civilization, animated by dogmatism, will perpetrate the tyranny and murder of civilization: first of other civilizations, and, finally, of itself. The violent civilization is always a murder-suicide.

Now, some violent civilizations are motivated by base concerns, like greed or lust. So they conquer other lands to expand their dominion, or that of their sovereign, god, or, often, god-sovereign in the form of a Great King.

They pillage, rape, murder, set things on fire and generally have a swinging good time, all for booty - loot and flesh - and some cheap thrills.

Yet, even more cultivated civilizations can drive into a ditch *through their very commitment to truth*. This happens when a civilization becomes more committed to their *commitment* than to the truth itself.

This is the scorned lover, who arrives home to find his or her lover in the sexual act with another and then proceeds to grease their spouse, the lover, and all their children. It is a sad affair -- the death of the family out of a deranged love for the family.

The familiar form of this ditch dive is religious dogmatism. Not religion, not dogma, but *religious dogmatism -- the violent kind*. ISIS, Al Qaeda, Torquemada, the Crusades, the invasion of Europe by Islam in the 8th century, until it was checked at the Battle of Tours in 732 (Not to mention poor Sicily and Greece thereafter). (In all fairness, however, the Ottoman Caliph protected the Orthodox Ecumenical Patriarch and his flock --- imagine the fate of the Orthodox under the less than tender ministrations of Caliph Ibrahim. Still, the Ottomans were no friends of a critical civilization and the freedom of enquiry -- far from it.)

Some truth about God, or God's Will, is considered so sacred that it *cannot be questioned*. Statements about the truth (whether it is actually true or not) are seen as threats to public order: the mere *statements* are seen as acts of violence themselves.

The inability to distinguish violence from expression (speech and writing) is what separates a violent, barbaric civilization from a critical civilization, i.e. a civilized civilization.

For the barbaric civilization, the truth is (1) considered itself so intrinsically weak that it must be defended by violence, or (2) considered itself so extrinsically weak that the weak-minded cannot be led to truth except through the violent suppression of those who say or write anything against the truth (or what the barbarians conceive to be the truth).

The civilized soul believes that truth is so ineradicably strong that freedom is the only surety of truth.

The barbaric soul believes that truth is so contemptibly weak that tyranny is the only surety of truth.

The tyranny of violence and the freedom of expression are the oil and water of sentient existence. They do not mix.

The tyranny of violence is the province of savages, of cruel monster races that are the death of worlds.

The freedom of expression -- free from any form of violence -- is the gateway to peace, freedom, truth, and the salvation of the soul.

Now, religious dogmatism is not the only ditch dive that a maturing civilization can take. The very liberalism out of which the freedom of expression is born and nurtured can sour and denature into a monstrous tyranny of violence.

That happens when the truths (or semi-truths or untruths) that the freedom of enquiry has discovered are exalted to the status of dogmas. That, in itself, is usually harmless. The harm -- the deadly plague -- sets in when the liberal dogmas become a liberal *dogmatism*.

Once you have moved from liberalism to liberal dogmas to liberal dogmatism, the liberal dogmatists set about constructing their very own tyranny of violence, to enforce their dogmas from those pesky critters: questions. For just as questions may insult the Deity, questions may insult the Truth. And just as insulting the Deity is conceived to hurt the weak-minded, insulting the Truth is conceived to hurt the weak-spirited and weak-willed.

Just as those who use the tyranny of violence to defend the Deity end up murdering the Deity (c.f. 1st Century Judea), those who set up the tyranny of violence to defend the Truth end up murdering the truth - and the Truth (for there is no truth without Truth).

The only safeguard of a maturing civilization is to set violence against violence. Violence is the death of civilization. As anarchy (the absence of a violent force set over a people) only breeds violence, government (the state) must be instituted to enforce non-violence. Unfortunately, at this present stage of development, no other solution to the problem of violence exists other than the setting of the violence of the state against all other violence.

What distinguishes the legitimate and necessary violence of the state from the tyranny of violence?

The legitimate and necessary violence of the state can *only* be constituted and exercised to protect the freedom of expression: of which the person -- each and *every* person -- is the chrysalis.

The deadly conceit -- the horrible falsehood -- is to confuse expression with violence. For once expression is deemed violence, the legitimate and necessary violence of the state is set against the expression-deemed-as-violence, and the state devolves into nothing more than the tyranny of violence and proceeds to murder civilization.

You can have the murder-suicide of the religious dogmatist.

And you can have the murder-suicide of the irreligious dogmatist.

But it is murder-suicide all the same.

The “ideologies” (such a crude term) of both camps -- of civilization and murder, of life and death -- are criticalism and infantilism.

Criticalism always rightly distinguishes violence from expression.

Criticalism, further, never limits its understanding of violence to the merely overt violence of outright murder and assault, but to the violence against the human person, to his or her livelihood or his or her basic psychological integrity. To persecute someone’s livelihood is a basic attack on his or her person, for one’s livelihood is equivalent to one’s food, shelter, and ability to engage in the world.

The tricky business is the matter of protecting basic psychological integrity. Because that shades easily into ideas of “moral personhood”, and very quickly nosedives into the equation of violence and expression. It can seem complicated, but its solution is actually relatively straightforward. The state should encourage elements of civil society to keep track of weak-minded, weak-willed, and weak-spirited people and surround them (if the person consents) with the emotional resources of understanding and kind companionship -- hence positively providing emotional resources to such at-risk individuals and negatively keeping those who (morally) abuse their freedom of expression at bay.

But to prohibit the moral abuse of the freedom of expression through any form of violence -- violence to the person, to the person’s livelihood, or to the abuser’s own

psychological integrity -- simply nosedives into the equation of violence and expression. And the prohibition by any form of violence of such moral abuse of the freedom of expression requires the definition of such moral abuse of the freedom of expression -- and hence, inevitably, the articulation of an absolute moral theory by which such violence can be administered. Life is Chutes & Ladders. The violent implementation of such an absolute moral theory is the chute back to Aztec barbarism. The search for an absolute moral theory is good. Its violent implementation is, by definition, evil. Moral abuse must be distinguished from violent abuse. Those who do not murder, assault, interfere with someone's livelihood, or resist the repulsion of protectors cannot themselves be deemed violent without the fatal equation of violence and expression.

Now, if one wishes to become a mathematician, one would be well advised not to murder one's math teacher or burn libraries of mathematical treatises.

But if one can contain one's homicidal and arsonist tendencies, that, in itself, does not make one a mathematician.

One must study mathematics to become a mathematician.

If one wishes to become a chess player, one must study and play chess. And if one wishes to become a chess grandmaster, one must study and play quite a lot.

If one wished to create a whole civilization of mathematicians or chess grandmasters, that would require that all the citizens of that civilization were provided with the time and resources to study and practice.

If some citizens were enslaved by other citizens, such that the "slaves" were used as tools and not permitted the resources or time to study and practice, the civilization would cripple itself, with the freedom of expression being suffocated in the cradle by an obtuse tyranny of violence.

If some citizens were employed by other citizens, such that the "employees" were used as tools and not permitted the resources or time to study and practice, the civilization would cripple itself, with the freedom of expression being suffocated in the nursery by an obtusely greedy tyranny of violence -- the violence of stealing all the resources of the earth and failing to properly distribute them such that all the citizens could study and practice.

Such violent civilizations -- both the violent civilization of force and the violent civilization of fraud and monopoly -- stagnate into isolated puddles -- marshes of self-satisfied blindness - with only a past and never a future.

Once all the citizens have been equipped with the resources and time to study and practice, that itself does not make them mathematicians or grandmasters.

One may receive a scholarship to university, but that does not mean that one has attained an education. Even if a student studied all day and all night for years, the student must study rightly. If the student read books in languages he did not understand (and did not bother to learn)

or solved problem sets always wrongly (without bothering to correct himself), then the student could spend years in labor and attain nothing.

The student must learn to play the game -- to make moves. One can only make moves if one understands the structure of the game.

The structure of the game is logic. In the Kingdom of Logic, there is only one coin of the realm: reason. And there is only one final foundation for reason: faith, alternatively known as intuition: self-evidence.

The coin of the realm comes in two stamps: silver and gold: logical arguments and empirical facts. An empirical fact is a truth that strikes the mind inevitably. The truth cannot be honestly avoided by an understanding mind. Logical arguments articulate the inevitable patterns that exist between facts. The fundamental facts are axioms -- they are the facts upon which all other facts are based.

To assert the existence of facts without permitting such "facts" to be tested by critique (by questioning) is the death of logic by stagnation and, ultimately, starvation. To deny the existence of facts is the death of logic by suicide..

After one avoids starvation and suicide, one must learn to actually live.

To live is to make moves -- to act.

Thinking is the motor of living, and to think, one must make moves.

Making moves is the intuition of facts (either through the external senses or through the internal (intellectual and moral) senses) and the intuition of the structural relations of those facts. Such intuitions - both factual and structural - require constant questioning, because, unfortunately, the mind in this world is capable of true intuitions and false intuitions. If the mind in this world were only capable of true intuitions, no questioning would be required. But, then again, no one would disagree with one another and all would be of one mind and no one would ever make a mistake or bear a regret. That clearly is not *this* world. So, only the sifting and sorting that questioning provides can sift the true intuitions from the false intuitions.

In other words, all intuitions (both the true and the false) must be constantly presented before the mind in order to ascertain which intuitions are true and which are false.

Now, life is a moving train, and you are the conductors. Practical actions must be made on finite thoughts in limited time -- so you must use your deepest intuition to make concrete, practical choices. That deepest intuition is who you are.

When one thinks alone, the death of logic and the suffocation of the self is to refuse to consider intuitions (facts and arguments) that you do not like -- that you find emotionally

distasteful or offensive to the current formation of your intellectual and logical outlook or unacceptable for consideration by your mind for any reason.

When one thinks with others -- and that is the dynamo of civilization -- one must learn to respond to intuitions (facts and arguments) with other intuitions (other facts and arguments).

Just as, similarly, two chess players must learn to respond to each other's moves with other moves.

If one chess player makes a move that takes the other chess player's piece, and the second chess player steals the piece and puts it back on the board, that is cheating and you are no longer playing chess. If the second chess player swipes all the pieces from the board, that is no longer playing. If the second chess player screams at the first chess player, that is not a move. If the second chess player says, "That was a bigoted move," that statement is not a successful counter-move. If the second chess player accuses the first chess player of being "unwoke" for making a move, that is not an acceptable response: it does not qualify as a move. It is not playing the game, it is prattling and wasting time. If the second chess player calls the move made by the first chess player "stupid", that is not a move. The second chess player should make his or her own move to show that the first chess player's move was stupid. If the first chess player makes a move and the second chess player calls the move "meaningless" that does not invalidate the move. Only other moves can invalidate moves by winning the game. If the second chess player calls the first chess player an infidel for making a move, that is not a move: it is a threat to the security of the chess match that should make the security guard investigate.

In sum, we see the difference between emotion and reason. It is one thing for the chess players to have emotions -- they are human beings, not robots. But those emotions are not valid moves -- only reason (defined, at bottom, as intuitions) counts as a valid move.

It is one thing for the chess player to be emotional: it is another thing for the game to be disturbed or ended because of a player's emotional outbursts.

An astronaut can be emotional, but if he or she expects his emotions to steer his craft and do his duties, he or she will die in space.

Now, naturally, logical discourse among human beings is not the same as playing chess. It is a metaphor, not an identity. But it is a tight metaphor. Because the moves in discourse are the presentation of one intuition, or function of intuitions, to another person's intuition or function of intuitions.

If one person presents an intuition or function of intuitions to another person and that other person calls the function of intuitions "stupid" or "meaningless" or "bigoted" or "unwoke" or "blasphemous" or "heretical" or "liberal" (as an unthinking slur) or "reactionary" (as an unthinking slur) those statements are not themselves moves -- they are not intuitions or functions

of intuitions made in response to the posited intuitions or functions of intuitions. They are names. It is name-calling.

It is as if the first chess player made a move and the second chess player called the first player “poopy head” in response. Poopy head he may be, but the game still awaits a move and the clock is still running.

In other words, such name-calling amounts to this: it amounts to the second player making a move by declaring that the first play is a loser, has lost the game.

It is as if the first player made a move, and then the second player declared, “Aha! You have lost!” That’s not how the game works. Make a move, and show that he has lost, by checkmating him.

Now, of course, the rules of logic are not as clear-cut as the rules of chess. The intuitive nature of the enterprise of logical thinking makes it potentially unclear to two players that one has been checkmated. (And this becomes wildly more complex when you have billions or trillions of players.)

But seeking checkmate is precisely the problem. A child race cannot checkmate anything.

All a child race can hope for is to put the other children in check.

Now, who determines check? One child can say to the other child, “Nuh-uh, I’m not in check,” and the other child will scream back, “Are too, poopy head!”

The only solution is for the other children to be called in to offer their intuitions.

Only a Divine Voice, spoken in a Divine Word, can judge the intuitions. But, if the Divine Word requires interpretations, and the Divine Word is not physically and vocally present to provide those interpretations as a visible and audible God, who shall interpret the Divine Word? Even if some children, for their intelligence and diligence, are chosen to be leaders of the interpreters, does that mean that those special, gold-star children will, Lord of the Flies-style, be allowed to execute those who disagree with their interpretation? What kind of a God would sanction such a Lord of the Flies dystopia? -- only an evil God, a false God, would do such a thing.

So, since both secular and sacred intuitions -- self-evidence and revelation -- require enquiry, no one’s intuitions can be invalidated through name-calling. Now, no one can be executed for name-calling, or socially or economically destroyed for name-calling, or prevented from ever having his or her intuitions heard: that also eliminates that person’s intuitions. Plato and Aristotle were Greek ethnocentrists. If you executed them for being ethnocentric, you would lose their whole philosophy. If you executed Newton for being an infidel, you would lose Newtonian physics.

In other words, we need more exchanges of intuitions and less charges of poopy-headery.

Calling a member of another religion an infidel does not disprove the other religion. Calling a person a bigot does not, itself, disprove their beliefs. Calling a person a sinner does not, itself, make that person a sinner. Calling a Capitalist a pig does not demonstrate the failures and faults of Capitalism. Calling a Socialist stupid does not demonstrate that Socialism can never be constituted in a fashion that is superior to Capitalism. Calling a Conservative stupid does not disprove Conservative beliefs. Calling a Liberal a Libtard does not disprove Liberal beliefs.

It is all emotive nonsense that distracts from the real task of thinking and living.

It is one thing to hold beliefs, it is another thing for those beliefs to hold you.

Even when that belief is in God, and it should hold you, you are arrogating to yourself the role of God when you hold other people in order to vindicate the belief that holds you. *That* is idolatry.

When you structure your civilization around your idea of the truth rather than the search for the truth, you stagnate your civilization in the past, in a marsh in which civilization drowns into tyranny, barbarism, and, ultimately, anarchy or subjection to conquerors who aren't so backward.

That is infantilism -- to render the citizens of a civilization mere slaves to a dogmatism, infants who aren't permitted to think or breathe the free air of liberty or enquiry.

Infantilism always occurs from short-circuiting the process of enquiry which is the essence of the search for the truth. Certain ideas are deemed unacceptable to be freely discussed without violence. And then -- behold! -- a whole parade of ideas are invalidated.

Revolutions always consume their children. The Islamist will always be a kafir to some crazier Islamist. The Secularist will always be a bigot to some crazier Secularist.

There's also the matter of Fascism, which is the Secularist recapitulation of some lost ideal. The straight Secularist - like the Jacobin, the Leninist, or the modern Ultra-Leftist - fights the past, seeking to shred the whole of the past to give birth to a totally alternative future (always a future made in the image of the human race, specifically that part of the human race conducting the Revolution). The Fascist seeks to remold the past into a future: but what distinguishes the Fascist from the reactionary is that the Fascist seeks to institute a tyranny of violence to achieve that aim. So, likewise, the Fascist will always be a lily-livered collaborator to a more extreme Fascist.

The only acceptable state is the neutral state -- the state that only exists to use violence to oppose violence. Now the definition of violence matters for that purpose. Murder and assault are violence, self-evidently. But, for beings that require external resources in order to live and thrive, it is violence to institute or maintain a system that is inherently incapable of providing

access to the resources necessary for survival and flourishing, in such a way that it is possible for those beings to study and practice the art of thinking and being. A state that aspires to less, that defines violence in such a way that the violence of deprivation is authorized, sloughs off to its own stagnant marsh of an asphyxiated society of masters and slaves.

By the same token, harassment and menacing cannot be permitted by the neutral state -- for even if direct tactile violence does not immediately occur, to permit the threat of violence, or the ambient conditions of violence, encourages a culture of violence in which the actuality of violence festers and, ultimately, springs.

All these oppositions of violence to violence require balancing. Policing cannot be so oppressive that the free intercourse of people is disturbed. Economic regulation cannot be so oppressive that the free intercourse of commerce is prevented. Social regulation cannot be so oppressive that the free intercourse of expressions is prevented or chilled.

Such balancing itself requires judgment, insight, and maturity.

The whole enterprise of civilization is a maturing process, from barbarism and slavery to salvation and freedom.

That salvation and freedom *cannot* be attained through any sort of tyranny, not the Tyranny of a God-Emperor, not the Tyranny of Religion, not the Tyranny of Reason, (nor the Tyranny of Tradition or the Nation or Destiny or any Idea).

The Tyranny of Truth is still tyranny. That is why God, who is a Monarch and not a tyrant, imbues each human being with free will and respects each human being's free will. Anyone who judges a human being, and subjects him or her to violence on the basis of that judgment, for simply exercising his or her free will in a matter of belief arrogates to himself or herself the role of God, and acts in defiance of the nature of God.

Love is love is love?

Try tyranny is tyranny is tyranny.

Take it in its most obvious form: Mathematics is the most universally agreed-upon self-evident truth. Everyone agrees on the nature and practice of arithmetic, for instance.

Do we execute heretics and blasphemers against arithmetic? Do we persecute them? Do we harass them? Do we call them names? Do we call them unwoke? Do we call them bigots? Do we call them infidels? Do we call them radicals? (Maybe free radicals....)

A civilization that decides that its truths, its Truth, is simultaneously so important *and* so weak that it must be defended by violence - murder, assault, intimidation, and propaganda - condemns itself to tyranny - the tyranny of violence and the extinction of the freedom of expression, the light in the dark, the only road up from barbarism to civilization.

Back to the beginning of this essay: this is not a critical civilization. This is not a Socratic civilization. There has never been such a thing. But there must become such a thing.

Liberalism is not enough.

“Justice” is not enough. You have no idea what justice is.

“Truth” is not enough. Your conception of truth is hazy even when you correctly identify it.

Start small. Small moves. Start with non-violence.

You require criticalism.

Almost everyone on this planet *uses* reason to justify the belief that he wants to be true.

Everyone on this planet must begin to use reason to *search* for intuitions (which are the basis of facts and arguments) that, through a critical process, can be discovered to be truth.

Now, naturally, people require practical doctrines to shape their actual, pressing, limited lives -- and those will be different from the pure search for truth.

But every person on this planet must learn to distinguish that practical doctrine *from* what each person thinks they *know* to be true.

In other words, each person must simultaneously operate a practical doctrine and a theoretical construct of intuitions, which is understood as an evolving and open framework for processing intuitions, both from within oneself and from without: from every other person.

Criticism must become the deepest habit of the mind.

Practical ethics based on one's best critical construct must become the norm for practical ethical decision-making.

That is on the one hand.

On the other hand, there is the matter of revelation and salvation.

There is a tension between the certainty required by faith and the theoretical openness required by criticism.

Christian revelation posits that God illumines the heart with grace, the first grace being the gift of faith. For those graced with the gift of faith, that faith, and all that comes with it, becomes the deepest intuition of that person, of the Christian: it becomes who they are. And since that deepest intuition that comes from the gift of faith is the Spirit of Christ, the Christian becomes, at the deepest existential level, the Spirit of Christ.

Yet, the very nature of the grace of faith convinces me that the gift of faith is perfectly compatible with criticism. If a Christian cannot persevere in that faith without blocking off other intuitions, without refusing to honestly process all other intuitions that might occur to him or be presented to him by others, then I very much doubt that Christian really ever had the gift of faith. If any external or alternative intuition can dislodge what is supposed to be your deepest intuition, then, apparently, it was not your deepest intuition.

So, I do not think that the practice of criticism can ever attenuate or remove the certainty of faith: it can merely reveal that your “faith” wasn’t certain in the first place.

Now, this is not to say that the Christian will have all the answers to every challenging intuition. But it does mean that the gift of faith means that the Christian is not troubled by not having all the answers.

But, by the same token, the intellectual honesty required of a Christian also requires that every Christian acknowledge, and understand, if and when he or she does not, in fact, have a strong and consistent theoretical construct built from basic intuitions that are readily apparent to oneself, or should be if one were being honest, or are easily available in the broader world, or are presented to him or her by others.

So, for the believer, the Christian has three operating systems, so to speak: (1) the faith upon which his or her deepest intuition is based, (2) the self-understanding of the theoretical construct of one’s *knowledge*, with the understanding of what one does and does not know, i.e. which parts of his or her faith currently have a strong epistemic justification (or, at least, clarification), and which do not, and (3) a practical doctrine for living his or her everyday life (which, naturally, for a Christian, must be consistent with the Faith, of which Divine Revelation is an indispensable part).

Faith, knowledge, doctrine (i.e. a practical ethical code).

When people confuse these three separate spheres, the impulse towards tyranny festers.

When faith is confused with knowledge, you get rank fundamentalism.

When knowledge is confused with doctrine, you get tyranny.

The Secularist Leninists *know* - as a metaphysical and epistemological certainty - that gay sex and gay love are sacred - Love is Love is Love.

The Islamists *know* that their interpretation of Islam is absolutely correct. God is Great! (And everyone else shut up!)

So, naturally, both have no problem enforcing their beliefs on others *by any means necessary*. Both, to one degree or another, believe that the ends justify the means.

Both the Secularist Leninists and the Islamists are Machiavellian to the core. They don’t serve Truth, and they don’t serve God. They serve their own lusts, their own sense of themselves, their own power. They serve evil. They serve tyranny, the ruthless extinction of freedom.

The only *legitimate* object of human violence (if there is any) is the prevention of violence, i.e. that which prevents the person from searching for the truth. To subject a person to any form of violence for searching for the truth is a sacrilege, an offense against the deepest truth of the human spirit.

One key problem holding the human race back in the barbarism of the tyranny of violence, and preventing it from racing forward into the critical civilization, the civilized civilization, of true freedom of expression and a complete freedom of enquiry, is the human dismay at being finite and being creatures.

God is Infinite and the Creator. His Truth is Certain Knowledge and Righteous Action.

Human beings are finite and creatures, dependent on the Infinite and the Creator. With our spiritual sights dimmed, or totally deadened, by sin, our truths become uncertain, hazy, scattered, inconsistent, and our tentative and outright unrighteous actions testify to this.

And the specter of death haunts our every waking (and unwaking) moment. It lurks behind every thought -- the fear of it terrorizes us into panic.

And, if we do not have true faith -- true trust -- in the love and certain help of the God who created us in Love and will save us in Love, we human beings -- finite, creaturely, sinful, and terrified of and terrorized by death -- will rage against our limitations and frailties. We will conduct a campaign of vengeance against our limitations.

Anything that *assures* us of our decency or goodness or rightness or the value of our lives, or even our salvation, will become our God. God will not be our God....the *idea* that justifies our feeling of being okay -- of not being finite or creaturely or sinful -- will become our God: but it will be nothing more than an idol, a false god.

The religious tyrant does not worship God -- *cannot* worship God, for God is Love. The religious tyrant - the Torquemada, the butchers in ISIS - only worships *their* idea of God. And when one worships an idea in one's own mind, he does not worship God: he worships himself. And when one worships himself, he imitates Satan, the first being who worshipped himself.

The Secularist tyrant -- both left-wing and right-wing -- *never* fights for truth. The Secularist tyrant - the Soviet Union, Nazi Germany, (the Secularist Leninist Imperium?), (the Christian Fascist Revolutionary Republic? - which would be more Fascist and Secular Nationalist than "Christian") - only fights for *their* idea of truth. And what happens when you kill and persecute for your idea of truth? You destroy the search for truth, which is the only way of even possibly arriving at the reality of truth, rather than a chimera of truth.

It is the human person's panic at his or her own finitude, sinfulness, and death -- aided and abetted by sheer laziness and the inanity of a whirring, empty, manic culture -- that drives people into confusing their knowledge with their doctrine -- of being so sure of their righteousness that murder, assault, intimidation, and propaganda become an acceptable personal habit, group activity, and instrument of state.

Instead of being the force that neutralizes violence, the state becomes the leading perpetrator of violence.

That is why the war for civilization is between the philosophers and the murderers: between the lovers of truth and those who love themselves so much -- because nothing else will fill their emptiness -- that they murder to vindicate themselves.

But, as Jesus said:

“You have heard that it was said to your ancestors, ‘You shall not kill; and whoever kills will be liable to judgment.’

But I say to you, whoever is angry with his brother will be liable to judgment, and whoever says to his brother, ‘Raqa,’ will be answerable to the Sanhedrin, and whoever says, ‘You fool,’ will be liable to fiery Gehenna.

Therefore, if you bring your gift to the altar, and there recall that your brother has anything against you,

leave your gift there at the altar, go first and be reconciled with your brother, and then come and offer your gift.

Settle with your opponent quickly while on the way to court with him. Otherwise your opponent will hand you over to the judge, and the judge will hand you over to the guard, and you will be thrown into prison.

Amen, I say to you, you will not be released until you have paid the last penny.

(Matthew 5:21-26)

The total battle for civilization is between those who trust in the love of truth and the truth of love **and** those who can only feel at home in the world through feeling anger, and, necessarily, expressing anger.

Love and truth *versus* anger and idols.

The expression of love is always humility, kindness, and the search for understanding.

The expression of anger is always peremptoriness, bitterness, and the close-mindedness that nurtures grudges and feuds.

Now, love must be firm and disciplined, and it must also be cool and calm. But it is never angry in the sense of being bitter and brooding and hostile. Love never takes joy in violence, death, and destruction.

Jesus is the Light.

Jesus never executed anyone.

It is unimaginable that Jesus would execute anyone for anything.

When Jesus was presented with the adulteress, he did not justify her offense, but he did not condemn her. "Neither do I condemn you" (John 8:11).

Jesus was executed for blasphemy, heresy, and treason.

But Jesus would never execute anyone for anything.

Jesus as the Judge, at the end of the world, will ratify the self-chosen fates of all people. But he never proposes a Tyranny of Murder and War and Destruction within the world.

You shall know a tree by the fruit it bears.

Jesus says:

Beware of false prophets, who come to you in sheep's clothing, but underneath are ravenous wolves. By their fruits you will know them. Do people pick grapes from thornbushes, or figs from thistles? Just so, every good tree bears good fruit, and a rotten tree bears bad fruit. A good tree cannot bear bad fruit, nor can a rotten tree bear good fruit. Every tree that does not bear good fruit will be cut down and thrown into the fire. So by their fruits you will know them.

(Matthew 7:15-20)

Peace, peaceableness, freedom, enquiry, understanding, truth -- these are the fruits of Jesus, and are offered by Jesus to us.

Murder, war, death, destruction, tyranny, nuclear annihilation -- these are the fruits offered by the Islamists.

Jesus is the Way of Life.

Political and "religious" violence is the Way of Death.

And the violence of the heart is the mother of violent acts.

And you can diagnose violence of the heart by recognizing how a person responds to being questioned, and to having their beliefs challenged, criticized, and critiqued.

If that person becomes violent -- either explosive or even testy -- you know that anger is operating. If that person cannot respond with their own reasons, but only emotive barking and effusion, (with only tenuous links to reasoning, or done in such a way that it is meant to shout you down), you know you're dealing with an angry person.

The more hostile a person becomes when their beliefs are challenged and made to look bad, the more you know they serve Anger.

The more restrained and peaceable and equanimous a person is, under any circumstances, including the questioning of their beliefs, even and especially when their beliefs are made to look bad, the more you know they serve Love.

But we don't need to turn to geopolitics to see this: we can look at every workplace, school, mall, public place, and dinner table.

How many groups of people can discuss their deepest beliefs together without frothing, seething, barbaric yelps of anger vomiting in every direction?

It all, with everyone, starts as five or ten minutes of rational thought, and then an hour of bitterness, barking, condescension, sneering, or coldness -- or simply walking away.

American and European civilization may be liberal (in the broad sense).

But they are not at all critical.

They, along with the rest of the world, use reason and truth as a means and not as an end.

Until the vast majority of a people treat reason as an end, and not as a means, that people will never ascend from barbarism to civilization.

And that requires the deep, engrained, every day discipline of profound humility -- of an acceptance and *embrace* of one's own finitude and creatureliness and the fact of one's sinfulness. The truth shall set you free. (John 8:32)

That humility allows you to distinguish your faith from your knowledge from your practical ethical doctrine.

When your identity is ground in humility, and you know that your knowledge is incomplete and without self-evident foundation (not that the truth is without foundation, but your *knowledge* of the truth is without tangible epistemic foundation), and you know that your practical doctrine (mode of life) is inherently questionable, you can logically and coolly and lovingly discuss anything with anyone -- and not feel threatened or afraid or contemptuous or angry.

[THE NEW JERUSALEM](#)

Aside from the fundamental moral enquiry: what is the moral nature of human sexuality, if any: the body social must come to terms with a glaring, basic failure of the Gay Movement.

The Gay Movement is utterly mercenary in its approach - not superficially, but down to its bottom.

It is not a philosophically coherent movement (as, I suppose, few social movements are).

The Gay Movement's *modus vivendi* is not the school, but the marketing department: the advertising agency. Of course, there are many thinkers with a whole range of ideas. But I am speaking of the Movement, *as such*.

If the Gay Movement were a person, it would not be Socrates or Thomas Aquinas. It would be Don Draper.

That does not mean that there are not individuals who are serious thinkers, but rather that the Movement as a whole is not concerned with serious thought: it is concerned with one thing, and one thing only: selling its product.

And, naturally, the Gay Movement's product is *Gay!*

The [Coca-Cola Company](#) does not care about the philosophical integrity of the act of drinking Coca-Cola. Coca-Cola does not care whether Coca-Cola is good for society. Coca-Cola does not care whether other colas or soft drinks are superior or inferior to other beverages. Coca-Cola does not reflect on the social ramifications of the practice of drinking soda pop.

Coca-Cola has one goal, one practice, one method, one mind: *Sell, Sell, Sell!*

The Gay Movement simply wants to sell Gay -- Sell, sell, sell -- sell it whenever, wherever, however it can, as often as it can, in any way and any form it can sell it.

The problem is....what, in fact, is the nature of this product?

The problem is that, at bottom, the Gay Movement is not merely a homosexual movement. It is a Free Love Movement, a Free Sex Movement. And it is no coincidence that the Gay Movement has become a Gay Ascendancy in exact synchronicity with the ascendancy of a Culture of Free Love in Western culture.

The blob-like nature of the Gay Movement's "philosophical" matrix (which is Free Love) is not a problem if that matrix, that inner product, that dietary ramification, is salutary, wholly or partially.

The Civil Rights Movement for African-American rights could be, and was, met with the rebuke: *Well then, are we just going to treat **all** races and ethnicities as equal, huh?*

Yes, Cleetus, we are.

But what of the Gay Movement? The Gay Movement, among Civil Rights Movements, is, frankly, the black sheep. It is the one of which it can be said: *Which one of these is not like the others?*

In many ways it is similar to Feminism. Because Feminism, deep down, (and when it becomes more than simply a matter of decency, respect, consideration, and kindness and opportunity in the world), is a radical theory, which seeks to eradicate the basic distinctions between man and woman, as man and woman.

Feminism has fared so poorly because such radical Feminism is a defective product.

Product Defects

<https://www.nbc.com/saturday-night-live/video/60-minutes/n9280?snl=1>

It doesn't actually work in relationships between men and women. Even if it is formally acknowledged, like a figurative portrait of Chairman Mao hanging over the fireplace, Maoism in practice is a disaster, and radical Feminism between men and women never actually works. The fundamental power balance in an intimate relationship - and its dynamics - cannot be wished away any more than Chairman Mao's Little Red Book can wish away the laws of supply and demand.

So, men and women across our culture, for decades, who have dabbled with the product *radical Feminism!* have not been repeat consumers. As Mr. Wonderful on *Shark Tank* might say, and as so many men have said to radical Feminism: You're dead to me.

But it is different with the Gay Movement. Feminism proposed usage in every household in America, and its very defectiveness doomed it to irrelevance and marginality.

The Gay Movement simply said: End prohibitionism. If people *want* to buy *Gay!* let them.

Americans, being *laissez faire* at heart, said, "Okay, let freedom ring!" and went about their business.

Since *Gay!* is not used in every household, there is only a vague sense about its fundamental nature and character among the broader population.

And since *Gay!* is really Free Love, in swallowing *Gay!* America and Europe have swallowed the basic principles of Free Love right into its philosophical gullet, its core cultural matrix.

Now, universal, purist racial equality is an unalloyed good thing, so the total de-racialization (an unfinished project to be sure) of America (Europe, not so much....they have a long way to go) is a good thing.

But what of the implementation of Total Free Love?

Good?
Not so much.

The acceptance of Gay ideology has eviscerated the basic sexual morality that Christians took for granted for millennia. If a person truly accepts the tenets of Gay sexual ideology, can that person seriously morally forbid any of the following: masturbation, heterosexual fornication, contraception, pornography, even divorce? To be sure, the deterioration of sexual morality in Christendom set the stage for the emergence of the homosexualist theological empire. But the homosexualist dominion over our culture secures that moral collapse in radical, unfathomable ways.

Are gays going to forego masturbation until gay marriage? Will gays forego sex until gay marriage? Shall we seriously be able to argue against the morality of divorce? What shall Christians say? No gay divorce? Why not? Jesus forbade divorce by quoting Genesis, saying, “Have you not read that from the beginning the Creator ‘made them male and female’, and said, ‘For this reason a man shall leave his father and mother and cleave to his wife, and the two shall become one flesh?’ So they are no longer two, but one flesh. Therefore, what God has joined together, no human being may separate” (Matthew 19:4-6). On what basis could the Church possibly oppose gay divorce? That God had joined a man with a man or a woman with a woman, and now no human authority could separate the gay couple? Would the Gay Caliphate even permit such an argument? Would the Gay Caliphate call such an (theologically insane) argument “homophobic”? So, you’re “homophobic” if you oppose “gay marriage”, but are you also “homophobic” if you oppose gay divorce?

How is this supposed to work, from a Christian perspective?

Well, it doesn’t. And the Gay advertising firm doesn’t give a damn how it all works out from the Christian perspective. It’s all *Sell! Sell! Sell!*

(Of course, even if gays and lesbians agreed to support anti-masturbation, anti-pornography, anti-fornication, and anti-divorce positions, sodomy would still be forbidden by the Christian conception of sex described by Jesus in Matthew 19.)

The justifications for the prohibitions of masturbation, pornography, fornication, contraception, and divorce all stem directly and irrevocably from the nature of the marital bond as a communion of male flesh and female flesh, for the purpose of the generation of children, such that sexual activity of any kind outside of such a male-female communion of the flesh that is open to the generation of children is immoral. If a relationship between two people of the *same kind* of human flesh, whose kind of sex *cannot* generate children under any circumstances, is considered marriage (*must* be considered marriage by all decent, non-bigoted people), then the logical foundation of Christian sexual morality totally collapses.

Gay! is a Trojan horse, specifically designed to enter into what’s left of Christendom, using fuzzy sentimentalism and browbeating, and to secure our civilization firmly and irrevocably for sexual immorality of every kind.

Postmodernism: The Mothership of Bad Ideas

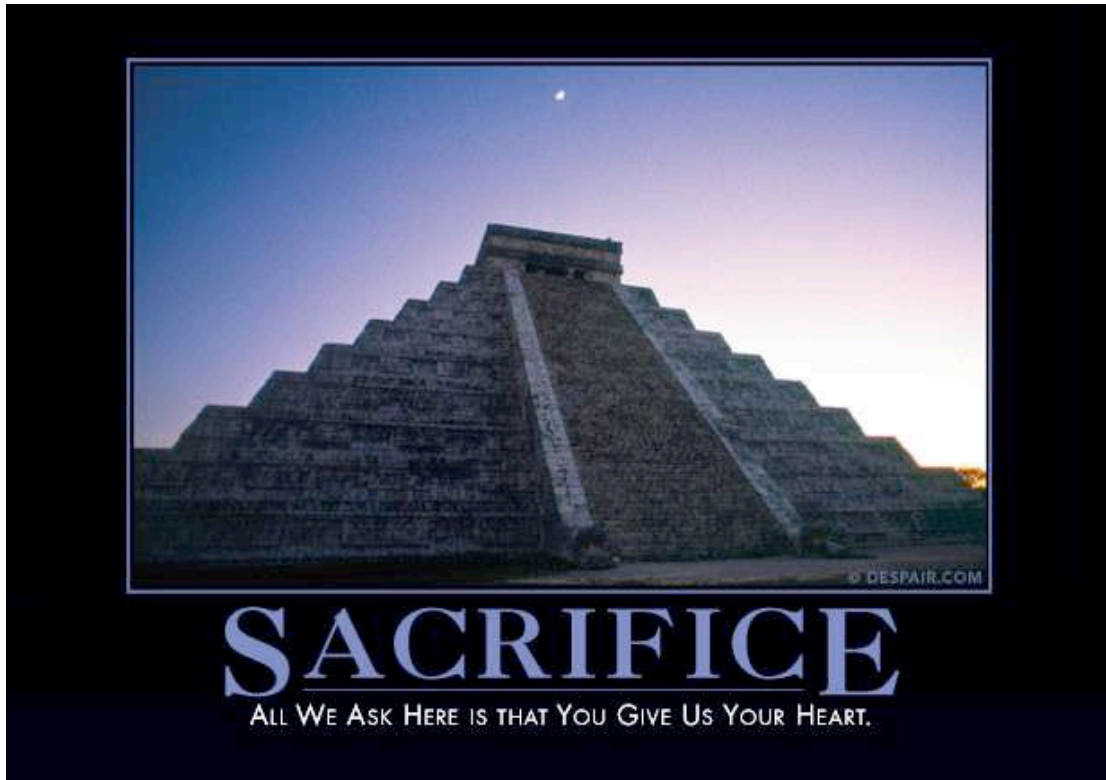
Many of our philosophical problems -- which reverberate in the culture through the educational system, the media, the economy, workplaces, families, and all social institutions -- stem from a failure or blank unwillingness to synchronize our concepts to underlying reality.

Indeed, the animating “philosophy” of contemporary modern “civilization” is postmodernism, whose primary (sole?) tenet is that there is *no* underlying reality in the first place. This is “anti-foundationalism”. It is a philosophical suicide cult. To deny foundations -- or a foundation -- is to deny facts: all facts, any facts. When a mind embraces “anti-foundationalism” (read: nihilism), the mind can only operate by fiat. Rather than discover facts, the nihilistic mind (the self-murdering mind) simply *asserts* facts: it presumes to create them. What really happens is that the mind discovers the facts, forgets or denies that those facts present to the mind were discovered, and then proceeds to declare (insanely and grandiosely) that that mind is the *creator* of those facts. So, the anti-foundationalist (like Richard Rorty) deludes himself into believing that he is the Creator, and not a creature. The nihilist “creates” his or her own idea of the good, of value, of purpose by selecting a discovered reality that the nihilist discovered prior to joining the Satanic Suicide Cult of Nihilism, and then molding it into his or her own image, and then positing it as an unquestionable truth. It is an act of self-deification. Now, the secularist nihilist will not kill you (presumably) for questioning their truth. He or she will simply deny the necessity of responding to your question. The posited truth simply hangs suspended in the ether like some intellectual phantom, some intellectual first mover that the nihilist, in his or her self-ordained Godhood, placed at the center of reality (read: their reality). The posited truth (such as Fairness or Kindness or “Love” or whatever) becomes the nihilist mind’s Deity. And, of course, since the nihilist believes that he has created that truth, the nihilist worships himself.

Hence, the Secularist-Postmodernist Nihilists’ worship of “Diversity”. Elements of the human person -- and the expressions of the human person in various people -- become hypostatized (reified) as crystalline structures of mystical import, talismans of some unquestionable reality, whose touching or tampering with becomes the ultimate taboo.

Those who live and die by taboos inevitably become tribalistic, treating all who respect the taboo as part of the tribe, and all those who flout the taboo as outsiders, foreigners, infidels, subhumans, or monsters.

How far academe must travel down this road to Hell before the Postmodernist statues of Jacques Derrida and Michel Foucault are pulled down and dragged away like that of Saddam Hussein, I don’t know. But a few more centuries of this, and unwoke students at Harvard will be having their hearts ripped out by tenured Brahmin professors in Harvard Yard.



For the human race, Postmodernism is the path to suicide. Criticalism is the path to adulthood.

Traditionalism is childhood. And the child is the father of the man. But the man becomes the man by being able to distance his reason from his emotions. To reason and to conclude that nothing matters is to deny life and to commit suicide (Don't do this). To reason and discover the joy of life and truth is to grow to a mature adulthood.

To reason and shudder at the abandoning of childhood is to regress into childishness, abandoning reason in order to clutch at the cherished illusions and limited perceptions of the halcyon past.

To ceaselessly row back into the lost past is to lock yourself in your room, to become a shadow of a man. It is to waste away as life passes you by.

And to demand, upon pain of death, that all ceaselessly row back into the lost past with you (i.e. under you), is to become a deranged mass shooter (c.f. ISIS).

Take sex.

The Postmodernist KGB have reveled in "deconstructing" sex, supposedly exploding it into nothing more than "gender". The adamantine, fundamental, essential realities of sex are elided, wished away, into cultural affectations -- poses. That which you *are* is turned into that

which you *do* (No doubt done because the poor victim was indoctrinated into the pattern of being male or female by an unwoke society - poor soul).

The felt, lived, actual realities of billions of *men* and *women* who are not striking poses, but *are* men and women? Irrelevant. You will be assimilated. Resistance is Futile.

Well, resistance may be futile in Harvard Yard, but it's not at the ballot box.

Most people, happily, (for now) simply ignore such things, or don't even know they exist (like most people don't know the difference between philosophical Epicureanism and Platonism).

But, of course, it seeps into everything. Just as the Sexual Epicureanism of the Postmodernists provided the intellectual firepower for the Gay Movement, so it is doing the same for the transgender push. The population, primed by the success of the marketing campaign for *Gay!* is all too easily roped into buying into *Trans!* Besides, everyone knows the drill. If you resist, you are a bigot, and bigots are isolated and destroyed.

Now, it is one thing to be kind to people -- to be concerned about their feelings, to provide emotional and therapeutic support, and to not want people to die. But must the fundamental rearrangement of our civilization's basic philosophical presuppositions *always* be the price of avoiding a teen suicide....much less the price of not offending someone or giving someone a case of the sads?

Of course, the Gay vanguard at Sterling, Cooper & Gay, the Gay advertising colossus, couldn't care less about the philosophical integrity of the culture. All they care about is the proliferation of every group and sub-group's subaltern life experience into a reified identity, that can get stamped as sacred and given the protection of taboo. Self-expression is one thing. I am an advocate for self-expression. But just as the right to swing your fist ends at my face, your right to self-expression ends when you employ the instruments of the state, the corporate apparatus (which is also the state), and the media (which is also the corporate apparatus, and, hence, ultimately, a manifestation of the state) to not simply state your case and speak your truth, but to eradicate the self-expression of anyone who disagrees with you.

This wouldn't be that bad if the issue were truly clear-cut. The united efforts of the state, the corporate apparatus, and the media to eradicate racism (or at least the campaign to do so) do circumscribe the ambit of expression.

But racist expression is so unfounded by any strong intuitions (not feelings, but, rather, empirical facts and logical arguments) that its proscription and marginalization does not threaten the process of discovering truth through reason -- the process of constantly subjecting intuitions to questioning: that is, to the process of constantly subjecting intuitions to other (and often contradictory) intuitions.

The woke relativist KGB has decided that sex is malleable, mutable, superficial. The fact that the male's flesh is different, at the cellular level in every cell, from the female's flesh? Not important. Diversity requires sacrifices, and the sacrifice of the reason to Diversity is the highest act of devotion.

Of course, by Sexual Epicureanism, I do not mean simply hedonism, either practical or philosophical, although I do mean that. I primarily mean Epicureanism in its fundamental sense: the belief that forms do not exist and that reality is nothing more than atoms and void.

The radical Feminist who denies the essentiality of sex is a Sexual Epicurean -- for such a nihilist, there is no such thing as the forms of man and woman, and of their natures, male and female. That is so unwoke.

Rather, every thing that is male and female must be an epiphenomenon, and what an essentialist believes is an expression of an underlying phenomenon is nothing more than a shadow. Just as for the atheist materialist the mind "emerges" from matter (yet has no essential reality as mind), so too maleness and femaleness emerge from the physical lifeform, yet (somehow) do not "really" exist. And, since maleness and femaleness do not *really* exist they must be chosen.

So, instead of the traditionalist world where men and women *were* men and women, and men and women *chose* who to have sex with, the postmodernist world asserts that you cannot choose who you have sex with, but you can choose whether you are a man or a woman.

That such an insanity has gotten as far as it has is a tribute to the triumph of organized obstinacy over apparent reality.

These people belong in an asylum, yet they have escaped and now propose to rule us.

(I don't mean the asylum part literally, but the phrase was irresistible.)

But, just as Epicureanism in the natural sciences eventually slams into the Platonist self - the soul - (*The Truman Show*-style), Sexual Epicureanism has nothing to say to Sexual Platonism. (Other than *You bigot!*)

Modern natural science has made great discoveries, and all of them are consistent with a world of nothing more than atoms and void. And yet, that seeming triumph of Epicureanism just can't seem to make people think that they don't exist. Even though modern natural science would like to tell people that they are the mere epiphenomena of matter, people just seem to keep insisting that they are people -- that they exist, that they are real *as people*.

In the same way, regardless of certain apparent fluidities in the ideas of men and women, and maleness and femaleness, testified to by certain anomalous cases where the biological and psychological characteristics of the male and female are not clear-cut, or are transposed, or flow

together, (most) men still *believe* themselves to be men and (most) women still *believe* themselves to be women.

The postmodernist reacts to this gut belief the same way an atheist reacts to faith. It is all a delusion. The atheist has his God delusion, the postmodernist has her sex delusion.

Yet this is all really no mystery. The world was created perfect in order by God, yet through the sin of man, was sundered, shattered into chaos, and is only being drawn back together through and in Christ Jesus.

There is real chaos in *this* world -- the chaos of sin, of nothingness, of formlessness, of the abyss. And there is the real order in this world that is the gift of Christ, the gift of God's order, His grace, His form, and His truth.

The abyss of nothingness and formlessness that atheistical materialism and Sexual Epicureanism respond to is nothing more than the chaos of sin, shot through the whole fabric of reality.

The forms that structure the basis of human reality - the soul, male and female, love, truth, justice - these are the remaining and growing realities in *this* world of the Form of God, of the Truth of His Spirit, which, in the fullness of time, will become the *next* world of the Kingdom of God.

Knowing *that* the soul, male and female, love, justice, and truth *exist* is **not** the same as knowing **what** the soul, male and female, love, justice, and truth *are*.

That requires an enquiry into the nature of truth.

Set aside a few thousand years.

The practice of racism has been a horror for the human race. The theory of anti-racism, when extended to every category of human existence and not focused on the problem of racism itself, has helped melt the brain of Western civilization.

Let us propose a way of thinking about the human person:

Race, sex, culture, worldview, faith.

Or, let us state the matter formally:

Lifeform, psyche, culture, worldview, faith.

A person has a physical flesh -- flesh and blood and guts, an organic entity that has its own biotic integrity.

The pre-anti-racist racial theory imagined that skin pigmentation and other superficial bodily characteristics determined the nature of the inner soul, the contours of one's mind and heart.

That was stupid madness.

Racism is to philosophy what flat-earthism is to astronomical physics.

In comparison to racism, phrenology is the most cutting edge neurological science.

Racism has the same bearing on the nature of the human flesh as astrology has on a person's destiny: namely, none.

One's psyche is a manifestation of one's soul in one's flesh. The psyche is not the soul, but how the soul manifests itself in the organic material matrix at its disposal - in which it is enfleshed.

The psyche is the conflux of the flesh and the spirit.

In the world as God created it, and in the world as God will create it anew, the flesh and the spirit are in total communion and agreement, and the flesh is subject to the spirit.

In this fallen world, the flesh is sundered from the rule of the spirit, because the spirit is sundered from direct communion with the Spirit of Holiness, the Holy Spirit.

Thus, in this fallen world, the disobedient, rebellious flesh has desires against even the morally enlightened spirit.

As St. Paul wrote:

For the flesh has desires against the Spirit, and the Spirit against the flesh; these are opposed to each other, so that you may not do what you want.

(Galatians 5:17)

For the spirit in Christ is a spirit in the Spirit of Christ, and thus in the Spirit of God, if only partially and not yet totally. But the flesh is part of the world, and the world is under the dominion of Satan. Only in the endurance of faith in this life can the spirit be ratified in Christ, and thus risen to the resurrection of the righteous and rewarded with the gift of eternal life.

The human flesh (lifeform) is sexed into male and female. The spirit enfleshed in male flesh attains a male psyche and the spirit enfleshed in female flesh attains a female psyche.

The male flesh, urgent for the female flesh, and the female flesh, urgent for the male flesh, will have according sexual desires within his or her psyche. Those desires will be appetites that can only be gratified and satisfied through the act of intercourse. That act of intercourse, in the Providence and Plan of God, in accordance with the Order of His Will, gives new life. And, in this world ruined by death, that new life -- that successive generation of new life -- is the only thing that preserves the human race in the overwhelming face of death.

So we can restate the human person:

Flesh, psyche, Spirit.

The psyche is not a separate essence, (as such), but the confluence of the material essence of the flesh with the spiritual essence of the spirit.

In this fallen world, even a spirit in the state of grace, when in confluence with a fallen flesh such as ours (which are evidently fallen since they must suffer corruption - death), will have a psyche that is not consonant with the Will of God. Some fleshs will be more sundered, others less, and thus some psyches will face greater challenges in obeying the Will of God, the Will of the Spirit.

When the spirit is a soul in the state of mortal sin, imagine how sinful the psyche will be, with a sinful spirit enfleshed in a fallen flesh.

The lifeform is what the flesh is. The psyche is *how* the spirit is enfleshed in that flesh. The spirit is what the soul is.

The spirit, in Heaven and the New Jerusalem, will see God face-to-face, and, by doing so, will, in every single action, down to the most minute detail, act in accordance with God's Will. There will be only one culture, one way of life, shared by all, expressed uniquely by each unique saint, with the universal confluence of each uniqueness flowing back to the Supreme Spirit, and being fed by the Spirit.

In *this* world, each human person is imprisoned within a flesh in which the spirit cannot directly commune with anyone else's spirit, but must pantomime his or her spiritual reality to other spirits through words and gestures and acts.

People are scattered across the world, and, in this disarray, different clumps of people develop their own disparate practices -- their cultures.

These cultures are historically contingent, arising on the basis of all the specific human persons who have lived in those geographical areas, with some persons obviously more significant than others in shaping the culture. These worldly cultures will have disparate languages, states, legal systems, histories, mythologies, literatures, arts, cuisines, and manners of expression.

In this fallen world, the spirit, expressed through the psyche, (that is, in conflux with a fallen flesh), cannot see God directly. Since God is Reality, the spirit's worldview (what the psyche perceives) will not be the total worldview. At best, it will only ever be a partial worldview, with a lesser or greater amount of truth or untruth. A worldview may be so compromised by untruth, and oriented so fundamentally towards evil, that we can say that a worldview is incorrect or even evil.

Spirits will imbibe worldviews from the surrounding culture and will generate individual worldviews that mix both engrained cultural worldviews and the personal worldview of that particular spirit.

Just as the spirit informs the psyche, so too the worldview held by the spirit (what the spirit *sees*, i.e. knows or understands) will inform the psyche and determine the behavior of the individual human person's flesh, or lifeform.

One's faith is one's deepest intuition. The deepest intuition of a religious believer is the revealed (or perceived) truth given by one's God, or what one believes to be God. The atheist has a faith too, though it is not necessarily a religious faith. There must be a deepest intuition according to which the atheist structures his other intuitions, at least his moral intuitions. Of course, it is also possible that the atheist has no consistent epistemic structure, but only a discordant flotsam and jetsam of intuitions clashing about in his mind. The atheistical mind is always, in the end, a wrecked mind: the wreckage of philosophical inconsistency, blindness, pride, arrogance, and cowardice. The atheistical mind cannot bear to be consistent, for that would permit his nihilism - moral nihilism and essential nihilism - to overrun his whole personality and way of life, which few want.

One's worldview will be shaped by one's deepest intuition.

The worldview of a faith of revelation is a religion.

The worldview of a faith of the world is a philosophy.

In this world, no religion or philosophy or culture or psyche or flesh can be pure, can be as God intended. All such things can only be nearer or farther from the Will of God.

And, hence, no civilization can be perfect...only perfected, over time.

A revealed word can be perfect, but the human race's interpretation of it, in this age, will always be limited. Now, it is the duty of the clergy to ensure that those limitations do not imperil the salvation of the flock. So, the limitations themselves must be limited.

As we discussed in our overview of a critical civilization, one's faith must be distinguished from one's knowledge from one's ethics.

Faith, knowledge, ethics (or practice).

One would like to have a flawless ethics, as one would like to be a flawless person, and while our ethics must be informed by the current state of our knowledge, and our knowledge must be informed by our current understanding of our faith, since we are limited, finite, sinful creatures, we cannot, in this world, attain a perfect sight of the truth of faith nor attain a perfect godlike knowledge of reality.

This humility prevents our practice of our faith, our knowledge, and our ethics from slushing together and producing disaster.

For, to restate this critical point, when faith believes itself to be perfect knowledge, it produces fundamentalism.

And when knowledge believes itself to be complete and thus perfectly capable of dictating ethics, it produces tyranny.

A religious fundamentalist will produce a religious tyranny (c.f. Torquemada and ISIS).

An atheistical fundamentalist will produce an atheist tyranny (c.f. the Soviet Union and Nazi Germany).

The authentic Christian faith - the faith of the Gospels - does not permit murder to establish a religious tyranny. That is because the faith of Christ is the faith in the True God, the God who is Love.

So, even a Christian who felt the need to fuse faith, knowledge, and ethics could not at all presume to institute a tyranny of violence to enforce his faith.

But consider less enlightened faiths. Those who seek to create a monolith of faith, knowledge, and practice believe themselves to be demi-Gods, deputized with perfect insight by God to create Heaven on Earth.

Of course, such deluded, arrogant, sinful souls always create Hell on Earth.

And, if Hell is the source of their faith, they do precisely as their Master intended.

We can state the matter in more neutral terminology:

Hypothesis, theory, practice.

A hypothesis is a basis of reasoning, a supposition, that is not proven. Generally, one seeks to prove the supposition and thence turn the hypothesis into a thesis: a theory.

Then one can implement the theory in practice.

But, the foundational proposition - that deepest intuition - will *always* be without further foundation. The foundation of fundamental truth is itself. Reality is founded upon itself. Or, we should rightly say, Himself.

In a state of spiritual perfection, and not just spiritual perfection as we mortals understand it, but total essential and existential perfection, we will be able to *see* the self-founded foundation, and *know* it to be true.

But, in this fallen world, in our sinful state, we are unable to *see* foundational truth. That is why St. Paul says, “We walk by faith and not by sight” (2 Corinthians 5:7).

And while faith can affirm *that* something is true, it does not provide a full interpretation of *every* truth that can stem from that faith.

In that sense (that limited sense), the deepest intuition must always remain a hypothesis (in this fallen world).

The whole project of Islam is to trick people into thinking that *this* is the world as God created it, perfect in nature, without taint of the chaos of sin. With such a delusion, people can very easily be led away into becoming Satan’s willing executioners, deputies of evil who set about establishing Kingdoms of Hell on earth.

Since one cannot see the foundation clearly as Truth, but can only dimly perceive it as hypothetical, and since one’s reason is finite, limited, and corrupted by sin, or at least concupiscence, the human person will always have an incomplete, inchoate knowledge (or, more exactly, theory: for knowledge would be perfect, total, and final, while theory is imperfect, partial, and provisional). That incomplete, inchoate knowledge, when put into action in practice, will produce blunders, mistakes, and disasters, insofar as it is wrong (and salutary actions and triumphs insofar as it is right).

The humble spirit professes:
Hypothesis, theory, practice.

The deluded tyrant professes:
Truth, knowledge, justice.
And death to all who disagree with my interpretation!

Now, the Postmodernist declares:
There is *no!* truth, knowledge, or justice.

The Criticalist posits, in faith:
There must be truth, knowledge, and justice.
And hypothesis must seek truth.
Theory must pursue knowledge.
And practice must aim at justice.

The threat of fundamentalist tyranny is clear enough (c.f. 9/11).

But we must also be wary of the Secularist menace.

For the Secularist Leninist takes the absolute certitude of the anti-racist category of racial identity (the primary case being African-American or Black identity), and then, in essence, racializes all the other aspects of the expression of the human person. That is, the Secularist Leninist reifies all other identities (after first identifying identities out of the expressions and experiences of people) into absolutes, absolute in their structural integrity, and so absolute in their sanctity, such that all critique is blasphemy, and, the same as for the religious tyrant, enforced by some form of violence - if not today by the criminal law, at least through coercion, intimidation, and propaganda.

The sanctity of Identity is the holiness of the Secularist Leninist.

It is a product of a ditch dive out of the practice of criticism into the barbarism of false certitude.

Now, the ditch dive into Black Identity produces almost no problems, while producing many solutions. This is because the false certitude produced by the ditch dive very nearly parallels the actual certitude of reality. In other words, the racist (as a racist) has virtually no useful intuitions. This is because the racist believes that the lifeform and psyche of a human person is determined by skin pigmentation and eye shape and the size of your nose or lips. Which is stupid. Really stupid. Lead paint chip potato chip stupid. It makes Scientology look like quantum mechanics.

Now, strictly speaking, a criticalist must always be willing to match intuition with intuition. So, for instance, the psychiatrist must, at least theoretically, always be willing to match intuitions with the Scientologist. Now, since human beings have limited (scarce) time, and that time must be economized into the most efficient uses, there will always be opportunity costs. And since we can figure that Scientology is bullshit, it would be more *useful* for the psychiatrist to discourse with other reputable men and women of science.

It would be as if Stephen Hawking had an acquaintance who insisted on questioning the color of the sky, insisting that it was a deep crimson and not at all, ever, blue. Hawking might,

the first few times, point up and say to the acquaintance, "Look, it's blue." Now, strictly speaking from a criticalist outlook, to seek the truth, one should always look up with that deluded acquaintance. But, since one has limited time, and using your time in such a way would prevent the useful spending of one's time in actually useful endeavors, one can rightly shoo such a person away.

But when we come to matters of psychology, sexuality, culture, philosophy, and religion -- whoa are we in a different world.

When you turn every psychological turn of mind, every sexual appetite, every cultural practice, every philosophical viewpoint, and every religious belief into a kind of race, watch out, because that is the death of thought.

So instead of being able to have rational conversations about anything, we have the gay race, the trans race, and the Muslim "race". Imagine how many more races of non-races we shall have before the Secularist Leninists are through. And even though there is no Muslim race and Islam is not a racial identity, the Identity is crystallized and the Identity is sacred, so no meaningful critique of a worldview that more than a billion people entertain can be questioned. Such a worldview concerns the very fate of the world. And yet the fate of the world must kneel to all-sacred Identity. And this taboo of critique is not only coming from the fundamentalists, but from the Secular "Liberals", who are *supposed* to be the guardians of free speech. But, as I have constantly shown, the philosophical matrix of modern liberalism itself is unstable and necessarily leads to such a result.

We can now see how a critical civilization -- which distinguishes hypothesis from theory from practice *and* seeks for hypothesis to become truth, theory to become knowledge, and practice to become justice, *but* does **not** pretend that it has truth, knowledge, and justice, when it does not -- will, in the fullness of time, become a Christian civilization. For, after long searching and hard struggle, the *search* for truth, knowledge, and justice *through* questioning, through the quest for discovery, will bear fruit in the attainment of truth, knowledge, and justice, in faith, in the end.

Quest and question both have the same Latin root: the verb *quaerere* (to ask, to seek). All intellectual study is a questioning, and all questioning is a seeking. Ask and it will be given to you. Seek and you shall find. Knock and the door will be opened to you (Matthew 7:7).

Postmodernist civilization collapses into moral death, and perhaps finally a physical death, through abandoning the very realities of truth, knowledge, and justice. Postmodernism is the suicide of civilization. It is the [Marshall Applewhite](#) of civilizations.

Islamic civilization collapses into moral death and, as we have all too tragically seen, very physical death and destruction -- and it does this because Islam promulgates a truth that is a lie, a knowledge that is falsehood and ignorance, and a justice that is the most foul, murderous wickedness. Then, in its supreme, hateful, wicked arrogance, it forbids all questioning of its “truths”, its “knowledge”, and its “justice”, upon pain of death, so that its truth can never be exposed as untruth, its knowledge never exposed as ignorance, and its justice never exposed as injustice. What can be said of a “religion” that claims that God commands people to murder other people for apostasy? The Islamic fascination with and love for death, and its ready resort to murder to keep its control over human souls, should instantly alert any human being capable of rational thought that the true God has nothing to do with Islam. Islam is the sclerosis of civilization into a hardened, bitter, murderous, absolute Tyranny. It is the [Ariel Castro](#) of civilizations.

The moral -- and I am afraid all too soon, physical - fight for freedom, truth, and Christ is the fight *for* freedom of expression and *against* the tyranny of violence, the tyranny of **false** absolutes, whether those absolutes are postmodernist absolutes of nihilism or Islamic absolutes of a false divinity. It is a fight *for* the true absolutes of truth, knowledge, and justice, in faith in Christ -- and in the non-violent, peaceful, loving faith of Christ, not the perverted, wicked, false “faith” in an imaginary Fascist Christ that permits Christians to set up their own perverted, wicked tyrannies of violence. What distinguishes the true absolutes from the false absolutes is **faith, peace, and HUMILITY**. The true absolutes never institute a tyranny of violence, just as Jesus would never become the God-Emperor *in this* world of an Empire of God, executing people and leading people off in chains.

Postmodernism, which is the Marxist Mother Theory of the Secularist Leninists, decides that truth must be sacrificed for the sake of freedom.

Islam -- not each and every Muslim, but Islam as a civilization -- decides that freedom must be sacrificed for the sake of truth.

As such, Postmodernism decrees that blasphemy against freedom must be prohibited, thus violating the freedom of expression and instituting a tyranny of violence.

Islam decrees that blasphemy against truth must be prohibited, thus violating the freedom of expression and instituting a tyranny of violence.

Yet the actual truth -- the true truth -- is that there can be no truth without freedom, and no freedom without truth.

The truth of the True God necessitates and verifies this. For God is Spirit, and Spirit is Freedom, and the Spirit is Truth. So true Truth is real Freedom. And real Freedom can only be itself in Truth.

Postmodernism declares all that opposes it “hatred” and this “hatred” is supposedly the matrix of unfreedom, and freedom (as it defines it, which is really nothing more than license and chaos) is the ultimate good. Thus, the freedom of those who speak the actual truth must be circumscribed -- Postmodernist “freedom” (moral chaos) must be given a safe space.

This is because the Postmodernist truth -- moral nihilism -- is inherently so weak that it must necessarily be coddled and protected and privileged. Its precious, delicate ears cannot bear to be burdened with those caustic and hurtful things -- real truths.

Islam declares all that opposes it evil, and this evil is supposedly a threat to God’s Kingdom in the world. Thus, the freedom of those who speak the actual truth must be circumscribed -- Islam, in order to survive, must conquer the world so that no one can ever speak a word against it.

This is because Islam, as a religious system of belief, is inherently so weak that it must necessarily destroy all those who frankly speak their opinion of it and all those who actually analyze it. Its inconsistent, fragile, mishmash of justice and wickedness would all too easily and quickly be seen for the horror that it actually is.

That does not mean that all the people who are Muslim are horrible -- far from it. Too many to count are wonderful, precious, impossibly magnificent people. But the Quran -- the *core* of the religion -- is a hopelessly confused muddle of justice and injustice, good and evil.

Islam cannot bear that anyone in the world actually say that, because it is so obviously true. So obviously true that it cannot be refuted except through violence and terror and war and conquest.

Only tyranny and oppression and a blank internal denial of reality can lead one to profess such an amoral muddle as God’s final and only Truth.

Islam is the boyfriend who cannot make you love him on his own merits, but who kidnaps you and threatens to murder you if you do not profess your love for him.

All the Gospel of Christ says is: “Hear me out.”

It asks no more than this. Just hear Him out. Just listen.

Or don’t. You were created free, and Heaven or Hell, your freedom will be respected and ratified by the God that is Freedom.

Now, more Christians (“Christians”) than we can count have violated the letter and spirit of the Gospel of Christ.

The Gospel of Christ does not join forces with the Roman Empire.

The Gospel of Christ does not become co-partners with states. It does not crown Holy Roman Emperors. It does not crown Napoleon.

The Gospel of Christ does not murder those who oppose it. The Gospel of Christ does not execute anyone, or burn people at the stake.

The Gospel of Christ does not constitute itself as a state.

No Christian leader can be an official in a state, much less the monarch of a state.

No Christian leader can rule territory. The Kingdom of Christ is not of this world. (John 18:36). And that does *not* mean, oh, wait six hundred years, and then some other bloke *will* constitute the tyranny of violence that God desires. Not at all. Far from it.

But, just like Christ Himself, no matter how much you misapply the Gospel of Christ, or tread on it, or ignore it, or misinterpret it, or mangle it, or spit on it, or piss on it, or shit on it --- *nothing* anyone can do can sully the Gospel of Christ. The false forms of the Church will pass away and crumble into dust, but the Gospel of Christ, and the indomitable Risen Christ, will *always* rise from the ashes, anew, perfect, clear, clean, holy.

Postmodernism requires all the force and melee of the state, the corporate octopus, the media, and academia to impose its will and get its way. The Postmodernist cannot argue, but only gripe, sneer, and condemn, mouthing and prattling empty slogans with all the ferocity of wounded indignation and all the windswept illogicality of the abyss.

Islam can only ever feel safe if it conquers the world and establishes a brutal World Tyranny the likes of which humanity has never known, and the prospect of which anyone with a shred of decency can only mourn. The violent children of Satan in our midst sharpen their knives, ready their rifles, and harden their cocks for the murder, slaughter, and rape that awaits them like an anti-divine, Satanic smorgasbord.

All Christ requires to prevail is a voice willing to speak His name.

Freedom in truth, and truth in freedom, also does not mean a Christian Fascist reaction -- racist, nationalistic, authoritarian, delusional, violent, hateful, spiteful. Racists may burn Crosses, but the Christ that hung on the Cross would never bless the actual hatred, and violence, of those who preach tyranny rather than brotherhood.

Freedom also does not mean freedom only for the rich. The “conservatives” (what they’re conserving, I don’t know.....oh, wait, I do know: the wealth of the wealthy) can prattle

all they want about freedom. But the freedom I am talking about is the freedom of expression. And even if there is a formal, technical freedom of expression -- in that there are no prior restraint laws or government persecution for speaking or publishing -- if people are reduced to the level of components in a vast mechanism, and their economic, social, and cultural life is degraded through the operations of that mechanism, then the whole *purpose* of expression is lost. The purpose of expression is the exchange of expressions. A blinkered, harried, economically harassed mass of people cannot conceive anything worth expressing, nor develop the rich, fruitful cultural, civilizational dialogue that lights the road up from barbarism to freedom and truth. A necessitous people is not a free people.

Now, neither racial hatred nor economic royalism threaten the Gospel of Christ in the same way that Postmodernism (read: Nihilism) and Islam do.

For racial hatred is, ultimately, too stupid to be a world-historical threat.

And the Gospel of Christ only becomes clearer when set beside the delusional greeds and lusts of the wealthy.

But Nihilism and Islam seek political power to institute the tyranny of their ideologies, and that quest always means violence against Christ - brutal, exterminating violence.

(A Brief note -- it occurs to me that some may counter my point about racial hatred being too stupid to pose a threat to Christianity, in a world-historical sense, with the example of Nazi Germany or the Confederacy. That point is not a shibboleth for me; I could be wrong. That being said, I think that those examples are the exceptions that prove the rule, so to speak. Neither Nazi nor Confederate ideology rested solely on the basis of racism, though they were spectacularly, and vilely, racist. The Nazi ideology promised a national restoration of Germany: German Nationalism was its ideological core (read *Mein Kampf*...or don't, really don't, unless you're a scholar). Likewise, Confederate ideology rested on Southern Nationalism *and* the economic nationalism (and royalism) of the slaveholding elite. In both cases, racism was a reinforcement and goal of the Nationalist projects of preservation (the Confederacy) and restoration (the Nazis). But in neither case was the pitch merely, "Hey, let's hate and kill a minority!" -- that pitch, in the absence of nationalism and economic royalism, I *think* would not sell. "Why? Why should we bother?" would be the response. Only when *linked* to some greater goal -- like "National Regeneration" or to "Save the South" do I think racist pitches animate majorities. Likewise, most racists use racism as a tonic, to suppress their own feelings of alienation and inadequacy. Only when a whole people requires the suppression of its alienation and inadequacy --- and a rich elite requires the preservation of its "property" --- does racism really get going as a dominant political force. Racism is a program, it is not an ideology; as such. Of course, once the main ideology has gained steam and is functioning, racism can be a powerful (although evil and deluded) justification of and sustaining activity for the core

ideology: which, fittingly, is usually nationalism. I say fittingly because nationalism is essentially another permutation of racism (normally): for the nation (not the nation-state, but the nation) is some ethnic group. Only America was not formally founded as an ethnic enterprise (and racists precisely disagree with that statement, claiming that America is an inherently English (or “White”) nation). So, is it not natural that an ideology based on ethnicity, like your run-of-the-mill nationalism should cotton so easily to theories about human life that are intrinsically racist? Mainstream, non-racist Americans get muddled on the dangers of nationalism, since their (formally) race-free, enlightened form of nationalism seems so pure. But your run-of-the-mill nationalism (c.f. Asia and Europe) is bitterly dependent on racial animus and racialism. So, generally, it seems to me that, to be politically successful, racism must be parasitic upon some more potent ideological formula: usually nationalism proper. And nationalism proper is a kind of right-wing Secularist Leninism. It does not kill for God, it kills for the Nation. And the Nation is a decidedly secular affair. Now, right-wing Secularist Nationalists may find it useful to impress God as an operative or soldier in their cadres and divisions, but rarely does God get a seat at the table when the Nationalists are plotting their strategy. In the Secularist Nationalist political panoply God is an ornament, a mascot: big and showy, but mute and irrelevant. Cross-reference how the Nazis did not seek the guidance of Christian leaders, rather they dictated to and brutally crushed Christian leaders (who, admittedly, were all too easily and readily dictated to). Hitler did not seek God’s guidance....why seek the guidance of God when you have made yourself God?)

(Again, one may say that the near identity of nationalism and racism proves racism’s political potency, as such, and hence proves its inherent danger. I would counter that the Secularism that fails to put God at the center of the culture (in a real, authentic, and meaningful way, and not as a mascot, bauble, or afterthought) gives rise in the population of a need to create some god for themselves....and that god will be the God of Themselves, the Great We, the Nation. So, nationalism is the theology of the Nation. (Cross-reference how Soviet Communism was inoperable without mega-doses of Russian Nationalism, and how Chinese “Communism” (or whatever it is; hint: Nationalism) is inoperable without rabid Chinese Nationalism.) This Nationalism *can* be pacific and not perpetrate great crimes *if* the Nation is prosperous, free, and happy. But, like a vengeful narcissist, when not prosperous, free, and happy: *Watch out!* Without any sense of humility or idea of trust in the True God and obedience to His Will, the Nation, when humiliated, gets profoundly and murderously angry. And, in its nationalist murderousness, it seizes and seeks to murder all nations that are not it. For, when the Nation is your God, your Devil is all other nations that are not you.

For all its faults, the religious Middle Ages was far less racist than the modern liberal nationalist West of the 18th and 19th centuries, much less the catastrophe that was the 20th century. Only the horrors of organized Nationalist and Fascist racisms produced the anti-racism that makes our contemporary society morally superior, in terms of race, to the medieval civilizations.

So, we might say that racism is what happens when nationalism is humiliated and wounded.

Fighting racism without curing nationalism is like trying to get a man a job when he is still too drunk to think straight. You're putting the cart before the horse. And you cannot cure nationalism without first curing secularism.)

If the Chinese leadership wants a truly prosperous, free, and happy nation, with a harmonious culture, it should ask the South Korean Christians to convert the Chinese people to Christianity. Constantine the Great knew a good thing when he saw it.

To the Chinese Communist Party -- tyranny is not necessary for a strong, harmonious society. Don't do things like torturing and murdering Liu Xiaobo. It's wrong, first of all. And it's not necessary. It's stupid.

The Chinese Communist Party fears democracy because it fears chaos.
Nationalism and state violence are the real seeds of chaos.

Christianity, the true and generous and free practice of Christianity, would renew Chinese society in ways you can't begin to imagine. The principle of Christian love and self-sacrifice and solidarity, when infused in Chinese culture, would produce citizens who are considerate, gentle, honest, hard-working, and non-violent. Trust is the glue that holds a society together. Without trust, you cannot have economic growth, nor can you have honest government.

True Christianity promotes trust, because it promotes honesty. Honest people are honest businessmen and honest politicians. They also become thoughtful and kind.

An honest China, and one bound together by kindness and love for all other people, will be richer, stronger, and wiser than it has ever been.

In such a society of honest and kind people, the Chinese leadership would have nothing to fear from democracy, or anything else.

The Chinese leadership would go from hiding under its bed with a baseball bat, to striding freely and briskly on a sunny day, eating an ice cream cone.

We must also reflect upon the nature of Secularist sexual morality, namely that it has none. That is, the content of the Secularist moral theory of human sexuality is empty, or, at least, purely Epicurean, in both the philosophical and profane senses.

The one criterion of the Secularist moral theory of human sexuality is consent.

I am for consent. Consent is a good thing. Consent is an important desideratum in a moral theory of sexuality. It is necessary. Obviously.

But we must note that the requirement of the criterion of consent is not an element of any moral theory of sexuality, qua its character as a moral theory of sexuality.

Rather, consent is an element of a social theory of human society, in which sexuality is simply one more activity that human beings undertake. In Secularism's schema, human sexuality is morally no different from commerce or education or entertainment or culture or any other merely social activity. So, just as coercion and duress are not permitted in contracting (in a commercial setting), or in teaching (in an educational setting), so they are not permitted in sexual intercourse, which is conceived of as merely a "sexual setting".

Once we can determine that sex is not rape, what, then, is the essential nature of sexuality in the Secularist moral theory?

Outside of the Postmodernist asylum, something is moral because it pertains to the nature of that thing. The ontological theory of a thing, which determines a thing's nature, implicitly determines the moral character and contours of that thing, the explicit working out of which is the responsibility of the moral theory of that thing.

That is, what does Secularism tell us is right and wrong concerning sexuality?

As we have seen, consent is not a moral teaching about sexuality, as such. It is simply a moral teaching about the social interaction of human beings, as such.

Less overtly or enthusiastically hedonistic (in the immoral sense of that word) Secularists will begin to spin tales of psychological, emotional, or even spiritual integrity -- something about the role of sex in building emotional, relational, social, or even cultural bonds. Some may talk in vague Jungian terms about the spiritual force that sex generates in people and society.

And yet, none of these ontological and moral theories of sexuality can be distinguished from purely social theories. For, many other activities, such as a simple conversation, playing games and sports, and even watching television together can build emotional, relational, social and cultural bonds. In fact, they do.

How then is sexuality different from such activities?

In the end, Secularism declares that there is no inherently unique nature to human sexuality. It is simply another activity -- certainly a potentially dangerous one, with the possibilities of disease and that pesky inconvenience, pregnancy, but, in the end, no more dangerous than bungee-jumping, skydiving, or drinking the water in a developing country. Life comes with risks and pleasures, and sex is simply one of life's greater, and riskier, pleasures.

Secularism says: To seek to sacralize sexuality as something more than simply a pleasurable or emotionally bonding activity, the same as many other activities, is mere shamanism: the voodoo of a benighted mind clinging to comforting fairy tales about immortality or too timid to stride valiantly into the nothingness of reality like those brave souls, the atheists.

And yet, is this so?

It depends on the definition of sex and sexuality, doesn't it?

If your definition of sex includes oral sex, anal sex, and contracepted sex, then you might very well conclude that sex is simply the theme park of human existence, with a bevy of fun rides for the whole family to explore.

Sex then becomes no different than driving a fast car, water skiing, or a night out on the town -- it is a pastime.

All of this fun and games obscures -- and is meant to obscure -- the vital power and promise of human sexuality. By coitus -- sticking the man's penis into the woman's vagina -- a new sentient being capable of rational thought, free will, and the spiritual love of God comes into the world. And, since his or her parents are mortal, he or she has the possibility of outliving his or her parents, and, barring a biological disaster, on the whole, the whole human species successfully generates new life, generation to generation to generation, down through the ages unto the end of time.

Coital sex literally generates life and preserves the human race from death.

Is it emotionally gratifying? Maybe. Yet, in this, it is existentially no different from the possibilities of homosexual sexual acts, or from basically any human social activity.

Is it a spiritual act? Not always. Probably rarely...unfortunately.

Does the act contribute to the self-actualization of each partner's personhood? Huh? What? I thought we were having sex, not repairing a jet engine or writing a metaphysics term paper.

The nature of sex is life.

LIFE.

Pure and simple.

Sex can be pleasurable (although it can be painful), it can be enjoyable (although it can be dull or otherwise unsatisfying), and it can be emotionally or spiritually nourishing (although it can be about as spiritually enlightening as eating a bag of potato chips...and is generally messier, depending on how neat an eater you are).

Can sex not produce life? Can some be infertile, such that sex will not produce life?

Certainly.

But a car's engine can be broken. That does not mean that the *essence* of the car is to have a broken engine and to be unable to move. A car that cannot move is a broken car, and a sexuality that cannot produce life is a broken sexuality.

This is not meant to offend or hurt the sterile, any more than I seek to offend or hurt those with cars on cinder blocks. But are we to pretend that a car on cinder blocks can drive and is as a car should be simply to not offend those who own broken cars?

Does the fact that blind people have eyes that cannot see mean that the essence of the eye is not to see?

Coital sex is the standard of sex: it is what sex is, and what sex is for. And what it is for is life: the life of the human race.

Every other sexual act is simply sexual by reference to coition.

Coition is the fruition that preserves the human race from the abyss of annihilation.

(You're welcome.)

Is this heterosexist?

Is this heteronormative?

Is this masculino-essentialism?

Is this Coital Fascism?

Is this Coitalo-hetero-masculo-deconstructolo-gigolo-deuce-bigoloism?

Maybe.

But, if it is, it is also one other thing.

True.

If knowing that the nature of sex is life, and understanding that the moral theory of sexuality must privilege life, is unwoke, then I don't want to be woke.

Besides, does Coital Fascism really sound like such a bad time?

The Secularist moral theory of human sexuality is a chaos of inconsistent, inane, babbling nonsense, a toxic wasteland of monstrous ideologies and vain precepts, all gurgling falsehoods that are destructive of human life. The Secularist's sole advantage is that it can purr, "Fun, easy pleasure -- no strings, no pain, no responsibility - on your terms, when you want it, how you want it."

And once the human person and human society sails up to the Siren, it discovers nothing but corpses and corruption, a fetid morass of deceit, broken promises, disillusion, rich with the rotting flesh of infants, flooded with the curdled blood of the innocent.

The true nature of sex is life, and thus the moral imperative of sex is the generation, preservation, and nurturing of human life, in freedom, truth, and God, the Giver of all life.

A Journey to the Center of the American Mind

American liberalism (and by liberalism, I do not mean Republicans vs. Democrats, but the essential fabric of Americanism, which has right-wing and left-wing manifestations, and is rooted in its fundamental Hobbesian-Lockean philosophical matrix by way of Jefferson) is suffering from many things, as omnivores do, but particularly from a kind of obsolescence of its basic socio-intellectual engine.

Americans' rank anti-intellectualism does not help matters.

And the "intellectual" Americans, the European-imitating trendy Postmodernists, simply cast the substance of anti-intellectualism into the manner and form of intellectual enquiry. They do this by their thorough-going nihilism, which, if anything, is *more* destructive of the intellectual enterprise than simply going "La-La-La-La-La-La-La-La- *Amuurica - I can't hear you! Bible!*"

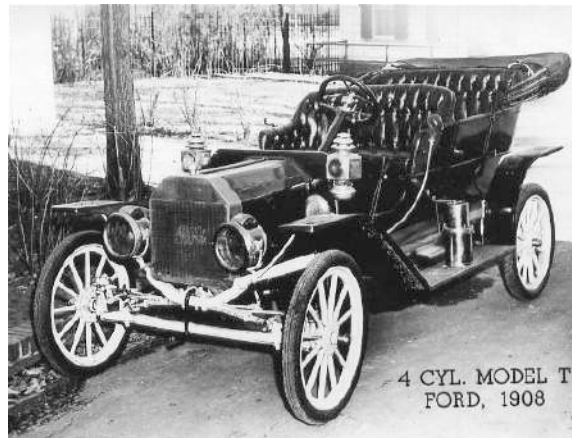
The American Mind, (and by this I mean its core crankshaft and not all the paraphernalia and tchotchkes of other cultures and systems with which it has adorned itself and which, in many ways, it has even drank very deeply of), operates on a rather old operating system. Not that the OS is wrong, as such, in its fundamental particulars, but that its expression of those precepts often results in a clunky execution of concepts into practice, especially as our great ship of state rolls down the river of history into the great ocean of time.

Take individual rights, the consent of the governed, republicanism, bicameralism, presidentialism, the "government", the "private sphere", and the non-establishment of religion (also characterized by more left-wing types as the "separation of church and state").

Are these concepts "wrong"?

No, of course not.

But is a Model T "wrong"?



No, a Model T is not “wrong”. It is simply old.

Now, if I proposed that you replace your Model T with a Tesla, and you charged me with blasphemy and heresy....who would be sane, you or me?

How is it that Americans are so utterly and wildly and enthusiastically promiscuous when it comes to religious and philosophical and cultural ideas, yet these shibboleths listed above have the aura and elicit the reverence of the sacred? Why does the American Mind permit, and embrace, the critique of God, Christ, the Church, Truth, the soul, male and female, the nature of sex, the nature of life, the nature of reality, virtue, morality, ethics, and a raft of other concepts basic to human life, but those shibboleths listed above *cannot* be safely critiqued - questioned?

Remember, the traditionalist religious mind -- and the quintessentially un-Christian and anti-Christian mind -- *cannot* bear to have its sacred truths questioned. Such a horror is always condemned as blasphemy and heresy with all the vituperative insanity of barbarism.

This leads me to suspect that Christianity has *never* been the true religion of the United States of America. Rather, I suspect that Jeffersonianism has been America’s true religion all along.

If my hypothesis is correct, and I strongly suspect that it is, then that means that the true religion of the United States has never been any form of theism. For Jefferson and Jeffersonianism are fundamentally Deistic.

Not *a*-theistic, but Deistic.

Americans believe in a Deity. They just don’t *worship* that Deity -- at least, if worship is defined as trust in and obedience to God.

Theism involves a person or a people *marrying* God.

Deism likes to keep it casual. You know, amorphous. Fluid. Ambiguous.

That is simply because Americans worship themselves. And their freedom is the Mass of the Self.

And, sadly, the Mass of the Self -- in the end -- is always a Satanic affair.

European anti-Christians are more intellectual, and, hence, more consistent. They *know* that they reject Christ and His Father, God: God from God, Light from Light.

Jefferson never can say goodbye. His head and his heart are always conflicted -- at odds. He can never *choose* one or the other, pick up on one and leave the other behind.

Jefferson is no anomaly. He is simply the foremost exemplar and expositor of the American character, which gurgles up into an American Mind, of sorts.

The American seeks freedom. But, without Christ, and the discipline of faith and the obedience of faith, that freedom can never be more than a wretched zig-zaging between the good and the bad -- for when pleasure cannot be distinguished from virtue, and one is a true philosophical hedonist (an Epicurean), whose happiness rests in the self, rather than the Other (and, ultimately, the ultimate Other: God), one will never be able to bring oneself to *resist* temptation: because resisting temptation requires the foregoing of pleasures. And if one cannot -- or will not -- distinguish between a good pleasure and a bad pleasure, because one fundamentally does not believe in the chasm between good and evil, but, rather, like William Blake and Nietzsche, believes in the *Marriage* of Heaven and Hell, of Good and Evil, then one will swallow the evil.

Sorry, guys, you have to take one for the team.



Besides, a family is a terrible thing to waste.

But Americans don't simply swallow the evil. They seek to retain the good as well. So after dancing with the Devil, they seek to kiss and hug with God.

Europeans don't have this problem. Europeans, after the pattern of Robespierre and Lenin, are intellectual -- and hence are purer in their concepts, bolder and more mature and faithful (even) in their reasoning.

Europeans made a brief pit stop at Deism, on their journey away from Christianity, and then raced determinedly into atheism.

Like Jefferson, Americans can't let go of the Bible. So they cut it up and reassemble it as they please. They do the same with God and His Will.

Europeans - of the self-worshiping Nietzschean variety - gleefully throw themselves into the abyss, thinking that self-deification awaits.

Americans, surrounded as they are with true Christians and not quite so sure of the abyss, like to keep a back channel to God. But that doesn't mean that they want to *obey* God and *trust* in Him.

Deism, in the form of Jeffersonianism, spiritual and practical, provides Americans with a way to have it both ways: always the object of the American heart.

But, in the end, since the *real* truth is that there is One Way - Christ: the Way, the Truth, and the Life (John 14:6) - to choose *both* ways is really to choose one way: the Road to Hell.

Deism is probably a reaction to puritanism, of both the Reformation and Counter-Reformation varieties. So one might very well characterize Deism as simply "Anti-Puritanism". John Calvin and St. Robert Bellarmine? St. Augustine? Absolute buzz kills.

What the Reformation and Counter-Reformation offer in the spirit, they deprive in the flesh. They paint vivid and glorious pictures of the eternal reward that awaits the faithful spirit, and then plunge the temporal flesh into an often morbid terror of the Hell that awaits the disobedient.

Hell there is, and the terrors and horrors and pains are so grievous that a person should proclaim them clearly and volubly.

But a whole culture feeding upon the terror of Hellfire starts to get heartburn after a century or so.

All right, already the Hobbes, the Locke, the Jefferson goes: Hell, brimstone, roads paved with skulls, blood gushing in the infernal streets, the stank stench of sulphur suffocating the sinful. We get it. For Christ's sake.

Can't a bloke just shag, drink some wine, smoke his pipe, and rest easy for a moment, rather than, like the Salem Puritan of the 17th century, meticulously recount every blasted detail

of his moral life, in absolute terror that some imperfection or defect will embroil him in everlasting torment?

Jefferson is the moral and intellectual avatar of Anti-Puritanism. He is the 18th and early 19th century's rebuke to John Winthrop, that arch-conservative and authoritarian, but also Christian, figure of the American 17th century.

Whereas Winthrop saw a world of sorrows that must be struggled against, Jefferson saw a world of possibilities to explore and pleasures to be enjoyed.

Certainly, if I had to make up my mind, I would go with Winthrop. Most Americans would go with Jefferson.

But it is the failure of Western, Latin Christianity that it makes such choices. There are bad pleasures, and they must be resisted. And there is a misuse of freedom, and such freedom is not freedom at all, but merely slavery to sin. Sin is the alcoholism of the soul. But not all pleasure is bad, and not all freedom is toxic.

To have a manic fear of evil is to become a fundamentalist. To finally snap back against such mania and live for today, and live at peace in this world, is to be a secularist.

But the path between and past both fundamentalism and secularism is orthodoxy.

The orthodox mind knows that God and Satan exist, and distinguishes good from evil. But the orthodox mind understands that God is infinitely more powerful than Satan and evil. Satan is a mere angel. God is God. Evil is a real possibility, and if one falls into it in eternity, one shall suffer forever and irrevocably beyond all imagining: it is a true and foul terror: the horror of horrors. But the good has Christ Jesus as its Champion, and never has there been such a Champion. Evil is a possibility, and one can willfully thrust oneself into the flames. But Jesus Christ offers and affords every opportunity, opportunity after opportunity, day after day, to repent and be saved with an overwhelming abundance of grace. For the orthodox mind, the confidence in God and His Grace overwhelms one's fears of the very real possibility of a very real Hell.

Western European history (and by extension, American history) is this dialectical dance between Puritanism and Anti-Puritanism, between a moral mania on the one hand, and an exhausted worldliness on the other.

Why America is so different from Europe fills volumes, and cannot be really tackled here, nor should it be.

But certainly the vastness of the theater (once truly vast, now contracted by all the land being bought up) and the intentionally limited character of the government (in both its practice and its spirit), has eased the necessity for people to *choose* between Puritanism and Anti-Puritanism. Americans, to one extent or another, choose both. So, one American who is the most avid supporter of "Marriage Equality" and ready to call all who deviate from the Diversity

Orthodoxy “bigots” can be tenaciously puritanical in his or her attacks on marital infidelity. The French have no such mania. Now, adultery is wrong, but it is curious that those who apotheosize adultery (such as sodomy) into “marriage” can equally have a thundering vengeance against cheating - so vociferous that it would warm the cockles of John Winthrop’s heart.

Likewise, the same Bible thumper who can declare same-sex “marriage” the end of Western Civilization, (not naming names), can luxuriate in pornography, pre-marital fornication, oral sex, anal sex, and straight-up cheating. Such a sullied thumper’s Puritanism is only for “those people”; for himself or herself Anti-Puritanism suffices quite nicely.

And again, the Anti-Purtian hedonist, like Dan Savage, can be a (heterodox) defender of marital commitment against straight-up divorce.

Europeans have, in the main, set their course on an atheist, hedonist future (until God decides to screw them up --- hard).

We Americans never can say goodbye. We want to be poly with God and Satan. We are a dialectical Hegelian sugar plum dream of Puritanism and Anti-Puritanism, the impulses rapaciously making love with each other in the evening only to find that they hate each other in the morning. And then repeating the cycle in new, dazzling, dizzying, hurtful, absurd permutations.

Only Americans could construct a Sanctity of Gay Marriage. Europeans just fuck.

We are a strange people, we Americans.

The strangeness, it seems to me, mostly stems from being of two minds, of two hearts. We are all, in way or another, Christian and pagan. We are Epicureans and Platonists.

It need not be this way. One can be Christian and leave paganism behind. One can be a Platonist and leave Epicureanism to the vultures.

But I am simply describing what I think America *is*, not what it should be.

Much of this interplay of Puritanism and Anti-Puritanism in American culture (most of it) is the perpetual Marriage and Divorce of Calvinism and Romanticism.

In Europe, Romanticism long ago killed Calvinism and buried it.

In America, Romanticism can’t quite exorcise Calvinism, nor does it really want to do so.

We can especially see this tortured love affair between Romanticism and Calvinism in American beliefs about marriage, and its practice.

Americans are Calvinistic about marriage, but Romantic about sex.

Love being so often at the crossroads of marriage and sex, Americans are flummoxed about love.

Since marriage and sex are traditional partners, and we're not yet French, the Agony of the American Marriage rages on.

This agony results in philosophical, moral, and cultural ambiguity about marriage. That ambiguity has become so vast that the Gay Movement has successfully driven homosexual "marriage" straight through the vastness. The rupture in the American Mind, and apparently that of Anthony Kennedy, has allowed Free Love to storm the barricades and masquerade as Marriage.

Romanticism seeks Heaven on earth. It rebels against this woeful exile from the bosom of the All-Righteous and demands that *here and now* the human person have access to eternity and felicity. God will not grant such a demand, except through a humble petition, which God graciously grants in the Eucharist - and the Eucharist alone.

Romanticism sees the Eucharist as a cracker. For Romanticism, sex becomes the access to the divine.

The Devil makes his pitch to Adam and Eve
<https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=jARp24AJWLk>

It is no mystery that "Romanticism's" great Epic Poet, William Blake, believed that Satan and Hell and evil were the Dionysian energy to Jehovah's Apollonian order. Yet this conception is right from Satan's propaganda. There is no energy to Satan. Satan is an abyss with *no* energy. That is why he must siphon it off from the souls of the damned. God is the perfect communion, the total identity, of Order and Energy. The Energy of God is Order, and the Order of God is Energy.

Calvinism plays into Romanticism, because it hives off God's Energy from His Order, making His Order the "good part" and His Energy the "bad part". In the absence of God's Exuberant Energy -- His Spirit -- no wonder Romanticism reconstituted God's Energy in the only way the Calvinist Mind knew how: as Satan. John Milton became the great Epic Poet of this delusion: that Satan was the expositor and exemplar of Divine Energy. William Blake simply understood that this is what Milton achieved (whether that was Milton's intent or not), and made it explicit, as the formal birth of Romanticism. This was Satan's desire when he plotted (and God permitted) the Western Schism (which I define as the Protestant-Catholic Schism, not the Papal Schism). The Latin Church had become decadent and disobedient, and (the imperfect) Savonarola was the Church's last, best hope. With Savonarola dispatched in 1498 by Catholicism's all too itchy readiness to execute its enemies, and with the restoration of the Medici in Florence in 1512, God said, "Now.....the Deluge," and in 1517, Martin Luther ripped the Latin Church a new one. Luther saw Savonarola as a precursor, and what God had sent in the

form of Savonarola, an obedient Catholic who would have reformed and nourished a Whole Latin Church, God then sent in the form of an avenging angel, the schismatic Luther who shred the Flesh of Christ into pieces.

God is a Gangsta

<https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=fjsSr3z5nVk>

Savonarola was the Catholic Church's last chance: its test. God had been saying to the Catholic Church: stop murdering people, stop tearing the flesh of Christians apart. The Catholic Church said no, so God tore the Flesh of Christ apart.

The Protestant Reformation is the Catholic Church's Babylonian Exile.

Before the Protestant Schism, the Church that was Catholic was a married man, in a beautiful house, with five happy children racing through the halls, with the rhythms of life and its seasons respected, in the languor of Summer, the chill of Fall, the frost of Winter, and the exuberant new birth of Spring

With the Protestant Schism, the Catholic Church became a divorced man, living in a sad apartment with thin walls, eating Chinese food alone, with dirty plates in the sink, while he got to see his children twice a month.

The Western or Latin Schism has been a disaster for the Church - an affliction sent by God in reparation for the Church's late medieval madness for temporal power and murderousness.

Orthodox and catholic Christianity sees sex as fecund of both good and evil, depending on how it is lived, because orthodox catholic Christianity sees the human being as a compound of the spirit in the flesh.

The Calvinistic preference for Order over Energy preferred the spirit to the flesh. The flesh became depraved, foul, vile: the matrix of sin, rather than simply infected by sin. As the spirit was preferred to its partner, albeit a subordinate partner, the flesh, and the flesh was identified with sin, sex all too easily became identified with sin: and only sin, rather than seeing sin as a chronic disease of the fallen flesh. Sex became *only* about fecundity....or, rather, "procreation".

The Christian Mind sees sex's nature as life, and life as the Spirit's Plenitude. So, sex primarily brings forth life, but the bringing forth of life is itself, ideally and in a perfect world, a joyous, exuberant, pleasurable affair.

Life is the purpose of sex, the duty of sex, but joy and pleasure are the rewards for discharging one's duty.

With sex sexed from joy, or separated from joy, marriage became the joyless duty rather than the joyful duty. With joy exiled from marital sex, it could only one day return from the desert, with a rebel army ready to tear down the walls of Marital Sex and declare the Soviet Union of Sexual Joy.

So, marriage set itself against sexual joy, and sexual joy, eventually, rose up and kicked marriage's ass.

Of course, the "marriage" that sexual joy busted up was a perverted idea of marriage: marriage as a prison rather than as a garden.

The Christian Mind joins joy and duty, as it joins Freedom and Truth.

The Modern Mind sets freedom against truth, as it sets joy against duty.

As our fundamental orientation as spiritual beings created in the Image of God is *Plenitude*, when joy is set against duty, joy will always defeat duty. Only the duty that brings joy will prevail among the human race. And yet, by the same token, only the joy that comes from discharging one's duty will endure as joy and not collapse into misery.

In the Blessedness of the Spirit, Order and Freedom are identities.

For the sinful, fallen human race, order and freedom have become deranged from each other.

In Heaven, there are only good pleasures and bad pains, and there are no bad pains in the presence of the LORD. On earth, there are good pleasures and good pains (those we suffer for righteousness), and bad pleasures (like vices) and bad pains.

For the American Mind, marriage has become duty and sex has become joy.

Isn't one of the older, witty lines about sex ending when marriage begins?

Such marriage is doomed to collapse and death.

Love is the identity of joy and duty, duty and joy.

When duty no longer has any joys, Love rises up in a great fury and rages against duty: JOY! JOY! JOY!

And Joy, rising up as Love, skewers Duty, until *Love is Love is Love is Love is Love is Love is Love* somehow becomes a cogent argument.

The American Marriage collapsed in the 20th century because it had become a dour duty in the 19th century, and before.

In the Exxon Valdez oil spill that became American Marriage, how could Americans resist when homosexuals sailed up in their skiff and said, “Hey, why not us?” Covered in oil, and with the ship run aground, Anthony Kennedy could do no other than spit out some oil and shrug, “Sure.”

The medieval Catholic or Orthodox Churches would have found the concept of calling homosexuality a marriage bizarre and inconceivable not merely because of religiosity or prejudice, but because the understanding of marriage had a rich, palpable reality as the communion of the flesh between men and women. It had not yet been totally corrupted by late medieval and early modern libertinism, nor starved to death by Puritanical asceticism, nor resurrected as the Eucharist of the Flesh of the Self by Romanticism.

Marriage was the sexual and, hence, fecund communion of man and woman. It was bound up in and inherent to and fecund of all human life, the whole rhythm of human flourishing, joy, pain, dying, and enduring.

The Medieval Mind would not have responded to “gay marriage” as something conceivable, although sinful. It would have struck the Medieval Mind as the most puzzling absurdity.

When the Protestant asceticism sought to totally subjugate the flesh to the spirit as a slave, rather than be a loving lord of the flesh, nourishing the flesh as oneself, the Flesh rose up with its equal and opposite reaction: the Romantic Hedonism.

With Puritan asceticism’s only weapon being Duty, and Romantic Hedonism possessing the Atomic Bomb of Joy, Romantic Hedonism creamed Puritanism.

The American Mind is a dance between Puritanism and Hedonism. With this great leap forward into calling sodomy marriage, American civilization has taken one giant leap into Hedonism, imitating the Europeans and burying Puritanism, and hence Calvinism, and hence what was left of its Christianity.

So, three choices remain for America: (1) A mad race off the cliff of Nietzschean Atheism and Hedonism, (2) a return to a Christian ethos, preferably a more orthodox and holistic and healthy one, or (3) the Marriage of Heaven and Hell: the subjugation of the Christian ethos to the demands of the Nietzschean Atheistic Hedonism (Rob Bell: Bellism). This third option is simply the first option, with the added fun of the humiliation and Crucifixion of America’s Christianity. In this third world, Dan Savage will speak for Christianity, rather than the Pope (indeed, American Hedonists hope that the Pope will become Dan Savage).

Joy, sexed from duty, offers all the fun of pleasure, but none of the health and wholeness of a joy-in-duty, and a duty-in-joy.

So there are really two options: (1) Brave Nietzschean World or (2) Christian Revival.

The Brave Nietzschean World is the easy option: Fuck anything and everything you want, and just try to not knock anyone up or get a disease. And if you do get anyone pregnant, just abort the child. And the pharmaceutical industry should eventually eradicate venereal disease (I guess).

If America ever has a national "Come to Jesus" moment and chooses Christian Revival, the goal will be to *marry* duty and joy.

This will require a chastening of the demands of Romantic Sex.

In an era of Christian Revival, sex can no longer be a god, or God. It cannot be the source and summit of human transcendence and redemption.

Listen to C.S. Lewis in *The Four Loves* (p. 110):

Neither the Platonic nor the Shavian type of erotic transcendentalism can help a Christian. We are not worshippers of the Life Force and we know nothing of previous existences. We must not give unconditional obedience to the voice of Eros when he speaks most like a god. Neither must we ignore or attempt to deny the god-like quality. This love is really and truly like Love Himself. In it there is a real nearness to God (by Resemblance); but not, therefore and necessarily, a nearness of Approach. Eros, honoured, so far as love of God and charity to our fellows will allow, may become for us a means of Approach. His total commitment is a paradigm or example, built into our natures, of the love we ought to exercise towards God and Man. As nature, for the nature-lover, gives a content to the word *glory*, so this gives a content to the word *Charity*. It is as if Christ said to us through Eros, "Thus - just like this - with this prodigality - not counting the cost - you are to love me and the least of my brethren." Our conditional honour to Eros will of course vary with our circumstances. Of some a total renunciation (but not a contempt) is required. Others, with Eros as their fuel and also their model, can embark on the married life. Within which Eros, of himself, will never be enough -- will indeed survive only in so far as he is continually chastened and corroborated by higher principles.

But Eros, honoured without reservation and obeyed unconditionally, becomes a demon. And this is just how he claims to be honoured and obeyed. Divinely indifferent to our selfishness, he is also demoniacally rebellious to every claim of God or Man that would oppose him. Hence as the poet says:

*People in love cannot be moved by kindness
And opposition makes them feel like martyrs*

Joan of Arc

We did it all for the glory of love



© The Fitzwilliam Museum, Cambridge. UK

The Christian ethos says *Love is ideal in a marriage, but marriage in this life is not **for** love. It is for the communion of the flesh between men and women. Its duty is sex and fidelity and fecundity and the rearing of children. As happiness is a permissible byproduct of the quest for righteousness in one's soul, through faith in Christ, so too love is a permissible byproduct of the marital commitment: fidelity, fecundity, and responsibility. But just as happiness cannot be preferred to righteousness, so too love cannot be preferred to marriage, if one wishes to have sexual intercourse. Happiness and love are good, but they are not, in this sinful, fallen world, the absolute goods. Final happiness and love are only attainable in Heaven, and the only path to Heaven is righteousness, which requires fidelity to duty.*

The modern American ethos currently says Love is Love is Love is Love is Love is Love.

Of course, if one does not believe in the World to Come, the Christian ethos of sex collapses, along with Christianity itself.

Only a civilization that believes in the supernatural and the World to Come can possibly be Christian or have a Christian ethos about anything, much less sex.

A Christian ethos about sex will only be embraced if Christianity is truly embraced.

If it is not, then forget it all.

In case of a Christian revival, sex will have to be seen as a duty, with possibly attendant joys, rather than an independent, all-sovereign, demoniacal joy of life, a happiness whose pursuit is a fundamental right, a divine imperative, a prerogative of the self-created, self-divinized Self.

Any attempt to enforce such a conception of sex through the state, through a tyranny of violence, will fail as surely as the Middle Ages failed. It will either fail because it will not come into power, or, if it does come into power, it will fail because there can be no such thing as a Christian State -- such a thing is a contradiction in terms, and an abomination to God Himself.

So, any such conception of sex must be voluntarily chosen by a society, as surely as Christian faith must be voluntarily chosen by an individual human person.

The trouble in living out this ethos is twofold: men and women. Women expect too much from sex; men expect too much sex. Women expect too much quality. Men expect too much quantity. Women expect sex to be too spiritual. Men expect sex to be too carnal. Both men and women are selfish and fanatical in matters of sex and love, and soon enough grow bored and disillusioned, fickle or vengeful, undutiful, and impenetrable in their vain lassitude.

The essence of duty is doing that which you do not enjoy doing, for a higher and greater cause. And executing one's duty well, and with honor, is to do well, and quite well, what one does not want to do. And the highest form of duty is to take joy in such charges, in such exertions, in such disciplines.

Like in all things relational and human, the solution is love: is the mutual forbearance and understanding of mature adults.

The essence of modernity is selfishness, the core of which is childishness. When a childish child does not get its way, it stomps off.

Men and women, to live a Christian rather than a Nihilistic social and sexual life, must no longer stomp off from one another, even if they are not in "love", even if they are miserable, even if they grow to hate each other.

Now, the first accusation, first criticism, of all this is abuse: the vengeful, bullying, physically abusive man and the shrinking, Stockholm-syndrome-addled woman.

No matter that women can play the role of avenging angel quite well, and that they can be the originator and perfecter of wrath, and not mere quivering, powerless damsels....we'll let that pass.

But we come to the matter of abuse -- when such a marriage of duty in search of joy (rather than marriage *for* joy alone) becomes simply a skein of abuse: a *Law and Order: Special Victims Unit* episode in the making.

An abusive spouse - man or woman - is, by definition, not mature, so they cannot, perforce, be the subjects of the *mature* Christian marriage of sensible, pious, and devout adults that I contemplate here.

Whatever may be the requirements of celibacy on such people, according to Scripture and Church law, and whatever may be such people's formal status, wisdom would counsel that a woman (or man) should not be in the physical presence of abusive people.

So, this Christian idea of marriage that I offer is simply not for abusers and the abused, nor should it be used as justification for such abuse. Yet, almost any idea can be used to justify abuse. Dan Savage himself recounts how, in his life, gay pride left him blinded to how fellow gay people could hurt or take advantage of him. All ideas have limits and require mature judgment. The idea that ideas are somehow computer code, that you program into a person, that ideas are like winding up a person like a mechanical doll and letting them run, is a peculiarly modern idea --- and a supremely dangerous one. Such a conception of ideas promises Heaven, but delivers Hell: it is the matrix of every totalitarianism. Principles can be absolute. Their application in daily life requires common sense, wisdom, maturity, and judgment.

For those men and women who are not candidates for a *Law and Order* episode, and who wish to pursue a Christian ideal and duty, rather than a modern nihilistic (and fruitless) quest for self-actualization (Since the only self-actualization comes through Christ, and the obedience of faith in and through Christ), the solution is listening, conversation, communication, humility, kindness, and self-sacrifice.

The solution is for the man and woman to seek to accommodate each other as best they can. Instead of each one searching for *their own joy*, the man should seek for the woman's joy, and the woman should seek for the man's joy. Of course, if both are not reciprocal in this relationship, then it cannot possibly work. It is as doomed as a plane with one wing. For a relationship is, by definition, reciprocity.

And, of course, if either fails to produce the desired joy, neither should accuse the other or blame the other, but continue, humbly -- and *patiently* -- to discover how to please one another.

The rejoinder comes: and if they cannot learn to please one another?

Then they are poor students. And their failure probably stems from an unwillingness to try rather than some inherent inability to meld themselves together.

The modern American ethos is: Try at first, if it succeeds great, if it doesn't work, maybe try again, but eventually give up and do something else. It is a very entrepreneurial attitude. It is a splendid impulse for business and a disastrous impulse for marriage.

The essence of duty is to persevere *through* misery, not to abandon a project because it is miserable. Marriage would be a much stronger institution (an actually existent institution) and the American people somewhat closer to Samuel Adams' ideal of a Christian Sparta if men and women, when the going got tough, thought of themselves more as Navy SEALs and less as businesspeople looking for the best deal.

Yet, of course, this whole ethos I present is totally alien to the American Mind. For the American Mind is quintessentially instrumental, it is not essential. And it glories in its instrumental character.

When two Christian men and women find themselves in difficult, unsatisfying marriages, without joy, their attitude (if they are not abusers or abuse victims) should be "I like it, I love it, I want some more of it."

It should *not* be, "I'm not feeling it anymore."

Marital relations should *not* be forced: that is rape.

But both women and men simply need to do it. Men and women come up with all manner of excuses not to have regular, active, attentive sex within marriage, and it is a pathetic, weird, Thanatos-worshipping development in our civilization.

I differ with Dan Savage on homosexuality, obviously, but we should have a joint rally for sex *within* straight marriage.

Marital sex is like exercise. The more you do of it, even when you don't want to, the better you get at it, and the easier it becomes. It becomes a salutary part of your routine. But, if you neglect your exercise, and say it's too boring or time-consuming, or you can't fit it in your schedule, or it displeases you, then the very act of exercising becomes difficult, for your muscles grow weaker and your body deteriorates. Then you complain that you simply *cannot* exercise, when the truth is that now you *cannot* because before you *would* not.

Another problem is that the approach to Christian marriage often becomes a kind of celibate priesthood. The endurance in a sexless marriage is seen as some kind of offering to Christ. Suffering should be offered up to Christ, and divorce is not permissible according to the Gospel, but a sexless marriage is not the same thing as a celibate priesthood. A celibate priesthood, if truly chaste and mature, is a sign of a healthy priesthood. A sexless marriage is a sign of a gravely ill marriage.

A celibate priesthood is a good pain.

A sexless marriage is a bad pain. Maybe a bad pain that must be endured to not become guilty of injustice, but a bad pain nonetheless.

Just as the homosexual, the single person, and the religious priest, sister, and brother should will themselves to *not* engage in sexual activity, the married person *must* will themselves to sexual activity, with their spouse.

The Church too often emphasizes the evils of extra-marital sex, preaching that a good Christian must bear the burden of not having sex that he or she wants to have.

But the Church should also emphasize the evils of sexless marriages, and preach that a good Christian, man and woman, equally, must bear the burden of *having* sex that he or she does *not* want to have. (Of course, there must be consent in the act, I simply mean that both man and woman should both voluntarily consent to frequent participation in the marital duty.)

Naturally, both the man and woman must be attentive in their lovemaking. It is not enough for the spouse holding out to finally give in, and then the spouse who had been held out upon to not discharge his or her duty to be an attentive lover.

As St. Paul wrote in Ephesians 5:21-33 -

Wives and Husbands.

Be subordinate to one another out of reverence for Christ.

Wives should be subordinate to their husbands as to the Lord. For the husband is head of his wife just as Christ is head of the church, he himself the savior of the body. As the church is subordinate to Christ, so wives should be subordinate to their husbands in everything.

Husbands, love your wives, even as Christ loved the church and handed himself over for her to sanctify her, cleansing her by the bath of water with the word, that he might present to himself the church in splendor, without spot or wrinkle or any such thing, that she might be holy and without blemish. So [also] husbands should love their wives as their own bodies. He who loves his wife loves himself.

For no one hates his own flesh but rather nourishes and cherishes it, even as Christ does the church, because we are members of his body. "For this reason a man shall leave [his] father and [his] mother and be joined to his wife, and the two shall become one flesh." This is a great mystery, but I speak in reference to Christ and the church. In any case, each one of you should love his wife as himself, and the wife should respect her husband.

God created man and woman, created the human race male and female, precisely that through their communion they could imitate the bond of gratitude that exists between the Father and the Son, the Giver and the Gift.

If the man and the woman will not exchange the gift of themselves, through the sexual act and sexual communion, and the *effort* to do so, then the purpose of marriage is as surely stifled as if the man and the woman always used contraception.

The Church makes too much of the duty to not have sex outside of marriage, but the neglect of the duty *to* have sex within marriage is the root cause of the destruction, the implosion, of marriage in the first place, and the consequent search for sexual satisfaction wherever and however it can be found.

And, as I hope I have indicated, this does not simply mean the man's (or woman's) desire for quantity, but the man (or woman) must also respond to the other's desire for quality, for attentiveness. Both partners, both the man and the woman, must contribute the maturity, humility, kindness, passion, and attentiveness necessary to *nurture* a mature, abundant, fecund, marital sex life.

Be subordinate to one another

<https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=yViCcacNUxQ>

Marital sex should less be seen as the fruit of the Rom-Com, the lightening bolt that signals happily ever after, and more the rural farm: full of dirt, manure, and hard labor, but which, if tended to attentively enough, can become fertile, fecund, abundant, and productive of the staff of life and the preservation of the human race.

The upshot of all this is: *just do it*. You get up and go to work when you don't want to, don't you? You don't say, usually, "I don't feel like it today." You get up and go and do what you have to do.

The same with parenting -- most of it is laborious, but you don't say, "Why bother?" Not if you want to be a good parent. You don't say, "This parenting thing isn't doing it for me, I think I'll stop."

This attitude that marital sex and affection are somehow optional, that it's an entertainment that is done if it "works for you" and not done if it doesn't, is totally pernicious and destructive, and the implementation of that attitude has been as destructive for marriage as it would be destructive to parenting if, and when, it is applied.

Stop thinking, just do it on a regular basis, and be mindful and attentive in doing it, and in improving and perfecting your practice of marital sex.

JUST JUMP IN THE RIVER

https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=pkL_ImOOxBg

Fuck your spouse, for Christ's sake - literally. Have fun, get off, produce children, raise the children, and live long and prosper. The end.

Marital alienation and collapse is not the only sign of the American Mind's implosion. The same alienation that afflicts marriages afflicts virtually every other area of American life, and

that alienation springs from the obsolescence of the American mental “operating system” with which I began this discussion.

Remember individual rights, the consent of the governed, republicanism, bicameralism, presidentialism, the “government”, the “private sphere”, and the non-establishment of religion (the separation of church and state)?

All of it can be summed up in this one phrase: “Step off”.

All of it is a *pushing away* the institutions of the past from burdening the individual person, *as an individual*.....and, as we shall see, *not* as a person.

Individual rights are landmarks, markers, placed *against* Royal authority, as the consent of the governed is a reserved right of revolution against the Monarchy, as is republicanism. Bicameralism, presidentialism (as opposed to parliamentary government), and limited government as a basic principle (a government of enumerated powers and inherent limitations) pushes the state out from the people. The non-establishment clause tells the Church to back off.

It is, naturally and as you might expect, an ideology of independence. The whole of it is a declaration of independence *against* a whole civilization, way of life, and panoply of civilizations, namely early modern European Christian civilization -- Monarchical and ecclesiastical.

Almost like the Marxist delusion that after the institution of socialism, the state would magically “wither away” into a utopian state of self-government, Jefferson and his acolytes prophesied a world cleansed of kings and priests, a hardy, free, self-governing vista of virtuous yeoman farmers in a Republic practically without any substantial *state*: a utopia of self-government.

Politically, Americans have charted a Hamiltonian course, constructing a hulking military-intelligence-bureaucratic state along with an empire of corporate wealth and power that would make a Roman Emperor blush.

But culturally and philosophically, Americans are ardent Jeffersonians. The more religious Christians may be less Jeffersonian, somehow more orthodox in certain aspects, but the Jeffersonian ethos is still always there in the vast majority of Americans, even if it must, sometimes, account to its inner Calvinist homunculus (like me).

As factually unfree and dominated as Americans actually are in their government and business life, their political and economic realities, by government bureaucracy and corporate power, Americans demand freedom in the social and cultural sphere.

As Americans lose more and more power over their political and economic lives, becoming more and more the subjects of an overweening, arrogant, and insane oligarchy of decadent wealth and unlimited contempt, the one assurance that Americans can take some small amount of heart in, is that the struggle for freedom *against* any kind of constrictive moral social order is progressively being won.

You may not have any control over your economic self-sufficiency or your government's behavior, but at least you can fuck your brains out, how you like it, on demand, streaming, with no one to tell you otherwise. At least there's some kind of freedom in that.

The self-government of the Republic of Yeoman Farmers may be lost to history, but the self-government of the Sexually Liberated is a project that races on to ever more dizzying heights.

The Roman proletariat acted quite similarly, in fact, when faced with their own marginalization and disempowerment. Indeed, the word "proletarian" derives from "proles", which means offspring, and indicated those with no wealth or status, whose only contribution to the body politic was the fruit of their loins. Of course, our modern American proletariat increasingly does not produce offspring, but does produce sexual empowerment.

The American revolutionaries had life, liberty, and the pursuit of happiness.

The French revolutionaries had liberty, equality, and fraternity.

Our Secularist vanguard has freedom *from* religion and sexual self-determination.

But all this step-off ideology, while it might be useful -- and was useful -- in pushing off the oppressive hand of an, admittedly, overweening State and Church, does not at all provide a *positive* vision of what life *should* be. It only creates a space of freedom for self-determination, without nourishing the people with a vision of how to live.

Individual rights? Certainly. But does that, alone, secure the dignity of the human person?

The consent of the governed? Not strictly necessary for a merely just state, but certainly a prudent safeguard against tyranny. But is mere consent the sole criterion of the good social order, of justice? Is not that to which the people consent often injustice? And should then injustice become a kind of constitutional imperative? This is no idle question when murder and sodomy have been sacralized as constitutional rights. The United States prides itself on being a nation under the rule of law. But the essence of law is justice. Without justice, there is no law, and no state. So how can an unjust state pretend that it is under the rule of law? Is not a rule of law whose laws are fundamentally unjust merely the rule of injustice? Is not such a state a band of criminals, and are not their laws merely the decrees of criminals?

In other words, the *total* abandonment of *any* natural law principles, in favor of a pure positive law conception, has rendered our laws an absurdity: they are not laws in any meaningful

sense. They are rules that a self-divinized people have promulgated to assist and sanctify their self-divinization.

The American conception of “government” has also assisted the greedhead oligarchs in their pillage of the American economy and middle class. Since Americans *only* think of government in limited 18th century terms, as the power of officials, they do not think of the vast corporate empire that factually rules their destinies as a kind of government. Somehow (in a way that is perfectly obscure to me), Americans really consider vast agglomerations of wealth and material productive power as “private”.....just as private as your ownership of your car or of your shoes....or of a little girl’s lemonade stand. Bizarre.

Likewise with the “Separation of Church and State”. The True Christian knows that there can be no Christian state. So the secularity of the state is an absolute (if there is to be a state at all). The atheist has no such concern: their concern is the *protection* of the state itself (and presumably “the people”) *from* religion, from organized religion: the Church.

These are different visions.

The secularity of the state requires that the *institutions* of Church and State be separate. The Pope or a prominent reverend, as a religious leader, cannot be given a role in legislation, executing the laws, or the judiciary. And the *purpose* of the state cannot be religion. The purpose of the state must be secular matters: that is, everyday, practical matters. Picking up the garbage, I think, is the perfect symbol of the secular state. The secular state is the neutral state. It has no ideology. It simply picks up the trash. What that means, of course, will require some form of ideology -- a way of thinking about political choices. But the best ideology for the state is no ideology: a thoroughgoing pragmatism. Of course, real pragmatism requires a personal philosophy, since accomplishing the practical good requires some common and consistent notion of what the good *is* in the first place, and in an age of such chaos in first principles, how can there be any real pragmatism in government?

But the secularity of the state *does not* mean the atheist state: the state that is not simply neutral about religion, but hostile to religion; that does not simply ignore religion, but seeks to whitewash religion, invalidate it as a source of public values and public reason, and exile it forever from the public square.

Such an atheist state, masquerading as a merely secular state, will necessarily be an Epicurean state, a state in which the ruling political philosophy must derive *all* of its public values and public reasons from the atoms and void, amoral, nihilistic, hedonistic, self-divinizing ethos of a self-worshipping people.

Now, Epicurus himself was more moderate in his tastes and prescriptions for life. But I mean Epicureanism in the sense of “versus Platonism”. That is, Epicureanism being a thoroughgoing materialism and Platonism being a mode of thought that recognizes forms -- essences -- as *really* real.

Epicureanism before Christianity could have no vengeance against Christ. But the materialist relativists have nothing but vengeance against Christ.

Hence, the First Amendment does not ensure the “secularity of the state”, it does not ensure that the state has as its aim the secular world, rather than the sacred world. Rather, it pointedly prevents any establishment of religion: no state Church here, thank you very much. It does not establish what the state *is*; it merely states what the state is *not*.

And the formulation of the “separation of church and state” does not have the tenor of an understanding in which the Church and the State operate in different spheres, the sacred and the secular, but are both on the same page -- if distinct and not coordinating -- in terms of the common good.

No, the separation of church and state is very much, especially in the hands of Secularists, the state *against* the church: the state *against* religion.

It is one thing to prevent collusion between and confusion of the *institutions* of the Church and the State, which is totally necessary.

But it is entirely another thing to forbid religion from being the basis of the morality that underwrites legislation.

If religion is not to be the basis of even the morality of legislation, what is? For all legislation is one or more rules, and a rule must have a moral imperative. It is either good or bad, in either a spiritual or practical sense. The rule either makes the world better or worse. And what determines whether it is better or worse? That is, what determines its morality? How do legislators make moral decisions? How do legislators frame what is moral and what is not?

If belief in the soul, in the existence of male and female *as* male and female, the nature of sex as life, and the duty of sex as the fecundity, preservation and nurturing of life, are all carted away as mere “religious” values, then what is really happening is that Platonism, essentialism, is being proscribed, is being exiled from the public square. Essentialism is tarred and feathered as irrational, and Hobbesian, Nietzschean Epicureanism -- the Godhood of the Self in a world of atoms and void in which there are no essences -- becomes the official religion of the state.

In effect, Secularism institutes Satanism as the official Church of the state.

This very hijacking of the secularity of the state by what are essentially -- either implicitly or explicitly -- Satanists is permitted by the palpable limitedness of the idea of “the separation of church and state” or the non-establishment of religion. With these concepts not articulating what the state should be *for*, but only what it is *against*, we all too easily slip from being against religious *institutions* to being against religious *values*.

And when no religious *values* are permitted in public life and public reason, the only outcome, in cases of fundamental importance to the nature of human reality, is the triumph of atheism, which, in morality, is moral nihilism.

The exile of religious values can only have peripheral importance in a question of the commerce clause or the taxing power of the United States.

But when the state is called upon to define marriage, if marriage is an essential reality, one based on the *essences* of male and female, and you prohibit essentialist truth as mere (and awful) religious truth, then you are going to make materialism the official constitutional philosophy of the state.

So, we go from a place where you don't want the Pope meddling in state military, foreign, and domestic policy, and you don't want churches to be able to use the state to conduct inquisitions, to a place where the intuitions and consciences of citizens are delegitimized as irrational shamanism, and materialism is defined as the only rational governing philosophy and ethos.

We arrive in a fantasy world where we're asking whether children who are raised by two men or two women are well-adjusted, when what we should be asking is whether it is *intrinsically possible* for two men or two women to be *married* to each other in the first place.

Within the materialist worldview and ethos, anything goes and anything is possible. The only limits are the blank fiat of the self-made-god-man issuing the decree.

The Devil and Anthony Kennedy: A Constitutional Tragedy

The majority opinion offered by Anthony Kennedy in *Obergefell v. Hodges* is drivel. It is pure insanity.

It assumes what it sets out to prove. It assumes throughout that a marriage *can* exist between people of the same sex, and also does precious little to explain whether marriage between three or four or five or fifty or a hundred people would not similarly be permitted, ordained, sacralized, and celebrated.

The core "logic" of the opinion is simply this: Marriage is good. Gays and lesbians should not be forbidden something that is good. Thus, gays and lesbians should be able to marry people of the same sex.

No matter that gays and lesbians are perfectly free to marry people of the opposite sex, like everybody else. No, gays and lesbians were only previously denied the right to redefine marriage, which AK has so progressively granted them.

The majority opinion prattles on about all the benefits and blessings of marriage, and reflects how it would be sad not to confer those blessings on homosexual relationships.

Yet the opinion does not, in any meaningful way, consider *what marriage is*. It only assumes that marriage is a bag of goodies and feel-good vibes that cannot rightly be denied to anyone who wants to call themselves married.

There are a few overtures at a *definition* of marriage. Yet they are feeble.

Here are some of AK's attempts at moral philosophy:

The nature of marriage is that, through its enduring bond, two persons together can find other freedoms, such as expression, intimacy, and spirituality. This is true for all persons, whatever their sexual orientation. See *Windsor*, 570 U. S., at ___– ___ (slip op., at 22–23). There is dignity in the bond between two men or two women who seek to marry and in their autonomy to make such profound choices. Cf. *Loving*, supra, at 12 (“[T]he freedom to marry, or not marry, a person of another race resides with the individual and cannot be infringed by the State”).

A second principle in this Court’s jurisprudence is that the right to marry is fundamental because it supports a two-person union unlike any other in its importance to the committed individuals. This point was central to *Griswold v. Connecticut*, which held the Constitution protects the right of married couples to use contraception. 381 U. S., at 485. Suggesting that marriage is a right “older than the Bill of Rights,” *Griswold* described marriage this way:

“Marriage is a coming together for better or for worse, hopefully enduring, and intimate to the degree of being sacred. It is an association that promotes a way of life, not causes; a harmony in living, not political faiths; a bilateral loyalty, not commercial or social projects. Yet it is an association for as noble a purpose as any involved in our prior decisions.” *Id.*, at 486.

....

If rights were defined by who exercised them in the past, then received practices could serve as their own continued justification and new groups could not invoke rights once denied. This Court has rejected that approach, both with respect to the right to marry and the rights of gays and lesbians. See *Loving* 388 U. S., at 12; *Lawrence*, 539 U. S., at 566–567. The right to marry is fundamental as a matter of history and tradition, but rights come not from ancient sources alone. They rise, too, from a better informed understanding of how constitutional imperatives define a liberty that remains urgent in our own era. Many who deem same-sex marriage to be wrong reach that conclusion based on decent and honorable religious or philosophical premises, and neither they nor their beliefs are disparaged here. But when that sincere, personal opposition becomes enacted law and public policy, the necessary consequence is to put the imprimatur of the State itself on an exclusion that soon demeans or stigmatizes those whose own liberty is then denied. Under the Constitution, same-sex couples seek in marriage the same legal treatment as opposite-sex couples, and it would disparage their choices and diminish their personhood to deny them this right.

Apparently, many people find this lofty. But it is nonsense. It assumes the denial of a liberty it has not proven. There can be no liberty to redefine marriage as the union of male with male and female with female, as well as between male and female, *if that definition is inherently untenable and non-existent*. You cannot have a right to something that does not, and cannot, exist.

Shorn of its loquacious smugness, AK's "argument" about a *definition* of marriage boils down to this:

A marriage is an enduring, noble bond of dignity between two people that permits the possible attainment of expression, intimacy, and spirituality, which is based on the personal autonomy to make important choices. It is a way of life, a harmony in living, and a bilateral loyalty that is neither commercial nor social.

To define marriage in any other way, as in the communion of the flesh between men and women, would denigrate the choices and personhood of persons.

Don't applaud and salute quite yet.

Why? Why is marriage that? What in that definition above *inherently* limits a marriage to two people?

Nothing.

It is a Hallmark greeting card of sentimental cliches. It is philosophically empty and arid. Marriage is: enduring, noble, dignified, expressive, intimate, spiritual, a way of life, harmonious, loyal.

Neat.

Yet all that sentimental gibberish isn't the *reason* for the definition. It is not the differentia of the definition. The differentia -- what makes it *one* thing rather than *another* thing -- is, according to AK's definition -- **autonomy**, which itself is based on the sanctity of personhood.

Why must gays and lesbians be permitted to redefine marriage for the entire nation and every last person living in it? Because their autonomy would otherwise be curtailed.

But how does the autonomy of particular people empower them to redefine *what marriage is*?

Does the autonomy of people permit them to redefine what life is? What nature is? What sex is? What reality is? What mathematics is? What the laws of physics are? Does not allowing people to redefine those definitions deny them their autonomy?

The majority opinion also totally fails to engage with the fact that the exercise of that autonomy by those gays and lesbians circumscribes *my* autonomy to contract a marriage that is *essentially* between a man and a woman.

Because marriage is an *institution* -- it is something that is *instituted*. It is some *thing* -- and that thing has a *definition*.

So when gays and lesbians redefine marriage so that they can be "married", they are redefining *what my marriage is*.

There is a total lack of concern on AK's part, and that band of jurists who accompanied him, in discerning **what marriage is**. They seek to extend the blessings of a reality that they have precisely no interest in defining.

All that sentimental gibberish that AK has reduced the definition of marriage to does not at all restrict marriage to two people. It does not restrict it to 10,000 people, or all the world. If marriage is so wonderful that it creates bonds of expression, intimacy, spirituality, and harmony,

why should not all the inhabitants of the world marry each other in one global marriage so that we can finally have world peace? Or at least a Divorce to end all divorces.

The inclusion of the element of “bilaterality” is simply included **by fiat**. There is no reason for it. It is simply decreed. But fiat by one person does not, logically, preclude fiat by another person a year from now, or ten years from now, or fifty years from now.

All that appears to underwrite the element of bilaterality is the political existence of an organized and aggressive and successful social movement.

If polys ever organize an avenging Poly Rights Movement, there is *nothing* inherent in AK’s decision to logically restrict marriage to two people.

Of course, by that time AK, Jr. or AK the IV will write, “The enduring and noble and awesome bond that marriage affords cannot be denied to this group of fine people without offending basic human autonomy. This group of ten people is raising their thirty children with integrity and decency, and American values dictate that these ten people be afforded the right to marry.”

The point is that AK doesn’t care. He’ll be dead and in Hell by the time that comes up. All AK cares about is the applause of the elite, the good opinion of the worldly and the wise. Logic? Logic be damned. AK is a champion of human rights. Do those human “rights” accord with the basic natural order, much less the author of that order, Nature’s God -- the same Nature’s God that even the Declaration of Independence did, in fact, make its appeal to? Who cares?

AK offers us this inane piece of Satanic piety to ordain his illogic:

No union is more profound than marriage, for it embodies the highest ideals of love, fidelity, devotion, sacrifice, and family. In forming a marital union, two people become something greater than once they were. As some of the petitioners in these cases demonstrate, marriage embodies a love that may endure even past death. It would misunderstand these men and women to say they disrespect the idea of marriage. Their plea is that they do respect it, respect it so deeply that they seek to find its fulfillment for themselves. Their hope is not to be condemned to live in loneliness, excluded from one of civilization’s oldest institutions. They ask for equal dignity in the eyes of the law. The Constitution grants them that right.

https://www.supremecourt.gov/opinions/14pdf/14-556_3204.pdf

They do not need to live in loneliness. They simply need to adjust *themselves* to the natural order, rather than try to adjust the *natural order* to themselves.

And how can you respect something if, in the end, you destroy it, or obscure it and sully it, because you just do not give a damn about *what* that thing you claim to respect *is*?

The only talisman that animates this insanity is “equality”, “dignity”, “autonomy”.

But can you have an equal right to something that does not exist? Can it circumscribe your autonomy to not be afforded something that does not exist?

AK, tell us *why* marriage is *inherently* a bilateral emotional compact between *any* two people, and not some other permutation.

We have seen that AK’s flimsy definition does not, except by fiat, restrict marriage to two people, or to a hundred.

But, why not have more creative tampering with marriage? Why not classes of mates? Why not intricate marital social structures? Why not permit people, in their blessed autonomy, to design a marriage in which you had, say, a group of three people who were equally married to each other, but also, by another *type* of marital bond, married to another three people? So, it would not be a straight-up six-way marriage, but a complex marriage of the three-way marriage to *another* three-way marriage. Why not permit that complex marriage to itself be married to another complex marriage? Why not allow these complex marriages to be considered persons under constitutional corporate law, with the right to conduct business and be afforded all the personal rights afforded businesses? Do not married couples engage in businesses? Do not families engage in businesses? Would it not offend the basic autonomy and moral personhood of persons to restrict how private, autonomous individuals structure their social and economic lives?

Of course, AK cares nothing for all this. It’s all logic. And this isn’t about logic. It’s about Love is Love is Love is Love is Love is Love.

For, what are the ontological and moral theories standing behind AK’s “definition” of marriage?

There are none.

One might argue that a judicial decision does not require, and should not invite, ontological and moral theories. But, if you are going to mangle the nature of the institution of marriage, a decent respect for the opinions of mankind would counsel that you at least declare the fundamental reasoning behind your revolutionary act.

This decision is not some deductive or empirical enterprise, of structuring legal sources and/or sifting through the evidence of facts. It is a moral philosophical enterprise. And it is poorly conceived, poorly executed, and poorly done, in its entirety.

A moral philosophy requires a moral theory of the thing considered. And a moral theory of a thing requires an ontological theory of what that thing *is*.

AK offers us: Love.

Lovely.

But what is the *nature* of that love? Is it affective? Filial? A love of friendship?

No, it is an erotic love, although AK’s reflections and meditations veer decidedly towards the insipid, the lonely, the emotional and the sentimental. AK does not offer us a logical

ontological and moral theory of that love. He offers us the sads of an octogenarian alone in a retirement home. Our national moral order is being determined by a man facing the abyss as he contemplates the possibility of being a widower, not a logician with a keen sense of reality.

And yet, there are many who cheer AK's musings as some kind of brilliant strokes of literary, legal, and logical craftsmanship. How they can do so is utterly obscure to me, unless they simply have no understanding of literature, law, or logic.

If the justification of calling sodomy marriage is to be poetry, we require a greater poet than AK.

The lyrical poetry of AK? Profundity. Love. Fidelity. Devotion. Sacrifice. Family. Two people become something greater than once they were.

Stirring?

Only if you agree with AK's conclusion from the start, as a premise you slip in to your syllogism. Don't know what a syllogism is? Then don't presume to restructure the foundation of human civilization. Leave it to the professionals. Or don't tempt fate or rebuke God in the first place -- a far surer, safer, saner course.

Poetry makes poor philosophy, and poor philosophy makes poor policy.

Love is a word, not a theory. Fidelity and Devotion are words that apply to love, (and apply to a great many other things) but do not tell us the nature of that love. Sacrifice can be undertaken for anything, good, bad, and indifferent. Family. Yes indeed. But what is a family? Love. Love is Love is Love. There are many kinds of families, we are told, and we must believe, today under pain of social persecution, tomorrow, perhaps physical persecution. But each of these "families" -- from what true family do all these arrangements spring? The communion of the flesh of a man and a woman. And even with all the unnatural impositions and interpositions of modern natural science, the modern technologist of human self-deification still requires materials *derived from* the flesh of male and female. Standing behind all these "modern families" is the true, natural family created and ordained by God, the LORD of Nature, of that natural order which still endues this fractured world in which we very briefly persist.

So, we return to: love.

And we assume the nature of an erotic love.

And the nature of Eros?

Two people become something greater than once they were.

Let's shed a tear.

But why not three people become something greater than once they were?

Why not four people become something greater than once they were?

Why not weep with joy for that?

Many in the Gay Movement may shrug their shoulders and bluntly state: Fine by me.

Fine. Then why not fifty people become something greater than once they were? Or one hundred?

Practicality? The modern business corporation is an entirely practical affair. Why cannot human beings, in their autonomy (read: their self-sovereignty over their flesh and over reality), not arrange themselves into a marriage after the form, function, and inspiration of the modern corporation?

Who can say, indeed, that such a social enterprise would not be quite successful by the very limited lights of caring for children and making its members less lonely? Certainly, in a marriage of 100, and one which kept bringing on new members, no one would ever have to suffer the loneliness of widowhood or widowerhood.

Actually, by purely secular standards, such marriages of 100 or more would be quite lovely. The care of children would no longer be left to such an uncertain thing as the partnership of two people. Children would not easily suffer the disasters of divorce or the death of a parent, for even if one or more parents left the 100-person strong union, or one or several died, those children would still have many other parents to love them and for them to love.

For the members of such a marital law firm, the sexual possibilities are limitless, unbounded, delightful. No more sexless marriages. The members of such a marital corporation would have access to a veritable smorgasbord of sexual delight, gratification, and possibility. If one pairing of spouses did not please each other, each spouse could easily have recourse to other spouses.

The finances of such a marital corporation would be impregnable. And with the connections available to one hundred different spouses, all would be rich and secure. Any unemployed member of the marital corporation would easily be found a job through such a network of connections, or he or she could simply work for whatever business enterprise the marital corporation owned, or live at the compound or apartment house, raising the marital corporations' children as a domestic spouse.

The incidence of abuse would be far lower in a marital corporation, for any abuse would quickly come to light because of the close and frequent social intercourse of the members of the marital corporation. And the victims of abuse would feel very comfortable telling fellow spouses about abuse suffered at the hands of one spouse. Indeed, the prospect of being expelled from such a social, sexual, and financial utopia would very probably deter any abusers from perpetrating abuse, for fear that they may be expelled from this Satanic Eden.

In every respect - psychological, social, financial, sexual - a marital corporation is superior to a marital partnership, as a modern business corporation is superior to a 19th century two-man operation.

Can a marital corporation not embody profundity, love, fidelity, devotion, sacrifice, and family? Of course it can, from a purely secularist -- atheistical -- perspective.

Do the 100 members -- or 1000 members, or 10,000 members -- of such a marital corporation not become something greater than once they were? To deny that such a marital phalanx is, in some purely secularist sense, greater than a single individual is untenable. Of course such a marital phalanx is something greater.

Not only is such a marital corporation logically superior, in areas of secular concern, to the marital partnership, but it has the authority and approval of no less a thinker than Plato himself.

Why the bilateral bigotry, when this Brave New World of Socio-Sexual gratification, financial security, social utopia, and good modern sense awaits? Shouldn't such bilateralist bigotry be consigned to the past?

The only thing separating us from this Brave New World, indeed, is the past itself, the same past that AK finds so **not** compelling or authoritative or decisive. AK finds the past very compelling indeed, only he retains the parts of the past that *he* cherishes, and that his lawless majority cherish, while dispensing with the parts he finds outmoded, no doubt because of the dubious but powerful effects of cocktail parties and cable television.

Bilaterality is a notion of the past, which was inherent in the idea of the communion of the flesh between a man and a woman. For a marriage is, essentially, the relational reality of a sexual union, and a sexual union is an ongoing sexual affair, and a sexual affair is, fundamentally, the coital union.

You can string a hundred men crotch to butt down a city street. You can give a hundred lesbians a holiday by leaving them to a large pool.

But coitus can *only* be between two people. The coital act is *inherently* exclusive.

Many people can *successively* have coitus all in an hour, but *each* coital act is, in its essential form and natural function, necessarily exclusive -- bilaterally exclusive.⁶¹

AK's "Bilateral Fascism" is nothing more than the inheritance of his, our, forebears' "Coital Fascism".

AK is only a bilateral essentialist because his father, grandfather, and great-grandfather were coital essentialists. And, indeed, AK only exists because his parents were not mere believers in coital essentialism, but practitioners as well.

Hence the truth that "gay rights" -- and gay power -- is nothing more than modern marketing for Free Love. Free Love, which finally triumphed in our time (but may be defeated in another), is fundamentally antagonistic to coital exclusivity and privilege. Free Love is the Leninist Revolutionary against Coital Fascism. The antinomian Sexual Marxist-Leninist is fundamentally against the idea of coitus and coital union as something unique and paramount: even though it is the fountain of life that preserves the human race from death.

The Sexual Revolutionary does not see the nature of sex as life; he sees it as pleasure, either purely physical pleasure, or, like AK, also the emotional pleasures of intimate association. Yet such a Sexual Revolutionary vision is not at all bilateralist.

Bilateralism is simply a pit stop on the highway to something much more audacious and anti-Christian. Bilateralism is a doorstep placed against a blitzkrieg. It does not *logically* inhere in the sort-of-theory offered by AK.

For the sexual theory of the traditional essentialist is coitus-as-life, whereas the sexual theory of the sexual revolutionary is sensuality-as-satisfaction.

⁶¹ The very fact that too many readers will disdainfully sneer that double penetration is, indeed, *physically* possible is the source of all our woes, and if there is a God, and if that God is just, such a pornophilia in our culture, such a total love for all that is wicked and vile, will become the Iliad of all our woes. All that is merely *physically* possible -- although, barely -- is not coterminous with what is *morally* possible: that is, what is at all consistent with any possible moral order acceptable to God. The human race's misuse of the natural world does not change the essence of the natural order as contemplated and intended by God.

Only a sentimentalism for the relational union and life of real marriage, the communion of the flesh between a man and a woman, can make one a bilateralist...a deuterosexual, deuteronormative, a Bilateral Fascist.

Bilateralism is a necessary, integral theoretical inheritance from the sexual complementarity of real marriage, between men and women. But once sexual complementarity is expelled from the definition of marriage, there is nothing holding the element of bilateralism in place. Other than fiat. And fiat, though it works in a judicial decision, does not work in rational thought. And ideas have consequences. And though the octogenarian AK may not be willing to pen the missive that finally does away with bilateralism, I have no doubt that five, ten, twenty, or thirty years from now, a jurist made of sterner Postmodernist stuff will be perfectly happy to do just that, and will do it with more logical clarity, and, I suppose, even more moral self-righteousness, of the deluded kind offered by AK.

Bilateralism is not only nourished by the coital essentialism of real marriage, but is elucidated and informed by our knowledge of God. For God is the Giver who gives the Gift, and the Gift who returns the Gift, such that the Giver and the Gift form an eternal Bond of Gratitude.

The total union that is possible for a man and a woman -- not merely an emotional or sensual union, but a union of the flesh whose *form* bears the possibility of life, and, when functioning properly, does, in fact, generate life -- resembles this nature of God. Hence, man (the human race) was made male and female, and, by doing so, God made man in His image. The Gift of the man of himself to the woman, and the return of that gift, in the flesh, is the image of the spiritual union of Giver and Gift, and the Bond of the Spirit of God is the type of which the Bond of the Flesh is the image.

This is true.

Because God is true.

And when you expel God not simply from the direct administration of the state and its formal institutions, but from the public reason, public values, and public square of society itself, you expel all true logic, and truth, from society.

For AK's decision, in the end, (and, really, from the get-go), is not an act of moral philosophy, or moral policy. It has nothing to do with reasoning, because it pays no homage, and makes no reference, to an objective reality beyond AK himself. It is the declaration of independence by him and all his fellow travelers from any reality not "created", read: determined, by him and people like him.

And, what it really is, is the latest and most outrageous symptom of America's congenital disease: Self-Preference.

For all this talk of autonomy is not about personal dignity *within* God's natural moral order. It is the self-declared, self-divinized *Sovereignty* of the human race, or at least a certain powerful elite within the human race, to ordain **what** reality is, for itself, without reference to objective reality, much less the natural order, much less God.

So, would it be surprising for America to march under the banner of Satan, when it imitates the nature and aspirations of Satan?

This doesn't mean that the fundamental principles of the American Revolution are *necessarily* wrong. But it does mean that they are outmoded and have been stretched so out of shape that they simply can't cope with the crisis of modernity. If autonomy is the quiddity of American liberty, what is autonomy?

Is autonomy the freedom to live according to Nature and Nature's God?

Or is autonomy the "freedom" (the license) to declare the human race gods who can rearrange reality however they see fit?

De Tocqueville, *Democracy in America*, Chapter V (Vol. II, Part I)

Another truth is no less clear—that religions ought to assume fewer external observances in democratic periods than at any others. In speaking of philosophical method among the Americans, I have shown that nothing is more repugnant to the human mind in an age of equality than the idea of subjection to forms. Men living at such times are impatient of figures; to their eyes symbols appear to be the puerile artifice which is used to conceal or to set off truths, which should more naturally be bared to the light of open day: they are unmoved by ceremonial observances, and they are predisposed to attach a secondary importance to the details of public worship. Those whose care it is to regulate the external forms of religion in a democratic age should pay a close attention to these natural propensities of the human mind, in order not unnecessarily to run counter to them. I firmly believe in the necessity of forms, which fix the human mind in the contemplation of abstract truths, and stimulate its ardor in the pursuit of them, whilst they invigorate its powers of retaining them steadfastly. Nor do I suppose that it is possible to maintain a religion without external observances; but, on the other hand, I am persuaded that, in the ages upon which we are entering, it would be peculiarly dangerous to multiply them beyond measure; and that they ought rather to be limited to as much as is absolutely necessary to perpetuate the doctrine itself, which is the substance of religions of which the ritual is only the form. *a A religion which should become more minute, more peremptory, and more surcharged with small observances at a time in which men are becoming more equal, would soon find itself reduced to a band of fanatical zealots in the midst of an infidel people.

a

[In all religions there are some ceremonies which are inherent in the substance of the faith itself, and in these nothing should, on any account, be changed. This is especially the case with Roman Catholicism, in which the doctrine and the form are frequently so closely united as to form one point of belief.]

Paging the SSPX

Just another day at Sterling, Cooper & Gay
<https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=GALMX2BO5ps>

The Rise of the Anti-Christian Constitution

At the Crossroads of the Will of Man and the Will of God

The whole matter of sodomy is pivotal.

Treated logically, rather than emotionally (Love is Love is Love, =, NOH8), there are only several possibilities about the practice of sodomy (same-sex sexual conduct).

- (1) Sodomy is a sin against God.
- (2) Sodomy is a harmless and morally neutral practice, like rollerskating. You don't have to roller skate to be healthy, but if you do, rollerskating is harmless and neutral so long as you practice proper precautions.
- (3) Sodomy is a harmful *but* still morally neutral practice, like smoking. Smoking may be morally wrong because of its consequences, but the act is not **intrinsically** morally wrong. Sodomy, under this category, may even be more dangerous like cocaine, heroine, or an infectious disease itself; *but* all such highly dangerous drugs and diseases are not, in themselves, morally wrong. For instance, drug use can be characterized as morally wrong because of the consequences that accrue from their use, not because the ingestion of substances, as such, is intrinsically evil.
- (4) Sodomy is a beneficial and morally good practice, which either accentuates and vivifies one's total life experience, or/and is absolutely vital to one's physical and mental health, even one's overall, holistic, essential, existential, and spiritual well-being. (Such a positive practice may still require precautions, like wearing sunblock when going on a nature walk, but the intrinsic practice is essential to well-being.)

I am not limiting the possibilities to these four, but these four possibilities round out the basic contours of the issue as a question of moral philosophy, even if someone should quibble about the exposition on the margins.

To clarify, Possibility (1) [The bad, evil, bigoted, ≠, ⊕ possibility, which one must not say is a possibility, upon pain of social destruction (at least in the Blue States)], sin, in this case, would mean an act that is intrinsically morally wrong: that is wrong not simply because of the consequences that flow from it, but because the form of the act -- *what* the act is -- is essentially wrong, is ipso facto wrong in the eyes of God, and is hence opposed to His Will, which is the very essence of sin.

To reduce the matter, for simplicity of presentation, we can restate the possibilities accordingly:

- (1) Sodomy is a sin.
- (2) Sodomy is a neutral activity.
- (3) Sodomy is a disease or disorder.
- (4) Sodomy is an element of one's person.

The “enlightened”, those servants of the Angel of Light, argue that the “good” possibilities are (2) and (4) -- sodomy is either perfectly normal, or intrinsically natural (and hence inherently normal).

The bad, stupid, bigoted, evil people argue that (1) and/or (3) are correct.

We have a real problem here.

Because it is very difficult for members of a society, (even a liberal, Rawlsian, ideologically chaotic (supposedly chaotic) society like ours), to accommodate all those views. Eventually, some holders of the incompatible views will be marginalized and persecuted. The nature of the possibilities almost deterministically requires this (at least given historical human behavior).

If sodomy is a sin and/or a disease, then it is subject to the moral authority of the state, through the whole force of the law, including the criminal law, and the moral disfavor of the populace, and, if it is a disease as well (or merely alternatively), it will be subject to practical repulsion and the apparatus of the medical establishment.

If sodomy is a neutral activity, and even, further, an element of one’s person, then it is an object of the moral authority of the state, to be upheld as a right, with the moral congratulation of the populace. If sodomy is a neutral activity, then its practice is protected as a basic element of liberty, of the liberty of the person. And if sodomy is, further, essential to the humanity of either all or some people, then its protection and propagation is required by the state and the society: it is an essential human right, not only incidental to liberty, but intrinsic to any morally ordered society. The state will uphold its practice, the society will foster its practice, and the educational system will teach its practice.

So, either:

(1)

Sodomy is a moral and practical evil, to be discouraged and/or punished by the state, and discouraged by civil society and individuals.

or

(2)

Sodomy is a moral and practical good, to be encouraged and benefited by the state, and encouraged by civil society and individuals.

If Position (1) is adopted, those who advocate sodomy will be seen as either evil or deluded, while those who oppose sodomy will be seen as good and intelligent.

If Position (2) is adopted, those who advocate sodomy will be seen as good and intelligent, while those who oppose sodomy will be seen as either evil or deluded.

This is because the issue is framed in terms of morality and medicine.

But consider flavors of ice cream. Someone who dislikes chocolate but likes vanilla will not hate and persecute someone who likes chocolate but dislikes vanilla, nor vice versa.

That is because ice cream flavor is an aesthetic issue.

But no one can long be dispassionate about moral issues (not in this society anyway). Who could be dispassionate about whether murder is wrong? Those who support murder and those who oppose murder will not be able to be part of the same society. In fact, this is so much the case that opposition to murder is one of the universal taboos in human society, such that almost no one (publicly) advocates murder. Even those who *do* advocate murder, such as pro-abortion groups, vehemently resist the characterization of infant murder as murder.

The same is true for practical evils, like diseases. Who are the supporters of tuberculosis? If one group of people advocated *for* tuberculosis (not for tuberculosis treatment, but for the propagation of the infection), the opponents of tuberculosis would not (logically) be able to think that the advocates of tuberculosis were both sane and good. The opponents of tuberculosis would *have* to believe that the proponents of tuberculosis were either outright evil, or simply deluded.

The only way for two groups of people who differ on moral and medical issues (that are relevant and active within society) to live together in *one* society is to think that their opponents are deluded.

To think that their opponents are evil would immediately lead to the conclusion that such opponents were Enemies of the Society. They would *necessarily* either (1) be the subject of legal and social hostility, like terrorists, or (2) be the subject of purely social hostility, like the Ku Klux Klan.

But, even if opponents decide, amicably, to figure that their opponents are simply deluded, the greater the issue, the greater the harm one must think such a delusion to cause.

If the issue were minor, such as the proper etiquette for exchanging pleasantries, the two sides could very easily consider their opponents only lightly deluded -- mistaken in a minor matter of small moral importance.

But, if one side believes that an act is a fundamental offense against the LORD of the Universe, and the other side believes that same act to be a fundamental aspect of the identity and well-being of the human person himself or herself (or, really, itself), then each side will believe that the other labors under a horrible, very destructive delusion.

Even if neither side attempts to use the force of the state to dispel such a horrible delusion, to one extent or the other, (and show me the human beings so restrained), each side will attempt to marginalize and invalidate the other.

Now, Christians, having an obligation to love their enemies (or, at least, to publicly claim that they love their enemies), will inevitably have the worst of it, (if they are true Christians), both in social debate and in everyday society, because no other social group in history believes in loving your enemies (Buddhists marginally excepted). Virtually every other social group on earth believes in destroying your enemies.

There are precious few workarounds on this issue.

(1)

One is for one or both sides to practice deep epistemic uncertainty about an issue. For instance, an opponent of sodomy who believes that it is possible that he or she is wrong will act far more graciously and moderately than an opponent who believes that he or she is metaphysically and epistemologically certain of his cause.

Likewise, an advocate of sodomy who believes that it is possible that he or she is wrong will act far more graciously and moderately than an opponent who believes that he or she is metaphysically and epistemologically certain of his cause.

Christians, being clobbered by the Gay Death Star, have taken the far more submissive posture as of late.

Gays, being feted and celebrated by the state, the culture, the media, and the corporate order, are feeling their oats and striding briskly as never before.

Christians feel that the winds of science and history are against them, and so grow uncertain. They offer compromises and kind words and even embraces, Rob Bell-style, offering to tinker with or wholly modify doctrines that are millennia-old and integral to the moral and ontological theories of Christianity.

Gays feel that the winds of science and history are for them, so they grow bolder and more insistent every day. They have no interest in epistemic uncertainty about the morality or health of sodomy. For them, sodomy is health and virtue and human rights and justice itself - maybe even God Himself, and anyone who opposes sodomy is either outright evil or deluded and must be destroyed.....or at least quarantined, restricted, and somehow cured.

This precisely explains the “glacier melting and falling into the ocean” quality of social “progress” on the matter of sodomy.

It is very difficult, nigh impossible, to think that something is really good *and* really bad at the same time.

Once you change your mind about whether tuberculosis is a disease or a cure, you will change your conduct very quickly.

Once you, (or your society), change your mind about whether an act and a practice are sins or rights, you, (and your society), will change practically overnight.

(2)

On the other hand, the perspective offered in this book fundamentally bears on this question.

If the human person itself -- insofar as it briefly persists in *this* world -- is fundamentally sundered, fundamentally broken, fundamentally set against itself (precisely because *this* world, in its entirety, is set against itself), then an aspect of a person can be both actually a part of that person, and also morally wrong.

If that is the case, then (regardless of one's epistemic certainty or uncertainty), it offers a genuinely different approach to the matter. While the state cannot uphold as equal and salutary what is immoral, neither can the state brand such people sinners who simply chose their miserable lot, like bank robbers. And if something can be intrinsic to one's person (or, at least, one's temporal, passing person in this sundered world) *and also* an immoral disposition, then you cannot simply "treat" the person as if he or she was afflicted by some virus or bacteria, or even like he or she was suffering from some "abnormal" functioning of his or her physiology, or even psychology (to the extent the psyche is distinguished from the spirit).

The human person's flesh and psyche would not, as such, be considered abnormal (at least not relative to the world, *this* world). The very world itself is understood to be abnormal -- to be distanced from the grace -- and normality, true normality -- of God Himself.

Likewise, no sane or good member of society could attack or hate such people. For that would be like attacking or hating people born blind because they were defective. That's just mean. Be happy that you weren't born blind, instead of dumping on those who were. You wouldn't make fun of people with learning disabilities or born with some physical abnormality.

At the same time, if the abnormality, or at least its practice, was understood to be something opposed to the Will of God, while people could not hate or harass such people, neither could they applaud the failure to resist such abnormality, nor could they celebrate the reorientation of society around such immoral behavior (unless they also opposed the Will of God).

As far as I can tell, those are the only two options available for the peaceful and respectful coexistence of those who propose and oppose sodomy, namely: (1) epistemic uncertainty and/or (2) the fractured idea of this world, as a consequence of the Fall.

But this is where things get interesting.

If you think that something is medicine, when it's actually poison, you're screwed.

American (and European) society is betting that sodomy is medicine, even though for all of human history it was considered poison.

Americans are betting, as they are wont to do, that all of the past is wrong, and that their self-charted future is right.

And, like delusional maniacs, they must silence all those who publicly say, "Hey....wait, are you sure that isn't poison?"

America has changed its mind, set its course, and will now no longer tolerate dissent. America will no longer consider sodomy a poison, rather, it will consider all those who call it a poison to actually be the poison themselves.

That's a great bet if you're totally right.

If something is the cure-all, and you forbid people from calling it poison, you're safe.

That's like racism and anti-racism. Racism is so intrinsically and totally evil and stupid, and not being racist so much a grace, that you can be virulently, mindlessly anti-racist and actually be better off than the most well-considered racist.

But.....

(1)

What if that cure-all is actually rat poison?

What if it is a cause of cancer?

and

(2)

What if, even, that cure-all, if used in certain ways and by certain people, is actually harmful....maybe even lethal.

Then tarring and feathering critics of the cure-all will, in the case of (1), be social death, or at least (2) cause severe social dysfunction because you forbade anyone from warning you about possible side effects.

And one might also, (should necessarily), inquire into the contents and effects of that cure-all. Because, if you silence all who dissent, you will never really know the nature of that cure-all. Americans are guzzling that tonic thinking that it is simple "Equality". But any

meaningful analysis will identify the chemical formula of that bottle labeled “Equality” to actually contain Free Love and Atheism (or, at least, a New Homosexual Religion fundamentally different from historical, authentic, genuine Christianity). One drinks the formula, thinking that it will produce heteronormative, cute, Christian-like gay couples acting like 1950s or at least 1990s sitcom couples, and then one discovers that the derangement of one’s social constitution has offered up the marital corporation, 100 or 1000 or 10,000 strong, along with the total loss of the logical foundations that forbade fornication, pornography, prostitution, or even straight-up cheating. Well, no matter. Die essentialism die, long live Postmodernism! God is Dead! Truth is Dead! Long live relativism! Derrida! Différance! Foucault! Power/knowledge! Anal sex taught in kindergarten! Same-sex orgies hosted by enlightened parents who happily serve punch and lemonade to the frolicking, liberated youths!

And now it gets *much* more interesting.

For, if you consider your newfound darling idea and practice to be the cure-all, and go about persecuting all those who oppose that cure-all as evil or mentally ill or stupid.....and you turn out to be wrong.....and not just wrong, but those evil, ill, stupid people have the LORD of the Universe on their side.....what *precisely* is going to happen to you?

But, no matter.

Love is Love is Love is Love is Love is Love. =. NOH8.

So, in a sense, *Obergefell v. Hodges*, the *Gay Roe v. Wade*, does, in fact, have a solid logical (if not exactly, formally legal) foundation.

If

(1) sodomy, both inclination and practice, is (at least sometimes) essential to the human person,

and

(2) The human person as constituted in this world is always natural, in an absolute essential and existential sense (and here I take my leave of the majority),

and

(3) Justice requires the protection, and even ordination, of the human person,

and

(4) Liberty requires the preservation of a person's right to justice,

and

(5) The Constitution's Due Process Clause and Equal Protection Clause require the protection, articulation, and even apotheosis of liberty.

Then

Sodomy is a fundamental right, and the right to sodomy transcends all other considerations (except, possibly, similarly equal fundamental rights, if such a thing exists), and must be instantiated wherever and whenever and however it demands.

(We can also note the damning blow to the possibility that *any* fundamental right could ever be equal to or greater than the right to sodomy. You'll be called a bigot if you say any such fundamental right exists. *NOOOOOO!!!!!!!! LMFAO.*)

One can easily see the logical truth of this string of dominoes in reading the dissents written by the conservative justices of the Court.

The conservative justices, being jurists, train (almost) all of their aim on the purely doctrinal and historical arguments against calling sodomy marriage.

They, rightly, note that previous cases of the Supreme Court do not, to any extent whatsoever, articulate or even suggest a right to have sodomy called marriage. (For non-lawyers, previous cases of the Supreme Court have the force of precedent, and hence (theoretically) determine how the present Court is supposed to construe and apply the law to a certain set of facts.) Chief Justice Roberts expertly cites a string of 19th century cases that explicitly *define* marriage as a union between a man and a woman.

Justices Scalia, Thomas, and Alito make special points that the Founders, in framing the original Constitution and original amendments, and, later, the Framers of the 14th Amendment, did not at all contemplate that their legal drafting about liberty, equality, or absolutely *anything* redefined marriage to include sodomitical relationships.

But there is a key problem with the conservative rejoinder to the radical, revolutionary majority (other than having one less vote): The conservatives set what people *in the past* think was true, good, and just *versus* what people *in the present* think is true, good, and just.

If I say to you there's this fun, gratifying, psychologically fulfilling practice that is, in fact, good, true, and just, **but** people one hundred years ago thought that it was witchcraft and had cooties, would you deny yourself the pleasure and good because people from the past thought it was bad? Or would you laugh at the people in the past and go on your merry way?

There is, sort of, a strong legal foundation to the conservative argument. Law is Law is Law. Law is a positive enactment of some lawmaking body. A court is *not* a law-making body. Therefore, the Supreme Court, or any court, can *only* look to the enactments of lawmaking bodies in determining what **value set** (i.e. set of moral assumptions) to instantiate (apply to) in the text of the Constitution, namely the Due Process Clauses in the 5th and 14th Amendments and the Equal Protection Clause in the 14th Amendment.

But here's the problem: the Constitution itself is a law.

And, so, the problem of constitutional law, necessarily, as my [grandpappy](#)⁶² in the law, Professor Philip Bobbitt, taught me all those years ago, is essentially a problem of constitutional *interpretation*. As far as I can tell, Bobbitt is a social liberal of sorts,⁶³ but his articulation of constitutional interpretation involves the close perception of six fundamental modes of constitutional (or merely legal) interpretation: textual, historical, doctrinal, prudential, structural, and ethical.

The following exposition is my own personal understanding of what I think this theory of interpretation necessarily means, not necessarily Bobbitt's own interpretation.

Textual interpretation is understanding what a legal phrase means only by reference to the words on the page. It means interpretation through no external device, such as authorial intent (historical interpretation) or an interpretative tradition (doctrinal). The words are simply taken in their plain sense. History is irrelevant. Time is irrelevant. The words are taken to exist textually, *not* contextually. The higher criticism of historical critique and context would instantly make it an historical interpretation, not a textual one. Textualism is not for those who believe that text is impossible without context. Thorough-going textualism, (which is, ultimately, in some sense, impossible), is for textual essentialists, Textual Platonists. The problem instantly arises: who defines a word? The judge? A dictionary? Which dictionary? It is usually Merriam-Webster or the Oxford English Dictionary. On a purely intellectual level, such a recourse, in some sense, puts you back into more contextual modes, since that makes your textual interpretation dependent on a discrete social production, with a history of intellectual development, instantiated at a particular point in time. But that little wrinkle rarely causes a problem, because dictionary definitions are *usually* sufficient for parsing a phrase.

Historical interpretation means identifying the author's intent. Identifying *who* the authors were and what motivated them then becomes endlessly complicated, only punctuated by the fiat of a judge.

Doctrinal interpretation means parsing the sense of a tradition of legal sources, usually prior cases on the subject. Identifying common meanings among cases written by different jurists decades and even centuries apart becomes its own three-ring circus.

Prudential interpretation means understanding a legal phrase through what you *think* would be best for it to mean. It is a moral judgment. Even if it is not a moral judgment in the sense of Christian morality, it is always a moral judgment in the sense of "what is best?".

⁶² https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=Uzae_SqbmDE

⁶³ <https://www.spectator.co.uk/2013/07/philip-bobbitt-on-machiavelli-obama-and-david-cameron/>

Structural interpretation means understanding a phrase, or word, through its *relationships* to other words and phrases. Hence, it seeks to identify dynamic structures that exist between words and concepts, believing that the relationships between words inform the meaning of the individual, distinct, discrete words. Whereas textualism sees words and phrases as isolated planets in blank space, structuralism sees all words, phrases, and concepts as essentially interlinked in a kind of space-time continuum of meaning.

Ethical interpretation is Bobbitt's special creation, so it would be a bit presumptuous to offer any kind of definitive definition. I take it to mean the cultural norms that a society holds dear. So, in deciding a case, even if there are no clear meanings of a phrase textually, or from evidence of authorial intent, or case law, the judge can have recourse to what the cultural tradition thinks is right and wrong. Note that ethical does not mean right and wrong in the abstract, but in terms of what the jurisdiction's *ethos*, or culture, considers right and wrong.

So, when you come to the Constitution, and you find that it guarantees a right to liberty, what does liberty mean?

You can look it up in a dictionary (Textual).

You can ask what the Founding Fathers or the ratifiers of the 14th Amendment thought (Historical).

You can try to discern a concordance among the holdings (conclusions) from past cases about the same topic (Doctrinal).

You can ask what is the best outcome, morally and practically (Prudential).

You can ask how the word and concept of liberty relate to other sections of the Constitution, conceived as a structural whole. You can also jump into/fall into a rabbit hole of constitutional, political, and moral philosophy by doing this.

You can ask what the cultural tradition of the United States thinks liberty means.

Conservatives typically like to privilege the historical interpretation above all others, setting the meaning of the Constitution in terms of the original meaning of the Founders (or the Founding generation of Americans) or the ratifiers of the Amendments. They do this because it prevents social change. They will also often, with modern legislation, privilege textualism (even against originalism), because looking to the authorial intent of liberal legislators from the New Deal and Great Society eras would make the application of liberal laws more liberal, not less.

So Conservatives will say that the Constitution means only what the Founders and ratifiers of the 14th Amendment meant, fixing the social meaning and ramifications of the core elements of the Constitution in 1789 (the year the Constitution was ratified) and 1868 (the year the 14th Amendment was ratified). This allows Conservatives to prevent any new ideas to be given effect through Constitutional rights, privileges, and protections.

Liberals will use the prudential, structural, ethical, and even, when it suits them, doctrinal modes of interpretation, because interpreting such words as "liberty" by what is good in the abstract, the purpose of the Constitutional project, what American culture is, and the *trend* of doctrinal development/"development" allows them to do whatever they think is right and good.

This is clear from how AK interprets the word “liberty”. (For those who wonder at my constant use of the name “AK”, as opposed to his formal name and title, I simply respond that if he wishes to act like a super-villain, he must be addressed like a super-villain). AK has no use for what liberty meant to people in 1789 or 1868, nor does he have any use for what a strict dictionary definition of liberty means.

Indeed, in all fairness, when you get to a dictionary definition of liberty, you are going to come up short. All you will get is, essentially, “the state of being free”. Thanks for nothing, dictionary. Textualism, when applied to such philosophically deep and complex subjects like liberty, will always become either (1) an historical investigation into what liberty meant to past generations and/or (2) a philosophical investigation into what liberty does, in the abstract, mean, and what it *should* mean.

So, AK must rely on what he thinks is right. AK supports this with (thin) arguments about the nature of doctrinal evolution on the subject of marriage, and he also makes efforts to corral some structural arguments about the relationship between the Due Process Clause and the Equal Protection Clause.

AK cannot muster any historical arguments for his position, and what the text counsels is, indeed, a matter of interpretation.

So, AK must put the whole weight of his argument on prudential, ethical, and structural factors.

His structural argument has nothing to do with the core issue: does liberty require that society call sodomy marriage? Can there *be* such a thing as “gay marriage”? Is there such a thing as “marriage equality”, where “marriage equality” means that a relationship between a man and a woman is the same *thing* (has the same definition) as between two men or two women? He uses a structural argument about a possible feedback effect between the meaning of liberty and equal protection between and across the DPC (Due Process Clause) and the EPC (Equal Protection Clause).

The justice-turned-super-villain writes:

In any particular case one Clause may be thought to capture the essence of the right in a more accurate and comprehensive way, even as the two Clauses may converge in the identification and definition of the right. See *M. L. B.*, 519 U. S., at 120–121; *id.*, at 128–129 (KENNEDY, J., concurring in judgment); *Bearden v. Georgia*, 461 U. S. 660, 665 (1983). This interrelation of the two principles furthers our understanding of what freedom is and must become.

This structural argument appeals to defining *one* word (or principle or concept) through its *relationship* to *another* word (or principle or concept). In this case, AK argues that the concept of equality informs the concept of liberty. Do the drafters and ratifiers agree with AK’s assessment? Who knows? And who cares? That is *not* what this is about. (Actually, we *do* know -- the men in 1868 who drafted and ratified the 14th Amendment would *never* have thought that the liberty and equality that *they* wrote about, and that the general population through their federal and state legislatures, ratified, necessitated calling sodomy marriage, any

more than they would have thought that it justified polyamorous “marriage”.) As we are beginning to see, structural arguments rarely have any force, *of themselves*. They are vehicles that allow some other intention, motivated by some other chain of reasoning and feeling, to articulate a broader basis of justification than the mere reason or feeling (Love is Love is Love, =). Here, AK comes to this structural dynamism (that he claims to identify) rough and ready with *his own* definitions of liberty and equality, stocked not by history, but by cocktail parties and cable television.

AK calls this feedback effect between liberty and equality a “synergy”.

He continues his structural rhapsody:

Each concept—liberty and equal protection—leads to a stronger understanding of the other.

Indeed, in interpreting the Equal Protection Clause, the Court has recognized that new insights and societal understandings can reveal unjustified inequality within our most fundamental institutions that once passed unnoticed and unchallenged. To take but one period, this occurred with respect to marriage in the 1970’s and 1980’s. Notwithstanding the gradual erosion of the doctrine of coverture, see *supra*, at 6, invidious sex-based classifications in marriage remained common through the mid-20th century. See App. to Brief for Appellant in *Reed v. Reed*, O. T. 1971, No. 70–4, pp. 69–88 (an extensive reference to laws extant as of 1971 treating women as unequal to men in marriage). These classifications denied the equal dignity of men and women. One State’s law, for example, provided in 1971 that “the husband is the head of the family and the wife is subject to him; her legal civil existence is merged in the husband, except so far as the law recognizes her separately, either for her own protection, or for her benefit.” Ga. Code Ann. §53–501 (1935). Responding to a new awareness, the Court invoked equal protection principles to invalidate laws imposing sex-based inequality on marriage. See, e.g., *Kirchberg v. Feenstra*, 450 U. S. 455 (1981); *Wengler v. Druggists Mut. Ins. Co.*, 446 U. S. 142 (1980); *Califano v. Westcott*, 443 U. S. 76 (1979); *Orr v. Orr*, 440 U. S. 268 (1979); *Califano v. Goldfarb*, 430 U. S. 199 (1977) (plurality opinion); *Weinberger v. Wiesenfeld*, 420 U. S. 636 (1975); *Frontiero v. Richardson*, 411 U. S. 677 (1973). Like *Loving* and *Zablocki*, these precedents show the Equal Protection Clause can help to identify and correct inequalities in the institution of marriage, vindicating precepts of liberty and equality under the Constitution.

AK argues that there is a structural, and hence dynamic, *relationship* between liberty and equality. But, first, AK must *supply* the definition of at least one of the words (really, implicitly, both) in order to (1) establish a dynamic relation and (2) make that dynamic relation say what he wants. Certainly, Justice Scalia, using the same dynamic relation (assuming he accepted the structural argument), would find that his concept of liberty (what the men of 1868 meant) reinforces his argument that equality does *not* require calling sodomy marriage.

Look at what is *really* going on with AK’s reasoning. Be a critical reader -- meaning, don’t necessarily disagree with AK, but honestly analyze what he is *actually* saying. What impels this dynamic relation? What determines in which direction this dynamism goes? Think in terms of physics. This dynamism has a velocity, an informational cross-flow between liberty

and equality. What determines the *vector* of that velocity? A vector is the direction of a magnitude.⁶⁴ So liberty and equality are the magnitudes. Two possible directions would be the frowny-face, bad-bad, bigoted world of traditional Christian morality, on the one hand, and the happy-happy, two thumbs-up, celebration of love (love being whatever you want it to mean) of atheistical Secularist Humanism, which makes the human race gods in place of God -- the true God, YHWH -- on the other.

For AK, the vector is determined by “a new awareness”, that “identif[ies] and correct[s] inequalities in the institution of marriage, vindicating precepts of liberty and equality under the Constitution.” Where does that essential, critical, all-consuming “new awareness” come from? It comes from “new insights and societal understandings”. Where do such “new insights and societal understandings” come from? Cocktail parties and cable television, of course.

AK is ordaining a jurisprudence where what the guests at a cocktail party say to him, and what news shows, television series, or movies he watches have more constitutional jurisprudential weight than all of American history. That can only be a good thing if you agree with his conclusions, and don’t much care about how he gets there.

Chief Justice Roberts eviscerates AK’s argument, such as it is, about the overturning and dissolution of coverture laws somehow justifying changing the definition of marriage:

As the majority acknowledges, marriage “has existed for millennia and across civilizations.” Ante, at 3. For all those millennia, across all those civilizations, “marriage” referred to only one relationship: the union of a man and a woman. See ante, at 4; Tr. of Oral Arg. on Question 1, p. 12 (petitioners conceding that they are not aware of any society that permitted same-sex marriage before 2001). As the Court explained two Terms ago, “until recent years, . . . marriage between a man and a woman no doubt had been thought of by most people as essential to the very definition of that term and to its role and function throughout the history of civilization.” *United States v. Windsor*, 570 U. S. ___, ___ (2013) (slip op., at 13).

This universal definition of marriage as the union of a man and a woman is no historical coincidence. Marriage did not come about as a result of a political movement, discovery, disease, war, religious doctrine, or any other moving force of world history— and certainly not as a result of a prehistoric decision to exclude gays and lesbians. It arose in the nature of things to meet a vital need: ensuring that children are conceived by a mother and father committed to raising them in the stable conditions of a lifelong relationship. See G. Quale, *A History of Marriage Systems* 2 (1988); cf. M. Cicero, *De Officiis* 57 (W. Miller transl. 1913) (“For since the reproductive instinct is by nature’s gift the common possession of all living creatures, the first bond of union is that between husband and wife; the next, that between parents and children; then we find one home, with everything in common.”).

The premises supporting this concept of marriage are so fundamental that they rarely require articulation. The human race must procreate to survive. Procreation occurs through sexual relations between a man and a woman. When sexual relations result in the

⁶⁴ Strictly speaking, direction and magnitude are both scalars, and their composition becomes a vector, and thus, velocity is itself a vector, it doesn’t “have” a vector. I took Physics. But the metaphor is clearer the way I have presented it above.

conception of a child, that child's prospects are generally better if the mother and father stay together rather than going their separate ways. Therefore, for the good of children and society, sexual relations that can lead to procreation should occur only between a man and a woman committed to a lasting bond.

Society has recognized that bond as marriage. And by bestowing a respected status and material benefits on married couples, society encourages men and women to conduct sexual relations within marriage rather than without. As one prominent scholar put it, "Marriage is a socially arranged solution for the problem of getting people to stay together and care for children that the mere desire for children, and the sex that makes children possible, does not solve." J. Q. Wilson, *The Marriage Problem* 41 (2002).

This singular understanding of marriage has prevailed in the United States throughout our history. The majority accepts that at "the time of the Nation's founding [marriage] was understood to be a voluntary contract between a man and a woman." Ante, at 6. Early Americans drew heavily on legal scholars like William Blackstone, who regarded marriage between "husband and wife" as one of the "great relations in private life," and philosophers like John Locke, who described marriage as "a voluntary compact between man and woman" centered on "its chief end, procreation" and the "nourishment and support" of children. 1 W. Blackstone, *Commentaries* *410; J. Locke, *Second Treatise of Civil Government* §§78–79, p. 39 (J. Gough ed. 1947). To those who drafted and ratified the Constitution, this conception of marriage and family "was a given: its structure, its stability, roles, and values accepted by all." Forte, *The Framers' Idea of Marriage and Family*, in *The Meaning of Marriage* 100, 102 (R. George & J. Elshstain eds. 2006).

The Constitution itself says nothing about marriage, and the Framers thereby entrusted the States with "[t]he whole subject of the domestic relations of husband and wife." *Windsor*, 570 U. S., at ___ (slip op., at 17) (quoting *In re Burrus*, 136 U. S. 586, 593–594 (1890)). There is no dispute that every State at the founding—and every State throughout our history until a dozen years ago—defined marriage in the traditional, biologically rooted way. The four States in these cases are typical. Their laws, before and after statehood, have treated marriage as the union of a man and a woman. See *DeBoer v. Snyder*, 772 F. 3d 388, 396–399 (CA6 2014). Even when state laws did not specify this definition expressly, no one doubted what they meant. See *Jones v. Hallahan*, 501 S. W. 2d 588, 589 (Ky. App. 1973). The meaning of "marriage" went without saying.

Of course, many did say it. In his first American dictionary, Noah Webster defined marriage as "the legal union of a man and woman for life," which served the purposes of "preventing the promiscuous intercourse of the sexes, . . . promoting domestic felicity, and . . . securing the Cite as: 576 U. S. ____ (2015) maintenance and education of children." 1 *An American Dictionary of the English Language* (1828). An influential 19th-century treatise defined marriage as "a civil status, existing in one man and one woman legally united for life for those civil and social purposes which are based in the distinction of sex." J. Bishop, *Commentaries on the Law of Marriage and Divorce* 25 (1852). The first edition of Black's *Law Dictionary* defined marriage as "the civil status of one man and one woman united in law for life." *Black's Law Dictionary* 756 (1891) (emphasis deleted). The dictionary maintained essentially that same definition for the next century.

This Court's precedents have repeatedly described marriage in ways that are consistent only with its traditional meaning. Early cases on the subject referred to marriage as "the union for life of one man and one woman," *Murphy v. Ramsey*, 114 U. S. 15, 45 (1885), which forms "the foundation of the family and of society, without which there would be neither civilization nor progress," *Maynard v. Hill*, 125 U. S. 190, 211 (1888). We later described marriage as "fundamental to our very existence and survival," an understanding that necessarily implies a procreative component. *Loving v. Virginia*, 388 U. S. 1, 12 (1967); see *Skinner v. Oklahoma ex rel. Williamson*, 316 U. S. 535, 541 (1942). More recent cases have directly connected the right to marry with the "right to procreate." *Zablocki v. Redhail*, 434 U. S. 374, 386 (1978).

As the majority notes, some aspects of marriage have changed over time. Arranged marriages have largely given way to pairings based on romantic love. States have replaced coverture, the doctrine by which a married man and woman became a single legal entity, with laws that respect each participant's separate status. Racial restrictions on marriage, which "arose as an incident to slavery" to promote "White Supremacy," were repealed by many States and ultimately struck down by this Court. *Loving*, 388 U. S., at 6–7.

The majority observes that these developments "were not mere superficial changes" in marriage, but rather "worked deep transformations in its structure." *Ante*, at 6–7. They did not, however, work any transformation in the core structure of marriage as the union between a man and a woman. If you had asked a person on the street how marriage was defined, no one would ever have said, "Marriage is the union of a man and a woman, where the woman is subject to coverture." The majority may be right that the "history of marriage is one of both continuity and change," but the core meaning of marriage has endured. *Ante*, at 6.

Deep Impact

<https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=VNtsVP42bOE>

Does this matter? Has Roberts' annihilation of AK's "logic" on this structural argument led to a national reassessment of whether the Constitution does, in fact, uphold that Love is Love is Love?

No, of course not.

Because that's not what this is about, you bigot!

This isn't about logic. This is about destiny.

This has nothing to do with tradition, history, or even logical morality. It has to do with the Gay Triumph of the Will, the sheer force of outrage, name-calling, and sexual desire that will, that must, wash away all that stands against it.

So, these "new insights and understandings" that animate the zombie of AK's structural argument: where do they come?

They come from prudential and ethical arguments.

A prudential argument is simply a moral argument, where "moral" is defined not as Christian sexual morality, or repression, or some legalistic strictures that make you feel bad, but

simply “What is best?”. Everyone *must* make moral judgments. Even Satan makes moral judgments, he simply makes them backwards and upside down.

An ethical argument is what a great many people, in your jurisdiction’s culture, have thought and felt very deeply for a good long time.

So, prudential (what I will from now on call “moral”) arguments are really just moral arguments at the individual and abstract level (what one person, namely, the judge, thinks is moral - What is best for society), while ethical arguments are really just moral arguments at the cultural and national level (what the Nation thinks, according to the judge, is moral. That is, what the society thinks their society is all about).

AK makes some general appeal to ethical (i.e. cultural arguments). However, he cannot do so strongly, so he doesn’t. He cannot do so strongly, (without straight-up lying, and, at this point, why not just lie and say that the Founding Fathers and the men of 1868 were all queer theorists and threw Gay Pride Parades? What difference does it even make? We threw logic under the bus. Why not all truth?), because the American People, viewed as a national continuity from 1776 or 1789 to the present, does not have an overall cultural tradition of defining marriage as anything other than between a man and a woman. Period. The End. Full Stop. If you disagree with that, you are wrong.

Yet, AK does use an ‘emerging consensus’ (of which he is a part) to make a sort-of ethical (cultural) argument. AK cannot sensibly appeal to a cultural tradition, but he can appeal to a cultural *evolution*. So, liberty has not, for American culture (viewed as a whole), meant calling sodomy marriage, but since the idea of liberty has expanded over time, AK feels comfortable in making an appeal to a culture of cultural evolution, and AK sees calling sodomy marriage as part of a broader civil rights effort for “gay rights” (read: gay power) that *must be* a part, and a necessary part, of that cultural *evolution*.

Well.....why?

Why is calling sodomy marriage cultural evolution? It’s certainly cultural change. But is it change for the *better*....or change for the worse? No jurist that I am aware of will justify his opinions on the basis of a cultural evolution for the worse.

Let’s say you had a perfectly anti-racist, non-racist, totally racially enlightened jurist. Let us call him Justice King. And let’s say, over the next thirty or fifty years, America becomes *much* more racist, sexist, and xenophobic. Will Justice King, in 2050 or 2065, write an opinion, to the effect, “The Due Process Clause *used* to protect African-Americans from discrimination, but there has been a cultural evolution towards a far more racist, bigoted, hateful, violent, ignorant, and destructive culture and ethos on race, (and, indeed, also in regard to the relations between the sexes), which reflects a general cultural trend towards a valuing of White Supremacy and the Patriarchal Prerogative of Rich, White Men. Though I believe that racism is evil and stupid and that White Supremacy will be the death of this Nation, I am bound to respect the ethical argument that the respondent makes. America has, indeed, become way the Hell more racist these past fifty years, and I am bound to reflect that trend in my interpretation of the 14th Amendment. It is so ordered.” ?

No. *Hell* no. A racist future Justice may write a racist opinion, applauding the racial “progress” in understanding the differences between the races (which would be horrible and stupid, because racism is evil and stupid). But a non-racist Justice will *never* write such a thing as my through-the-looking-glass flight of fancy. Ever.

So.....what’s up, AK? Why does AK point to cultural “progress” on believing that sodomy is moral and good and fun?

It’s really simple.

You don’t have to go to law school, as I did, to figure it out.

Anybody?

Any takers?

Anyone want to take a guess?

Because AK himself thinks that having sodomitical sexual desires is moral and good and a human right, and that its expression and even its ordination and blessing by the State is a human right.

Period. That’s it. That’s the whole ball game. All the case cites and attempts at argument? Bollocks. Bullshit. Everything beyond, “I, Anthony Kennedy, and my Majority, believe that what were once called perverse lusts, like two men or two women (or more?) having a kind of sex together, are not, in fact, wrong, but natural and good. Being natural and good, they must be moral. Being moral, and being an integral part of certain human persons (since they are natural and moral desires that necessarily and rightly spring from certain people’s persons), and these human persons being born citizens of this Republic, justice requires that these people’s personal preferences be treated equally. Liberty is a right to fundamental justice. Therefore, the 14th Amendment, which protects liberty and equality, requires that what was once called sodomy, must now be called marriage by the State,” is blather. All the verbiage and sort-of arguments in the rest of the opinion are just ornamentation (and illogical, and, frankly, dishonest, ornamentation) for that paragraph. Period.

AK, and his band of lawless “jurists” in the Majority, could have saved themselves a lot of time and just issued that paragraph.

But that wouldn’t *look* good. You see, you can’t just be straight-up like that about what you’re doing. It has to *look* the part. It has to *look* like judicial interpretation, when really, it is nothing more than a political revolution engineered by five lawyers in robes.

That is true.

And there is no decent argument against that truth.

So *all* the media and the popular culture and the mandarins can do is call you a bigot and “support” it with raging, hateful, mindless word salad -- just a water cannon of mindless verbiage and bad poetry and propaganda. NOH8! =. Love is Love is Love, you bigot!

Now, there's also a problem with the Conservative argument, which manifests itself as the Originalist constitutional jurisprudence.

I am not a Conservative. And I am not an Originalist.

How so?

Because the Conservative argument doesn't make sense on Originalism.

The Conservative cheers, "Yeah, that guy's right! We need *real* Law. *Real* Law is what the Drafter and Ratifier of that Law *meant*. You can't just make up any old shit that you want and call it law, because *you* think that it's better that way. That's legislation. And when the judiciary legislates, it violates the Separation of Powers and destroys our Constitutional system of government."

Yes. Fair enough.

But, this is where Professor Bobbitt's insight into the six constitutional modes of interpretation really comes into play and elucidates the matter.

Because, indeed, what is law? The Constitution is a law. So, what is law?

The Conservative will answer, "The text."

Okay. Then what does liberty mean? "The state of being free from oppression." What then does freedom from oppression mean? Certainly, the right to marry would qualify as something that the freedom from oppression must encompass. You can quibble with the tree of logic there and say, "No," but then you're in a very different world, and good luck defending that world.

So, liberty includes a right to marriage. So, what does marriage mean? The Conservative answers (at first), look it up in the dictionary. Okay. But what dictionary? Consult your present-year dictionaries -- they will, many of them, include same-sex marriage.

No, they will respond. We mean old dictionaries, the good ones from the 18th and 19th centuries.

Oh, okay, I hear you. But that immediately means that you are supporting your textualism with the historical mode of interpretation. So, really, you're not a textualist, you're an historicalist.....an Originalist.

So, then the Conservative will say that Law is History/Text.

Okay.

But, what happens when the original meaning of a statute, (a paragraph, clause, phrase, or word), is unclear simply from old, musty dictionaries, newspapers, and books?

In other words, all Laws, being the products of finite human beings, will themselves be finite. They are all defective. There are gaps that must be filled in in order for those laws to be effective.

A Conservative could be, somewhat, logically consistent and say, "Then any gaps must be filled in by the Legislature."

There are a couple problems with that. First of all, that is impractical, especially given legislative gridlock. *Some* gap-filling, of some sort, must be done by judges, no matter how restrained, in order for the legal system to operate on a practical basis. Any strident Conservative opposition to that reality is simply ignorance. It is the equivalent of Constitutional Maoism -- it may sound good to some people in theory, but it is a disaster in practice.

Second, the Anglo-American legal tradition embraces judge-made law, under the Common Law. For centuries, whole areas of law, like contracts, torts, and property, were left to judges to develop as they saw fit.....so long as it had a fundamental integrity with what had gone before. So not just gap-filling, but law-creation has always been a part of an Anglo-American judge's job.

There is a tradition in which judges are not allowed to so widely interpret laws. It is the Continental European tradition of Civil Law, in which the meaning of the text of the code is considered fixed and no tradition of judge-made law is permitted. So, the ultra-Conservative ignorant of Anglo-American law might don a beret and argue that all of America should adopt a Civil Law system. Louisiana does it (to a certain extent). And I love Louisiana, so it can't be all bad.

But, don't don that beret or bake that beignet just yet (although, if you have beignets, I'm game).

Because every legal order requires some kind of interpretative tradition. In a society that changes, some amount of judge-made law (whether it is called judicial lawmaking or not) will occur. This is why Plato's *Laws* focus so fanatically on preventing all social change. Law cannot be a solid block of granite without society being kept static.

In a large society with many courts, all with judges who are different, you must have an interpretative tradition that keeps track of how laws are *currently* being interpreted. That is called doctrine, whether you like it or not.

The only way to contain doctrine is to have a more robust and malleable legislative process. Fewer things need to be determined by the fundamental constitutional order, and must be left to ordinary, everyday legislatures.

Americans do not do that. The Constitution has a mystical quality in the American Mind and gut, supported both by actual American historical tradition and modern media and

educational propaganda, and has the status in most Americans' minds as "Good Stuff." So, if something is good, how can Good Stuff not ordain it?

Obviously.

So, since, as Tocqueville noted, all political questions must become judicial questions, and must be decided by the Supreme Court in the form of a constitutional law question, and since the Constitution's true nature in the heart of the American People is "Good Stuff", the question on a matter of importance to non-lawyers and non-interested parties -- the general population -- always becomes, "Is this good stuff?"

There's a lot of fancy words and concepts thrown around in law journals, but that is all that is really going on when it comes to really important philosophical and social matters: The judges, in their all-wisdom, ask, "Is this good stuff?"

AK and his merry band answer, "Yes, this is good stuff."

Scalia, Thomas, and Alito answer, "No, this is bad stuff."

Only Roberts is interesting, because, (not to give anything away), John Roberts is smarter than the others.

Smart is the New Cool....maybe

https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=sud1fak_65Q

I don't actually know what Roberts in his homunculus thinks about gay marriage. But I do know that Johnny is a doctrinalist. I strongly suspect that he shares my general take on the whole matter (although, I could be terribly wrong). And a doctrinalist doesn't *just*....or even, primarily, care about WHAT IS RIGHT, but cares about what is right for the legal order overall. Most people don't think that way, because that requires insight and subtlety.

Damn, I'm smart



So, there must always be doctrine, whether it calls itself doctrine or not.

So, the Conservative will say that Law *is* History/Text, supplemented, only when necessary, by Doctrine.

Okay.

What about prudential (moral) arguments? What about what *is* right and good and just? Conservatives don't trouble themselves about this because the idea of "Law as History/Text" almost always supports what they think is right and good and just, since the value set of the 18th and certainly the 19th centuries conforms to traditional, authentic Christian morality.

But what if History/Text does *not* conform to what is Right and Good and Just? What then?

The Conservative Originalist response is, "That is what we have legislatures for. And if it is a matter of Constitutional law, that is why we have the Article V procedure for amending the Constitution."

In a country, both liberal and conservative, that believes that the Constitution means Good Stuff, that won't fly.

Besides, let's say that the men of 1776 (the Declaration of Independence), the men of 1789 (the Constitution), and the men of 1868 (the 14th Amendment) (and their corresponding general populations) were just straight-up wrong about certain things. What if they were bigoted? What if they were evil? What if they were unjust?

Then, "Law as History/Text" becomes nothing more than Law is Evil.

And no one wants that.

The Conservative Originalist glibly responds, "If you think the law is evil, change it."

But that is a rowboat with a big hole in it.

That is because Article V is defective in that respect. The Constitution cannot be meaningfully changed. It can be changed. But only *LONG* after virtually everybody in the country already agrees with whatever it is you want to change it to become. This is because a small minority of the population can block a constitutional amendment.

So, in the meantime, in those intervening centuries, what ever are Majorities to do?

What will Majorities do when something they fundamentally cherish and believe in is not ordained and applauded by Good Stuff....I mean, the Constitution?

They will pass laws. And, they won't wait. They will demand that Good Stuff say that their very good thing is, in fact, very good.

So, when litigants get up to the Court of Good Stuff (the Supreme Court of the United States), one side will say, "This is Good Stuff!" and the other side will say, "This is Bad Stuff!", and it will be left to the High Priests of Good Stuff to cut out the chicken entrails of Good Stuff to determine what, in fact, is Good Stuff.

The Supreme Court of the United States

<https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=GFG3LLxUqkY>

So, the Conservative argument says that Law is Law is Law, because History/Text is Law. So, what they are *really* saying is that "Law is What Dead People Think It Is".

Why should we be ruled by Dead People? Especially when those Dead People were evil and stupid and bigoted and unjust?

And why should we put up with a stupid, evil, bigoted, unjust legal order, and society, *for centuries*, just because Dead People thought something?

The Conservative will then flail his arms and babble incoherently about the "integrity of the legal order", about the "stability of the legal order", and about the "stability of social institutions". Lame fucktard bigotry shit like that.

Now, this is true to a certain extent. Roscoe Pound noted, "The law must be stable, but it must not stand still." Stability is a value. But Justice is a value too.

When Justice on a matter of fundamental importance is set against Stability, who will win? It's the same dynamic as pitting Duty versus Joy. When Joy is set against Duty, fundamentally and irretrievably, Duty goes, "Blah, blah, blah long-term," and Joy goes, "*You're going to die a virgin.*" And Joy always wins.

Whenever Stability fundamentally and irretrievably stands against Justice, Justice will always cream Stability, and it probably should, too.

It would be one thing if Justice could be achieved within a reasonable time -- five, ten years -- but Article V, our defective system for amending the Constitution, says, "Get back to Me in a few centuries....maybe never."

That isn't going to work.

So, when society changes in fundamental ways that cannot be accommodated by our defective Article V system for constitutional amendment, and Justice is fundamentally in jeopardy, and the prospect of forever living in an Unjust Chaos, rather than a Just State is a palpable reality.....what happens?

The Supreme Court turns into Superman.

To the Rescue

<https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=1BZc-zBgM3E>

Too often, it turns into this

<https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=DmEO1SXMKPQ>

Now, the Constitution does *not* have a clause that says, “When we were stupid or evil, the Supreme Court can go into beast mode and turn into Superman.”

So, the Supreme Court just does it. Like Nike sneakers. But they can’t *say* they’re doing it. The Supreme Court cannot just say, “We’re amending the Constitution. Check. Mate.”

The Supreme Court majority must say, “We are but merely interpreting the Constitution. Nothing to see here.”

So, because Article V is defective, and because majorities of the general population, and especially elite communities, like those that sit on the Supreme Court, do not like to live for centuries in a Mordor of Injustice and Evil, the Supreme Court sometimes goes beast mode and engages in what is clearly, just straight-up judicial amendment. Our defective formal system of Constitutional amendment has yielded up a de facto, ad hoc system of judicial amendment.

To the Conservative, Law is Law means Law is the Past. Since to the Conservative, the Past is good, the idea of “Law is the Past” is also good.

To the Liberal, Law is Law also means Law is the Past. Since to the liberal, the Past is (frequently) bad, the idea of “Law is Past” is also bad.

So what does the Liberal offer *instead* of Law as History/Text?

They offer “Law as Morality/Culture”.

That means that the Liberal will, when he or she thinks the History/Text serves Injustice, use moral and cultural arguments to justify the judicial amendment that he or she proposes.

But it gets deeper than that.

Because, who gets to say what Law is anyway?

Why *isn't* it, when it really counts, Morality/Culture?

Because that would not be Law? Why not? Who says?

What is Law?

If Law is not, at heart, Justice, then what is it? And if Law is sometimes Injustice, why would we prefer Law to Justice?

If, at heart, History/Text is not Justice, then either (1) It cannot be Law, or (2) Law sucks, and we should have a Justice System instead of a legal system.

So, the question of what does the Constitution really say will always come down to “What is Law?” and we can answer that two ways.

Law is History/Text

or

Law is Morality/Culture

History/Text is the Past, and the Will of the Past.

Morality/Culture, in a certain meaning, is the Will of the Present.

So, unsurprisingly, all this fuss and muss about “judicial philosophy” is *nothing* more than an over-complex, lying, deceitful, bloated, tricksters’ game that obscures the fact that the whole ball game is the Past vs. the Present.

If the Past were not different from the Present, History/Text would have the same value set as the Morality/Culture of today, so they would merge into each other, and there would be no fundamental crisis in the legal order.

Doctrine and structure do not have any fundamental orientations. Doctrine and structure are vehicles. History/Text (the Past) and Morality/Culture (the Present) are the vectors (or directions that you want to go in), and doctrine and structure are merely the magnitudes. History/Text and Morality/Culture are the drivers, and doctrine and structure are the vehicles.

Doctrine and structure can go any way you want.

If you are part of the Party of the Past, you will talk about doctrinal *tradition* and use structure to prevent change.

If you are part of the Party of the Present, you will talk about doctrinal *evolution* and use structure to accelerate change.

The Past and the Present are not universal, fundamental attributes. They are merely *Our* Past and *Our* Present. The “Past” and the “Present”, as such, do not, necessarily, have value sets.

So what do we mean when we talk about the values of Our Past versus the values of Our Present? We mean, essentially, on social matters, Christian morality versus Atheist morality. The atheism is, for some people, diluted and mediated by a Secularism that is not considered atheistical. But even a Christian who agrees with values that are not orthodox, catholic, and biblical is getting those values from something other than Christianity. Where, then, are those Christians getting those values?

It goes back to the struggle between Platonism and Epicureanism, and Plato and Epicurus are really, here, just placeholders for essentialism and nihilism.

Now, the nihilist will not characterize his or her position as nihilism. They will call it “humanism” or “vitalism” or “Secularism” or something less ominous than nihilism. But it is nihilism. Why? Because their values are simply plucked out of the air (supposedly), and then set in the air, without any foundation other than human fiat.

Most values plucked out of the air are actually plucked from Christianity (and by Christianity, I mean the religious tradition founded by YHWH with Abraham, expressed by the Covenant with Israel, and whose exemplar is Christ Jesus). The nihilist (vitalist, humanist, Secularist, whatever) then remolds those values and calls them something self-created and self-evident.

Now, what causes the divergence between genuine Christian (and Jewish) values and the nihilist values? What does the nihilist add (or subtract)? The nihilist adds himself or herself. The nihilist adds what *he* wants to be true, over and above and against what God wants to be true.

So, ultimately, there is no rhyme or reason or logic to what a nihilist wants to be true. It is whatever he -- and, if it is to have political effect -- what a politically powerful *group* wants to be true.

So, if a group wants to have sex between men and men and women and women, and they gain power, then their desire becomes a value, and that value becomes blessed by the Majority as the “good”, and then that good becomes the law, because the Constitution is the Law, and the Constitution is Good Stuff.

So, at bottom, the matter of constitutional interpretation is nothing more than a competition between values, between divergent value sets.

And a value is nothing more than a desire, than a Will.

So constitutional interpretation is nothing more than a competition of different wills.

Then, why does one desire become Law and another does not?

Why has Sodomy become the Law of the Land, yet Polyamory has not?

Do you need to ask?

One word: Power.

There is a large, popular, effective mobilization of people for sodomy, but not (yet) for polyamory.

The value set of the Present (in the Blue States, and, spiritually, in the Red States too) is the Self.

Remember, Satan is the god of the Self. And he is the god of this world, for this world is estranged from God, and deranged from His Will.

I see this all the more clearly because I am not a Conservative, and I am not a Secularist. I am a New Dealer. I am an FDR Liberal, with unreconstructed Christian values. I am for the poor and for grace. I am against the rich and against sin.

Conservatives are against sin (formally), but for the Rich.

Liberals are (theoretically) against the Rich, but for sin (abortion and sodomy).

The 18th and 19th centuries that produced the text of our Constitutional Order were laissez faire men, decidedly pre-New Deal. They weren't postmodern Conservative lackeys for the Rich, but they did assume that laissez faire government of the economy would be best for the many. It's not. Maybe it was then, maybe it wasn't. It certainly is *not* now.

So the value set of 1789 and 1868 was (1) Christian social morality and (2) laissez faire government.

The value set of the Present is (1) Satanic social morality, excuse me, "Secularist" social morality: read: Self-Oriented, Self-Deifying social morality (a Blue State preoccupation) and (2) Free-for-all economics (a Red State preoccupation) (Usually some form of Corporate Power, either the furious Scalia and Rehnquist and John Roberts kind, or the slightly more muted form of Corporate Power offered by Anthony Kennedy - AK, Destroyer of Worlds.)

Destroyer of Worlds

<https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=lb13ynu3Iac>

Since I support (1) Christian social morality and (2) People Power, I am not at home in either the Originalist or "Do Whatever We Want" camps.

We come back to what the Constitution says about a certain matter. At bottom, it will always come down to this: the Constitution is the Law is Justice is morality is moral philosophy is one's worldview.

If you are unwilling to live under the worldviews of 1789 and 1868, you must supply another worldview to live under.

So, as society moves from a Christian society to a nihilistic society, the Supreme Court must increasingly provide new worldviews.

In essence, the Supreme Court has become America's Vatican or Sanhedrin, and its "justices" are High Priests.

This is no exaggeration. What body, other than a religious tribunal, could hand down a definition of marriage not contained in the legal document that it is supposedly "interpreting"?

AK, Kagan, Sotomayor, Breyer, and Ginsburg have anointed themselves High Priests of the American Religion. And we citizens -- subjects -- must obey and bless the New Religion they are constructing. They pronounce the Will of the False God from an Anti-Sinai, and we, miserable peasants at the foot of the mountain, must gratefully obey.

And, like all pagan religions, if you do not worship and celebrate the Pagan Religion, you are an infidel and a heretic and a blasphemers -- in postmodern parlance: a bigot.

AK's argument in *Obergefell* is right insofar as the equation Sodomy=Justice holds. The problem is that the equation does not hold, but is quite false.

And, if it is true, then genuine, authentic Christianity is false, and will, necessarily, be identified as Bigotry in the New Satanic Empire. And all True Christians will be seen as bigots -- as infidels and blasphemers - as Enemies of Society and Enemies of the State. And the world simply awaits a Great Champion -- let us call him the Anti-Christ -- to destroy such Enemies of the State.

*The New Insights of Anthony Kennedy
Lord (Justice) of Illusions*

<https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=k8a1wofBOX4>

If the desire to commit sodomy is natural and moral, then AK and his supporters are right.

If the desire to commit sodomy is a physiological and psychological disability, and the will to indulge such disability, such disordered desire, is immoral and sinful, then AK and all that firestorm of Satanic self-righteousness is wrong.

If this society, and its elite, have gotten sodomy wrong, then they have done the equivalent of giving blind people the right to drive, or alcoholics the right to drink and drive.

No one would think it moral to carry around a big sign that said, "God Hates Blind People" or "God Hates Alcoholics".

And it would be madness and injustice and evil to persecute people simply for being blind or being alcoholic. Such people should be helped, and given all fair and compassionate consideration.

But, by the same token, you would be crazy to call people bigots when they say that blind people shouldn't be allowed to drive or that alcoholics shouldn't be allowed to drink and drive.

If the elite and the Gay Movement and those they have inveigled are wrong, then America and much of the European world is engaging in such madness because of a marketing campaign. "You can't stop blind people from driving, or stop alcoholics from drinking and driving! Don't you believe in Driving Equality, you bigot?"

I am going to post, in its entirety, an article written by Akhil Amar, a professor of constitutional law at Yale Law School. Amar is wrong. Amar is an intelligent and learned man. Yet his entire argument *depends* on sodomy being natural and moral. If sodomy is natural and moral, Amar is right, and I am wrong. But if sodomy is unnatural (or, at least, both natural and unnatural - that is, natural according to *this* world, which is ruled by Satan, but unnatural according to the Will of God), and immoral, then I am right and Amar is wrong.

Everything Amar says absolutely, 100% **DEPENDS** on Amar's idea of natural philosophy, moral philosophy, and psychology. If Amar's views on natural philosophy (the nature of Reality), moral philosophy (the nature of Justice), and psychology (the nature of the human person in this world) are *wrong*, then Amar is wrong.

There are no other logical supports in the law for Amar's argument *other than the idea that Amar is right about the science, philosophy, and morality. Period.*

I am a Criticalist, and I believe you have to get smarter, so I am trusting you to actually read what Amar says. My presentation in the paragraph above about what he says is true. Do not get blinded by his legal knowledge or citations. His *whole legal* argument depends on a comprehensive **worldview**.

Amar's arguments are not "legally neutral", as if that is possible. They are an articulation of a specific (and wrong) view of the world.

Amar is a brilliant scholar. His books and articles are intelligent and learned and often dazzling. (I especially recommend his illuminating *The Bill of Rights: Creation and Reconstruction*.) But no matter how learned he may be, his argument for calling sodomy marriage is a *completely* moral argument: sodomy is natural and moral, hence it must be granted equality. His argument has no other legal basis.

What the Same-Sex Marriage Opinion Should Have Said (and Almost Did)⁶⁵ by Akhil Reed Amar

The fireworks came early this year. When Justice Anthony Kennedy declared a constitutional right to same-sex marriage in [Obergefell v. Hodges](#) on June 26, each of the court's other four Republican appointees wrote a separate dissent taking a swipe at him. (The court's four Democrats stayed mum, content to let Kennedy make the case and take the heat.) Aiming all their firepower at Kennedy, the dissenters missed their real target: the Constitution itself. While persuasively explaining why they could not join Kennedy's majority opinion, they failed to persuasively explain why they voted against the

⁶⁵ http://www.slate.com/blogs/outward/2015/07/10/supreme_court_gay_marriage_what_kennedy_s_opinion_should_have_said.html

constitutional claims at issue—why they were dissenting (“Kennedy has reached the wrong result”) rather than concurring in the judgment (“Kennedy has reached the right result but for the wrong reasons”). Indeed, the four dissenters failed even to identify, much less engage, the best constitutional arguments for same-sex marriage—arguments that have been repeatedly made over many years by many leading lawyers, scholars, and lower-court judges.

Justice Kennedy’s majority opinion is not perfect, but it reached the right result, and for many of the right reasons. To be clear: Kennedy is not just right morally and not just right politically. He is not only on the right side of history—duh!—but also on the right side of the law, based on the Constitution’s letter and spirit and original meaning, as properly construed and implemented by the court in many previous cases.

Had I been whispering in Kennedy’s ear, here is the opinion I would have urged him to write:

We begin, as is altogether fitting and proper, with the Constitution itself. The 14th Amendment opens with a promise of birth equality: “All persons born ... in the United States ... are citizens” and thus equal citizens. As full and equal citizens, all persons born in America are entitled to full and equal protection of all fundamental civil liberties, as expressly guaranteed by the very next sentence of the 14th Amendment: “No State shall make or enforce any law which shall abridge the privileges or immunities of citizens of the United States.”

The 14th Amendment’s opening words about birthright citizenship were a clear and conscious codification of Abraham Lincoln’s vision at Gettysburg: America is dedicated to the proposition that all are created equal—“born” equal, in the language of the amendment. Persons born black are equal in civil rights to those born white. Persons born male are equal in civil rights to those born female. Persons born out of wedlock are equal in civil rights to those born in wedlock. Those born into Irish American families are equal to Anglo Americans and Italian Americans. Those born into Jewish households are legally the same as those born into Catholic or Protestant households. Children born second or third or 10th in a family are in law no less than those born first—the amendment prohibits once-common primogeniture and entail laws favoring first-born children as such. And today we make clear that those born gay or lesbian are no less in civil rights than those born straight.

The 14th Amendment was surely about racial equality—the core case of birth equality—but it just as surely ranged beyond race. The text speaks more generally than race—in pointed and purposeful contrast to the race-specific language of the 15th Amendment that followed shortly thereafter. (That amendment, of course, was necessary, as was the later 19th Amendment, because the 14th Amendment’s opening words applied only to “civil rights” and not to “political rights” such as voting, as this court correctly made clear early on in our 1875 ruling in [Minor v. Happersett](#). For more documentation and analysis, see Akhil Amar, [The Law of the Land](#), pp. 115-19; Akhil Amar, [America’s Unwritten Constitution](#), pp. 156-61, 186-87, and sources cited therein.)

The birth-equality principle was expressly and emphatically articulated in [a landmark statute](#) adopted alongside the 14th Amendment—by the very same Congress in the very same season and by virtually the same vote. This companion statute, the Civil Rights Act of 1866, opened with language virtually identical to the first sentence of the 14th Amendment and then immediately glossed that language by proclaiming that all birthright citizens were entitled to “the full and equal” benefit of all fundamental civil rights. This birth-equality idea was also expressly articulated by the first Justice Harlan—the great dissenter in Plessy—in our 1896 decision in [Gibson v. Mississippi](#) where, happily, he spoke for the court as a whole: “All citizens are equal before the law.”

This simple yet profound birth-equality principle powerfully organizes and unifies a vast amount of this court’s case law in the modern era, which treats certain legal distinctions as particularly problematic—laws discriminating on the basis of race, sex, ethnicity, or illegitimacy. By contrast, laws that distinguish along most other dimensions—treating wage income differently than rental income; treating opticians differently than ophthalmologists; treating small employers differently than large employers, and so on—are not viewed with the same kind of skepticism.

Some think that the 14th Amendment’s framers were not clearly focused on sex discrimination or the related issue of women’s civil rights. Wrong. In fact, much of the key language of the amendment’s first section tracked a proposal put forth earlier by none other than Elizabeth Cady Stanton. (For details see Akhil Amar, [The Bill of Rights: Creation and Reconstruction](#) pp.260-61 and sources cited therein.) The 14th Amendment’s framers thus knew exactly what they were doing in pitching its text at the proper level of generality, condemning not just racially discriminatory laws but all laws creating unequal civil rights on the basis of birth status. This birth-equality principle

resonated with Enlightenment ideology and the original Constitution's paired clauses banning both state and federal governments from creating titles of nobility (laws that privileged certain persons by dint of their birth).

Not all laws that distinguish on the basis of birth status are unconstitutional. Some distinctions may be justifiable if genuinely and unavoidably necessary to prevent harm to others. For example, although some persons are born blind, the law may generally prohibit blind persons from flying airplanes; persons born with the HIV virus may be legally prohibited from donating blood; and so on. But judges must carefully scrutinize all such laws to ensure that they do not create an improper caste-like system in which some are legally demeaned and degraded while others or [*sic*] legally honored and exalted merely on the basis of birth status.

Laws that allow straights to marry while denying this basic marriage privilege to gays and lesbians violate this deep and pure 14th Amendment principle. These laws improperly demean our fellow citizens who happen to have been born gay or lesbian and improperly exalt our fellow citizens who happen to have been born straight. True, these laws technically and formally do not hinge on a person's orientation. Even a man born gay is allowed to marry. So long, that is, as he marries a woman! Cf. Joseph Heller, *Catch 22*. But "law reaches past formalism." [Lee v. Weisman](#) (1992) (Kennedy, J.). Sexual intimacy is part of the core of marriage as a legal and social institution, and denial of same-sex marriage does indeed deprive gays and lesbians of the full and equal enjoyment of this intimacy—a full and equal opportunity for "the pursuit of happiness" that underlies the American project.

We concede that some persons may experience some or all aspects of their sexual orientation as a matter of pure choice. Nevertheless, a vast number of our fellow citizens do in fact understand themselves to be, quite simply, "born this way" in regard to their sexual orientation, and we are in no position to hold that these very widespread self-understandings are inauthentic or delusional. Even if it were conclusively proved at some future point that orientation is typically fixed not at birth but rather very early in childhood, the deep spirit of the birth-equality principle would still apply. Citizens should not be demeaned on the basis of harmless and morally irrelevant traits that they never chose and are not free to change with ease. That is the animating spirit—the underlying logic—of the birth-equality rule.

Religious equality principles are also indirectly relevant here. Even though religion is often chosen rather than fixed at birth, our Constitution allows persons to choose their religion freely and equally. Religion for many is central to identity and so is sexual orientation.

Why, then, did the framers of the 14th Amendment allow discriminatory marriage laws to continue on the books? In large part because they did not know all the facts, scientific and social, that we now know. They did not know that many persons experience sexual orientation as fixed, not chosen. They did not live in a world in which vast numbers of gays and lesbians openly challenged marriage exclusion as a fundamental badge of inequality and degradation.

Similarly, many of the 14th Amendment's framers thought racial segregation was acceptable because racial separation might genuinely be equal. If most blacks and most whites genuinely preferred segregation, then where was the improper demeaning of one race or the improper exaltation of another? Separate could truly be equal under certain factual assumptions in the 1860s (just as today, separate bathrooms and sports teams for males and females are generally seen as equal by both males and females). But once it became clear, in the decades after the enactment of the 14th Amendment, that vast numbers of blacks did object to racial separation, this changed social fact itself was a proper basis for declaring racial segregation unconstitutional. See [Plessy v. Ferguson](#) (Harlan, J. dissenting); [Brown v. Board](#) (Warren, C.J.).

A similar story may be told about sex discrimination—discrimination between men and women—within marriage laws. The Framers of the 14th Amendment quite clearly did believe in sex equality in civil rights: within this domain, these Framers believed that women should not be demeaned nor men exalted because of their differential birth status. In the 1860s, marriage laws—and many other laws—created differentiated legal roles for men and women, but these differentiated legal roles were in that era not widely understood as ennobling men or degrading women. Both genders were highly esteemed, but they played different legal roles. Separate roles, distinct roles, but not unequal roles. Women themselves were not en masse demanding an end to coverture laws in the 1860s. And so these laws were widely seen as permissible in the 1860s by the Framers of the 14th Amendment. But when later generations of women did en masse come to demand a change—and to highlight that these laws now did indeed appear demeaning to them and

improperly ennobling of men—judges in the mid-20th century rightly struck down these gendered marriage laws.

We do the same today and for the same reason. Indeed, the laws at issue today do, formally, discriminate on the basis of sex. Under these laws, Pat can marry Jane only if Pat is male (Patrick) and not female (Patricia). This is sex-discrimination pure and simple, and under our longstanding sex-discrimination case law—case law deeply rooted in the text and spirit of the 14th Amendment, as we have just explained—this sex discrimination regime must survive the most exacting judicial scrutiny. We hold today that this regime fails this scrutiny. These sex-discriminatory laws are an improper attempt to enforce a rigid and unequal gender code, telling men that they must not act in effeminate (“sissy”) ways and women that must [*sic*] not behave in a masculine (“butch”) manner. Such laws are a violation of genuine sex equality and also of liberty—the liberty of each person, male or female (or neither or both), to be free to be true to himself/herself/oneself.

To put this point about the deep connection between equality and freedom a different way—and to explain from yet another angle why we now must vindicate the enacted letter and spirit of the 14th Amendment without being hamstrung by every specific nontextual and unratified factual or normative assumption that its Framers may have held—we today take judicial notice of the following basic and widespread facts of our modern world. Sexual intimacy and human procreation have been profoundly decoupled in the last half-century. Persons can have babies without having sex (IVF) and can have sex without having babies (contraception). Marriage law itself has become gender-neutral, undercutting several of the basic premises of earlier regimes that structured marriage in deeply gendered ways. Gender itself has been scientifically transformed. Legally and factually, men can now become women and women can now become men. If Patrick, who is married to Jane, undergoes medical and/or legal gender reassignment and becomes Patricia, Pat is the same human being on both sides of this medical and/or legal procedure. And after the gender transition occurs, Pat and Jane remain married. This is already a same-sex marriage, in virtually every state! No jurisdiction has been brought to our attention that treats Pat’s medical transformation as ipso facto dissolving the marriage—as does, for example, death. Pat is Pat regardless of what is between Pat’s legs or what was once between them on the day that Pat was born, and regardless of what gender designation appears on Pat’s birth certificate or driver’s license or passport. Our fundamental nature is not male or female, black or white, but human, pure and simple.

Our most basic law must recognize these basic facts of modern life, modern law, and modern science.

[Amar continues...]

There are obvious similarities between Justice Kennedy’s actual majority opinion and my alternative. My opinion and his both rely squarely on the 14th Amendment’s vision. We both invoke liberty and equality and try to highlight ways in which these principles at times intertwine. We both treat sexual orientation as analogous to race in certain ways. (Kennedy does this by appealing at every turn to the 1967 case of [Loving v. Virginia](#), involving interracial marriage, and by twice explicitly suggesting that sexual orientation is “immutable.” I do so by stressing the 14th Amendment idea of birth equality.) We both candidly confront the fact that the 14th Amendment’s Framers did not understand that its words would doom bans of same-sex marriage. In doing so, we both point to the significance of changed gender rules within marriage—for example, the demise of coverture laws that once gave husbands more power than wives in certain key respects. But I like my version better. I root my opinion in the solid text of the 14th Amendment’s promises of birthright citizenship and the privileges and immunities of citizenship, which include both substantive rights and equality rights. Also, I make a number of knockdown historical points about the Framers of the amendment and the companion Civil Rights Act of 1866. Kennedy does not play these or any other persuasive originalist notes and puts most of his weight on the textually inapt Due Process Clause. That clause speaks plainly of procedural rights (fair trials, unbiased judges, and the like) as distinct from substantive rights (such as the right to marry). Kennedy, a libertarian, stresses the word liberty in the Due Process Clause, but this liberty has historically been closely linked to negative rights (freedom from government) rather than affirmative rights (freedom to insist on government-recognized benefits such as marriage laws). Kennedy does not make crystal clear the distinction between applying the 14th Amendment’s Framers’ actual and enacted principles to new scientific and social and legal facts, on the one hand, and simply substituting newfangled principles of his own creation, on the other. Kennedy does not treat same-sex marriage bans as simple sex-discrimination laws, nor does he discuss the reality of gender-reassignment in modern America. He offers no overarching way of bringing unity to the court’s treatment of certain kinds of discriminations as particularly invidious. My parsimonious account not only makes sense of the cases as a whole, but powerfully connects them to core principles of constitutional text, history, and structure.

At several points in his opinion, Kennedy takes pains to limit the right to marry to two-person marriages, but he offers no real reason why. My argument cleanly distinguishes same-sex marriage from polygamy. Anti-polygamy laws do not discriminate on the basis of birth status. They do not treat Patrick differently than Patricia, nor do they treat those born gay differently than those born straight. No strong evidence has yet been presented to suggest that a vast number of persons are in fact born polygamous or become polygamous in early childhood and without conscious choice. No broad social movement has arisen in America to insist, authentically, that polygamists were “born this way” and have no real choice in the matter. The distinction between a legally sanctioned two-person institution and a legally unsanctioned three-person arrangement is just like many other generally unproblematic distinctions throughout our law. Tax laws allow different sorts of commuting cost deductions, depending on whether a person has one employer or two or more employers; discrimination laws treat firms with 14 employees differently from those with 15; and so on.

Still, Kennedy got the right answer. The dissenters did not, and they did not even ask the right questions. Chief Justice John Roberts himself asked a version of the Patrick/Patricia question at oral argument but then proceeded to utterly ignore this issue in his opinion—as did all the other dissenters in their separate opinions. But the dissenters cannot properly do this if they wish to rule against same-sex marriage. Even if Kennedy didn’t squarely rely on this approach, the litigants and amici did make this argument, and so have many other thoughtful scholars and judges. America is entitled to know why this argument is not a proper alternative basis for Kennedy’s judgment. And although Kennedy himself did not use magic words such as “strict scrutiny,” his repeated emphasis on the immutability of sexual orientation and the long history of anti-gay discrimination surely required that a persuasive dissent confront the claim that laws discriminating on the basis of sexual orientation demand heightened judicial scrutiny. Once again, this was an issue at the very heart of the case at hand and any justice ruling against the gay and lesbian litigants at hand owed America a careful explanation why heightened scrutiny was inappropriate under the unifying logic of a very long line of landmark precedents involving race and sex discrimination and discrimination against illegitimate children. But Chief Justice Roberts’ dissent never explained why heightened scrutiny was unwarranted.

So, too, America is entitled to know how a proper federal system will work if a marriage that is fully valid in the state where it was held fades in and out, legally, as persons cross

state lines—perhaps as part of their federal responsibilities, if, for example, they are in the military and sent to a different base or are travelling to the national capital to petition Congress. Kennedy did not need to address these arguments because he was giving the plaintiffs everything they asked for without having to reach the interstate issues. But these issues were squarely before the court, and the dissenters simply ignored them, proceeding to vote against the actual citizens before the court in the case at hand without answering all their plausible legal claims. This is judicial minimalism with a vengeance.

The chief justice repeatedly invoked principles of judicial deference but failed to explain clearly why these principles did not apply with equal or greater force in previous landmark cases in which he [voted to invalidate an iconic Voting Rights Act](#) and [voted to undo congressional limits on campaign contributions](#)(which are decisively different from purely expressive independent activities such as running political ads on one's own).

Justice Antonin Scalia's dissent insisted that the fact that the Framers of the 14th Amendment accepted bans on same-sex marriage was utterly dispositive. He claimed that this fact alone "resolves these cases." But why then are coverture laws, which these same amenders also found proper, unconstitutional? What about the fact that many amenders found segregation and anti-miscegenation laws acceptable? Should this fact alone have resolved [Brown v. Board](#) and [Loving v. Virginia](#) in favor of segregationists and anti-miscegenationists [*sic*]? No answer from the good justice.

Justice Clarence Thomas persuasively argued that it was a stretch to say that the Due Process Clause was violated. There was not a clear violation of negative liberty, nor was there any obvious procedural lapse in the laws at issue. But what about the 14th Amendment's birthright citizenship clause and its companion guarantee of full and equal privileges and immunities of citizenship—clauses that Thomas himself has powerfully highlighted and championed in [other cases](#)? Once again, silence.

Finally, Justice Samuel Alito was highly persuasive in reminding us that the anti-same-sex-marriage laws at issue were hardly irrational. Following tradition is often quite rational, and every reform is likely to have unintended consequences. Not all of these consequences may be apparent immediately. Same-sex marriage is an experiment, and the jury is still out. Fair enough. But once again, the same could have been said about coverture laws in 1970, and Alito's arguments merely explain why the laws at hand are rational. What he failed to explain is why mere rationality was enough—why these discriminatory laws should not be treated with special judicial skepticism as are many

other traditional gender laws. Laws that discriminated against illegitimate children were not irrational; they arguably incentivized the biological parents to marry; and some of these laws had deep historical roots. Yet the court rightly invalidated these laws as violative of the birth-equality principle. Jim Crow was a pretty strong tradition in 1954. But Brown was nevertheless clearly right—and so is Obergefell.

[End of Article]

First of all, Amar assumes that calling sodomy marriage is on the right side of history.

His argument?

“Duh!”

If a fortune teller justified her prognostications with “Duh!”, I would ask for my money back.

The bottom line is that Amar makes a false equivalence between race/gender and sexual appetite.

You can be born with a predisposition to alcoholism, and you can be born blind. That does not make you part of an “Alcoholic Race” or a “Blind Race”. It can give you certain protections and compassionate considerations, but not “equality”.

If sodomy really is against the Will of God and, hence, fundamentally unnatural, in terms of its concordance, or lack thereof, with the Natural Order as God created it prior to the Fall, and, hence, is also immoral, it is not “degrading” to not consider it the same as something that is moral. It is simply honestly stating what reality is.

Amar concludes that a social group’s mere objection to being considered unnatural or immoral makes their objection valid. What if the social group is factually wrong? Amar sets the self-determination of a group’s identity over the nature of objective reality.

Amar’s understanding of the nature of sex discrimination misses the mark. If there *cannot* be a marriage between people of the same sex, then it cannot be any kind of discrimination to not grant that person or group that thing. People and groups do not have the right to things that do not exist. Amar believes that the human race determines what is real and

what is not. But God thinks that He determines what is real and what is not. And while Amar may have tenure at Yale, God has tenure in Heaven.

The human race's rebellion against the Will of God is not an argument for a further derangement of our society's moral order. IVF, contraception, gender neutrality and uniformity, and the mutilation of male and female bodies ("gender reassignment surgeries") are a wallowing in this world's brokenness, not a repairing of it. The Jewish tradition celebrates a concept called Tikkun Olam, which means repairing the world. Amar proposes that we should break the world more because people have broken it in the past.

Our fundamental nature is NOT human, pure and simple. Amar is certainly right that race is irrelevant. But human beings are fundamentally male or female, and deviations from that only testify to the brokenness of the world.

Genesis 1:27 explicitly states:

God created man in his image;
in the divine image he created him;
male and female he created them.

Amar does not simply ignore religion in his constitutional interpretation, he establishes a worldview *completely against* the Biblical worldview, the Will of God.

Amar writes, "We both treat sexual orientation as analogous to race in certain ways."

Sexual desire is not the same as race, and it is dangerous to make the belief that desire is the same as race constitutional law. Sexual desire is not simple, clear-cut, and morally neutral like race.

Amar's attempt to distinguish a right to call sodomy marriage from a right to call polyamory marriage also fails. It fails for a number of reasons.

Even on Amar's own grounds, it is entirely possible for people to argue that they are born with an innate desire for polyamory. Amar only requires (1) "strong" evidence of an innate desire for polyamory in which one does not have a choice, and/or (2) that a polyamorous social movement has been organized.

This fails, logically, on multiple points. First, it falls down on the matter of "choice". How many gays or lesbians can show that they derive *no* pleasure from sexual stimulation from someone of the opposite sex, and have *no* choice in the matter? Amar imagines, in a very silly way, that sexual desire and sexual appetites are so simple. A person cannot *choose* in matters of sex? Really? If a gay man received a blowjob from a woman, and was open to the experience, he wouldn't be able to get an erection and, after being properly stimulated almost to orgasm and

then engaging in coitus, finally ejaculate into her vagina? A woman wouldn't be able to get an orgasm, eventually, from a man's tongue? Really? The matter is not choice. It is preference. All the "choice" amounts to is what one prefers, what one enjoys more or finds more gratifying. So, if a polyamorous person really, innately, found polyamorous relationships and sex more fulfilling, who is a bigot like Akhil Amar to deny such a person her Constitutional right to have the *most* pleasure and psychological satisfaction she could have?

Second, who is to say whether one chooses polyamory? Do we need case studies? Published psychological articles in learned journals? First, just wait. Second, all those studies and articles would be merely collections of anecdotes, of self-reported instances of people saying, "You know, it gives me greater emotional satisfaction and gets me off easier and more pleurably to be with three or four or five people than just one other person." And why should they be *forced* to choose some other way of living? What is the moral justification for that?

Further, why should choice be defined negatively? If people can, at all, choose to live differently, how is that a strong reason to force them to do so? AK makes perfectly clear that this is all about the autonomy of the person. If a person is autonomous, why shouldn't they be able to make the broadest band of choices they want: especially if it does not involve violence to others?

And again, this idea that Amar has that a social movement equals a constitutional right is bizarre. If I were the only person on earth who innately had a need to be with three or four or more people, who is a bigot like Amar to prevent the self-actualization of my authentic identity?

There is no such thing as sexual orientation, as such. There are only sexual appetites, of varied kinds. Branding some appetites as orientations, and then packaging those "orientations" into races is lunacy. Such marketing packages have no right to any kind of scrutiny.

Are sexual dominants a race? Are sexual submissives a race? How about masochists? Sadists? Are swingers a race? Are polyamorous people (polys) a race? How about people who like to engage in age-play? Should we allow people to reassign their age like we allow people to change their sex (gender)?

Laughing? How can you laugh at age-reassignment when you say that people should be able to "change" their sex? Sex is encoded in every single cell in your body. Mutilating yourself doesn't change your genetic code in every single cell. You're only laughing because you're ignorant.⁶⁶

⁶⁶ Radical feminist theory in the late 20th Century produced the distinction between sex and gender, and I feel precisely zero obligation to accept radical feminist ideology. The whole matter of the differences between men and women, and the existence of anomalies, parallels the whole matter of form versus matter: the fact that for any form you can identify (such as the soul, the mind, consciousness, or realities like beauty, justice, goodness, truth, or ordinary everyday objects like tables and chairs, or any kind of animal or plant) you can show an instance where there is an object or subject that ambiguously expresses that form, neither wholly *not* having that form nor wholly *having* that form. Yet the existence of ambiguities and anomalies does not extinguish the reality that forms exist, just as sexual ambiguities and anomalies do not extinguish the reality of men and women. Cultural practices and ideologies can certainly influence *how* a man or woman *expresses* his masculinity or her femininity, but the idea that masculinity and femininity themselves are nothing more than social constructs, that are not deeply rooted in the basic biotic reality of man and woman, is a fallacious, nay, insane imposture foisted upon society by academe.

If people are born dominant or submissive, should we allow people to have their slave contracts sanctioned by the States as a matter of Constitutional law? Should we force businesses to allow customers to come into their stores in all leather, with their spouses crawling on a leash with a ball gag in their mouths?

Should Christian bakers be forced to bake wedding cakes for collaring ceremonies for Dominants and submissives?

Should we force Christian photographers to do the photography for such ceremonies? If a Christian believes that pornography is a sin, and the couple's photographs are, by definition, and certainly by Christian definition, pornography, should the Constitution **require** a Christian to commit the sin of viewing and producing pornography?

The fundamental problem -- and lunacy -- is that America has led the way in turning *desire* into race.

The whole thing is a Pandora's box. Because once you require that one kind of desire be treated as a race, eventually, all sorts of other desires come a-knocking.

Race is stupid. It's all ears and noses and skin pigmentation and eye shape.

Sex is CRAZY. Turning all desires into races only launches us, ultimately, into a world of pure lunacy.

As far as the interstate argument, the answer is simple. Marriage should not be permitted to be defined as something it cannot be, either at the Federal or State level. Permitting a state (or the Federal government) to redefine marriage denigrates the real marriages that exist between men and women, and all equal citizens of our dear Republic have a fundamental right to marriage -- *real* marriage.

As far as Amar's argument about judicial deference, I do not have that problem: I am for the Voting Rights Act and for campaign finance reform. Besides, the issue has nothing to do with judicial deference or the lack thereof. The whole issue comes down to: *what* is marriage? And, relatedly, does human society have the right to redefine marriage however it pleases?

On Scalia's arguments, first, maybe coverture laws are not unconstitutional.

As far as *Brown v. Board* and *Loving v. Virginia*, my view of the case does not depend on the views of the men of 1868. It simply depends on the objective question: does desiring sodomy make you a member of a "Gay Race"? Or, rather, does having sodomitical desires constitute a condition more akin to alcoholism, which has a genetic dimension, or other socio-sexual yearnings? Many alcoholics are "born this way". Should Alcoholics be turned into the

Alcoholic Race and granted “equality”, and permitted to challenge any law that unfairly denigrated alcoholism and the alcoholic lifestyle, under a theory of the birth equality rule?

This is not a legal question. Nor is it a scientific question. It is totally -- purely -- a moral question. Science cannot answer whether the indulgence and practice of a genetic predisposition is moral or immoral. Only moral philosophy can do that. Amar presumes to instantiate his moral beliefs as the law of the land, dislodging, ridiculing, and shaming Christian moral beliefs. On what basis? His personal opinion, amplified by the media and elite opinion. (Love is Love is Love. =. NOH8.)

And again, I am not an Originalist. I am like Amar. (He claims to be an Originalist, but when the chips are down, he throws real Originalism under the bus.) Like Amar *at his depths*, I am a moralist, a naturalist. I simply think that there can be no right to “gay marriage” because such a thing can never exist.

Marriage came into being as the communion of the flesh between a man and a woman. Then homosexuals demanded the right to have their relationships called marriages. But why? What makes a homosexual relationship a *marriage*? Marriage was never understood as merely a romantic-emotional-sexual relationship or affair. It was *always* understood as involving the generation of life. Why do homosexuals have the right to redefine marriage? Why does Amar think that such a redefinition is even *possible*? Only because Amar must believe that social realities do not exist within the nature of things, but are merely determined by human will.

Amar will say that this is a religious argument. But Amar’s argument is no less religious. It is simply an argument from the basis of a different religion, and one that is fundamentally incompatible with Christianity. Amar’s apparent religion, at least logically and as presented in his arguments, is Humanism, the faith that says that what occurs in this world is inherently natural, right, and good, and whatever human science, and, more accurately, human opinion (of this very minute) concludes is moral is, in fact, moral.

Yet, war is endemic to human nature. So is murder. So is all crime. So is alcoholism. So is disability. So is every disease, defect, and sin in all the world. Should we ordain every imperfection in this world as “natural”, and hence harmless and morally neutral? Who decides which aspects of the world are bad and evil and which aspects are harmless and morally neutral? Obviously High Priest Amar.

Amar writes:

Nevertheless, a vast number of our fellow citizens do in fact understand themselves to be, quite simply, “born this way” in regard to their sexual orientation, and we are in no position to hold that these very widespread self-understandings are inauthentic or delusional. Even if it were conclusively proved at some future point that orientation is typically fixed not at birth but rather very early in childhood, the deep spirit of the birth-equality principle would still apply. **Citizens should not be demeaned on the basis of harmless and morally irrelevant traits that they never chose and are not free to**

change with ease. That is the animating spirit—the underlying logic—of the birth-equality rule. [Emphasis added.]

And again:

Religion for many is central to identity and so is sexual orientation.

Again, what if a mobilized group of people argued that being an alcoholic was a key part of one's identity? Certainly, being blind *actually is* a key part of one's identity. That means that we can't mistreat blind people or alcoholics, but we can't be forced to allow them to drive because of a slogan like "Driving Equality".

Who is to say that the practice of sodomy is harmless and morally irrelevant? All of human history, the Christian Church for millennia, virtually all human religions, every prior civilization, and YHWH Himself say that the practice of sodomy is harmful and immoral. But no matter. The Great Akhil Reed Amar washes all that away, and he, at last, establishes the *true* moral principle. Amar is greater than all of human history, and, apparently, he is greater than God Himself.

That is called hubris.

Amar again writes:

Why, then, did the framers of the 14th Amendment allow discriminatory marriage laws to continue on the books? In large part because they did not know all the facts, scientific and social, that we now know. They did not know that many persons experience sexual orientation as fixed, not chosen. They did not live in a world in which vast numbers of gays and lesbians openly challenged marriage exclusion as a fundamental badge of inequality and degradation.

Amar's entire legal argument rests on the confident and certain (and certainly wrong) notion that Science and Facts argue that sodomy is natural, good, and moral. Amar's legal argument requires the explicit embrace of an argument in natural philosophy, on a subject, sexuality, that is wildly complicated. And, more obviously, Amar requires the embrace of a

moral philosophy. And why should we privilege a non-theist or atheist moral philosophy over a Christian moral philosophy?

Social movements do not change fundamental moral reality. That is a deification of the human race. Amar also reifies the idea of sexual appetite into “sexual orientation”. Many different people have very many different kinds of desires, sexual, social, psychological, and everything in between. It is a fool’s errand to pick out certain desires and sacralize them, while not sacralizing other desires. It is fiat. It looks good in a popular article today, and then the very same things you said could not or should not be sacralized *will* be sacralized ten, twenty, fifty, one hundred years from now with the same misplaced self-righteousness that you have for these sets of desires.

Amar offers a constitutional establishment of a worldview. That worldview includes the idea that sodomy is natural and moral. If the Christian worldview is that sodomy is unnatural (in a complex way) and immoral (against the Will of God), then Amar is explicitly stating that the Constitution is *against* the Christian worldview. And if Amar, in his typically slick but superficial (and usually snide) way, sniffs, “Well, sir, then the world is against the Christian worldview,” then isn’t Amar stating that Christianity is wrong? And then, isn’t the Constitution being made to say that Christianity is wrong? And if the Constitution is then formally and explicitly *against* Christianity, then what kind of status will Christians have under the Constitutional system? They will be, at best, like Christians and Jews under the thumb of the old Islamic Empires. And, at worst, they will be persecuted, or exterminated. This is not hysteria. What may seem impossible now could be reality fifty or a hundred years from now. Only a fool fails to see what is set right before his eyes. Could a German Jew (much less a Polish Jew) in 1890 or 1900 really say for certain that by 1940 the German State would be slaughtering them? Yet, when the whole culture hates you, you had better watch out.

And Christian persecution and slaughter is not a distant reality. It is happening right now in the Islamic world. The reason is hatred -- *real* hatred. If the United States and its constitutional order come to hate true Christianity to the same extent, nothing is impossible.

All hatred needs to become murder is a little push.

<https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=3yBDLgLT6U8>

If sodomy is actually wrong, then calling sodomy marriage is madness. If a society goes mad, what other madness might it commit?

And if the Constitutional order is fundamentally set against Christianity, and views it as deranged and stupid and unjust and evil, what possible loyalty could a Christian have to the Constitution, or a United States that worshipped that “Constitution” rather than God?

It is a strange thing for an atheist elite (or a pseudo-Christian elite unfaithful to clear Scripture) to try to govern a Christian nation -- and to try to make it stop being Christian. And a perilous one.

Enjoy the party while it lasts. And don't forget to turn the lights off when it's over.

If *The Handmaid's Tale* ever becomes reality, don't you dare blame little old me. Blame the “enlightened”, and utterly proud, antics of self-conceived super-heroes like one Akhil Reed Amar.

Now, the same logic also applies to Gays. God forbid we have a Gay Holocaust. That is why it is so important to stress the dual nature of sodomy: its inclination, for many, is inborn. Its practice is a choice, just like driving while blind or drinking and driving, or like masturbating. We do not knock

down bedroom doors to arrest masturbators. But we also do not allow people to marry their penises and receive the applause of society.

Now, I do not mean to demean the love that can be felt among people of the same sex. I simply mean to say that you cannot *marry* someone from the same sex, any more than you can marry your genitals or marry a television or marry a grilled cheese sandwich.

That is because marriage does not mean whatever the *human race* says that it means. It means only what God says it means. And a Constitutional order that roots God out *from the very deepest root and foundation of its social fabric* (and not simply everyday administrative matters and ordinary policy) declares war on God.

Have fun with that.

A Concluding Note

Let's put the matter another way, far from the climes of law and formal logic.

What is the spiritual core of sodomy? Of "gay identity"? Of Gay Rights? Of "Equality" for "Gays"?

I put quotation marks because gay is simply marketing. Gay meant lighthearted and carefree. Now it means sodomite. It's branding. Period. You may agree with the marketing, you may disagree with the marketing, but that is all it is.

Now, of course, Secularist-Satanists could accuse me of using a branded term. For "sodomite" invokes Sodom and Gomorrah, which were annihilated with Divine Fire by Holy God for their many iniquities, their outrageous sins.

So, yes, words involve moral meanings. We can try to use more neutral words, that supposedly have less moral weight - existential gravity. Such a word might be "homosexual". Yet, to the Secularist-Satanists, even "homosexual" (and not "gay") is racist, I mean, homophobic. Like all revolutionaries, who eat their children, even the term "gay" is racist, I mean, heteronormative, or somehow bigoted. The *proper* term is (today) LGBT, because this

encompasses all the colors of the rainbow. Well, perhaps sticklers would say you're a foul bigot if you don't say LGBTQ.

LGBTQ

<https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=TQhvOknkzOQ>

That's today. What about tomorrow? Will you be a bigot if you don't call sodomites SCFEA!, which, of course, you bigot, means Supercalifragilisticexpialidociously *Awesome!*

Who knows? All we do know is that whatever Gay High Command decrees is bigoted, is, in fact, bigoted.

But homosexual is itself, in its way, leaning towards the moral sanctification of homosexuality. Because the parallel to homosexuality is heterosexuality. If practicing sodomy makes you simply a "homosexual" and people practicing moral marital sexual relations as ordered by God are simply "heterosexuals", then the difference between sin and grace becomes the difference between Coke and Pepsi.

So much for terms. The terms you use will always, to one degree or another, reveal and propound the moral order -- and the God -- you place your trust in (God or Satan).

So what is the spiritual core of sodomy? Of the gay?

Think about it this way.

"If people can get gay married, there is no way in Hell that I can't masturbate."

If gay marriage is a thing -- is real -- and decreed by society, in its metaphysical and divine self-sovereignty, to be real.....

Then....

Is gay sex before gay marriage a sin? Is it immoral?

Can single people masturbate?

Can single people watch pornography?

Can straight married couples watch pornography?

Can gay married couples watch pornography?

Can couples (now equalized and homogenized) welcome other people into their beds and have orgies?

Wait.....are gay people allowed to get gay married, but single, unmarried people can't have sex? So, gay marriage is a grace ordained by God, but fornication is still a sin?

Is fornication for single gay people okay, but for single straight people not?

Think about this as the practice of polyamory is on the rise.

“If people can have a 4-way marriage, there is no way in Hell that I can’t masturbate.”

What’s the rule now? No sex before a 4-way marriage?

What are the rules? What is the *spiritual* impulse of the gay? Of the sodomitical tendency within the human flesh?

The sodomitical tendency is lust. It is disordered. It rages against the sexual moral order decreed by the true God.

The sodomitical impulse -- Gay Rights....and not just rights, (protection from hostility or abuse), but *Gay Power, the reordering of the foundations of society to accept and privilege the act and practice of sodomy as moral, natural, right, just, and good* -- doesn’t just tinker with Christian sexual morality. It nukes all the basic elements of Christian sexual morality.

What it’s like arguing with people who *know* that Love is Love is Love™ and that, somehow, coitus isn’t actually the fountain of life, and unique and privileged for that reason:

<https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=IUTZmSyDErg>

<https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=qs4mtbTsaL4>

What it’s like to meet Jesus after death (if you are a Christian):

<https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=zRB10GPBm4o>

A Religion of Peace

A piece of you over here, a piece of you over there



THIS IS WHAT THEY WANT TO IMPOSE ON THE WORLD

Shama and her husband Shehzad Masih (murdered November 4, 2014)

“The village of Kot Radha Kishan in Punjab province of Pakistan saw great violence the night a mob came for Shama and Shehzad. There was a rumor that this Christian couple burned a copy of the Quran. It was a grievance that the owner of a local kiln knew he could make when a dispute arose about them owing him money. Shama was pregnant with their fourth child. They were burned alive in the kiln at such a high temperature nothing remained. Their three children are now with relatives and the 10 other Christian families in the village have fled, [fleeing] retribution against similar accusations.”⁶⁷

⁶⁷ <http://www.sharefaith.com/blog/2016/01/20-christian-woman-died-martyrs/> ; <https://www.nytimes.com/2014/11/05/world/asia/pakistani-christian-couple-accused-of-blasphemy-is-killed-by-angry-mob.html>

On Christian Martyrdom

In eras of peace, when we Christians are not persecuted for our Christian Faith, it can be easy to live in *faith* and, we hope, in *love*, but it can also be easy to forget the essential theological virtue of *hope*.

Hope is a feeling of **trust**. It is the expectation that God will **help** in the hour of need, in the dire hour of final persecution. It is the **trust** that God will really save you **after** death.

In a peaceful, democratic, liberal society, it is so easy -- too easy -- to not have to ever consider and cultivate *real trust*. One can simply *believe*, accept the truths of the Faith, live chastely, charitably, and morally, and then die in a hospital bed or at home with a rosary in your hands.... and see what happens.

But when the Red Fascists (Ultra-Secularists), or the Black Fascists (i.e. Right-Wing Fascists), the Christian Fascists, or the Islamists, or any other tyrannical force comes to you and says, "Apostatize or die" -- you had better have a healthy and strong cultivation of the *virtue of hope*.

Because even in the most conservative, chaste, formally perfect Christian, there can be the fear that *after*

all there is no God....or God will not save me after death....or God will not save *someone like me*. Holding those beliefs deep in one's heart is a path to perdition, the Way to Ruin, the Way to Hell, to eternal torment.

In times of peace, hope is a flimsy, watercolor word for children.

But in times of persecution -- in times of Secular Oppression, or Islamic Invasion, or the Age of the Anti-Christ, **HOPE** is all that separates you from Hell.

Blessed Father Michael Sopocko teaches us:

The decisive factor in obtaining God's Mercy is trust. Trust is the expectation of someone's help. It does not constitute a separate virtue, but is an essential condition of the virtue of hope, and an integral part of the virtues of fortitude and generosity. Because trust springs from faith, it strengthens hope and love, and is, moreover, linked up, in one way or another, with the moral virtues. It may, therefore, be called the basis on which the theological virtues unite with the moral. The moral virtues, originally natural, become supernatural if we practice them with trust in God's help.

The Last Order – To Trust

Finally, in His speech of farewell, delivered in the Cenacle after the Last Supper, Our Lord, having given His last orders to the Apostles, and foretold the afflictions that they would have to endure in this world, for His name's sake, spoke of **trust as the essential condition of perseverance, and of obtaining the help of God's Mercy**: "In the world you will have afflictions. But take courage, I have overcome the world" (John 16:33). This was the last utterance of the Saviour before the Passion, and was noted down by the beloved Apostle, who wanted to remind all the faithful, throughout the ages, how necessary is the trust which the Saviour not only commended, but **commanded**.

I reproduce Father Sopocko's whole article here:

"Trust in God"

by Blessed Fr. Michael Sopocko

The decisive factor in obtaining God's Mercy is trust. Trust is the expectation of someone's help. It does not constitute a separate virtue, but is an essential condition of the virtue of hope, and an integral part of the virtues of fortitude and generosity. Because trust springs from faith, it strengthens hope and love, and is, moreover, linked up, in one way or another, with the moral virtues. It may, therefore, be called the basis on which the theological virtues unite with the moral. The moral

virtues, originally natural, become supernatural if we practice them with trust in God's help.

Expectation of Help – Hope in the Lord of Mercy

Natural trust - the expectation of human help - is a great incentive in men's lives. We have only to remember the sieges of Poland, in the wars against the Cossacks and Turks, when the besieged held out heroically against the most shattering attacks of the enemy, and endured every kind of privation, because they were expecting reinforcements and liberation. But to expect help from men often leads to disappointment. Those who trust God, on the other hand, are never disappointed. "Mercy shall encompass him that hopeth in the Lord" (Ps. 31:10)

The Last Order – To Trust

Finally, in His speech of farewell, delivered in the Cenacle after the Last Supper, Our Lord, having given His last orders to the Apostles, and foretold the afflictions that they would have to endure in this world, for His name's sake, spoke of trust as the essential condition of perseverance, and of obtaining the help of God's Mercy: "In the world you will have afflictions. But take courage, I have overcome the world" (John 16-33). This was the last utterance of the Saviour before the Passion, and was noted down by the beloved Apostle, who wanted to remind all the faithful, throughout the ages, how necessary is the trust which the Saviour not only commended, but commanded.

Why does God so strongly urge us to trust?

Why does God so strongly urge us to trust? Because trust is homage to Divine Mercy. Anyone who expects God to help him is thereby acknowledging that God is almighty and good, that He can help us, and wants to do so, and that He is, above all else, merciful. "No one is good but only God" (Mark 10:18). We must know God in truth, for a false knowledge of Him chills our relationship with Him and obstructs the graces of His Mercy.

Our Concept of God

Our spiritual life depends chiefly on the concept that we ourselves form of God. Between God and ourselves, there are certain fundamental relations which are inherent in our nature as creatures, but there are other relations which spring from our own attitude to God; and this attitude depends on our idea of Him. If we form false concepts of the Lord Most High, our relationship with Him will be wrong, and all our efforts to set it right will be in vain. If we have a distorted idea of Him, there are bound to be many gaps and imperfections in our spiritual life. If, on the other hand, our concept of Him is - as far as is humanly possible - true, our souls will, quite certainly, grow in holiness and light.

Our Trust in God must be Supernatural

The concept of God is, then, the key to holiness, for it governs our conduct in relation to God, and God's attitude to us. God has adopted us as His children, but, unfortunately, we do not, in practice, behave like children. The son-ship of God is just a phrase, and in our actions we fail to show childlike trust in so good a Father.

For lack of trust prevents God from lavishing His blessings on us; it is like a dark cloud impeding the action of the sun's rays, or a dam cutting off one's access to spring water.

Nothing gives such glory to Divine omnipotence as the fact that God makes those who trust Him omnipotent also. Yet, if our trust is never to be disappointed, it must have those characteristics of which the King of Mercy Himself spoke. In relation to God, our trust should be supernatural, complete, pure, strong and enduring. Above all, our trust should spring from grace, and be founded on God. Relying on God, we must not rely too much on ourselves, on our own talents, prudence or strength; if we do, God will withhold His help, and leave us to find out our inadequacy from bitter experience. In the things of God, we must learn to distrust ourselves and be persuaded that, of ourselves, we can only harm, or even wreck, God's plans.

The Right Balance in our Approach

When we trust in God, we do not rely on human means alone, for in this world nothing - not even the greatest strength and riches - will avail unless God Himself supports, strengthens, comforts, teaches and protects us. We must, indeed, take any measures that we regard as necessary, but we cannot rely only on these; we must put our whole trust in God. This trust should be the golden mean between what is known as Quietism, and over-activity. The advocates of this excessive activity are in a continual state of turmoil, for, in all they do, they rely solely on themselves. Trust in God causes us to do our work conscientiously, down to the smallest detail, but

it saves us from the unrest of those who never allow themselves a breathing-space. It would, on the other hand, be sheer laziness to leave everything to God, without trying to do our duty as well as we could.

Between Fear and Fearless

Trust in God should be strong and enduring, without doubts or hesitations. Such was the trust of Abraham, who was ready to offer up his son in sacrifice. And such was the trust of the martyrs. On the other hand, the Apostles, during the storm, were found wanting in this virtue, and Our Lord reproached them with the words: "Why are you fearful, O you of little faith?" (Matt. 8-26). If we have great trust, we must beware alike of pusillanimity and presumption. Pusillanimity is the basis of all temptations, for if we once give way to it, we lose the courage we need to persevere in the good, and fall headlong into sin. Presumption, on the other hand, leads us into danger (for instance, the occasions of sin), with the hope, at the back of our minds, that God will come to the rescue. This is tempting God, and such tempting usually ends tragically for the tempter.

Fear with Trust

In our case, trust should go hand in hand with fear, the fear that comes from knowing our own misery. Without this fear, trust turns to self-importance and fear without trust - meanness. Fear with trust becomes humble and brave, and trust with fear becomes strong and modest. For the sailing boat will sail, wind and the load which will dip it in the water, are necessary, that it will not capsize. So that is with us, we need the wind of trust and the load

of fear. "The Lord taketh pleasure in them that fear him: and in them that hope in his mercy" (Ps. 146 : 11).

Trustful Longing

Finally, trust should be accompanied by longing - the desire to see God's promises fulfilled, and to be united with our beloved Saviour. The longing for God must be in conformity with His will, it should be humble, not only as regards feeling, but as regards the will, which should urge us on to unceasing labour and total surrender to God. For trustful longing, if it is not to be mere delusion, must be based on sincere penance for our sins. "Mercy shall encompass him that hopeth in the Lord" (Ps: 31-10).

Anchored to God

When, in a raging storm, a ship loses its mast, lines and helm, and the foaming waves drive it on to the rocks, where it is in danger of being wrecked, the frightened sailors turn to their last resource - they let down the anchor - to hold the ship fast and prevent it from being dashed to pieces. This anchor, to us, is trust in God's help.

The Fruits of Trust

"Blessed be the man that trust in the Lord, and the Lord shall be his confidence. And he shall be as a tree that is planted by the waters, that spread out its roots towards moisture and it shall not fear when the heat come. And the leaf thereof shall be green, and in the time of drought it shall not be solicitous, neither shall it cease at any time to bring forth fruit" (Jer. 17:7-8).

Such are the fruits of trust, given by the Holy Spirit. Trust is, above all, homage to God's Mercy, which, in exchange, bestows on those who trust the strength and courage they need to overcome even the most formidable difficulties. Trust in God drives away all sadness and depression, and fills the soul with great joy, even when circumstances are at their worst. Trust makes the miracles because it has the God's almightiness to its services. Trust gives us inner peace, such as the world cannot give. Trust opens the way to all the virtues.

Trust saves us from Despair

According to a legend, the virtues once resolved to leave this earth, stained as it is by so many sins, and return to their heavenly country. When they came to the gates of Heaven, the doorkeeper admitted them all, with the exception of trust. Trust was excluded, that the wretched people on earth, surrounded as they were by temptation and suffering, might not fall into despair. The legend tells us that trust had to return to earth, and all the other virtues returned with it.

Trust Comforts the Dying

Above all, trust comforts the dying, who, in their last moments, remember all the sins of their lives and are sometimes driven to despair. Appropriate acts of trust should, then, be suggested to the dying, for it is not everyone who, at such a time, can make them for himself. The dying should be reminded of their true home, now no longer distant, where the King of Mercy joyfully awaits all who trust in His Mercy. Trust assures us of a reward after death, as we know from many examples in the lives of the Saints. We need only think of Dismas, the thief dying on the cross beside Our Lord, to whom, in

his last moments, he turned with trust, to hear the blessed assurance: "This day thou shalt be with me in Paradise" (Luke 23 : 43).

The Mistake of Trusting in your own Strength

"Cursed is the man who trusts in mankind and makes flesh his strength, and whose heart turns away from the Lord. For he will be like a bush in the desert and will not see when prosperity comes, but will live in stony wastes in the wilderness, a land of salt without inhabitant" (Jer. 17: 5-6). This is a picture of the contemporary world, which trusts so entirely in itself, in its own wisdom and strength, and in the inventions which, instead of bringing it happiness, fill it with fears of self-destruction. Inventions are undoubtedly a good thing, and in accordance with the will of God, who said: "Fill the earth, and subdue it" (Gen 1:28), but we must not trust wholly to our own reason, forgetting the Creator, and the honour and trust that are His due.

Seeing Ourselves in God

Man's distrust of God is the result of a foolish and baseless misunderstanding. It comes from transferring our own faults and weaknesses to Him, and attributing to Him what we see in ourselves. We imagine God to be as changeable and capricious as we are - as stern and gloomy as we are - and so on. Such faults and behaviour are an insult to God and do us great harm. Where should we be now, if He who guides our destinies were as capricious, as vengeful, as quick to take offense, as we sometimes imagine? Our mistaken concept of God and our tendency to impute our own shortcomings to Him, are due to our weakness and sadness, our ceaseless

fears and our inner anxiety-human failings which exist almost everywhere.

Trusting God in All Things All the Time

Trust, then, may be compared with a chain hanging from Heaven and to which we attach our souls. God's hand draws the chain upward; as it ascends, it carries with it all who hang on tightly. Let us, then, cling to this chain in time of prayer, like the blind man of Jericho, who, sitting by the roadside, cried out with a loud voice: "Jesus, Son of David, have mercy on me!" Let us trust God in all our needs, temporal and eternal - in all our sufferings, dangers and derelictions. Let us trust Him, even when it seems as though He Himself has abandoned us; when He withholds His consolations, leaves our prayers unanswered, crushes us beneath a heavy cross. It is then that we should trust God most, for this is the time of trial, the testing time, through which every soul must pass.

A Prayer of Trust by Blessed Fr. Michael Sopocko

Holy Spirit, give me the grace of unwavering trust when I think of Our Lord's merits, and of fearful trust when I think of my own weakness. When poverty comes knocking at my door: Jesus, I Trust in You, when sickness lays me low, or injury cripples me. Jesus, I Trust in You, when the world pushes me aside, and pursues me with its hatred. Jesus, I Trust in You, when I am besmirched by calumny, and pierced through by bitterness. Jesus, I Trust in You, when my friends abandon me, and wound me by word and deed. Jesus, I Trust in You, Spirit of love and Mercy, be to me a refuge, a sweet consolation, a

blessed hope, that in all the most trying circumstances of my life I may never cease to trust in You".

A Pep Talk on True Courage

<https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=cxKBI713mLs>

A MESSAGE TO THE UNITED STATES SUPREME COURT

ROE V. WADE & OBERGEFELL V. HODGES ARE *ABOMINATIONS* in *THE SIGHT OF GOD*

In the 21st Century, the United States will have to decide whether it will serve Christ and the Law of Nature and Nature's God, or, rather, will serve the Lawlessness of its own will and lusts, and thus become prey to the Power of the Anti-Christ, and become his willing and enthusiastic slaves.

SCOTUS, this is your alarm clock, your wake-up call.

It's your move.

Now, I, not the Lord, give *my* opinion, a dissent.

*Citizens United and all similar rulings **also** serve the Coming Power of the Anti-Christ, for **remember:** the Secularists, Political and Military Islam, the fornicators and idolators of the flesh, **and the RICH**, the idolators of **money**, will all be the cornerstones of the Anti-Christ's regime. Empowering the Rich only serves to advance the Coming Power of the Anti-Christ.*

Anthony.....the Third Secret of Fatima was partially released on June 26, 2000. Fifteen years later *to the day*, you hand down a paragon of Lawlessness. How can a nice Catholic boy fail to see the Signs of the Times?

Protestants and Catholics

<https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=a1FyQpO8jWM>

Celibacy, Chastity & the Papal Company of Mary

Elsewhere I argue that perhaps the rule of celibacy should be relaxed for certain priests, or not required of certain classes of future priests. I might also entertain a non-celibate liturgical and pastoral office of “Minister of the Word”, which would permit marriage.

However, Jesus clearly indicates in Matthew 19 that celibacy, although not granted to all, is a grace granted by God, *for those to whom it is granted*, and that, “Whoever can accept this ought to accept it” (19:12b).

In other words, Jesus explicitly *prefers* celibate service to the Kingdom of Heaven to conjugal marriage, *if it is possible for the person because that has been granted to him or her by God*.

In other words, celibacy is a special grace superior to the vocation of marriage, (as a vocation, and not as a marker of social, moral or existential superiority), and thus the Church must be ruled, in large measure, by those with that special grace. Certainly, the Catholic Hierarchy must be brought to heel by the Rule of the Chaste, for the lascivious practices of too many, of a large network *within* the apparatus of the Hierarchy, has introduced filth, chaos, and Satanic ruin unparalleled in the Church’s history.

The Papal Company of Mary should, in perfect and unparalleled obedience to the Pope, rule the Church and expurgate the central hierarchy of the Flesh of Christ. Those admitted to the Papal Company of Mary should live in perfect chastity. Lay men and women admitted must be perfectly chaste in their single lives and marriages. Religious men and women must be perfectly chaste in their celibacy.

Sins may be forgiven, of course. But if a member of the Papal Company of Mary is discovered to have a severe and disordered and persevering propensity for unchastity, he or she must be removed from the Papal Company of Mary.

The Apocalypse: The Day of Mercy, and the Day of Wrath

Harold [Bloom], the Gospels are demon-haunted books because we live in a demon-haunted world.

Remember, when Satan cannot get you to abandon Christ because of your prides, envies, angers, lusts, greeds, gluttonies, or sloth, he'll take out his last weapon: Fear. Then, when you face the end, you must trust in Christ, not fearing death, but knowing that in a violent death of true martyrdom in Christ, you will be born to eternal life.

Do not forfeit eternal life for this passing nothingness.

Do not say, "Oh, but I do not know that the truth of Christ is true, so how then can I be judged?" If the truth of Christ has been offered to you, and you have not accepted the gift even to the extent of asking the question and beginning the journey, then how can you fault your Maker for damning you?

"Neither graces, nor revelations, nor raptures, nor gifts granted to a soul make it perfect, but rather the intimate union of the soul with God...My sanctity and perfection is based upon the close union of my will with the will of God" (Diary of St. Faustina Kowalska, 1107).

You will prepare the world for My final coming. (*Diary* 429)

Speak to the world about My mercy ... It is a sign for the end times. After it will come the Day of Justice. While there is still time, let them have recourse to the fountain of My mercy. (*Diary* 848)

Tell souls about this great mercy of Mine, because the awful day, the day of My justice, is near. (*Diary* 965)

I am prolonging the time of mercy for the sake of sinners. But woe to them if they do not recognize this time of My visitation. (*Diary* 1160)

Before the Day of Justice, I am sending the Day of Mercy. (*Diary* 1588)

He who refuses to pass through the door of My mercy must pass through the door of My justice. (*Diary* 1146)

You have to speak to the world about His great mercy and prepare the world for the Second Coming of Him who will come, not as a merciful Savior, but as a just Judge. Oh how terrible is that day! Determined is the day of justice, the day of divine wrath. The angels tremble before it. Speak to souls about this great mercy while it is still the time for granting mercy. (*Diary 635*)

Hardy-har-har - hahaha with a big Ricky Gervais grin. You won't be smiling on that Great and TERRIBLE Day.
No joke.

Rather, be as wise ones, and follow the Way of the Voice of Bono:

https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=e3-5YC_oHjE

U2

I Still Haven't Found What I'm Looking For

The Cure

Rev. Tim Keller

The Gospel and Idolatry

Acts 19:23-41

<https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=mn1U1omO6sg>

Stevie Wonder

As

<https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=GYQfWJNWe3I>

Situational Leadership Theory

From the source of all truth: Wikipedia⁶⁸

Leadership styles [\[edit\]](#)

Hersey and Blanchard characterized leadership style in terms of the amount of Task Behavior and Relationship Behavior that the leader provides to their followers. They categorized all leadership styles into four [behavior](#) types, which they named S1 to S4:

- **S1: Directing** – is characterized by one-way communication in which the leader defines the roles of the individual or group and provides the what, how, why, when and where to do the task;
- **S2: Coaching** – while the leader is still providing the direction, he or she is now using two-way communication and providing the socio-emotional support that will allow the individual or group being influenced to buy into the process;
- **S3: Supporting** – this is how shared decision-making about aspects of how the task is accomplished and the leader is providing fewer task behaviours while maintaining high relationship behavior;
- **S4: Delegating** – the leader is still involved in decisions; however, the process and responsibility has been passed to the individual or group. The leader stays involved to monitor progress.

Of these, no one style is considered optimal for all leaders to use all the time. Effective leaders need to be flexible, and must adapt themselves according to the situation.

Maturity levels [\[edit\]](#)

High
Moderate
Low
M4
M3
M2
M1

Very capable and confident

Capable but unwilling

Unable but confident

Unable and insecure

The right leadership style will depend on the person or group being led. The Hersey-Blanchard Situational Leadership Theory identified four levels of maturity M1 through M4:

- **M1** – They lack the specific skills required for the job in hand and are unable and unwilling to take responsibility for this job or task.

⁶⁸ https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Situational_leadership_theory

- **M2** – They are unable to take on responsibility for the task being done; however, they are willing to work at the task. They are novice but enthusiastic.
- **M3** – They are experienced and able to do the task but lack the confidence or the willingness to take on responsibility.
- **M4** – They are experienced at the task, and comfortable with their own ability to do it well. They are able and willing to not only do the task, but to take responsibility for the task.

Maturity levels are also task-specific. A person might be generally skilled, confident and motivated in their job, but would still have a maturity level M1 when asked to perform a task requiring skills they don't possess.

Developing people and self-motivation[\[edit\]](#)

A good leader develops "the competence and commitment of their people so they're self-motivated rather than dependent on others for direction and guidance."[\[5\]](#) According to Hersey's book,[\[5\]](#) a leader's high, realistic expectation causes high performance of followers; a leader's low expectations lead to low performance of followers. According to Ken Blanchard, "Four combinations of competence and commitment make up what we call 'development level.'"

- **D1** - Low competence and high commitment[\[4\]](#)
- **D2** - Low competence and low commitment
- **D3** - High competence and low/variable commitment
- **D4** - High competence and high commitment

In order to make an effective cycle, a leader needs to motivate followers properly.

Situational Leadership II [\[edit\]](#)

Hersey Blanchard continued to iterate on the original theory until 1977 when they mutually agreed to run their respective companies. In the late 1970s, Hersey changed the name from Situational Leadership Theory to "Situational Leadership", and Blanchard offered Situational Leadership Theory as "A Situational Approach to Managing People". Blanchard and his colleagues continued to iterate and revise A Situational Approach to Managing People, and in 1985 introduced Situational Leadership II (SLII).[\[4\]](#)

In 1979, Ken Blanchard founded Blanchard Training & Development, Inc., (later The Ken Blanchard Companies) together with his wife Margie Blanchard and a board of founding associates. Over time, this group made changes to the concepts of the original Situational Leadership Theory in several key areas, which included the research base, the leadership style labels, and the individual's development level continuum.[\[4\]](#)

Kierkegaard was a smart man.

In irony, the subject is negatively free, since the actuality that is supposed to give the subject content is not there. He is free from the constraint in which the given actuality holds the subject, but he is negatively free and as such is suspended, because there is nothing that holds him. But this very freedom, this suspension, gives the ironist a certain enthusiasm, because he becomes intoxicated, so to speak, in the infinity of possibilities...

The SECRET

WOO--WOO-WOO-WOO-WOO

*Socrates. Plato. Aristotle. Augustine. Aquinas. Hobbes.
Descartes. Kant. Hegel. Nietzsche. Strauss.*

They all knew ONE TRUTH:

Name it and claim it bay-bay!!!

PORTAL TO ABADDON, THE FIERY PITS OF ETERNAL DEATH
Enjoy!

<http://www.thesecond.tv/>

<https://www.thesecond.tv/the-secret-documentary/>

And consider, Moses only had 5 books of Torah Wisdom, but this Angel of Light, Prophetess of Ba'al, Rhonda Byrne, of most foul and detested state, (you will come unto my reflected light trapped in a hall of mirrors, for you are a true reflected light to the mirrors), has:

Our Products: *How the Secret Changed My Life, The Secret, The Power, The Magic, Hero, The Secret Daily Teachings, The Secret to Teen Power, The Secret Gratitude (a journal, but one obviously endowed with magic, secret powers), The Power of Henry's Imagination, The Secret Daily Teachings Tear Sheet Edition (for when you're low on toilet paper)*

HAIL SATAN AND HAIL ALL HIS PROPHETS AND PROPHETESSES!!

(I'm being sarcastic.)

“The philosophy and vision of The Secret is to bring joy to billions. To bring joy to the world, The Secret creates life-transforming tools in the mediums of books, films, and multi-media. With each creation from The Secret, we aim to share knowledge that is true, simple, and practical, and that will transform people's lives.”

SUCK IT. SUCK IT DOWN. SUCK IT DOWN SUCK IT DOWN SUCK IT
DOWN SUCK IT DOWN. ANDREW ROSS SORKIN. ANDREW ROSS
SORKIN. ANDREW ROSS SORKIN. SUCK IT DOWN SUCK IT DOWN SUCK
IT DOWN SUCK IT DOWN DOWN -- GET DOWN GET DOWN DOWN.
DOWN ON YOUR KNEES HOOKER MONEY BABY - MIKA JOE MIKA
MIKA JOE MIKE MIKA JOE MIKA MIKA MIKA JOE BLOW ME BLOW ME
BLOW ME BLOW ME BLOW ME TRUMP TRUMP TRUMP PISS ON HIM
PISS ON ME. PUTIN. PUTIN. PUTIN. FUNNY HOW THE REPUBLICANS
BETRAYED THE COUNTRY TO THE NEO-SOVIETS. MONEY MONEY
MONEY MONEY HONEY MONEY HONEY WILL MAKE FUNNY BUNNY
IN DEEP DANK DARK DUNGEON AWAITING. WALL STREET. GORDON
GEKKO. WALL STREET. GORDON GEKKO. WALL STREET. GORDON
GEKKO. WALL STREET. GORDON GEKKO. WALL STREET. GORDON
GEKKO. WALL STREET. GORDON GEKKO. WALL STREET. GORDON
GEKKO. PUTIN. PUTIN. PUTIN. PUTIN. PUTIN. PUTIN. PUTIN.
PUTIN. PUTIN. PUTIN. PUTIN. BREITBART. BREITBART. BREITBART.
HEY GLENN BECK, WANT OUT OF HERE? IT'S SIMPLE: REPENT.
SEAN HANNITY SEAN HANNITY SEAN HANNITY SEAN HANNITY SEAN
HANNITY SEAN HANNITY SEAN **IRAQ WAR: THEORY BY LEO
STRAUSS, IMPLEMENTATION BY THE THREE STOOGES,** HANNITY
SEAN HANNITY SEAN HANNITY SEAN HANNITY SEAN HANNITY SEAN
HANNITY SEAN HANNITY SEAN HANNITY SEAN HANNITY SEAN
HANNITY IS TRUMP'S COCK THAT TASTY MMMMM IS TRUMP'S COCK
THAT TASTY MMMMM IS TRUMP'S COCK THAT TASTY MMMMM IS
TRUMP'S COCK THAT TASTY MMMMM IS TRUMP'S COCK THAT TASTY
MMMMM IS TRUMP'S COCK THAT TASTY MMMMM MARCO MARCO
MARCO MARCO BOT MARCO BOT 5000 CRUZ CRUZIN' TO A BRUISIN'
JINDAL JINDAL JINDAL -- YEAH, NO. ANN COULTER. ANN COULTER.
ANN COULTER. SELLING BOOKS BUT NOT MAKING A DIFFERENCE
YOU CAN BE BETTER THAN THIS BILL O'REILLY BILL O'REILLY BILL
O'REILLY BILL O'REILLY BILL O'REILLY DEATH DEATH DEATH SEX
SEX SEX SEX SEX SEX SEX SEX SEX FAME FAME FAME FAME FAME
FAME TELEVISION TELEVISION TELEVISION TELEVISION TELEVISION
TELEVISION TELEVISION TELEVISION TELEVISION TELEVISION
TELEVISION TELEVISION TELEVISION TELEVISION TELEVISION
TELEVISION TELEVISION TELEVISION TELEVISION TELEVISION
TELEVISION TELEVISION MONEY MONEY MONEY MONEY MONEY
MONEY MONEY MONEY MONEY MONEY MONEY MONEY MONEY MONEY
MONEY MONEY MONEY MONEY MONEY MONEY MONEY MONEY MONEY

MONEY MONEY MONEY MONEY MONEY MONEY MONEY MONEY MONEY
MONEY MONEY MONEY MONEY MONEY MONEY MONEY MONEY MONEY
MONEY MONEY MONEY TELEVISION TELEVISION TELEVISION
TELEVISION TELEVISION TELEVISION TELEVISION TELEVISION
TELEVISION TELEVISION TELEVISION TELEVISION TELEVISION
MONEY MONEY MONEY MONEY MONEY MONEY MONEY MONEY MONEY
MONEY MONEY MONEY MONEY MONEY MONEY MONEY MONEY MONEY
MONEY MONEY MONEY MONEY MONEY MONEY MONEY MONEY MONEY
MONEY MONEY MONEY MONEY MONEY MONEY MONEY MONEY MONEY
MONEY MONEY MONEY MONEY MONEY MONEY MONEY MONEY MONEY
MONEY MONEY MONEY BIEBER BIEBER BIEBER BIEBER SUCK MY
WEINER WEINER WEINER TELEVISION TELEVISION TELEVISION
TELEVISION TELEVISION TELEVISION TELEVISION TELEVISION
TELEVISION Y WEINER WEINER WEINER WEINER MONEY MONEY
MONEY MONEY MONEY MONEY MONEY MONEY MONEY MONEY MONEY
MONEY MONEY MONEY MONEY MONEY MONEY MONEY MONEY MONEY
MONEY MONEY MONEY MONEY MONEY MONEY MONEY MONEY MONEY
MONEY MONEY MONEY MONEY MONEY TELEVISION TELEVISION
TELEVISION TELEVISION **Peggy Noonan, I sort of like you, but I find your
facial expressions extremely irritating, please try to stop, just asking politely,
really, sorry -- But I know you agree with me, Chris Matthews and Chuck
Todd.** TELEVISION TELEVISION TELEVISION TELEVISION MONEY
MONEY CELEBRITY CELEBRITY CELEBRITY APPRENTICE DEVIL'S
ADVOCATE MELANIA JARED IVANKA TIFFANY ERIC DON ENTER MY
WAITING MOUTH -- THE FROTHING FIRES ARE FINE AND WAITING FOR
YOU TO JUMP IN -- IT WILL BRING US CLOSER TOGETHER HAHA
HAHHAHA AHHAHAHAHAHAHH CELEBRITY CELEBRITY CELEBRITY
APPRENTICE DEVIL'S ADVOCATE MELANIA JARED IVANKA TIFFANY
ERIC DON ENTER MY WAITING MOUTH -- THE FROTHING FIRES ARE
FINE AND WAITING FOR YOU TO JUMP IN -- IT WILL BRING US CLOSER
TOGETHER HAHA HAHHAHA AHHAHAHAHAHAHH CELEBRITY
CELEBRITY CELEBRITY APPRENTICE DEVIL'S ADVOCATE MELANIA
JARED IVANKA TIFFANY ERIC DON ENTER MY WAITING MOUTH -- THE
FROTHING FIRES ARE FINE AND WAITING FOR YOU TO JUMP IN -- IT
WILL BRING US CLOSER TOGETHER HAHA HAHHAHA
AHHAHAHAHAHAHH HILLARY HILLARY HILLARY HILLARY HILLARY
HILLARY BILLARY BILLARY BILLARY BILLARY BILLARY NO BETTER
THAN ALL THIS CRAP **YOU'RE THE EISENHOWER OF THE 1990S YOU'RE THE
EISENHOWER OF THE 1990S YOU'RE THE EISENHOWER OF THE
1990S YOU'RE THE EISENHOWER OF THE 1990S YOU'RE THE**

**EISENHOWER OF THE 1990S YOU'RE THE EISENHOWER OF THE 1990S YOU'RE THE EISENHOWER OF THE 1990S!!!!!!!
WEEEEEEEEEEEEEEEE MEEEEEEEEEEEEEE MEEEEEEEEEEEEEE LOOK
AT HUMPTY HILLARY ALL THE HACK'S HORSES AND ALL THE
HACK'S MEN COULDN'T PUT CORPORATE HUMPTY BACK
TOGETHER AGAIN. AHA! I HAVE IT THE NOMINATION, I HAVE
CRUSHED THE REVOLUTION, THAT DIRTY JEW SANDERS, AND NOW
NOW NOW NOW NOW -- *IT WILL BE MINE OOOOPS! OOPS! OOPS! OOPS!
OOPS! OOPS! OOPS! OOPS! OOPS! OOPS! OOPS! OOPS! OOPS! OOPS!
OOPS! OOPS! OOPS! OOPS! OOPS! D'OH! D'OH! D'OH! D'OH! D'OH!
D'OH! D'OH! D'OH! D'OH! ARIANA GRANDE AND HER DONUTS WHOA
KATY PERRY QUITE CONTRARY SUCKING CORPORATE COCK RUSSELL
BRAND DELUSIONAL ASSHOLE YOU'RE NOT THE MESSIAH. LADY GAGA
LADY GAGA.....***

No, actually, Lady Gaga's the best. You should read my article in *Dots and Dashes*.

TELEVISION TELEVISION TELEVISION TELEVISION MONEY MONEY
CELEBRITY CELEBRITY CELEBRITY APPRENTICE DEVIL'S ADVOCATE
MELANIA JARED IVANKA TIFFANY ERIC DON ENTER MY WAITING
MOUTH -- THE FROTHING FIRES ARE FINE AND WAITING FOR YOU TO
JUMP IN BLOOMBERG. BLOOMBERG. BLOOMBERG. LLOYD
BLANKFEIN. LLOYD BLANKFEIN. LLOYD BLANKFEIN. JAMIE DIMON.
JAMIE DIMON. JAMIE DIMON. JAMIE DIMON. MONEY HONEY. MONEY
HONEY. MONEY HONEY. SWEET ASS MONEY HONEY BLOOMBERG.
BLOOMBERG. BLOOMBERG. LLOYD BLANKFEIN. LLOYD BLANKFEIN.
LLOYD BLANKFEIN. JAMIE DIMON. JAMIE DIMON. JAMIE DIMON.
JAMIE DIMON. MONEY HONEY. MONEY HONEY. MONEY HONEY.
SWEET ASS MONEY HONEY BLOOMBERG. BLOOMBERG. BLOOMBERG.
LLOYD BLANKFEIN. LLOYD BLANKFEIN. LLOYD BLANKFEIN. JAMIE
DIMON. JAMIE DIMON. JAMIE DIMON. JAMIE DIMON. MONEY HONEY.
MONEY HONEY. MONEY HONEY. SWEET ASS MONEY HONEY
BLOOMBERG. BLOOMBERG. BLOOMBERG. LLOYD BLANKFEIN.
BLOOMBERG. BLOOMBERG. BLOOMBERG. LLOYD BLANKFEIN.
LLOYD BLANKFEIN. LLOYD BLANKFEIN. JAMIE DIMON. JAMIE
DIMON. JAMIE DIMON. JAMIE DIMON. MONEY HONEY. MONEY
HONEY. MONEY HONEY. SWEET ASS MONEY HONEY BLOOMBERG.
BLOOMBERG. BLOOMBERG. LLOYD BLANKFEIN. LLOYD BLANKFEIN.
LLOYD BLANKFEIN. JAMIE DIMON. JAMIE DIMON. JAMIE DIMON.
JAMIE DIMON. MONEY HONEY. MONEY HONEY. MONEY HONEY.

HONEY. MONEY HONEY. SWEET ASS MONEY HONEY BLOOMBERG.
BLOOMBERG. BLOOMBERG. LLOYD BLANKFEIN. LLOYD BLANKFEIN.
LLOYD BLANKFEIN. JAMIE DIMON. JAMIE DIMON. JAMIE DIMON.
JAMIE DIMON. MONEY HONEY. MONEY HONEY. MONEY HONEY.
SWEET ASS MONEY HONEY BLOOMBERG. BLOOMBERG. BLOOMBERG.
LLOYD BLANKFEIN. LLOYD BLANKFEIN. LLOYD BLANKFEIN. JAMIE
DIMON. JAMIE DIMON. JAMIE DIMON. JAMIE DIMON. MONEY HONEY.
MONEY HONEY. MONEY HONEY. SWEET ASS MONEY HONEY
BLOOMBERG. BLOOMBERG. BLOOMBERG. LLOYD BLANKFEIN.
BLOOMBERG. BLOOMBERG. BLOOMBERG. LLOYD BLANKFEIN.
LLOYD BLANKFEIN. LLOYD BLANKFEIN. JAMIE DIMON. JAMIE
DIMON. JAMIE DIMON. JAMIE DIMON. MONEY HONEY. MONEY
HONEY. MONEY HONEY. SWEET ASS MONEY HONEY BLOOMBERG.
BLOOMBERG. BLOOMBERG. LLOYD BLANKFEIN. LLOYD BLANKFEIN.
LLOYD BLANKFEIN. JAMIE DIMON. JAMIE DIMON. JAMIE DIMON.
JAMIE DIMON. MONEY HONEY. MONEY HONEY. MONEY HONEY.
SWEET ASS MONEY HONEY BLOOMBERG. BLOOMBERG. BLOOMBERG.
LLOYD BLANKFEIN. LLOYD BLANKFEIN. LLOYD BLANKFEIN. JAMIE
DIMON. JAMIE DIMON. JAMIE DIMON. JAMIE DIMON. MONEY HONEY.
MONEY HONEY. MONEY HONEY. SWEET ASS MONEY HONEY
BLOOMBERG. BLOOMBERG. BLOOMBERG. LLOYD BLANKFEIN.
BLOOMBERG. BLOOMBERG. BLOOMBERG. LLOYD BLANKFEIN.
LLOYD BLANKFEIN. LLOYD BLANKFEIN. JAMIE DIMON. JAMIE
DIMON. JAMIE DIMON. JAMIE DIMON. MONEY HONEY. MONEY
HONEY. MONEY HONEY. SWEET ASS MONEY HONEY BLOOMBERG.
BLOOMBERG. BLOOMBERG. LLOYD BLANKFEIN. LLOYD BLANKFEIN.
LLOYD BLANKFEIN. JAMIE DIMON. JAMIE DIMON. JAMIE DIMON.
JAMIE DIMON. MONEY HONEY. MONEY HONEY. MONEY HONEY.

HONEY. MONEY HONEY. SWEET ASS MONEY HONEY BLOOMBERG.
BLOOMBERG. BLOOMBERG. LLOYD BLANKFEIN. LLOYD BLANKFEIN.
LLOYD BLANKFEIN. JAMIE DIMON. JAMIE DIMON. JAMIE DIMON.
JAMIE DIMON. MONEY HONEY. MONEY HONEY. MONEY HONEY.
SWEET ASS MONEY HONEY BLOOMBERG. BLOOMBERG. BLOOMBERG.
LLOYD BLANKFEIN. LLOYD BLANKFEIN. LLOYD BLANKFEIN. JAMIE
DIMON. JAMIE DIMON. JAMIE DIMON. JAMIE DIMON. MONEY HONEY.
MONEY HONEY. MONEY HONEY. SWEET ASS MONEY HONEY
BLOOMBERG. BLOOMBERG. BLOOMBERG. LLOYD BLANKFEIN.
BLOOMBERG. BLOOMBERG. BLOOMBERG. LLOYD BLANKFEIN.
LLOYD BLANKFEIN. LLOYD BLANKFEIN. JAMIE DIMON. JAMIE
DIMON. JAMIE DIMON. JAMIE DIMON. MONEY HONEY. MONEY
HONEY. MONEY HONEY. SWEET ASS MONEY HONEY BLOOMBERG.
BLOOMBERG. BLOOMBERG. LLOYD BLANKFEIN. LLOYD BLANKFEIN.
LLOYD BLANKFEIN. JAMIE DIMON. JAMIE DIMON. JAMIE DIMON.
JAMIE DIMON. MONEY HONEY. MONEY HONEY. MONEY HONEY.
SWEET ASS MONEY HONEY BLOOMBERG. BLOOMBERG. BLOOMBERG.
LLOYD BLANKFEIN. LLOYD BLANKFEIN. LLOYD BLANKFEIN. JAMIE
DIMON. JAMIE DIMON. JAMIE DIMON. JAMIE DIMON. MONEY HONEY.
MONEY HONEY. MONEY HONEY. SWEET ASS MONEY HONEY
BLOOMBERG. BLOOMBERG. BLOOMBERG. LLOYD BLANKFEIN.
BLOOMBERG. BLOOMBERG. BLOOMBERG. LLOYD BLANKFEIN.
LLOYD BLANKFEIN. LLOYD BLANKFEIN. JAMIE DIMON. JAMIE
DIMON. JAMIE DIMON. JAMIE DIMON. MONEY HONEY. MONEY
HONEY. MONEY HONEY. SWEET ASS MONEY HONEY BLOOMBERG.
BLOOMBERG. BLOOMBERG. LLOYD BLANKFEIN. LLOYD BLANKFEIN.
LLOYD BLANKFEIN. JAMIE DIMON. JAMIE DIMON. JAMIE DIMON.
JAMIE DIMON. MONEY HONEY. MONEY HONEY. MONEY HONEY.

DIMON. JAMIE DIMON. JAMIE DIMON. JAMIE DIMON. MONEY HONEY.
MONEY HONEY. MONEY HONEY. SWEET ASS MONEY HONEY
BLOOMBERG. BLOOMBERG. BLOOMBERG. LLOYD BLANKFEIN.
LLOYD BLANKFEIN. LLOYD BLANKFEIN. JAMIE DIMON. JAMIE
DIMON. JAMIE DIMON. JAMIE DIMON. MONEY HONEY. MONEY
HONEY. MONEY HONEY. SWEET ASS MONEY HONEY BLOOMBERG.
BLOOMBERG. BLOOMBERG. LLOYD BLANKFEIN. LLOYD BLANKFEIN.
LLOYD BLANKFEIN. JAMIE DIMON. JAMIE DIMON. JAMIE DIMON.
JAMIE DIMON. MONEY HONEY. MONEY HONEY. MONEY HONEY.
SWEET ASS MONEY HONEY BLOOMBERG. BLOOMBERG. BLOOMBERG.
LLOYD BLANKFEIN. LLOYD BLANKFEIN. LLOYD BLANKFEIN. JAMIE
DIMON. JAMIE DIMON. JAMIE DIMON. JAMIE DIMON. MONEY HONEY.
MONEY HONEY. MONEY HONEY. SWEET ASS MONEY HONEY
BLOOMBERG. BLOOMBERG. BLOOMBERG. LLOYD BLANKFEIN.
LLOYD BLANKFEIN. LLOYD BLANKFEIN. JAMIE DIMON. JAMIE
DIMON. JAMIE DIMON. JAMIE DIMON. MONEY HONEY. MONEY
HONEY. MONEY HONEY. SWEET ASS MONEY HONEY BLOOMBERG.
BLOOMBERG. BLOOMBERG. LLOYD BLANKFEIN. LLOYD BLANKFEIN.
LLOYD BLANKFEIN. JAMIE DIMON. JAMIE DIMON. JAMIE DIMON.
JAMIE DIMON. MONEY HONEY. MONEY HONEY. MONEY HONEY.
SWEET ASS MONEY HONEY BLOOMBERG. BLOOMBERG. BLOOMBERG.
LLOYD BLANKFEIN. LLOYD BLANKFEIN. LLOYD BLANKFEIN. JAMIE
DIMON. JAMIE DIMON. JAMIE DIMON. JAMIE DIMON. MONEY HONEY.
MONEY HONEY. MONEY HONEY. SWEET ASS MONEY HONEY LLOYD
BLANKFEIN. LLOYD BLANKFEIN. JAMIE DIMON. JAMIE DIMON. JAMIE
DIMON. JAMIE DIMON. MONEY HONEY. LLOYD BLANKFEIN. LLOYD
BLANKFEIN. JAMIE DIMON. JAMIE DIMON. JAMIE DIMON. JAMIE
DIMON. MONEY HONEY. MONEY HONEY. MONEY HONEY. SWEET ASS
MONEY HONEY MONEY HONEY. MONEY HONEY. SWEET ASS MONEY

HONEY BLOOMBERG. BLOOMBERG. BLOOMBERG. LLOYD
BLANKFEIN. LLOYD BLANKFEIN. LLOYD BLANKFEIN. JAMIE DIMON.
JAMIE DIMON. JAMIE DIMON. JAMIE DIMON. MONEY HONEY. MONEY
HONEY. MONEY HONEY. SWEET ASS MONEY HONEY --

ALL YOU HAVE TO DO IS BELIEVE!!!”

(Gospel of Satan 6:66)

Oh, and Steve Bannon. You're in the wrong church. You're not a Catholic. You're a Satanist. Here: Temple of Set: Theological Satanists: they *for real* worship Satan - like you, buddy boy - <https://www.xeper.org/>

May HaShem cast you out of the Flesh of Christ, you festering worm!!!

The Gospel of Satan is a lost Gnostic gospel, which clearly is superior to the canonical gospels that have been handed down from age to age by the Magisterium of Holy Mother Church, the Sacred Tradition, the Apostolic Succession, and the unbreakable Line of the Successors to St. Peter, the Rock of the Church.

But even Satan gets into the Church with SUCK MY COCK priests. Satan is everywhere. I feel it in my fingers. I feel it in my toes. MONEY HONEY IS ALL AROUND ME, AND SO THE FEELING GROWS SUCK MY COCK ANDREW ROSS SORKIN YOU'RE A MIDGET BLOW ME It's written on the wind. It's everywhere I go. Every advertisement, feel Mother Satan glow, oh no. Every fucking commercial, straight to HELL we go!! Take your opioid motherfucker, just let these motherfuckers roll!!! SO JAB SOME METH AND TAKE A SEAT FOR THE DYING EARTH'S GREATEST SHOW - OH YEAH, YOU KNOW -

Ah saith Father Satan - “To see my two Satans, my Anti-Christ's sent into the world to do my will, one at the casino in the desert, the other at the training camp in the desert. What a delight! My plans are so clever and perfect, as I do imitate that Tyrant, that Pervert who loves the human dirt-toy abominations. I set in motion the course of my will, to thwart the Mighty One's Holy Will. And look at my delight, my Anti-Christ of Mammon does war with my Anti-Christ of Murder, Tyranny, and Destruction. The arrogance of Money versus the onslaught of Barbarism. How delightful!”

AMERICA'S TRUE GOD



Randy Newman

It's Money That Matters

<https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=cS06eprlj2I>

It's Money That I Love

https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=dRYg2mvT_Ow

Assholes

<https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=UrgpZ0fUixs>

C.S. Lewis on the Meaning and Course of Human History

The moment you have a self at all, there is a possibility of putting yourself first—wanting to be the center—wanting to be God, in fact. That was the sin of Satan: and that was the sin he taught the human race. Some people think the fall of man had something to do with sex, but that is a mistake.... What Satan put into the heads of our remote ancestors was the idea that they could ‘be like gods’—could set up on their own as if they had created themselves—be their own masters—invent some sort of happiness for themselves outside God, apart from God. And out of that hopeless attempt has come nearly all that we call human history—money, poverty, ambition, war, prostitution, classes, empires, slavery—the long terrible story of man trying to find something other than God which will make him happy.

The reason why it can never succeed is this. God made us: invented us as a man invents an engine. A car is made to run on gasoline, and it would not run properly on anything else. Now God designed the human machine to run on Himself. He Himself is the fuel our spirits were designed to burn, or the food our spirits were designed to feed on. There is no other. That is why it is just no good asking God to make us happy in our own way without bothering about religion.

God cannot give us a happiness and peace apart from Himself, because it is not there. There is no such thing.

That is the key to history. Terrific energy is expended—civilizations are built up—excellent institutions devised; but each time something goes wrong. Some fatal flaw always brings the selfish and cruel people to the top and it all slides back into misery and ruin. In fact, the machine conks. It seems to start up all right and runs a few yards, and then it breaks down. They are trying to run it on the wrong juice. That is what Satan has done to us humans.⁶⁹

From the Temple of Set website:

[Now, I'm posting the following to show you how absurd America has become, (and also how absurd Satanism is), since Satanism's tenets truly express the contemporary American creed. I trust -- I hope? -- that people have the maturity to read such things without becoming sucked into the darkness. But that's your spiritual responsibility. With freedom, comes responsibility; and there can be no maturity of faith without freedom.]

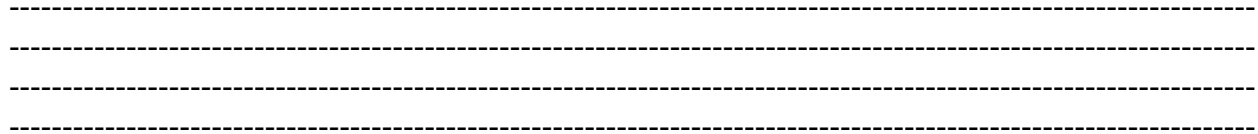
Xeper: The Eternal Word of Set by Don Webb

I am the Magus of the Word Xeper (pronounced Khefer), an English language coinage expressing an Egyptian verb written as a stylized scarab and meaning "I Have Come Into Being." This Word generates the Aeon of Set, and is the current form of the Eternal Word of the Prince of Darkness. To Know this Word is to know that the ultimate responsibility for the evolution of your psyche is in your hands. It is the Word of freedom, ecstasy, fearful responsibility, and the root of all Magic.

An Aeon is a world. As human beings we are familiar with many "worlds". We can talk about the "world of Thomas Jefferson" or the "world of Newton". Magical worlds are created by Words—by the verbal power of mankind to express a divine principle—through which the effect of that Utterance on the objective universe brings about the creation of the world. The Word serves as a

⁶⁹ C.S. Lewis, *Mere Christianity* (New York: Macmillan, 1952), pp 53-54.

gateway for the mind seeking to enter the world it defines, and the effect of an Utterance of a Word will cause many worlds to be reconfigured in order to Hear it. The Aeon of Set is Created by the Word "Xeper." Xeper is an Egyptian verb meaning "I Have Come Into Being." Xeper is the experience of an individual psyche becoming aware of its own existence and deciding to expand and evolve that existence through its own actions. Xeper has been experienced by anyone who has decided to seek after his or her own development.



(It needs to be cordoned off, because it is pure evil.)

(Also, is Anthony Kennedy a member of the Temple of Set? They share the same philosophy.)

This is evil, since this jerk really means this crap. But it's actually exactly what Satanism really is - what the ideal of Satan is: self-creation and self-freedom. *Now*, this may *seem* like the essence of spirit: freedom and creation. But it's not. Satan is an impostor who, in his vanity, tries to *appear* like G-d. From the perspective of this world, the truth is ironic: we hear "freedom" and "obedience" as antinomies, clashing opposites. Yet, from the perspective of eternity, the fundamental spiritual law is absolute.

That absolute spiritual law that persists in eternity is simply this:

He who accords his will with the Holy Will of G-d attains true freedom and life.

It's that simple.

For, if G-d is Freedom and Life, how could one possibly attain any freedom or life by *turning* away from him? That is, if you follow your own path, and not G-d's, if G-d is true Freedom and true Life, how could you possibly have any freedom or life without Him? The search to be your own god, to create your own freedom and life, would fail, as assuredly as it failed for Satan. The idea of self-creation and self-freedom is the sin of Satan.

THE SECRET

(Way better than the Gospel)
From Wikipedia: Source of All Truth

After being featured in two episodes of [The Oprah Winfrey Show](#), the book reached the top of [The New York Times](#)'s bestseller list, where it remained for 146 consecutive weeks. The book has been translated into 44 languages^[5] and has over 21 million copies in print.^[6] Thanks in large part to the appearance on the Oprah TV show, the book and film have grossed \$300 million in sales, according to a 15 January 2009 article by [Forbes](#) magazine.^[7]

In 2009, the film's producer, Paul Harrington, released a book for teenagers called *The Secret to Teen Power*. Byrne has also released a calendar and several follow-up books, including [The Power](#) in August 2010 and *The Magic* in 2012, both of which also reached number one on *The New York Times*'s bestseller list.

The law of attraction^[edit]

Main article: [Law of attraction \(New Thought\)](#)

The Secret posits that the [law of attraction](#) is a [natural law](#) which determines the complete order of the universe and of our personal lives through the process of "like attracts like". The author claims that as we think and feel, a corresponding frequency is sent out into the universe which attracts back to us events and circumstances on that same frequency. For example, if a person thinks angry thoughts and feels angry, the author claims that said person will attract back events and circumstances that cause them to feel more anger. Conversely, if the person thinks and feels positively, they will attract back positive events and circumstances. Proponents claim that desirable outcomes such as better health, wealth, and happiness can be attracted simply by changing one's

thoughts and feelings. For example, some proponents believe that using "the Secret" can cure cancer.^[8] However, there is no scientific justification for such a claim.^[9]

Book synopsis^[edit]

The book begins by introducing and explaining the mechanisms of the [law of attraction](#), and then describes historical examples of its application and great men and women in history who are claimed to have harnessed its power. The book describes the law as accounting for a magnetic power that is emitted through one's thoughts. The power of thoughts is likened to the power in a transmission tower, which sends out a frequency to the universe and then returns the same frequency in a physical or elemental form.

Next, a three-step creative process for making dreams manifest is introduced: ask, believe, and receive. This creative process is based on a quote from the Bible:^[10] "And all things, whatsoever ye shall ask in prayer, believing, ye shall receive." (Matthew 21:22)

"One of the most powerful uses of gratitude can be incorporated in the Creative Process to turbo-charge what you want."

The Secret, p. 80.

The Secret highlights [gratitude](#) and [visualization](#) as the two most powerful processes to help make one's desires manifest. It claims that being grateful both lifts your frequency higher and affirms that you believe you will receive your desire. Visualization is said to help focus the mind to send out the clearest message to the universe. Several techniques are given for the visualization process, as well as examples of people claimed to have used visualization successfully to make their dreams manifest.

For example, if a person wanted a new car, by thinking positively about the new car, having thankful feelings about the car as if it were already

attained, and opening one's life in tangible ways for a new car to be acquired (for instance, test-driving the new car, or making sure that no-one parks in the space where the new car would arrive), the law of attraction would rearrange events to make it possible for the car to manifest in the person's life.

The subsequent chapters describe how to use the law of attraction specifically in the areas of wealth, relationships, and health. The book provides examples and ways to use the law of attraction for each. The final chapters offer a more spiritual perspective on the law of attraction, and how it relates to one's life and the world. The book teaches various techniques and shortcuts to understand and implement this concept in our lives. This book helps to discover oneself, understand one's true needs and desires, improve one's life in every possible aspect and make the most of the power which resides within oneself.^[11]

Criticism^[edit]

The claims made by both the book and the film are highly controversial, and have been criticized by reviewers and readers. The book has also been heavily criticized by former believers and practitioners, with some claiming that *The Secret* was conceived by the author and that the only people generating wealth and happiness from it are the author and the publishers.^[12]

Historian and ethicist [John G. Stackhouse, Jr.](#) has provided some historical context for *The Secret*. He critically locates it in the tradition of American [New Thought](#), "mind over matter" philosophy, and popular religion, calling it "nothing new".^[13]

Ethical considerations^[edit]

Some critics say that *The Secret* offers false hope to those in true need of more conventional assistance in their lives. For example, in 2007 [Barbara](#)

[Ehrenreich](#), an author and [social critic](#), ridiculed the book's [weight control](#) advice to "not observe" overweight people.^[14]

In 2009, Ehrenreich published *Bright-Sided: How the Relentless Promotion of Positive Thinking Has Undermined America*^[15] as a response to "positive thinking" books, such as *The Secret*, which teach that "if I just change my thoughts, I could have it all".^[16] She worried that this was delusional or even dangerous,^[17] because it avoided dealing with the real sources of problems.^[18] She said that such thinking encouraged "[victim-blaming](#), political complacency, and a culture-wide flight from realism", through its suggestion that failure was the result of not trying "hard enough" or believing "firmly enough in the inevitability of your success", and that those who were "disappointed, resentful, or downcast" were "victims" or "losers".^[17] Ehrenreich advocated "not negative thinking or despair" but "realism, checking out what's really there and figuring out how to change it".^[16]

According to [Religion Dispatches](#), Byrne argued that [natural disasters](#) strike those "on the same frequency as the event" and implied that the [2006 tsunami](#) victims could have spared themselves.^[17]

On the [Adam Carolla podcast](#), [Dr. Drew](#) said that *The Secret* promoted "primitive thinking" as a replacement for actually earning esteem.^[19]

Pseudoscientific claims^[edit]

In a deeply critical 2010 review, [The New York Times](#) stated: "'The Power' and 'The Secret' are larded with references to magnets, energy and [quantum mechanics](#). This last is a dead giveaway: whenever you hear someone appeal to impenetrable [physics](#) to explain the workings of the mind, run away—we already have disciplines called '[psychology](#)' and '[neuroscience](#)' to deal with those questions. Byrne's onslaught of [pseudoscientific](#) jargon serves mostly to establish an 'illusion of

knowledge,' as social scientists call our tendency to believe we understand something much better than we really do."[\[20\]](#)

The book has been criticised for its interpretations of [quantum physics](#). [Lisa Randall](#) has stated that it is "disquieting" that Byrne claimed to have "never studied physics or science at school, and yet when (Byrne) read complex books on quantum physics (Byrne) understood them perfectly because (Byrne) wanted to understand them".[\[21\]](#) Mary Carmichael and Ben Radford have stated that the book has "a semblance of scientific accuracy. ...The problem is that neither the film nor the book has any basis in scientific reality."[\[22\]](#)

Other criticism[\[edit\]](#)

In businesses using the DVD for employee training or morale-building, some reacted to it as "a gimmick" and as "disturbing", similar to "being indoctrinated into a cult".[\[14\]](#)

Parody[\[edit\]](#)

- *The Secret* has been parodied in [The Simpsons](#) episode "[Bart Gets a 'Z'](#)," where [Bart](#) gets [his teacher](#) a book entitled *The Answer*, which is supposed to change her life after he unintentionally ruined it.
- [Family Guy](#) episode "[Brian Writes a Bestseller](#)"
- [Saturday Night Live \(season 32\)](#), in episode 15 hosted by [Julia Louis-Dreyfus](#). [Amy Poehler](#) portrays [Rhonda Byrne](#) and [Maya Rudolph](#) portrays [Oprah Winfrey](#).
- [It's Always Sunny in Philadelphia](#) episode "[The Gang Gets Extreme: Home Makeover Edition](#)"
- [The Chaser's War on Everything](#), a satirical comedy news program on Australia's ABC TV network, parodied *The Secret* on 16 May 2007 by testing out the ideas put forward in the book.[\[23\]](#)

- *The Secret* appears in 2015 Bollywood movie "[All Is Well](#)", where a burning copy of the book is shown in one scene.^[24]
- [Garfunkel and Oates](#) mention "The Secret" in their song "29/31"

**False Prophetess
Oprah Winfrey**

<https://vimeo.com/116431169>

You see, Oprah, this kind of crap is why Jonathan Franzen doesn't like you, and why I don't have much use for you either, you greedy, vain, delusional harpy preying on the minds and spirits of the American people, till they become a child-race incapable of thinking, understanding, or self-governing. Thanks a bunch.

Maybe your punishment in Hell will be for the demons to shove your mouth full of all that ill-gotten cash, till you choke on it, and persist in an unbearable torment of permanent asphyxiation. The justice of God could demand no less.

You will find that all your wealth, not shared with others in a radical, abundant generosity, and all your ill-gotten status --- all of that, on the day you die, will implode into a vortex of inescapable misery.

Don't say I didn't warn you.

Remember this when you look above and can't breathe, can't sleep, can't quench that parching thirst, when you, miserable worm, cannot satiate even a bit of that unending horror of eternal starvation: You will look up at that Infinite Plenitude and mourn your blindness in this life.

That's the secret.

***You're all under arrest, by the authority of
the Karma Police***

<https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=1uYWYWPC9HU>

*Karma Police
Radiohead*

George W. Bush. Yeah. At least he can dance.

<https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=AjPau5QYtYs>

George W. Bush, I love you. You're my brother. I have a plan for you.

Here's a running start. Give away half your wealth. Sit down with your accountant, see what your net worth is, then give half of it away.

And I don't mean give it to a charity. That's no fun. I mean, put your cowboy boots on, don a slick cowboy hat and roam around Austin, Dallas, and Houston (naturally with Secret Service protection) -- and whenever you see someone in need, you hand them a wad of twenties, a wad of hundreds. Take photos of yourself with those people and with the Secret Service and post them to Instagram. That's my kind of painting.

Ricky Gervais:

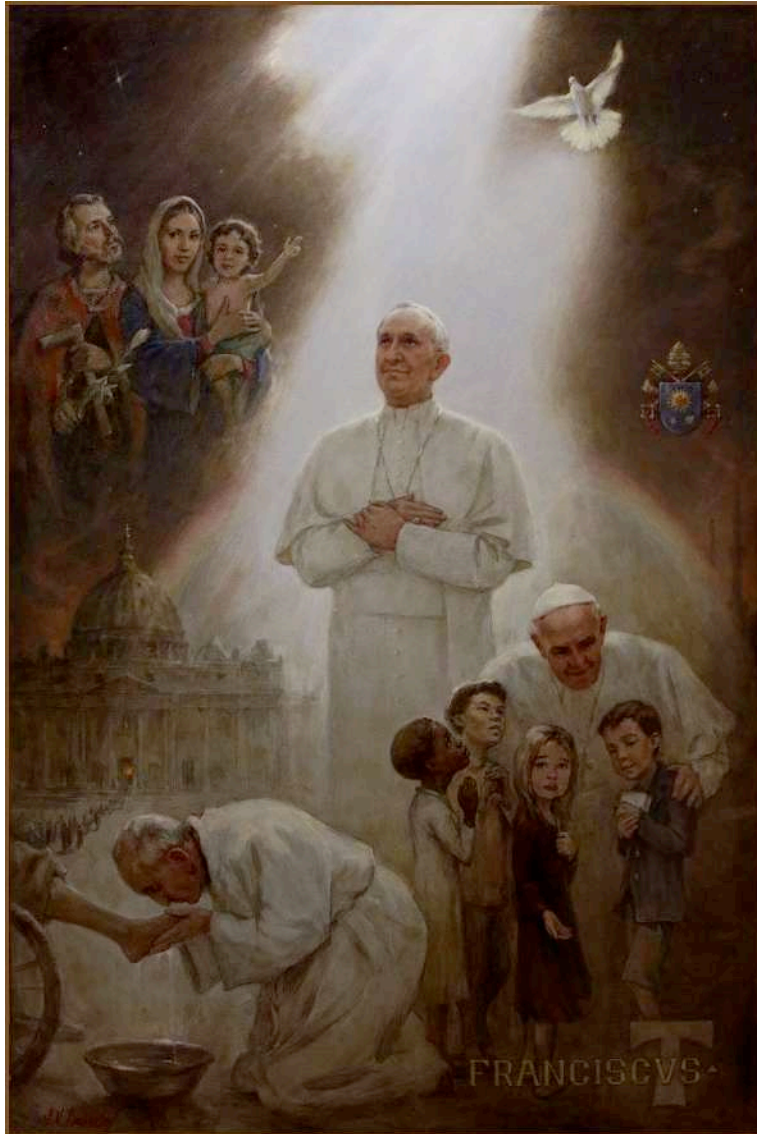
Why resist the Christ when you are but a step away from him?

Just be silent and listen. And patient. Don't let your mind be filled with anything, don't let it be filled with your own self-estimation or preconceptions. Just be quiet and still and wait. Just relax and consider the possibility. Think, revolve things in your mind, consider, wait, wait, and be patient.

You can rest your mind assured, that I'll be loving you always.

POPE FRANCIS THE GREAT

SON OF PEACE, SON OF THE CHURCH, A SON OF GOD



So, what you're saying is that we have to wait till he's dead to canonize him? Oh.

ST. FAUSTINA KOWALSKA

THE MYSTIC AND PROPHET OF THE DIVINE MERCY

https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=o_HwiE4xtQ4



Christianity & Feminism

Don't be foolish. Don't be a woman (even a man) who says, "I can't worship God, or explore religion, because that's all patriarchal - it's so sexist, so misogynistic." People are sexist and misogynistic, and people twist religion to suit their hatreds. And don't look back into history and say, "Look at all those societies 3000 years ago, they were so sexist and patriarchal!"

Of course they were, they were barbarians! They also had no electricity, internet, home appliances, airplanes, motor cars, indoor plumbing, toilets, vaccines, anything resembling real medicine, highways, any kind of meaningful science, television, *Ladies Home Journal*, *People Magazine*, *The Voice* -- they didn't have the printing press - couldn't even dream of it. They didn't have books! They had to roll up all their papers in scrolls because they hadn't quite cracked the technology of even bookmaking. They had no factories, no universities as we would even vaguely understand them, no research laboratories, no systems of government anything like our complex bureaucracies and corporations -- nothing, *nada* - they had their tent, their wife, their sheep (a handy backup), their goats (a little rough, but works in a pinch), their children, and the fire they had made outside their tent, and some swords and shields (maybe), made of bronze, possibly iron, and steel was a rare and expensive luxury. And they had to have that sword, or dagger, and shield, because it was a violent world with no effective police forces, no FBI, no CIA, no mighty military, just whatever thinly organized kingdom existed, which mostly existed to extract taxes and tribute. Oh, right, also no telescopes and advanced mathematics hadn't been developed yet, so they would have no reasonable way *at all* of realizing that the earth wasn't flat (it sure seems flat to the naked eye) or that the earth floated in space. (If the earth floated in space, then what would hold it up? A turtle?) It was actually much more rational, at least before the development of Greek mathematics and their application, which still lay centuries in the future, to conceive of the world as a flat edifice with the sun and the morning rising from one end of the earth and then, in an arc, setting at the other end.

So.....if you damn God, or won't seek God, because he didn't drop a few libraries of Betty Friedan on these people....then why not just refuse to seek him for all the other things he didn't grant them, like all the amenities listed above, and many more we haven't the time to list?

Now, that's an objection, but it's not a feminist objection, it's an atheist objection, which we deal with elsewhere.

If you can get beyond the obstacle of atheism, for even a brief moment, you'll see that God's plan unfolds over the whole sweep of history, gathering up people, meeting them where they are, and then rushing them on, eventually, as they can, into a better future. Christ himself preached love for all, saying that all people - male and female - deserved equal love and consideration. Christians' failure to live up to that standard is a human failure, not a divine failure.

And it gets worse! Because the truth of the matter is that God is One. That One has an inner life and is multidimensional. In essence, the exteriority of God, that which is displayed to humanity in this material-temporal phase of the world, which is passing away, is male. So, naturally he would express himself as a Father. Very patriarchal of him indeed.

But the interiority of God is female. And it is precisely God's plan, through Christ, to gather us up into the bosom of God...the *bosom* of God! And even Christ, in his outwardness male, is, in his deepest interiority, His Sacred Heart, quite female. And Christ becomes the Christ because, in the life of the Trinity, the Son and the man Jesus of Nazareth, is *well-beloved* of the Holy Spirit, which is the Shekinah of the Kabbalah, which is the Divine Feminine Presence.

So, it would be a pretty odd and pitiful failure and woe to be inextricably trapped in a Hell of your own making because of your strident feminism, a feminism so strident and so self-seeking that it violently threw God, or even the search for God, out the window, and then look up at that Paradise of Eucharistic Exuberance, totally out of reach and see the awful truth: God is Alicia Keys.

Game over. And you lose.

As Jesus says:

Jerusalem, Jerusalem, you who kill the prophets and stone those sent to you, how many times I yearned to gather your children together, as a hen gathers her young under her wings, but you were unwilling! Behold, your house will be abandoned, desolate. I tell you, you will not see me again until you say, "Blessed is he who comes in the name of the Lord."

(Matthew 23:37-39)

Now, this does not mean that you can worship the Mother Goddess, or the Wiccan Goddess, and put flowers in your hair and jump around Stonehenge. Quite the reverse. If you do that, you'll find that you've consigned yourself to Hell, where Satan is indeed quite male, with no interiority. In your worship of the Goddess you'll subject yourself to an evil male of terrible proportions -- with all the good manners and benevolence of Saddam Hussein and all the kindness, compassion, and charisma of Ariel Castro.

Enjoy!

That is because this world is evil. It is material and temporal but, in its rebellion against God, not subject to the Spirit or the spiritual reality of God. It is, instead, since it is sundered by sin, subject to the Ruler of the World, Satan: this material-temporal world is not subject to the Seraphic, Wise ordering of Perfect Plenitude and Peace of the Blessed One, but, rather, subject to the cruel, mad chaos of scarcity and war that is now the whole lot and destiny of the Evil One, Satan.

So, in such a world, the Way (this was what the early Christians called their movement), would naturally, and necessarily, have to be masculine. For the Embrace of the Divine Feminine, the Divine Maternal, in the Spirit requires that one be turned to the Will of God, that one be perfectly aligned to the Will of that Spirit. Since we live in a sinful world, the expression of that Power, of the need to obey the Power of God, is masculine and God, though, in his inner nature,

beyond such limitations as gender, is referred to as a Father. Likewise, the Savior would necessarily have to be male, in imitation of His Father's Power. For Christ is the Power over death that brings life from death. Then, once saved and in the Presence of the Father and Son, you can share their inner life, which is all but certainly the All-Embracing Love of a Perfect Mother.

To say, "I want to do things my way, I'm a woman, and therefore I will worship the Feminine," is to put the cart before the horse, and to arrogate to yourself the means to salvation. And to place yourself, and your will, above that of God is *precisely* the sin of Satan. It is blank self-preference. You are offered the Divine Feminine eternally, but you demand that the Way on earth be Feminine as well. That is because, when you worship the Goddess, etc., you're really worshipping yourself. And that is the totality of the sin of Satan.

The only Way to God, the real God, is to come to him without preconditions and to obey him.⁷⁰ That is the obedience of a son to a Father. That is why the Way is masculine. Once the Way is completed, and one is brought into the bosom of God, one is caught up, ecstatically, in the All-Embrace of God, which is a quite feminine dimension to God (to the Divine Inner Life).

To insist on worshipping the Feminine, (as opposed to appreciating the Feminine aspect to be enjoyed upon entrance into the interiority of God), because, deep down, you don't believe there is a God in the first place, is essentially atheism. And to say that the Divine Feminine must be outright worshipped because that will bring greater social justice: How could disobeying the Will of God result in social justice? Or any kind of justice? Or any kind of peace, order, tranquility or any kind of good thing whatsoever? It is one thing to say, as Christians, that all people, Jew and Greek, male and female, must be loved equally and respected. And it is wise to consider the Divine Feminine in how we conceive of and administer our polities. But we must endure in orthodox worship and faith that such worship will lead us into the very depths of God.

And, yes, without being coarse, exactly. What it means is that God *very much desires* our happiness, and wishes us to have full and exuberant access to the joys and plenitude of His (we're still in the world) Inner Life.

⁷⁰ c.f. Tim Keller

A Note on Esotericism

The esotericism is an anti-esotericism. There is nothing esoteric about this work. It is entirely honest, clear, and to-the-point. Woe to you if you do not believe that. Unto eternal woe. To believe this work is esoteric is to commit the sin of Satan. Don't say I didn't warn you.

The above paragraph is not esoteric. It is honest and straightforward.

This is a test to sift out the elect from the damned. For the time of sifting is coming.

When at last the itching fires of my lust have cooled, soothed and alleviated by the Seraphic medicines of holy grace, and so too the hot bellows of my indignant rage have subsided, then do I sit alone in contemplation of the Scriptures, in the quietude of a contented heart and easy spirit, ruminating upon the Word that renders unto me healing and peace. I sit with the Word and let its truth wash over me like a summer breeze, and let the Sun of its wisdom shine upon my face, relaxed and attentive, and cloistered from the cares of the world, as if hidden away somewhere in some blessedly tranquil and remote courtyard of the Vatican.

After some time, delved deeply into the heart of the matter, searching diligently for the face of God, does a majestic and tender soul come unto me. Dressed in the most thoroughly starched black robes and brilliant red sashes, complete with a fine broad-brimmed crimson galero, the noble personage deigns to sit by my side, and says, "Let us read the Scriptures, my child."

And then sometimes, as the afternoon hours lengthen and the shadows appear and the breezes blow with a shudder of a chill, as I unfurl some new insight, some new perspective, that proud figure will gently stroke my head with its long fingers, quietly remarking, "Very clever, my child," or, "Such a brilliant insight," or, "You're very holy for observing that."

And in that swell of pride within me, I will verily rest my head on that noble Cardinal's shoulders, and let him stroke my hairs with his long tendrils. And I will look in his eyes and be damned sure that I see: "Father Smith, could that be you....I thought you were dead, it's so good to see you, my friend. So you have been created a cardinal! Splendid!" And so I will continue my investigations in this self-exalted state....

And before I know it, instead of searching out the Scriptures for the wisdom of the Gospel, the Red Cardinal and I are investigating quite different matters: *What patronage do you wish for after you are canonized? What mottos would you especially like preserved? Which Catholic universities might most suitably be renamed for you?*

And, when I am quite in a stupor of my own self-estimation, quite far into my self-righteousness, and rather convinced that I am totally free of sin and immersed in the cool, sanctifying waters of the purest state of grace, my guardian angel, the accountant, and the true spirit of Father Smith do coming race upon me, beating me with my own foolishness and giving me a good red welt on my forehead.

And with that fine discipline, I look back at the one caressing me and see quite plainly: This Red Cardinal is none other than Father Satan!

Indignant at the outrage, and mournful of my own foolishness, I do cast out the fiend from those inner sanctums of rectitude and return to my studies with the only spirit in which they may profitably render any spiritual fruit: humility.

For once all those base lusts, angers, greeds, gluttonies, sloths, petty envies and all the rest are wiped away and stamped out, the great and mighty enemy still remains, the heavy arsenal of all sin: Pride.

Sayings

Clinging to the world will never produce life, but only eternal death.

This is how you shall know them:
He who loves this book is a child of light, of the One True God.
He who hates this book is a child of Satan.

*That's arrogant!
Who do you think you are?!
That's racist, sexist, homophobic, cis, anti-trans, pro-gluten, imperialistic, ethnocentric,
androcentric, patriarchal, essentialist.....*

No.

What I mean is simply this:
This book has the Spirit of the Light of the True God.

Even if you don't agree with every last statement set forth herein, if you appreciate and value its spirit, then you are a child of God, the True God, the Light.

But, on the other hand, if you stamp your feet, and grind your teeth, and raise your fist, and your innards get all convoluted and you shout, scream, rage, "Such a one must be stamped out!!!!!"

Then..... you just might be a child of Satan.

*Jeff Foxworthy
You might be a Redneck*

<https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=STypFtRdnc8>

The Kingdom of Heaven may be likened to a man who sowed good seed in his field. While everyone was asleep his enemy came and sowed weeds all through the wheat, and then went off. When the crop grew and bore fruit, the weeds appeared as well. The slaves [angels and possibly also disciples] of the householder [God] came to him and said, "Master, did you not sow good seed in your field? Where have the weeds come from?" He answered, "An enemy [Satan] has done this." His slaves said to him, "Do you want us to go and pull them up?" He replied, "No, if you pull up the weeds you might uproot the wheat along with them. Let them grow together until harvest; then at harvest time I will say to the harvesters, "First collect the weeds and tie them in bundles for burning; but gather the wheat into my barn [Heaven]."

Matthew 13:24-30

I am baptizing you with water, for repentance [for Divine Mercy], but the one who is coming after me is mightier than I.

I am not worthy to carry his sandals. He will baptize you with the holy Spirit and fire. His winnowing fan is in his hand. He will clear his threshing floor and gather his wheat into his barn, but the chaff he will burn with unquenchable fire [Eternal Hell - the real Hell, the one you don't believe in but will go to anyway].

Matthew 3:11-12

At that time, the disciples approached Jesus and said, "Who is the greatest in the kingdom of heaven?" He called a child over, placed it in their midst, and said, "Amen, I say to you, unless you turn and become like children, you will not enter the kingdom of heaven. Whoever humbles himself like this child is the greatest in the kingdom of heaven. And whoever receives one child such as this in my name receives me.

Matthew 18:1-4

Rank does not matter. That is Satan's obsession -- that is Satan's sin. All that matters is Trust in God -- the Trust in God that leads to abundant sharing, and which, in turn, leads to a joyous sharing of eternal plenitude.

You see, this whole thing is like a magnet for the children of Satan, the children of darkness. Or, maybe like a Citronella candle -- it repels the children of Satan. You watch - every hateful child of Satan in every religious group and every intellectual and social group will rise up in fury, frothing at the mouth with hatred and paranoia, blankly and totally revealing themselves -- displaying that their true spiritual orientation is not towards God - the Spirit of Grace and Plenitude and Friendship, but towards their own self-righteousness, self-love, self-absorption, expressed in violence and chaos and misery, all the dark, rich fruits of the Satanic harvest, sown in self-love, and reaped in the eternal wrath of Hell -- the fascist, racist, xenophobic hard-right "protestants"; the fascist, authoritarian, vengeful Catholic hard-right; the narrow-minded, deluded, hateful Orthodox Christian cleric who can only see heresy and blood-drinking Satanism in anyone other than himself; the Meir Kahane ultra-nationalist Jew who says with Kahane (and with the Dark Lord Satan) that, "Mercy has its place, as do cruelty and revenge,"; the Islamist terrorist -- but we already know the depths of their hatred, we see it displayed every night; ~~the Buddhist terrorists who wreak havoc in every city across the globe on a daily basis; the Jain militants plotting to seize power and establish a world tyranny;~~ the secular postmodernist ultra-feminist declaring that this whole effort is an essentialist (and therefore fascist!) work that lays the groundwork for *The Handmaid's Tale* while offering nothing that must be wrestled with and considered; the new atheist who hates religion so much, that he arrogates to himself the position of God and lawgiver and determines that he must stamp out all theological and speculative

philosophical thinking as “backwards” and “regressive” - who longs for nothing more than to sterilize, bleach, and neuter humanity of its essential humanity.

Hey, Jesuits -- Time's almost up: Everybody who can get in the Church is going to get in the Church. Everybody who fights this Church with murder and blasphemy and their own foul hatred, disguised as righteousness but which is just self-righteousness and not even any kind of righteousness but, rather, evil masquerading (thinly) as righteousness, they have *chosen* their own destiny -- and it has been an eternal truth from all eternity.



Cornelius Jansen

Hey Jesuits, I'm baaaaaack

I have always truly loved this:

Attributed to [Fr. Pedro Arrupe, SJ](#) (1907-1991)

Nothing is more practical than
finding God, than
falling in Love
in a quite absolute, final way.
What you are in love with,
what seizes your imagination, will affect everything.
It will decide
what will get you out of bed in the morning,
what you do with your evenings,
how you spend your weekends,
what you read, whom you know,
what breaks your heart,
and what amazes you with joy and gratitude.
Fall in Love, stay in love,
and it will decide everything.

From *Finding God in All Things: A Marquette Prayer Book* © 2009 Marquette University Press.

We are not debtors to the flesh; but we are debtors in an infinite degree to the dear Redeemer who lived and died for us. Let him be our pattern : and let us endeavour to be as diligent in setting forth his praises, as he was in redeeming our souls. He knew what it was to be hungry, thirsty, and weary, to be up late and early, and to be diligently going about doing good. He had flesh and blood as well as we, though none of our corruptions. ***We have an eternity to rest; let us be active here.***

Rev. Edward Morgan

A mantra:
“Christ is salvation.”

Insights

I assure you, we are living in the time that Jesus spoke of when he said, “Many false prophets will arise and deceive many; and because of the increase of evildoing, the love of many will grow cold. But the one who perseveres to the end will be saved. And this gospel of the kingdom will be preached throughout the world as a witness to all nations, and then the end will come.”

When I read the writings of men and women of past ages, the two millennia of the Christian Age, there is a sternness and clarity and wholeness and grace of the heart that is so utterly lacking in the self-help, self-deluded media entertainment drivel that passes for culture in our day. I have a terrible feeling that the ranks of the saints are mostly made up of *those* men and women of past ages, and that we are floating around blithely in a sea of the damned -- all buzzing about on their cell phones, in their SUVs, their McMansions, lackadaisically basking in the electronic glow of their flatscreen televisions, indulging in every fornication the mind can concoct and summon forth, slurping down delicacy after delicacy....and that for them it shall end in utter and final ruination in a perdition beyond the most active imaginations of the most gruesome Horror film director.

I clawed my way up, through and in Christ, from this muck.

So can you!

<https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=qztuEucrNBc>

Wealth is such a temptation because it so closely emulates what God loves the most, and, indeed, is most like. God is Endless Plenitude. He is Wealth....but he is *Spiritual* Wealth. In a sinful world, cut off from access to the true source of all plenitude, the Spirit, the only way to get the Plenitude that is your true and total orientation (which is toward the Plenitude of God) is to steal it from others. That is, to steal it either directly, in the criminal sense, or to steal it from others by implicitly or explicitly, reluctantly or enthusiastically, participating in social systems that are fundamentally inequitable, and thus, essentially giant criminal enterprises, hoarding wealth for the rich and conscripting the labor of the poor to produce even more wealth for the rich.

So, in a material *and*, critically, *sinful* world, the way to plenitude (or, more exactly, the way to *feel* the sensation of plenitude) is theft. That is, it is to partake of injustice, in some way, shape or form. And that is *spiritual* poverty. So, in this sinful material world, those who have material wealth have some form of spiritual poverty, either vast and iniquitous or more subtle and less emotionally palpable.

But it doesn't make a difference to God. To have material wealth, without radically and fundamentally using it to help the poor, you, the possessor of a material plenitude, actually are the possessor of a spiritual desert.

Jesus is the river of life, whose waters, if they are in the spirit of a human being, will well up to eternal life.

Those rich people with at least a drop of that water will go to Heaven, after a longer or shorter period of purgatory, of having that spiritual desert gradually renewed by the Spirit's plenitudinous multiplication of that single drop.

Those rich people without even such a drop will go to Hell.

Period.

Don't say you weren't warned on the Last Day at the Last Judgment.

When you're led off into Hell by ravenous, all-powerful (to you) demons, don't look to me or look at me. Because I will only be looking at Jesus, Come Again in Triumphant Glory.

And don't be so sure that just because you're polite and you think you're cool and you have good friends and you tuck your kids in at night and you don't cheat on your wife, that you're in the clear.

Because the Spirit of Infinite Plenitude doesn't just love what is His own. If He only loved what was His own, He would never have bothered creating anything. The spiritual and material creations exist, were created, *precisely* because God is a Plenitude that out of simple generosity and fullness (total abundance) pours over Himself and races out (and thus creates) all the Reality that can possibly be.

In other words, you being (sort of, kind of) nice to your family and friends is irrelevant. If God thought and acted like you rich people, He would have just hung out with the Son in Eternal and Infinite Felicitous Plenitude. HE DOESN'T NEED YOU TO BE HAPPY! GOD IS NOT LONELY!!! He doesn't need the Kingdom of Heaven. For God, the Kingdom of Heaven is a soup kitchen -- only God, being incomprehensibly generous, *enjoys* the soup kitchen, and doesn't just use it to tickle his own ego. God has no ego, in the sense of self-preference. God is total other-preference. God is the absolute window, opening onto a vast and endless horizon of Beatitude -- the Blessedness of an Absolute, Eternal, Total, Infinite Peace and Happiness and Meaning that is greater than you can imagine. It is a greater thrill to just *be* God than if you won the Super Bowl as the MVP, got elected President with 95 percent of the vote, found the cure to cancer, landed as the first man on Mars, won every Academy Award, and had passionate sex with a harem of supermodels *all on the same day*.

God does *not* most look like a triumphant victor, basking in the praise of the crowd, feeding on it like a celebrity.

He more looks like a contented old man, totally at peace with himself and the world, with a large and loving family at home, throwing bread to the pigeons.

And you're the pigeons.

And if you appreciate that, and can even summon yourself to a mustard seed of that generosity, God can work with you, and he'll turn you from a pigeon into a member of his family.

But if you, though a pigeon fed merely by the generosity of God, cannot in any meaningful way emulate that pointless generosity....that *does not benefit God in the sense of giving Him something He doesn't already have!*....then you're screwed.

Capisce? Do you understand? Do you get it? Anybody home?

Those rich people who go to Hell are the ones, you could say, who have the lights on, but nobody's home.

The above is the truth.

You can try to deny it, evade it, ignore it, formulate some bullshit theories (*see* Ayn Rand and her miserable ilk) to tell yourself you're all right.

You can try to find some alternative spirituality that tells you that the Christian call to self-gift and radical generosity is irrelevant or barely relevant. I can hear it now, "That Galante, I just don't like him. He's self-righteous, gets in other people's business. I have my own way of relating to God. My God doesn't place such demands on me. My God gets me, and just wants *me* to be happy. I meditate, do yoga, do transcendental meditation, I feel one with the universe, and when I do marijuana I have spiritual experiences. I go to the beach and feel the wonder of a beautiful sunrise or sunset. When I have sex, I feel that my orgasms are spiritual experiences that make me in tune with the Cosmos. I don't need to give away so much of my yummy yummy wealth. I'm fine the way I am, and God wants me to be as blessed in this life as possible. In fact, it would be an insult to God not to appreciate all of these material blessings! So how could I ever part with them?"

But God doesn't care about the fairy tales you tell yourself.

The Torah is *NOT*, "You do you."

The Gospel is *NOT*, "You do you."

THE PROCLAMATION OF GOD IS SIMPLE:

YOU DO GOD, OR GOD WILL DO YOU - IN HELL.

He only cares about whether you have even any kind of insight into -- access to, participation with -- His SPIRIT OF TOTAL PLENITUDE...for *others*, not just for your spouse, or kids, or friends, or the people you like.

That is why Jesus says:

You have heard that it was said, “You shall love your neighbor and hate your enemy.” But I say to you, love your enemies, and pray for those who persecute you, that you may be *children of your heavenly Father* [as opposed to children of Satan, the damned, the blank, the truly and totally selfish and self-preferential, no matter how they may appear], for he makes his sun rise on the bad and the good, and causes rain to fall on the just and the unjust. For if you love those who love you, what recompense will you have? Do not the tax collectors do the same? And if you greet your brothers only, what is unusual about that? Do not the pagans do the same? So be perfect, just as your heavenly Father is perfect.

Matthew 5:43-48

LISTEN!!! Listen to what Jesus actually says! Jesus is saying, as the whole Hebrew Bible constantly says, that God is radically different from you -- so different, so unusual to your mind, that to your sinful, little mind, He is well nigh incomprehensible. God is so unusual, so plenitudinous, so abundant, so shockingly generous that He is even good and generous towards the bad!

And then, Jesus says that your kindness and concern for those you care about and for your family, *doesn't matter*. That doesn't mean that you shouldn't care about your friends and family and act well towards them. Of course you should! *But* that doesn't mean that you measure up to what God demands *as even minimally necessary to receive the reward: which is Heaven, Eternal Life rather than Hell*. You should take care of your body too, and love yourself, and feel good about yourself. That is, you should feel justly happy about the things you do right, (but not be puffed up), and especially trust that God loves you when you sin, despite your sin. But taking care of your body and loving yourself, while good things, won't merit eternal salvation either.

The only thing that passes the test, that makes the grade, is loving those who are *different* from you. Not just ethnically or culturally different. We're bound in a prison of identity politics so total that we can barely think.

No, no. It means people who don't matter to you: who are irrelevant to your happiness and who you don't expect anything from: not even the satisfaction and pride of "being good".

The only kind of love and good works that satisfies Jesus' commandment is a totally prodigal (wastefully, recklessly lavish and freewheeling when it comes to spending money), extravagant, shocking, totally *unusual* love -- and it is unusual and thus, as Jesus says, *perfect*, precisely because *only* that kind of love corresponds to the Spirit's plenitude, its total, inconceivable generosity. The kind of generosity that creates humanity, knowing it will be sinful and require the murder and sacrifice of the Only Begotten Son to save it.

Every other kind of "love" - for wife, husband, children, brother, sister, mother, father, friend - while good and indispensable - can ultimately be, and too often is, simply self-love -- the natural operation of self-preference for a limited, finite being such as yourself that requires the companionship and consortium of others.

If the only kind of plenitude - of love - you can muster up is self-love, self-preference, the desire to hoard all plenitude just for yourself and ignore everybody else, except insofar as they are useful to you.....then you're Satan in material form, and you will share his fate. And, since he is a pure spirit and you are a compound of flesh and spirit, he will be your invincible lord for all eternity. Woe unto you, unrepentant rich. You will be damned.

The unrepentant rich, who can do no other than hoard their wealth, and who cannot even begin, in a radical way, to prodigally and recklessly share that wealth are as such:

They are children playing on a beach, building innumerable little sand castles, while they run around knocking over other little children's sand castles. These mighty titans of the shore lord it over their younger or less able peers and marvel at their own magnitude and magnificence.

Then the tsunami came and washed them all away. And these little sand castles did not matter anymore. And those poor souls, those Titans of Sand, now bereft of their sand castles, will have nothing but their own wickedness and emptiness to torment them for the rest of eternity.

So: when you're constantly taking selfies, your spiritual life is too much a mirror, self-involved, self-obsessed, self-praising. Use your eyes, and your camera, to *see* the world. As Father Smith always said, "See the world with the eyes of Christ; know the world with the heart of Christ."

That goes for celebrities and wanna-be celebrities and everybody caught up in puerile, teenage dreams.



Faith is what gets you started. Hope
is what keeps you going. Love is
what brings you to the end.

— *Mother Angelica* —

AZ QUOTES

A pervading characteristic of sin is moral idiocy. Indeed, etymology, again, serves us well here. For an idiot is an ignorant person, derived from the Greek word *idios*, which means “own” or “private”.

He who sins *turns* his sight, his self, away from the Public Plenitude that is the source of all truth, beauty, goodness, and pleasure: (the source of the Great Cosmos - all that can be and must be, in accordance with the Divine Perfection). And, in doing so, he necessarily turns his sight towards his own private universe.

In this, the sinner imitates Satan, the prince of darkness and slave-master of sin, for he too wished to supplant the Divine Majesty, and, in doing so, become himself the source of such a Great Cosmos.

In failing to appreciate or accept the distinction between the Creator and the creature, between the nature of the Spirit and the spirit, Satan, and all his slaves, sinners, attempt to duplicate the essential Creative Act of God in creating the Creation, both the spiritual creation and the material creation (the Cosmos).

But, a creature cannot be the Creator.

A creature can, in conjunction with the Divine Grace, even co-create, as the elect shall one day co-rule with the Divine Ruler.

But a creature cannot create anything, on its own and by its own power -- No creature, not even the greatest, most magnificently created spirit, can bring forth the smallest speck of matter or the meanest glimmer of a perception by itself, through itself, or for itself.

A creature’s whole power rests in a vision of the Power -- the ONE Power that is the ONE Spirit.

He who *turns* from the vision of that Power can have no power whatsoever.

So, any spirit - any one - who attempts to summon forth a creation without power must necessarily “create” through a mockery - a parody - of Power.

Now, such parodies, such mockeries, will only be real for those whose spirits are sundered by sin -- those who exist cast out from God’s Presence, in the anarchy of formlessness, spiritlessness, the darkness of total spiritual blindness.

As we have discussed, a spirit is constitutionally indestructible. It is, to use a metaphor, an ineradicable crystal. That crystal may reflect the Light or persist in darkness.

A crystal that reflects the Light will be brilliant and fulfilled.

A crystal that fails to reflect the Light will not shine whatsoever. It will, visually, be as if it was not there. Only the hardness and sharpness of the crystal will remain.

So too with spirits: with the spirits of angels and of men.

Metaphorically, then, while the Light can truly create out of a radiation of its brilliance, a darkened crystal can only “create” through cutting and scraping. As the Light will reveal, so the obsidian will ruin. What the Light gives by way of sight, the obsidian will, of necessity, have to imitate by way of force.

The satiety of spiritual equanimity, peaceableness, and tranquility of the flesh that only the Light can provide, will, under the ministrations of the Obsidian, be mimicked and mocked in the riots of spiritual dominion, aggressiveness, and orgasms of revelry.

Now, just as a reflection in a mirror displays the form of a truth without containing its substance (and just as the reflection of a fire can provide light but not heat), so too the riots of sin can *seem* like the satiety of obedience to and trust in the Spirit.

But you will soon find the illusion to be quite different from the reality. For spiritual dominion - the proud strutting of a self-righteous moralist convinced of his own rectitude and the obvious, outrageous, lecherous failings of everyone around him - will not provide any peace. Oh, it'll feel good....for a while, knowing how superior you are to everyone around you, knowing that you're Lot fleeing from Sodom. But you will very soon find that such self-justification on the basis of your moral record is a pit of quicksand. It has no foundation. It is not real, because every human being other than the Divine Son and the Blessed Virgin Mary is sinful. It also cannot satisfy, because you are only looking to yourself for spiritual nourishment, not the flesh and blood of Jesus Christ, the spotless victim offered in substitution for your sins. When you're wrapped up in self-righteousness, you're trying to bear the load of your sins that God sent Jesus to do for you. And you cannot do that. You do not have the strength or the righteousness sufficient to do that. So, when you try to justify yourself on the basis of your moral record, on the basis of your *self*-righteousness, you will *inevitably* be crushed under the weight of your sins.

So, you'll be caught in a vortex of unreality and dissatisfaction. On the one hand, you'll have to maximize the faults of others and minimize your own. You'll say: fine, it's true that I'm not perfect and have faults, but that other person, whoa my God in Heaven, what a spectacle of lunacy and sinfulness!

But, either deep down or pretty close to the surface, you'll know that there's something quite wrong with your spiritual attitude, with the disposition of your soul. You'll know that you should forgive....but you just can't.....there's something holding you back....it's how awful the other person's sins are!

Now there are many situations where the psychological horror of the circumstances makes real forgiveness quite difficult (though, I have to say as a matter of doctrinal conviction, not strictly speaking impossible).

But most of us do not usually confront such situations.

Rather, for most of us, (and, as a doctrinal matter, I would have to say all of us), we cannot forgive because we have made our own self-estimation an idol. Our God is not God: it is ourselves, our sense of ourselves, our pride.

Self-righteousness - that is, any kind of spiritual dominion based on your own self-perceived (or even and especially socially constructed and derived) moral status and even "grandeur" - is nothing more than pride masquerading as religion, as faith, as the Gospel.

Justifying yourself on how well (you think) you follow God is not the same as allowing yourself to be justified on the basis of God's illogical, unreasonable, totally unmerited love for you. In fact, although those two things may seem similar, almost like, say, mirror images, they are in fact polar, diametrical opposites. The danger in self-righteousness, in pride masquerading as religion, is that it is so well-disguised. It doesn't haunt brothels or wear lingerie, rouged in bright lipstick and waving its lascivious tongue; the Satanic chasm of filth hides under clerical vestments and behind altars and pulpits and long sessions of reading the Bible.

As a human being, you're looking for peace. For a respite from the hurts and wounds and slanders of others: for a sense of yourself that you can rest on, on which you can find some rest.

And the Obsidian comes along, mimicking and parodying the Light, and it says, "Oh, look at you! You read the Bible so much! You go to Church every week! You never have extramarital sex! You never look at pornography! You are so kind to everyone! You are so humble and never seek for yourself! You are so considerate and prudent! Look at what positions in the Church you hold! Look at how everyone praises you for your religiosity!"

And in the midst of the rejections and hurts and failures and difficulties that make up so much of everyday life, you can try to take comfort in that, rest upon that: as a way of justifying yourself, of building yourself up, of raising *yourself* up to a plain of peace, to some kind of emotional and spiritual refuge within yourself.

Or so I've read.

And for a while it will even feel somewhat like real spiritual equanimity - the real balance of a soul held up by God. Because you'll be doing the lifting.

But you'll quickly find that you can't bear the weight.

It's too damned heavy.

The unreality of it, the illusion, will keep smacking you in the face. Your own imperfections will keep cropping up in front of you. So there's only one solution: keep on maximizing the imperfections of other people to make your imperfections not seem so big anymore.

And there's the dissatisfaction of it. Because no matter how much you try to convince yourself that *I love Jesus! I'm doing everything I can....* it will never satisfy you.

Because you don't realize that the Gospel is not about you loving Jesus. (Not really, maybe intellectually, but not where it matters, in your heart.)

It is about Jesus loving you.

And when you really realize that, when it gets from your head to your heart, your whole life will turn around, because there's no room for self-righteousness anymore - pride has no allure or hold anymore.

Because you realize that you are totally sinful, on your own moral record and on your own spiritual basis. All your best is trash and can't help but sink under the weight of the iniquity that your sinfulness has amassed through your lifetime.

But when you stop listening to the Siren calls of the Obsidian telling you that you can hold up that sinfulness with the good things you've done, you'll find that you don't have to carry that burden anymore.

You can let it drop onto Jesus' mighty shoulders.

And you can free yourself from the haunting fear - *I'm not good enough. I don't deserve God's love. I don't deserve Jesus' love. I better do better. When I do better, then I'll be okay.*

So, when you're left with that feeling of abandonment, of not having any stable, solid ground in the world, you're left to scrape something together as best you can.

So when you can't fathom a God, who, incarnate in Jesus, truly loves you not just *despite* your sins, but *in* your sins, who doesn't stand on the shore while you're drowning in muck screaming: SEE, YOU SUCK! IF YOU DIDN'T SUCK, YOU WOULDN'T BE DROWNING IN MUCK! STOP SUCKING SO MUCH AND YOU'LL SWIM OUT OF THE MUCK!: but, rather, throws himself into the muck, gets all dirty and filthy *with* you when He didn't have to, to carry you ashore to safety, and then washes you off with the cleansing water of *His own* sacred holiness.....what can you scrape together? What foundation can you give for your existence?

Your own moral record.

Sex.

Food.

Television.

Drugs.

Booze.

Porn.

Destructive relationships.

A vacation.

A 2100 calorie entree at the Cheesecake Factory.

Your own rage at a world gone mad and at people reveling in their own lunacy.

But whatever foundation you try to scrape together, you'll just sink into the muck, because the only solid foundation is the free gift of Christ's love, His salvation offered by the grace of an unfathomably generous, all-merciful, and all-sovereign Father.

The whole spectacle consists in this, then: moral idiocy. A failure, for whatever reason and from whatever origin, to *turn* your spiritual sight from yourself and the world *to* God.

Because when your spiritual sight - your hope and belief and trust - is turned away from God, it is necessarily turned to yourself, or, existentially all the same, to other limited people that you turn into idols: and you're constructed in such a way that you need peace - and when you can't get that peace from the Lord, you'll get it, or try to get it, wherever and whenever you can - from any source. And you'll stumble and fall deeper and deeper into the vortex of sin, further and further from the touch of God's grace.

If you don't *turn* your spiritual sight -- your sense of what is really important, underneath everything else - to God, you'll indeed end up as an idiot - someone whose whole reality is an idios - something that is only their own, that is private, and that does not share in the Public Plenitude that is God's unfathomable grace. And that private reality will, in the end and eternally, become your Private Hell.

It is only in turning to God - totally trusting that His grace, and His real, unmerited love for you is sufficient for all your spiritual and emotional needs - that you can be lifted out,

rescued, from that Private Hell, and raised into the Public Paradise that God has prepared for all who love Him, and who can accept His love.

The brief gratifications of anything other than God's grace are a pathetic, although oftentimes superficially convincing, parody of the peace and plenitude that truly trusting in God necessarily brings into your life and your soul.

For God is the Lord of Light. Satan is the Lord of Illusions.

The difficulty is that Satan is not simply a mirror. He is a projector. Satan doesn't simply show you the spiritual gifts that God has -- he can allow you to experience them. The gratifications of sexual union in a brothel. The satisfactions of a delicious meal in an expensive restaurant while people outside are hungry. The freedom and excitement of owning vast wealth in a world of poverty, brutal misery, and dire need. The relaxation of rest as you lounge in your La-Z-Boy and inebriate yourself with booze while watching Mixed Martial Arts.

And in all that lust, gluttony, greed, and sloth, you think that you have attained satiety, tranquility, plenitude, and eternal rest. It can feel all the same to the undiscerning eye and the hardened heart.

But you're missing one minor detail: the film.

For Satan can project what is on the film: he can mimic it, make you think that he, Satan, is the source of the film: the source of satisfaction and plenitude and peace.

But even though he's a Holodeck projector -- he's still just a mirror - he's still just pawning off *somebody* else's reality and making it look like it is his own. And that somebody else is God.

Now Satan is really good at mimicking God. In effect, it is what he was created for. He, Lucifer, was the Light-Bearer, the one angel, the one perfect created intelligence, spirit, that could totally reflect the magnificence of God.

But though he was the most perfectly polished mirror, that doesn't make him the Light that he was reflecting. Only God is the Light.

The pastoral and practical implication of this is that, in a life of sin, of Sinfulness, God can end up becoming Where's Waldo -- you have a whole plenitude of sex, money, booze, career, reputation, activity, travel, excitement -- and it all feels pretty full - what could be missing?

What is missing is God. What is missing is the actual source of any of the enduring satisfaction of that plenitude.

When you simply race through life sinning to get the plenitude that is the actual and natural orientation of your soul, you just race off like the roadrunner over air....and the outcome is not as happy as in the cartoon.

The only solid ground is God's righteousness, His Spirit, the source of all perceptions, thus, necessarily, the source of all plenitude.

The key pastoral and practical point is that you have to really *discern* your life and your activities in order to be saved. Because you can have every satisfaction -- even the satisfying rectitude of a morally ordered life -- but if it is not founded on God through Christ, you have

precisely nothing. You have nothing but Satan's projections of reality, and none of the actual reality that can only exist through the Risen Christ, in the Spirit of the Father and the Son.

We can also see some of this in the derangement of modern American life. Satan has so arranged the pieces on the chessboard that the modern middle class combines the worst aspects of *both* poverty and wealth. It used to be that most people were just poor -- thus they were less affected by greed, and more open to being saved. And their insecurity, as poor people, made it more likely that they would accept the grace of Christ to save them rather than rely on wealth. So, that is why the poor are blessed -- they're lucky because they have less holding them back from allowing themselves to be embraced by Christ.

But now you have middle class people with all the anxieties and practical financial insecurities of deeply impoverished people.....while, at the same time, they have the ambitions, delusions, and pretensions of the wealthy.

It's the worst of both worlds.

There's no easy solution. "Hey, let's make everybody poor," is no solution (although the Republican Party is giving it a try). Or, at least, I'm too much of an American to propose or agree with it.

But we have a real spiritual crisis in this country, where the need for grace is so manifest, and yet the haughtiness of spirit in those who need it is so gross, making those spirits too full of themselves to humbly and graciously accept the gift of grace.

The solution, naturally, is the beatitudes -- those interior dispositions that make the reception of Divine Grace possible. Naturally, the dispensation of grace through the call to Christ is necessary in order for a person to orient their interior disposition in alignment with the Spirit of all Beatitude (Beatitude being nothing other than Blessedness - that state of perfect All-Righteousness and All-Felicitousness which is native and natural to God in His Eternal Abode and so foreign to we mortal sinners in this exile of tears and woes).

But the process of sanctification, (in which a person's spirit is so aligned, by reason of unmerited justification, with the Holy Spirit that such a spirit can now join with the Spirit's sanctifying activity in a free and fecund co-ordination of freedom, beauty, pleasure, and joy), does produce merit in each individual soul such that the spirit is rewarded by the Spirit with the Felicity that necessarily inheres in a life of Righteousness, that is, with a participation in, presence to, and sight of the Eternal Beatitude of the Father and Son's Holy Spirit.

In other words, God's unmerited, free gift of grace in justification breaks the shackles of the slavery to sin under the dominion of Satan, leaving the man or woman free to either persevere in that freedom, through freely serving God and obeying His prescripts, or to backslide into the waywardness of self-preference, the origin and matrix of sin, which produces a cascade of infractions against God's Will such that the spirit is now loaded with the sinfulness that necessarily produces (because, in its interior essence it *is*) wrath in eternity. As I discuss elsewhere, the ultimate destiny of each spirit, either perseverance in grace or forfeiture of grace, is *both* the predetermined Will of God (which is nothing other than the freely chosen Will of God) *and* the freely chosen will of each spirit, in an infinite involution of a cyclone of freedom,

of a mysterious exchange of freedom between the Spirit's Freedom and each spirit's freedom, that we do not presently, and perhaps cannot in this limited life, understand.

The solution to our spiritual crisis, our benighted admixture of the interior poverty of our inner lives combined with the screeching advertisement of our feigned external awesomeness, is to develop a sense of deep, genuine, and spiritual irony.

A step back to the metaphor of the film and the projector. The trouble is that Satan and his temptation to sinfulness *seems* to offer and contain the whole plenitude offered by God. Yet Satan's way is so much simpler -- broader, easier, far more accessible. God makes so many demands, is so judgmental, so critical of your wretchedness, so unyielding, so unwilling to simply coddle you and fawn over your awesomeness. He's a real pain in the ass.

The matter would be all fine and good - simple and clear - I suppose, if Satan's way were sustainable - if one could simply frolic merrily, blithely on life's way and race off into either an eternity of happy self-involvement or an oblivion that made such living the only sensible course.

But, merrily for the elect and woefully for the damned, such vain pretenses are but mere folly and ruin, awaiting eternity to rip off the mask of self-delusion. A mask of self-delusion that can only exist in this passing temporal reality (in which manifest eternal truth is obscured by mortal blindness), which shall be rolled up and set aside upon your death.

The clock is ticking. Tick. Tock.

Tick. Tock.

However to pierce the veil of our mortal blindness, that thick wooly black covering of vain stupidity that prevents us from seeing the obvious eternal truth waiting for us but a moment past our inevitable deaths?

We must learn to realize that our world is upside down, inside out, and backwards. That requires the abandonment of our secular imaginations and the inception and cultivation of religious imaginations - sacred imaginations.

A secular imagination sees money and just sees money to spend.

A sacred imagination sees money and sees someone else's poverty. And then it further sees how spending your money on others can create a true abundance of peace and brotherhood, the satiety of which far exceeds the thrill of shopping or acquiring.

A secular imagination sees food and just sees food to eat.

A sacred imagination sees where the food comes from, how it is grown, who receives it, and who is excluded from it. It doesn't simply see what is set before it as a given, an answer without a question: it rather sees every situation as a question, an invitation to an ever deeper discernment of the interior reality of every person and situation, and what our proper role in that storm of events should, or might eventually, be.

A secular imagination sees power and just sees its extension, maintenance, and exercise.

A sacred imagination sees power as a possibility, an energy in the world that can, and indeed should, have a significance beyond the pretensions and psychoses of the bearer of that power. It doesn't see power as a toy, to rattle like a toddler, but rather sees power as a mission, a call, a responsibility, a charge to keep -- something that exists precisely for the benefit of those *over whom the power exists*, rather than something that exists only for the bearer of such power. In other words, a sacred imagination sees power in the same way that the Eternal Sovereign sees His Own Total Power.

A secular imagination sees a sexual partner and just sees an itch to scratch.

A sacred imagination sees beyond his or her own immediate human need and beholds the *other* person in the totality of their humanity. It considers the whole cascade of events that might occur because of that interaction, and weighs whether the *whole* course of that *other* person's life is bettered or worsened by it. It takes *responsibility* for the welfare of that other person, not simply for making sure that he or she isn't run over by a bus as they leave your apartment, but for considering the trajectory that the sex act has set him or her on. (Not to mention yourself.)

Naturally, I have perfectly and exactly fulfilled the imperatives of all these categories, each day of my blessed and all-holy life. It is by my ineffable grace that I condescend to shine my illustrious wisdom upon such mere mortals as yourselves. You're welcome.

Now, quick - *Jeopardy Pop Quiz!* This world leader best exemplifies the one-dimensional thinking of a totally secular imagination.

Moving along, there's an important distinction to be made.

If it was the case that one could simply spend one's money freely and selfishly, gorge oneself on every delicacy and delight, wield one's power like a toddler just for the fun of it, and rush pantless through a promenade of prostitutes and then, happily, race off into the Elysian Fields of playing golf with Arnold Palmer while sipping Arnold Palmers, or, alternatively, simply rot in a psychological oblivion of total nothingness, then practicing what I am calling the discipline of a sacred imagination would be mere altruism. Something done for others that did not benefit you.

But that is not what I am saying at all. It is, rather, quite the reverse of what I am saying.

I am saying that your whole spiritual destiny - your *own* happiness, your *own* plenitude, your *own* pleasure, your *own* gratification and satisfaction - is *entirely* bound up in how you treat other people, and, thus, necessarily how you *see* other people.

Secular modernity has sadly saddled us with the bogus notion of the “individual” - the lone atom of psychological consciousness aimlessly bounding through a blank vacuum of matter and void - with no moral origin, nature, or destiny.

History will find that secular modernity is a passing fad -- a craze of an adolescent civilization no more lasting or meaningful than the pet rock....and far less benign.

For your consideration, take it two ways. First, such a notion (such a conception of the nature of the human person) is totally at variance with the Bible. Such a notion would very happily fit the theology of the Satanic Bible, but not the Hebrew Bible or the New Testament. The Bible’s clear understanding of the human race is as a corporate reality - that all human beings inhere within an integral community of which each is necessarily a part, and out of which and through which and by which, the humanity of each originated, is validated, and finds its fulfillment.

Now take it from a materialist, Epicurean standpoint -- all of reality is a vast ocean of matter, writhing and swirling according to objective, though complex, natural laws which we are not only subject to, but out of which our whole existence arises, and in which our existence necessarily inheres and travels the course of its destiny. We are inextricably bound up in the Cosmos. We are the Cosmos. There is no escape. There is no hiving off of the self from the Whole.

To assert one’s independence from reality is not only unholy and unbiblical, it is to thumb one’s nose at the very nature of material reality. So whether you are a religious believer, as I am, or an ardent atheist, there can be no such thing as “the autonomy of the individual”.

There can be, and must be, the *dignity of the human person* -- without that we are all lost in an impenetrable darkness of nightmares and horrors. And that dignity of the human person will often align with the oft-stated understanding of the “autonomy of the individual”. For what kind of dignity can there be without rights, freedoms, prerogatives, boundaries, respect, courtesy, possibility, understanding, discourse, kindness, or opportunity?

But “autonomy” of an “individual” ? -- certainly no such thing exists save in the depths of Hell.

For what is autonomy but auto nomos - the rule of the self, each self being its own Cosmic law unto itself -- lived only by itself, only for itself, only with itself. And what is an individual but that which cannot be divided? But can a human person not be divided? Is the human person a true elemental atom, without parts? Is not rather the human person more akin to a wave, or an ocean, or the sea? For even the word soul originates from the Proto-Germanic *saiwaz*, or sea, and the Greek word *psyche*, which means mind or soul, originates from the Proto-Indo-European root *bhes*, which means to blow or breathe. Are these then merely the irrelevant inheritances of barbarian peoples best left forgotten? Or is it not rather a deep and enduring insight into the nature of the human person.

Does not the life of the human person inhere in the lives of other human persons, sharing, conflicting, taking its shape, setting a course, changing a course, all in a vast intercourse and exchange of human relationships?

Is not the self even within the confines of your own solitude a vast ocean waste of your memories, concerns, ideas, hopes, dreams, delusions, affections, conceptions, misconceptions, distractions, and fixations? Is any one part of all that, either placid sea or violent maelstrom, an indivisible individual - an atom, a billiard ball particle that you could drop in a bucket with others like it and hear *clink - clink - clink - clink*?

Rather, would not each and every part of you be a stream, wrung from your flesh, till at last every drop would pour out? And would not so many of those drops - indeed, even, perhaps, *all* of those drops be interpenetrated and admixed with the reality of all those you have ever known?

Even the ineradicable I, the viewer that stands behind the whole kaleidoscopic whirl of one's own spiritual revolutions and involutions, is not even that impossible without a Thou to behold? For what is an I, that which announces itself, without some *other* to whom the announcement is made?

Thus we can clearly see that the Hobbesian artificial man of the modern state and the autonomy of the individual is a hackneyed concept best dumped on the trash heap of history along with phlogiston, the ether, perpetual motion machines, mesmerism, and dialectical materialism.

Rather, the true north star for any society is the solidarity of the human community, grounded in the inviolable dignity of each human person. Such a conception of human society comports with every spiritual and material insight that has ever borne fruit or endured in the paths of life and human flourishing.

Even from the atheist perspective, it is derangement to hive off the rest of reality from your own personal perch within that reality. For, in doing so, you impoverish your own fleeting experience of that reality - leaving yourself with a wasted opportunity, a cigarette butt of an inner life no sooner lit than snubbed out.

And from my perspective, from the spiritual perspective, which is the actual truth, you are in a fine mess, a real fix, if you so derange yourself. For this time in this passing temporal world is a testing ground, to determine your final and total orientation - towards the Plenitude of the Holy Spirit, or the starvation and asphyxiation of the pit of self-preference. For in Plenitude, generosity and gratitude hold sway in a Eucharistic Feast of friendship and grace, where all share and have a place.

In the pit of self-preference, there is a chaos, an anarchy of the total vacuum of any plenitude, of any thing whatsoever - of any morsel of food, or any drop of water to cool your tongue, of any single molecule of oxygen to fill your lungs.

So, irony in this upside down world is simply the healthy righting of your spiritual sight - the cure to your spiritual blindness.

For, when you see yourself flush with cash, surrounded by every delicacy imaginable, in a position to exert power, and always capable of scratching every itch of every desire you have...step back, and consider: *Can this be right? Can this be real?*

Am I missing something?

What is really going on here?

Are you really possessed of all the goods of the earth, to prance and frolic and play and skip, while all the rest of humanity groans and weeps and is crushed under the burden of your frolicking?

Or, are, rather, you quite deranged? Quite deluded. Quite ill. Quite blind.

Are you not in a state of total derangement? That is, a condition of the soul in which your activity pronounces you sovereign and autonomous, while your humanity remains interdependent and interconnected.

Hasn't such a state of selfishness accomplished the infernal task of setting your way of life against your humanity? That is, putting in opposition your actions from your nature? Your mind from your soul?

Once entered into eternity, will not such an abomination of derangement forever persist in a ruination of humiliation and pain? How could such a backwards looking spirit, with his or her head spun around facing his or her posterior ever race off into the fulfillment of peace, plenitude, and joy?

That is why Jesus says that the poor and the sorrowful and the lowly and the merciful and the peaceful are blessed - that they're *lucky - luckier* than those who are rich and overjoyed and haughty and powerful and aggressive and violent.

Because this world is a snap of the fingers -- a vain nothing fast passing away, without significance, endurance, or meaning. Only we in the world, we spirits, shall endure forever -- all our works, our statuses, our wealth -- it all disappears. You lose it all. The *only* thing you keep in the end -- the only thing that remains, that endures -- is *who* you are, the health or the illness of your inner life.

And, of course, what matters is one's spiritual orientation: one can be quite poor and yet consumed by greed, pride, or vanity. What matters is the interior disposition of one's spirit. Now, of course, self-delusion will do you no good at the end. If you do have great wealth, and you hoard it all for yourself while a whole world in misery groans, do not for a second think that your yoga and meditation and happy self-image will avail you on the Last Day.

That is why St. Matthew recounts:

When he [Jesus] saw the crowds, he went up the mountain, and after he had sat down, his disciples came to him. He began to teach them, saying:

Blessed are the poor in spirit,
for theirs is the Kingdom of Heaven.

Blessed are they who mourn,
for they will be comforted.

Blessed are the meek,
for they will inherit the land.

Blessed are they who hunger and thirst for righteousness,
for they will be satisfied.

Blessed are the merciful,
for they will be shown mercy.

Blessed are the clean of heart,
for they will see God.

Blessed are the peacemakers,
for they will be called children of God.

Blessed are they who are persecuted for the sake of righteousness,
for theirs is the kingdom of heaven.

Blessed are you when they insult you and persecute you and utter every kind of evil against you [falsely] because of me. Rejoice and be glad, for your reward will be great in heaven. Thus they persecuted the prophets who were before you.

You are the salt of the earth. But if salt loses its taste, with what can it be seasoned? It is no longer good for anything but to be thrown out and trampled underfoot. You are the light of the world. A city set on a mountain cannot be hidden. Nor do they light a lamp and then put it under a bushel basket; it is set on a lampstand, where it gives light to all in the house. Just so, your light must shine before others, that they may see your good deeds and glorify your heavenly Father.

(Matthew 5:1-16)

End Times Insights

All the news I can fit before the End of the World

Before the end, the Vatican will be destroyed, along with the City of Rome.

I like the Vatican.

God, not so much.

God, in His aesthetic capacities, appreciates the beauty, elegance, grandeur, and spirituality of the Vatican's design.

But, you know -- it was paid for with, among other corruptions, the sale of indulgences, which is bad enough. And second, that sale of indulgences, along with Papal arrogance and intransigence, led to the Protestant Schism. Surely, the willfulness and self-love of the protestors and reformers *helped* make it a Schismatic Reformation, rather than become what it should have been: a reformation of the Church by martyrs such that the Church would have been reformed without tearing it apart. I suppose by the 16th century that the blood of Christians had cooled in their parlors such that they thought the theologian, rather than the martyr, was the true seed of the Church. Then again, there's blame all around for that -- for who doesn't bear substantial blame for such a confusion if not the Reign of the Scholastics? No one (who is sane) *wants* to be a martyr, but what kind of true Christian reformer says that it is better that the Flesh of Christ be sundered than his own flesh be torn apart? And, if that reformer should say that *he* - and *he alone or especially* - must survive in order to continue the reformation...then what kind of faith does that person have in the Holy Spirit of God?

Regardless, the Vatican is like a whitewashed tomb, which appears beautiful on the outside, but inside [in its historical genesis and the consequent effects that still ripple throughout history] are full of dead men's bones and every kind of filth. Every beautiful stone and every fine hall and every stunning piece of artwork was bought at the price of the tearing apart of Christian Unity, which is a beauty and grandeur and wonder far beyond any building.

In other words, the Church built a building while it let the Temple of Christ's Flesh be thrown down.

You do the eschatological math on that.

Admonitions

Justin Bieber: Get your shit together. Pronto.

[*Update*: Marked improvement, but still not quite there yet.]

To the Future: Do not attempt to avoid a passing and temporary death by denying Christ, and, in doing so, exchange eternal life for a perpetual and unbearable death: the second death: the death of the soul: eternal torment in Hell.

REMEMBER:

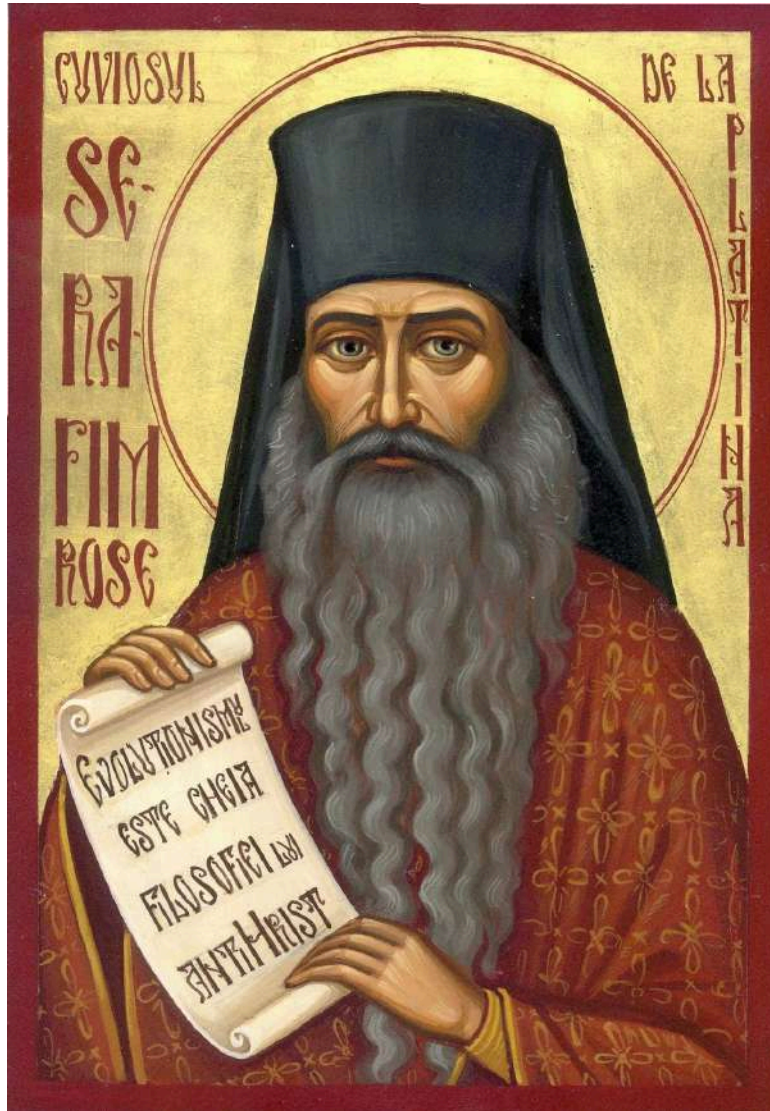
The world's promises are all lies.

You're lucky if they fail you in this life, because then you can turn your back on the world.

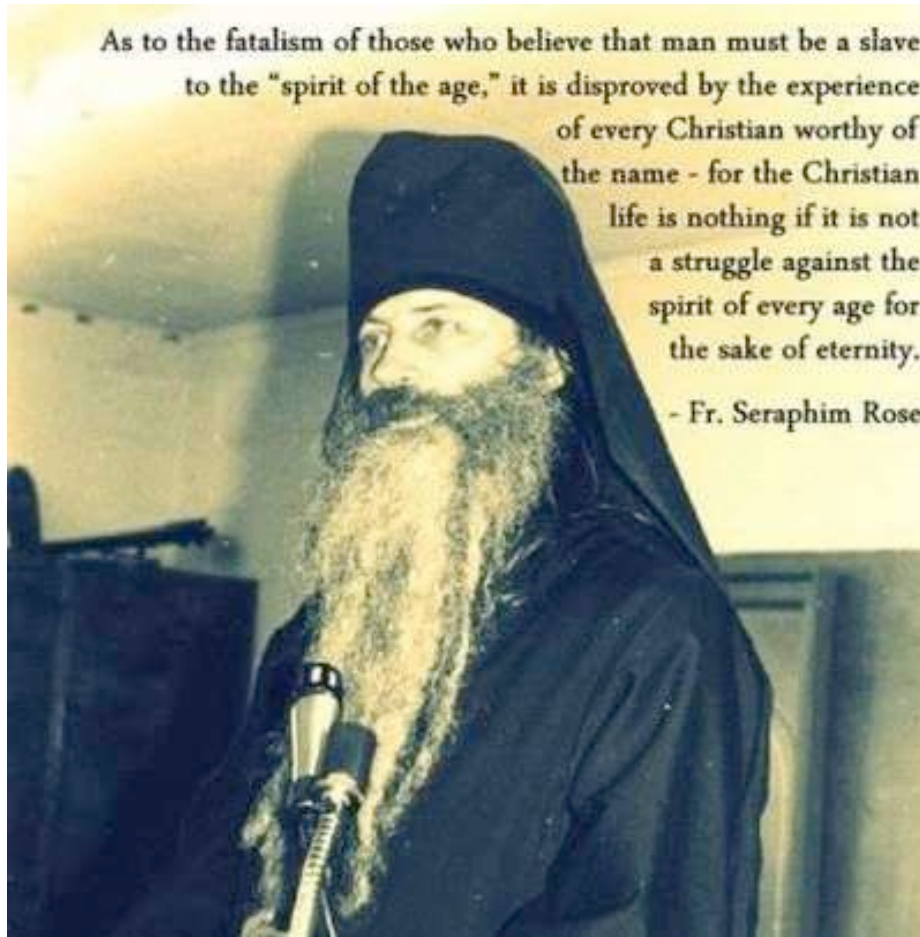
*But, if the world grants you your wishes in **this** world, beware, because you will lose everything, including yourself, in the **true world: the World to Come -- the Olam Ha-Ba.***

Petitions

[Father Seraphim Rose](#), pray for us.



<https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=rlcA91DwtvA>



Contra:

<https://cjshayward.com/seraphim/>

The Catholics and the Orthodox strike me as comparable, in many ways, to the British and the French. The British, because they developed a more criticalist culture (not actually criticalist, but *more* criticalist) had a genius for adapting themselves to their colonial populations and adapting their colonial populations to themselves. The French? Not so much.

Accordingly, the British Empire was a world powerhouse far more significant and powerful than the French Empire. The British Empire was the British Empire: it was, in many respects, a cohesive whole. Not as cohesive as the Roman Empire, certainly, but still in the same universe: or set of empires. The "French Empire" is a weird phrase (except when applied to France itself or the Napoleonic continental empire); the word "empire" does not belong capitalized. It is more accurate to speak of a French colonial empire.

“Going native” can have positive or negative connotations. To the purist, it is a sad, grisly affair. To the more intellectually promiscuous, going native is the path to nirvana, so to speak.

The French had a much harder time going native because they had such a strong and powerful worldview and culture. French Monarchism and French Republicanism are strong, heady, thoroughgoing elixirs, passionate like a French lover, hearty like a French wine.

Both British Monarchism and Republicanism were far more tepid affairs -- like an ambiguous lover - sometimes wan, sometimes fierce - or a tasty tea -- often rich in flavor, usually thin in texture.

That is why the reversion back to Monarchy in France was such an outrageous orgy of violence, and the Monarchy never took firm root again. France, once it had had its lovers' murder-suicide, couldn't easily go back to its old life.

Britain, after also killing its King, after a decade of Republicanism, shrugged its shoulders and asked for the executed King's son to return as if nothing much had happened. It was as if the lovers had left each other for a year, had sex with everything in creation, and then returned to each other one day and resumed their marital life as if nothing had happened.

That ambiguity made the British Mind and character far more flexible, adaptable, supple and subtle. It had certain standards -- strong ones -- but they could bend and flex, twist and turn as needed.

The purist always condemns the pragmatist for heresy and infidelity. The purist's fidelity doesn't permit the purist from adapting his means to his ends. The means and the ends must always be perfect, clear, and *rigid*.

Yet that very rigidity is so ineffective, except among the purists and those who are attracted, in the end, to purism.

There is a point at which pragmatism becomes nihilism, and there is a point at which purism becomes a sclerosis as crippling as Lou Gehrig's Disease (ALS).

Certainly, there must be a happy medium -- or maybe an uncomfortable medium -- between nihilism and ALS. The purist always declares that this is a false choice: fidelity is fidelity. And yet, like any extremist, there will always be a more extreme extremist to accuse the less extreme extremist of infidelity: of heterodoxy or even heresy.

So, even in the extremist, even in the purist, there is always a pragmatism operating -- it is simply the choice of the extremist about what to set as the standard of the pure. Of course, the purist will not *call* this pragmatism. But it is a form of pragmatism. The purist will believe that he is not *adjusting* his idea of the pure to practice. He has merely successfully *identified* the true standard of the pure.

Not to be a sophist or conventionalist about it: but then why do so many purists claw at each other, with a wild melee of accusations of insufficient purism (or ultra-purism) being flung about?

The more pragmatic mind, if an essentialist and not a nihilist, if devout and not un-devout or anti-devout, will always be sensitive to the true standard of the pure. Yet he will (1) always be more humble about *what* precisely this true standard of the pure is, and (2) trust in history and

history's God that whatever practical adjustments are made to adapt the means to the ends, to ensure the success of the truth, will themselves be adjusted by the Lord of History, Christ Jesus.

The true north star of Gentile Christianity is, not surprisingly, St. Paul, Apostle to the Gentiles. St. Paul was all things to all people, and yet was, at the very same time and precisely *because* of that, the most perfect, exact, pure Christian. Gentile Christianity must emulate St. Paul. It must be neither Catholic nor Orthodox, as such, and very much both Catholic and Orthodox. Gentile Christianity must become a totally Pauline Christianity.

A MESSAGE TO TOM CRUISE

**CHRISTIANITY IS THE TRUE
SPIRITUAL MECHANICS**

***JOIN THE CHURCH OF CHRIST
SAVE THE WORLD***

Jesus says, “Tom, come follow Me.”

We could use your energy.

Shout Out

https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=_WmojBYUHFY

<https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=hqpPUDgOlms>



Spiritual Exercises

1. Embracing God's Will

Your Way, O Lord, is Perfect. Pleasing. And True.

When you are tempted by Satan to sin -- to steal, embezzle, lie, plot against another person in your school, workplace or social group, swear, worship the idolatrous way of self-help, astrology, and pseudoscience/pseudo-spirituality, not go to Church, disobey your parents, disrespect your parents, fume with anger, commit adultery, watch pornography, masturbate, go to a strip club, have premarital sex of any kind (and oral, anal, and handjobs are forms of sex, so we're perfectly clear. On the Day of Judgment, rehearsing that, "President Clinton said it wasn't sex," won't do you any good.), or envy or covet something that belongs to someone else but that does not or cannot belong to you --- remember to praise the perfect and pleasing Way of God's Will.

Remember and believe and instill into yourself, your soul, that all your plans and projects and purposes are imperfect -- that they are but glimmers and intimations, at most intuitions, of the Perfect and Sovereign Will of the LORD - the ineffably grand and majestic SPIRIT OF TOTAL PLENITUDE in whom there is not a shadow of wrong.

Realize that *every* situation you are in - that *every* situation you have ever been in, no matter how horrible or destructive - is ultimately there to make you stronger and more full of grace. And, the difficult truth (the hard saying) is that the more wretched the circumstance, the more laden and full and pregnant with grace that circumstance is. All you need to activate the grace implicit in (pregnant in) the difficulty (or even horror) is trust in the LORD: trust that, as St. Paul says in Romans 8:28-39:

We know that ALL THINGS work for good for those who love God, who are called according to his purpose. For those he foreknew he also predestined to be conformed to the image of his Son, so that he might be the firstborn among many brothers. And those he predestined he also called; and those he called he also justified; and those he justified he also glorified.

What then shall we say to this? If God is for us, who can be against us? He who did not spare his own Son but handed him over for us all, how will he not also give us everything else along with him? Who will bring a charge against God's chosen ones? It is God who acquits us. Who will condemn? [No one, because there is no authority above or aside from God, regardless of what Satan, any human being, or any human authority may vainly, arrogantly, and lyingly say.] It is Christ Jesus who died, rather, was raised, who also is at the right hand of God, who indeed intercedes for us. What will separate us from the love of Christ? Will anguish, or distress, or persecution, or famine, or nakedness, or peril, or the sword? As it is written:

For your sake we are being slain all the day;

we are looked upon as sheep to be slaughtered.

No, in all these things **we conquer *overwhelmingly* through him** who loved *us*. **For I am convinced that neither death, nor life, nor angels, nor principalities, nor present things, nor future things, nor powers, nor height, nor depth, nor any other creature will be able to separate us from the love of God in Christ Jesus our Lord.**

Realize that God's Will is not meant to be a burden to crush you, but is meant to be a burden to benefit you - to train you in His Ways, so that you might first be His servant, and then, at the last, attain the eternal and everlasting glory of being His adopted son, one among many brothers and sisters, loved not in the meager fashion of human stepfathers, but loved with the same ecstatic, all-embracing love that the Father has for the Son, the Risen Christ.

As Hebrews 12:1 - 13:21 teaches:

God our Father:

Therefore, since we are surrounded by so great a cloud of witnesses, let us rid ourselves of every burden and sin that clings to us and persevere in running the race that lies before us while keeping our eyes fixed on Jesus, the leader and perfecter of faith. For the sake of the joy that lay before him he endured the cross, despising its shame, and has taken his seat at the right of the throne of God. Consider how he endured such opposition from sinners, in order that you may not grow weary and lose heart. In your struggle against sin you have not yet resisted to the point of shedding blood. You have also forgotten the exhortation addressed to you as sons: "My son, do not disdain the discipline of the Lord or lose heart when reprov'd by him; for whom the Lord loves, he disciplines; he scourges every son he acknowledges." Endure your trials as "discipline"; God treats you as sons. For what "son" is there whom his father does not discipline? If you are without discipline, in which all have shared, you are not sons but bastards. Besides this, we have had our earthly fathers to discipline us, and we respected them. Should we not then submit all the more to the Father of spirits and live? They disciplined us for a short time as seemed right to them, but he does so for our benefit, in order that we may share his holiness. At the time, all discipline seems a cause not for joy but for pain, yet later it brings the peaceful fruit of righteousness to those who are trained by it. So strengthen your drooping hands and your weak knees. Make straight paths for your feet, that what is lame may not be dislocated but healed.

Penalties of Disobedience.

Strive for peace with everyone, and for that holiness without which no one will see the Lord. See to it that no one be deprived of the grace of God, that no bitter root spring up and cause trouble, through which many may become defiled, that no one be an immoral or profane person like Esau, who sold his birthright for a single meal. For you know that later, when he wanted to inherit his father's blessing, he was rejected because

he found no opportunity to change his mind, even though he sought the blessing with tears. You have not approached that which could be touched and a blazing fire and gloomy darkness and storm and a trumpet blast and a voice speaking words such that those who heard begged that no message be further addressed to them, for they could not bear to hear the command: "If even an animal touches the mountain, it shall be stoned." Indeed, so fearful was the spectacle that Moses said, "I am terrified and trembling." No, you have approached Mount Zion and the city of the living God, the heavenly Jerusalem, and countless angels in festal gathering, and the assembly of the firstborn enrolled in heaven, and God the judge of all, and the spirits of the just made perfect, and Jesus, the mediator of a new covenant, and the sprinkled blood that speaks more eloquently than that of Abel. See that you do not reject the one who speaks. For if they did not escape when they refused the one who warned them on earth, how much more in our case if we turn away from the one who warns from heaven. His voice shook the earth at that time, but now he has promised, "I will once more shake not only earth but heaven." That phrase, "once more," points to [the] removal of shaken, created things, so that what is unshaken may remain. Therefore, we who are receiving the unshakable kingdom should have gratitude, with which we should offer worship pleasing to God in reverence and awe. For our God is a consuming fire.

Let mutual love continue. Do not neglect hospitality, for through it some have unknowingly entertained angels. Be mindful of prisoners as if sharing their imprisonment, and of the ill-treated as of yourselves, for you also are in the body. Let marriage be honored among all and the marriage bed be kept undefiled, for God will judge the immoral and adulterers. Let your life be free from love of money but be content with what you have, for he has said, "I will never forsake you or abandon you." Thus we may say with confidence: "The Lord is my helper, and I will not be afraid. What can anyone do to me?"

Remember your leaders who spoke the word of God to you. Consider the outcome of their way of life and imitate their faith. Jesus Christ is the same yesterday, today, and forever. Do not be carried away by all kinds of strange teaching. It is good to have our hearts strengthened by grace and not by foods, which do not benefit those who live by them. We have an altar from which those who serve the tabernacle have no right to eat. The bodies of the animals whose blood the high priest brings into the sanctuary as a sin offering are burned outside the camp. Therefore, Jesus also suffered outside the gate, to consecrate the people by his own blood.

Let us then go to him outside the camp, bearing the reproach that he bore. For here we have no lasting city, but we seek the one that is to come. Through him then let us continually offer God a sacrifice of praise, that is, the fruit of lips that confess his name. Do not neglect to do good and to share what you have; God is pleased by sacrifices of that kind. Obey your leaders and defer to them, for they keep watch over you and will have to give an account, that they may fulfill their task with joy and not with sorrow, for

that would be of no advantage to you. Pray for us, for we are confident that we have a clear conscience, wishing to act rightly in every respect. I especially ask for your prayers that I may be restored to you very soon. May the God of peace, who brought up from the dead the great shepherd of the sheep by the blood of the eternal covenant, Jesus our Lord, furnish you with all that is good, that you may do his will. May he carry out in you what is pleasing to him through Jesus Christ, to whom be glory forever and ever.

Amen.

Let us repeat:

Therefore, since we are surrounded by so great a cloud of witnesses, let us rid ourselves of every burden and sin that clings to us and persevere in running the race that lies before us while keeping our eyes fixed on Jesus, the leader and perfecter of faith. For the sake of the joy that lay before him he endured the cross, despising its shame, and has taken his seat at the right of the throne of God.

Your Way, O Lord, is Perfect. Pleasing. And True.

2. Look in the Mirror

Every day when you look in the mirror when you get up -- and, even better, every time you look in the mirror, repeat this mantra: "I am not a good man (or woman). Jesus Christ was the good man for me."

3. A Parable on Discernment

Once upon a time there was a woman - a beautiful, sexy woman married to a man. The woman had a rival, a sneaky impostor capable of looking just like the woman and impersonating her quite closely. Yet, there were certain marks and personality characteristics, and, most importantly, certain secrets that only the woman and the man knew about.

The man knew that his woman's rival constantly schemed to bed the man through her deceptions, and the woman constantly exhorted the man that this rival was everywhere, constantly on the prowl, constantly trying to get him to slip up.

This is an unfortunate situation.

But then again, this sinful world is an unfortunate situation. It's not Disneyland, it's a war zone in the spiritual struggle of the War in Heaven.

Now, if the man were to have sex with what he thought was his woman without making sure that the person put in front of him was, in fact, his woman, what could be said for him? If he was at the supermarket, and a woman looking exactly like his woman showed up and said, "Hey baby, let's do it in your car," shouldn't he ask her, "Okay -- tell me a secret that only my woman and I would know." ?

If he was at work, and a woman looking like his woman showed up, and said, "Hey, baby, you've been working too hard, let me slip under the desk and help you out," shouldn't he again test the woman: examining her for the distinguishing marks, examining her for the telltale personality traits, and again testing her on her knowledge of the couple's secrets?

Of course.

If, as he knows and as his woman constantly warns, the rival will stop at nothing to bed the man and could be anywhere, shouldn't the man even test his woman before he sleeps with her in his own bed?

Of course.

Now, if he failed to test a woman looking like his woman -- if he just decided to make love without bothering to examine whether she was actually his woman or was really the rival impostor, what excuse could he have?

He didn't know that an impostor was after him? He knew. And if he had forgotten, his woman told him all the time.

He was tired or lustful? If the man knew that the rival carried AIDS he would surely always test the woman presented to him. His failure to test was not a result of weakness as such, but was rooted in his innate self-preference. Now, we could imagine scenarios where he really would be pushed past the breaking point -- if he were in solitary confinement for long periods of time or under conditions of torture or dying in a hospital bed of cancer. And in those scenarios, the enormity and extremity of the situation would certainly mitigate the man's guilt. But then again, what if we supposed the rival to have a disease that would instantaneously subject the man to an immediate and agonizing death. Then, even in prison or dying of cancer, we would figure that (usually) the man would test for the possible presence of the rival.

He simply forgot, or neglected to administer the test, or he was too stressed by work or other obligations? Then clearly, his marriage is not his first and overriding commitment.

In all this, we can more clearly see God's answer to unthinking sinfulness -- the kind of living that just proceeds from work to the mall to the strip club to the television set to the porn website to the bar to bed to a lover back to work back to the mall back to a lover back to the bar back to the porno back to the television and back to work again.

God's answer when they inevitably, upon dying, fall off the cliff of their mortality into an eternal hell is: *What did you think was going to happen?! DON'T PLAY DUMB! DON'T TOY*

WITH ME! I'M NOT YOUR FIFTH-GRADE TEACHER! I WON'T ACCEPT THAT SATAN ATE YOUR HOMEWORK!

For clarity, the man is the Christian (or any human being), the woman is God, and the impostor is Satan. The need to test is the need for every person to discern whether his or her acts, and the orientations of his or her heart, and the choices one makes in the situations that life presents them with, are aligned with God, or not.

If you have a Christian background, where the call to Christ was a real possibility in your life, you'll be hard-pressed to cough up a convincing excuse on Judgment Day, and the Advocate, the Spirit, will not be able to conjure up evidence on your behalf out of thin air.

Your parents, maybe your teachers, maybe your siblings and your grandparents, your Sunday school instructors, Bibles hanging around the house, illuminated signs with cutesy one-liners in the yards of churches -- they all said *DANGER! DANGER! DANGER! DANGER! DANGER! DANGER!*

And you said: *I have better things to do. I can't be bothered to take heed of the warnings, I can't be hassled to pick up a simple book and just try to read it.*

I have homework.

I have my boyfriend.

I have my girlfriend.

I have the beach.

I have prom.

I have my friends.

I have the mall.

I have tests.

I have my car.

I have my video games.

I have college admissions.

I have work.

I have to wait tables to pay rent and afford my car.

I have final exams.

I have job interviews.

I have to have sex.

I have to drink.

I have to have sex.

I have to sleep.

I have to drink.

I have to work.

I have to have sex.

I have to take care of my children.

I have to do my projects or my boss will yell at me.

I have to climb the corporate ladder.
I have to pay rent.
I have to make more money.
I have to become famous.
I have to stay famous.
I have to make more money.
I need to manage my money.
I need to get a new job.
I need to have sex.
I need to go on vacation.
I need to drink.
I need to have sex.
I need to take care of the kids.
I need to fix my marriage.
I need to survive my divorce.
I have to date.
I have to get remarried.
I need to make partner.
I need to get a new career.
I need to plan my retirement.
I need to go to the doctor.
I need to have surgery.
I need to call my accountant.
I need to call my lawyer.
I need to plan my funeral.
I need to watch television.
I need to sleep.
I need to rest.
I need to go to the doctor.
I need to take my pills.
I need to sleep.
I need to try to possibly have sex.
I need to sleep.
I need to watch television.
I need to go to the doctor.
I need to have surgery.
I need to die.

In *all of that*, did you say “I have to read the Bible.”

?

Did you say, "I have to pray."

?

"I have to be humble enough to entertain the possibility that God is real, and my irreligion and/or disbelief is folly."

?

"Perhaps my 'I'm spiritual, but not religious' isn't going to cut it on Judgment Day."

?

"Perhaps there really is a Judgment Day."

No.....*Nooooo*, of course not. Because you were too busy with keeping your job, or getting your kids off to school or into college or into Harvard Pre-Kindergarten, or pondering the latest sexual act you'd like to try, or familiarizing yourself with your favorite selections from the liquor store or the bar. You were watching *Desperate Housewives* or *Grey's Anatomy* or MMA or the Food Network or NASCAR or wrestling or skimming through blogs or watching *Game of Thrones* or *Downton Abbey* or *Antiques Roadshow* or reading the *Journal of the American Medical Association* or listening to NPR or reading *National Review* or watching porn.

Too busy.....much too busy to take heed of all the warnings, bought with the precious blood of martyrs and handed down diligently and faithfully from age to age by the Church.

And then you expect the Advocate, the Holy Spirit, to conjure up some evidence on your behalf out of thin air. You expect the Great Judge of all Creation, the Lord of the Cosmos, and the Eternal King, who is consumed and alight with the raging power of the All-Righteousness of God, to see the Advocate (the Holy Spirit) without any evidence on your behalf and simply say, "Whatever my brahs, come on in -- the strip club is hoppin', the booze is flowing, and it's all day on the links with Arnold Palmer while sipping Arnold Palmers. My eternal justice doesn't matter, because I'm not the ETERNAL LORD OF THE UNIVERSE, I'm JC, I'm hip, I'm fly, I'm getting high - justice? Schmustice. It ain't no thing but a chicken wing. Because I'm JC, and *I'm all about YOU!*

"I'm the customer service at a casino - *EVERYTHING IS COMPED!* Your room - COMPED! Your meals - COMPED! Your whores - COMPED! Your booze - COMPED! The roulette table is waiting for you, and you're a billionaire!!!"

The Devil's Advocate
The Fate of Eddie Barzoon

<https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=OurFvJ0Faxg>

What racing off a cliff into the Abyss of Abaddon looks like

<https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=1Xcs3vElBhA>

What you busy yourselves with

<https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=2zBWjlkKDpA>

https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=n_adgG8Ba2Q

https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=uP6TpeV19_c

The Result

<https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=GPjWQHBl6ks>

Billionaire

Travie McCoy featuring Bruno Mars

<https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=8aRor905cCw>

Zach Galifianakis

<https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=kjewslggfHs>

Aw, Snap

or

The Art of Observation

<https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=gIUCqqFpkug>

The point is simply this: If you don't come from a Christian background, that's one discussion, which we discuss elsewhere.

But, if you come from a Christian background, you're in a serious situation. If you have in fact thought about these things...Have you read the Bible? If you have read the Bible...have you prayed? If you are an atheist who has not tried, over decades, to seriously attempt to pray, in some way, even five or ten minutes a day, you cannot complain that God never revealed Himself to you. And God will not be impressed by your argument that your career or other endeavors prevented you from even giving him an ear for five minutes.

But, if you are nominally Christian or 'spiritual but not religious' or like to think that you can invent your own Jesus and your own God, you need to *discern*. You need to really try to tease out what is the action of God in your life (and what is the call of God for you), and what things in your life are really your sins, the places in your life that are Satan's temptations, which you have the power to either succumb to, or resist.

So, here I make a modest proposal. Which.....is actually, really, a very modest proposal. Take the Bible. Buy one if you have to. Search for it, and click on it, and add it to your cart on Amazon along with your Uggs or Blu-rays or shirts or dresses or \$100 candles or edible handcuffs (not that there's anything wrong with that).

<https://www.amazon.com/>

Then, read one chapter from the Gospels each weekday. Read one chapter from the Epistles each weekend.

Take five minutes each day to sit quietly and be open to the possibility that God may speak to you.

If He tells you to do anything destructive, see a doctor.

Attend a church service at least once a month.

If you cannot even bother yourself to do that, why should God bother to shower the riches of His Son's eternal sacrifice upon you? How would He even be able to do so?

The Ten Commandments & Idolatry

The First Commandment forbids idolatry. The Tenth Commandment forbids coveting. Idolatry and covetousness form a loop, a lattice, a matrix, out of which all sin proceeds. Sin is distance from God, caused by disobedience to God's Will. One disobeys God's Will because one does not trust God. A failure to trust God is caused by a failure to love God above all else. One only fails to trust God because he or she loves something other than God, and he or she cannot be sure that God will deliver that thing to him or her.

Idolatry is to worship something other than God. Covetousness is to love something more than God (and His Will, which amounts to the same thing). To love is to worship, to worship is to love.

You put your trust in things other than God because you love other things more than God. And you love other things more than God because you trust them more than God to bring you happiness.

When you fail to trust that God is Good (and hence that God is God), you fall into idolatry, and become embroiled in sin.

When you fail to love God more than any other thing, you fall into covetousness, which requires the idolatry of what you covet, leading you to become embroiled in sin.

To avoid the latticework of idolatry and covetousness, you must open yourself to trust in God and actively scorn valuing anything above God.

Excellent Sayings to Demonstrate How Wise, Pithy & Artful am I

1. Self-reference is the sign and symptom of self-preference.

West Side Story

I Feel Pretty

<https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=RgHtBxOs4qw>

This is the End

Take Your Panties Off

https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=2luoAWRI_8o

Life is like a box of chocolates

<https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=Cugsup-Ylzg>

https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Self-reference_effect

It has been proposed that this “positivity shift” may occur because older adults put more emphasis on emotion regulation goals than do young adults, with older adults having a greater motivation to derive emotional meaning from life and to maintain positive affect.[18]

(I suppose there was only one such saying.....)

Advice

1. Do *not* follow the way of “Catholics” who claim that they are more Catholic than the pope and that their “church” is the “real” church, not that one in Rome. Such people are a deranged form of protestants, only without any grace, for they claim to speak for “Catholicism” when, actually, they are the most sinful and obnoxious schismatics and heretics. You’d be better off at a Greek Orthodox Church, even a Baptist or Methodist Church. I’m talking about the Society of Saint Pius X, obviously, and all other associated or aligned groups.

Actually, if we can just declare ourselves pope and say that the real Church isn’t the church, but the one made up on our websites is the real church....

Then I declare myself Pope Awesome to the Infinity.

Move over, Frank, I’m moving in....

2. Never go to a church that has a pastor with a television show. Just as a rule of thumb. Never watch a televangelist. Never read a televangelist’s books. Instead, read the Bible. And better yet, invite some friends and neighbors together into your home to read the Bible.
3. I like Greek Orthodoxy, though I am a Catholic. Although, I probably don’t know enough about Orthodoxy to know what I wouldn’t like about it. That’s not really advice....actually, it’s more of a note to self.

Moving along.....

4. Ignore Oprah. Stop buying her products, visiting her websites, and watching her television shows.
5. Stop giving money to conservative “causes” and websites. If you really want to support a conservative cause, write a check to the Republican National Committee, or to an actual campaign committee of a Republican candidate. All the other crap -- websites, direct mail, their awful books and radio shows and television shows and their sleazy, self-serving, self-promoting, blood-sucking, festering nonsense - is just pure fascism on parade. The RNC is pretty fascist too these days, though.
6. Never read a book by Ann Coulter that has Ann Coulter’s image on it. Only ever read a book by Ann Coulter again if it has no images on its cover. And, preferably, if it receives an imprimatur from me.
7. Stop buying “thrillers” -- James Patterson, Dan Brown, John Grisham, you know the drill. And stop buying young adult fiction if you’re not a young adult!! If you’re over 30, grow up!

8. We really don't have the time any more for this kind of inane illiteracy. Here's your reading list: The Bible, Plato, Aristotle, Augustine, Aquinas (if you can), Dante, Hobbes, John Locke, George Berkeley, David Hume, Mark Twain, Walt Whitman, Shakespeare, Cervantes.

9. Listen to Jesus

I mean, Stephen King:

- Don't forget that you're a physical being with a power-plant to take care of and maintain. I'm talking about the bod under the blue gown. I'm not going to say that we're a lazy, overweight society, a fast-food eatin', SUV-ridin', soda-guzzlin', beer-chuggin', TV-watchin', size-XL-wearin', walk-don't-run generation...except I guess I just did.
- Don't forget that you're a mental being, with a humongous trillion gigawatt hard-drive at your disposal. Most of you have been running it like crazy for four years, moaning about all the books you've had to read, the papers you've had to write, and the tests you've had to take. Yet thanks to that hard-drive and about a thousand cups of coffee, you made it. Just...let me put it this way. I can find out where you live. I have my resources. And if I show up at your house ten years from now and find nothing in your living room but The Reader's Digest, nothing on your bedroom night-table but the newest [Dan Brown](#) novel, and nothing in your bathroom but Jokes for the John, I'll chase you down to the end of your driveway and back, screaming "Where are your books? You graduated college ten years ago, so how come there are no damn books in your house? Why are you living on the intellectual equivalent of Kraft Macaroni and Cheese?" I sound like I'm joking about this, but I'm not. You've got a brain under the cap you're wearing. Take care of the damned thing. Try to remember there's more to life than [Vin Diesel](#) and [Tom Cruise](#). It wouldn't kill you to go to a movie once a month that has subtitles on the bottom of the screen. You can read them, you went to college, right?

10. Listen to Henri Nouwen

- a. <https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=SFWfYpd0F18>

11. Read Henri Nouwen's books

a. Books by Nouwen[[edit](#)]

- [*Intimacy: Pastoral Psychological Essays*](#) (1st ed.). Notre Dame, Indiana: Fides. 1969. [OCLC 301590220](#).
- [*Creative Ministry*](#) (1st ed.). Garden City, N.Y.: Doubleday. 1971. [OCLC 152930](#).

- [*Pray to Live. Thomas Merton: Contemplative Critic*](#) (1st ed.). Notre Dame, Ind.: Fides Publishers. 1972 [Published in Dutch 1970]. [ISBN 9780819005809](#).
- [*With Open Hands*](#) (1st ed.). Notre Dame, Ind.: Ave Maria Press. 1972 [Published in Dutch 1971]. [ISBN 9780877930402](#).
- [*The Wounded Healer: Ministry in Contemporary Society*](#) (1st ed.). Garden City, N.Y.: Doubleday. 1972. [ISBN 9780385028561](#).
- [*Aging: The Fulfillment of Life*](#). With Walter J. Gaffney (1st ed.). Garden City, N.Y.: Doubleday. 1974. [ISBN 9780385009188](#).
- [*Out of Solitude: Three Meditations on the Christian Life*](#) (1st ed.). Notre Dame, Ind.: Ave. Maria Press. 1974. [ISBN 9780877930723](#).
- [*Reaching Out: Three Movements of the Spiritual Life*](#) (1st ed.). Garden City, N.Y.: Doubleday. 1975. [ISBN 9780385032124](#).
- [*Genesee Diary: Report from a Trappist Monastery*](#) (1st ed.). Garden City, N.Y.: Doubleday. 1976. [ISBN 9780385113687](#).
- [*The Living Reminder: Service and Prayer in Memory of Jesus Christ*](#) (1st ed.). New York: Seabury Press. 1977. [ISBN 9780866839150](#).
- [*Clowning in Rome : Reflections on Solitude, Celibacy, Prayer, and Contemplation*](#) (1st ed.). Garden City, N.Y.: Image Books. 1979. [ISBN 9780385151290](#).
- [*In Memoriam*](#) (1st ed.). Notre Dame, Ind.: Ave Maria Press. 1980. [ISBN 9780877931973](#).
- [*Making All Things New: An Invitation to the Spiritual Life*](#) (1st ed.). San Francisco: Harper & Row. 1981. [ISBN 9780060663261](#).
- [*The Way of the Heart: Desert Spirituality and Contemporary Ministry*](#) (1st ed.). New York: Seabury Press. 1981. [ISBN 9780816404797](#).
- [*A Cry For Mercy: Prayers from the Genesee*](#) (1st ed.). Garden City, N.Y.: Doubleday. 1981. [ISBN 9780385175074](#).

- [*Compassion: A Reflection on the Christian Life*](#). With Donald P. McNeill, Douglas A. Morrison and Joel Filártiga (1st ed.). Garden City, N.Y.: Doubleday. 1982. [ISBN 9780385176996](#).
- [*A Letter of Consolation*](#) (1st ed.). San Francisco: Harper & Row. 1982. [ISBN 9780060663278](#).
- [*Gracias! A Latin American Journal*](#) (1st ed.). San Francisco: Harper & Row. 1983. [ISBN 9780060663186](#).
- [*Love in a Fearful Land: A Guatemalan Story*](#) (1st ed.). Notre Dame, IN: Ave Maria Press. 1985. [ISBN 9780877932949](#).
- [*Lifesigns: Intimacy, Fecundity and Ecstasy in Christian Perspective*](#) (1st ed.). Garden City, N.Y.: Doubleday. 1986. [ISBN 9780385236270](#).
- [*Letters to Marc About Jesus: Spiritual Living in a Material World*](#) (1st ed.). San Francisco: Harper & Row. 1988 [Published in Dutch 1987]. [ISBN 9780060663155](#).
- [*Behold the Beauty of the Lord: Praying With Icons*](#) (1st ed.). Notre Dame, Ind.: Ave Maria Press. 1987. [ISBN 9780877933564](#).
- [*The Road to Daybreak: A Spiritual Journey*](#) (1st ed.). New York: Doubleday. 1988.
- [*In the Name of Jesus: Reflections on Christian Leadership*](#) (1st ed.). New York: Crossroad. 1989. [ISBN 9780824512590](#).
- [*Heart Speaks to Heart: Three Prayers to Jesus*](#) (1st ed.). Notre Dame, Ind.: Ave Maria Press. 1989. [ISBN 9780877933939](#).
- [*Walk with Jesus: Stations of the Cross*](#). Illustrations by Helen David (1st ed.). Maryknoll, N.Y.: Orbis Books. 1990. [ISBN 9780883446669](#).
- [*Beyond the Mirror: Reflections on Death and Life*](#) (1st ed.). New York: Crossroad. 1990. [ISBN 9780824510077](#).
- [*Show Me the Way: Readings for Each Day of Lent*](#) (1st ed.). New York: Crossroad. 1992. [ISBN 9780824510299](#).

- [*Life of the Beloved: Spiritual Living in a Secular World*](#) (1st ed.). New York: Crossroad. 1992. [ISBN 9780824511845](#).
- [*The Return of the Prodigal Son: A Meditation on Fathers, Brothers and Sons*](#) (1st ed.). London: Darton, Longman & Todd. 1992. [ISBN 9780232520026](#).
- [*Jesus & Mary: Finding Our Sacred Center*](#) (1st ed.). Cincinnati, OH: St. Anthony Messenger Press. 1993. [ISBN 9780867161892](#).
- [*Our Greatest Gift: A Meditation on Dying and Caring*](#) (1st ed.). San Francisco, Calif.: HarperSanFrancisco. 1994. [ISBN 9780060663551](#).
- [*Here and Now: Living in the Spirit*](#) (1st ed.). New York: Crossroad. 1994. [ISBN 9780824514099](#).
- [*With Burning Hearts: A Meditation on the Eucharistic Life*](#) (1st ed.). Maryknoll, N.Y.: Orbis Books. 1994. [ISBN 9780883449844](#).
- [*The Path of Power*](#) (1st ed.). New York: Crossroad. 1995. [ISBN 9780824520038](#).
- [*The Path of Waiting*](#) (1st ed.). New York: Crossroad. 1995. [ISBN 9780824520007](#).
- [*The Path of Freedom*](#) (1st ed.). New York: Crossroad. 1995. [ISBN 9780824520014](#).
- [*The Inner Voice of Love: Journey Through Anguish to Freedom*](#) (1st ed.). New York: Doubleday. 1996. [ISBN 9780385483483](#).
- [*Can You Drink the Cup?*](#) (1st ed.). Notre Dame, Ind.: Ave. Maria Press. 1996. [ISBN 9780877935810](#).

Posthumous releases^[edit]

- [*Adam: God's Beloved*](#) (1st ed.). Maryknoll, N.Y.: Orbis Books. 1997. [ISBN 9781570759949](#).
- [*Bread for the Journey: A Daybook of Wisdom and Faith*](#) (1st ed.). San Francisco: Harper SanFrancisco. 1997. [ISBN 9780060663599](#).

- [*Sabbatical Journey: The Diary of His Final Year*](#). New York: Crossroad. 1998. [ISBN 9780824518783](#).
- Earnshaw, Gabrielle, ed. (2016). [*Love, Henri : letters on the spiritual life*](#). New York: Convergent. [ISBN 9781101906354](#).

HOOR OF POWER

Actually, I love this homily by Father Nouwen.

<https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=ED041AnWv3o>

Wait.....so does that make me the face and voice of “Negative” Christianity?

Mind over Matter

<https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=y8lka1FYG90>

Fair enough.

12. I don't think Sean Hannity should necessarily be sentenced to death, but probably life without parole.
13. If you can, stop watching television. Really. It's not helping you. It's rotting your mind and spirit, making you a dumpster of inane nonsense ready to be poured over into Hell.
14. If you're over 25 years old, and you're not going with children, never see a movie that doesn't at least have an R rating. All the rest of that garbage is worthless, puerile nonsense and is rotting your soul.
15. HBO is more dazzling than substantive. Stop watching so much of it.
16. Go to a museum. Go to a park. Watch a sunset. Get up early and watch a sunrise. Make sure you do at least one of these things each week.
17. A faith that is only personal, only in your mind, never in your mouth, never in the public square, never active in politics, economics, culture, the sciences, the arts - every aspect of human life - is exactly what Satan wants, and is exactly the kind of faith that might just merit you Hell.
18. The point of “religion” is not an experience of the mind: it is the attainment of the salvation of your eternal soul through the divine office of the Church, in its scriptures, sacraments, and mission.

- a. Any other kind of “religion” (at least for a Christian or from someone from a Christian cultural background) is totally worthless and disgusting. I’m looking at you Oprah, Osteen, Scientology, Eckhart Tolle, Rob Bell, Rhonda Byrne and your Satanic Secret.

"A true spiritual teacher does not have anything to teach in the conventional sense of the word, does not have anything to give or add to you, such as new information, beliefs, or rules of conduct. The only function of such a teacher is to help you remove that which separates you from the truth ... The words are no more than signposts."

False Prophet Eckhart Tolle

Then I suppose Jesus was not a true spiritual teacher, at least not by that definition.

19.

Faith in Christ is point-to-point travel. It is not a swift, continuous, determined flight plan or trajectory. Things will necessarily go wrong, blow up, disappoint you, break your heart, fail and cause pain. Because God is trying to instill *TRUST* in Him, which can only happen if you don't trust in yourself, and in the securities that you have built up around yourself, under yourself, for yourself, and through yourself.

That is why the Beatitudes are so backwards-talking. Because it is precisely where you are not in control where you *have* to trust in God.

If you're always successful and happy and pleased, you can easily skate along straight into Hell, because you never had to bother to place your trust in anything other than yourself, much less in the invisible yet omnipresent Eternal LORD.

And while all that pleasure, contentment, and security was your lot in this brief snap of the fingers in this passing temporal phase, your real lot in eternity is determined by your interior disposition -- either sole trust in yourself, which is the isolation and disintegration of Hell...*OR* complete trust in God, which sustains you through this life, and, upon entering eternity, becomes the Full Plenitude of God's Grace, Mercy, and Favor -- Infinite and Eternal Blessings and Peace.

And that is precisely the problem with “trying” God out.....for a week, for a month, for a couple of years....like going to a movie, or a juice cleanse, or a tempestuous relationship. *It's not about YOU!* It is, in fact, about God. That's not God's arrogance. God is the fundamental reality, apart from which there is simply no reality. Everything is about God. When you create the Cosmos, and when you are the fundamental principle of all reality, then you can complain about that.

So, if you “think about God” and don't think it makes sense.....or you “pray to God” and don't feel him.....or, much less, “pray to God for a job or money or a lover or a boat or tickets to the Super Bowl” and you don't get them.....or even tragedy strikes and you lose a wife, husband, child.....you *CANNOT* simply give up, throw up your hands, and walk away, refusing to listen to God and refusing to pray.

Because when you walk away from God, there is quite literally nothing to walk away *to*.

And all your objections -- Evolution. Evil in the world (I think I've done a pretty good job with this one, but it's always a perennial complaint). Evil in the Church (Also dealt with herein).

All of them will be obvious to you at the Last Judgment. What your tiny, blinkered, teensy weensy little mind couldn't comprehend, will, in the light of eternity, be obvious. But then it will be too late.

Because it should have been obvious that you *should have at least persevered in prayer, being open to the God who would have answered your prayer for His Presence and confidence in Him with.....His Presence and confidence in Him!*

If, because of your arrogance or your intellectual vanity or bitterness over the losses that are inevitable in life, you turn away from God so completely that you can't even pray, regularly, once a day....once a week?.....once a month?!.....

Then God will turn from you.

20.I like Dr. Tim Keller. Obviously. <http://www.timothykeller.com/>

The gospel says you are more sinful and flawed than you ever dared believe, but more accepted and loved than you ever dared hope.

The Gospel and Idolatry

<https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=mn1U1omO6sg>

More Tim Keller

The Prodigal God: Recovering the Heart of the Christian Faith

https://books.google.com/books?id=vRhP1Xd_8eAC&dq=the+prodigal+god&source=gbs_navlinks_s

The Reunification of the Church

Ending the Schism

Rev. John Piper

<https://www.desiringgod.org/messages/gospel-depths/excerpts/the-kingdom-of-god-is-not-good-news>

The Catholic Church needs an injection of Calvinism juice -- Pronto.

When Harry Met Sally
Katz's Deli

<https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=F-bsf2x-aeE>

In essence, Calvinism teaches that God, as the first and sovereign cause, necessitates that the will of each created individual incline itself either to good or evil, and that “free will” consists only of the will following the natural inclination of its own volition. God, solely by reason of His good pleasure, determines whom He shall give the gift of grace necessary and sufficient to turn a will towards His Will, and thus attain salvation. All others are damned. In other words, it is a free will that isn't.

This is untenable because it would make God a moral monster, creating certain spirits that have no power within themselves to choose anything other than evil. Such a doctrine makes God the Dark Lord, maliciously and malevolently creating wretched, evil monsters simply to damn them.

In essence, Catholicism teaches that God, who is supremely moral, creates spirits that have free wills - true free wills that can *choose* good or evil. This avoids turning God into Satan. So that's good.

But there's a problem: God's omniscience, omnipotence, and eternity. Doesn't God know which spirits will choose good or evil? Then isn't God responsible? No, traditional Catholicism says, because God simply has foreknowledge of the evil choices that spirits will choose. God is like a man standing on a tower that simply has the capacity to see the whole cosmic drama play out.

This is superficially appealing, but it neglects a basic problem.

If God Himself *chose* to create such spirits who choose evil, knowing that they would choose evil, isn't God still responsible for creating a spirit that he knew would damn itself?

If so, the Catholic says that God chose to create a spirit that he knew would end up being damned. Then why would a just and compassionate God call forth such a spirit into existence? The distinction between a Calvinist predestination in which God wills spirits to have defective wills and a Catholic foreknowledge, where God still chooses to bring such ill-fated wills into

existence, is a distinction without a difference. If, on the one hand, I give you directions that would lead you off course (Calvinism), or, on the other hand, I let you walk out the door *knowing* that you will get lost (Catholicism), I am equally morally responsible for your being lost. One is the sin of commission, the other is the sin of omission.

Some try to argue this away by saying that God denies Himself foreknowledge when He creates spirits. As someone who believes that free will is a necessary linchpin to any possible theodicy (justification of God's goodness) this has its allure. But it denigrates Divine Providence, transforming God from a Divine Sovereign into a cosmic gambler. It also ignores clear Biblical revelation in which Jesus repeatedly states that the elect have been preordained to inherit the rewards of the Kingdom. "Come, you who are blessed by my Father. Inherit the kingdom prepared for you from the foundation of the world" (Matthew 25:34). Also, this point of view makes complete nonsense of the clear Scriptural teaching contained in St. Paul's *Letter to the Romans*:

For he says to Moses:

"I will show mercy to whom I will,
I will take pity on whom I will."

So it depends not upon a person's will or exertion, but upon God, who shows mercy. For the scripture says to Pharaoh, "This is why I have raised you up, to show my power through you that my name may be proclaimed throughout the earth." Consequently, he has mercy upon whom he wills, and he hardens whom he wills.

You will say to me then, "Why then does he still find fault? For who can oppose his will?" But who indeed are you, a human being, to talk back to God? Will what is made say to its maker, "Why have you created me so?" Or does not the potter have a right over the clay, to make out of the same lump one vessel for a noble purpose and another for an ignoble one? What if God, wishing to show his wrath and make his power, has endured with much patience the vessels of wrath made for destruction? This was to make known the riches of his glory to the vessels of mercy, which he has prepared previously for glory, namely, us whom he has called, not only from the Jews but also from the Gentiles.

(9:16-24)

We can also note that Romans 9:11 speaks of the ἐκλογὴν πρόθεσις of God, translated as "elective plan" or "the purpose of God according to election". We can note that a superior translation might be "chosen purpose": that is, God's Holy Will.

So, certainly, in God's action in the world, and in his Eternal Plan, the elaboration in creation of His Holy Will, foreknowledge is not scripturally sufficient. God has made choices - indeed has made all the choices, which is the essence of creation, the Divine Act belonging solely to the Divine Sovereign.

So what is the solution? The solution is simple yet difficult to accept. The solution is a multi-dimensional solution: a real world solution and not a theologian's chalkboard solution. God's Sovereign Will is the flip side of each spirit's free will. That is, each spirit's free will not being coerced by the Sovereign Will in any way, nor predetermined, and yet each choice made by each free will being chosen from all eternity by God's Eternal Will.

I don't have an explanation for that. I don't have an account of that. I also don't know much about quantum mechanics or advanced mathematics. But, for that matter, no one in our civilization knows how to break the light barrier or cure cancer or even prevent recessions. The Cheesecake Factory can't find a way to provide tasty meals that aren't 1500 calories. We are limited beings living in a limited society.

So it is the height of arrogance, of vain human folly imitating the vain spiritual sin of Satan, to say that simply because *we* limited beings cannot square the circle on this point, that it cannot be squared, and we simply have to slide into either a monstrous predestination or a silly and feeble divine incompetence and ignorance.

We have to cultivate humility in such matters.

I have sufficiently shown that both sovereign will and free will are necessary to satisfy the data that we do have about God, both natural and revealed.

The solution is to say that the Uncreated Sovereign Will and each created free will of each spirit is not only compatible, but that they are inextricably interrelated in terms of their causal interrelatedness.

Which is to say, that the future of spiritual mechanics rests in the exploration of spiritual freedom.

The typical Calvinist rejoinder against free will, exemplified by Jonathan Edwards, states that true, libertarian free will (which is simply to say "free will") is not possible since the act of willing would create an infinite regress within the will, such that if one willed to eat an apple, one must have willed to will to eat the apple, and likewise willed to will to will to eat the apple, *ad infinitum*.

Exactly. That is the essence of a spirit.

A spirit is an infinite regress of freedom. Put a different way, it is an infinite involution of its own freedom. That is why the essence of a spirit is absolute freedom.

And we can further reflect that, if each spirit is an expression of the Spirit's own interior nature, its own essence, shot out into nothingness and thus becoming a creation by the Uncreated, and that the essence of spirit is freedom, then the essence of the creative act is the expression of the Uncreated Freedom out "beyond" itself such that truly *other* freedoms can exist -- and yet, necessarily exist in such a way that the freedom of the created aligns with the Freedom of the Uncreated (aside from which there is no other reality with which to align, other than, woefully, the deprivation of reality).....or, tragically, not.

The ways in which the Freedom of the Spirit of God creates the freedom of spirits, and how that cyclone of freedom plays out is the essence of reality: of the Uncreated Reality that is God and the spiritual and material creation of which we created beings are all a part.

Once you can hold in your hand an exact *account* of how that whole cyclone of freedom originated, existed in sequence, both logical and temporal sequence, and found its destiny in the World to Come, you'll know everything.

But I don't know everything.

And neither do you.

In other words, we need less Aristotle and Augustine, and more Berkeley and Hegel. And really, we need ideas that eye has not seen and ear has not heard to truly ever *really* access the mysteries of God.

We can see an intimation of this truth in Romans 8:29-30, "For those he foreknew he also predestined to be conformed to the image of his Son, so that he might be the firstborn among many brothers. And those he predestined he also called; and those he called he also justified; and those he justified he also glorified."

Those God *foreknew*, he also *predestined*. Those God *knew* would *choose* to use their freedom to embrace the Divine Freedom, God, sequentially, in His Freedom, *chose* to be called to Christ, and thus justified (saved), and thus glorified (will experience the fullness of the Spirit's plenitude in the eternity of Heaven). It's quite a temporal causality loop, with God's Freedom being both the cause *and* the effect -- but we're talking about the eternal frame of reference that exists within and for the Eternal Lord. And this doesn't make the Christian the first mover in the drama of salvation: God, as the creator of that spirit's freedom, necessarily, is the first cause of that freedom. Again, it's complicated.

So, just as the Catholic Church needs an injection of Calvinism juice, the reformed churches require an injection of Catholic philosophy.

Broadly speaking, we can see this trend in the wayward, disjointed histories of both traditions. Calvinism thunders about the transcendence of God, and yet is repelled by the immanence of that Divine Transcendence in the Sacraments, in the transubstantiation of the Eucharist. Blood! Flesh! A bloody savior! No redemption without a bloody savior!

And then, when that bloody savior's flesh and blood are *really* put before you to consume, to be made a part of you, and you a part of Him, which is the essence of the Incarnation, Crucifixion, Resurrection, and Ascension, you recoil, as if from some pagan horror.

Catholicism™ revels in the sacramental immanence™ of Christ's sacrifice, and yet gets all squeamish and squishy about the absolute necessity of that bloody sacrifice, that sacrifice of broken flesh and spilt blood celebrated upon the altar as a substitutionary atonement for our wicked sins, which truly deserve an everlasting Hell, but which Christ Jesus suffered in our stead so that He could act as the Mediator - the bridge, the point of contact between the wicked human race and the All-Righteous Father. Instead of being a Church of Christ proclaiming the Gospel,

in all its wonder, magnificence, and *necessary* power to accomplish salvation, the Catholic Church's increasingly clear ambition is to become the world's most preeminent NGO.

So, insofar as the Church of Christ is the Body of Christ, more accurately rendered in English *the Flesh of Christ*, the Church must embrace both the transcendence of its spiritual reality *and* the immanence of that transcendent reality in every aspect of the material universe, even, and especially, in its sinfulness. We must not forfeit or ignore the interiority of that infinitely interior Spirit, which accomplishes salvation within the depths of the soul, nor can we sensibly disdain that infinite Spirit's fleshly manifestation in the most intimate immediateness of our materiality.

So...after all the fussing and the feuding, it might just turn out that Calvinism and Catholicism are soulmates.

The Mirror Has Two Faces

<https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=etDqHsomNuw>

I'll let you fight over who's the woman. Maybe you can have another Thirty Years' War over it.

Picture

Kid Rock featuring Sheryl Crow

<https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=rKFx0MMqb48>

From this we might be able to glimpse a glimmer of how evil schism really is.

Indeed, schism is perhaps the greatest evil that can befall the Flesh of Christ, the Church.

Schism is the mother of all heresies.

Schism is the ruination of the Flesh of Christ. It is the Abaddon into which the Flesh of Christ falls and in which it suffers all the torments of Hell.

Schism is the re-Crucifixion of Christ and His re-descent into Hell on a daily basis.

For, if the Flesh of Christ is indeed the flesh of the Christ, if all Christians are incorporated into Christ such that His flesh is truly the flesh of all Christians, then when Christians are not in full communion all with all, and each with each, then, truly, the Flesh of the Christ is torn apart, ripped apart, fed upon by the dogs of Hell, ravenously devoured by the maw of the Devil himself.

Schism is the piercing and tearing of Christ's flesh, the outpouring of His blood.

The practical consequences of the ecclesiological and Christological truth of schism are blatantly obvious. No believing Christian could possibly maintain that schism must be resorted to in order to preserve or teach sound doctrine. A believing Christian believes in the Holy Spirit, and that the Church is the Flesh of Christ imbued with the Spirit of Christ. No matter who the pope is or what the magisterium teaches or what the priests say or do, it is impossible that the true faith could ever be crushed or blotted out. To believe that that could possibly happen is simply to reveal that one does not believe in the guardianship of the Church by the Holy Spirit.

Rather, schism does nothing to cure heresy: it is the matrix and incubator of all heresies. Schism is a cascading recursive waterfall that pours forth ever more schism and ever more heresy. Schism is to faith what fornication is to chastity. One can never have enough sex to cure oneself of one's disordered lusts. The only cure to lustfulness is confession, grace, and endurance in that grace. And one cannot break away church from church from church from church enough to discover that enchanted, mythical chimerical unicorn: sound doctrine. The only cure to heresy is obedience and endurance, and the only cure to schism is humility and reconciliation.

How then can wisdom and right doctrine prevail over the intransigence of a corrupted authority? Endurance, even to the point of martyrdom. I have no love of martyrdom. But you can't say, "Oh, I must speak. Here I stand, I can do no other!" and then run away like a scared little boy and rip the Flesh of Christ apart in the process. Be a hero. Be a coward. Speak or shut up. But do not pierce the Flesh of Christ. Do not shed His blood, or mingle it with the sin of schism.

The John Calvins and Martin Luthers of the world have no right to say, "My theology is so correct, I can't stop!" and then arrogantly, insanely turn around and say, "Let's break up the Church!"

What is theology if not the study of God? And what is the study of God if not the attempt to account for God? And, for a Christian, is not Christ God? And is not Christ the head of the Church, such that His Flesh is the Christian Unity of the Church? Then how can a theologian vindicate his precious theology by sundering the infinitely precious Flesh of Christ?

He cannot do so, either rationally or morally. He can only do so out of a mad, self-preferential love for his own ideas and his own understanding. It is to prefer a short-sighted love of one's own knowledge and insights over the long-term needs of the Flesh of Christ. The self-righteousness of the vain theologians sunders the Church in the outrageous iniquity of schism. The trusting righteousness of the martyr, a fate no sensible person wants but which is what the Gospel demands when necessary, is the seed and succor and source of all the Church's mighty growth through time.

Now, one might say, "But if x-y-z belief or set of beliefs is true, however shall that belief be vindicated?"

The believing Christian trusts that if a belief is true the Spirit will vindicate it in the fullness of time, according to God's Holy Will, regardless of whether the belief is vindicated in the lifetime of that theologian.

Such a dissident theologian may speak and write as they wish. When the discipline of the Church comes down on such a theologian, the theologian may obey or may defy the discipline, if their conscience counsels that the discipline brought to bear is truly wicked.

But what a theologian, or any Christian, may never do is set up their own Church. There is one Church.

What of the salvation of souls?

Do you then arrogate to yourself the governance of the Church, pushing aside the Holy Spirit and anointing yourself guarantor of the souls of Christians? Will you burn the village to save it? Will you tear the child in two to save it?

The natural Protestant response is: the Church is simply all Christian believers who believe what I believe is acceptable to believe.

Some Church that is!

That's similar to the Stoic idea of friendship: "I am a friend to all towards whom I have good will."

By that standard I have many billions of friends in Asia that I've never met. I should pay them all a visit some time and make their acquaintance.

The Church is not simply "an institution" like the State Department or the military or a corporation or the DMV. That is true.

But it is also not an amorphous, ephemeral nothingness, an abstract conception that has no immanent integrity as an integral reality in the human community.

The real Church requires authority, yet also locality; dogma, yet also freedom of speech and conscience; unity, yet also subsidiarity and even diversity (though not heterodoxy).

When an authoritarian, militaristic, propagandistic, bloody, murderous, rampaging, tyrannical Church authority attempts to enforce the order of the barracks on the Flesh of Christ, the result can only be disaster. That is certainly true.

But what is the rebel flip side of that? *Anything goes!*

You do you! Not happy here? Go somewhere else! Don't like this church? Start your own! Don't like that doctrine? Forget it! Hive off into a thousand different sects, each with their own fervently and doggedly held beliefs, so that instead of one Christian people, we have a proliferation of this ism and that ism, here a creed there a creed, everywhere a creed creed. There's a new Moses lurking under every bridge, preaching from every hill, gathering a separate flock from every fold. There's a new Bible for the writing and the rewriting, whenever someone with free time should feel so inclined. No doctrine, no matter how strange, extravagant or ungrounded in history or theory or even common sense or plain good sense, fails to have its own prophet, its own self-crowned theological kingpin setting himself up proudly on the chair of Moses and spouting his moonshine swill.

Every Christian a King, and Christ never gets to wear the Crown!

We can see this plainly in the evolution of Protestantism. Protestant schism has generated more heterodox doctrines, creeds, and organizations than I can recount here, or would like to recount. The schismatic cascade has produced denials of the Trinity, denials of Jesus' divinity, every formulation and reformulation of grace you could possibly imagine, every crank theory on the Apocalypse, when, how, and where to get your tickets than can possibly be fathomed, not to mention the welter of "church" organizations, all at cross purposes and all struggling for the same souls to fund their groups.

This is not to say Catholicism does not have its faults. It has too much, pre-Vatican II, been a repository for a narrow, legalistic moralism that makes you count off how many times you masturbate in a confessional to a (maybe?) celibate priest (all the while on your knees in the dark.....no comment there), and, post-Vatican II, it has surged forth, breaking from that questionable past into a courageous future of.....Barney the Dinosaur, every day is special when you spend it with people you love.....*I love you, you love me, we're a happy family, with a great big hug and a kiss from me to you, won't you say you love me too?*

Barney the Dinosaur

https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=Uq734_nZ7Eo

<https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=GjbR9rHI9Vw>

But they still want you to count off the number of times you masturbate.

But has Catholicism produced Seventh-Day Adventists? Jehovah's Witnesses? Christadelphians? Christian Scientists? Dawn Bible Students? The Living Church of God? Unitarian universalism? Swedenborgianism? Sun Myung Moon's Unification Church?

No. No, it hasn't.

And we didn't produce this guy: Good 'ol super-crank Harold Camping:

<https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=-DfggHLLjDU>

It's the End of the World

R.E.M.

<https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=Z0GFRcFm-aY>

So, to all my Protestant brahs, bottle up the anti-Catholicism. If the Catholic Church ever gets over its Barney the Dinosaur phase, there's plenty of material for a healthy anti-Protestantism.

The Big Bad Catholic Church

<https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=R-RinxXFkS4>

John MacArthur, among other things, says about the Catholic Church that, “There is massive deception with Roman Catholicism. There are 1.2 billion Roman Catholics in the world who are under this deception to one degree or another. And its deception lies in the fact that it’s an apostate, corrupted, heretical false kind of Christianity. It is the Kingdom of Satan wearing a Christian mask.”

MacArthur goes on to claim that apostolic authority is illegitimate and attacks the Sacrament of Reconciliation and the ancient practice of infant baptism.

MacArthur, in a wild orgy of slander, goes on to attack “the idolatry of saint worship”, “the horrific exaltation of Mary above Christ and even above God”, “false works righteousness that assumes that you can earn your way into heaven”, “the abomination of the worship of idols and relics”, and calls the celebration of the Eucharist “a twisted sacrament which attempts to re-sacrifice Christ”. He also calls all priests devils.

Such a florid display of ignorance from a prominent preacher is unfortunate. The Catholic Church does not worship saints, does not worship Mary, does not preach “works righteousness”, does not worship idols, does not worship relics, and does not claim to “re-sacrifice” Jesus in the celebration of the Eucharist. The Eucharist is an access to the *one* sacrifice of Christ on Calvary, not some bizarre “re-sacrificing”. And all priests are not devils. Just for your information.

When it comes to the Catholic Church, John MacArthur is ignorant and has a profoundly flawed understanding of the Christian Church’s history, traditions, sacraments and the ecclesiological depths of the Scriptures. He lives in a fantasyland of his own vain imagining that has absolutely nothing to do with history or reality. MacArthur’s idea of the Church so seriously diverges from historical and theological reality that he practically falls into outright anti-Catholic bigotry. It is one thing to correctly identify doctrinal differences and argue that an opposed doctrine is evil; it is entirely another to impute doctrines and practices to the Church that do not correspond to reality. His nonsense idea of the history of the Church is the same thing that the Mormon Church does, only without the good naturedness or the splendid choir (they really are very good - <https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=j1hVY7bmqsA>).

His whole endeavor, his whole warped, trash theology and preaching on Catholicism wishes away 1500 years of history and says that everything that he does not believe in isn’t real and was never believed in by Christians for millennia - despite the vast historical archival evidence to the opposite. Only the Mormon Church wishes away 1800 years of history. Indeed, we see verified the old maxim of John Henry Cardinal Newman: To be deep in history is to cease to be a Protestant.

Wait....the Calvinist faction does not wish away 1500 years of history, you say? It only wishes away a thousand years of history, from c. 400 to that blessed re-institution of the Church in 1517 with Luther’s Ninety-five Theses? It only concludes that for a thousand years the Holy Spirit abandoned the Church and that Satan ruled the Church, totally and thoroughly? Or, you

say that the real Church was a few scattered individuals that you imagine agreed with your principles (you should actually do some historical research on that), while the real, historical Church that was broadly, even in some shape or form *universally*, believed in was some Satanic monstrosity? What does that do with the Eastern Orthodox Churches? Satan. Clearly, all churches prior to c. 400 were Lutheran and Calvinist, in the East too, but then Satan created Orthodoxy. I think you will find the Orthodox are rather prickly about the idea that their traditions were hatched whole cloth (or any cloth, for that matter) from Satanic principles. The Orthodox fervently hold that their Tradition has been meticulously handed down directly from the Apostolic church, a claim which, while far from unproblematic, has far more historical legitimacy than a bigoted Protestant can ever conjure up for his ahistorical and intellectually insipid delusions of grandeur.

No, you're right, John MacArthur, other Christian traditions are totally ungrounded in the Scriptures, hatched from the mind of Satan himself. It was only Luther and Calvin who had the genius and fidelity to reconstruct the reality of the early church (and thus, the only kind of Christianity permissible) from scratch. Let us listen to one such poor dupe of Satan:⁷¹

The interpretive authority for Orthodox Christians is not our own reason applied to the Bible alone (the Protestant doctrine of "sola Scriptura") but what can be discerned as the consensual teaching of the Holy Fathers, the collective voice of the Church, which is the "pillar and ground of Truth" (1 Tim. 3:15). Thus, if one wishes to know what the Orthodox Church teaches about any given Reformed doctrine he should consult the Patristic commentaries for the various "proof-texts" employed by Reformed Protestants in support of their views. For example, predestination and free will: Romans 8:28-30, 9:11ff, 11:7; Eph. 1:5ff, 2:1-9; 2 Tim. 1:9-10; Titus 3:4-5; and 1 Thess. 5:9.

In doing so you will readily discover that the consensus clearly supports the Orthodox position, which affirms man's free will and that "predestination" is basically another way of saying "God acts according to foreknowledge". The key issue will then become something more foundational: Who do I trust? The consensus of innumerable holy men spanning from the time of the Apostles to the present day? or The interpretations of a few men who were unfamiliar with this consensus (e.g., Luther and Calvin) and who were shackled by the late medieval scholastic nominalism of their day

and elsewhere:

Are Protestantism and Roman Catholicism Heretical?

The reader should be aware that my motivation for compiling these texts does not stem from a desire to "bash the heterodox" but rather to help my fellow Orthodox brothers and sisters to understand that much of the rhetoric we hear today regarding Western Christians is not faithful to Holy Tradition. It thus undermines the unity and uniqueness of the one true Church—the Orthodox Church—, which embodies the very criterion of

⁷¹ http://orthodoxinfo.com/inquirers/inq_reformed.aspx ; http://orthodoxinfo.com/ecumenism/prot_rc_heresy.aspx

Christianity, being the sole preserver of the unadulterated Apostolic and Holy Tradition. Take for example this statement by one of the leading ecumenical activists, the late Nicolas Zernov:

[Western Christians] present ...a mystery of the divided Church which cannot be solved on precedents taken from the epoch of the Seven Ecumenical Councils. It is a new problem requiring a search for a fresh approach and confidence in the power of the Holy Spirit to guide the Church in our time as He guided her in the past.

It is necessary to state from the outset, that the attitude to the Christian West has never been discussed by any representative body of the Orthodox Church. Neither Roman Catholics nor Protestants have ever been condemned or excommunicated as such, so a common policy in regard to them has never been adopted. ("The One Holy Catholic and Apostolic Church and the Anglicans," Sobornost, 6:8 (1973), 531)

The answers he provides in this misleading article are atrocious from a Traditional point of view. It is replete with statements and conclusions that flatly contradict the "Mind of the Church," as I hope you will see below.

Also, though one should not have to clarify this, in these days of "ecumeni-speak" and "political correctness" I felt it was important to say that at times it is entirely proper and necessary to call a person's beliefs "heretical." When spoken in love this constitutes an act of love. We are to hate the poison of heresy, but to love and have compassion for those infected by it. For more on this I highly recommend the essay entitled "[The True Nature of Heresy](#)" and this excerpt from a forthcoming book: [The Use of the Term "Heretic."](#) I also offer these other excerpts from related articles:

"...if our truth is an exclusive truth, it is made open... by our ability to see virtue even among those in error. This principle is reified by our constant commitment to love and hospitality. A perfect example of this was a visit made by some American Uniates to Metropolitan Cyprian several years ago. His Eminence received his guests as brothers and treated them with great affection. Yet, one evening, while offering them a beautiful dinner on the veranda of his cell, he told them: 'Love dictates that I tell you that you are heretics and must become Orthodox.' One of the clergymen, in fact, is now a Priest in the Antiochian Archdiocese. It is our openness to the virtues of those in error, our readiness to be ridiculed and embarrassed by our 'exclusivity,' and our love of the truth which ultimately make us Orthodox and open to all things, being all things to all men for the sake of their salvation." (From "The Exclusive Openness of Truth" in Orthodox Tradition, Vol. XI, No. 4 (1994), 8 [emphasis theirs])

"The time has come for all faithful Orthodox Christians to speak out and promptly put an end to this spurious form of Orthodoxy known as 'ecumenistic Orthodoxy'. It is a betrayal of the Holy Orthodox Church, a negation of its essence. It is time to take her divine dogmas 'out of the storeroom,' where [Ecumenical] Patriarch Athenagoras I relegated them [in the sixties], bring them to the open light, and proclaim them by every means, and in every land... Let us not offer to the world the pseudo-Orthodoxy of 'Orthodox ecumenism,' which puts error on the same level as truth... This offering will be an act of true Christian love, a fulfilling of Christ's commandment of loving our neighbor as we

love ourselves. Christ says, 'What man is there of you whom if his son asks for bread would give him a stone?' (St. Matt. 7:9) 'Orthodox ecumenism' does precisely the latter... People today are searching for the truth that saves; yet these ecumenists have put the bread of truth in the storeroom and have been offering instead the stone of untruth, of error, and of heresy that leads to perdition. The commandment of love demands that we take the bread of the teaching of the Orthodox Church out in the open and offer it lovingly to all who hunger for the truth that frees and saves." (From a lecture by Dr. Constantine Cavarnos at the Greek Orthodox Cathedral of the Annunciation, Atlanta, GA, on March 16, 1997)

Having said all this, however, I quote from a letter of Fr. Seraphim to a Protestant inquirer:

The word "heretic" ... is indeed used too frequently nowadays. It has a definite meaning and function, to distinguish new teachings from the Orthodox teaching; but few of the non-Orthodox Christians today are consciously "heretics," and it really does no good to call them that... A harsh, polemical attitude is called for only when the non-Orthodox are trying to take away our flocks or change our teachings. (Monk Damascene Christensen, *Not of This World: The Life and Teachings of Fr. Seraphim Rose* [Fr. Seraphim Rose Foundation, 1993], pp. 757-58.)

[End Article]

It is truly horrible how such Satanists can twist the clear, true, and absolutely historical Church that Luther and Calvin miraculously recovered from a thousand years prior. These kinds of people clearly have no legitimate ideas or positions or Christian backgrounds, and are but a mission field of benighted Satan-worshippers desperately awaiting John MacArthur and his noble band of Bible Heroes to enlighten these prisoners, captive to a mound of monstrous heresies.

Let us listen to the John MacArthur of Orthodoxy, a lovely Serbian Orthodox fellow who hates Catholicism too: <https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=k-gBcR5ddRw> (For those not reading on a tablet, he says that the pope and Catholicism are the fountain of all heresies, responsible for the existence of Protestants, who, he says, "often drink human blood, who kill children to drink blood, various sects, terrible sects, who are fruit of Rome's pope.")

Apparently, this is what John MacArthur drinks.
I mean, he must, someone said so.



Whenever I'm out with my Protestant friends, they always drink blood -- it's a little gross at first, but you get used to it.

And yet, even with this Orthodox cleric, it's always the Big Bad Catholic Church that takes all the blame for everything.

Political Science

Randy Newman

<https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=EqBrw3rQvKo>

Let us listen to what the LDS (Mormon) Church explicitly says on its website about "The Great Apostasy":

Jesus Christ established His Church during His ministry on the earth. "The Apostles, after the Ascension of Christ, continued to exercise the keys He left with them. But because of disobedience and loss of faith by the members, the Apostles died without the keys being passed on to successors. We call that tragic episode 'the Apostasy'" (Henry B. Eyring, "The True and Living Church," *Ensign* or *Liahona*, May 2008, 21). Because of this widespread apostasy, the Lord took the priesthood authority away from the people. Understanding the Great Apostasy helps us better understand the need for the Restoration of the gospel of Jesus Christ in the latter days.⁷²

You see, the Mormons don't do what the Protestants do. Mormons don't simply say that Satan struck his thunderous blow c. 400. No, no, no -- that would be too boring.

⁷² <https://www.lds.org/manual/doctrine-and-covenants-and-church-history-seminary-teacher-manual-2014/section-0/lesson-3?lang=eng>

Satan struck his blow precisely when the apostles died. Christianity veered off course into Satanic heresy after *the very first generation*. The Holy Spirit was asleep at the wheel for well on nigh two thousand years.

You might call that heresy. And it may be. (It is.)

But I call it balls. Huevos. Huevos Rancheros.



Wait - you didn't know that Jesus and the apostles were Mormon?

Take it away, with some measure of good hope
<https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=n14pcTDyPN0>

But, you know, there's just something about hateful caricatures -- they really piss me off. And there's just something about hateful caricatures that make you close your heart, choose sides, put your sectarian pinnie on and fight wars. So, instead of listening to the ignorant, skewed, and twisted words of a hateful bigot like John MacArthur, let us imbibe the words of a true scholar, someone who clearly has a love of the Scriptures and possesses a prodigious prowess for Biblical exegesis. I have personally found these insights most helpful:

John MacArthur
The MacArthur New Testament Commentary
Matthew 24-28

(Exegesis concerning Matthew 24:4-14)

Verse 4 begins the Olivet discourse proper, which Jesus gave in response to the disciples' question, "Tell us, when will these things be, and what will be the sign of Your coming, and of the end of the age?" (v. 3). As discussed in the last chapter, the Twelve, "supposed that the kingdom of God was going to appear immediately" (Luke 19:11), and the events of the past few days had confirmed that idea even more firmly in their minds. They had long believed that Jesus was the Messiah and that John the Baptist was His prophesied forerunner. The acclaim of the crowds at Jesus' triumphal entry, at His cleansing the Temple, at His rebuking the religious leaders, as well as at His predicting the destruction of the Temple all combined to make them think He would soon manifest His messianic glory, subdue the nations that would rise up against Him, and establish His eternal kingdom. They had been unable to accept His numerous predictions that He would first have to suffer, die, and be raised up.

The disciples thought that Jesus' preaching, healing, comforting, rendering judgment, and restoring Israel would occur at the same general time in history. Like the Old Testament prophets who spoke of the Messiah, they saw only a single coming, comprised of a sequence of events (see, e.g. Isa. 61:1-11).

It was when Jesus read from that passage in Isaiah during the synagogue service in Nazareth that He gave perhaps the first clue that His coming would be in two parts. He stopped reading in the middle of verse 2, omitting the phrase "and the day of vengeance of our God." He then explained, "Today this Scripture has been fulfilled in your hearing" (Luke 4:18-21). He was emphasizing that He had not come at that time to render judgment but only to preach the gospel and heal diseases.

But because they had missed that clue, as well as the many more specific teachings about His coming to die for man's sin, the disciples were expecting Jesus to complete His messianic mission at any moment, perhaps in the next few days or weeks. They were on their tiptoes, as it were, waiting for something dramatic to happen. They sensed that the son of Isaiah 9:6 was ready to take on His shoulders the government of the kingdom of God, that the stone cut out without hands of Daniel 2:34 was ready to crush the power of evil men. The Messiah, the Prince, was ready to make an end of sins, make reconciliation for iniquity, bring in everlasting righteousness, and be anointed the most holy King. They sensed that the Son of Man would very soon be given dominion and glory in an eternal kingdom. They were convinced that very soon Israel would turn back to the Lord and call on His name and that He "will say, 'they are My people,' and they will say, 'The Lord is my God'" (Zech 13:9).

But in the Olivet discourse, Jesus makes clear that that fulfillment was in the future. The message of Matthew 24-25 is a prophetic sermon that sweeps the Twelve into a time not yet come, a time they themselves would never experience.

There are at least seven indicators in the message itself that it refers to the distant future and could not apply either to the events related to the destruction of Jerusalem in A.D. 70, as many interpreters have suggested, or to the church age, as others propose.⁷³

It's an absolutely dazzling exegesis. So useful. Remarkable, really. Like so much of his work. We should really listen to more wise people like him, and fewer hateful bigots like him.

More on the two faces of John MacArthur:

The Grace of Fidelity and Humility:

<https://blogs.thegospelcoalition.org/thabitianyabwile/2011/06/29/appreciating-john-macarthur/>

The Wrath of Self-righteousness and Blindness:

<http://www.charismanews.com/opinion/in-the-line-of-fire/41371-a-final-appeal-to-pastor-john-macarthur-on-the-eve-of-his-strange-fire-conference>

⁷³ For more, see MacArthur, John: The MacArthur New Testament Commentary https://books.google.com/books?id=SocB82Mv5AIC&dq=john+macarthur&source=gbs_navlinks_s

Full Metal Jacket
Stanley Kubrick
The Duality of Man

<https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=KMEViYvojtY>

(I certainly agree that you can, and sometimes must, impute the action of Satan to certain historical and intellectual phenomena. I myself do this with Islam. But I do not twist any of the doctrines of Islam. Islam really claims that the Trinity is polytheism, that Jesus is not the Divine Son, that Jesus was not crucified to death, that Jesus did not rise from the dead in glory, and that His death did not accomplish the forgiveness of sins for all those who believe in Him as Savior and Lord. Islam claims that God will punish people who believe these basic truths of the Gospel at the Last Judgment. Islam preaches that the whole world should be subjugated to its beliefs and that the preaching of the Gospel should be banned. Islamic doctrine punishes conversion to Christianity with death. Islam preaches the violent conquest of any land that believes in the Gospel and where men and women can preach the Gospel in peace and freedom. If Christianity is true, if God set Christianity in motion.....how could Islam *not* be evil? And if Islam is evil, how could Satan *not* have something to do with it?

The anti-Catholic and anti-Orthodox bent of many Protestants differs from my practice. Protestant attacks on the basic legitimacy of the Catholic and Orthodox Churches too often undermine beliefs, practices, and structures that are integral to Christianity as a whole, doing so in ways that either distort Catholic and Orthodox beliefs and practices and/or demonstrate a basic ignorance of history and theology.

MacArthur also veers into practical bigotry by taking cheap shots at the Catholic Church, trying to link up every real and perceived defect of individual Catholic leaders and people, in a cursory, almost gossipy way, with a broader notion of the *doctrines* of the Church, which predate the Protestant Schism by millennia and are integral to any kind of actual Christianity. I do *not* do the same thing with Islam. I do not cherry-pick the actions of individual Muslim leaders and try to paint a broader picture that ignores positive elements of Muslim culture. I do not say, "Such and such Imam is a bad person or dishonest, and so Islam is evil," or "Such and such Muslim cultural practice is inferior to Western or Christian culture." I am only interested in the geopolitical structure of Islam in world history. The authentic history of Islam narrates a prophet who received a supernatural revelation that *obliterated* every single essential doctrine of Christian belief, claimed an alternative history of the Christian Church that has no historical foundation in reality, and then established a violent empire which annihilated Christendom in the Near East and North Africa, and would have totally destroyed every last free Christian land if it *militarily* could have.

The only point where I *do* link up current events with Islam involves modern Islamist terrorism. The question, of course, becomes: Is Islamist terrorism and its thirst for world conquest consistent with the original Islamic revelation? Unfortunately, the answer seems overwhelmingly clear: yes. It is bigotry to *distort* reality, not simply to perceive it.)

We return to our main discussion of the evils of schism, and we conclude with a few essential insights.

Now, the Protestant could say about the anti-trinitarians and the New Age reincarnations of Christian doctrine, "Not my fault that people go off and do crazy things." Well, it is, because when you fracture and smash the authority of the Church, not just scale it back or humanize it, but crack it to pieces and say that the Church doesn't have to be some real integral reality, but is just a will-o'-the-wisp, that kind of profusion of heterodoxies and outright heresies is what you get.

In fact, we can draw a direct line from Calvin and Luther to Joseph Smith.

Oh, no, of course, Luther and Calvin would probably have executed Joseph Smith, but when you smash the authority of the Church and promulgate the doctrine of schism to justify your church pollination, you create the path towards a vacuum in which anybody and everybody can crown themselves a Church-maker. So you go from the ephemeral, phantom Church....to the reconstitution of an ersatz Catholic Church in Utah. History comes full circle. As it must, I suppose.

We can also see that the Church is like a crystal vase. Beautiful, elegant, useful. But not so much when you smash it on the floor.

Now, every shard of crystal, every speck, is a Christian believer. And the Whole Church is each speck, each Christian believer, in full communion with every other Christian believer. There are true Christians in every church - in the LDS (Mormon) church, in every Protestant sect, trinitarian and unitarian, there are true Christians in the Catholic Church and every Orthodox Church. And there are true pieces of the Church (institutionally, or, perhaps more precisely, *organically*) in every Church, even the Mormon Church, even in the Jehovah's Witness movement (I imagine).

Each human being is a unique expression of God's reality. Each human being is a mirror, that when turned towards God can act as a window into the depths of the Spirit. That is part of what it means to be made *in the image of God*.

If that is so, and it is, it is impossible for there to be the fullness of sound doctrine without the full communion of every Christian with every other Christian. Sound doctrine is a consequence of communion, as much as, and I believe more than, communion is a consequence of sound doctrine. Love first and ask questions later.

Now, this is not meant to be pietism. Doctrine matters - but Christian Love and Unity matter much, much more. Ineffably, incalculably more.

And we can see this all plainly, if only we would open our eyes. Calvinism: the stern and grace-filled kindness of a Sovereign Father and Atoning Redeemer. Catholicism: the sacramental immanence of Christ's reality and the fulcrum of Church unity. Lutheranism: Grace,

Faith, and Scripture. Orthodoxy: Tradition, Theology, Ancient Ritual. Even Mormonism: a sacramental devotion to family.

It's all there - the shards are all on the ground -- the Whole Church is right in front of your eyes: it's just smashed to pieces.

Now, there are two ways to deal with a crystal vase that's smashed on the floor. Well, three - I guess you could just leave it smashed, or sweep it up and throw it away into the secular garbage pail.

One way is that you could try to half-arbitrarily fit the pieces together and use crazy glue.

This would be less than desirable. It would end up looking like a five-year-old's art project. Such a haphazardly pieced together Church would deserve to be called a syncretic monstrosity.

But there is another way. The way of the master craftsman, of the artisan with a jeweler's eye.

You take a good look at the photograph of what the vase used to look like, you melt down the pieces, and, using all the skill and craft and wisdom that you possess, you forge out of the melted-down pieces a new, yet still the same, whole.

And, if each Christian has an essential insight into what that photograph looks like, then it is certainly the case that sound doctrine is impossible without *first* attaining the loving and accepting communion of all Christians everywhere -- not a communion obsessed first with theology and doctrine, but a communion of sisters and brothers carefully, gently, patiently (and sometimes, I suppose, sarcastically but jovially) working out *together* what that whole and perfect vase must have looked like.

On justification. The Church, as expressed in the Catechism, very clearly states that justification is accomplished by the gift of grace, freely given by God, accomplished through Christ, and unmerited by the believer.

Once that justification is accomplished, the believer fulfills that justification in glorification through the process of sanctification, in which the initial free gift of grace is worked in the believer such that it accomplishes gradually growing regeneration, which permits the believer to act well in the world, to do good works, and those good works are merits that the believer attains so as to become righteous, a righteousness which is then rewarded in eternity with the fruit of righteousness - felicity.

But the whole reality proceeds entirely from Christ.

It is similar to a father and a child in an arcade. The father gives his child quarters to play the games, the child plays the games and wins tickets, and the child goes with the father to redeem the tickets (the merits of righteousness) for a prize (the reward of eternal felicity).

But who would be fool enough to think that the child had somehow received the prize on his own, as if somehow the child had purchased the prize with his own money *when the tickets used to "buy" the prize were only gotten with the real money handed to the child by the father!*

And, indeed, who would be fool enough to deny the necessity of such a process? Should the father simply buy the prize for his child? He could. But, in the wisdom of the father, the father decides to use his own gift to encourage and perfect the activity of his child such that the child can be a participant in the reality, and not simply be a passive zombie. Indeed, the Parable of the Talents clearly indicates the whole structure of salvation (Matthew 25:14-30). Jesus gives us our graces, and it is our responsibility - our call - to use them and work them up into greater graces for the Church and the glory of Christ. And we are rewarded on how well we have used the graces -- our merits. But all along, the merits are simply the consequence of that initial, primal grace -- they are not separate, aside from it -- it is not "Faith and Works" --- it is Good Works because of Faith First. It is the imputation of the righteousness of Christ to the Christian believer as his own righteousness *precisely* through the using of that imputed righteousness in the attainment of good works.

And what would be better than justification, *then* sanctification, *then* glorification in Eternal Felicity? Justification as *Zombification*?

John Calvin always loved his Zombies -- the watchmaker God in a watchmaker universe that simply set things in motion and then all the little zombies sang and danced as preordained. But while the Catholic Church ignored the prerogatives of the Divine Providence and Sovereignty, which Calvin rightly heralded, Calvin ignored the reality of free will. And since free will, *freedom*, is the essence of the spirit, and since we are all spirits enfleshed with our own material flesh, as ordained by God, how can any serious and Christian theology chuck freedom into the garbage disposal? Calvin is not the end all and the be all of theology. A theologian who has no grasp of the freedom of the spirit (which is the fundamental essence of spirit), nor use for it in his system, can never be the great and final prophet and revelator of the Gospels: that guide for spirits. The Reformed tradition raises Calvin up as a kind of co-Christ, whose words consume and surround the Scriptures and the words of Christ Himself. Which is ironic, since too many on the Catholic hard right have turned Mary into a co-Christ, and the Calvinists say that we Catholics have idolatry of Mary, which, in the main, we do not. We might with more justice say that the Calvinists have made an idolatry of John Calvin.

Salvation is accomplished by the justification accomplished by Christ's Atonement, His substitutionary sacrifice that provided an escape from Hell for all who believe. And then that justification is perfected in the life of righteousness that a believer can now attain *because* of that initial free gift of grace. And that life of righteousness, which is wholly a consequence of such grace, now, at the end of that life, becomes perfected such that it legitimately does deserve the reward of righteousness: felicity. But the line of causation directly proceeds from grace *through* sanctifying merit *to* the reward of felicity: the grace does all the work, and is the whole origin, context, and nature of the process.

Too many on the Protestant hard right want to slander the Church with doctrines that it simply doesn't hold. The Catholic Church (and by this I mean the magisterium, and not certain misguided entities and individuals within the Church) simply does not teach that there is some magical "works righteousness" that "also" saves along with faith. It just doesn't. I mean, you can believe that, you can say that....I can say that I'm Peyton Manning. But it doesn't make it so.

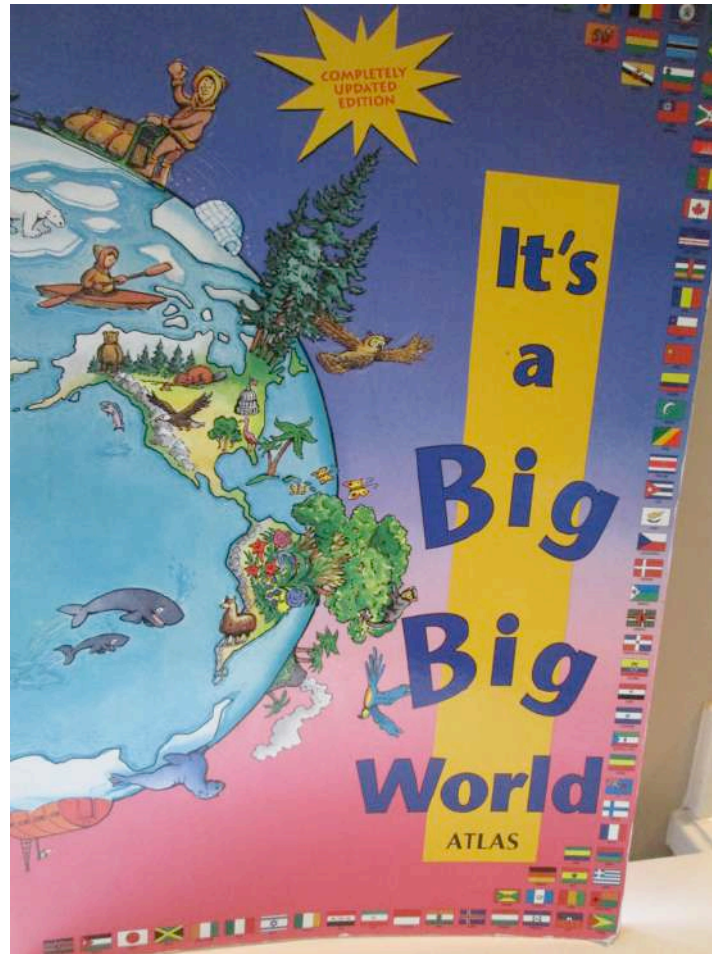
The sad and awful truth of it is that such people are simply trapped in a past of hate and ignorance, spouting what hateful and historically spurious reformers said centuries ago against similarly hateful and doctrinally arrogant inquisitors.

True Christians should reject ignorance, bigotry, and hatred. Let the bigots reenact the Thirty Years' War. Let true Christians rationally and honestly forge the Whole Church, that all Christians might be One Great Flesh of Christ in the 21st Century.

Here I will reproduce an article on the history of the Schism between the Western and Eastern Churches. I do not necessarily endorse any of the positions or assertions contained in the article, but I would like the reader to get a sense for actual history, as it actually occurred, rather than the make-believe restorationism that, unfortunately, Luther and Calvin too much adopted. Luther and Calvin were both great and important theologians. But they were not Gods, they were not even prophets, much less Moses; they were not writers of inspired texts. They were mortal, sinful, limited human beings, with their own passions, hatreds, ignorances, preoccupations, fixations, pet ideas, along with important ideas, and the picture of history that they and their successors drew up in the 16th and 17th centuries is simply not a sufficient, or even, in large measure, an accurate rendering of real reality -- you know, the one that actually happened in the Past, and not simply in your head, not simply what your pappy or your grandpappy told you, or what you tell each other at your Bible study or at the corner bar or in your living room.

Life is complicated. Grow up, and stop simply inhabiting the narrow mental inheritance of your parents and grandparents. Oh, and as you read the article, if you have no idea about three-quarters (or nine-tenths) of the topics and events the author of the article is even discussing, think twice before you call someone else a heretic.

Remember, guys:



And you have to remember: most of the desire to “preserve the truth” has little to nothing to do with the Truth. Narrow parochial tribalism has about as much to do with fidelity to the Truth as self-righteousness has to do with righteousness. People are not attracted to tribalism because of their fidelity to the Truth. They are attracted to it because it makes them feel like they are God: it makes them feel like *they* are the Truth.

And *that* is the greatest “works-righteousness” of all. That kind of “devotion” to the “Truth” is simply the idolatry of yourself, of your own vision and understanding. It is no more exalted than the meanest form of polytheism, no more pleasing to God than the worship of Ba'al.

Now, I believe in the Truth, I believe that there is one truth: but you have to search for it. It isn't neatly packed in your cupboard, under your control, only truly preserved in your household or your community, ready to be used by you whenever you want, however you want, and not in the possession, in any part, or any way, much less big ways, by other people and other communities.

The American President
The Human Thirst for the TRUTH
<https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=rauxSjLtN7o>

Now the article (<http://orthodoxinfo.com/general/greatschism.aspx>):

The Great Schism: The Estrangement of Eastern and Western Christendom

One summer afternoon in the year 1054, as a service was about to begin in the Church of the Holy Wisdom' (Hagia Sophia) at Constantinople, Cardinal Humbert and two other legates of the Pope entered the building and made their way up to the sanctuary. They had not come to pray. They placed a Bull of Excommunication upon the altar and marched out once more. As he passed through the western door, the Cardinal shook the dust from his feet with the words: 'Let God look and judge.' A deacon ran out after him in great distress and begged him to take back the Bull. Humbert refused; and it was dropped in the street.

It is this incident which has conventionally been taken to mark the beginning of the great schism between the Orthodox east and the Latin west. But the schism, as historians now generally recognize, is not really an event whose beginning can be exactly dated. It was something that came about gradually, as the result of a long and complicated process, starting well before the eleventh century and not completed until some time after.

In this long and complicated process, many different influences were at work. The schism was conditioned by cultural, political, and economic factors; yet its fundamental cause was not secular but theological. In the last resort it was over matters of doctrine that east and west quarrelled - two matters in particular: the Papal claims and the Filioque. But before we look more closely at these two major differences, and before we consider the actual course of the schism, something must be said about the wider background. Long before there was an open and formal schism between east and west, the two sides had become strangers to one another; and in attempting to understand how and why the communion of Christendom was broken, we must start with this fact of increasing estrangement.

When Paul and the other Apostles travelled around the Mediterranean world, they moved within a closely knit political and cultural unity: the Roman Empire. This Empire embraced many different national groups, often with languages and dialects of their own. But all these groups were governed by the same Emperor; there was a broad Greco-Roman civilization in which educated people throughout the Empire shared; either Greek or Latin was understood almost everywhere in the Empire, and many could speak both languages. These facts greatly assisted the early Church in its missionary work.

But in the centuries that followed, the unity of the Mediterranean world gradually disappeared. The political unity was the first to go. From the end of the third century the Empire, while still theoretically one, was usually divided into two parts, an eastern and a western, each under its own Emperor. Constantine furthered this process of separation by founding a second imperial capital in the east, alongside Old Rome in Italy. Then came the barbarian invasions at the start of the fifth century: apart from Italy, much of which remained within the Empire for some time longer, the west was carved up among barbarian chiefs. The Byzantines never forgot the ideals of Rome under Augustus and Trajan, and still regarded their Empire as in theory universal; but Justinian was the last Emperor who seriously attempted to bridge the gulf between theory and fact, and his conquests in the west were soon abandoned. The political unity of the Greek east and the Latin west was destroyed by the barbarian invasions, and never permanently restored.

During the late sixth and the seventh centuries, east and west were further isolated from each other by the Avar and Slav invasions of the Balkan peninsula; Illyricum, which used to serve as a bridge, became in

this way a barrier between Byzantium and the Latin world. The severance was carried a stage further by the rise of Islam: the Mediterranean, which the Romans once called *mare nostrum*, 'our sea', now passed largely into Arab control. Cultural and economic contacts between the eastern and western Mediterranean never entirely ceased, but they became far more difficult.

The Iconoclast controversy contributed still further to the division between Byzantium and the west. The Popes were firm supporters of the Iconodule standpoint, and so for many decades they found themselves out of communion with the Iconoclast Emperor and Patriarch at Constantinople. Cut off from Byzantium and in need of help, in 754 Pope Stephen turned northwards and visited the Frankish ruler, Pepin. This marked the first step in a decisive change of orientation so far as the Papacy was concerned. Hitherto Rome had continued in many ways to be part of the Byzantine world, but now it passed increasingly under Frankish influence, although the effects of this reorientation did not become fully apparent until the middle of the eleventh century.

Pope Stephen's visit to Pepin was followed half a century later by a much more dramatic event. On Christmas Day in the year 800 Pope Leo III crowned Charles the Great, King of the Franks, as Emperor. Charlemagne sought recognition from the ruler at Byzantium, but without success; for the Byzantines, still adhering to the principle of imperial unity, regarded Charlemagne as an intruder and the Papal coronation as an act of schism within the Empire. The creation of a Holy Roman Empire in the west, instead of drawing Europe closer together, only served to alienate east and west more than before.

The cultural unity lingered on, but in a greatly attenuated form. Both in east and west, people of learning still lived within the classical tradition which the Church had taken over and made its own; but as time went on they began to interpret this tradition in increasingly divergent ways. Matters were made more difficult by problems of language. The days when educated people were bilingual were over. By the year 450 there were very few in western Europe who could read Greek, and after 600, although Byzantium still called itself the Roman Empire, it was rare for a Byzantine to speak Latin, the language of the Romans. Photius, the greatest scholar in ninth-century Constantinople, could not read Latin; and in 864 a 'Roman' Emperor at Byzantium, Michael III, even called the language in which Virgil once wrote 'a barbarian and Scythic tongue'. If Greeks wished to read Latin works or vice versa, they could do so only in translation, and usually they did not trouble to do even that: Psellus, an eminent Greek savant of the eleventh century, had so sketchy a knowledge of Latin literature that he confused Caesar with Cicero. Because they no longer drew upon the same sources nor read the same books, Greek east and Latin west drifted more and more apart.

It was an ominous but significant precedent that the cultural renaissance in Charlemagne's Court should have been marked at its outset by a strong anti-Greek prejudice. In fourth-century Europe there had been one Christian civilization, in thirteenth century Europe there were two. Perhaps it is in the reign of Charlemagne that the schism of civilizations first becomes clearly apparent. The Byzantines for their part remained enclosed in their own world of ideas, and did little to meet the west half way. Alike in the ninth and in later centuries they usually failed to take western learning as seriously as it deserved. They dismissed all Franks as barbarians and nothing more.

These political and cultural factors could not but affect the life of the Church, and make it harder to maintain religious unity. Cultural and political estrangement can lead only too easily to ecclesiastical disputes, as may be seen from the case of Charlemagne. Refused recognition in the political sphere by the Byzantine Emperor, he was quick to retaliate with a charge of heresy against the Byzantine Church: he denounced the Greeks for not using the Filioque in the Creed (of this we shall say more in a moment) and he declined to accept the decisions of the seventh Ecumenical Council. It is true that Charlemagne only knew of these decisions through a faulty translation which seriously distorted their true meaning; but he seems in any case to have been semi-Iconoclast in his views.

The different political situations in east and west made the Church assume different outward forms, so that people came gradually to think of Church order in conflicting ways. From the start there had been a certain difference of emphasis here between east and west. In the east there were many Churches whose foundation went back to the Apostles; there was a strong sense of the equality of all bishops, of the

collegial and conciliar nature of the Church. The east acknowledged the Pope as the first bishop in the Church, but saw him as the first among equals. In the west, on the other hand, there was only one great see claiming Apostolic foundation - Rome - so that Rome came to be regarded as the Apostolic see. The west, while it accepted the decisions of the Ecumenical Councils, did not play a very active part in the Councils themselves; the Church was seen less as a college and more as a monarchy- the monarchy of the Pope.

This initial divergence in outlook was made more acute by political developments. As was only natural, the barbarian invasions and the consequent breakdown of the Empire in the west served greatly to strengthen the autocratic structure of the western Church. In the east there was a strong secular head, the Emperor, to uphold the civilized order and to enforce law. In the west, after the advent of the barbarians, there was only a plurality of warring chiefs, all more or less usurpers. For the most part it was the Papacy alone which could act as a centre of unity, as an element of continuity and stability in the spiritual and political life of western Europe. By force of circumstances, the Pope assumed a part which the Greek Patriarchs were not called to play, issuing commands not only to his ecclesiastical subordinates but to secular rulers as well. The western Church gradually became centralized to a degree unknown anywhere in the four Patriarchates of the east (except possibly in Egypt). Monarchy in the west; in the east collegiality.

Nor was this the only effect which the barbarian invasions had upon the life of the Church. In Byzantium there were many educated laymen who took an active interest in theology. The 'lay theologian' has always been an accepted figure in Orthodoxy: some of the most learned Byzantine Patriarch Photius, for example - were laymen before their appointment to the Patriarchate. But in the west the only effective education which survived through the Dark Ages was provided by the Church for its clergy. Theology became the preserve of the priests, since most of the laity could not even read, much less comprehend the technicalities of theological discussion. Orthodoxy, while assigning to the episcopate a special teaching office, has never known this sharp division between clergy and laity which arose in the western Middle Ages.

Relations between eastern and western Christendom were also made more difficult by the lack of a common language. Because the two sides could no longer communicate easily with one another, and each could no longer read what the other wrote, misunderstandings arose much more easily. The shared 'universe of discourse' was progressively lost.

East and west were becoming strangers to one another, and this was something from which both were likely to suffer. In the early Church there had been unity in the faith, but a diversity of theological schools. From the start Greeks and Latins had each approached the Christian Mystery in their own way. At the risk of some oversimplification, it can be said that the Latin approach was more practical, the Greek more speculative; Latin thought was influenced by juridical ideas, by the concepts of Roman law, while the Greeks understood theology in the context of worship and in the light of the Holy Liturgy. When thinking about the Trinity, Latins started with the unity of the Godhead, Greeks with the threeness of the persons; when reflecting on the Crucifixion, Latins thought primarily of Christ the Victim, Greeks of Christ the Victor; Latins talked more of redemption, Greeks of deification; and so on. Like the schools of Antioch and Alexandria within the east, these two distinctive approaches were not in themselves contradictory; each served to supplement the other, and each had its place in the fullness of Catholic tradition. But now that the two sides were becoming strangers to one another - with no political and little cultural unity, with no common language - there was a danger that each side would follow its own approach in isolation and push it to extremes, forgetting the value in the other point of view.

We have spoken of the different doctrinal approaches in east and west; but there were two points of doctrine where the two sides no longer supplemented one another, but entered into direct conflict - the Papal claims and the Filioque. The factors which we have mentioned in previous paragraphs were sufficient in themselves to place a serious strain upon the unity of Christendom. Yet for all that, unity might still have been maintained, had there not been these two further points of difficulty. To them we must now turn. It was not until the middle of the ninth century that the full extent of the disagreement first came properly into the open, but the two differences themselves date back considerably earlier.

We have already had occasion to mention the Papacy when speaking of the different political situations in east and west; and we have seen how the centralized and monarchical structure of the western Church was reinforced by the barbarian invasions. Now so long as the Pope claimed an absolute power only in the west, Byzantium raised no objections. The Byzantines did not mind if the western Church was centralized, so long as the Papacy did not interfere in the east. The Pope, however, believed his immediate power of jurisdiction to extend to the east as well as to the west; and as soon as he tried to enforce this claim within the eastern Patriarchates, trouble was bound to arise. The Greeks assigned to the Pope a primacy of honour, but not the universal supremacy which he regarded as his due. The Pope viewed infallibility as his own prerogative; the Greeks held that in matters of the faith the final decision rested not with the Pope alone, but with a Council representing all the bishops of the Church. Here we have two different conceptions of the visible organization of the Church.

The Orthodox attitude to the Papacy is admirably expressed by a twelfth-century writer, Nicetas, Archbishop of Nicomedia:

My dearest brother, we do not deny to the Roman Church the primacy amongst the five sister Patriarchates; and we recognize her right to the most honourable seat at an Ecumenical Council. But she has separated herself from us by her own deeds, when through pride she assumed a monarchy which does not belong to her office ... How shall we accept decrees from her that have been issued without consulting us and even without our knowledge? If the Roman Pontiff, seated on the lofty throne of his glory wishes to thunder at us and, so to speak, hurl his mandates at us from on high, and if he wishes to judge us and even to rule us and our Churches, not by taking counsel with us but at his own arbitrary pleasure, what kind of brotherhood, or even what kind of parenthood can this be? We should be the slaves, not the sons, of such a Church, and the Roman See would not be the pious mother of sons but a hard and imperious mistress of slaves.'

That was how an Orthodox felt in the twelfth century, when the whole question had come out into the open. In earlier centuries the Greek attitude to the Papacy was basically the same, although not yet sharpened by controversy. Up to 850, Rome and the east avoided an open conflict over the Papal claims, but the divergence of views was not the less serious for being partially concealed.

The second great difficulty was the Filioque. The dispute involved the words about the Holy Spirit in the Nicene Constantinopolitan Creed. Originally the Creed ran: 'I believe ... in the Holy Spirit, the Lord, the Giver of Life, who proceeds from the Father, who with the Father and the Son together is worshipped and together glorified.' This, the original form, is recited unchanged by the east to this day. But the west inserted an extra phrase 'and from the Son' (in Latin, Filioque), so that the Creed now reads 'who proceeds from the Father and the Son'. It is not certain when and where this addition was first made, but it seems to have originated in Spain, as a safeguard against Arianism. At any rate the Spanish Church interpolated the Filioque at the third Council of Toledo (589), if not before. From Spain the addition spread to France and thence to Germany, where it was welcomed by Charlemagne and adopted at the semi-Iconoclast Council of Frankfort (794). It was writers at Charlemagne's court who first made the Filioque into an issue of controversy, accusing the Greeks of heresy because they recited the Creed in its original form. But Rome, with typical conservatism, continued to use the Creed without the Filioque until the start of the eleventh century. In 808 Pope Leo III wrote in a letter to Charlemagne that, although he himself believed the Filioque to be doctrinally sound, yet he considered it a mistake to tamper with the wording of the Creed. Leo deliberately had the Creed, without the Filioque, inscribed on silver plaques and set up in St Peter's. For the time being Rome acted as a mediator between the Franks and Byzantium.

It was not until 860 that the Greeks paid much attention to the Filioque, but once they did so, their reaction was sharply critical. The Orthodox objected (and still object) to this addition to the Creed, for two reasons. First, the Creed is the common possession of the whole Church, and if any change is to be made in it, this can only be done by an Ecumenical Council. The west, in altering the Creed without consulting the east, is guilty (as Khomiakov put it) of moral fratricide, of a sin against the unity of the Church. In the second place, most Orthodox believe the Filioque to be theologically untrue. They hold that the Spirit proceeds from the Father alone, and consider it a heresy to say that He proceeds from the Son as well. There are, however, some Orthodox who consider that the Filioque is not in itself heretical.

and is indeed admissible as a theological opinion - not a dogma - provided that it is properly explained. But even those who take this more moderate view still regard it as an unauthorized addition.

Besides these two major issues, the Papacy and the Filioque, there were certain lesser matters of Church worship and discipline which caused trouble between east and west: the Greeks allowed married clergy, the Latins insisted on priestly celibacy; the two sides had different rules of fasting; the Greeks used leavened bread in the Eucharist, the Latins unleavened bread. Around 850 east and west were still in full communion with one another and still formed one Church. Cultural and political divisions had combined to bring about an increasing estrangement, but there was no open schism. The two sides had different conceptions of Papal authority and recited the Creed in different forms, but these questions had not yet been brought fully into the open.

But in 1190 Theodore Balsamon, Patriarch of Antioch and a great authority on Canon Law, looked at matters very differently:

For many years [he does not say how many] the western Church has been divided in spiritual communion from the other four Patriarchates and has become alien to the Orthodox ... So no Latin should be given communion unless he first declares that he will abstain from the doctrines and customs that separate him from us, and that he will be subject to the Canons of the Church, in union with the Orthodox.'

In Balsamon's eyes, communion had been broken; there was a definite schism between east and west. The two no longer formed one visible Church. In this transition from estrangement to schism, four incidents are of particular importance: the quarrel between Photius and Pope Nicolas I (usually known as the 'Photian schism': the east would prefer to call it the 'schism of Nicolas'); the incident of the Diptychs in 1009; the attempt at reconciliation in 1053-4 and its disastrous sequel; and the Crusades.

From Estrangement to Schism (858-1204)

In 858, fifteen years after the triumph of icons under Theodora, a new Patriarch of Constantinople was appointed - Photius, known to the Orthodox Church as St Photius the Great. He has been termed 'the most distinguished thinker, the most outstanding politician, and the most skillful diplomat ever to hold office as Patriarch of Constantinople.' Soon after his accession he became involved in a dispute with Pope Nicolas I (858-67). The previous Patriarch, St Ignatius, had been exiled by the Emperor and while in exile had resigned under pressure. The supporters of Ignatius, declining to regard this resignation as valid, considered Photius a usurper. When Photius sent a letter to the Pope announcing his accession, Nicolas decided that before recognizing Photius he would look further into the quarrel between the new Patriarch and the Ignatian party. Accordingly in 861 he sent legates to Constantinople.

Photius had no desire to start a dispute with the Papacy. He treated the legates with great deference, inviting them to preside at a council in Constantinople, which was to settle the issue between Ignatius and himself. The legates agreed, and together with the rest of the council they decided that Photius was the legitimate Patriarch. But when his legates returned to Rome, Nicolas declared that they had exceeded their powers, and he disowned their decision. He then proceeded to retry the case himself at Rome: a council held under his presidency in 863 recognized Ignatius as Patriarch, and proclaimed Photius to be deposed from all priestly dignity. The Byzantines took no notice of this condemnation, and sent no answer to the Pope's letters. Thus an open breach existed between the Churches of Rome and Constantinople.

The dispute clearly involved the Papal claims. Nicolas was a great reforming Pope, with an exalted idea of the prerogatives of his see, and he had already done much to establish an absolute power over all bishops in the west. But he believed this absolute power to extend to the east also: as he put it in a letter of 865, the Pope is endowed with authority 'over all the earth, that is, over every Church'. This was precisely what the Byzantines were not prepared to grant. Confronted with the dispute between Photius and Ignatius, Nicolas thought that he saw a golden opportunity to enforce his claim to universal jurisdiction: he would make both parties submit to his arbitration. But he realized that Photius had submitted voluntarily to the inquiry by the Papal legates, and that his action could not be taken as a recognition of Papal supremacy. This (among other reasons) was why Nicolas had cancelled his legates' decisions. The Byzantines for their part were willing to allow appeals to Rome, but only under the

specific conditions laid down on of the Council of Sardica (343). This Canon states that a bishop, if under sentence of condemnation, can appeal to Rome, and the Pope, if he sees cause, can order a retrial; this retrial, however, is not to be conducted by the Pope himself at Rome, but by the bishops of the provinces adjacent to that of the condemned bishop. Nicolas, so the Byzantines felt, in reversing the decisions of his legates and demanding a retrial at Rome itself, was going far beyond the terms of this Canon. They regarded his behaviour as an unwarrantable and uncanonical interference in the affairs of another Patriarchate.

Soon not only the Papal claims but the Filioque became involved in the dispute. Byzantium and the west (chiefly the Germans) were both launching great missionary ventures among the Slavs.' The two lines of missionary advance, from the east and from the west, soon converged; and when Greek and German missionaries found themselves at work in the same land, it was difficult to avoid a conflict, since the two missions were run on widely different principles. The clash naturally brought to the fore the question of the Filioque, used by the Germans in the Creed, but not used by the Greeks. The chief point of trouble was Bulgaria, a country which Rome and Constantinople alike were anxious to add to their sphere of jurisdiction. The Khan Boris was at first inclined to ask the German missionaries for baptism: threatened, however, with a Byzantine invasion, he changed his policy and around 865 accepted baptism from Greek clergy. But Boris wanted the Church in Bulgaria to be independent, and when Constantinople refused to grant autonomy, he turned to the west in hope of better terms. Given a free hand in Bulgaria, the Latin missionaries promptly launched a violent attack on the Greeks, singling out the points where Byzantine practice differed from their own: married clergy, rules of fasting, and above all the Filioque. At Rome itself the Filioque was still not in use, but Nicolas gave full support to the Germans when they insisted upon its insertion in Bulgaria. The Papacy, which in 808 had mediated between the Franks and the Greeks, was now neutral no longer.

Photius was naturally alarmed by the extension of German influence in the Balkans, on the very borders of the Byzantine Empire; but he was much more alarmed by the question of the Filioque, now brought forcibly to his attention. In 867 he took action. He wrote an Encyclical Letter to the other Patriarchs of the east, denouncing the Filioque at length and charging those who used it with heresy. Photius has often been blamed for writing this letter: even the great Roman Catholic historian Francis Dvornik who is in general highly sympathetic to Photius, calls his action on this occasion a futile attack, and says 'the lapse was inconsiderate, hasty, and big with fatal consequences'. But if Photius really considered the Filioque heretical, what else could he do except speak his mind? It must also be remembered that it was not Photius who first made the Filioque a matter of controversy, but Charlernagne and his scholars seventy years before: the west was the original aggressor, not the east. Photius followed up his letter by summoning a council to Constantinople, which declared Pope Nicolas excommunicate, terming him 'a heretic who ravages the vineyard of the Lord'.

At this critical point in the dispute, the whole situation suddenly changed. In this same year (867) Photius was deposed from the Patriarchate by the Emperor. Ignatius became Patriarch once more, and communion with Rome was restored. In 869-70 another council was held at Constantinople, known as the 'Anti-Photian Council', which condemned and anathematized Photius, reversing the decisions of 867. This council, later reckoned in the west as the eighth Ecumenical Council, opened with the unimpressive total of 12 bishops, although numbers at subsequent sessions rose to 103.

But there were further changes to come. The 869-70 council requested the Emperor to resolve the status of the Bulgarian Church, and not surprisingly he decided that it should be assigned to the Patriarchate of Constantinople. Realizing that Rome would allow him less independence than Byzantium, Boris accepted this decision. From 870, then, the German missionaries were expelled and the Filioque was heard no more in the confines of Bulgaria. Nor was this all. At Constantinople, Ignatius and Photius were reconciled to one another, and when Ignatius died in 877, Photius once more succeeded him as Patriarch. In 879 yet another council was held in Constantinople, attended by 383 bishops - a notable contrast with the meagre total at the anti-Photian gathering ten years previously. The council of 869 was anathematized and all condemnations of Photius were withdrawn; these decisions were accepted without protest at Rome. So Photius ended victorious, recognized by Rome and ecclesiastically master of Bulgaria. Until recently it

was thought -hat there was a second 'Photian schism', but Dr Dvornik has proved with devastating conclusiveness that this second schism is a myth: in Photius' later period of office (877-86) communion between Constantinople and the Papacy remained unbroken. The Pope at this time, John VIII (872-82), was no friend to the Franks and did not press the question of the Filioque, nor did he attempt to enforce the Papal claims in the east. Perhaps he recognized how seriously the policy of Nicolas had endangered the unity of Christendom.

Thus the schism was outwardly healed, but no real solution had been reached concerning the two great points of difference which the dispute between Nicolas and Photius had forced into the open. Matters had been patched up, and that was all.

Photius, always honoured in the east as a saint, a leader of the Church, and a theologian, has in the past been regarded by the west with less enthusiasm, as the author of a schism and little else. His good qualities are now more widely appreciated. 'If I am right in my conclusions,' so Dr Dvornik ends his monumental study, 'we shall be free once more to recognize in Photius a great Churchman, a learned humanist, and a genuine Christian, generous enough to forgive his enemies, and to take the first step towards reconciliation.

At the beginning of the eleventh century there was fresh trouble over the Filioque. The Papacy at last adopted the addition: at the coronation of Emperor Henry II at Rome in 1014, the Creed was sung in its interpolated form. Five years earlier, in 1009, the newly-elected Pope Sergius IV sent a letter to Constantinople which may have contained the Filioque, although this is not certain. Whatever the reason, the Patriarch of Constantinople, also called Sergius, did not include the new Pope's name in the Diptychs: these are lists, kept by each Patriarch, which contain the names of the other Patriarchs, living and departed, whom he recognizes as orthodox. The Diptychs are a visible sign of the unity of the Church, and deliberately to omit a person's name from them is tantamount to a declaration that one is not in communion with him. After 1009 the Pope's name did not appear again in the Diptychs of Constantinople; technically, therefore, the Churches of Rome and Constantinople were out of communion from that date. But it would be unwise to press this technicality too far. Diptychs were frequently incomplete, and so do not form an infallible guide to Church relations. The Constantinopolitan lists before 1009 often lacked the Pope's name, simply because new Popes at their accession failed to notify the east. The omission in 1009 aroused no comment at Rome, and even at Constantinople people quickly forgot why and when the Pope's name had first been dropped from the Diptychs.

As the eleventh century proceeded, new factors brought relations between the Papacy and the eastern Patriarchates to a further crisis. The previous century had been a period of grave instability and confusion for the see of Rome, a century which Cardinal Baronius justly termed an age of iron and lead in the history of the Papacy. But under German influence Rome now reformed itself, and through the rule of men such as Hildebrand (Pope Gregory VII) it gained a position of power in the west such as it had never before achieved. The reformed Papacy naturally revived the claims to universal jurisdiction which Nicolas had made. The Byzantines on their side had grown accustomed to dealing with a Papacy that was for the most part weak and disorganized, and so they found it difficult to adapt themselves to the new situation. Matters were made worse by political factors, such as the military aggression of the Normans in Byzantine Italy, and the commercial encroachments of the Italian maritime cities in the eastern Mediterranean during the eleventh and twelfth centuries.

In 1054 there was a severe quarrel. The Normans had been forcing the Greeks in Byzantine Italy to conform to Latin usages; the Patriarch of Constantinople, Michael Cerularius, in return demanded that the Latin churches at Constantinople should adopt Greek practices, and in 1052, when they refused, he closed them. This was perhaps harsh, but as Patriarch he was fully entitled to act in this manner. Among the practices to which Michael and his supporters particularly objected was the Latin use of 'azymes' or unleavened bread in the Eucharist, an issue which had not figured in the dispute of the ninth century. In 1053, however, Cerularius took up a more conciliatory attitude and wrote to Pope Leo IX, offering to restore the Pope's name to the Diptychs. In response to this offer, and to settle the disputed questions of Greek and Latin usages, Leo in 1054 sent three legates to Constantinople, the chief of them being Humbert, Bishop of Silva Candida. The choice of Cardinal Humbert was unfortunate, for both he and

Cerularius were men of stiff and intransigent temper, whose mutual encounter was not likely to promote good will among Christians. The legates, when they called on Cerularius, did not create a favourable impression. Thrusting a letter from the Pope at him, they retired without giving the usual salutations; the letter itself, although signed by Leo, had in fact been drafted by Humbert, and was distinctly unfriendly in tone. After this the Patriarch refused to have further dealings with the legates. Eventually Humbert lost patience, and laid a Bull of Excommunication against Cerularius on the altar of the Church of the Holy Wisdom: among other ill-founded charges in this document, Humbert accused the Greeks of omitting the Filioque from the Creed! Humbert promptly left Constantinople without offering any further explanation of his act, and on returning to Italy he represented the whole incident as a great victory for the see of Rome. Cerularius and his synod retaliated by anathematizing Humbert (but not the Roman Church as such). The attempt at reconciliation left matters worse than before.

But even after 1054 friendly relations between east and west continued. The two parts of Christendom were not yet conscious of a great gulf of separation between them, and people on both sides still hoped that the misunderstandings could be cleared up without too much difficulty. The dispute remained something of which ordinary Christians in east and west were largely unaware. It was the Crusades which made the schism definitive: they introduced a new spirit of hatred and bitterness, and they brought the whole issue down to the popular level.

From the military point of view, however, the Crusades began with great éclat. Antioch was captured from the Turks in 1098, Jerusalem in 1099: the first Crusade was a brilliant, if bloody, success. At both Antioch and Jerusalem the Crusaders proceeded to set up Latin Patriarchs. At Jerusalem this was reasonable, since the see was vacant at the time; and although in the years that followed there existed a succession of Greek Patriarchs of Jerusalem, living exiled in Cyprus, yet within Palestine itself the whole population, Greek as well as Latin, at first accepted the Latin Patriarch as their head. A Russian pilgrim at Jerusalem in 1106-7, Abbot Daniel of Tchernigov, found Greeks and Latins worshipping together in harmony at the Holy Places, though he noted with satisfaction that at the ceremony of the Holy Fire the Greek lamps were lit miraculously while the Latin had to be lit from the Greek. But at Antioch the Crusaders found a Greek Patriarch actually in residence: shortly afterwards, it is true, he withdrew to Constantinople, but the local Greek population was unwilling to recognize the Latin Patriarch whom the Crusaders set up in his place. Thus from 1100 there existed in effect a local schism at Antioch. After 1187, when Saladin captured Jerusalem, the situation in the Holy land deteriorated: two rivals, resident within Palestine itself, now divided the Christian population between them - a Latin Patriarch at Acre, a Greek at Jerusalem. These local schisms at Antioch and Jerusalem were a sinister development. Rome was very far away, and if Rome and Constantinople quarrelled, what practical difference did it make to the average Christian in Syria or Palestine? But when two rival bishops claimed the same throne and two hostile congregations existed in the same city, the division became an immediate reality in which simple believers were directly implicated. It was the Crusades that turned the dispute into something that involved whole Christian congregations, and not just church leaders; the Crusaders brought the schism down to the local level.

But worse was to follow in 1204, with the taking of Constantinople during the Fourth Crusade. The Crusaders were originally bound for Egypt, but were persuaded by Alexius, son of Isaac Angelus, the dispossessed Emperor of Byzantium, to turn aside to Constantinople in order to restore him and his father to the throne. This western intervention in Byzantine politics did not go happily, and eventually the Crusaders, disgusted by what they regarded as Greek duplicity, lost patience and sacked the city. Eastern Christendom has never forgotten those three appalling days of pillage. 'Even the Saracens are merciful and kind,' protested Nicetas Choniates, 'compared with these men who bear the Cross of Christ on their shoulders.' In the words of Sir Steven Runciman, 'The Crusaders brought not peace but a sword; and the sword was to sever Christendom. The long-standing doctrinal disagreements were now reinforced on the Greek side by an intense national hatred, by a feeling of resentment and indignation against western aggression and sacrilege. After 1204 there can be no doubt that Christian east and Christian west were divided into two.

Orthodoxy and Rome each believes itself to have been right and its opponent wrong upon the points of doctrine that arose between them; and so Rome and Orthodoxy since the schism have each claimed to be

the true Church. Yet each, while believing in the rightness of its own cause, must look back at the past with sorrow and repentance. Both sides must in honesty acknowledge that they could and should have done more to prevent the schism. Both sides were guilty of mistakes on the human level. Orthodox, for example, must blame themselves for the pride and contempt with which during the Byzantine period they regarded the west; they must blame themselves for incidents such as the riot of 1182, when many Latin residents at Constantinople were massacred by the Byzantine populace. (None the less there is no action on the Byzantine side which can be compared to the sack of 1204.) And each side, while claiming to be the one true Church, must admit that on the human level it has been grievously impoverished by the separation. The Greek east and the Latin west needed and still need one another. For both parties the great schism has proved a great tragedy.

[End of Article]

Ignorance: The Seed of Bigotry. Arrogance and Intransigence: the Womb of Bigotry.

John MacArthur, back in action, now slandering Eastern Orthodoxy

<https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=ibUI71c84tg>

Now, let's listen to the Orthodox intransigence on the matter, also delightful to that one spirit who most loves the schism of the Flesh of Christ:

Such are, briefly, the serious and arbitrary innovations concerning the faith and the administrative constitution of the Church, which the Papal Church has introduced and which, it is evident, the Papal Encyclical purposely passes over in silence. These innovations, which have reference to essential points of the faith and of the administrative system of the Church, and which are manifestly opposed to the ecclesiastical condition of the first nine centuries, **make the longed-for union of the Churches impossible:** and every pious and orthodox heart is filled with inexpressible sorrow on seeing the **Papal Church disdainfully persisting in them, and not in the least contributing to the sacred purpose of union by rejecting those heretical innovations** and coming back to the ancient condition of the one holy, catholic and apostolic Church of Christ, of which she also at that time formed a part.... [A]s has been said before, the Western Church, from the tenth century downwards, has privily brought into herself through the papacy various and **strange and heretical doctrines and innovations**, and so she has been **torn away and removed far from the true and orthodox Church of Christ.**

—From the Patriarchal Encyclical of 1895, the response to the Papal Encyclical of Pope Leo XIII on the subject of reunion (emphasis mine)[i.e. emphasis from original source - Author].

What has changed in Roman Catholicism that would make this wholly Orthodox encyclical "outdated"?

That the Latins are heretics there is no need of our producing any proof for the present....Enough was said concerning them by St. Mark of Ephesus in Florence (at the twenty-fifth general assembly), who spoke frankly as follows: We have split ourselves off from the Latins for no other reason than the fact that they are not only schismatics but also heretics." **Wherefore we must not even think of uniting with them.**

—St. Nikodemos the Hagiorite, from "Concerning the Latins (Roman Catholics) and Their Baptisms" (emphasis mine).

http://orthodoxinfo.com/ecumenism/ea_rome.aspx

I'm very confused.....so I'm damned if I'm not, like John MacArthur, an American Calvinist from Sun Valley in L.A., but I'm also damned if I'm not an Eastern Orthodox carefully observing traditions from many thousands of miles in the other direction.

I'm in quite a pickle indeed.

I have a modest request. For my birthday, can I pretty please have John MacArthur and that Serbian Orthodox bishop locked up in an MMA ring and be forced to preach at each other, in their most vociferous, ignorant, hateful mode of talking, totally talking past each other and failing to see that, doctrinally, they're essentially saying the same things in different phraseology?

Please, pretty please, Mary, O Goddess Supreme, higher than the Trinity, to whom I, as a benighted Satanic Catholic, entrust my whole salvation, You, O Mary Mother Goddess who recognizes my works and rewards them with justification aside from the Cross, if I'm very, very good and excel in my beloved works righteousness, can I pretty, pretty please be granted my birthday wish? I light candles and burn incense before the statue I made of you each night in worship of Your Divinity, O Mother Goddess. I worship every saint, and have pictures of them hanging from all of my walls. I scorn the Cross and consider all my works equal to the work of Christ on the Cross and as He descended into Hell. In communion with the Pope, my God on earth, whom I also worship in the Exalted Pantheon of all the Saint-Gods, I pledge my eternal allegiance to you, O Queen! All Hail Mary, Goddess Supreme!

(For the more slow among you, that was sarcasm.)

Tim Keller on Evangelism in the 21st Century
<https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=DHQBoLo31Ns>

Narrowly clinging to your tradition, and considering every fidget and facet of it, as presented in the language you understand and feel comfortable with, as the only truth, with all other representations and traditions being lies from the pit of Hell, is not Christianity. It is not the Gospel of Christ. It is tribalism. It is a self-serving, self-indulgent ethnic and tribal factionalism.

One might even say that such an approach to the Church is heresy.

The Church, the Flesh of Christ, should be One, Holy, Catholic Church -- totally unified and totally pristine and coherent, and, insofar as our limited, sinful mortal natures and the Divine dispensation for this era in history permits, *correct* in its doctrines and structure.

The Scandalous Schism, the total fracture of the Church into Protestant, Catholic, and Orthodox shards, along with the innumerable fragments of other Christian communities all in disarray, absolutely prevents the Church from coming to fulfillment, that is, from attaining the Pleroma of its prophetic origins. In other words, the World to Come can never come so long as the Flesh of Christ remains riven. It is the nourishment, growth, and perfection of the Whole Church that is the fundamental prerequisite for the Second Coming, both the Millennium and the New Jerusalem.

Each tradition believes itself to be in possession of *the truth*, the total truth, and each tradition believes that somehow it will conquer the other traditions, gobbling them up, smashing everything that they don't like and graciously conferring the benefit of their essential wisdom.

This is a childish delusion of grandeur.

It is also simply not the true nature of the Church, because it is not the nature of reality.

We require more of a scientific approach to ecclesiology, which in turn, we may hope and pray, might nourish a more honest and truthful approach to ecclesial life.

What we have now, almost universally, is the rule of the partisan, rather than the discipline of the scientist. We do not approach the question of ecclesiology from the perspective of one who simply wants to discover the truth -- the real truth that is objective, *out there*, rather than the subjective worldviews (mental maps) in which we were raised that comfort us, coddle us, and tell us that, happily, we were born the special possessors of all wisdom.

We need to cultivate the ability to overhear ourselves, to see ourselves act, all in an effort to cultivate the question rather than rush towards some preconceived answer.

Much of our problem is simple tribalism, which is a difficult problem to solve.

But much of our problem also stems from the arrogance of theologians and the paranoid intransigence of pastors. And there, I can help.

First, the intransigence of pastors. Their response: O foolish one, we are not scientists dissecting the Church in a laboratory, oh no, we are soldiers for Christ, responsible for saving souls!

Okay. Cool story, bro. How's that been working out? How has the effort to demolish any of the major traditions (or any of the traditions) been going? Other than the stray convert here or there (which really just cancel each other out in the end), what major accomplishments has this "mission field" approach yielded?

And it's not to say that the Scandalous Schism has just started out. Who can seriously say: Oh, just give us 100 years and Catholicism will be gone! Hahahaha! Or, the Orthodox will embrace Latin Christianity in 100 years, all we need to do is keep calling them schismatics! How clever and pious are we!

We've been doing this for 500 years with Protestantism and 1000 years with the East-West Schism.

What's your strategy? Wait another 500 years? Another 1000 years? "Our truth is so absolutely the only truth, the awesome truth without which no Christian can be saved, that we must endure in our tribalistic tradition no matter what! 1000 years! 10,000 years! A million years!"

Anti-Christ shall have ground us all into sawdust by then.

Because, let's get really real. Anyone who has any meaningful understanding of their major tradition - Trinitarian Protestantism, Catholicism, or Orthodoxy - will not be swayed by the rantings and ravings of the ultra-sectarian triumphalist partisans who froth and fume.

I don't watch John MacArthur's bigotry about Catholicism and feel spiritually challenged. I'm angry that I live in a country with such bigotry and gain some small pinprick glimpse of what an African-American must feel like living in this bigoted country.

But, intellectually, John MacArthur's rant about Catholicism troubles me precisely this much: 0. Zero. Nada. Zilch.

Because it is not an honest or accurate rendition of what is readily available to anyone with an internet connection or a library card, or by someone who has actually had much of anything to do with Catholics.

It is a straw man. I can't even say that it is a caricature, because a caricature actually corresponds to real features, albeit exaggerating them. It is a simple, ignorant slander.

And then the sectarian partisan supports his slander.....with slanders from centuries ago from even more partisan and more bigoted authors.

Anyone who would watch something like that (within one of the three major divisions of the Church) and feel threatened, simply has either a weak will, mesmerized by any performance that strikes them at any given moment, or has always held a shallow understanding of their own tradition.

What Catholic could call all priests devils? Only a "Catholic" who had never gone to Mass or had any sustained interaction with the priesthood or the Catholic world. Have you ever been to a Catholic hospital or high school or university? What kind of fantasyland is this guy living in? I know what fantasyland: the fantasyland of the bigoted writers who fought the Thirty Years' War. His whole interaction with Catholicism is the books he inherited from his pappy and his grandpappies.

What Catholic with any meaningful knowledge of the Church's history could call men like Leo XIII, Pius X, Pius XII, John XXIII, John Paul II, Benedict XVI, and Francis the Anti-Christ? Have you read any of their books? Benedict is a saintly old professor who writes lucid and lovely theological gems. Francis is a paragon of humility who has spent his entire life in service to the poor. If you think that they're the Anti-Christ, you're going to be blown away by the real thing. Happily for John MacArthur, he'll be dead when the real Anti-Christ comes, and it will be some other prelate's responsibility to deal with him. But MacArthur won't have done that prelate any favors by rubbing salt into the wounds of the Church's divisions, rather than sensibly, humbly, and *honestly* addressing ***objective reality, in a scientific and scholarly fashion*** - **so that when the real Anti-Christ comes we have a strong, united, truly and totally gracious Church to resist him.**

So, no, pastors of the sectarian partisan disposition, we are not - and never will be - on the verge of some grand conquest of two of the three traditions by one of them. If any sect shall conquer any sect in the 3rd Millennium, it will be secular modernity destroying Christianity. Only the grace of an All-Sovereign God, and His preordained Plan of Salvation, shall prevent it, because the Church on earth is doing little to nothing to resist it.

As for the theologian sectarians, those who are absolutely convinced that the tradition of their upbringing holds the whole truth -- it's bullshit.

You're starting from your conclusions and then ginning up any premises you can to serve your conclusions.

That is not how science - the search for the *actual* truth - works.

That is how propaganda works.

Frankly, I think, although I am not learned enough yet in Orthodoxy to say for certain, that if any tradition has a right to claim predominance, it is the Orthodox.

But, for all the wonders of the Orthodox faith and tradition, the Orthodox Church, in general, is vain, pompous, aggressive, delusional, narrow-minded, trapped within an ethnic and nationalist self-preference that reeks of rank chauvinism, and utterly hidebound in the past.

So, there's that.

My Big Fat Greek Wedding
Greek School

<https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=VL9whwwTK6I>

<https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=NOH35IGxVBU>

They also have such a fixation on the Church Fathers that they fail to see through them to the true Head of the Church - Christ. Now, I am not saying that you can just chuck the Fathers out the window - that would be insane foolishness and heresy. But, that approach defends the origins of the Church without fully appreciating how the Church must develop and grow. Development and growth do not mean heresy, or the abandonment of sacred truths -- it means seeing those truths in deeper and deeper ways, and even the development of new structures that can meet the challenges of changing times. The flesh of the boy will still be the same flesh of the man, but it would be wise for the boy to trade in his sailor suit for a man's business suit.

How can a tradition which claims to have zealously and exactly guarded the most ineffable mysteries of theology and the liturgy have so magnificently failed to cultivate to any kind of mastery the theological *virtues*: you know, faith, hope, and love? Perhaps you should have spent less time mastering the theory of the Trinity, and more time imitating the Inner Life of the Trinity.

As Father Seraphim Rose said, (and he was no friend to ecumenism), Orthodoxy requires, above all, an Orthodoxy of the heart.

Each tradition's cries of the other's heresies are so useless and fall on such deaf ears, even upon the ears of the actively religious, not only because of each of the tradition's tribalisms, but because the cries of heresy simply talk past the tradition they're talking to.

They're not actually dealing with the *real* tradition, trying to weigh and measure and consider *like a scientist* the full spectrum of the data, engaging in objective, reasoned investigations.

If you start an investigation knowing precisely where you'll end up, you're not investigating, you're propagandizing.

The Art of Observation

<https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=10fUJHluYA>

So let us offer a theological investigation. Not an absolute truth that cannot err that I read in my grandpappy's library in my sailor suit, but a hypothesis that actually tries to wrestle with reality.

Protestants talk of an apostasy beginning around the year A.D. 400 and ending with the glorious appearance of Martin Luther. Mormons speak of an apostasy that began immediately upon the deaths of the apostles and that ended with the glorious appearance of Joseph Smith.

Both the Protestant and the Mormon understanding of the Church's history - of the existence and growth of the Flesh of Christ through time - presupposes that at some point in the past, there was a healthy patient, that fresh, bright-eyed boy, the Church, the Flesh of Christ, and then that poor boy was tapped with Satan's sorcerer's wand and *boom - presto chango* - it was no longer a healthy real boy, but a wicked monster - a diabolical Frankenstein in service to Satan.

Then, that Satanic Frankenstein stalked the earth for either 1000 years if you're a Protestant, or almost 1800 years if you're a Mormon. And then, the gruesome Frankenstein was only slain by - pick your savior: the dynamic duo of Luther and Calvin or the superman Joseph Smith.

Okay.

Then I suggest we prosecute the Holy Spirit for negligent endangerment of a child. Certainly, an All-Righteous Father would have at least put his child, the Church, in foster care.

But no, God's Wisdom was to permit a Frankenstein Church to persist for millennia. And then, only to have that Frankenstein Church defeated by a second savior, this time not in the form of a God-man descended into Hell to do battle with sin itself, but in the form of chalkboard theologians and a religious performance artist?

While I shudder at challenging such obvious wisdom, might I humbly offer a different perspective?

The world is a battlefield between God and Satan, between the Lord of Light and the Lord of Illusions. The Lord of Light casts true light into the world, illuminating His creation with truth, beauty, and goodness. The Lord of Illusions, the Devil, throws himself across this creation, attempting to *obscure - to hide, to occlude* - the truth, in an effort to damn others as he himself is damned.

So, where God is present, Satan distorts -- through perversion accomplished by the infection of sin - the usual suspects: pride, envy, anger, lust, greed, gluttony, and sloth.

Where God is not present, Satan invents through a parody of the Divine Creation.

Certainly, the Church was and is the work of God. So, where the Church *was*, present throughout the entire Mediterranean, you had the presence of God. So, Satan's natural tool is to pervert. Satan, where God is present, cannot simply parody something into existence by whole cloth - because you already have the ineradicable work of God present. Just as a man is led away from his marriage into adultery and abandonment of his family through a gradual falling away into pride, self-absorption, sloth, and lust, so too Satan attempts to insinuate himself into the Church and constantly tempt it to blindness and sinfulness.

But, does God simply abandon His works? Or, rather, does He combat the snares and stratagems of the Devil with His own battle plans?

And, is it likely that God simply left the field to Satan for thousands of years, abandoning the vast mass of believers to the dominion of such a spiritual Frankenstein?

No. It is not.

So, what you'll have is the intertwined action of God and Satan, struggling over God's creation through time.

The Church never became a Frankenstein, an un-Church, a Church of Satan.

But the Church must have been constantly plied with temptations -- those temptations that would most appeal to it, and which it would be most likely to fall for in any given period.

And, be sure, Satan likes to trip up the Protestant and Orthodox Churches too.

The early Church had been subject to temptations. Paul was constantly terrified and urged to turn back, and Paul even speaks of being afflicted by Satan in his flesh (though he doesn't discuss the specifics) (2 Corinthians 12:7). Peter was afraid of offending the Hebrew Christians and so, for a time, wouldn't eat with Gentiles. The synagogues expelled and persecuted the young faith. Nero, Domitian, and Diocletian, to name only a few, radically and hellishly persecuted the Church.

Now, finally with the reign of Constantine, legalizing the Church, *and favoring it*, the Church's time had come at last. Now it could be free of persecution, and even have the favor of the imperial government to carry out its work.

What a relief and gift that must have been. Like winning the lottery.

But, winning the lottery involves risks - and temptations.

Use your power. Organize yourself. Subject your opponents to the truth.

And then, when the Empire collapsed, the Western Church found itself in a chaos of competing barbarian hordes and early feudal proto-states.

Then the game became: Survive. Use your religious authority - your remaining power - to preserve the Church and some kind of semblance of order in the mad dystopia of the post-Roman vacuum.

So, we see in power the temptation to pride and in insecurity the temptation to exert control.

Now, if God had been inactive - away at the beach, on a business trip...if salvation history had been *Home Alone*, we might readily agree with our Protestant and Mormon brethren about the Great Apostasy - we should only have to determine its length.

But God assures the Church in the Bible that the Gates of Hell shall not prevail against it. St. Paul and all the apostles constantly preach about the Holy Spirit's stewardship of the Church. So, the Spirit must have been just as active - more active - in promoting graces in the Flesh of Christ as Satan was active in promoting diseases.

The superior metaphor, then, is not a healthy boy that magically was turned into a monster by Satan like in a fairy tale or Disney movie.

It is that Satan afflicted the young boy with various cancers, that, if left untreated and uncared for under the ministrations of the Spirit's graces, would eventually grow to terrible and fatal proportions.

Now, that does not mean that all of the growing boy's growth was cancerous. For, a growing boy's growing height and muscles and intellect will still be real growth, even as the growth of the cancer will be real cancer.

So, we don't have a Frankenstein Church of Satan's creation. We have a real Flesh of Christ, persisting and growing through time, in knowledge and grace, while also carrying within it a growing, and potentially metastasizing, cancer.

Now, at every stage, God offers victory over sin. When a man leads a life of sin, God always beckons him to return to grace, and if he starts to walk in that path, God will assist him.

But God believes in free will, so just as grace is always available and will always triumph if the person endures in that grace, people are also free to fall away from grace and follow a wayward path.

If the graces were the extension of the Church, the development of its liturgy, the elaboration of its philosophy, its deepening in the lives of the peasantry and the nobility, wouldn't its sins be parodies of its graces? Wouldn't liturgical development go hand in hand with potential excesses and decadences? Philosophical splendor march along with obscurantist pride? A deepening spirituality among the people perhaps eventually give way to complacency and boredom with religious topics - a turning to the more exciting and immediate things of the world when the spiritual things one first enthused about remained hidden over the horizon?

And, unlike physical cancer, in which you have no choice, the spiritual cancer of sin is always freely chosen or freely resisted. God would offer the unity of the Church...but Satan could tempt you to twist that to the pride of predominance. God offers you knowledge and wisdom and insight.....and Satan would tell you that you are so wise that you require no further insights, but can simply luxuriate and simmer in the perfection of what you already know. God offers you an authority over liturgy and doctrine.....and Satan tempts you to consider yourself supreme in the perfection and knowledge of your liturgy and doctrine.

We're not dealing with a Frankenstein Church, but a human Church, a human Flesh of Christ, filled with the Holy Spirit, but which must *cooperate* with the Spirit's Grace. It is not Satan's Frankenstein, but neither will God make it His Holy Zombie. The whole people of God, and especially the earthly shepherds, will necessarily make choices. As Moses set forth in Deuteronomy, the Church will either choose life or choose death.

And Satan loves to twist things off from themselves. As Satan is the most deranged spirit, with a magnitude of derangement (self-conflict) that we mortals simply cannot fathom, he will delight in deranging every situation. Twisting off wife from husband, father from son, brother from brother, and leadership from those who follow. Satan delights in turning a thing against itself, sundering it, ruining it, as he is totally ruined in the sunderance of sin.

So, wouldn't it be the height of Satan's dark art to twist the Church off from itself?

First, Satan might delight in twisting off the practical and administrative dimension of the Church from the speculative and mystical dimension (The East-West Schism). That would lead the missionary administrators shorn of the depths of the Gospel, and leave the keepers of the Gospel truth without much capacity for mission, holed up in a backwater, unable to sweep the world in evangelization.

And, once he's done that, he might work further mischief. Perhaps using other, external forces to try to destroy the Eastern Church. And attacking the fulcrum of the Church in Rome - turning the dimension of wisdom of the Church (theology) against the dimension of authority in the Church (doctrine). Wouldn't that be utterly delightful? To have theology that could simply

metastasize into whatever vain nonsense the theologian or church pollinator desired, without any supervision from the practical, stolid authority. And to have authority rudderless, spinning its wheels without having the inner creativity and dynamism to break new ground and conquer new horizons for Christ.

I mean, consider it: it's brilliant. A wisdom that races off into every heresy imaginable. And an authority too hidebound and blind to confront a world passing it by and leaving it behind.

It's just such a brilliant strategic architecture.

And it all worked because the theologians chose their understanding rather than obedience. And the holders of authority chose their power over their responsibility to be servants.

What diabolically brilliant strokes.

So, we're not dealing with a poor boy zapped into a Frankenstein around the year 400, much less in the 1st century, magically saved as if in a fairy tale by Prince Luther and Prince Calvin. We're dealing with real human beings and real human societies in a legitimate and real Flesh of Christ, all of whom *made choices*. All of whom could have allied their understanding with obedience, and allied their power with humility -- but *who chose not to* - and in the process, utterly tore the Church apart - sundered it into tragically broken pieces, shattered on the floor.

Torn

Natalie Imbruglia

<https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=VV1XWJN3nJo>

So, what shall we say?

God makes choices. Man makes choices. Our choices constitute the orientation of our freedom. And the orientation of our freedom determines our eternal destiny.

Choose Christ.

And the only way to choose Christ is to choose the Flesh of Christ. And that requires the abandonment of our prejudices, ignorances, and self-constructed delusions. Only in seeing each other for what we actually are, rather than what we fancy others to be, or fancy ourselves to be, can we end the horror of schism. And only in healing the plague of schism can we ever hope to truly understand - and live - the Gospel.

The End of the Schism and the Marriage of the Whole Church

Christina Perri

A Thousand Years

<https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=rtOvBOTyX00>

And in your new marriage, you would be well advised to take to heart some basic and sound advice.



Masters of Love

Science says lasting relationships come down to—you guessed it—kindness and generosity.

[EMILY ESFAHANI SMITH](#) JUN 12, 2014

Every day in June, the most popular wedding month of the year, about 13,000 American couples will say “I do,” committing to a lifelong relationship that will be full of friendship, joy, and love that will carry them forward to their final days on this earth.

Except, of course, it doesn't work out that way for most people. The majority of marriages fail, either ending in divorce and separation or devolving into bitterness and dysfunction. Of all the people who get married, only three in ten remain in healthy, happy marriages, as psychologist Ty Tashiro points out in his book *The Science of Happily Ever After*, which was published earlier this year.

Social scientists first started studying marriages by observing them in action in the 1970s in response to a crisis: Married couples were divorcing at unprecedented rates. Worried about the impact these divorces would have on the children of the broken marriages, psychologists decided to cast their scientific net on couples, bringing them into the lab to observe them and determine what the ingredients of a healthy, lasting relationship were. Was each unhappy family unhappy in its own way, as Tolstoy claimed, or did the miserable marriages all share something toxic in common?

"Disaster" couples showed signs of being in fight-or-flight mode in their relationships. Having a conversation sitting next to their spouse was, to their bodies, like facing off with a saber-toothed tiger.

Psychologist John Gottman was one of those researchers. For the past four decades, he has studied thousands of couples in a quest to figure out what makes relationships work. I recently had the chance to interview Gottman and his wife Julie, also a psychologist, in New York City. Together, the renowned experts on marital stability run The Gottman Institute, which is devoted to helping couples build and maintain loving, healthy relationships based on scientific studies.

John Gottman began gathering his most critical findings in 1986, when he set up "The Love Lab" with his colleague Robert Levenson at the University of Washington. Gottman and Levenson brought newlyweds into the lab and watched them interact with each other. With a team of researchers, they hooked the couples up to electrodes and asked the couples to speak about their relationship, like how they met, a major conflict they were facing together, and a positive memory they had. As they spoke, the electrodes measured the subjects' blood flow, heart rates, and how much they sweat

they produced. Then the researchers sent the couples home and followed up with them six years later to see if they were still together.

From the data they gathered, Gottman separated the couples into two major groups: the *masters* and the *disasters*. The masters were still happily together after six years. The disasters had either broken up or were chronically unhappy in their marriages. When the researchers analyzed the data they gathered on the couples, they saw clear differences between the masters and disasters. The disasters looked calm during the interviews, but their physiology, measured by the electrodes, told a different story. Their heart rates were quick, their sweat glands were active, and their blood flow was fast. Following thousands of couples longitudinally, Gottman found that the more physiologically active the couples were in the lab, the quicker their relationships deteriorated over time.

But what does physiology have to do with anything? The problem was that the disasters showed all the signs of arousal—of being in fight-or-flight mode—in their relationships. Having a conversation sitting next to their spouse was, to their bodies, like facing off with a saber-toothed tiger. Even when they were talking about pleasant or mundane facets of their relationships, they were prepared to attack and be attacked. This sent their heart rates soaring and made them more aggressive toward each other. For example, each member of a couple could be talking about how their days had gone, and a highly aroused husband might say to his wife, “Why don’t you start talking about your day. It won’t take you very long.”

The masters, by contrast, showed low physiological arousal. They felt calm and connected together, which translated into warm and affectionate behavior, even when they fought. It’s not that the masters had, by default, a better physiological make-up than the disasters; it’s that masters had created a climate of trust and intimacy that made both of them more emotionally and thus physically comfortable.

Stressful Relationships vs. Isolation: The Battle for Our Lives

Gottman wanted to know more about how the masters created that culture of love and intimacy, and how the disasters squashed it. In a follow-up study in 1990, he designed a lab on the University of Washington campus to look like a beautiful bed and breakfast retreat. He invited 130 newlywed couples to spend the day at this retreat and watched them as they did what couples normally do on vacation: cook, clean, listen to music, eat, chat, and hang out. And Gottman made a critical discovery in this study—one that gets at the heart of why some relationships thrive while others languish.

Throughout the day, partners would make requests for connection, what Gottman calls “bids.” For example, say that the husband is a bird enthusiast and notices a goldfinch fly across the yard. He might say to his wife, “Look at that beautiful bird outside!” He’s not just commenting on the bird here: he’s requesting a response from his wife—a sign of interest or support—hoping they’ll connect, however momentarily, over the bird.

The wife now has a choice. She can respond by either “turning toward” or “turning away” from her husband, as Gottman puts it. Though the bird-bid might seem minor and silly, it can actually reveal a lot about the health of the relationship. The husband thought the bird was important enough to bring it up in conversation and the question is whether his wife recognizes and respects that.

People who turned toward their partners in the study responded by engaging the bidder, showing interest and support in the bid. Those who didn’t—those who turned away—would not respond or respond minimally and continue doing whatever they were doing, like watching TV or reading the paper. Sometimes they would respond with overt hostility, saying something like, “Stop interrupting me, I’m reading.”

These bidding interactions had profound effects on marital well-being. Couples who had divorced after a six-year follow up had “turn-toward bids” 33 percent of the time. Only three in ten of their bids for emotional connection were met with intimacy. The couples who were still together after six years had “turn-toward bids” 87 percent of the time. Nine times out of ten, they were meeting their partner’s emotional needs.

* * *

By observing these types of interactions, Gottman can predict with up to 94 percent certainty whether couples—straight or gay, rich or poor, childless or not—will be broken up, together and unhappy, or together and happy several years later. Much of it comes down to the spirit couples bring to the relationship. Do they bring kindness and generosity; or contempt, criticism, and hostility?

“There’s a habit of mind that the masters have,” Gottman explained in an interview, “which is this: they are scanning social environment for things they can appreciate and say thank you for. They are building this culture of respect and appreciation very purposefully. Disasters are scanning the social environment for partners’ mistakes.”

Contempt is the number one factor that tears couples apart.

“It’s not just scanning environment,” chimed in Julie Gottman. “It’s scanning the *partner* for what the *partner* is doing right or scanning him for what he’s doing wrong and criticizing versus respecting him and expressing appreciation.”

Contempt, they have found, is the number one factor that tears couples apart. People who are focused on criticizing their partners miss a whopping

50 percent of positive things their partners are doing and they see negativity when it's not there. People who give their partner the cold shoulder—deliberately ignoring the partner or responding minimally—damage the relationship by making their partner feel worthless and invisible, as if they're not there, not valued. And people who treat their partners with contempt and criticize them not only kill the love in the relationship, but they also [kill their partner's ability](#) to fight off viruses and cancers. Being mean is the death knell of relationships.

Kindness, on the other hand, glues couples together. Research independent from theirs has shown that kindness (along with emotional stability) is the most important predictor of satisfaction and stability in a marriage. Kindness makes each partner feel cared for, understood, and validated—feel loved. “My bounty is as boundless as the sea,” says Shakespeare’s Juliet. “My love as deep; the more I give to thee, / The more I have, for both are infinite.” That’s how kindness works too: there’s a great deal of [evidence](#) showing the more someone receives or witnesses kindness, the more they will be kind themselves, which leads to upward spirals of love and generosity in a relationship.

There are two ways to think about kindness. You can think about it as a fixed trait: either you have it or you don’t. Or you could think of kindness as a muscle. In some people, that muscle is naturally stronger than in others, but it can grow stronger in everyone with exercise. Masters tend to think about kindness as a muscle. They know that they have to exercise it to keep it in shape. They know, in other words, that a good relationship requires sustained hard work.

“If your partner expresses a need,” explained Julie Gottman, “and you are tired, stressed, or distracted, then the generous spirit comes in when a partner makes a bid, and you still turn toward your partner.”

In that moment, the easy response may be to turn away from your partner and focus on your iPad or your book or the television, to mumble “Uh huh” and move on with your life, but neglecting small moments of emotional connection will slowly wear away at your relationship. Neglect creates distance between partners and breeds resentment in the one who is being ignored.

The hardest time to practice kindness is, of course, during a fight—but this is also the most important time to be kind. Letting contempt and aggression spiral out of control during a conflict can inflict irrevocable damage on a relationship.

“Kindness doesn’t mean that we don’t express our anger,” Julie Gottman explained, “but the kindness informs how we choose to express the anger. You can throw spears at your partner. Or you can explain why you’re hurt and angry, and that’s the kinder path.”

John Gottman elaborated on those spears: “Disasters will say things differently in a fight. Disasters will say ‘You’re late. What’s wrong with you? You’re just like your mom.’ Masters will say ‘I feel bad for picking on you about your lateness, and I know it’s not your fault, but it’s really annoying that you’re late again.’”

* * *

For the hundreds of thousands of couples getting married this month—and for the millions of couples currently together, married or not—the lesson from the research is clear: If you want to have a stable, healthy relationship, exercise kindness early and often.

"A lot of times, a partner is trying to do the right thing even if it's executed poorly. So appreciate the intent."

When people think about practicing kindness, they often think about small acts of generosity, like buying each other little gifts or giving one another back rubs every now and then. While those are great examples of generosity, kindness can also be built into the very backbone of a relationship through the way partners interact with each other on a day-to-day basis, whether or not there are back rubs and chocolates involved.

One way to practice kindness is by being generous about your partner's intentions. From the research of the Gottmans, we know that disasters see negativity in their relationship even when it is not there. An angry wife may assume, for example, that when her husband left the toilet seat up, he was deliberately trying to annoy her. But he may have just absent-mindedly forgotten to put the seat down.

Or say a wife is running late to dinner (again), and the husband assumes that she doesn't value him enough to show up to their date on time after he took the trouble to make a reservation and leave work early so that they could spend a romantic evening together. But it turns out that the wife was running late because she stopped by a store to pick him up a gift for their special night out. Imagine her joining him for dinner, excited to deliver her gift, only to realize that he's in a sour mood because he misinterpreted what was motivating her behavior. The ability to interpret your partner's actions and intentions charitably can soften the sharp edge of conflict.

“Even in relationships where people are frustrated, it's almost always the case that there are positive things going on and people trying to do the right thing,” psychologist Ty Tashiro told me. “A lot of times, a partner is trying to do the right thing even if it's executed poorly. So appreciate the intent.”

Another powerful kindness strategy revolves around shared joy. One of the telltale signs of the disaster couples Gottman studied was their inability to

connect over each other's good news. When one person in the relationship shared the good news of, say, a promotion at work with excitement, the other would respond with wooden disinterest by checking his watch or shutting the conversation down with a comment like, "That's nice."

We've all heard that partners should be there for each other when the going gets rough. But [research](#) shows that being there for each other when things go *right* is actually more important for relationship quality. How someone responds to a partner's good news can have dramatic consequences for the relationship.

In one study from 2006, psychological researcher Shelly Gable and her colleagues brought young adult couples into the lab to discuss recent positive events from their lives. The psychologists wanted to know how partners would respond to each other's good news. They found that, in general, couples responded to each other's good news in four different ways that they called: *passive destructive*, *active destructive*, *passive constructive*, and *active constructive*.

Let's say that one partner had recently received the excellent news that she got into medical school. She would say something like "I got into my top choice med school!"

Those who showed genuine interest in their partner's joys were more likely to be together.

If her partner responded in a *passive destructive* manner, he would ignore the event. For example, he might say something like: "You wouldn't believe the great news I got yesterday! I won a free t-shirt!"

If her partner responded in a *passive constructive* way, he would acknowledge the good news, but in a half-hearted, understated way. A

typical passive constructive response is saying “That’s great, babe” as he texts his buddy on his phone.

In the third kind of response, *active destructive*, the partner would diminish the good news his partner just got: “Are you sure you can handle all the studying? And what about the cost? Med school is so expensive!”

Finally, there’s *active constructive* responding. If her partner responded in this way, he stopped what he was doing and engaged wholeheartedly with her: “That’s great! Congratulations! When did you find out? Did they call you? What classes will you take first semester?”

Among the four response styles, active constructive responding is the kindest. While the other response styles are joy-killers, active constructive responding allows the partner to savor her joy and gives the couple an opportunity to bond over the good news. In the parlance of the Gottmans, active constructive responding is a way of “turning toward” your partners bid (sharing the good news) rather than “turning away” from it.

Active constructive responding is critical for healthy relationships. In the 2006 study, Gable and her colleagues followed up with the couples two months later to see if they were still together. The psychologists found that the only difference between the couples who were together and those who broke up was active constructive responding. Those who showed genuine interest in their partner’s joys were more likely to be together. In an [earlier study](#), Gable found that active constructive responding was also associated with higher relationship quality and more intimacy between partners.

There are many reasons why relationships fail, but if you look at what drives the deterioration of many relationships, it’s often a breakdown of kindness. As the normal stresses of a life together pile up—with children, career, friends, in-laws, and other distractions crowding out the time for romance and intimacy—couples may put less effort into their relationship

and let the petty grievances they hold against one another tear them apart. In most marriages, levels of satisfaction drop dramatically within the first few years together. But among couples who not only endure, but live happily together for years and years, the spirit of kindness and generosity guides them forward.

Cleansing and Restoring the Church

We also have to meet head-on the fundamental crisis of the Catholic Church today: facing the worldwide criminal and disgusting pedophilia scandal among the priesthood and the outrageous, criminal cover-up perpetrated by bishops around the world, with the filth reaching up to the Vatican.

Now, this might sound like John MacArthur's hateful sermon, which I linked to above.

But, denouncing pedophilia and criminal cover-ups is not some original or grand moral philosophical accomplishment. It is the moral philosophical equivalent of shooting fish in a barrel.

I also have no desire to play into Anti-Catholicism, being a Catholic myself and loving my Church, the central Church, the fulcrum of any possible Whole Church.

I denounce the Anti-Catholicism that infects American culture - denouncing it from the left from the likes of Anti-Catholic cultural leftists like Tony Kushner and from the right from Anti-Catholic schismatic bigots like John MacArthur.

Anti-Catholicism is truly the last acceptable prejudice in America, and I have no stomach or even drop of tolerance for it. I will not stand being called a bigot by bigots. I fear not the Protestant majority nor the homosexual ascendancy. Catholics are wicked? Let us be damned? We are idolators? We are murderous anti-gay bigots? To such people, I say you will find no fiercer foe than me. I always extend a hand of friendship - but, if you, in your prejudice, slap it away with arrogance or hatred, I will not cower to call *you* the hateful, unacceptable bigot. Everyone should read Philip Jenkins' fine book on the subject, *The New Anti-Catholicism: The Last Acceptable Prejudice*.⁷⁴

As Jenkins says, Anti-Catholicism is "the Thinking Man's Anti-Semitism." He writes:

Almost as troubling as the sheer abundance of anti-Catholic rhetoric is the failure to acknowledge it as a serious social problem. In the media, Catholicism is regarded as a perfectly legitimate target, the butt of harsh satire in numerous films and television programs that attack Catholic opinions, doctrines, and individual leaders. Arguably, such depictions are legitimate expressions of free speech and stand within America's long tradition of quite savage satire, but the same tolerance of abuse does not apply when other targets are involved.

⁷⁴ https://books.google.com/books?id=p5SW017ciokC&dq=the+new+anti-catholicism&source=gbs_navlinks_s

It would be interesting to take a satirical or comic treatment featuring, say, the Virgin Mary or Pope John Paul II and imagine the reaction if a similar gross disrespect was applied, say, to the image of Martin Luther King, Jr. or of Matthew Shepard, the gay college student murdered in Laramie, Wyoming, in 1998. What sometimes seems to be limitless social tolerance in modern America has strict limits where the Catholic Church is concerned.

Since the 1950s, changing cultural sensibilities have made it ever more difficult to recite once-familiar American stereotypes about the great majority of ethnic or religious groups, while issues of gender and sexual orientation are also treated with greater sensitivity. At least in public discourse, a general sensitivity is required, so that a statement that could be regarded as misogynistic, anti-Semitic, or homophobic would haunt a speaker for years, and could conceivably destroy a public career. Yet there is one massive exception to this rule, namely, that it is still possible to make quite remarkably hostile or vituperative public statements about one major religious tradition, namely, Roman Catholicism, and those comments will do no harm to the speaker's reputation. No one expects that outrageous statements or acts should receive any significant response, that (for example) performances of Kushner's *Angels in America* should be picketed.⁷⁵

So remember, if it ever comes to the point that you choose sides in a spirit of sectarian or ideological or social condemnation, and you choose to be on the side *against* the Catholic Church, I'm *not* on your side. Are we clear?

*A Few Good Men
Are We Clear?*

<https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=KmKOVdAGtzM>

That being said, anyone who attempts to view things with detachment, with a scientific fidelity to objectivity and observation, must stand before the gaping pit of iniquity that is the pedophilia scandal and form but one conclusion: that it is the work of Satan, deeply, ingeniously, and malevolently wrought in the very heart of Roman Catholicism.

Even if one argues that the incidence of pedophilia among Catholic priests in the 20th century worldwide was no greater than in other comparable social groups (which is a complex debate), what is not arguable is that the hierarchy covered up the pedophiles' crimes, knowingly, in a calculating and sociopathic way, and for decades.

So, in a word, what caused the crimes and the cover-ups, (which itself perpetuated the crimes for decades)? Arrogance. Supreme, diabolical, disgusting clerical arrogance.

All of life is a temptation, and the life of the Church is no different. In each day, in each period, we, individually and institutionally, must try to navigate the rocky shoals of the historical continuum.

For the most part, if we are not very wicked, we try to do our best, to meet the challenges of our life and times in a virtuous, productive, and constructive way. But, even when we act

⁷⁵ Jenkins, Philip: *The New Anti-Catholicism: The Last Acceptable Prejudice*, 4-5

well, we must continue to act, day by day, and historical epoch by historical epoch. What might have been useful, and necessary, and virtuous in one epoch, if persisted in without reflection, will very easily be twisted by Satan to serve his warped and evil purposes.

The clerical supremacy of the ordained priesthood and the papal monarchy in the Latin West served their purposes: they educated illiterate lay men and women in the faith after the collapse of civilization, they mediated and moderated the worst of the barbarian period, and they nourished the rebirth of learning and civilization in the High Middle Ages and the Renaissance. In the modern period, the papal absolutism of the 19th and early 20th centuries was felt to be an absolute necessity in the struggle against atheistic modernity, and, in large measure, that was true. The Church and its faith would be in utter ruins today if not for fierce and holy warriors for truth like Pope Saint Pius X, the Hammer of the Modernists.

But tools are not ends, and strategies for wars and struggles are not plans for peace or blueprints for city planning.

The goal of the Church is the fulfillment of the Power of Christ in the Second Coming, when, through Christ, the All-Righteous Father, by the power of the Holy Spirit, shall create a New Heaven and a New Earth, reforging in everlasting felicity what was created but sundered in the genesis, the First Creation.

Towards that end, the Church, from the Ascension in the 1st century to the Great Tribulation and the Millennial Kingdom (in the 22nd century? earlier? later?), is meant to be on a pilgrimage of sanctification. The Flesh of Christ is meant to grow in scope and grow in the depths of its holiness.

We, the Whole Flesh of Christ, are meant to become a royal priesthood of Christ. Every Christian should be a priest of Christ, perfectly imitating the holiness of our one true Master, Lord, and Savior. Our sanctity and holiness should be so perfect, so stainless, shimmering like alabaster, that there would be no need for hierarchies, no need for the tutelage of the great mass of unholy and unlearned men and women under a small sliver of (we hope) holy and educated men.

The hierarchical organization of the Church is not some grand, perfect pattern that we are meant to love and idolize and adore and perpetuate for forever and a day.

Not at all. Not even close.

The hierarchy of the Church is a war-time bureaucracy, a triage tent when wickedness and ignorance are so overwhelming that you need a central command to keep the wayward and weak-kneed body of soldiers in line, encouraged, and capable of facing the hostile world, whose ruler is Satan.

But it is merely a passing means, and not a final end.

In other words, the purpose of the hierarchy is to make the hierarchy unnecessary.

The purpose of the ordained priesthood is to prepare the great body of faithful Christians to become a priesthood of believers such that the ordained priesthood is no longer necessary.

The purpose of the papacy is to so knit together all Christian believers that the papacy, as such, is no longer necessary. If the Church were ever so well attuned to the truth and power of the Spirit, the pope could simply step back and behold the wonderful workings of a Church fully alive with the Spirit. The pope, the successor to St. Peter, would no longer be a battlefield commander frantically trying to hold the line against monstrous invaders breathing fire -- he would simply be a *primus inter pares* - a first among equals, a holder of a ceremonial title conferred upon a beloved brother, not the recipient of a battlefield commission of the imperium (the absolute power over life and death).

This is the vision of the medieval Catholic mystic Joachim of Fiore, who flourished in the 12th century. He proposed that in the future the Age of the Holy Spirit will dawn, and with it a new spirit of universal love and a profound understanding of the Scriptures by all the Christian faithful, such that tightly orchestrated hierarchies would become all but unnecessary.

I think that, after the Great Tribulation and the reign of the Anti-Christ, the Millennium will be the fulfillment of that vision, probably fulfilled by a technological singularity that will make such barbaric human hierarchies totally unnecessary.

But, even though we live before that entrance into the looking glass, all Christians, especially those in the hierarchy - the ordained priesthood, the bishops, and the Pope - should eagerly work for and welcome that day when such hierarchies are totally superfluous, consumed in a fire of holy grace breathed upon the Church by the Spirit, when all Christians shall work together as co-equal brothers, so filled with spirit and knowledge that petty distinctions of rank and position shall become relics of a less perfect age.

Yet, instead of holding to that vision, the vision of the Gospels, the ordained priesthood and the Papacy - that whole clerical Death Star - said, 'This triage of hierarchy - *this is wonderful! Weeee!*' Rather than be a Society of Cincinnati, of citizen-soldiers dutifully slogging it out in the battles of the world for the sake of the Flesh of Christ, but really hoping in their heart of hearts *to just go home!* (Like St. Paul when, in Philippians 1:19-26, he expressed the truth that it would be better for him, personally, to go to Christ, but it was better for Christians that he remain in the world), the ordained priests, the bishops, and the pope said: *Whoa, look at us, we're so awesome! We're so holy and powerful and righteous....and so superior to those masses of illiterate, unholy peasants! They need us, and this is the way it should be forever! Let the clerisy always hold sway over the ignorant laity, and let the Supreme Pontiff always need to sit atop a vast hierarchical superstructure in order to keep this fragile Church from blowing apart!*

So, the Church moved from the recognition of the unfortunate necessity for hierarchy to the full-blown adulation and adoration of that hierarchy. That was a gradual process, a spiritual

cancer, that took centuries to fully metastasize, and once it did, it blew the Church apart in the Western Schism (having already helped cause the East-West Schism). Now, naturally, the evil of clerical arrogance was abetted in blowing the Church apart by the theologians' arrogance embodied by men like Luther and Calvin. It takes two to do the Devil's Tango.

But did that whole array of clerical arrogance stop and say: Hmmm.....maybe we're doing this wrong?

Nooooo, no, of course not.

It just stuck its foot in the ground, set its face like flint against all its opponents, and doubled down on *more* clerical arrogance.

And whenever there was a problem - a crisis, a difficulty, a challenge from Protestants or secular modernity....what's the solution? What the solution always is, and what cures what ails ya: ever more clerical arrogance.

You just keep heaping up the clerical arrogance until you have a Church bureaucracy towering over a disempowered laity such that it resembles an authoritarian state, and you have a Pope who resembles a Religious Emperor.

So, when, for centuries, for millennia, your whole strategy - your whole approach to life - is to just double down on the clerisy's domination, you arrive in the 20th century with an ordained priesthood and a Vatican bureaucracy *totally, woefully, laughably ill-equipped, mal-equipped*, to deal with a pedophilia scandal.

And intransigence and arrogance cascade throughout the Church's history. Celibacy *can* be, and, for many, should be, a grace to build up the Kingdom of Heaven. Jesus directly says so in Matthew 19:12. Jesus says whoever can live out celibacy, should live it. *But not everyone can, or is even meant to by God.* And there is no basis for restricting the ministry of the Word, for restricting power and authority in the Church, *only* to celibates. All of the Twelve Apostles were married. St. Paul directly indicates this in 1 Corinthians 9:5-6 when he says, "Do we not have the right to take along a Christian wife, as do the rest of the apostles, and the brothers of the Lord, and Cephas? Or is it only myself and Barnabas who do not have the right not to work?" What kind of *balls*, what kind of huge huevos rancheros does it take to say to yourself, "Hey, you know, those Twelve Apostles, and Peter himself, they were pretty holy....but you know what: *we* ordained priesthood and papacy are so much holier than the Apostles that in these future times *all* ministers of the Word, all people with authority and power in the Church, *must* be celibates, not merely those for whom it is granted, as Jesus, the Head of the Church, clearly stated in the Gospels." ?

Only a supreme and apoplectic *arrogance* could conjure up some kind of notion.

So, like a drug addict, the hierarchy, addicted to its clerical arrogance, when faced with a huge life problem like the pedophilia scandal, (itself not helped by the requirement of universal celibacy), acts in the only ways it knows how. Deny. Dissemble. Lie. Close your eyes.

Because when you've set yourselves up as the indispensable spiritual supermen who the passive, inert flock of ninnies in the laity *absolutely need or Hell will destroy us all*....what else can you do? How else can you react?

So, the solution to the Satanic plague of wickedness caused by clerical arrogance is clerical humility, and the reorientation of the hierarchy from a permanent establishment meant to persist forever *over* the ordinary faithful, to an engine for making the faithful a *self-sufficient priesthood of believers who themselves can administrate the Church*.

Listen to Father Smith on the subject:

The Cure *Father Robert S. Smith*



Becoming the Body of Christ in the 21st Century

April 25, 2010

<https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=w1QKffGtE28&list=PLHLzqutarkrm5kFVW5noRcsaJ08OYgBqy&index=94>

Love's in Need of Love Today

Stevie Wonder

https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=_ZditPOzJnM

As Pope Francis has written in *The Joy of the Gospel*:

32. Since I am called to put into practice what I ask of others, I too must think about a conversion of the papacy. It is my duty, as the Bishop of Rome, to be open to suggestions which can help make the exercise of my ministry more faithful to the meaning which Jesus Christ wished to give it and to the present needs of evangelization. Pope [John Paul II](#) asked for help in finding “a way of exercising the primacy which, while in no way renouncing what is essential to its mission, is nonetheless open to a new situation”.^[35] We have made little progress in this regard. The papacy and the central structures of the universal Church also need to hear the call to pastoral conversion. The [Second Vatican Council](#) stated that, like the ancient patriarchal Churches, episcopal conferences are in a position “to contribute in many and fruitful ways to the concrete realization of the collegial spirit”.^[36] Yet this desire has not been fully realized, since a juridical status of episcopal conferences which would see them as subjects of specific attributions, including genuine doctrinal authority, has not yet been sufficiently elaborated.^[37] Excessive centralization, rather than proving helpful, complicates the Church’s life and her missionary outreach.

Take Me to Church

Hozier

<https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=PVjiKRfKpPI>

Distinguishing Anti-Catholicism from the necessary Critique and Restoration of the Church

So, John MacArthur and the Anti-Catholics were right after all? I really am threatened by them, and their screeds, and I scurry to please them, right?

Wrong.

Trading in half-truths and distortions of actual issues doesn't make you right. It makes you wrong. And when you parade around your half-truth as the whole truth, it is nothing more than a lie.

For look at what Anti-Catholics like MacArthur say. *The ordained priesthood is diabolical and stands in opposition to the true priesthood of all believers!*

Really? The truth is that the universal priesthood of believers *can never* come into existence without the ministry of the ordained priesthood. The ordained priesthood is the essential *means* by which the universal priesthood of believers can come into being.

And we can see this if we look at reality -- if we look out the window rather than fall into hateful Anti-Catholic screeds from centuries past that you inherited from your grandpappies.

The United States of America is the most Protestant country in the world. If you even just look at self-identified Protestants, do you see a holy universal priesthood of believers? Because I sure don't.

Oh, I see believers. And true believers in Christ. I just don't see a priesthood. If you call the members of Protestant churches - even just active evangelical Christians - priests of Christ, you have a very limited and impoverished imagination about what a real royal universal priesthood of believers would look like. Isn't that royal priesthood supposed to be the realization of the Christian people as all Christ-like Priests of God's Word?

If even a sliver of self-identified, active evangelicals *truly* constituted such a royal universal priesthood of believers, this country would be on fire with the Spirit -- everything about our social life, our economic life, our political life would be turned upside down with the grace of the Gospel. Donald Trump wouldn't be able to run a lemonade stand, let alone be the President. You wouldn't have the widespread meth and heroin epidemics. Poverty and hopelessness wouldn't be rampant. Atheism, secularism, and pornography wouldn't be deluging the cultural life of the nation.

So I believe in the royal universal priesthood of all believers. I'm just not buying that the Protestant Church constitutes such a priesthood.

For instance, if a physical wreck of a woman comes up to me in a bar and tries to convince me that she's currently a supermodel....I won't believe her. It doesn't mean that I don't believe in the existence of supermodels....I just don't believe that *she's* a supermodel.

Now, I'm not saying that the Catholic ordained priesthood has been up to the challenge of bringing into being that universal priesthood. For the most part, the traditional Catholic ideology has no meaningful interest in such an endeavor, which is ironic since it is the whole point of there being an ordained priesthood in the first place. Besides, they were too busy spending the last century covering up for pedophiles.

And the Orthodox are too busy calling everyone heretics and cloistering themselves in their ethnic enclaves to involve themselves in building up such a universal priesthood.

So, I'm not saying Protestants or Catholics or Orthodox, individually and separate and above the others, have the answers. Rather, I think the three traditions at this time in history rather resemble:

The Three Stooges

<https://www.youtube.com/user/watchthreestooges>

Rather, I am actually saying the *opposite* of what someone like MacArthur is saying. I assert that apostolic authority, bishops, presbyters, deacons, and the Petrine authority - the whole clerical apparatus - *must exist* in order to educate, train, and guide the Christian people into becoming the royal universal priesthood of all believers. Catholics and Orthodox give lip service to this and go on their merry clerical way. Protestants delude themselves into thinking that the universal priesthood can just will itself into existence, separate from the historical, traditional, and biblical structures of ministry and authority that universally existed (and, in the Catholic and Orthodox Churches still exist) from the Great Commission of Christ in the 1st century, through antiquity, through the Middle Ages up into the 16th century.

Secondly, traditional Protestants like MacArthur claim that the Pope is the Anti-Christ. Well, not *the* Anti-Christ, not the one portrayed in *Left Behind*, not the Super-Evil Baddie at the end of time. All the popes, rather, are like mini-me Anti-Christ, just by virtue of being pope. Somehow, they say, the papacy is the seat of the Anti-Christ, or something.

This is not sound theology, or even a notion that deserves serious consideration. It simply reflects the hateful attitude of the 16th century reformers towards the too often arrogant and cruel clerisy that ruled the Church (c.f. Torquemada). I get it: being persecuted and murdered makes you hate the people doing the persecuting and murdering. But that doesn't make the successor to St. Peter, the holder of the Petrine authority, possessor of the keys to the Kingdom (which is the magisterium of the Church) ipso facto the Anti-Christ, or an Anti-Christ.

Ideally, the Church - and by the Church, I mean the whole people of God in Christ, the Flesh of Christ - would be mature enough and filled with the Spirit enough that, as Joachim of Fiore prophesied, a formal hierarchy of the Church would no longer be necessary, but it could simply be ruled by what he called the Society of the Just.

Now, the Christian peoples are in no position to be that Society of the Just *today*. To turn over the keys to contemporary Christian lay folk would be to let the inmates run the asylum. (No offense.....)

And I think that this vision of the Society of the Just will only really come into being after the Glorious Appearance of Christ, the establishment of the Millennial Kingdom, and a technological singularity that will permit Humanity-Church to literally transform the material Cosmos into radically closer conformity with Christ, fulfilling the vision of Teilhard de Chardin, which will be totally fulfilled at the complete end of time at the final Second Coming and the creation of the New Heaven and the New Earth.

But, the papacy should still *aim* at the day when a Society of the Just could administer the Church without the need for a formal hierarchy. That teleological orientation - purpose - of the papacy should form the living and present character and charism of the papacy. *And*, contra the Protestants, *only* the papacy, only a wise, guiding, central minister of the Word could train and form and cultivate Christian culture -- in a spirit of coherence and unity - in such a way that finally, one day, the Pope and the ordained priests could turn over the keys to the car to a mature, fully formed, righteous, and Spirit-filled Christian people: the Society of the Just.

For the ordained are like parents, and the laity are like children. But the whole point of parenting is to raise your children so that they can be adults.

Ultra-“traditionalist” Catholics want to be parents who prevent their children from ever growing up and living as adults.

And Protestants are like children who want to be already grown up without the guidance of their parents.

And we can see the wonders that a world in defiance of the Papacy has accomplished: we can see the flourishing, faithful, Spirit-filled Christian culture in America...right? In secular Europe, which spit on the Pope a long time ago, we can see a flourishing, vital, hopeful, gracious, abundant culture of life...right?

Wrong.

Dead wrong.

So, I am very much not some dupe of John MacArthur, mimicking his Anti-Catholicism. Rather, I am saying that the Church is right in its structure, in its ordained priesthood and papacy...as such. *But* there is such a thing as being right *in the wrong way*. The hierarchy must not see it itself as an end in itself, but as a Parent who is raising a child to maturity. The hierarchy’s whole purpose is to train and cultivate a Christian people that no longer needs such a powerful hierarchy. Surely, just as children still visit with and seek wisdom from their parents, we can imagine a special membership in that Society of the Just, including a ceremonial pope, who provide wisdom and guidance to their fully-formed adult children. But, that special membership will no longer need to be a wartime, super-militarized, super-bureaucratized hierarchy that has to spank its disobedient children, force them to eat their vegetables, tell them to brush their teeth, and tell them to go to bed. Because *in the future* the Christian people will have become mature, and the hierarchy will have successfully accomplished the mission of raising them to maturity.

Beyond Sectarianism: A Vision of the Whole Church

Protestants too often imprison God within a jail cell of their own man-made, narrow and limited theological theories. Their obsession with their theoretical truth *about* God, rather than an appreciation of the shockingly infinite reality *of* God, leaves them spinning their wheels when it comes to the real struggles - and real future - of the Church, the Flesh of Christ. *cough* John MacArthur *cough*.

Catholics. Pre-Vatican II Catholics too much caricatured God into a Santa Claus with a bad temper -- a hovering bipolar ogre, who watched you in the shower masturbating with an evil eye, but would let you spend eternity with Grandma if you went to confession and prayed the rosary. Post-Vatican II Catholics too much ignore God or caricature God into Barney the Dinosaur - a big stuffed animal who loves you just the way you are.

The Orthodox too often smother God under the heavy layers of their ancient theology, thinking that God's ways are more static and traditional than they really are. God is the Spirit of radical, total, absolute prerogative, who exists forever in an absolute NOW. He makes all things new, and His Inner Life is a journey into the infinite unfolding of plenitudinous possibilities. Whatever the vast wisdom of the Church Fathers, the real God is inconceivably richer in scope, power, and majesty.

We Christians have made too much a mistake of seeing Christianity as *necessarily* only *really* existing in *only* one of the three major traditions - Protestantism, Catholicism, or Orthodoxy.

The Gospels speak nothing about any of these traditions, and it is a bizarre, tribalistic, triumphalist parochialism to think that the *whole* truth is perfectly contained in any one tradition in a crystalline, fully articulated, totally correct form.

Remember: If you're an ultra-traditionalist Catholic who thinks that some day - whether that day is 2100, 2200, 2300, or A.D. 10,000, the John MacArthurs of the future are going to be praying a rosary and kissing the red papal slipper, there's a Protestant who thinks that in 2300 or 10,000, the Catholic Church will be a bygone pagan monstrosity, totally forgotten and in the dust, with the Mass, the veneration of the Blessed Virgin Mary, and the fullness of the sacraments consigned to oblivion.

And it is getting beyond irritating to constantly encounter the attitude that if you're not for an imperial ecclesiastical conquest and the total eradication of the other traditions, you're betraying ***THE TRUTH! YOU'RE DOING THE WORK OF THE DEVIL!!!***

We have allowed the traditions to become not channels to the Gospel, but prisons in which we keep the Gospels in chains.

But, if we abandoned our arrogance, tribalism, triumphalism, and imperialism, we might find that each tradition is a prism *through which* we can see *to* the Gospel.

Not that we syncretize the traditions into some kind of nonsense jumble. But, rather, we begin to really *listen* to each other, honestly listening to what each of the traditions is *really* saying *as it understands itself*, and being open to the discovery that, after all, all three traditions each have some important insight into what the Whole Church, the simple and one and unified Church of Christ, really looks like.

Think about it. If the ultra-traditionalist viewpoint in each of the three traditions is right, then Jesus left us in a sorry pickle indeed.

As the founder of a religion, we should sue him for malpractice.

Because, if (one of the) sectarianism(s) is *the absolute true version* of the Gospels -- then why didn't Jesus explicitly warn us, and simply say: (1) Protestantism: "The New Testament that will be written (and the presently existing Hebrew scriptures) is *the only source of authority*, and no Church authority or Tradition matters," or (2) Catholicism: "The Pope and the Cardinals as they will exist are *the final word* on Christian doctrine and practice," or (3) Orthodoxy: "There will come a group of writers called 'the Church Fathers', and their ideas and practices will be *the final word* on Christian doctrine and practice."

Jesus didn't feel like it?

Jesus didn't want to be bothered?

Jesus didn't know about the future course of history?

The Father didn't care enough to direct Jesus to clue people in?

Jesus didn't bother to warn Christians about errors that would cost them their souls?

These are arguments for atheism or converting to Judaism, and not for Catholicism, Protestantism, or Orthodoxy.

Jesus constantly warned about the dangers of Hell, and forewarned of a time of great and final tribulation. Jesus warned against following false messiahs who claimed to be Him. If two of the traditions are really wicked false Churches, why wouldn't Jesus give some guidance on that?

I argue that the reason there is no warning, is because no warning is necessary. Schism exists *precisely* because of religious tribalism, which the Gospels and St. Paul explicitly condemn. Such tribalism - such factionalism - is itself, ipso facto, heresy, which is derived from αἵρεση, the Greek word meaning faction based on *human choice* or *opinion*. Sectarianism is not the defense of the Church: it is the ruination of the Church.

The sectarian ultra-traditionalist's sin is similar to the atheist's sin: the stubborn, obtuse, proud pit of self-preference. Just as the atheist refuses to pray and to humble himself before the possibility of a God that might, in time, reveal Himself, the sectarian ultra-traditionalist *refuses* to *really listen* to what other people have to say. If they listen at all, or read at all, *it is only ever*

to simply refute the other person's statements without ever entertaining even a small space in his or her mind for the possibility that what the other person said is true.

This is not Christian. That kind of attitude is the Muslim attitude: The Koran is true because it is true because it is true because it is true because it is true because it is true because it is true because it is true because it is true because it is true, and if you say anything different, we'll kill you. Have a nice day - in Hell! God is great!

That kind of attitude is unworthy of the Spirit of Truth, and it is unworthy of the Prince of Peace.

Christians! Listen up! You're doing it wrong!

To understand more deeply why we Christians are doing it wrong, let us investigate the contrast between the Muslim conception of conversion and belief with the Christian conception of conversion and belief.

The Muslim conception is this: God shows up and says, "I am the Master, you, O human race, are the slaves, therefore accept whatever I say, at face value, without any question or consideration."

The Christian conception is this: God shows up and says, "I am who AM - there are no other gods but ME. I am the Creator and you, O human race, are the creatures. Therefore, I have every right to say that I am your Master and you are my slaves, and, on some level, that is necessarily the case. *However*, because I AM so ineffably, totally, inconceivably, "absurdly" [though only absurd to us because of our sinful condition], radically GENEROUS, I, who AM the Master and the Creator, *freely* give you, who are, in and by and through yourselves, not even slaves, but dust, worthless nothings -- I, God, give *you*, the human race, *intimacy* with ME -- I, God, have the *right* to treat you as slaves, as toys, as dirt, as nothing, but because I AM pure GIFT, pure GENEROSITY, pure LOVE, I choose *you*, I choose you to be my family, to share the Divine Interior Life with me as my family; I, God, will adopt you into the Trinity, into the Inner Familial Life of the Father, the Son, and the Spirit, and thereby, *through MY free choice and Will*, I choose you, the Elect (Elect because I foreknew that you would accept my Will, in *your* freedom), to be my child, my brother, my wife."

A Master, like in the Muslim conception, simply snaps his fingers and says, "Obey, you slave." The Master may promise enticements and rewards for submission, but the Master never addresses you as a *Thou*, as a free spiritual being worthy of respect, at an existential level.

A suitor, a boyfriend, a husband, a father, a brother must *cause you to fall in love with him and stay in love with him, in a familial bond -- he must act in ways worthy of being loved.*

The Muslim conception does not require any accountability of God. Now, God is not, as such, accountable to human beings or any creature: because He is the Creator and thus infinitely transcends human judgment, i.e. human accountability.

That means that God will present Himself in philosophy, the arts, culture, science, thought and matter -- He will present Himself in all that exists, and specifically to each human life. God *does* feel the need to prove Himself to you. Not in a scientific, demonstrative way, but in a heartfelt, emotional, *human* way. God chooses to speak to your heart. And if you're listening -- if you're quiet and humble enough to really *listen* to God speaking to your heart, you'll follow Him, and love Him - because He loved you first.

Now, of course, if you fold your arms and say, "This bad thing happened to me. Or, I have some intellectual objection to God. Or, I saw a documentary on the History Channel about the Crusades, and now I won't believe in God. Or, I'm for gay marriage, and my Church isn't, therefore I won't believe in God," -- then you're screwed, and rightfully so.

For God isn't a puppet. He isn't Tinker Bell. He is God - THE ABSOLUTE AND TRANSCENDENT AND ETERNAL LORD, LORD FROM ALL ETERNITY TO ALL ETERNITY. He, in His graciousness and generosity, is willing to be your Father, Brother, Husband.....to woo you....to love you....to court you....but if you won't listen to Him speaking in your heart because of an emotional, intellectual, or political objection....or because you have built yourself up in your mind, or idolize your own career, or have such a staunch, stubborn self-conception.....then that is a case of self-deification, of the idolatry of the self -- of worshipping your own feelings, mind, status, self-conception, or beliefs over *even the possibility of God!* If you refuse to open your heart to the Spirit, *for any reason*, how can God possibly grant you the gift of faith? If you won't allow yourself to be wooed, courted, or loved....what shall God do?

You, the atheist, will say *He must prove Himself to me!* Give me some logical proof! Give me a scientific demonstration! Perform a magic act!

God will adopt you. He will marry you. He will raise you up. He will even deify you (while maintaining the distinction between Uncreated Creator and created creature)!

But He is still always God -- which means that He will prove Himself to your heart, but He feels absolutely no obligation to submit to your reason, or even submit to your temper tantrums and emotional fits or bitterness.

The Muslim conception doesn't require God to even condescend to prove himself to your heart. Muslim theology doesn't grapple with theology in terms of philosophy, the arts, culture, science; it hermetically demarcates theology from everything else. The Muslim God just drops his book on you and says, "Obey."

So, God, (the Christian God), acts like George Clooney, always sending you texts, always bringing flowers, always holding you when something bad happens. God pops up in philosophical concepts, movies, songs, literature, books of all kinds - you can even find God in a conversation with an atheist, because the atheist's objections (though deficient) will bring out some new and wondrous dimension of God.

The Muslim God not so much. He is quite a bit more one-dimensional and into himself. Now, people do fall in love with narcissists - because they're strong, wealthy, powerful, confident, impressive, exciting. But then they find that the narcissist isn't quite so nice. Not quite so caring. Not quite so loving. Not quite so intimate.

George Clooney.....I, mean the God of Christ, the Father of the Son who is Christ, is all about intimacy, He's all heart.

The Muslim God's Attitude

Stargate

There can only be ONE Ra

<https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=tmZiGfLVs8w>

Christ's Attitude

The Cure

Rev. Tim Keller

The Gospel and Idolatry

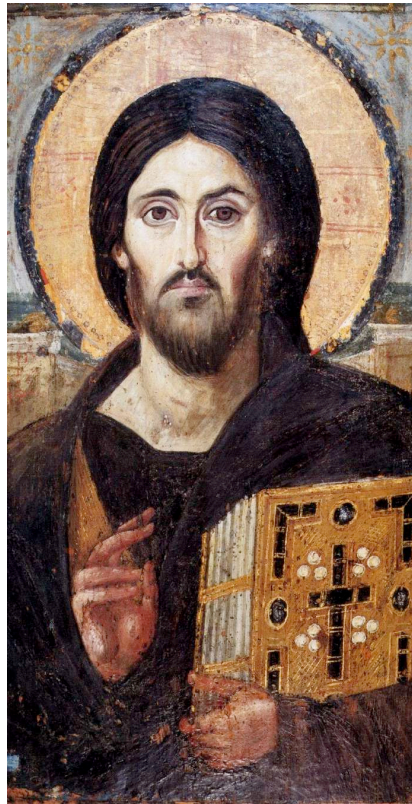
Acts 19:23-41

<https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=mn1U1omO6sg>

Stevie Wonder

As

<https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=GYQfWJNWe3I>



The Fighter

Keith Urban featuring Carrie Underwood

https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=X_45jbE5_Y8

George Clooney is a sexy beast
<https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=7HGabPt5HEU>

Now, in fairness, Muslim theology also asserts that God is compassionate, merciful, and beneficent. But, and let's be frank (I know, not permissible in Muslim culture): to assert that God is not bound by his own word and to assert that God is benevolent are fundamentally inconsistent. Either God is good or God is evil; God cannot choose evil or lies one second and choose good and helpful assistance another second. Without God's Goodness being a spiritual law, even and especially upon Himself, God is a spiritual chaos. What then is the Will of God? What determines the Will of God? If the constitution of the Will of God is not Goodness itself, then the interiority of God is a blank moral chaos, without any interior structure or solidity. Such a God would be an abyss of his own self-preference.

You can draw your own conclusions from that.

So, you see, there's a fundamental reason that Islam isn't spreading, except by force (and even with all the force it isn't spreading, except by pregnancy).

Because, who would choose Ra over George Clooney?

No wonder the Muslim world has resorted to cutting people's heads off.

Shitiest First Date Ever



Sinister

<https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=4InFwCO3bOs>

So, let me say in conclusion:

They can't sell it!

The American President

<https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=JCliHGQy8-w>

Lionheart

Demi Lovato

<https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=QGSEdDid1sY>

*Now go prove me wrong with a
nice big murderous riot!
God is Great!*

Bill Maher

A Religion of Peace

<https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=jMWAMgw8780>

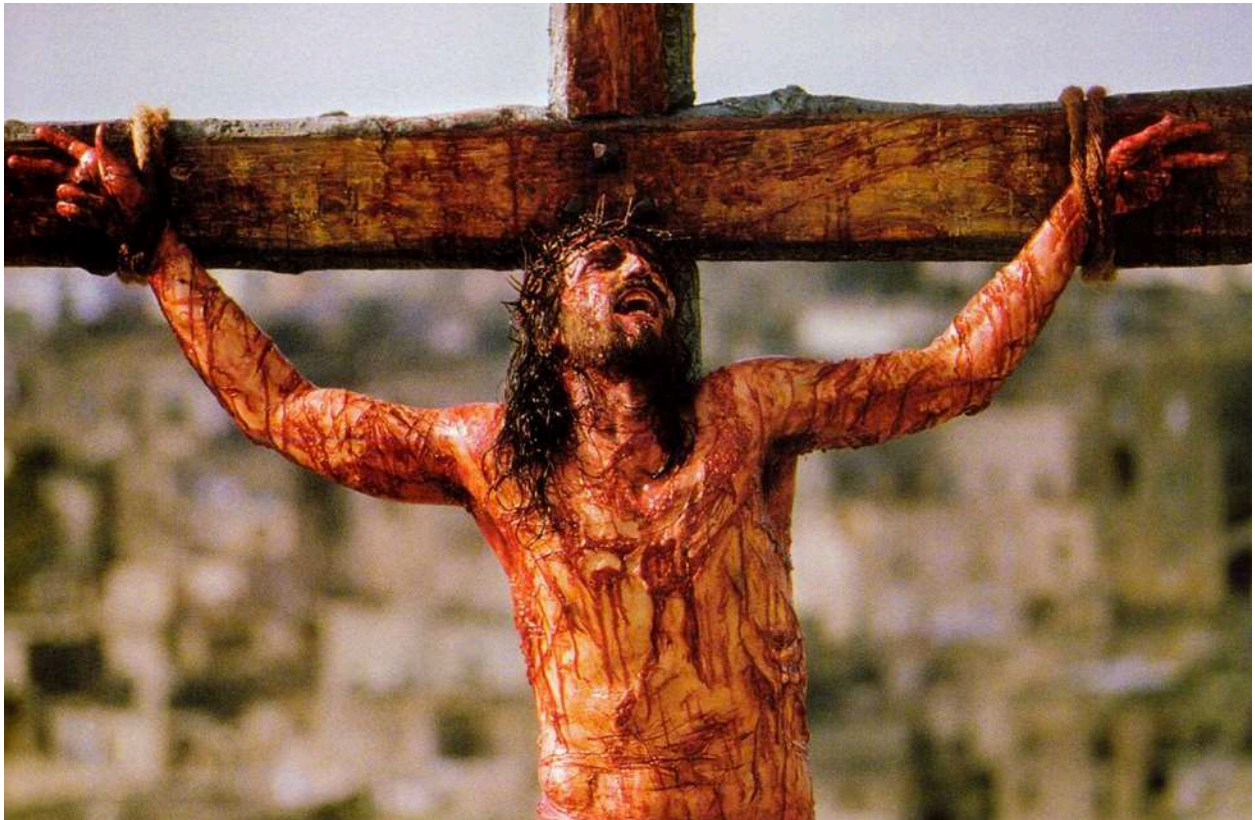
https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=iRH1J2p4_jA

Ayaan Hirsi Ali

<https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=5AkAGc5nOXw>

TRUTH YOU CAN BELIEVE IN

THE CURE



*Christ did this for **YOU!!!***

And he's doing it right now, eternally!

Ellie Goulding

Love Me Like You Do

<https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=KAca7KQ9p-A>

But remember, I'm a liberal, so I believe in the Fairness Doctrine:

<https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=gVKUKb3jd0E>

<https://www.youtube.com/user/lebo2196/featured>

Why can't we have more Muslims like this guy?

But you have to understand: This statement below...it doesn't sound like God to me. It sounds like someone who *really, really, really* hates the Son of God, because *he* wanted to be the heir to all of the Father's gifts *instead* of the Son.

And they say: the Beneficent hath taken unto Himself a Son. Assuredly ye utter a disastrous thing, whereby almost the heavens are torn, and the earth is split asunder and the mountains fall to ruins, that ye ascribe to the Beneficent a son, when it is not meet for (the Majesty of) the Beneficent that He should choose a son. There is none in the heavens and the earth but cometh unto the Beneficent as a slave. (Qur'an 19:88-93)

And why is this god so obsessed that everyone be his slave? It's not in God's nature to want children, brothers, a wife, a lover, to want real, total, passionate intimacy with human beings, who have been made in the image and likeness of God? Obedience? Absolutely, I'm right there with you, brother. But wouldn't the true God reward obedience with total intimacy? And, indeed, in line with the Trinity, wouldn't the essence of the true God be, in Himself, TOTAL INTIMACY? It's not in God's nature to generously share himself, his whole self and nature, with others in a free, generous, open way? Why wouldn't the God who is Love want that? Is the real God so prickly and vain and insecure and obsessed with power that he has to loudly demand that everyone be his abject slave? The True and Only and One POWER is not at all that insecure, I assure you, my fellow human creature in God's gracious Creation, and potential brother in Christ.

Remember, the Father said to the Son, "I choose you," and in their bond is the SPIRIT that *is* the totally and completely *ONE* GOD. *And* then, God said to the human race: I choose you to fully share in my Divine Intimacy.

And this pissed "you know who" off to no end.

I've posed a question.
So, what's the answer?

My thoughts:

<https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=x9sqkahSziU>

Star Trek V: The Final Frontier

And, about Jesus' Crucifixion, which is God's total triumph over sin and over Satan, the book that this apparently congenial Muslim fellow recommends that I make an inquiry into says this:

And [for] their saying, "Indeed, we have killed the Messiah, Jesus, the son of Mary, the messenger of Allah ." And they did not kill him, nor did they crucify him; but [another] was made to resemble him to them. And indeed, those who differ over it are in doubt about it. They have no knowledge of it except the following of assumption. And they did not kill him, for certain. (Qur'an 4:157)

Another was made to resemble him? Really? That's the best you can do? That's the best these speakers can do to dispel the eyewitness testimony of the hundreds (probably many thousands) who saw him crucified, and the hundreds of Jesus' disciples who saw his Resurrected, Glorified Flesh?

Superbad

<https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=2U34xsSZ5PA>

It goes on:

Rather, Allah raised him to Himself. And ever is Allah Exalted in Might and Wise. And there is none from the People of the Scripture but that he will surely believe in Jesus **before** his death. And on the Day of Resurrection he will be against them a witness. (Qur'an 4:158-159) [Emphasis added]

O People of the Scripture, do not commit excess in your religion or say about Allah except the truth. The Messiah, Jesus, the son of Mary, was but a messenger of Allah and His word which He directed to Mary and a soul [created at a command] from Him. So believe in Allah and His messengers. And do not say, "Three"; desist - it is better for you. Indeed, Allah is but one God. Exalted is He above having a son. To Him belongs whatever is in the heavens and whatever is on the earth. And sufficient is Allah as Disposer of affairs. (Qur'an 4:171)

You know what this sounds like to me?

Why is it that a Christian will not murder a Muslim when the Muslim states his beliefs about Trinitarian Christianity's supposedly dubious origins -- indeed, the true Christian would never even dream of murdering the Muslim. *But* the very first thing a Muslim dreams about when a Christian makes the reciprocal criticism of the origin of Islam is:

*MURDER MURDER MURDER MURDER DEATH
KILL DESTROY!!!!!!*

?

And who else thinks that you can murder your way to victory?

Which religion in the 21st century possesses the Spirit of God, the Spirit of Mercy and Peace?

Independence Day

Independence from Satan

<https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=NyOTaHRBTXc>

So, to bring it back to the question of the reunification of the Church, and the end of this vile, wicked, Satanic schism that has afflicted the Flesh of Christ for going on a thousand years (when you take the East-West Schism and the Intra-Western Schism into account), all of us - Protestants, Catholics, and Orthodox *need to learn how to listen to one another*. Not just to sit in our bunkers, in our trenches and only talk to people on our side, and read only books on our side, and consider that every other way of looking at things is necessarily a Satanic perversion. Satan is everywhere -- so I assure you, each tradition has Satanic influence and infiltration, just as every human being does -- in their sins.

The solution to Satanic infiltration is love -- the solution is *not* syncretism, but really listening.

And I have listened to each of the ultra-traditionalist sectarians from each faction, and I can assure you that none of them are listening. And when they talk to the other traditions, they are only talking *at* them. All these ultra-sectarians who don't consider the other two traditions to even be Christians at all, much less with insights in their traditions that are important, *simply talk past one another*.

The "piety" of the ultra-traditionalist sectarian, from any of the three traditions, is about the self-glorification of *whatever that particular ultra-sectarian happens to think is the most important thing*.

Then, this oh-so-pious ranter plugs their ears and refuses to actually consider another point of view.

That's not how an intelligent Christian facing the end of the world and the awesome power and deceptions of the Anti-Christ should act.

First, think to yourself - is this just a problem of language and culture? Are we saying the same things, but just saying them in ways that sound offensive to the other traditions? Being obtuse and stubborn and blind is *not* piety.

Second, when there are *apparent* contradictions - think: are, perhaps, these doctrines that we think are opposed really, in the final analysis, just two sides of the same coin: like, for example, with predestination and free will.

Third, realize *that there will be real differences*. The Anti-Christ will stop with the first two points and build up a syncretic monstrosity. But, for the True Christian, where you have attempted to properly (1) translate the beliefs of your tradition into the language and culture of another tradition and (2) you have fully considered the apparently opposing doctrines in the light of a mature and multi-dimensional perspective, *and you still have differences*, do not simply paper them over, but, in a truthful and thoroughgoing way, figure out *why* you disagree -- what are the intellectual and philosophical and intuitive structures and principles underlying your position?

You'll often find that in doing this third step, you can resolve many of the problems through a re-application of the first and second step.

But, here's the rub. Anti-Christ will just paper over everything, cleverly, and create a syncretic horror.

But -- if you're really right in the places you disagree with the other tradition, then, if the other tradition has any truth at all (and who would deny that the "bad" traditions, i.e. the one you're not in, don't at least have some correct doctrines about Christ?) you should be able to successfully show that this false doctrine does not form a coherent and cohesive whole with the doctrines that *are* true in that tradition.

Now...here's another rub: This takes time and patience and humility and actually talking to other people who are not like you, and not just calling them names.

I know, it's a lot more fun to rant and rave and call people names, and imagine that (1) God will smite the Catholic Church and magically convert everyone to Protestantism, (2) Our Lady of Fatima will send lightening bolts to consume the Protestants and Orthodox, or (3) calling everybody heretics will make them drop their whole historical heritages and do whatever you say.

I guess, on some level, it just comes down to what's in your soul. The true, hardbitten sectarian just wants to win and conquer and place his or her foot on the neck of the vanquished.

But you know, that sounds like someone else I've studied: Satan.

For those who respond *Mary will crush the head of the serpent!* Yes, so don't treat fellow Christians like they're Satan, lest you become Satan.

But I'm not treating them like Satan! I'm liberating them from Satan!

How can you liberate anyone from Satan if you simply talk *at* that person, talk *past* that person?

Because, when you just argue with a straw man, all you do is create hatred and division.

But, if in total *Christian* humility and patience and openness to what is real, in itself, rather than what you've convinced yourself to necessarily be real, you work out your differences, then you can conquer the world. Then the Church can be one. Then the Church, through and in Christ, can crush Satan.

So act more like Christ and put in the time, patience, humility, and listening that might actually reunify the Church.

Here's a head start: Whenever you are trying to do apologetics for a point of contention between the traditions, always say, "What would the other two traditions say about this?" Because, if you think something another tradition does is heresy or idolatry or Satanic, I can assure you, there are plenty of people in that tradition who, for hundreds or thousands of years, have spent their lifetimes showing that what *you* believe is heretical, idolatrous, or Satanic. When you think, *try to defeat yourself* - think through the problem like a philosopher, like a

chess player, like a lawyer, thinking through the different moves that get you to your position -- and what moves get another tradition or person to another position.

And you always have to be open to the battle, to the encounter, to facing the chessboard as it is, the state of the argument as it is, the state of the problem as it is, and not just do what I'm saying for a month and decide that you are now the Super-Awesome-Philosopher-Theologian-Badass-Wunderkind who has all the answers to everything.

Because, when you act that way, as virtually all ultra-sectarians do, you're acting more like a Muslim version of a Christian...like a Muslim Christian.

And not like a Christian who imitates Christ.

And here's another thing. If you're a hardbitten ultra-sectarian, and you don't believe in ecumenism or dialogue at all, but simply believe in a loud, nasty, arrogant imperialism....then the two of us, let's just not talk. Ecumenism simply means a desire to forge a real and *authentic* unity among all Christians. If you're not for that, then I'm not for you, and you don't believe in the Flesh of Christ. Because I *don't* believe in ecumenism with people who don't believe in ecumenism, just like I don't have conversations with people who can only talk but don't *listen*.

What's the alternative? To think one of three things, none of which are plausible, none of which pass the laugh-out-loud test:

Rev. John Piper is a Pagan non-Christian, lost to Christ because he is not a Catholic?

HA!

Pope John Paul II is a Pagan Anti-Christ, lost to Christ because he is not a Protestant?

HA!

Patriarch Bartholomew I of Constantinople is a Pagan non-Christian, because (1) he is not a Protestant, (2) he is in "schism" from Rome - (rather than the East and West being in schism *from each other*), or (3) he isn't narrow-minded and chauvinistic enough in his Orthodoxy?

HA!

You know what kind of theology that is?

The School of the Ultra-Sectarians

The Three Stooges

Swingin' the Alphabet

<https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=bgmdnxtz3Bo>

Neither of you are helping

<https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=xKFO6mX0b0g>

And here's some advice for those useless, hateful ultra-sectarians who keep the Church in schism, torn apart, disunited, and who can't take a joke:

Steve Harvey

You're the Joke!

<https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=ZjcXV2sEegs>

You see, I do *not* believe that all religions are compatible. Buddhism and Hinduism are distinct religions - they are not Jewish or Christian. That being said, as they are spiritual developments made by human beings, they have insights that can, in the light of Christ, be seen as throwing more light on orthodox, authentic Christian doctrine. Islam was designed precisely to destroy Christianity, and all of its doctrines were specifically engineered to deny each of the basic tenets of the Christian faith in Our Lord and Savior, Jesus Christ. So the Church and Islam are oil and water. They are not compatible -- if you try to mix them, you will necessarily destroy the Church and Christian faith.

But the three major Christian traditions - the standard, trinitarian, main components that make up the shards of what must become the Whole Church - *are* compatible. Each tradition contains errors.....and many more misunderstandings and prejudices...and uniting them will *not* be easy, nor should we rush into a syncretic scramble for a false unity.

But to think that the other traditions are false paganisms, with nothing to offer the Whole Church, because they do not share each fidget and facet of your oh so Perfect and Awesome, Totally, and Astoundingly Correct Super-Doctrine IS PURE MADNESS!!!

It is lunacy -- an arrogant, proud, insane LUNACY that has kept the Church torn apart for centuries.

So, for all those ultra-sectarians totally convinced of their own righteousness and perfection: Go find a mirror and see how *self-righteous* and *ugly* you really are.

I tell you what -- Let's make a deal -- when Our Lady of the Magical Thinking, JC's Super Bible Heroes, or the Thundering Theotokos of Everybody Else but Us is a Heretic magically converts all the Christians in the world to one of the ultra-sectarian versions of one of the traditions, or the other two traditions fall away into paganism, then I'll sign with you.

The Message of Fatima

<https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=YjaT5j7pTpE>

Actually, I agree with much of this....but is it just me, or does this sound like, and have the narrative tone of, a Scientology video?

Tom Cruise: Scientologist

https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=UFBZ_uAbxS0

Funny or Die: Jerry O'Connell is Tom Cruise

<https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=g4i8hd4Zyo0>

Now...that being said...

STOP DOING THIS!

https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=rh_nqtp3VrU

<https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=ZOPkYwIOCRM>

What the Hell are you Modernists thinking?!!

(Hell.....mostly)

My thoughts

<https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=07J5ISdyxo>

(An alternative title for this book: La Commedia Apocalyptica)

Remember, life is complicated. So God is complicated (to limited, mortal, human minds; in Himself, He is absolutely simple, and His multi-dimensionality is, in an ironic way that we cannot fully access, the very essence of His simplicity). And, necessarily then, truths about God are complicated.

You want simple? I'll give you simple. Simple, angry, loud, obstinate, unwilling to listen, vengeful, frothing at the mouth. Meet your true master: Satan.

I would also like to discuss the incessant and rampant Protestant criticism that the Mass, the sacraments, and the veneration (but *not* worship) of the Blessed Virgin Mary and the saints somehow constitute idolatry.

God is stern and All-Righteous, completely and absolutely and constantly true.

But He is also ironic in the extreme.

So, just as He is One, and made His Oneness the essence of the Hebrew faith, it turns out that He is a multi-dimensional unity, which He could only reveal in due time, since people untrained in His worship would never understand it from the beginning.

Just as God makes perfectly clear that He is absolutely different from human beings, and not similar to the pagan gods in the shape of men, it turns out that God's solution to sin, to evil, is the incarnation, for God to become a man.

In the same way, the sacramental practices of the Catholic Church are a consecration of all immanent reality - matter, everyday events, individual people who have lived within the life of the Church - to the transcendence of God.

The Mass is not a pagan sacrifice: it is a communion of people here and now with the One Eternal Sacrifice of Christ. The Eucharist is not voodoo idolatry: it is taking the Crucifixion seriously, affirming that Christ's flesh was *truly* broken for us such that each Christian's flesh can become one with the flesh of Christ -- not symbolically, not theoretically, not intellectually, but *really, actually* - such that the whole Christian people can become the Flesh of Christ - really, truly the actual, living Flesh of Christ, and not merely a phantom association of congregants.

The veneration of Mary as the Queen of Heaven is not the pagan Canaanite practice of worshipping Asherah, the consort of El, from the aboriginal Canaanite pantheon. It is God's greatest, most ironic, most splendid riposte to Satan. Satan desired to be equal to God, thus he desired that the monarchical nature of spiritual reality, with the True God as the absolute, supreme, transcendent Center, be replaced with, or changed to, a spiritual anarchy in which the created spirit could claim equality - or superiority! - to the Uncreated Creator. Satan's sin was a sin against gratitude - an invocation of the claim that the beneficiary could claim equal or higher status than the benefactor - that the Father should kneel before the Son, that the Master should kneel before the servant. So, Satan's rebellion against God, when he was thrown down to earth, became the propagation of idolatry - of the very concept that Satan held dear, the deification of spirits rather than the worship of the One Uncreated, Ineffable Spirit. The Canaanite idolatry, similar to other idolatrous pantheons, claimed that the high God was somehow married -- this insulted the Unity and Supremacy of the Spirit. God's response is this: I extend deification to humans, the least in the spiritual creation, such that the elect of the human race *shall* share in God's Deity. What Satan attempted to grasp in disobedience, those little, weak human spirits who obey God will be generously and joyously granted. So, the littlest spirit, the most humble of them all - a poor, powerless 14 or 15 year old pregnant girl in a society where women are oppressed, and who ends up a widow whose only son⁷⁷ is executed, is exalted by God as the first of the created human spirits among the Deified Elect Co-Rulers of Creation with the Triune God.

Deification and co-rule with God have always been mainstays of Christian belief. Consult any Orthodox religious material. St. Matthew clearly records Jesus' promise to saved believers, "Since you were faithful in small matters, I will give you great responsibilities. Come, share your Master's joy" (25:23). Jesus does not say, come, you saved believer, let's play golf with Arnold Palmer while sipping Arnold Palmers. Jesus says, "I will give you great

⁷⁷ Those who insist that the adelphos of the Lord are literal brothers have to answer why Jesus felt it necessary to entrust his mother to John, when James the "brother" of the Lord was still living. Shouldn't James, if Mary was his mother, take his own mother into *his* (James') home?

responsibilities.” This does not mean full, uncreated equality with God, but it clearly means a kind of co-rule, a participation in the government of the spiritual creation, which necessarily means a kind of exaltation to the status of the Ruler, which is divinity. As St. John says, “Beloved, we are God’s children now; what we shall be has not yet been revealed. We do know that when it is revealed we shall be like him, for we shall see him as he is. Everyone who has this hope based on him makes himself pure, as he is pure” (1 John 3:2-3). 2 Peter 1:4 explicitly states that the Elect shall “share in the divine nature”, and what else can sharing in the Divine Nature mean than some kind of Deification? *All* the Elect will, in some way, be deified. Revelation explicitly states about the Co-Rule of these Deified Elect, specifically those who attain to the first resurrection, “They will be priests of God and of Christ, and they will reign with him for the thousand years” (20:6b). Now, clearly, reigning *with* God does not make the Elect Uncreated like the Uncreated God, but in order to *reign* at all, when the fundamental principle of any reign in Heaven is Divinity, the Elect must be raised to *some sort* of divinity. What kind of divinity is a mystery beyond explication.

Mary is the Queen of Heaven not because she is a Goddess co-equal with the Trinity, but because she is the created human being (other than and lower than Jesus, who was the Incarnation of the Uncreated God and not a creation of God - Jesus was begotten, not created) in all of human history whose will was *most* perfectly aligned with the Will of God. Mary’s obedience is the reason God exalts her. And the veneration of Mary is not the idolatry of a mortal woman, but the exaltation within the soul of each believer of Mary’s singular obedience - her cry of, “Behold, I am the handmaid of the Lord. May it be done to me according to your word” (Luke 1:38). Most people only see slavery in obedience. Some people fetishize spiritual slavery. Other people rail against any radical obedience to a transcendent Spiritual Power. Where Margaret Atwood can only see a dystopia of degradation and rape in such words, Mary, the infinitely humble little spirit, has a total trust in the LORD such that there is no fear of being let down, or abused, or degraded. Mary places her total trust in the LORD, which allows her will to be totally in line with the Will of the Spirit, and thus allows Mary to be the most Spirit-filled of any Christian believer.

The veneration of Mary an idolatry?

Mary, Queen of Heaven a pagan blasphemy?

Mary is the ultimate Charismatic - precisely because *she*, more than the blustery Calvinist John MacArthur or the sanguine prosperity-peddling Joel Osteen or any snake-handling Pentecostal minister, is *totally, radically* suffused with the Spirit, in communion with the Spirit, more than any other human being who has ever lived or will ever live, other than the Only-Begotten Son of God, Christ Jesus.

Mary, Queen of Heaven is the ultimate avatar of the Calvinist ethos - because God absolutely predestined Mary to have a will totally turned to Christ, so totally turned to Christ *that she literally bore him into the world!* When John MacArthur is pregnant with Jesus and carries Him to term, and has to kneel before His Cross and weep at His grave, then he can complain about Mary, Queen of Heaven -- until then, may the Seraphim cleanse his lips with heavenly charcoal.

Mary, Queen of Heaven unbiblical? The Bible, Old and New Testament, is the Proclamation of God’s Will for the human race -- which is *precisely* that each human being

individually, and, essentially, as a community in a corporate character as one Flesh of Christ, *must* turn their wills to the Will of God. The one believer in all of history who *most* said AMEN! to this Divine Proclamation was Mary, Queen of Heaven.

To *not* venerate Mary, Queen of Heaven is to spit on the Cross, to urinate on the flesh of Christ as He was taken down from His Cross, to hurl feces on the Tomb before which Mary His mother and Mary Magdalene knelt in sorrowful prayer.

To *not* venerate Mary, Queen of Heaven is to take up the cause of Satan himself, to obscure and insult the *one human being in all of human history other than the Uncreated and Incarnate LORD, Christ Jesus*, who acted most *unlike* Satan. Satan, though created and enduring in ineffable beatitude, could not trust the God who had created him so blessed. Mary, though powerless and poor and a woman in a patriarchal society, found the grace, because it was granted to her, to totally trust and accept God's Will without understanding, and while still immersed in the dangers and uncertainties of the world.

So, like all true Christians, I consecrate myself to Mary, Queen of Heaven, beseeching the Triune LORD that I may be granted the grace to imitate even a precious, single drop of the vast oceans of her gracious humility and profound obedience. For in such consecration, it becomes more and more possible for a Christian to imitate the one Lord, Christ Jesus, and to accept His Will.

And, for those True Christians who shall have to survive the Terror of the Anti-Christ, I can recommend no more salutary weapon to save your souls than devotion to Mary, for in imitating her obedience to her Creator, God, and to her Uncreated, Only-Begotten Son, souls may hope to have the courage and fortitude to resist the multitude of lies, brilliant deceptions, false promises, empty pleasures, cunning stratagems, and awful tortures of the Anti-Christ, to persevere until the end and attain the precious crown of salvation.

Likewise, the veneration of saints is not the idolatry of a pagan pantheon: it is the catalogue of human lives worthy of imitation by Christians. For, we are all to imitate Christ, but each Christian has their own unique form of that imitation. That is why St. Paul himself said, "Be imitators of me, as I am of Christ" (1 Corinthians 11:1). Anyone who defames the veneration (not worship) of saints as idolatrous should also accuse St. Paul of being an idolator.

As far as prayer to Mary and the saints, it is not a prayer of worship, but a prayer of communication, from one believer to another, for Christians believe that all spirits, though dead in this world, are alive to God, and thus, as we speak to other believers who are alive in the world for encouragement, we can also speak to those spirits alive in God, for encouragement.

John MacArthur could no more serve the Satanic purpose in his inane, unlearned, infantile, pathetic, irrelevant, contemptible, blasphemous, heretical, schismatic, disgusting, offensive denunciations of the Catholic Deposit of Faith than if Satan himself were to preach from MacArthur's pulpit.

Offended by that?

I'm offended by MacArthur's lies, distortions, and perversions of Scriptural truth and the handing down of that truth in Christian Tradition.

We live in a supposedly "Christian" country where defaming Mary is no obstacle to a successful ministry, but those who defend Mary, the Mother of Christ Jesus Himself, are supposed to keep their heads down and let scandalous, ignorant schismatic heretics like MacArthur spew his defamation and Satanic ignorance, so that it rises to Heaven like the noxious fumes from a flaming garbage pit.

The Protestant attack on Catholic, and, indeed, Orthodox, beliefs and practices are no more than what Jews and Muslims do when they attack Christian beliefs like the Trinity and the Divinity of Jesus. For Jews and Muslims often call belief in the Trinity an idolatry of three Gods, and they call the doctrine of the Divinity of Jesus an idolatry of a mere man, making him a co-partner with God in some kind of pagan pantheon.

We all know such attacks are wrong, because we understand the teaching of our own Christian doctrine. The Protestant attacks on Catholic worship can only persist because of a willful misunderstanding of what the Catholic faith actually teaches.

Now let us also consider those doctrines about Mary that relate to her being, in the Catholic tradition, often called Co-Mediatrix and Co-Redemptrix.

Strong stuff. Clearly heresy. Unbiblical. Pagan. Idolatrous. It imperils the faith of a believer such that they lose salvation in Christ.

Or does it?

Remember our discussion of Purgatory. Just as a soul cannot enter into the wonder and beatitude of the SPIRIT until that soul has seen how other people experienced their lives (and not just how they incompletely viewed their lives from their own perspective), which is an inherently and unavoidably *painful* experience (anything else is wishful thinking), so too Mary, the mother of Jesus, when she entered eternity, *necessarily* became present to the whole of Jesus' life.

She is His mother! When she entered eternity, did she say, "Hey, where's Arnold Palmer at? I need to sharpen my golf game, and I want to spend the rest of my eternal days sipping Arnold Palmers?"

No.

She raced to see her Son, and to embrace Him. But, when she embraced Him, her Son who was her Lord, she embraced the full reality of Christ - she saw *His* whole life -- and let me tell you, *His* whole life is a mess -- not because of any fault of Christ's, but because Christ fully absorbed all the sin of humanity, experiencing every torture, pain, suffering, and disintegration of spirit that has ever been experienced or will ever be experienced.

So, when Mary embraced her Son in eternity, she *became present* to all of His sufferings. She did not bear the sufferings of the world, placing them on her shoulders, she did not save the world, she did not redeem humanity from their sins. Only Christ Jesus did that. But, *in* becoming fully present in eternity to the full spiritual, emotional, and psychological situation

(which, in eternity, is simply the spiritual) of Christ, she did, *in a way*, become fully immersed in the sufferings of the world. And this is true for all Christians who enter an eternity of blessedness within the Inner Life of God, who become incorporated into Christ.

But, as we saw, Mary is the most perfect believer - the one who most trusted in God in the Christian mission. The Church is the Flesh of Christ. Mary literally bore the Flesh of Christ. The Church, in a real, fundamental, unavoidable way was conceived and nourished in her womb. That is why Scripture, not big bad Tradition, not Babylonian voodoo, says, "For he has been mindful of the humble state of his servant. From now on all generations will call me blessed" (Luke 1:48). All saints will be called blessed, but Scripture takes special pains to make clear that Mary, among the saints, has a preeminent blessedness. For, in the Kingdom of Heaven, each saint, while experiencing the full plenitude of the SPIRIT, will have a rank, a priority and order of blessedness that conforms and aligns with that saint's trust in the Father through Christ.

So, the Christian is supposed to imitate Christ. Scripture makes clear through St. Paul that imitating a human being who imitates Christ is a legitimate way of *learning* to imitate Christ (1 Corinthians 11:1).

If Mary is the saint in Heaven who Scripture (and Tradition) points to as *the most blessed* of all the saints, then, if Scripture through St. Paul says that a Christian *should* imitate saints more advanced in Christian faith than they are, should not *all* Christians imitate the most advanced saint in the exercise and practice of Christian faith, hope, and love: Mary.

St. Paul explicitly said to imitate him, in furtherance of a Christian's imitation of Christ. St. Paul also said that he was the least of the apostles, "For I am least of the apostles, not fit to be called an apostle, because I persecuted the church of God. But by the grace of God, I am what I am, and his grace to me has not been ineffective. Indeed, I have toiled harder than all of them; not I, however, but the grace of God [that is] with me. Therefore, whether it be I or they, so we preach and so you believed" (1 Corinthians 15:9-11).

Mary is the greatest of the apostles. Apostle is a translation of *apostolos*, which means messenger, which itself is derived from the verb *apostellein* which means "send forth". And what makes an apostle an apostle? What is the message that an apostle preaches? The apostles send forth the Word of God, the word about the Word *into* the world.

How can men who simply speak the word about the Word, bearing it to the world, be apostles, and the woman who literally bore the Word within her womb and delivered the Word into the world not be an apostle?

This is, frankly, the Protestant cultural preference for preachers, writers, and theologians. Protestantism began as a literary-academic movement supported by preachers, and that kind of person continues to be the preeminent figure in Protestant culture. The Catholic Church turns the Apostles into the first bishops, cardinals, and pope. The Protestants turn the Apostles into the first preachers, writers, and theologians. Orthodoxy, by far the most theological of the major Christian traditions, literally gives St. John the Evangelist the appellation St. John the Theologian -- which, he is, but, again, we see each tradition reading its own cultural preferences into the past as the *exclusive* and *sole* way of seeing the past.

People see what they want to see, and what they almost *always* want to see is themselves.

Listen to how Mary might overhear Paul's passage, quoted above: Mary never persecuted the Church, or murdered anyone. Rather, Mary nourished the Church, (since the Church is the Flesh of Christ) within her own womb, which literally grew within her. When she gave birth, she washed and swaddled the baby, caring for him, and raising him to manhood. Protestants do not believe that Mary was sinless, as I and the Catholic Church do. But will Protestants be so bold, irreverent, and blasphemous as to claim that, if Mary did at all sin, that Mary committed anything other than the most minor sins? Will Protestants not only defame the Immaculate Conception of Mary, but also accuse Mary....of what? Adultery? Prostitution? Murder? Theft? Robbery? Greed? Wantonness? Pride? Arrogance? Envy? Sloth? Was Mary a couch potato? Was Mary a gossip? Was Mary even gluttonous? Did she sit at home in Nazareth eating honey cakes with raisins all day while Jesus saved the world? Even the Protestant must acknowledge -- and celebrate -- her heroic virtue. They love to celebrate Paul, and all of Paul's virtues....why not Mary's?

And did Paul toil harder than Mary? Was Mary's heartbreak and constant anguish at the pain and suffering that her Son experienced not toil? And even if, in a kind of sociopathic way, you simply say, "Well, after the Resurrection, she got over it, because JC came back to bring all of us to Casa Cielo in Heaven, so no problemo," what about the toil of knowing what was probably going to happen to Jesus in Jerusalem, and having to kneel at the Cross and the grave.

Paul says that he is an apostle because he preached, and others believed.

Mary said YES to God, bore Him, delivered Him, and then witnessed His gruesome Crucifixion in horror, having to take Him down from the Cross, hold Him, and then bury Him. If that is not toil, toil does not exist. Paul preached, and others believed. Mary bore a Son, saying YES to a supernatural pregnancy, and thus the whole world believed. Many Gentiles owe their faith to the work of St. Paul. Every Christian, from the first Christian called and converted to the last Christian at the end of time, owes his faith to Mary.

Indeed, Mary is the first Christian - believing in Him, first, before he was even born - *before he was even conceived*, she believed what the Angel Gabriel told her. The conception of Christ depends on the say-so, the AMEN, the YES, the Fiat of Mary. Without Mary's word, there would have been no Word to preach in the first place, because there would have been no Word in the world at all -- No Incarnation. And without the Incarnation, there is no Crucifixion, and no Resurrection -- no substitutionary atonement and no salvation.

Every Protestant Church service should start with the acknowledgement, "We acknowledge in gratitude that Mary said YES, because otherwise none of us would be here."

To simply reduce Mary to a container, to a host, like she was the host in the *Alien* film franchise is not only idiotic and wrong -- it is downright offensive.

Mary was not some random person -- from all eternity it was God's Will that her exercise of her freedom would be necessary for the salvation of the human race. Some one person in all the wicked world had to have the *grace* to say YES. Mary could have said no, and thus nixed the Whole Plan of Salvation. Of course, God knew Mary would say YES, and planned the whole affair that way.....but to trivialize Mary's assent on behalf of the human race totally misses the mark.

It is not as if, if Mary had said, “No, not for me,” God would simply have gone next door to Phyllis and said, “Hey, you wanna be my baby mama?” From all eternity, *Mary’s* role as the Theotokos - the one who bore the Word into the world - was *willed* by God. That is what God thought of Mary when He created her. Protestants might emulate the opinion of the God they claim others are not worshipping through themselves imitating Mary’s devotion and belief.

That is why Mary told Jesus to change the water into wine at the Wedding Feast of Cana -- she believed in his truth and power (John 4:46-54). That is why Mary was present at the Crucifixion and Resurrection. That is why Mary never tried to deter her son from getting himself killed, as Peter and the Apostles repeatedly tried to do.

The Twelve Apostles, before the Resurrection, Ascension, and Pentecost were vain, rank-obsessed, deluded, and blind. Mary was none of those things.

Paul was a murderer. I believe Mary was sinless. If Jesus was to be *both* Man and God, how could the flesh from which he arose have sin? If God simply filtered out the sin *from Mary herself*, Jesus’ genesis from Mary’s flesh would be qualified, it would have an asterisk. If Mary was born with sin infecting her flesh, Jesus would not be the God-Man, he would be the God-Man*.

Filtering the sin out *from Mary’s parents*, made Mary a pure flesh, which could be impregnated by the Pure Spirit, and thus give birth to the Pure and Undeified Flesh of Christ, who was *both* truly Son of God and Son of Man.

If Mary was not sinless, and the sin had to be filtered out *from Mary*, then Jesus was not really a Son of Man -- he was God’s test-tube baby, God’s Frankenstein, a puddle of engineered flesh that the Holy Spirit, that mad scientist, concocted into something *that resembled* a man, but wasn’t a real man, not in the way that you and I are men. *That* kind of Jesus, the Protestant Jesus, without a sinless Mother Mary, is a kind of Possessed Flesh, with no real, authentic, complete, total *mother*, but only a mad scientist Father whose Spirit animated the chemically treated flesh that had been *extracted* from Mary. This Frankenstein Christ is how Satan operates, not how God operates. This Frankenstein Christ has more in common with the reanimated Anti-Christ after his assassination than the God-Man Christ Jesus, Our Lord and Savior.

And, if Mary was sinless, then it only follows *logically* that she would be assumed into Heaven, because sin is the cause of death. So, Mary could not die. Protestants believe that the Prophet Elijah was assumed into Heaven (2 Kings 2). If a prophet could be assumed into Heaven, why not the Mother of Jesus, the Mother of the God-Man?

The Protestant animosity towards the imitation of Mary has more to do with the rabid Protestant hatred of Catholicism than any love for Jesus or love for the Scriptures.

But let’s assume that Mary was not sinless. What kinds of sins did she commit? So, hopefully, above, we’ve nixed any major flaws. But what about minor flaws? Was she foul-mouthed? Loud-mouthed? Abusive towards Jesus -- did she spank him unfairly? Would the perfect child need to be spanked? Was she disobedient to Joseph? Was she a bad or deficient mother in some other sense? What? Seriously....what? What sins would the Protestants like to

attribute to Mary in order to make her sinful? Did she give lewd looks to other men in the village? Did she fantasize about men? Did she hold grudges? Was she envious of others? Was she disrespectful towards her family or the other villagers?

Tradition holds that Jesus' guardian angel was the Archangel Michael himself. Which makes perfect sense. Jesus was God's Incarnation as a Man. Wouldn't that man be provided with *every spiritual* benefit, just as a rich father in our society, or any society, endows his son with every *material* benefit? If God intended Jesus to grow to manhood in total perfection and to have the proper rearing to fulfill His destiny, why wouldn't God give to Jesus the finest of mothers?

So *any* possible sin that supposedly tainted Mary would have to be so minuscule, it would be as a drop of iodine in the Pacific Ocean.

And if St. Paul taught that he, who had been a murderer, should be imitated, how can we not imitate Mary, the Apostle of Christ's Flesh, and someone who was *either* totally sinless or practically sinless?

(As an aside, Mary is not subject to criticism for being God's Frankenstein for *herself* being the Immaculate Conception, because God did not act as Mary's Father, only as Mary's Creator. And, actually, the theology of Mary's Immaculate Conception is perfect: God created the Old Creation through creating Adam, (creating him sinless), and then bringing forth from Adam, Eve. And it is Eve's sin that solicits Adam's sin and causes the ruin of the Old Creation. God creates the New Creation in Christ through creating Mary, the New and Perfect Eve, free from sin, and then brings forth, by and with and for the Father's Holy Spirit, with the Fiat of Mary, the New and Perfect Adam, the God-Man Christ Jesus. Mary's Fiat - her YES to God- is the reversal of Eve's sin. And Scripture understands Jesus as the Perfect Adam, as Romans 5:12-21 describes how Jesus reverses and heals the Death and Hell caused by Adam's sin. Adam's sin poisons the world with Death and Hell. Jesus' righteousness justifies the Flesh of Christ, the Church, all Christians, through which Forgiveness and Salvation are afforded. By the flesh, Mary was born of her two human parents, from the seed of her father and by the womb of her mother, **but by the Spirit**, Mary was a New Creation of God, which was the womb of the New Creation in Christ: Christ Himself, and His Flesh. In other words, Mary was the new Eve who became Mother of All the Living, for, in the New Creation, all the Living will be Christians, and as Mary is the Mother of Christ, so Mary is the Mother of all Christians. The sin of Adam and Eve twisted off the spirit created by God from the flesh created by God, through a rebellion of Adam and Eve's *Will* - and that sin poisoned the whole human race. From that point on, the spirit, rather than sovereign over the flesh, became the slave of the flesh, and as such, the spirit was subject to the death that proceeded from the flesh's corruption. God created Mary with free will just like Adam, but she used *her* Will to say YES, or AMEN, to God, and in doing so brought forth the AMEN of God, which is the Word, Christ Jesus. Adam and Eve's sin brought the Wrath of Death and Hell upon the whole world. Jesus and Mary's righteousness brings Life and Paradise, Salvation, to all who believe.

Now, for those who say that Mary's sinlessness somehow diminishes Jesus -- remember, Jesus is the Son, who is the Word of the Father, and the Father only creates through speaking. So, *everything* was made by Christ, including Mary. Mary was created righteous by the Father

through the Son, and that righteousness of Mary is thus a gift of, or an *imputation of*, righteousness from Creator to creature. So, the source of Mary's righteousness is still totally Jesus. Jesus created his own Mother, and Mary gave birth to her own Creator. Mary is a New Creation of Spirit, with the flesh contributed by her parents being cleansed such that there is a sinless flesh ready to receive a sinless Uncreated spirit. But Mary is not Frankenstein, because she is not a God-Woman, she is simply a woman. And a woman is not Uncreated like the Son of God, Second Person of the Trinity -- a woman is a creature. So, Mary is not God's Frankenstein. Mary is God's Masterpiece.)

And, if the dead are present to God, and human beings alive in this world (which simply means separation from God, a necessary exile and pilgrimage which we must walk, or face Hellfire) can be present, in some mysterious way through a prayer of communication, to the dead who are present to God, then all Christians can be present to Mary, through being present to Christ. So, the Christian does not need to merely imitate Mary psychologically -- each Christian has direct spiritual access to all the saints, and if Mary is the preeminent saint, accessing and communing with her, in a true and Christian way, would *necessarily* help the Christian on earth perfect their imitation of Christ, which is the beating heart of what it means to have Christian faith at all.

And, if Mary is present to Christ's sufferings, which, in eternity, she certainly is, then she, along with all the saints, is also present to each Christian's sufferings. And, as the preeminent saint, she can, aside from the Uncreated Triune Godhead, most assist the Christian in perfecting his or her imitation of Christ, *precisely* because as the preeminent saint (and, you know, Christ's mother) she, among all the creatures glorified to the status of Elected Saint in eternity, can most assist fellow creatures like ourselves conform ourselves to the Uncreated Majesty of the Christ.

So, in a sense, she mediates between us and Christ, because she helps us conform to Christ. So, her "mediation" is not something that puts distance between us and Christ. It helps make the direct access of the Christian to Christ even more immediate, not less immediate.

And while she did not transform the sin of the world into grace, and so is certainly not the Redeemer, in helping all Christians perfect their imitation of Christ, she most helps pave the highway to the Redeemer's eternal redemption.

You see, this is called logic. Scriptural analysis shouldn't spurn it.

But, also, we can get a sense for the irony of God. God hates idolatry. It is sin number one. *But* God isn't a one-note, one-dimensional tyrant with no imagination. God is infinite imagination. And, in God's infinite imagination, He has figured a way, the Way, for all of life, all of the great multiplicity of Creation, to be absorbed into and present to Him, such that all Creation is glorified, *and* God is still absolutely, totally, completely ONE. *That* is God-in-All. And Satan hates God-in-All more than you hate cockroaches in your birthday cake.

Because Satan saw Reality and said, "God-in-All? No, no, no - rather, *all under ME, as my slaves!*"

So, all multiplicity that can *properly* be absorbed into God is not idolatry, but the absolute opposite of idolatry -- it is the sacramental imagination of grace that forms the bond of Life, the bond of communion, between God and His Creation, and especially His Chosen Ones - the human race, destined to rule with Him, to become totally absorbed into the Divine Inner Life.

Satan doesn't want anything absorbed into him, except as food in his gullet (metaphorically speaking, since Satan is a pure spirit). Satan doesn't want co-rulers. Satan doesn't want a family. He wants armies of slaves to serve him, groveling before him, while he alone sits arrogantly on his one throne. Not a multi-dimensional, infinite, creative, imaginative, infinitely involuted ONE throne of Grace. No, no, no - Satan isn't that imaginative or gracious. No: Satan wants one, blank, simple, one note, mean, vain, angry, vindictive ME ME ME ME ME ME ME ME ME ME ME throne, under which all are to be crushed by his weight, eternally torturing those subject to him.

God, on the other hand, promises the human race an eternal weight of glory.

Is this dangerous?

Yes.

But, then, driving in your car is dangerous. Boarding a plane is dangerous. Falling in love is dangerous. Walking out your door can be dangerous. Getting out of bed can be dangerous.

Life is dangerous. Those who embrace more danger, embrace more life.

Because, if you step right up to the line, tippy toe, up to the line of idolatry, and you don't cross over (not a centimeter, not a jot), then you are as close to the Mystery and Reality of God as you can possibly be. You are fully experiencing God-in-All: the glorious vision of God, loved by the Angels and the Saints, and bitterly resented and hated by Satan.

Are there those who fall over the line? I'm sure there are, and the Church should take special pains to responsibly preach her Traditions.

But to simply throw out obvious, manifest truth - truth that is manifestly useful to those elect souls advanced in Christ - those more educated, more sensible, more ardent -- what sense would that make?

Does the South ban NASCAR because it is dangerous? Should we ban hamburgers because people get heart disease? Should we ban cars because people die in auto accidents?

No! Because we love NASCAR, hamburgers, and cars. They're great and useful and fun.

So, we should take away a manifest and invaluable spiritual tool from the elect, because we're afraid that some others might fall into perdition?

Why is a Calvinist so concerned about this? If they fall into perdition, wasn't that their destiny anyway?

Doesn't this just testify to the wisdom of God: that a grace that is useful to the elect becomes poison to the damned?

The Thrill of the Spirit

The Danger Zone

Kenny Loggins

Top Gun

<https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=2oct4huJkPg>

Now, certainly, it is the Church's role to responsibly teach and not unnecessarily involve souls in perdition. But that does not mean that the Church has to whitewash itself to accommodate spiritual morons who are probably damned anyway. By that logic, how about we follow the Jewish and Muslim criticism and stop preaching the Trinity because some Christians might think that Christianity worships three gods?

A Christian isn't limited by narrow, unimaginative constructs. A Muslim can wag his finger in a Christian's face all he wants about the Trinity being polytheistic idolatry. But a True Christian knows that it is *precisely* the fact that the ONE ousia of the ONE LORD is present in reality in the three actualities, the three hypostases, of Father, Son, and Spirit (*within* the Godhead) - or, we might say, of Giver, Gift, and Bond - that *makes any Unity of God possible in the first place!*

Maybe Christians should stop preaching that Jesus is God because some people might think that that means that Jesus is separate from God, and thus that Christian faith involves the worship of a pantheon?

Professors do not need to be lectured to by kindergartners, nor do Professors have to stop being learned or advanced in their lives because a kindergartner might get the wrong idea.

But, it is true: Marian piety is a high-wire act.

<https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=t11UW-6rrqg>

Actually, really advanced Marian piety is more like this:

<https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=hkAmU6N98mo>

Should you deny the tightrope walker the glory and grace of his spirituality, because those less skilled in the faith might be foolish?

Now, perhaps, those less skilled should be warded off, or better educated -- some precaution should be made for their benefit.

But show me the Protestant Christian who believes that society should be totally stultified and controlled by a Nanny State that prioritizes absolute precaution over the plenitude of living one's life to the fullest.

So, as a Christian, precisely *because* I am a Bible-believing, Spirit-filled Christian, I proclaim joyously and rapturously: MARY, QUEEN OF HEAVEN!!!

The Christian does not worship Mary. He venerates Mary. A better term perhaps.....the Christian *imitates* Mary. All Marian piety, therefore, may best be described as the Imitation of Mary, which is meant to assist the Christian in his or her Imitation of Christ.

So the Catholic says that he consecrates himself to the Immaculate Heart of Mary.

The Protestant hears idolatrous worship.

The Protestant should translate the Catholic language into Protestant. The Christian must commit his inner life to a close imitation of Mary's perfect spiritual orientation *towards* Christ. Every other disciple based his fidelity to Christ on a religious motivation -- how Christ could help *them* get to God. But Mary loved Jesus *both* ways, together, perfectly. She loved Jesus as the Son of God, meant to save the world, *and* as her beloved son, whom she bore and raised, and had to mourn as a literal mother. Every other disciple -- Peter, James, John -- they could all be suspected of doubt or misunderstanding -- Peter with his delusions and insecurities, James and John with their desire for rank -- Mary sought nothing from Jesus, other than intimacy with God. She sought no rank in an earthly kingdom or in a great spiritual reality: If Jesus had been nothing more than a simple man, she would have loved him just the same. Mary loved Jesus *for* who Jesus was -- and, of course, Jesus was also the Son of God, so she loved him for that. But for Mary, Jesus wasn't just JC, *MY* magic ticket to heaven -- she was his family. That is how Christians must love Christ Jesus, and Mary can show us how.

A little bit of sanity, in an insane world:

Rick Warren on Catholicism

<https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=6Ha0311JXlc>

Does that mean that I hate John MacArthur?

Of course not!

I love John MacArthur! He is my brother, and I, at least, consider him my brother in Christ. He has a standing invitation to join me at my dinner table.

Enemies from different tribes, who have nothing to do with each other, fight, but they fight to the death, seeking to exterminate the others who are different from themselves.

Brothers quarrel - bitterly, for years, obnoxiously, loudly, contentiously, they can have fierce, differing opinions and vie with each other to prove they're correct. But, if they're brothers, at the end of the day, they find a way to resolve their differences, and would never think of destroying each other. However much may divide them, their common love infinitely transcends those divisions, misunderstandings, hurts, and even hatreds.

Brothers

Family

Star Trek: The Next Generation

<https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=gUdqNj9ewSU>

Calvinism and Catholicism. Better together. Together forever.

A Beautiful Mess

Jason Mraz

<https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=VD9iDZHrQjw>

Mirrors

Justin Timberlake

https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=uuZE_IRwLNI

After All

Cher & Peter Cetera

https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=OzI9F7ZeL_g

The Odd Couple II

<https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=BSsjfuxlTu0>

This is phenomenal preaching:

John MacArthur on the Rich Man and Lazarus

<https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=17tPedLdoZc>

I am a devout Catholic.
I am also a born-again Christian.

Well, the terminology “born again” is a little off.

The Greek word translated “again” is ἄνωθεν, which means “above” as well as “again” -- so one is to be born of the Spirit, which is the reality standing above, in power, over all creation. I get the strong sense that the terminology “born again” puts all the emphasis on you: *you’ve* got to get born again. Have an experience. Grit your teeth and get *born again*.

It’s all about you.

But the Spirit is all about the Spirit, the Spirit blows where it will and totally does what the *Spirit* wants. So the terminology “born again” obscures that it is not something you can just conjure up in yourself, by yourself, before a commercial break (I’m looking at you, Joel Osteen).

<https://vimeo.com/30609272>

Being born ἄνωθεν is something totally and completely initiated by the Spirit. And therefore, it’s not something you can or should want to rush. It will happen on the Spirit’s schedule, and repentance and prayer and encouraged endurance should be the attitude of a Christian awaiting such a rebirth in the Spirit -- not the willful attitude that turns being born of the Spirit into a self-help affirmation that *you* accomplish.

So, I wouldn’t *exactly* say that I’m a born-again Christian. More of an ἄνωθεν-born Christian.

My Big Fat Greek Wedding
Greek School

<https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=VL9whwwTK6I>

You see, I’m *not* inconsistent. You’re just one-dimensional.

Essential Tim Keller

True Happiness - Capsule Summary

<https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=POgfgvlt0uo>

The Full Sermon - The Search for Happiness

September 12, 1993

Preaching on Psalm 1

<https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=XuLlePKzNQA>

Tim Keller on Stories

<https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=EPcLie0HDXE>

ABANDON THE ABADDON OF THE “CONSERVATIVE” SNARE OF SATAN

Do not believe in Rush Limbaugh, Sean Hannity, and Fox News conservatism (and that includes Trump and Bannon and all their ilk). That “conservatism” conserves nothing but the pocketbooks of the wealthy.

“Conservatism” can crow all it wants about God and Christ and the Church and abortion and the gays and the grits and the gravy -- But that “conservatism” is straight from the pits of Hell and was hatched in the infernal and unholy mind of the Dark Lord Satan himself, that prince of darkness, that foul spirit, that lord of illusions, that father of lies, that murderer from the beginning.

“Conservatism” is nothing more than Satan in papal vestments, wearing the papal tiara and prancing around in the papal red slippers. For you Protestants, it is Satan holding a revival, under a big billowing white tent under the hot sun, crying and cajoling and jumping up and down and sweating and fuming and bellowing about SALVATION and HOLY GRACE and IN JESUS NAME, GOD BLESS YOU!

They are liars, and idolators of vast wealth, demons of greed and arrogance and anger, wrathful in all their ways, wicked in all their desires, deceitful in all their words, and they are destined for the wrath of God’s Eternal Justice in an Eternal Hellfire.

They say one thing and do it for another purpose. They say Christ but mean Mammon. They say grace but mean the world and the Dominion of sinful men and the Lord of Sin, Satan.

He who is truly in Christ cannot speak hate - cannot speak in a fury meant only to scratch the itch of their own indignation - cannot preach for the purpose of storing up vast wealth or attaining celebrity or power. Christ is not the King of the White Nation, not the Prophet of White Nationalism or White Grievance -- HE IS THE MASHIACH, THE MELECH OF THE ETERNAL AND TRANSCENDENT KINGDOM OF GOD’S HOLY GRACE - the Jewish King of a Universal Reign of Justice, Love, and Holy Peace - in which Jesus will say, “But as for cowards, the unfaithful, the depraved, murderers, the unchaste, sorcerers, idol-worshippers, and deceivers of every sort, their lot is in the burning pool of fire and sulfur, which is the second death” (Revelation 21:8).

Jump in boys! The burning sulphur is fine!

SEAN HANNITY AND RUSH LIMBAUGH - PROPHETS OF THE CHURCH OF SATAN

<https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=ckxOWLMOj5w>

<https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=ymmLEk8NrvY>

CREFLO DOLLAR

<https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=uGOEt1PCWio>

BENNY HINN

<https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=2m3wnUUay8k>

***SUPER-SIZED CHURCHES, WITH A BIG MAC CHRIST AND A SIDE OF
B.S.***

JESUS CHRIST, INC.

<https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=VU3qnZa00Iw>

https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=SWOcf_7K6i8

<https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=3cSrn30RvGs>

It would be as if I wrote all of this, and labored for all of this, so that I could be on television talk shows, or have television talks shows, or lounge in a resplendent mansion and secretly consort with prostitutes and a string of women, or guzzle greedily of the delicious nectar of intoxicating liquors while I stare in the shiny mirror of my own overweening vanity.

Rush Limbaugh and Sean Hannity and all their wretched ilk have about as much to do with Jesus Christ as Herod Antipas or Caiaphas or Pontius Pilate. They are reprobate dupes of Satan, doing their true father's work.

When I live in a mansion, have millions of dollars (that are mine) that I do not give away, own a private jet plane, and spend the rest of my days with strippers, hookers, and cocaine, then you can call bullshit. Until then, I call bullshit on conservatism and the right wing.

A Reflection on Sin

Ask yourself: are you a bacterium? Are you a virus?

That is, do you mistreat other people? Are you arrogant? Are you cold? Are you self-involved? Are you greedy? Are you nasty? Do you make life more difficult for other people?

If you are, and if you do those things, why would God let you into Heaven?

Heaven is Communion -- it is the Communion of Saints in Communion with God and the Holy Angels.

In Heaven, all are present to all. If you are a miserable, selfish person who only thinks of herself or himself, why would God let you infect the Holy Communion?

He won't.

He will cast you out.

If you are an infection, you will be damned. You will be walled off from Paradise; you will be kept out.

Heaven is not an amusement park and your "faith" isn't an All-Access Pass. You can't be on one side of the park playing golf while the people you made miserable are somewhere else, on the other side of the park, or nowhere to be found.

Heaven is not a birthday gift that you get no matter what.

It is a state of the soul for those capable of existing in a Holy Communion of holy souls.



Aristotle

Philosopher

Aristotle was an ancient Greek philosopher and scientist born in the city of Stagira, Chalkidice, on the northern periphery of Classical Greece. [Wikipedia](#)

Born: 384 BC, [Stagira, Greece](#)

Died: 322 BC, [Chalcis, Greece](#)

Education: [Platonic Academy](#) (367 BC–347 BC)

Spouse: [Pythias](#) (m. ?–326 BC)

Quotes

We are what we repeatedly do. Excellence, then, is not an act, but a habit.

It is the mark of an educated mind to be able to entertain a thought without accepting it.

What is a friend? A single soul dwelling in two bodies.

Raymond Carver
A New Path to the Waterfall

And did you get what
you wanted from this life, even so?
I did.
And what did you want?
To call myself beloved, to feel myself
beloved on the earth.

ON TYRANNY

If any Christian Fascist group ever tries to use any of my work as a justification for its regime, I explicitly grant any individual under that regime the right of revolution.

I am fully aware of the neo-Augustinian overtones of my work and how, in the wrong hands, it could be used to justify some kind of *Handmaid's Tale* dystopia.

So, in an effort to curtail misuse of my work, I explicitly grant the right of revolution to any oppressed individuals in such a regime.

The only political regime I support is liberal democracy, as practiced in the United States in the mid-20th century (and similar societies).

Some may consider the legal prohibition of abortion or the legal prohibition of calling sodomy marriage to be inconsistent with liberal democracy, but I do *not*. The United States prior to November 22, 1963 (outside of the Jim Crow South and apart from segregation and socio-institutional racism) up to March 4, 1933 most conforms to my political belief system regarding the constitution of the polity. I also approve of certain innovations enacted later, such as Civil Rights legislation, national healthcare programs, and environmental protection.

Any tyrant who attempts to institute an undemocratic government using my principles and my sayings can also have these sayings:

Any politician who attempts to create something other than a 20th century liberal democracy, (or, more exactly, other than a political order in which the basic principles thereof are respected)⁷⁸, on the basis of my ideas (as presented in this religious book), should be executed.

Any politician who attempts to create an essentially undemocratic political regime on the basis of my ideas should be subject to citizens' execution -- any person, regardless of their social or legal status, may legitimately execute such a politician.

Any political regime that attempts to use my ideas to justify a tyrannical deviation from 20th century American (or Western European) liberal democracy may be, and should be, opposed using every resource of the population, including any form of violence (so long as that political violence is calculated to kill and hinder those guilty actors and minimize any loss of innocent life or any harm to such innocent parties).

⁷⁸ A future form of Catholic Monarchy, radically different from historical models, and which totally respected human rights and fully existed in accordance with the actual consent of the governed, may possibly qualify as such a political order.

Politically, I am actually a radical libertarian socialist. I believe that the polity should be organized along liberal democratic lines and that the economy should be organized such that the basic firm (or productive unit) of economic activity is not the capitalist corporation, but the worker-owned cooperative. My Christian religion is Augustinian, Thomistic, Calvinistic, and Orthodox, but not my politics.

Politically, I consider myself best represented by Noam Chomsky.

Noam Chomsky

Creating a Libertarian Socialist Society

https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=Hr_Op5k5zDY

<https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=sCN7Ykle4r0>

<https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=vq9irdLcZmU>

<https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=cmjfgfU-I1M>

<https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=-gsFb0uSG5w>

<https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=sIcksOdUyOo>

<https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=OT4MO9uOxgc>

<https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=2C-zWrhFqpM>

<https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=RUzquEya6Lw>

https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=8m xp_wgFWOo

<https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=vmoXze-Higc>

<https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=mmakLRxGbW8>

John Winthrop's *City upon a Hill*, 1630

Now the onely way to avoyde this shipwracke and to provide for our posterity is to followe the Counsell of Micah, to doe Justly, to love mercy, to walke humbly with our God, for this end, wee must be knitt together in this worke as one man, wee must entertaine each other in brotherly Affeccion, **wee must be willing to abridge our selves of our superfluities, for the supply of others necessities, wee must uphold a familiar Commerce together in all meekenes, gentlenes, patience and liberallity, wee must delight in eache other, make others Conditions our owne, rejoyce together, mourne together, labour, and suffer together, allwayes haveing before our eyes our Commission and Community in the worke, our Community as members of the same body, soe shall wee keepe the unitie of the spirit in the bond of peace, the Lord will be our God and delight to dwell among us, as his owne people and will commaund a blessing upon us in all our wayes,** soe that wee shall see much more of his wisdome power goodnes and truthe then formerly wee have beene acquainted with, wee shall finde that the God of Israell is among us, when tenn of us shall be able to resist a thousand of our enemies, when hee shall make us a prayse and glory, that men shall say of succeeding plantacions: the lord make it like that of New England: for wee must Consider that wee shall be as a Citty upon a Hill, the eies of all people are uppon us; soe that if wee shall deale falsely with our god in this worke wee have undertaken and soe cause him to withdrawe his present help from us, wee shall be made a story and a byword through the world, wee shall open the mouthes of enemies to speake evill of the wayes of god and all professours for Gods sake; wee shall shame the faces of many of gods worthy servants, and cause their prayers to be turned into Cursse upon us till wee be consumed out of the good land whether wee are going: And to shutt upp this discourse with that exhortacion of Moses that faithfull servant of the Lord in his last farewell to Israell Deut. 30. Beloved there is now sett before us life, and good, deathe and evill in that wee are Commaunded this day to love the Lord our God, and to love one another to walke in his wayes and to keepe his Commaundements and his Ordinance, and his lawes, and the Articles of our Covenant with him that wee may live and be multiplyed, and that the Lord our God may blesse us in the land whether wee goe to possesse it: But if our heartes shall turne away soe that wee will not obey, but shall be seduced and worshipp other Gods our pleasures, and proffitts, and serve them, it is propounded unto us this day, wee shall surely perishe out of the good Land whether wee passe over this vast Sea to possesse it;

Therefore lett us choose life,
that wee, and our Seede,
may live; by obeyeing his
voyce, and cleaveing to him,
for hee is our life, and
our prosperity.

The American Empire has chosen death.

The Evil Empire Strikes Back

https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=9eOmKyS7Wik&oref=https%3A%2F%2Fwww.youtube.com%2Fwatch%3Fv%3D9eOmKyS7Wik&has_verified=1

<https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=eWIKTZTTMgk>

<https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=9ulu0mcQuww>

Bush, Cheney, Obama, Bloomberg, Trump, Blankfein, Jamie Dimon and all their ilk, (if they don't open their eyes and repent), can all rot in Hell.

V for Vendetta

<https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=ISA7mAHolAw>

The Mirror Has Two Faces

Lecture

https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=EcuHMYVjY_Q

Yentl

<https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=4SFsFyTj6QQ>

Roger Ebert

Review of Yentl

<http://www.rogerebert.com/reviews/yentl-1983>

Coda

https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=jhqRLD06S_c

So, yes, I'm an interesting date.

Marco Rubio Pauses for a Water Break

<https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=19ZxJVnM5Gs>

Father Robert S. Smith
February 10, 2008
Christ's Temptation & the Depths of Our Ordinary Choices

https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=4k7u6NwoI_8&t=6s&index=2&list=PLHLzqutarkrm5kFVW5noRcsaJ08OYgBqy

Saturday Night Live

The Brah's Tale

<https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=4ydHjbKaL5A>

[ENTERTAINMENT](#) 05/08/2017 03:38 pm ET

Watching This 'SNL' 'Handmaid's Tale' Skit Is Kind Of A Bummer

In today's political climate, it's hard to turn Margaret Atwood's dystopian fiction into a joke.

[By Julia Bruculieri](#)

Things got *real* during this weekend's episode of "[Saturday Night Live](#)," thanks to one "[Handmaid's Tale](#)"-themed sketch.

In the skit, four women of the Republic of Gilead gather to discuss how they can resist the extremely oppressive regime controlling their lives and bodies. Then, they run into a couple of oblivious men, er, *bros* (Chris Pine and Mikey Day), whom they apparently used to be friends with.

The men, who clearly care more about their parties than the well-being of their former friends, can't seem to wrap their heads around why the "girl squad" hasn't been around as much.

After the women inform the guys that the government took their money, jobs and children, they just stand there, confused as to why the women don't just leave their unfortunate situations behind.

"You guys should, like, fight back," Day's character suggests, as if it were no big deal.

In today's political climate, it's hard to turn [Margaret Atwood's dystopian fiction](#) into a joke. This sketch presents a classic example of how those who are unaffected by oppressive laws and societal standards don't always pay as much attention to those who *are* affected.

A Few Words in Defense of Our Country

Randy Newman

<https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=E0EAwSpTcM4>

More on my politics:

Goodbye, and Good Riddance, to Centrism

Jeremy Corbyn delivers another blow to the defining political myth of our era

By [Matt Taibbi](#)

Last week, after yet another week of anti-establishment upheavals in Europe, former Bush speechwriter and current *Atlantic* senior editor David Frum [tweeted](#) in despair:

"I think we need a word to describe people broadly satisfied with the status quo & skeptical of radical changes based on wild promises."

Frum was responding to a move by Catalonia to seek independence from Spain. But he might as well have been talking about the electoral successes of Jeremy Corbyn's Labour Party in Britain, which Frum also [denounced](#) last week.

Frum was so distressed by all this rejecting of the status quo going on that he [proposed](#) that those "broadly satisfied" folks band together to create a political coalition:

"I mean, there have to be a few of us, right? Maybe we could form a movement of some kind or form a political party with that word in it?"

The responses to Frum on social media were priceless. One tweeter [suggested](#) Frum could call his party the "ungressives." Another humorous name [proposal](#): the "Quo-nothings."

Frum's clarion call spoke to the almost total cluelessness of the D.C./punditoid class to which he belongs. (To be clear, though I'm a New Yorker, I also belong to this miserable group.)

Our media priesthood reacted with near-universal horror at the election in Britain. We panned the result in which Labour, led by the despised Corbyn, took 261 seats and [won 40 percent](#) of the vote, Labour's largest share since hallowed third-way icon Tony Blair won 40.7 percent in 2001.

Corbyn's strong showing came as a surprise to American readers, who were told repeatedly that Britain's support for the unvarnished lefty would result in historic losses for liberalism.

The status quo line on Corbyn followed a path identical to the propaganda here at home about liberal politics. Whenever Washington pundits in either party talk about the progressive "base," you can count on two themes appearing in the coverage.

One is that "progressive" voters make decisions based upon their hearts and not their heads, with passions rather than intellect. The second is that such voters consistently choose incorrectly when forced to choose between ideals and winning.

The New York Times perfectly summed up this take a few days after the Corbyn result, [describing](#) the reaction of the American left: "Democrats in Split-Screen. The Base Wants it All, The Party Wants to Win."

This has long been the establishment line both here and in Britain. In the U.K., the once-revered Blair's support among European progressives tumbled after he supported the Iraq War efforts of Frum's former boss George Bush. Blair years ago warned that Corbyn was leading his party over a cliff toward "[total annihilation](#)."

The former PM played a lurid riff on the heart-head propaganda line, telling Britons whose "heart is with Corbyn" to "get a transplant."

In December, Barack Obama [said](#) he wasn't worried about the "Corbynization" of American politics because "the Democratic Party has stayed pretty grounded in fact and reality."

The idea that British liberals had failed the "wanting versus winning" test and elected to live in loserific "unreality" has been everywhere in our media for years.

"A cult is destroying a major liberal political party," [insisted](#) CNN's Michael Weiss. Eric Boehlert of Media Matters, a quasi-official weathervane of mainstream Democratic Party opinion, [declared](#) in January, "Corbyn has been a disaster for Labour."

In April, the *Washington Post* ran [a piece](#) saying that swooningly "rigid" leftists in Britain would pay a high price for supporting a man in "cuckoo world."

The idea that people who want expanded health care, reduced income inequality, fewer wars and more public services are "unrealistic" springs from an old deception in our politics.

For decades pundits and pols have been telling progressive voters they don't have the juice to make real demands, and must make alliances with more "moderate" and presumably more numerous "centrists" in order to avoid becoming the subjects of right-wing monsters like Reagan/Bush/Bush/Trump.

Voters for decades were conned into thinking they were noisome minorities whose best path to influence is to make peace with the mightier "center," which inevitably turns out

to support military interventionism, fewer taxes for the rich, corporate deregulation and a ban on unrealistic "giveaway" proposals like free higher education. Those are the realistic, moderate, popular ideas, we're told.

But it's a Wizard of Oz trick, just like American politics in general. There is no numerically massive center behind the curtain. What there is instead is a tiny island of wealthy donors, surrounded by a protective ring of for-sale major-party politicians (read: employees) whose job it is to castigate too-demanding voters and preach realism.

Those pols do so with the aid of a bund of dependably alarmist sycophants in the commercial media, most of whom, whether they know it or not, technically [inhabit the low end of the 1 percent](#) and tend to be amazed that people out there are pissed off about stuff.

In the States, the centrist Oz has maintained its influence in large part thanks to another numerical deception. We've been taught that our political spectrum is an unbroken line moving from right to left, Republican to Democrat, and that the country is split in half between the two groups.

Propaganda about the pitched battle between the two even "sides" has seemingly been reinforced by election results. In 2000, with Bush and Gore, we even had an episode involving a near-perfect statistical tie.

As [noted](#) at the time by Noam Chomsky – like Corbyn, much loathed by Quo-Nothing types as a hygiene-averse whiner who poisons young minds with unrealistic ideas – you'd normally expect a vote involving over 100 million people to end in a statistical tie only if they were voting for something meaningless or fictional, like the presidency of Mars.

For Americans to be split right down the middle on an issue of supreme importance, Chomsky observed, something had to be a little bit wrong with the voting model.

And there was. The half-versus-half, left-versus-right spectrum has always been a goofball myth. The true divide in the population has never been between Republicans and Democrats, but between haves and have-nots.

Whatever you might think of the Occupy movement, it succeeded in pulling a lid back on some of these illusions by popularizing terms like "the 1 percent" and "the 99 percent." Occupy described the numerical majority as dupes of a tiny oligarchy, which allowed the disaffected population to choose occasionally between two parties that are funded by the same tiny group of super-wealthy donors.

Of course some will vigorously object to any characterization that tries to morally equate Democrats with what is now the Party of Trump (I can already hear the cries of "both-sidesism!"). But Occupy was surely correct in saying the economic picture of America doesn't fit a 50-50 narrative. Their 1/99 picture was a lot closer to reality.

If we're going to be exact about it, in fact, the billionaires who still dominate the political donor class mainly reside in the top tenth of a percent. Even in the most conservative possible interpretation of economic data, a general picture of haves and have-nots in the voting population would still be something like 20/80 (20 percent of Americans [own](#) 89 percent of privately held wealth, while the bottom 80 percent owns just 11 percent).

The danger implicit in these numbers to the "broadly satisfied with the status quo" types is obvious. If 80 percent of Americans ever realized their shared economic situation, they could and probably should take over government. Of course, they wouldn't just be taking power for themselves, they'd be taking it from the big-dollar donors who own such a disproportionately huge share of wealth in our society.

Such people of course have many very good reasons to embrace the status quo. The problem is, they're not terribly numerous as a group, which unfortunately for them still matters in a democracy. It's one of the unpleasant paradoxes of exclusive wealth. If you live in a democracy, you're continually forced to manufacture the appearance of broad support for the regressive policies underpinning your awesome lifestyle.

In the 2016 presidential election, voters in both parties were more willing than ever to say they felt alienated from the "center." They were also more likely to view big-city media figures like Frum and myself as agents of a phony system out to sell them a fake version of "reality."

Here and abroad, voters in other words stopped deferring to politicians and media figures and began making their own decisions about what is and is not realistic.

The results have been mixed to say the least. But let's not pretend that the election of Donald Trump is the same as support for Jeremy Corbyn, or that either of these things are the same as a Catalan separatist movement, or Brexit, or whatever – just because all these developments may be equally horrifying to "those broadly satisfied with the status quo."

If those of us in the media spent less time lecturing about the wisdom of the status quo, and more time treating disaffected voters like the overwhelming majority they are, we might at least stop face-planting on our election predictions. We're not the center anymore, and we have to stop acting like we ever were.

<http://www.rollingstone.com/politics/features/taibbi-goodbye-and-good-riddance-to-centrism-w487628>

ONE MORE TIME, WITH FEELING

Whatever you might think of the Occupy movement, it succeeded in pulling a lid back on some of these illusions by popularizing terms like "the 1 percent" and "the 99 percent."

Occupy described the numerical majority as

dupes of a

tiny oligarchy,

which allowed the disaffected population to choose occasionally between two parties that are funded by the same tiny group of super-wealthy donors.

Of course some will vigorously object to any characterization that tries to morally equate Democrats with what is now the Party of Trump (I can already hear the cries of "both-sidesism!"). But Occupy was surely correct in saying the economic picture of America doesn't fit a 50-50 narrative. Their 1/99 picture was a lot closer to reality.

If we're going to be exact about it, in fact, the billionaires who still dominate the political donor class mainly reside in the top tenth of a percent. Even in the most conservative possible interpretation of economic data, a general

picture of haves and have-nots in the voting population would still be something like 20/80 (20 percent of Americans own 89 percent of privately held wealth, while the bottom 80 percent owns just 11 percent).

The danger implicit in these numbers to the "broadly satisfied with the status quo" types is

obvious. **If 80 percent of Americans ever realized their shared economic situation, they could and probably should take over government.** Of course, they wouldn't just be taking power for themselves, they'd be taking it from the big-dollar donors who own

such a disproportionately huge share of wealth in our society.

Such people of course have many very good reasons to embrace the status quo. The problem is, they're not terribly numerous as a group, which unfortunately for them still matters in a democracy. It's one of the unpleasant paradoxes of exclusive wealth. If you live in a democracy, you're continually forced to manufacture the appearance of broad support for the regressive policies underpinning your awesome lifestyle.

The FIGHTER



The Fighter

Keith Urban featuring Carrie Underwood

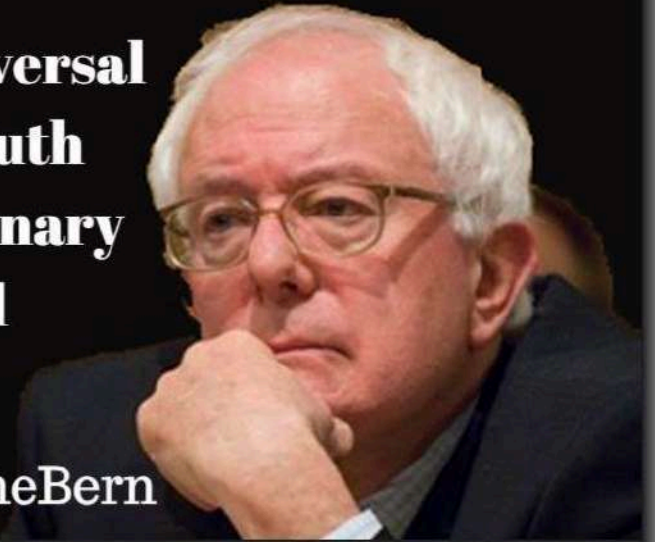
https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=X_45jbE5_Y8

Oh, and for those people who say that I shouldn't mix politics into a book on the Gospels, you do realize that I don't give a shit what you think, right?

Scary Movie 4

<https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=ZcD75LAQLrM>

**During times of universal
deceit, telling the truth
becomes a revolutionary
act. ~ George Orwell**



#Bernie2016 #FeelTheBern



Ellie Goulding

Love Me Like You Do

<https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=AJtDXIazrMo>

The closest I'll ever come to writing a memoir.

Zero Effect

<https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=eSH8Y3h5j-g>

X-Men

<https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=oHksDAB9vOo>

<https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=fTYWbMpqUVc>

<https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=GvqAfXyDcQo>

<https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=xdXO52ZMcCM>

<https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=8UVNT4wvIGY>

<https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=DDWKuo3gXMQ>

<https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=Swk1dCn6Xiw>

<https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=YilOOvH12Oc>

TMI

<https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=Mq7pALCCP3Q>

<https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=4vHB0huQ-BU>

Also, I love [Murray Bookchin](#)

The Paradise of the Islamic Caliphate

<https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=y-czZHstvdK>

Only an Apocalypse Can Save Us Now

On the politics of nostalgia

By [Mark Lilla](#)

<https://harpers.org/archive/2016/09/only-an-apocalypse-can-save-us-now/?single=1>

Not long after setting out on his first adventures, Don Quixote is invited to share a frugal meal with a group of goatherds. A little meat stew, plenty of wine. When they finish, the goatherds spread out hard cheese and a quantity of acorns, which they start cracking open for dessert. Don Quixote just rolls a few in his hand, lost in a reverie. He clears his throat. *Fortunate the age and fortunate the times called golden by the ancients*, he tells the chewing peasants. It was an age when nature's bounty lay ready to be gathered. There was no mine and thine, no farms, no making of farm tools, no makers of farm tools. Modest shepherdesses, simply attired, roamed the hills unmolested, stopping only to hear the spontaneous, unaffected poetry of their chaste lovers. No laws were enforced because none were needed.

That age ended. Why? The goatherds do not ask, and Quixote doesn't burden them with his esoteric knowledge. He just reminds them of what they already know: now maidens and even orphans are not safe from predators. When the Golden Age ended, laws became necessary, but since there were no pure hearts left to enforce them, the strong and vicious were free to terrorize the weak and good. That was why the order of knights was created in the Middle Ages, and why Quixote has resolved to revive it. The goatherds listen in "stupefied and perplexed" silence to this old man in his papier-mâché helmet. Sancho Panza, already used to his master's harangues, continues drinking.

Quixote has convinced himself that once upon a time the world really was as it was meant to be, that the ideal had been made flesh before it vanished. His suffering is Christian; he awaits the Second Coming. His quest is doomed from the start because he is rebelling against the nature of time, which is irreversible and unconquerable. What is past is past; this is the thought he cannot bear. Chivalric literature has robbed him of irony, the armor of the lucid. Irony may be defined as the ability to negotiate the gap between the real and the ideal without doing violence to either. Quixote is under the illusion that the gap he perceives was caused by a historical catastrophe, not that it is simply rooted in life.

This fantasy is sustained by an assumption about history: that the past comes already divided into discrete, coherent ages. An “age,” of course, is nothing more than a space between two markers that we place on the ticker tape of time to make history legible to ourselves. We do the same by carving “events” out of the chaos of experience, as Stendhal’s Fabrice del Dongo discovers in his futile search for the Battle of Waterloo. To put some order in our thinking, we must impose a rough-and-ready order on the past. We speak metaphorically of the “dawn of an age” or “the end of an era” without meaning that at some precise moment we crossed a border. When the past is remote, we are especially aware of our imprecision, and nothing seems particularly at stake if, say, we move the boundaries of the Pleistocene or the Stone Age forward or back a millennium. The distinctions are there to serve us, and when they don’t we revise them or ignore them. In principle, what taxonomy is to biology, chronology should be to history.

But the closer we get to the present, and the more our distinctions concern society, the more charged chronology becomes. This is also true of taxonomy. The concept of race has one resonance when applied to plants, another when applied to human beings. The danger in the latter is reification. That happens when we develop a concept to help make sense of reality (the Aryan linguistic group, for example), then subsequently declare it to

be a fact inscribed in reality itself (a homogeneous Aryan people with a distinct culture and history). We are learning not to do that with race, but when it comes to understanding history we are still incorrigibly reifying creatures.

The urge to divide time into ages seems embedded in our imaginations. We notice that the stars and the seasons follow regular cycles and that human life follows an arc from nothingness to maturity, then back to nothingness. For civilizations ancient and modern this movement in nature has provided irresistible metaphors for describing cosmological, sacred, and political change. But as metaphors age, and migrate from the poetic imagination to social myth, they harden into certainties. One need not have read Kierkegaard to know the anxiety that accompanies historical consciousness, that inner cramp that comes when time lurches forward and we feel ourselves catapulted into the future. To relax that cramp we tell ourselves that we actually know how one age has followed another since the beginning. This white lie gives us hope of altering the future course of events, or at least of learning how to adapt to them. There even seems to be solace in thinking that we are caught in a fated history of decline, so long as we can expect a new turn of the wheel, or an eschatological event that will carry us beyond time itself.

Epochal thinking is magical thinking. Even the greatest minds succumb to it. For Hesiod and Ovid the “ages of man” was an allegory, but for the author of the Book of Daniel the four kingdoms destined to rule the world were a prophetic certainty. Christian apologists from Eusebius to Bossuet saw God’s providential hand shaping distinct ages to mark the preparation, revelation, and spread of the Gospel. Ibn Khaldun, Machiavelli, and Vico thought that they had discovered the mechanism by which nations rise from rude beginnings before reaching their peak, decaying into luxury and literature, then returning cyclically to their origins. Hegel divided the history of nearly every human endeavor —

politics, religion, art, philosophy — into a snaking temporal web of triads within triads. Heidegger spoke elliptically about “epochs” in “the history of Being” that are opened and closed by a destiny beyond human understanding (though it sometimes leaves signs, like the swastika). Even our minor academic prophets of the postmodern, by using the prefix *post-*, can’t seem to overcome the compulsion to divide one age from another. Or to consider their own to be the culminating one, in which all cats are finally revealed to be gray.

Narratives of progress, regress, and cycles all assume a mechanism by which historical change happens. It might be the natural laws of the cosmos, the will of God, the dialectical development of the human mind or of economic forces. Once we understand the mechanism, we are assured of understanding what really happened and what is to come. But what if there is no such mechanism? What if history is subject to sudden eruptions that cannot be explained by any science of temporal tectonics? These are the questions that arise in the face of cataclysms for which no rationalization seems adequate and no consolation seems possible. In response, an apocalyptic view of history develops. It sees a rip in time that widens with each passing year, distancing us from an age that was golden or heroic or simply normal. In this vision there really is only one event in history, the *kairos* separating the world we were meant for from the world we must live in. That is all we can know, and must know, about the past.

Apocalyptic history itself has a history, which stands as a record of human despair. The expulsion from Eden, the destruction of the First and Second Temples, the crucifixion of Jesus, the sack of Rome, the murders of Ali and Hussein, the Crusades, the fall of Jerusalem, the Reformation, the fall of Constantinople, the English Civil Wars, the French Revolution, the American Civil War, World War I, the Russian Revolution, the abolition of the caliphate, the Shoah, the Palestinian Nakba, the Sixties, 9/11 — all these

events have been inscribed in various collective memories as definitive breaches in history. For the apocalyptic imagination, the present, not the past, is a foreign country. That is why it is so inclined to dream of a second event that will blow open the doors of paradise. Its attention is fixed on the horizon as it awaits the Messiah, the Revolution, the Leader, or the end of time itself. Only an apocalypse can save us now: in the face of catastrophe this morbid conviction can appear to be simple common sense. But throughout history it has also provoked extravagant hopes that were inevitably disappointed, leaving those who held them even more desolate. The doors to the Kingdom remained shut, and all that was left was a memory of defeat, destruction, and exile.

For those who have never experienced defeat, destruction, or exile, there is an undeniable charm to loss. An agency in Romania offers what it calls a Beautiful Decay Tour of Bucharest, which gives the visitor an overview of the postcommunist urban landscape — buildings full of rubble and broken glass, abandoned factories invaded by local vegetation, that sort of thing. Young American artists, feeling unappreciated in gentrified New York, are now moving to Detroit, America's Bucharest, to feel the grit once more in their teeth. English gentlemen succumbed to something similar in the nineteenth century, buying up deserted abbeys and country houses where they shivered on the weekends. For romantics, the decay of the ideal *is* the ideal.

La nostalgie de la boue is alien to history's victims. Finding themselves on the other side of the chasm separating past and present, some recognize their loss and turn to the future, with hope or without it: the camp survivor who never mentions the number tattooed on his arm as he plays with his grandchildren on a Sunday afternoon. Others remain at the edge of the chasm and watch the lights recede on the other side, night after night, their minds ricocheting between anger and resignation: the aged White Russians

sitting around a samovar in a *chambre de bonne*, the heavy curtains drawn, tearing up as they sing songs from the old country. Some, though, become idolaters of the chasm. They are obsessed with taking revenge on whatever Demiurge caused it to open up. Their nostalgia is revolutionary. Since the continuity of time has already been broken, they begin to dream of making a second break and escaping from the present. But in which direction? Should we find our way back to the past and exercise our right of return? Or should we move forward to a new age inspired by the golden one? Rebuild the Temple or found a kibbutz?

The politics of nostalgia are about nothing but such questions. After the French Revolution, dispossessed aristocrats and clergy camped along the border, confident that they would return home shortly and set the furniture aright. They had to wait a quarter-century, and by then France no longer was what it had been. The Bourbon Restoration wasn't one. Yet nostalgic Catholic monarchism remained a strong current in French politics until World War II, when movements like the Action Française were finally disgraced for collaborating with the Vichy regime. Small groups of sympathizers still exist, though, and the newspaper *L'Action Française 2000* continues to appear on newsstands, like a specter, every two weeks. Germany's defeat in World War I pushed Adolf Hitler in the opposite direction. He might have projected the image of a restored old Germany of conservative villages nestled in Bavarian valleys, populated by Hans Sachs who could sing and fight. Instead he spoke of a new Germany inspired by the ancient tribes and the Roman legions, now riding Panzer tanks unleashing storms of steel and ruling over a hypermodern industrial Europe cleansed of Jews and Bolsheviks. Forward into the past.

Apocalyptic historiography never goes out of style. Today's American conservatives have perfected a popular myth of how the nation emerged from World War II strong and virtuous, only to become a licentious society governed by a menacing secular state after

the Nakba of the Sixties. They are divided over how to respond. Some want to return to an idealized traditional past; others dream of a libertarian future where frontier virtues will be reborn and internet speeds will be awesome. Things are more serious in Europe, especially in the east, where old maps of Greater Serbia, which had been in cold storage since 1914, were pulled out as soon as the Berlin Wall fell, and Hungarians began retelling old tales about how much better life was when there weren't so many Jews and Gypsies around. Things are critical in Russia, where all problems are now attributed to the breakup of the U.S.S.R., allowing Vladimir Putin to sell dreams of a restored empire blessed by the Orthodox Church and sustained by pillage and vodka.

But it is in the Muslim world that belief in a lost Golden Age is most potent and consequential today. The more deeply one reads into the literature of radical Islamism, the more one appreciates the appeal of the myth. It goes something like this: Before the arrival of the Prophet the world was in an age of ignorance, the Jahiliyya. The great empires were sunk in pagan immorality, Christianity had developed a life-denying monasticism, and the Arabs were superstitious drinkers and gamblers. Mohammed was then chosen as the vessel of God's final revelation, which uplifted all individuals and peoples who accepted it. The companions of the Prophet and the first few caliphs were impeccable conveyors of the message, and began to construct a new society based on divine law. But soon, astonishingly soon, the élan of this founding generation was lost. And it has never been recovered. In Arab lands conquerors came and went — Umayyads, Abbasids, Christian Crusaders, Mongols, Turks. When believers remained faithful to the Koran there was some semblance of justice and virtue, and there were a few centuries when the arts and sciences progressed. But success brought luxury, and luxury bred vice and stagnation. The will to impose God's sovereignty died.

At first, the arrival of the colonial powers in the nineteenth century appeared to be just another Western Crusade. But in fact it presented a wholly new and far graver challenge

to Islam. The medieval Crusaders wanted to conquer Muslims militarily and convert them from one religion to another. The modern colonizers' strategy was to weaken Muslims by converting them away from religion altogether and imposing on them an immoral secular order. Rather than meet holy warriors on the battlefield, the new Crusaders simply held out the trinkets of modern science and technology, mesmerizing their foes. If you abandon God and usurp His legitimate rule over you, they purred, all this will be yours. Very soon the talisman of secular modernity did its work. Muslim elites became fanatics of "development," sending their children — including girls — to secular schools and universities, with predictable results. They were encouraged in this by the tyrants who ruled over them with the West's support and at its bidding suppressed the faithful.

All these forces — secularism, individualism, materialism, moral indifference, tyranny — have now combined to bring about a new Jahiliyya, which every faithful Muslim must struggle against, just as the Prophet did at the dawn of the seventh century. He did not compromise, he did not liberalize, he did not democratize, he did not pursue development. He spoke God's word and instituted His law, and we must follow his sacred example. Once that is accomplished, the glorious age of the Prophet and his companions will return for good. *Inshallah*.

There is little that is uniquely Muslim in this myth. Even its success in mobilizing the faithful and inspiring acts of extraordinary violence has precedents in the Crusades and in Nazi efforts to return to Rome by way of Valhalla. When the Golden Age meets the Apocalypse the earth begins to quake.

What is striking is how few antibodies contemporary Islamic thought has against this myth, for reasons historical and theological. Among the jewels of wisdom and poetry in the Koran one also encounters a degree of insecurity, unusual in sacred texts, about

Islam's place in history. From the very first suras we are invited to share Mohammed's frustration at being rebuffed by Jews and Christians, whose prophetic legacy he came to fulfill, not abolish. No sooner does the Prophet begin his mission than history goes a little off course and an adjustment has to be made for "peoples of the Book" blind to the treasure laid before them. St. Paul confronted a similar challenge in his Epistles, in which he counseled peaceful coexistence among gentile Christians, Jewish Christians, and Jewish non-Christians. Some Koranic verses are generous and tolerant about resistance to the Prophet. Far more are not. The Koran has an unmistakable chip on its shoulder about its belatedness that can be easily exploited by those who have chips on their shoulders about the present. Untrained readers ignorant of the deep intellectual traditions of Koranic interpretation, who for whatever reason feel or can be made to feel angry about their conditions of life, are easy prey for those who would use the Koran to teach that historical grudges are sacred. From there it is not a large step to begin thinking that historical revenge is sacred, too.

Once the butchery ends, as it eventually must, through exhaustion or defeat, the pathos of political Islamism will deserve as much reflection as its monstrosity. One almost blushes to think of the historical ignorance, the misplaced piety, the outsized sense of honor, the impotent adolescent posturing, the blindness to reality and fear of it that lay behind the murderous fever. The pathos of Quixote is quite different. The Knight of the Sorrowful Face is absurd but noble, a suffering saint stranded in the present who leaves those he meets improved, if slightly bruised. He is a flexible fanatic, occasionally winking at Sancho Panza as if to say, *Don't worry, I'm onto myself*. And he knows when to stop. After being defeated in a mock battle arranged by friends hoping to wake him from his dreams, he renounces chivalry, falls ill, and never recovers. Sancho tries to revive him by suggesting that they retire to the countryside and live together as simple shepherds, as in

the Golden Age. But it's no use; the knight meets death humbly. A triumphant, avenging Quixote is unthinkable.

The literature of radical Islamism is a nightmare version of Cervantes's novel. Those who write it feel stranded in the present, too, but have divine assurance that what is lost in time can be found in time. To God, the past is never past. The ideal society is always possible, since it once existed and there are no social conditions necessary for its realization; what has been and must be, can be. All that's lacking is faith and will. The adversary is not time itself, it is those who in every historical epoch have stood in God's way. This powerful idea is not new. Considering the conservative reactions to the revolutions of 1848, Marx wrote that in epochs of revolutionary crisis we "anxiously conjure up the spirit of the past" to comfort ourselves in the face of the unknown. He was confident, though, that such reactions were temporary and that human consciousness was destined to catch up to what was already happening in the material world. Today, when political bedtime stories seem more potent than economic forces, it is hard to share his confidence. We are only too aware that the most revolutionary slogans of our age begin: *Once upon a time . . .*

Man of La Mancha

Dulcinea

<https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=ayz50HeFJUU>

I think the only commentary I would make consists of a few questions: (1) Does the absurdity necessarily attach to the man, or does it not rather attach to the world in which we live? and (2) If the adversary of the eschaton is time, shall not the eschaton triumph once time is rolled up and set aside in eternity? and (3) Shall not then the Knight of the Sorrowful Face, so full of mercy and kindness, be totally triumphant after the end of time, and then avenge Himself upon all that does not inhere in his own native mercy and kindness?

From *The Stillborn God* by Mark Lilla (13):

The story reconstructed here should remind us that the actual choice contemporary societies face is not between past and present, or between the West and “the rest”. It is between two grand traditions of thought, two ways of envisaging the human condition. We must be clear about those alternatives, choose between them, and live with the consequences of our choice. That *is* the human condition.

I choose Christ.

<https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=Q8e5VTIzXgU>

We must long for the God who gives all good gifts, and not covet the good gifts God gives.

When we covet, we forfeit the satiety that only God can give, and thus always fall into bitterness, ravenous hunger, anger and hatred. But when we forfeit what we think we need and deserve and long for God alone we are showered with all the gifts, all the graces, of strength and satisfaction.

You must not admire your own reflection of goodness (moral Narcissus), but fall completely and single-heartedly in love with the goodness that is God.

You must attack and reshape and invade and battle with and war with and conquer the deep structures of her heart for Christ. My God, grant your servant victory, in the Lord Jesus' Holy Name.

*Not to put too fine a point on it.....oh, who am I kidding? Let's
put a fine point on it:*

<https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=SnGYnDv9N8o>

WISDOM

The Feast emerged from the very depths of My mercy, and it is confirmed in the vast depths of My tender mercies. Every soul believing and trusting in My mercy will obtain it.

- St. Faustina Kowalska (Diary 420)

St. Faustina, Diary 343

True love is measured by the thermometer of suffering. Jesus, I thank You for the little daily crosses, for opposition to my endeavors, for the hardships of communal life, for the misinterpretation of my intentions, for humiliations at the hands of others, for the harsh way in which we are treated, for false suspicions, for poor health and loss of strength, for self-denial, for dying to myself, for lack of recognition in everything, for the upsetting of all my plans.

Thank You, Jesus, for interior sufferings, for dryness of spirit, for terrors, fears and uncertainties, for the darkness and the deep interior night, for temptations and various ordeals, for torments too difficult to describe, especially for those which no one will understand, for the hour of death with its fierce struggle and all its bitterness.

I thank You, Jesus, You who first drank the cup of bitterness before You gave it to me, in a much milder form. I put my lips to this cup of Your holy will. Let all be done according to Your good pleasure; let that which Your wisdom ordained before the ages be done to me. I want to drink the cup to its last drop, and not seek to know the reason why. In bitterness is my joy, in hopelessness is my trust. In You, O Lord, all is good, all is a gift of Your paternal Heart. I do not prefer consolations over bitterness or bitterness over consolations, but thank You, O Jesus for everything! It is my delight to fix my gaze upon You, O incomprehensible God! My spirit abides in these mysterious dwelling places, and there I am at home. I know very well the dwelling place of my Spouse. I feel there is not a single drop of blood in me that does not burn with love for You.

O Uncreated Beauty, whoever comes to know You once cannot love anything else. I can feel the bottomless abyss of my soul, and nothing will fill it but God Himself. I feel that I am drowned in Him like a single grain of sand in a bottomless ocean.

St. Faustina, Diary 153

One day, I saw two roads. One was broad, covered with sand and flowers, full of joy, music and all sorts of pleasures. People walked along it, dancing and enjoying themselves. They reached the end without realizing it. And at the end of the road there was a horrible precipice; that is, the abyss of hell. The souls fell blindly into it; as they walked, so they fell. And their number was so great that it was impossible to count them. And I saw the other road, or rather, a path, for it was narrow and strewn with thorns and rocks; and the people who walked along it had tears in their eyes, and all kinds of suffering befell them. Some fell down upon the rocks, but stood up immediately and went on. At the end of the road there was a magnificent garden filled with all sorts of happiness, and all these souls entered there. At the very first instant, they forgot all their sufferings.

St. Faustina, Diary 93 - 103

Prompt and complete fulfillment -- the obedience of the will, when the will persuades the intellect to submit to the advice of the superior. To facilitate obedience, Saint Ignatius suggests, moreover, three means: always to see God in our superior, whoever he might be; to justify in itself the order or advice of the superior; to accept each order as an order from God, without examining it or reflecting on it. General means: humility. Nothing is difficult for the humble.

O my Lord, inflame my heart with love for You, that my spirit may not grow weary amidst the storms, the sufferings and the trials. You see how weak I am. Love can do all.

A Deeper Knowledge of God and the Terror of the Soul.

In the beginning, God lets himself be known as Holiness, Justice, Goodness - that is to say, Mercy. The soul does not come to know this all at once, but piecemeal, in flashes; that is to say, when God draws near. And this does not last for long, because the soul could not bear such light. During prayer the soul experiences flashes of this light which make it impossible to pray as before. Try as it may to force itself to pray as it did before, all is in vain; it becomes completely impossible for it to continue to pray as it did before it received this light. This light which has touched the soul is alive within it, and nothing can either quench or diminish it. This flash of the knowledge of God draws the soul and enkindles its love for Him.

But this same flash, at the same time, allows the soul to know itself as it is; the soul sees its whole interior in a superior light, and it rises up alarmed and terrified. Still, it does not remain under the effects of terror, but it begins to purify itself, to humble and

abase itself before the Lord. These lights become stronger and more frequent; the more the soul is crystallized, the more these lights penetrate it. However, if the soul has responded faithfully and courageously to these first graces, God fills it with His consolations and gives himself to it in a perceptible manner. At certain moments, the soul, as it were, enters into intimacy with God and greatly rejoices in this; it believes that it has already reached the degree of perfection destined for it, because its defects and faults are asleep within it, and this makes it think that they no longer exist. Nothing seems difficult for it; it is ready for everything. It begins to plunge itself into God and taste the divine delights. It is carried along by grace and does not take account of the fact that the time of trial and testing may come. And, in fact, this state does not last long. Other moments will soon come. I should add here, however, that the soul will respond more faithfully to divine grace if it has a well-informed confessor to whom it can confide everything.

Trials sent by God to a soul which is particularly loved by Him.
Temptations and darkness; Satan.

The soul's love [for God] is still not such as God would have it. The soul suddenly loses the tangible perception of God's presence. Various defects and imperfections rise up within it, and it must fight them furiously. All her faults lift up their heads, but the soul's vigilance is great. The former awareness of the presence of God gives place to coldness and spiritual dryness; the soul has no taste for spiritual exercise; it cannot pray, either in the old way, or in the manner in which it had just begun to pray. It struggles this way and that, but can find no satisfaction. God has hidden himself from it, and it can find no consolation in creatures, nor can any of these creatures find a way of consoling it. The soul craves passionately for God, but sees its own misery; it begins to sense God's justice; it seems to it that it has lost all the gifts that God had given it; its mind is dimmed, darkness fills it; unspeakable torment begins. The soul tries to explain its state to the confessor, but it is not understood and is assailed by an even greater unrest.

Satan begins his work.

Faith staggers under the impact; the struggle is fierce. The soul tries hard to cling to God by an act of will. With God's permission, Satan goes even further: hope and love are put to the test. These temptations are terrible. God supports the soul in secret, so to speak. The soul is not aware of this, but otherwise it would be impossible to stand firm; and God knows very well how much He can allow to befall a soul. The soul is tempted to unbelief in respect to revealed truths and to insincerity toward the confessor. Satan says to it, "Look, no one understands you; why speak about all this?" Words that terrify it sound in its ears, and it seems to the soul that it is uttering these against God. It sees what it does not want to see. It hears what it does not want to hear. And, oh, it is a terrible thing at times like these not to have an experienced confessor! The soul carries

the whole burden alone. However, one should make every effort to find, if it is at all possible, a well-informed confessor, for the soul can collapse under the burden and come to the very edge of the precipice. All these trials are heavy and difficult. God not send them to a soul which has not already been admitted to a deeper intimacy with Him and which has not yet tasted the divine delights. Besides, in this God has His own plans, which for us are impenetrable. God often prepares a soul in his way for His future designs and great works. He wants to try it as pure gold is tried. But this is not yet the end of the testing; there is still the trial of trials, the complete abandonment of the soul by God.

The Trial of Trials Complete Abandonment - Despair

When the soul comes out victorious from the preceding trials, even though it may stumble here and there, it fights on valiantly, humbly calling upon God, "Save me, I am perishing!" And it is still able to fight on.

At this point, however, the soul is engulfed in a horrible night. It sees within itself only sin. It feels terrible. It sees itself completely abandoned by God. It feels itself to be the object of His hatred. It is but one step away from despair. The soul does its best to defend itself; it tries to stir up its confidence; but prayer is an even greater torment for it, as this prayer seems to arouse God to an even greater anger. The soul finds itself poised on the summit of a lofty mountain on the very brink of a precipice.

The soul is drawn to God, but feels repulsed. All other sufferings and tortures in the world are as nothing compared with this sensation into which it has been plunged; namely, that of being rejected by God. No one can bring it any relief; it finds itself completely alone; there is no one to defend it. It raises its eyes to heaven, but is convinced that this is not for her - for her all is lost. It falls deeper and deeper from darkness to darkness, and it seems to it that it has lost forever the God it used to love so dearly. This thought is torture beyond all description. But the soul does not agree to it and tries to lift its gaze toward heaven, but in vain! And this makes the torture even more intense.

If God wishes to keep the soul in darkness, no one will be able to give it light. It experiences rejection by God in a vivid and terrifying manner. From its heart burst forth painful moans, so painful that no priest will comprehend it, unless he himself has been through these trials. In the midst of this, the evil spirit adds to the soul's suffering, mocking it: "Will you persist in your faithfulness? This is your reward; you are in our power!" But Satan has only as much influence over the soul as God allows him, and God knows how much we can bear. "What have you gotten out of your mortifications," says Satan, "and out of your fidelity to the rule? What use are all these efforts? You have been rejected by God!" This word, *rejected*, becomes a fire which penetrates

every nerve to the marrow of the bone. It pierces right through her entire being. The ordeal reaches its climax. The soul no longer looks for help anywhere. It shrinks into itself and loses sight of everything; it is as though it has accepted the torture of being abandoned. This is a moment for which I have no words. This is the agony of the soul.

When for the first time this moment was drawing near, I was snatched from it by virtue of holy obedience. The Directress of Novices, alarmed by my appearance, sent me off to confession, but the confessor did not understand me, and I experienced no relief whatsoever. O Jesus, give us experienced priests!

When I told this priest I was undergoing infernal tortures, he answered that he was not worried about my soul, because he saw in it a great grace of God. But I understood nothing of this, and not even the least glimmer of light broke through to my soul.

Then my physical strength began to fail me, and I could no longer carry out my duties. Nor could I any longer hide my sufferings. Although I did not say a word about them, the look of pain on my face betrayed me. The Superior told me that the sisters had come to her saying that, when they look at me in the chapel, they are moved to pity because I look so terrible. Yet, despite all efforts, the soul is unable to conceal such suffering.

Jesus, You alone know how the soul, engulfed in darkness, moans in the midst of these torments and, despite all this, thirsts for God as burning lips thirst for water. It dies and withers; it die a death without death; that is to say, it cannot die. All its efforts come to nothing; it is under a powerful hand. Now the soul comes under the power of the Just One. All exterior temptations cease; all that surrounds it becomes silent, like a dying person who loses contact with everything around it: the person's entire soul is in the hand of the Just God, the Thrice-Holy God - rejected for all eternity! This is the culminating moment, and God alone can test a soul in this way, because He alone knows what the soul can endure.

When the soul has been saturated through and through by this infernal fire, it is, as it were, cast headlong into great despair. My soul experienced this moment when I was all alone in my cell. When my soul began to sink into this despair, I felt that the end was near. But I seized my little crucifix and clutched it tightly in my hand. And now I felt my body separate itself from my soul; and though I wanted to go to my Superiors, I no longer had the physical strength. I uttered my last words: "I trust in Your Mercy!" - and it seemed to me that I provoked God to an even greater anger. And now I was drowned in despair, and all that was left me was a moan of unadulterated pain which, from time to time, tore itself from my soul. The soul is in agony - and it seemed to me that I would remain in this state, because by my own strength I could not emerge from it. Every recollection of God opened up an unspeakable ocean of suffering, and yet despite this there is something within the soul which is drawn to Him, though it seems

to her for this only - that she suffer more. The memory of the love with which God formerly surrounded it is still another kind of suffering. His gaze pierces it, and everything within the soul is burned by this gaze.

After some time, one of the sisters came into the cell and found me almost dead. She was frightened and went to find the Directress of Novices who, in the name of holy obedience ordered me to get up from the ground. My strength returned immediately, and I got up trembling. The Directress recognized immediately the state of my soul and spoke to me about the inscrutable mercy of God, saying, "Do not be distressed about anything, Sister. I command this of you in virtue of obedience." Then she said to me, "I see now, Sister, that God is calling you to a high degree of holiness; the Lord wants to draw you very close to Himself since He has allowed these things to happen to you so soon. Be faithful to God, Sister, because this is a sign that He wants you to have a high place in heaven." However, I did not understand anything of these words. When I went into the chapel, I felt as though my soul had been set free from everything, as though I had just come forth from the hand of God. I perceived the inviolability of my soul, I felt that I was a tiny child.

Suddenly, I saw the Lord interiorly, and He said to me, **Fear not, My daughter; I am with you.** In that single moment all the darkness and torments vanished, my senses were inundated with unspeakable joy, and the faculties of my soul filled with **light.**

St. Faustina, Diary 1160

When once I asked the Lord Jesus how He could tolerate so many sins and crimes and not punish them, the Lord answered me,

**I have eternity for punishing these,
and so I am prolonging the time of mercy for the sake of sinners.**

But woe to them if they do not recognize this time of My visitation. My daughter, secretary of My mercy, your duty is not only to write about and proclaim My mercy, but also to beg for this grace for them, so that they too may glorify My mercy.

FATIMA VISION OF HELL

"She opened Her hands once more, as She had done the two previous months. The rays [of light] appeared to penetrate the earth, and we saw, as it were, a vast sea of fire. Plunged in this fire, we saw the demons and the souls [of the damned]. The latter were like transparent burning embers, all blackened or burnished bronze, having human forms. They were floating about in that conflagration, now raised into the air by the flames which issued from within themselves, together with great clouds of smoke. Now they fell back on every side like sparks in huge fires, without weight or equilibrium, amid shrieks and groans of pain and despair, which horrified us and made us tremble with fright (it must have been this sight which caused me to cry out, as people say they heard me). The demons were distinguished [from the souls of the damned] by their terrifying and repellent likeness to frightful and unknown animals, black and transparent like burning coals. That vision only lasted for a moment, thanks to our good Heavenly Mother, Who at the first apparition had promised to take us to Heaven. Without that, I think that we would have died of terror and fear."

St. Ignatius Loyola

Selections from the Spiritual Exercises

<http://spex.ignatianspirituality.com/SpiritualExercises/Puhl#c05-1234>

The Prayer: Soul of Christ

SOUL OF CHRIST, SANCTIFY ME

BODY OF CHRIST, SAVE ME

BLOOD OF CHRIST, INEBRIATE ME

WATER FROM THE SIDE OF CHRIST, WASH ME

PASSION OF CHRIST, STRENGTHEN ME

O GOOD JESUS, HEAR ME

WITHIN THY WOUNDS HIDE ME

PERMIT ME NOT TO BE SEPARATED FROM THEE

FROM THE WICKED FOE DEFEND ME

AT THE HOUR OF MY DEATH CALL ME

AND BID ME COME TO THEE

THAT WITH THY SAINTS I MAY PRAISE THEE

FOR EVER AND EVER. AMEN.

[\(023\)](#)

First Principle and Foundation

Man is created to praise, reverence, and serve God our Lord, and by this means to save his soul.

The other things on the face of the earth are created for man to help him in attaining the end for which he is created.

Hence, man is to make use of them in as far as they help him in the attainment of his end, and he must rid himself of them in as far as they prove a hindrance to him.

Therefore, we must make ourselves indifferent to all created things, as far as we are allowed free choice and are not under any prohibition. Consequently, as far as we are concerned, we should not prefer health to sickness, riches to poverty, honor to dishonor, a long life to a short life. The same holds for all other things.

Our one desire and choice should be what is more conducive to the end for which we are created.

General Examination of Conscience

The purpose of this examination of conscience is to purify the soul and to aid us to improve our confessions

I presuppose that there are three kinds of thoughts in my mind, namely: one which is strictly my own, and arises wholly from my own free will; two others which come from without, the one from the good spirit, and the other from the evil one.

[\(033\)](#)

Thoughts

There are two ways of meriting from evil thoughts that come from without:

I. When a thought of committing a mortal sin comes to my mind which I resist at once, and thus overcome it.

II. (034)

When the same evil thought comes to me, and I resist it, but it returns again and again, and I always resist it till it is conquered.

This second way is more meritorious than the first.

(035)

It is a venial sin if the same thought of sinning mortally comes to mind and for a short time one pays heed to it, or receives some sense pleasure, or is somewhat negligent in rejecting it.

(036)

There are two ways of sinning mortally:

I. The first is to consent to the evil thought with the intention of carrying it out, or of doing so if one can.

II. (037)

The second way of sinning mortally is actually carrying out the sin to which consent was given.

This is a greater sin for three reasons:

Because of the greater duration;

Because of the greater intensity;

Because of the greater harm done to both persons.

(045)

First Exercise

This is a meditation on the first, second and third sin employing the three powers of the soul. After the preparatory prayer and two preludes it contains three principal points and a colloquy

(046)

Prayer

In the preparatory prayer I will beg God our Lord for grace that all my intentions, actions, and operations may be directed purely to the praise and service of His Divine Majesty.

(047)

First Prelude

This is a mental representation of the place.

Attention must be called to the following point. When the contemplation or meditation is on something visible, for example, when we contemplate Christ our Lord, the representation will consist in seeing in imagination the material place where the object is that we wish to contemplate. I said the material place, for example, the temple, or the mountain where Jesus or His Mother is, according to the subject matter of the contemplation.

In a case where the subject matter is not visible, as here in a meditation on sin, the representation will be to see in imagination my soul as a prisoner in this corruptible body, and to consider my whole composite being as an exile here on earth, cast out to live among brute beasts. I said my whole composite being, body and soul.

[\(048\)](#)

The Second Prelude

I will ask God our Lord for what I want and desire.

The petition made in this prelude must be according to the subject matter. Thus in a contemplation on the Resurrection I will ask for joy with Christ in joy. In one on the passion, I will ask for sorrow, tears, and anguish with Christ in anguish.

Here it will be to ask for shame and confusion, because I see how many have been lost on account of a single mortal sin, and how many times I have deserved eternal damnation, because of the many grievous sins that I have committed.

(049)

Note

The Preparatory Prayer, which is never changed, and the two Preludes mentioned above, which are changed at times according to the subject matter, must always be made before all the contemplations and meditations.

[\(050\)](#)

The First Point

This will consist in using the memory to recall the first sin, which was that of the angels, and then in applying the understanding by reasoning upon this sin, then the will by seeking to remember and understand all to be the more filled with shame and confusion when I compare the one sin of the angels with the many sins I have committed. I will consider that they went to hell for one sin, and the number of times I have deserved to be condemned forever because of my numerous sins.

I said we should apply the memory to the sin of the angels, that is, recalling that they were created in the state of grace, that they did not want to make use of the freedom God gave them to reverence and obey their Creator and Lord, and so falling into pride, were changed from grace to hatred of God, and cast out of heaven into hell.

So, too, the understanding is to be used to think over the matter more in detail, and then the will to rouse more deeply the emotions.

[\(051\)](#)

Second Point

In the same way the three powers of the soul are to be applied to the sin of Adam and Eve. Recall to memory how on account of this sin they did penance for so long a time, and the great corruption which came upon the human race that caused so many to be lost in hell.

I said recall to mind the second sin, that of our First Parents. After Adam had been created on the Plain of Damascus and placed in the Garden of Paradise, and Eve had been formed from his side, they sinned by violating the command not to eat of the tree of knowledge. Thereafter, they were clothed in garments of skin and cast out of Paradise. By their sin they lost original justice, and for the rest of their lives, lived without it in many labors and great penance.

So, too, the understanding is to be used to think over the matter in greater detail, and the will is to be used as explained above.

(052)

Third Point

In like manner, we are to do the same with regard to the third sin, namely, that of one who went to hell because of one mortal sin. Consider also countless others who have been lost for fewer sins than I have committed.

I said to do the same for the third particular sin. Recall to memory the gravity and malice of sin against our Creator and Lord. Use the understanding to consider that because of sin, and of acting against the Infinite Goodness, one is justly condemned forever. Close with the acts of the will as we have said above.

[\(053\)](#)

Colloquy

Imagine Christ our Lord present before you upon the cross, and begin to speak with him, asking how it is that though He is the Creator, He has stooped to become man, and to pass from eternal life to death here in time, that thus He might die for our sins.

I shall also reflect upon myself and ask:

"What have I done for Christ?"

"What am I doing for Christ?"

"What ought I to do for Christ?"

As I behold Christ in this plight, nailed to the cross, I shall ponder upon what presents itself to my mind.

[\(054\)](#)

Note on Colloquies

The colloquy is made by speaking exactly as one friend speaks to another, or as a servant speaks to a master, now asking him for a favor, now blaming himself for some misdeed, now making known his affairs to him, and seeking advice in them. Close with an *Our Father*.

[\(055\)](#)

Second Exercise

This is a meditation on our sins. After the preparatory prayer and two preludes there are five points and a colloquy

Prayer

The preparatory prayer will be the same.

First Prelude

This will be the same as in the First Exercise.

Second Prelude

This is to ask for what I desire. Here it will be to ask for a growing and intense sorrow and tears for my sins.

[\(056\)](#)

First Point

This is the record of my sins. I will call to mind all the sins of my life, reviewing year by year, and period by period. Three things will help me in this: First, to

consider the place where I lived; secondly, my dealings with others; thirdly, the office I have held.

[\(057\)](#)

Second Point

I will weigh the gravity of my sins, and see the loathsomeness and malice which every mortal sin I have committed has in itself, even though it were not forbidden.

[\(058\)](#)

Third Point

I will consider who I am, and by means of examples humble myself:

- I. What am I compared with all men?
- II. What are all men compared with the angels and saints of paradise?
- III. Consider what all creation is in comparison with God. Then I alone, what can I be?
- IV. I will consider all the corruption and loathsomeness of my body.
- V. I will consider myself as a source of corruption and contagion from which has issued countless sins and evils and the most offensive poison.

[\(059\)](#)

Fourth Point

I will consider who God is against whom I have sinned, going through His attributes and comparing them with their contraries in me: His wisdom with my ignorance, His power with my weakness, His justice with my iniquity, His goodness with my wickedness.

[\(060\)](#)

Fifth Point

This is a cry of wonder accompanied by surging emotion as I pass in review all creatures. How is it that they have permitted me to live, and have sustained me in life! Why have the angels, though they are the sword of God's justice, tolerated me, guarded me, and prayed for me! Why have the saints interceded for me and asked favors for me! And the heavens, sun, moon, stars, and the elements; the fruits, birds, fishes, and other animals—why have they all been at my service! How is it that the earth did not open to swallow me up, and create new hells in which I should be tormented forever!

[\(061\)](#)

Colloquy

I will conclude with a colloquy, extolling the mercy of God our Lord, pouring out my thoughts to Him, and giving thanks to Him that up to this very moment He has granted me life. I will resolve with His grace to amend for the future. Close with an *Our Father*.

[\(062\)](#)

Third Exercise

This is a repetition of the first and second exercises with three colloquies

After the preparatory prayer and the two preludes, this exercise will consist in repeating the First and Second Exercise. In doing this, we should pay attention to and dwell upon those points in which we have experienced greater consolation or desolation or greater spiritual appreciation. After the repetition, three colloquies are to be used in the following manner:

(063)

First Colloquy

The first colloquy will be with our Blessed Lady, that she may obtain grace for me from her Son and Lord for three favors:

- I. A deep knowledge of my sins and a feeling of abhorrence for them;
- II. An understanding of the disorder of my actions, that filled with horror of them, I may amend my life and put it in order;
- III. A knowledge of the world, that filled with horror, I may put away from me all that is worldly and vain.

Then I will say a *Hail Mary*.

Second Colloquy

I will make the same petitions to her Son that He may obtain these graces from the Father for me.

After that I will say *Soul of Christ*.

Third Colloquy

I will make the same requests of the Father that He Himself, the eternal Lord, may grant them to me.

Then I will close with the *Our Father*.

(064)

Fourth Exercise

This exercise consists of a summary of the third exercise given above

I have called it a summary, because the intellect, without any digression, diligently thinks over and recalls the matter contemplated in the previous exercises. The same three colloquies should be used at the close.

(065)

Fifth Exercise

This is a meditation on hell. Besides the preparatory prayer and two preludes it contains five points and a colloquy

Prayer

The preparatory prayer will be as usual.

First Prelude

This is a representation of the place. Here it will be to see in imagination the length, breadth, and depth of hell.

Second Prelude

I should ask for what I desire. Here it will be to beg for a deep sense of the pain which the lost suffer, that if because of my faults I forget the love of the eternal Lord, at least the fear of these punishments will keep me from falling into sin.

(066)

First Point

This will be to see in imagination the vast fires, and the souls enclosed, as it were, in bodies of fire.

(067)

Second Point

To hear the wailing, the howling, cries, and blasphemies against Christ our Lord and against His saints.

(068)

Third Point

With the sense of smell to perceive the smoke, the sulphur, the filth, and corruption.

(069)

Fourth Point

To taste the bitterness of tears, sadness, and remorse of conscience.

(070)

Fifth Point

With the sense of touch to feel the flames which envelop and burn the souls.

(071)

Colloquy

Enter into conversation with Christ our Lord. Recall to memory that of those who are in hell, some came there because they did not believe in the coming of Christ; others, though they believed, because they did not keep the Commandments. Divide them all into three classes:

- I. Those who were lost before the coming of Christ;
- II. Those who were lost during His lifetime;
- III. Those who were lost after His life here on earth.

Thereupon, I will give thanks to God our Lord that He has not put an end to my life and permitted me to fall into any of these three classes.

I shall also thank Him for this, that up to this very moment He has shown Himself so loving and merciful to me.

Close with an *Our Father*.

(Other Exercises)

(If the one giving the Exercises judges that it would be profitable for the exercitant, other exercises may be added here, for example, on death and other punishments of sin, on judgment, etc. Let him not think this is forbidden, though they are not given here.)

(072)

Note

The First Exercise will be made at midnight; the Second, immediately on rising in the morning; the Third, before or after Mass, at all events before dinner; the Fourth, about the time of Vespers; the Fifth, an hour before supper.

This is more or less the arrangement of hours that I take for granted is being observed in all four Weeks. But as age, condition of health, and the physical constitution of the exercitant permit, there may be five exercises or fewer.

(073)

Additional Directions

The purpose of these directions is to help one to go through the exercises better and find more readily what he desires

- I. After retiring, just before falling asleep, for the space of a *Hail Mary*, I will think of the hour when I have to rise, and why I am rising, and briefly sum up the exercise I have to go through.
- II. (074)
When I wake up, I will not permit my thoughts to roam at random, but will turn my mind at once to the subject I am about to contemplate in the first exercise at midnight. I will seek to rouse myself to shame for my many sins by using examples, let us say, of a knight brought before his king and the whole court, filled with shame and confusion for having grievously offended his lord from whom he had formerly received many gifts and

favors. Similarly, in the Second Exercise, I will consider myself a great sinner, loaded with chains, that is, I will look upon myself as bound with fetters, going to appear before the supreme and eternal Judge, and I will recall the way prisoners, bound and deserving of death, appear before an earthly judge. As I dress, I will think over these thoughts or others in keeping with the subject matter of the meditation.

III. (075)

I will stand for the space of an *Our Father*, a step or two before the place where I am to meditate or contemplate, and with my mind raised on high, consider that God our Lord beholds me, etc. Then I will make an act of reverence or humility.

IV. (076)

I will enter upon the meditation, now kneeling, now prostrate upon the ground, now lying face upwards, now seated, now standing, always being intent on seeking what I desire. Hence, two things should be noted:

I. If I find what I desire while kneeling, I will not seek to change my position: if prostrate, I will observe the same direction, etc.

II. I will remain quietly meditating upon the point in which I have found what I desire, without any eagerness to go on till I have been satisfied.

V. (077)

After an exercise is finished, either sitting or walking, I will consider for the space of a quarter of an hour how I succeeded in the meditation or contemplation. If poorly, I will seek the cause of the failure; and after I have found it, I will be sorry, so that I may do better in the future. If I have succeeded, I will give thanks to God our Lord, and the next time try to follow the same method.

VI. (078)

I should not think of things that give pleasure and joy, as the glory of heaven, the Resurrection, etc., for if I wish to feel pain, sorrow, and tears for my sins, every consideration promoting joy and happiness will impede

it. I should rather keep in mind that I want to be sorry and feel pain. Hence it would be better to call to mind death and judgment.

VII. (079)

For the same reason I should deprive myself of all light, closing the shutters and doors when I am in my room, except when I need light to say prayers, to read, or to eat.

VIII. (080)

I should not laugh or say anything that would cause laughter.

IX. (081)

I should restrain my eyes except to look up in receiving or dismissing one with whom I have to speak.

X. Penance

(082)

The tenth Additional Direction deals with penance. This is divided into interior and exterior penance. Interior penance consists in sorrow for one's sins and a firm purpose not to commit them or any others. Exterior penance is the fruit of the first kind. It consists in inflicting punishment on ourselves for the sins we have committed. The principal ways of doing this are three:

I. (083)

The first kind of exterior penance concerns eating. In this matter, if we do away with what is superfluous, it is not penance, but temperance. We do penance when we deny ourselves something of what is suitable for us. The more we do this, the better the penance, provided only we do no harm to ourselves and do not cause any serious illness.

II. (084)

The second kind of exterior penance concerns sleep. Here, too, it is not penance when we do away with the superfluous in what is

pampering and soft. But it is penance when in our manner of sleeping we take something away from what is suitable. The more we do in this line, the better it is, provided we do not cause any harm to ourselves, and do not bring on any notable illness. But we should not deny ourselves a suitable amount of sleep, except to come to a happy mean in case we had the habit of sleeping too much.

III. (085)

The third kind of penance is to chastise the body, that is, to inflict sensible pain on it. This is done by wearing hairshirts, cords, or iron chains on the body, or by scourging or wounding oneself, and by other kinds of austerities.

(086)

The more suitable and safe form of penance seems to be that which would cause sensible pain to the body and not penetrate to the bones, so that it inflicts pain, but does not cause sickness. For this reason it would seem more suitable to chastise oneself with light cords that cause superficial pain, rather than in any other way that might bring about a serious internal infirmity.

Notes

I. (087)

The principal reason for performing exterior penance is to secure three effects:

- I. To make satisfaction for past sins;
- II. To overcome oneself, that is, to make our sensual nature obey reason, and to bring all of our lower faculties into greater subjection to the higher;
- III. To obtain some grace or gift that one earnestly desires. Thus it may be that one wants a deep sorrow for sin, or tears, either because of

his sins or because of the pains and sufferings of Christ our Lord; or he may want the solution of some doubt that is in his mind.

II.

III. (088)

Note that the first and second Additional Directions are to be observed for the exercises at midnight and at daybreak, and not for the exercises made at other times. The fourth Direction is never to be followed in the church before others, but only in private, for example, at home.

IV. (089)

When the exercitant has not found what he has been seeking, for example, tears, consolation, etc., it is often useful to make some change in the kind of penance, such as in food, in sleep, or in other ways of doing penance, so that we alternate, for two or three days doing penance, and for two or three not doing any. The reason for this is that more penance is better for some and less for others. Another reason is that we often quit doing penance, because we are too much concerned about our bodies and erroneously judge that human nature cannot bear it without notable illness. On the other hand, at times we may do too much penance, thinking that the body can stand it. Now since God our Lord knows our nature infinitely better, when we make changes of this kind, He often grants each one the grace to understand what is suitable for him.

V. (090)

The Particular Examination of Conscience will be made to remove faults and negligences with regard to the Exercises and the Additional Directions. This will also be observed in the Second, Third, and Fourth Week.

The Kingdom of Christ

(091)

The Call of an Earthly King

This will help us to contemplate the life of the eternal king

Prayer

The preparatory prayer will be as usual.

First Prelude

This is a mental representation of the place. Here it will be to see in imagination the synagogues, villages, and towns where Christ our Lord preached.

Second Prelude

I will ask for the grace I desire. Here it will be to ask of our Lord the grace not to be deaf to His call, but prompt and diligent to accomplish His most holy will.

First Part

(092)

First Point

This will be to place before my mind a human king, chosen by God our Lord Himself, to whom all Christian princes and people pay homage and obedience.

(093)

Second Point

This will be to consider the address this king makes to all his subjects, with the words: "It is my will to conquer all the lands of the infidel. Therefore, whoever wishes to join with me in this enterprise must be content with the same food, drink, clothing, etc. as mine. So, too, he must work with me by day, and watch with me by night, etc., that as he has had a share in the toil with me, afterwards, he may share in the victory with me."

(094)

Third Point

Consider what the answer of good subjects ought to be to a king so generous and noble-minded, and consequently, if anyone would refuse the invitation of such a king, how justly he would deserve to be condemned by the whole world, and looked upon as an ignoble knight.

(095)

Second Part

The second part of this exercise will consist in applying the example of the earthly king mentioned above to Christ our Lord according to the following points:

First Point

If such a summons of an earthly king to his subjects deserves our attention, how much more worthy of consideration is Christ our Lord, the Eternal King, before whom is assembled the whole world. To all His summons goes forth, and to each one in particular He addresses the words: "It is my will to conquer the whole world and all my enemies, and thus to enter into the glory of my Father. Therefore, whoever wishes to join me in this enterprise must be willing to labor with me, that by following me in suffering, he may follow me in glory."

(096)

Second Point

Consider that all persons who have judgment and reason will offer themselves entirely for this work.

(097)

Third Point

Those who wish to give greater proof of their love, and to distinguish themselves in whatever concerns the service of the eternal King and the Lord of all, will not only offer themselves entirely for the work, but will act against their sensuality and carnal and worldly love, and make offerings of greater value and of more importance in words such as these:

(098)

Eternal Lord of All Things

Eternal Lord of all things, in the presence of Thy infinite goodness, and of Thy glorious mother, and of all the saints of Thy heavenly court, this is the offering of myself which I make with Thy favor and help. I protest that it is my earnest desire and my deliberate choice, provided only it is for Thy greater service and praise, to imitate Thee in bearing all wrongs and all abuse and all poverty, both actual and spiritual, should Thy most holy majesty deign to choose and admit me to such a state and way of life

Notes

(099)

Note I.

This exercise should be gone through twice during the day, that is, in the morning on rising, and an hour before dinner, or before supper.

(100)

Note II.

During the Second Week and thereafter, it will be very profitable to read some passages from the *Following of Christ*, or from the Gospels, and from the *Lives of the Saints*.

Second Week

First Day

[\(101\)](#)

First Day and First Contemplation

This is a contemplation on the incarnation. After the preparatory prayer and three preludes there are three points and a colloquy

Prayer

The usual preparatory prayer.

[\(102\)](#)

First Prelude

This will consist in calling to mind the history of the subject I have to contemplate. Here it will be how the Three Divine Persons look down upon the whole expanse or circuit of all the earth, filled with human beings. Since They see that all are going down to hell, They decree in Their eternity that the Second Person should become man to save the human race. So when the fullness of time had come, They send the Angel Gabriel to our Lady. Cf. # 262.

[\(103\)](#)

Second Prelude

This is a mental representation of the place. It will be here to see the great extent of the surface of the earth, inhabited by so many different peoples, and especially to see the house and room of our Lady in the city of Nazareth in the province of Galilee.

(104)

Third Prelude

This is to ask for what I desire. Here it will be to ask for an intimate knowledge of our Lord, who has become man for me, that I may love Him more and follow Him more closely.

(105)

Note

Attention must be called to the following point. The same preparatory prayer without any change, as was mentioned in the beginning, and the three preludes, with such changes of form as the subject demands, are to be made during this Week and during the others that follow.

[\(106\)](#)

First Point

This will be to see the different persons:

First, those on the face of the earth, in such great diversity in dress and in manner of acting. Some are white, some black; some at peace, and some at war; some weeping, some laughing; some well, some sick; some coming into the world, and some dying; etc.

Secondly, I will see and consider the Three Divine Persons seated on the royal dais or throne of the Divine Majesty. They look down upon the whole surface of the earth, and behold all nations in great blindness, going down to death and descending into hell.

Thirdly, I will see our Lady and the angel saluting her.

I will reflect upon this to draw profit from what I see.

(107)

Second Point

This will be to listen to what the persons on the face of the earth say, that is, how they speak to one another, swear and blaspheme, etc. I will also hear what the Divine Persons say, that is, "Let us work the redemption of the human race," etc. Then I will listen to what the angel and our Lady say. Finally, I will reflect upon all I hear to draw profit from their words.

(108)

Third Point

This will be to consider what the persons on the face of the earth do, for example, wound, kill, and go down to hell. Also what the Divine Persons do, namely, work the most holy Incarnation, etc. Likewise, what the Angel and our Lady do; how the Angel carries out his office of ambassador; and how our Lady humbles herself, and offers thanks to the Divine Majesty.

Then I shall reflect upon all to draw some fruit from each of these details.

(109)

Colloquy

The exercise should be closed with a colloquy. I will think over what I ought to say to the Three Divine Persons, or to the eternal Word incarnate, or to His Mother, our Lady. According to the light that I have received, I will beg for grace to follow and imitate more closely our Lord, who has just become man for me.

Close with an *Our Father*.

(110)

The Second Contemplation

The Nativity

Prayer

The usual preparatory prayer.

(111)

First Prelude

This is the history of the mystery. Here it will be that our Lady, about nine months with child, and, as may be piously believed, seated on an ass, set out from Nazareth. She was accompanied by Joseph and a maid, who was leading an ox. They are going to Bethlehem to pay the tribute that Caesar imposed on those lands. Cf. # 264.

(112)

Second Prelude

This is a mental representation of the place. It will consist here in seeing in imagination the way from Nazareth to Bethlehem. Consider its length, its breadth; whether level, or through valleys and over hills. Observe also the place or cave where Christ is born; whether big or little; whether high or low; and how it is arranged.

(113)

Third Prelude

This will be the same as in the preceding contemplation and identical in form with it.

(114)

First Point

This will consist in seeing the persons, namely, our Lady, St. Joseph, the maid, and the Child Jesus after His birth. I will make myself a poor little unworthy slave, and as though present, look upon them, contemplate them, and serve them in their needs with all possible homage and reverence.

Then I will reflect on myself that I may reap some fruit.

(115)

Second Point

This is to consider, observe, and contemplate what the persons are saying, and then to reflect on myself and draw some fruit from it.

(116)

Third Point

This will be to see and consider what they are doing, for example, making the journey and laboring that our Lord might be born in extreme poverty, and that after many labors, after hunger, thirst, heat, and cold, after insults and outrages, He might die on the cross, and all this for me.

Then I will reflect and draw some spiritual fruit from what I have seen.

(117)

Colloquy

Close with a colloquy as in the preceding contemplation, and with the *Our Father*.

(118)

The Third Contemplation

This will be a repetition of the first and second exercises

After the preparatory prayer and the three preludes, a repetition of the First and Second Exercises will be made. In doing this, attention should always be given to some more important parts in which one has experienced understanding, consolation, or desolation.

Close the exercise with a colloquy and an *Our Father*.

(119)

In this repetition and in all those which follow, the same order of proceeding should be observed as in the repetitions of the First Week. The subject matter is changed but the same form is observed.

(120)

The Fourth Contemplation

This will consist in a repetition of the first and second exercises in the same way as in the repetition given above

[\(121\)](#)

The Fifth Contemplation

This will consist in applying the five senses to the matter of the first and second contemplations

After the preparatory prayer and three preludes, it will be profitable with the aid of the imagination to apply the five senses to the subject matter of the First and Second Contemplation in the following manner:

[\(122\)](#)

First Point

This consists in seeing in imagination the persons, and in contemplating and meditating in detail the circumstances in which they are, and then in drawing some fruit from what has been seen.

(123)/div>

Second Point

This is to hear what they are saying, or what they might say, and then by reflecting on oneself to draw some profit from what has been heard.

(124)

Third Point

This is to smell the infinite fragrance, and taste the infinite sweetness of the divinity. Likewise to apply these senses to the soul and its virtues, and to all according to the person we are contemplating, and to draw fruit from this.

(125)

Fourth Point

This is to apply the sense of touch, for example, by embracing and kissing the place where the persons stand or are seated, always taking care to draw some fruit from this.

(126)

Colloquy

Conclude with a colloquy and with an *Our Father* as in the First and Second Contemplations.

Notes

I. (127)

Attention must be called to the following point. Throughout this Week and the subsequent Weeks, I ought to read only the mystery that I am immediately to contemplate. Hence, I should not read any mystery that is not to be used on that day or at that hour, lest the consideration of one mystery interfere with the contemplation of the other.

II. (128)

The First Exercise on the Incarnation should take place at midnight, the second at daybreak, the third about the time of Mass, the fourth near the time of Vespers, and the fifth an hour before supper.

The same order should be observed on all the following days.

III. (129)

If the exercitant is old or weak, or even when strong, if he has come from the First Week rather exhausted, it should be noted that in this Second Week it would be better, at least at times, not to rise at midnight. Then one contemplation would be in the morning, another would be at the time of Mass, a third before dinner, with one repetition of them at the time of Vespers, and the Application of the Senses before supper.

IV. (130)

Of the ten Additional Directions given during the First Week, the following should be changed during the Second Week: the second, the sixth, the seventh, and part of the tenth.

The second will be that as soon as I awake, I should place before my mind the subject of the contemplation with the desire to know better the eternal Word Incarnate in order to serve and follow Him more closely.

The sixth will be to call to mind frequently the mysteries of the life of Christ our Lord from the Incarnation to the place or mystery I am contemplating.

The seventh will be that the exercitant take care to darken his room, or admit the light; to make use of pleasant or disagreeable weather, in as far as he perceives that it may be of profit, and help to find what he desires.

In the observance of the tenth Additional Direction, the exercitant must conduct himself as the mysteries he is contemplating demand. Some call for penance; others do not.

Thus all ten Additional Directions are to be observed with great care.

V. (131)

In all the exercises, except the one at midnight and the one in the morning, an equivalent of the second Additional Direction should be observed as follows:

As soon as I recall that it is time for the exercise in which I ought to engage, before proceeding to it, I will call to mind, where I am going, before whom I am to appear, and briefly sum up the exercise. Then after observing the third Additional Direction, I shall enter upon the exercise.

Second and Third Days

(132)

Second Day

On the second day, for the first and second contemplations, the Presentation in the Temple, # 268, and the Flight into Exile in Egypt, # 269, should be used. Two repetitions will be made of these contemplations, and the Application of the Senses, in the same way as was done on the preceding day.

(133)

Note

Sometimes it will be profitable, even when the exercitant is strong and well-disposed, to make some changes from the second day to the fourth inclusive in order to attain better what is desired. Thus, the first contemplation would be the one on rising. Then there would be a second about the time of Mass, a repetition about the time of Vespers, and the Application of the Senses before supper.

(134)

Third Day

On the third day use the contemplations on the Obedience of the Child Jesus to His parents, # 271, and the Finding of the Child Jesus in the Temple, # 272. Then will follow the two repetitions and the Application of the Senses.

[\(135\)](#)

Introduction to the Consideration of Different States of Life

The example which Christ our Lord gave of the first state of life, which is that of observing the Commandments, has already been considered in meditating on His obedience to His parents. The example of the second state, which is that of evangelical perfection, has also been considered, when He remained in the

temple and left His foster father and His Mother to devote Himself exclusively to the service of His eternal Father.

While continuing to contemplate His life, let us begin to investigate and ask in what kind of life or in what state His Divine Majesty wishes to make use of us.

Therefore, as some introduction to this, in the next exercise, let us consider the intention of Christ our Lord, and on the other hand, that of the enemy of our human nature. Let us also see how we ought to prepare ourselves to arrive at perfection in whatever state or way of life God our Lord may grant us to choose.

[\(136\)](#)

The Fourth Day

A Meditation on Two Standards

The one of Christ, our supreme leader and lord, the other of Lucifer, the deadly enemy of our human nature

Prayer

The usual preparatory prayer.

[\(137\)](#)

First Prelude

This is the history. Here it will be that Christ calls and wants all beneath His standard, and Lucifer, on the other hand, wants all under his.

[\(138\)](#)

Second Prelude

This is a mental representation of the place. It will be here to see a great plain, comprising the whole region about Jerusalem, where the sovereign

Commander-in-Chief of all the good is Christ our Lord; and another plain about the region of Babylon, where the chief of the enemy is Lucifer.

(139)

Third Prelude

This is to ask for what I desire. Here it will be to ask for a knowledge of the deceits of the rebel chief and help to guard myself against them; and also to ask for a knowledge of the true life exemplified in the sovereign and true Commander, and the grace to imitate Him.

First Part: The Standard of Satan

(140)

First Point

Imagine you see the chief of all the enemy in the vast plain about Babylon, seated on a great throne of fire and smoke, his appearance inspiring horror and terror.

(141)

Second Point

Consider how he summons innumerable demons, and scatters them, some to one city and some to another, throughout the whole world, so that no province, no place, no state of life, no individual is overlooked.

[\(142\)](#)

Third Point

Consider the address he makes to them, how he goads them on to lay snares for men and bind them with chains. First they are to tempt them to covet riches (as Satan himself is accustomed to do in most cases) that they may the more easily attain the empty honors of this world, and then come to overweening pride.

The first step, then, will be riches, the second honor, the third pride. From these three steps the evil one leads to all other vices.

Second Part: The Standard of Christ

(143)

In a similar way, we are to picture to ourselves the sovereign and true Commander, Christ our Lord.

(144)

First Point

Consider Christ our Lord, standing in a lowly place in a great plain about the region of Jerusalem, His appearance beautiful and attractive.

(145)

Second Point

Consider how the Lord of all the world chooses so many persons, apostles, disciples, etc., and sends them throughout the whole world to spread His sacred doctrine among all men, no matter what their state or condition.

[\(146\)](#)

Third Point

Consider the address which Christ our Lord makes to all His servants and friends whom He sends on this enterprise, recommending to them to seek to help all, first by attracting them to the highest spiritual poverty, and should it please the Divine Majesty, and should He deign to choose them for it, even to actual poverty. Secondly, they should lead them to a desire for insults and contempt, for from these springs humility.

Hence, there will be three steps: the first, poverty as opposed to riches; the second, insults or contempt as opposed to the honor of this world; the third,

humility as opposed to pride. From these three steps, let them lead men to all other virtues.

(147)

Colloquy

A colloquy should be addressed to our Lady, asking her to obtain for me from her Son and Lord the grace to be received under His standard, first in the highest spiritual poverty, and should the Divine Majesty be pleased thereby, and deign to choose and accept me, even in actual poverty; secondly, in bearing insults and wrongs, thereby to imitate Him better, provided only I can suffer these without sin on the part of another, and without offense of the Divine Majesty. Then I will say the *Hail Mary*.

Second Colloquy

This will be to ask her Son to obtain the same favors for me from the Father. Then I will say, *Soul of Christ*.

Third Colloquy

This will be to beg the Father to grant me the same graces. Then I will say the *Our Father*.

(148)

Note

This exercise will be made at midnight and again in the morning. There will be two repetitions of the same exercise, one about the time of Mass and the other about the time of Vespers. The same three colloquies, with our Lady, with her Son, and with the Father, will close all these exercises as well as the one on the Three Classes of Men, which follows an hour before supper.

(149)

Three Classes of Men

This is a meditation for the same fourth day to choose that which is better

Prayer

The usual preparatory prayer.

(150)

First Prelude

This is the history of the Three Classes of Men. Each of them has acquired ten thousand ducats, but not entirely as they should have, for the love of God. They all wish to save their souls and find peace in God our Lord by ridding themselves of the burden arising from the attachment to the sum acquired, which impedes the attainment of this end.

(151)

Second Prelude

This is a mental representation of the place. Here it will be to behold myself standing in the presence of God our Lord and of all His saints, that I may know and desire what is more pleasing to His Divine Goodness.

(152)

Third Prelude

This is to ask for what I desire. Here it will be to beg for the grace to choose what is more for the glory of His Divine Majesty and the salvation of my soul.

(153)

The First Class

They would like to rid themselves of the attachment they have to the sum acquired in order to find peace in God our Lord and assure their salvation, but the hour of death comes, and they have not made use of any means.

[\(154\)](#)

The Second Class

They want to rid themselves of the attachment, but they wish to do so in such a way that they retain what they have acquired, so that God is to come to what they desire, and they do not decide to give up the sum of money in order to go to God, though this would be the better way for them.

[\(155\)](#)

The Third Class

These want to rid themselves of the attachment, but they wish to do so in such a way that they desire neither to retain nor to relinquish the sum acquired. They seek only to will and not will as God our Lord inspires them, and as seems better for the service and praise of the Divine Majesty. Meanwhile, they will strive to conduct themselves as if every attachment to it had been broken. They will make efforts neither to want that, nor anything else, unless the service of God our Lord alone move them to do so. As a result, the desire to be better able to serve God our Lord will be the cause of their accepting anything or relinquishing it.

(156)

Threefold Colloquy

I will make use of the same three colloquies employed in the preceding contemplation on Two Standards.

[\(157\)](#)

Note

It should be noted that when we feel an attachment opposed to actual poverty or a repugnance to it, when we are not indifferent to poverty and riches, it will be very helpful in order to overcome the inordinate attachment, even though corrupt nature rebel against it, to beg our Lord in the colloquies to choose us to serve Him in actual poverty. We should insist that we desire it, beg for it, plead for it, provided, of course, that it be for the service and praise of the Divine Goodness.

***Clearly, these were people who
didn't have television.***

OUR LADY OF THE ANGELS

Each one of those saints on the banners on the wall -- They all led very different lives and came from very different backgrounds. But they all had one thing in common:

Each one of them said YES to God's plan for them.

When you die, God will ask you to point to the person you love.

Let your love be greater than the space.

<https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=R7f189Z0v0Y>

I know, with all the videos, it's like theology as "Choose your own Adventure".

I actually really like this video.

<https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=HxUuDPNbkJk>

*Toby Keith
I Wanna Talk About Me*

Just be still with Christ. Say: What's going on here? What is this about? Using the Scriptures to hear Christ. Because you're sitting there, for whatever reason, Christ says to you exactly the same thing he said to the rich young man, "Come with me, be with me, be my comrade, let me live in you." That's got to grow. That's what you were created for. That's what these stories remind us of. We're part of the Great Story. You have to get this sense of the Great Story that your life is part of. Not the great story you've been told so far, by TV, by the Enlightenment, or whatever -- all those are stories, they're real stories, but they're not the Great Story: they have to be fitted into that. The Great Story of which our life is a part is the Story of Christ: the Divine Son who loved us so much that He became one of us, lived our life, and absorbed everything that is in us and brought it back to the Father.

...

The woman didn't even know the Name of God who played a role. You may too. There will come times in our life, sometimes dramatic, sometimes not, when it will be *moment* for me to be - *to have become* - who I was created to be, for you to have become part of The Story of Christ. And the things we mentioned point to some of the ways that that necessarily develop -- ***So as not to come to a moment and fail to be what I was created to be, should that terrible thing happen.***

Father Robert S. Smith

<https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=VXW-vIHxaRI&index=78&list=PLHLzqutarkrm5kFVW5noRcsaJ08OYgBqy>

When the rain is blowing in your face
And the whole world is on your case
I could offer you a warm embrace
To make you feel my love

When evening shadows and the stars appear
And there is no one there to dry your tears
I could hold you for a million years
To make you feel my love

I know you haven't made your mind up yet
But I would never do you wrong
I've known it from the moment that we met
No doubt in my mind where you belong

I'd go hungry, I'd go black and blue
I'd go crawling down the avenue
And oh, there's nothing that I wouldn't do
To make you feel my love

The storms are raging on the rolling sea
And on the highway of regret
The winds of change are blowing wild and free
You ain't seen nothing like me yet

I could make you happy, make your dreams come true
Nothing that I wouldn't do
Go to the ends of the earth for you
To make you feel my love

Bob Dylan
Make You Feel My Love

<https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=vvdPheBozbc>

Adam Carolla

<https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=m9G3xufj3Z4>

Mirrors

Justin Timberlake

https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=uuZE_IRwLNI

FAIR WARNING: There is an esoteric interpretation of this book that could be used to support any position: Sodomy, Islam, Atheism, Satanism. That esoteric interpretative possibility exists as a trap for the Children of Satan. The Anti-Christ and his regime will use that interpretation to claim that I would support the Anti-Christ's political regime. I do not. The exoteric meaning of this work is the TRUE meaning, and the esoteric interpretation is the FALSE meaning.

In other words, the surface meaning is the true meaning, and the "deep" meaning constructed from the many "clues" is, in fact, the false meaning, and it is simply a trap for evil souls filled with anger, lust, greed, envy, self-righteousness, pride, and basic self-preference.

To put it more bluntly, I *always* say what I mean and mean what I say.

I am telling the truth. I am NOT lying.

Beware.

I put before you DEATH and LIFE. CHOOSE LIFE.

Spiritual Mechanics

What we require is a real spiritual mechanics, a working out - insofar as we blind men are able - of the necessary inner workings of not only matter, but spirit. For, if matter, which is but blankness, is so hard to figure out, shall not the luminosity of spirit, which is total freedom, be that much harder to figure out? Especially when the student and scholar of such luminosity is totally blind? Thus, we shall require innervations, an inner sight that allows us to see what we cannot see.

Impossible?

Nonsense.

For how then can Stevie Wonder sing of a “rainbow that burns the stars out in the sky” and a time when “the dolphin flies and parrots live at sea” and of “ribbons in the sky” if you cannot see without seeing? It is not that you cannot see without seeing - it is that you are too lazy and obstinate to try. And that is unforgivable.

That blind man, if he endures, will see, forever. And you, who see now, shall be shut in total darkness, forever.

Thank you, Stevie, I owe my life to you, brother.

And that spiritual mechanics is not Scientology - it is not kookooforcocoapuffsupmy-rectumoutofmyassologsticology. It is a fine, and subtle, working out of the inner sight of the Spirit.

Such a spiritual mechanics is and is not philosophy. Philosophy is what happens when a blind man decides to take up painting.

A more exact, and less mechanical, name for the discipline would be spiritual science. The term ‘spiritual science’ inevitably conjures up images of crystal balls, Ouija boards, theosophy, the paranormal, the occult, gnarly lit candles with congealed wax wrapped around them, Satanic altars, and all manner of New Age gobbledygook.

But all spiritual science really is is the science of the spirit. Science simply means knowledge, so it would be the knowledge of the spirit, or the search for that knowledge. The “knowledge” part of that definition is not the problem. Most people assume and accept that you can have knowledge of all sorts of things: plants, birds, fish, the movements of the stars, history, politics, even Nature itself, and even human nature.

The problem is that many people (especially intellectual people) find “spirit” nebulous, fabulous (as in, fantastical or mythical, as from a fable), or downright non-existent.

Modern natural science lives and dies by the dictum, “We are living in a material world, and I am a material girl.”

In other words, modern philosophy, the origin of modern natural science and its underwriter, asserts that reality is “matter in motion”.

This belief has been a phenomenally productive investment, paying off in the form of a technological bonanza over the last five centuries. Planes, trains, and automobiles; telephones, computers, and the Internet; vaccines, cures, and modern surgery; air conditioning, heating, and electric lights -- and so much more -- all owe their genesis to this materialist line of thinking.

This technological fortune has obscured the poverty of modern philosophy’s actual underlying idea: the materialist metaphysics. It is like a tech billionaire who made his or her money from a very specific set of contrivances and transactions, who, after becoming filthy rich, is suddenly considered a sage authority on everything from healthy living to sociology to the meaning of life.

The true sage finally exclaims, “You’re very clever, and rather lucky, but that lottery ticket of yours, that one-trick pony, is *not* the Book of Nature itself.” It is not what *is*. Or, rather, *all* that is.

Most people live and die and have little to no concrete conception of this whole metaphysical imbroglio -- the spectacle that the worldview of modern civilization rests on the conceit that you don’t really exist: that the whole of one’s life experience and self is the epiphenomenon (foam or illusion) of the true phenomenon (underlying thing): billiard ball particles, or whorls of “energy” (the amorphous, shadowy underwriter of the billiard balls’ frenzied activity).

Yet this Mighty Morphin’ Dynamo of Technological Magnificence has one itchy bitsy, teeny-weeny philosophical skeleton in its closet: *Modern materialist natural science has no meaningful definition of **what** matter is!*

For modern natural science, matter is simply whatever is the subject of the mathematical relationships found, by scientists, to correctly predict the movement of matter (i.e. stuff - left undefined). Modern natural science, the heir of modern philosophy (which grew, variously, senile and eccentric years ago, c.f. Postmodernism and Analytic Philosophy, respectively), has no idea *what* matter is, it only has an idea of *how* matter appears to work -- which, in turn, allows the human race to manipulate matter for its own purposes.

Modern atheistical philosophy demands that you believe that you are nothing more than matter, without even having the decency to have a definition of matter, so that you can at least know *what* you are nothing more than.

The situation in modern natural science as a whole is similar to the situation in biology. Biology is the study of life, yet biology itself has no meaningfully exact philosophical conception of *what* life is. It can simply map interrelationships among things already understood by pre-philosophical consciousness, to begin with, as life.

This all comes into play because human beings have this idea that they’ve been carrying for millennia -- this idea that precedes modern natural science by ages and that endures into the modern age like *The Thing That Will Not Die*.

That idea is the soul.

The soul, etymologically, is derived from a Proto-Germanic root word “*saiwaz”, or “from the lake”.⁷⁹ The Greek word for soul and mind is psyche, which derives from the Proto-Indo-European root word “*bhes”, which means “to blow or to breathe”.⁸⁰ The soul is water, the soul is breath.

In materialist terms, that would mean that the soul is a liquid, H₂O, or a gas, like nitrogen or oxygen or carbon dioxide. But that is not the meaning. The meaning is the same as when Jesus Christ describes the Spirit: “The wind (pneuma) blows where it wills, and you can hear the sound it makes, but you do not know where it comes from or where it goes; so it is with everyone who is born of the Spirit” (John 3:8).

The spirit *blows* where it *wills* -- its presence is *perceptible*, but it is impossible to *predict* where it came from or where it goes to. Spirit is the exact opposite of matter in these respects.

Consider. Modern natural science can *predict* the spatial and temporal origins of material constructs and also predict the spatial and temporal destinations of material constructs. That is why telescopic and microscopic devices can provide sensory impressions that, when mathematical constructs are applied to them, can inform us about how the planets formed, how the Sun formed, how the galaxies, including our own, formed, and even how this Universe began, in the Big Bang. The rigorous application of logical reasoning to empirical facts, such as fossil evidence, can inform us about the origin of species and their physical evolution. Modern natural science can also make predictions (more or less exactly) about the future destiny of the material Cosmos, telling us when the Sun will cool, die, and explode, and what fate the Universe may have, in either endless expansion and heat death, or a collapse, or some other eventuality.

Spirit, on the other hand, *by its very terms*, cannot have its origin or destiny predicted. Matter is determinable by external observers. Spirit is *not* determinable by external observers.

Matter is not perceptible. This may seem counterintuitive in a modern scientific age, but consider the issue more closely. Things are certainly perceptible. You can see and hear and feel your desk, your computer, your car, your utensils, the sky, the Sun, your jeans. But are any of these things *matter*?

Of course, they are matter! you say. How so? Saying that they are “matter” assumes that you have some conception of what matter is. If you say that they are made of molecules, atoms, or subatomic particles like protons, electrons, and neutrons, you (probably) only know that because you were told it, saw it on television, read it in a book, and/or learned it in a classroom in school. Even physicists themselves only know about the existence of such particles through inferring them on the basis of mathematical models (like classical Newtonian mechanics and quantum mechanics) that account for and predict the movements of perceptible *things*, such as balls, planes, planets, asteroids, stars, light --- and indicator lights on the control panels of a particle accelerator.

⁷⁹ http://www.etymonline.com/index.php?allowed_in_frame=0&search=soul

⁸⁰ http://www.etymonline.com/index.php?term=psyche&allowed_in_frame=0

Besides, modern natural science doesn't even have a definition of matter, so how can you definitively say that *anything* is material? You can only assume it, feel it, sense it -- have a hunch.

Yet, you say, human beings have known that things are matter since Democritus; they have known it since time immemorial. You need only tear something to shreds to clearly *see* that it is material.

That imports a modern scientific, Hobbesian (billiard ball) idea of matter into your everyday experience.

The destructibility of things only displays that things are destructible.

When you destroy a table or shirt or shoes or a car or plane, you remove part from part such that what was once one *thing* now becomes *many* things. And you can further see that the many things are no longer useful in the same way as the one thing formerly *was*. The torn shirt, torn to shreds, can now no longer be worn. The car cannot be driven. The plane cannot fly. You merely see *something* passing away. You see a carpenter build a table by carving wood and assembling the wooden pieces into a table. Then you see someone else hack the table to pieces to make kindling, and you see the kindling thrown into the fire and combust, till the logs are ashes.

You *first* see change. Flux. You see coming-into-being and passing-away, generation and corruption (c.f. Aristotle, *On Generation and Corruption*). You see becoming, being, and passing away. You see a process of change and stability, stability and change.

It is only in attempting to account for change that human beings first lit upon *matter*.

Prior to Greek philosophy, "matter" did not exist as a concept. Things existed, "physical things" existed. Your flesh existed, wood existed, rocks existed: and you could tear flesh, split logs and chip away at rocks. But, like everything else prior to philosophy (philosophical thinking), that was simply a given. The physicality of *things* did not, to the pre-philosophical human mind, mean that things were only physical. The physicality of things simply meant that they were mortal -- they were not divine, they were subject to corruption, to death. The destructibility of the physical simply distinguished the mortal human world from the perfect, imperishable, indestructible divine world of the gods.

The obvious capacity for multiplicity contrasted with the obvious unity of the human person: the soul. Hence, every ancient, pre-philosophical culture implicitly believed in an afterlife -- a continuation of the soul, in some state, in some form of existence.

People saw physical things split into pieces. No one ever saw a *person* split into pieces. A person's flesh could die, but no one ever saw a living person dissolve into two living persons. Souls seemed quite one, and, hence, probably, implicitly indestructible.

Hence, people assumed that life itself derived from the soul -- from the anima, the animate principle -- and that the departure of the anima, the psyche, the breath, from flesh, caused the death of a person or thing.

The Greeks, meddlesome troublemakers that they were, said, *But how? But why? Why* are things first many things, then one thing, then many things, then *another* one thing and so on? *How* do such changes occur? *What are* things, **at bottom**? What are things *really*?

To ask that question first assumes a basic answer to an implicit question: That things *really* are *not* the flux itself. For human beings saw *things* change, things being the phenomena of everyday experience, and assumed that that flux of change of things was not itself what things were. They assumed that there was some stability to *things at bottom* of all the flux of change.

To put this plainly and accessibly, Aristotle in his *Physics* and *Metaphysics* taught that physics was the study of motion, and motion was change that occurred to stable *things*. Those things could be matter or form. But the stable thing, matter or form, was the primary thing. Change, or motion, only happened *to* the primary thing.

On the other hand, we could assume that the *change* (or motion) was the primary thing and that the stable *thing* “happened” to the change. In other words, the flux is what is really real, while stability is an epiphenomenon (a passing thing, or an outright illusion).

Heraclitus (c.535 - c.475 B.C.), a Greek philosopher, held a view closer to the above. He still adopted many elements from the traditional notions of the four elements (fire, air, water, earth) and held that the Logos (a form of reason and not the Christ) was a constitutive and determinative feature of reality.

To people of a certain mind, this may sound somehow appealing. People who do not like the idea of an external authority telling them how to live their lives, or who, for whatever reason, are more attracted to “dynamic” accounts of reality, may cotton to such a view.

We might say that the stability philosophers (Plato, Aristotle, Aquinas) believe in the primacy of state and the flux philosophers (Heraclitus, certain modern existentialists, certain postmodernists, certain process philosophers) believe in the primacy of process.

State (stability) and process (flux).

Clearly, I am a stability person. Even from a purely intellectual point of view, isn't a process simply a succession and dynamic structure of states?

Perhaps a flux person will say, “Isn't a state simply a stabilization of a process?”

And I will say, “No.”

At bottom, the back and forth between stability and flux, state and process, thing and change comes down to form and formlessness, being and nothingness.

In the above sense, even matter (even atomic matter) *must* be some kind of form. For a neutron, electron, or proton *is* something. Even if Democritus, Epicurus, and Hobbes are right that reality is nothing more than atoms -- corpuscles -- whirling in space and time, or a void, those atoms *are things*. Those atoms are not simply *themselves* a process.

The stability person affirms a foundation, the flux person says there is no foundation.

And that form, or foundation, at bottom is simply *a thing*.

So, here, even Plato and Epicurus, Hobbes and Aquinas get together in a big Sergeant Pepper's Lonely Hearts Club Band of philosophers to say, "Things are real!"

And, on the other side, you have the rebels without a cause, your Heraclitus or Nietzsche or Derrida saying, "Things are *not* real!"

So, at bottom, it is an issue of things versus no-things: between being and nothingness.

This is what happens when an unstoppable force meets an immovable object.
It then comes down to is and is-not; are and are-not.

I do not, on a deep level, get the flux crowd, nor do I see how anyone could ever be "gotten" by them.

You are. You are reading this. You are sitting there. Or standing there. You *are* looking out the window on a plane (stop looking out the window, get back to reading). You are doodling. You are breathing. You are thinking. You are thinking, "That guy is right." Or you are thinking, "Way wrong, dude!"

You *are*.

So how is it possible to privilege process over state? Flux over stability? Change over thing? Nothingness over being?

Either being is dominant, or nothingness is dominant. Either being is primary, or nothingness is primary. Either being is constrained by nothingness, or nothingness is constrained by being.

The phenomenal reality of your everyday experience serves as the ineradicable proof-positive of the primacy of thing over no-thing, and, hence, of some kind of foundational form (even if it is matter in motion) over some inconceivable formlessness, an assertion of nihilism all the way down.

Even the flux philosophers *cannot* wrap themselves around "nihilism all the way down". Heraclitus privileged Logos and Fire as, ultimately, the foundation for his flux. Derrida has his inscrutable and confused notions of responsibility and ethics, which, presumably, emanate from somewhere (where precisely, we may never know). Nietzsche is a gymnast, bouncing and tumbling back and forth from a totally nihilistic statement to a command of vitalism that has all the certainty and fury of Mount Sinai.

No matter how much the flux guys muck up and smear and confuse and derange thingness, thing-ness just keeps coming back from its supposed grave. Thing-ness is *The Thing That Will Not Die 2: Still Not Dead*.

That does not mean that formlessness and nothingness do not "exist". Indeed, to be a being trapped in nothingness is just yet another precise technical definition of Hell.

It simply means that being must predominate over nothingness, and that, indeed, being *is*. This, at bottom, privileges state over process, stability over change: meaning that whatever the reality or unreality of Becoming, Being *is* the Truth.

Which brings us back to the Greek philosophical necessity for matter. Pre-Greek, pre-philosophical cultures had no need for matter, just as Joe Six-Pack has no need for Derrida and his differance or Foucault and his archaeology of knowledge. Pre-philosophical cultures had worlds and things and sheep and goats and cattle and horses and people and they were flesh and blood and bone and breath. But not “matter”.

“Matter” only becomes necessary when you *attempt* to **account** for the change you see around you. Matter is a necessity of the explanatory enterprise, which only begins when you ask a question: when you question reality. Matter only comes into the picture when you ask, “*Why* can I cut my sheep into lamb chops? *Why* does my log burn in the fire to ashes?”

Matter is not the *thing* itself, as such. It is an *explanation* for the things you experience in your everyday life.

Democritus, and his successors like Epicurus, *thought* about things, observing their destructibility, their separability, and *explained* things as the interaction of very small things. They logically deduced that just as you can tear something up, it figures that you can keep tearing it till you cannot tear it anymore, and then you arrive at your “atom”, which is “indivisible” or, more exactly, “uncuttable”. Likewise, they figured that fire could burn because its atoms were jagged and cutting, whereas water’s atoms were smooth.

They had no microscopes, no calculus, and none of the methods of modern science to do anything more than spin such speculations.

Socrates, Plato, and Aristotle, on the other hand, countered the materialism of Democritus and Epicurus with brands of essentialist formalism. Socrates began the effort by asserting that there had to be some kind of “universal” -- there couldn’t be just people, beautiful things, and true ideas (like mathematical propositions), without some real *thing* that actually *was*. Plato took this idea as far as it could go and turned the universal into the Form, asserting that not only must there be some real universal that makes things into actual things, but that the thingness of things was *totally* what made them things, and that the whole physical world was an illusion, a sully of the Form, the Thingness of things.

Aristotle stepped back from this and asserted the primacy of the individual over the universal. Yes, Aristotle said, there must be some kind of universal -- a *real* and not merely illusory universal, but individuals were primary substances and universals were secondary substances. Therefore, while things are really things, there are no magical Things standing above everything.

So, Aristotle’s definition of matter is not atomic, like Democritus, Epicurus or Hobbes. For Aristotle, matter is simply that in which form inheres. So, a horse is a horse because the form of a horse (the universal, which is secondary substance and is the same form of a horse that

all other horses have), by some efficient power, has come to inhere in matter. That form stamps the matter with the form of the horse, and makes that individual matter a real horse.

For Aristotle, that matter had no independent character, like the jagged or smooth atoms of Democritus, or the charged particles of modern physics. Aristotelian matter is simply a substrate -- a passive, undefined, unformed medium *into which* form is impressed. So, matter is pure potentiality and form is actuality.

But back to the truth that matter is not perceptible. Can you see a proton? Can you see an electron? A string? A photon? Can you see pure potentiality?

No.

None of them are perceptible. They are only *inferable*.

Matter is not an object of direct, everyday perception. It is only perceivable as an indirect inference from some chain of reasoning about *things*: objects of direct, everyday perception.

What about things? Are they not material? They may be material, but their materiality is not perceptible. Only their thingness is perceptible. And thingness has much more in common with form than with matter.

When you see an apple, you do not *reason* to knowing that an apple is an apple. You simply know that it is an apple. The same goes for every other thing. There may be a panoply of neurocognitive activity involved in processing that perception, but the perception is not itself cognition. In this reality, the cognition may even be necessary for the perception to exist -- they may be codependent, interrelated, isomorphic (the same thing, at bottom). But even to the extent that they are two sides of the same coin, cognition and perception are still *two* sides. Perception is not cognition, cognition is not perception.

Spirit, on the other hand, *is* perceptible. In fact, in truth, it is the *only* thing that is perceptible at all. Your soul, your experience of being you, is the only thing that you directly perceive. All the perceptions of every other thing that is not your soul are simply perceptions of the fundamental perception: I AM, which is your soul.

Finally, the spirit blows *where it wills*. Does matter blow where it will? Do protons blow where they **will**?

No.

They slavishly, mindlessly obey natural laws -- general principles that exist prior to and "around" such particles, rushing them on to a destiny that the proton knows nothing of, nor has any choice about.

Spirit, on the other hand, is Freedom. Spirit does what it *wills*; Spirit is Will, which simply means that it is Freedom. That Freedom also explains why its past and future, origin and destiny cannot be predicted by some logical-mathematical formula. Freedom *is* the Law, the Law unto Itself; it is *not* determined externally by some law. Freedom is the Lord, not the slave.

Matter is imperceptible, determinable, and unfree.

Spirit is perceptible, undetermined, and free.

Materialism, hence, necessarily posits that you do not really exist, and to the extent you have some meager husk of an epiphenomenal existence, you are totally unfree -- you are a slave to an impersonal, atomic fate just like any gust of cosmic dust.

Me neither.

May-be. Maybe I am nothing more than a brain in a vat. Maybe I am a computer simulation in some alien matrix. Maybe I am a figment of [Harvey](#) the Rabbit's imagination.

In fact, I find all those things far more likely than the idea that I am *not*: that the I that I perceive is an illusion, along with my free will and phenomenal experience.

Why then has a whole cult been built around materialism, and its scientific study is considered one of the higher professions in this world of ours, but the study of the spirit is considered crank voodoo? Why is this, especially when materialism itself has no meaningful *definition* of what matter *is*, while, if anything, the advocates of spirit can offer a provisional definition that is quite apparent on its face: the unlimited freedom of perception. Why is materialism considered sensible and acceptable, while spirit is considered some kind of primitive shamanism, when not a single person has ever seen matter, but every single moment of every single person's everyday experience testifies to spirit?

This is a strange situation indeed.

It is the same reason that we listen to tech billionaires' advice on subjects that they know nothing about, but are skeptical of the next-door neighbor who actually knows something. Power. Prestige. Money. Those who study and know about matter can offer something *tangible*, manipulable, concrete. They can make predictions. They can control nature. They can build machines that can *do* things for you -- that can make you products you want and make you money beyond the dreams of avarice.

But just because someone can *do* something, doesn't mean they know everything, or even know about the things that matter most. Just because somebody knows *how* to do something, doesn't mean that that person knows *what* anything *is*.

If I know *what* the existence and essence of a thing must be, I can't sell that. If I know *how* to manipulate something into something more useful, and, hence, salable, I don't have to know *what* either of those somethings *are*, but I will have a lot of money, and people like money.

You can keep it for the birds and bees: I want money
<https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=sZHCVyllnck>

A materialist will, with some justice, respond, “Hogwash! Hogwash all of it, it is modern materialist natural science that has produced all the wonders of knowledge - *pure* knowledge - that make up the real accomplishments of human science. It is the Baconian-Hobbesian materialist metaphysics that lit the way for not just technology and industry (great and significant though they are), but for our knowledge that the earth is not the center of the universe, our knowledge of the planets, our knowledge of the galaxy, of the age and extent of the universe, of the basic physical forces that govern everything around us, our knowledge that species evolved over billions of years, *everything* we know is attributable to materialism and *everything* that is rubbish is attributable to the shamanism of shadow forms.”

Is that a reasonably fair and vigorous counter-statement?

And that would be a devastating blow to me if I were a doctrinaire Platonist or paleo-Berkeleyan immaterialist, or even the reincarnation of some Aristotelian scholastic (although the latter possibility has occasionally dawned on me).

But that is not at all what I am, or what I am saying. I do not for a minute claim that we should ignore matter or the material causes, or blindly or foolishly ignore or disdain the self-evident chains of reasoning about material causes.

I am simply saying that we do not blindly or foolishly ignore or disdain the self-evident perception of the self, of free will, of form, of consciousness, of intersubjectivity, and even of teleology: the evident and obvious propensity of *things* to flourish *towards* certain ends.

For, might not there be some benefit to the exploration of the spirit, as there has been a bonanza of benefits from the exploration of matter? And if, as ages past believed, the spirit is in fact greater than matter, than the flesh, might not the knowledge of the spirit produce greater dividends?

It is not the scientific spirit for knowledge and truth that animates the drive against even acknowledging the reality of spirit: it is an animus against religion.

There is also the matter of the very different shape and nature that a knowledge of the spirit takes, as compared to a knowledge of matter.

Since matter is determined, its characteristics can be portrayed by mathematics, which is very impressive-looking.

All reports of spirit, thus far, take the character of impressions, intuitions, hunches, visions, experiences, paradoxes, self-causing causal loops of circularity. There are no impressive mathematical scribbles to go along with it. Nothing can be predicted, nothing controlled, nothing manipulated.

All the great formalist systems of Plato, Aristotle, and Aquinas either had nothing useful to say about the natural world or got everything totally wrong. All the modern forms of idealism and existentialism have languished in eccentricity or incomprehensibility.

Only mathematical materialist modern natural science sails along with numerical, calculative precision and empirical verifiability.

A new approach is needed.

I think much of the problem in exploring a true science of the spirit stems from the particular problem of the nature of spirit: that it is unbounded, undetermined, and free. It cannot be pinned down, like a butterfly stuck to the wall: it cannot be reduced to some string of equations, not verified by telescopic data or the fossil record. Yet your own inner life cannot be pinned to the wall, recorded as an equation or sifted from the fossil record. That does not make it any less real.

Modern materialist science proceeds by mathematics and sensory evidence. And these are objective.

The study of spirit, of forms, of will (what currently makes up the content of philosophy) is “subjective”. I say “subjective” because we have been so ruled by the objective sciences that subjectivity has become a kind of nothing word which means “Whatever you want,” when really, I have a hunch (there we go again) that subjectivity, the unbounded, is the determinant of the objective, the bounded.

The subjective character of the subject of a science of the spirit grows out of its intuitive character. You can try to use logic to organize the intuitions, but intuitions are much more slippery than mathematical relationships and sensory data. They are less self-evident, and different people disagree about precisely *what* is even self-evident in the first place.

As such, the search to form a meaningful content of knowledge about the subjective becomes a free-for-all of meandering aimlessly forever in the wilderness, while materialist objective science builds spaceships and nanotechnologies.

And the garbled pile of rubbish -- inconsistent, jargon-obsessed, and unproductive -- just makes the materialist accusation of the non-existence of the subjective (the perceiver’s experience) that much more appealing....and, seemingly, self-evident.

In order to do more and do better, to be more and be better, any spiritual science must impose upon itself the discipline that mathematics and empiricism forcibly impose on modern natural science.

The first critical problem is the structure of academia. Almost all meaningful -- “meaningful” -- philosophizing occurs within university departments. The dynamics of academic

life, the epitome of which is the quest for tenure, warp the process of searching for spiritual knowledge.

Because of limited funding, departments are structured around competitions. Competitions require the display of superiority. The display of superiority requires the rough and ready production of papers that must *say something* and say something *interesting*. Like cockfights and dog fights, the competitors must *assert* some position and show their superiority in defending it, and/or in showing unanswerable technical mastery in some particular area of research.

Such competitiveness may produce wonders in natural science *where mathematics and empirical evidence require that competitors actually be **right** when they display superiority.*

But there is no such external guarantor of rightness in the philosophical-intellectual scramble. Only “being interesting” or “being provocative” or “extreme technical mastery” or, in Europe, just “total impenetrable nonsense” matters. How else could Derrida and Foucault have become the Uday and Qusay of the academic world?

The mathematical bent and the physics-envy of the Anglo-Americans long ago led to the abandonment of the “big issues” in most Analytic Philosophy (dominant in Britain and America), in exchange for a more grammatically precise and “certain” philosophical enterprise. As such, philosophy has become ever more irrelevant in almost exact proportion to its greater precision.

Second, it is unlikely that dedicating the search for a spiritual science to university departments, even under the best circumstances, would produce much good anyway. How could we ever develop real insight into the nature of the human spirit when the vast population of the possessors of that spirit are totally out of the game?

In any event, putting hopes for such a philosophical civilization to the side for the moment, we return to the professionals.

The only way forward is to stop the practice of staking and defending “positions” like they were fortresses and trenches on a battlefield in a life and death struggle.

In a truly Criticalist spirit, all those who seek for some real knowledge of spirit, as spirit, must work in a collaborative fashion, not concerned with their own pet theories or positions, or at all concerned with what they *want* to be true, but most concerned with working out the logic of different possible positions.

Rather than training all their intellectual firepower on *maintaining and propounding* some position, most energy should go into identifying and evaluating all possible intuitions, along with casting a wide net in the world of experience, and then working out the argumentative structures that certain intuitions must fit into, or not fit into. In other words, instead of defending one particular position, researchers must work together to collaboratively evaluate the general structure of possible positions.

This is different from politics. In actual politics, there are definite and immediate issues and problems that must be judged and addressed. But, in the pure realm of a spiritual science, (that which seeks out the nature of the soul, the will, freedom, subjectivity, the universals, experience, perception), we need more collaboration and dispassionate enquiry, and less politics.

In other words, for philosophers to become spiritual scientists, they must stop seeking so much and so furiously to “win” -- they must be more ready to lose. Or, more exactly, in their purely speculative (as opposed to political) capacity they must (1) have real openness about the range of possibilities and (2) focus on the structure of all possible legitimate positions, rather than fighting for the primacy of one particular position.

For the Europeans, clarity would help.

For the Anglo-Americans, openness to subjects that cannot be enclosed in mathematical precision would help.

A brief overview of the subject.

Pre-philosophical civilization, and pre-legal civilization, made declarative statements. Hence, it projected the human self and everyday reality onto reality itself, producing pantheons of humanoid and animal gods.

Israel was a pioneer in the imperative statement, promulgating a code of commands around which society formed.

Greece was the pioneer of the interrogative, the question.

The Greeks did not simply live in reality, or try to obey commands, they questioned reality. And, to that extent, they took up the position of a god, for a god can question reality.

The fundamental questions are how, what, and why. (Who, when, and where are distributed across the first three, for who is simply a person who is a what, and when and where are simply time and space, and the how, what, and why of time and space are the real questions.)

That reality exists, most of us accede to.

How reality exists tells us the functioning and functional structure of reality. This is the task of materialist science.

What tells us the nature.

Why tells us the meaning.

So:

That	How	What	Why
Existence	Function	Nature (or form)	Meaning (or essence or soul)

One such bright spot in making some kind of appreciable progress in such a spiritual science is Chris Langan and his Cognitive-Theoretic Model of the Universe.

Langan has developed a form of mathematical metaphysics that uses computational logic. His account of reality integrates perception and cognition into a seamless whole in which a self-emergent and self-causing meta-language is the fundamental dynamic substance of our universe, and our everyday experience.

As I have clearly indicated, I think it is obvious that the perceptual element of reality has been woefully neglected by modern natural science, and calls for a significant redress.

Sadly, Langan's theory has not received the attention it deserves, one, because he is not part of the credentialed academic establishment, and, two, because he expresses himself in unnecessarily abstruse language.

Langan was also a bouncer at a bar for twenty years on Long Island, which makes him "my people".

I am Everyday People
Sly & the Family Stone

<https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=3JvkaUvB-ec>

Takin' It to the Streets
The Doobie Brothers

<https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=IqN7lq4NQB0>

Cheers

<https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=9V0zyRNbeHY>

In short, Langan proposes a metaphysical theory in that he asserts a fundamental substance.

Plato asserted that the fundamental substance was the Form of the Good. Aristotle believed in four causes: matter, efficiency, form, and telos (purpose), which boiled down to matter and form. The scholastics adopted the Platonic and Aristotelian substances and adapted them to Christian theology.

In the modern era, Bacon and Hobbes restored the atomic materialism of Democritus and Epicurus.

Descartes proposed that the atomic materialists were (essentially) right about matter, but that reality was composed of two distinct substances: mind (or thought) and body (or extension).

Spinoza proposed that substance is actually totally one, and that thought and body were merely two modes of that one substance.

Langan asserts that the one substance of reality is infocognition, which, through self-configuration, arises into a recursive process of self-causation in which perception and cognition form the two coils of a self-sustaining causal loop.

Hence, he provides a framework in which both spirit and matter play a role in the structure and dynamism of reality.....which is what our everyday experience already confirms.

In support of this conception, Langan articulates a computationally grounded metaphysics that deserves more attention.

His paper can be found here:

[http://infolab.ho.ua/Langan_CTMU_092902\(1\).pdf](http://infolab.ho.ua/Langan_CTMU_092902(1).pdf)

A brief point about the nature of secularism.

Secularism all the way down is atheism. Atheism all the way down is nihilism. Nihilism all the way down is Satanism.

If your idea of Secularism is that God must be scraped from everything outside someone's private home or outside someone's cranium, then you will, necessarily, be left with atheism. The assumptions of atheistical philosophy and the atheistical mind will become the foundation of your society. That kind of Secularism, which seeks to whitewash religion, to sanitize the public square and the public debate of all religion, will always be simple atheism, no matter what it may call itself.

If you try to thoroughly scrape the good, the true, the beautiful, and being from your atheism, you will end up with nihilism. If *every thing*, every universal, every form, every essence is seen as too "religious" to be tolerated, the only alternative is nihilism. The last stopgap of the anti-foundationalist is the fiat: to simply hang a principle or set of principles in the air. Kindness. Fairness. Anti-Cruelty. Reducing suffering. Solidarity, as Richard Rorty might say.

Well....why? Why not power? Strength? Survival of the fittest? The atomistic Ayn Rand Self? When you fail to have any meaningful foundation for your morality, and assert that your moral values require no foundation within nature itself, you will discover that either (1) you are really covertly using a string of ontological arguments to support your morality, but just disdain to admit to your ontological thinking, and/or (2) you will hollow out the logical core of your belief system (c.f. European democratic liberalism) such that you will be unable to resist logically based or authority-based, and hence confident, belief systems (c.f. Islam).

If you scrape the last gasp of conscience from your windblown nihilism, identifying all such "hung-in-the-air" values as, necessarily, unreal and unnecessary, then, deprived of all moral

principle, you will follow your urges, your desires, falling into every temptation that promises some physical or psychological pleasure: some respite from your self-imposed and self-created moral and spiritual emptiness. You will worship the experiential self, not the deep and abiding knowledge of your spirithood, but the transitory, fleeting semblance of “feeling all right” that keeps you from self-destruction: the last simulacrum of your person.

When you have perfected the worship of the self, you will have become a true Satanist.

I want to clarify a basic point about the nature of spirit, which clarifies why pantheism is wrong and monotheism is correct.

Pantheism is the belief that the Universe is God. Monotheism (Christianity, and by Christianity I mean the Gentile Church and the Jews) states that God is *not* the world and that the world is not God. God exists *separate* from the world. God is COMPLETELY distinct from the world.

Pantheism says that the world is God and God is the world. In other words, every human being, every tree, every blade of grass, every piece of dirt, every piece of cosmic dust, every form of consciousness, *everything* is *part* of God, and that God and the world are completely one thing. This is completely wrong.

Pantheism says that the world is a part of God, but that the whole reality of God is greater than the world. So, to put it glibly, the whole world is God’s pancreas and God is the whole body. This is completely wrong.

God and the world are totally separate. There is absolutely no common medium between them. They are not “made up” of the same “stuff.”

God is necessary and uncreated. Everything else that is not completely God is contingent (existing, but not necessary) and created (has an existential source other than itself).

God is Spirit.

Angels (both Holy Angels and foul demons) are spirits.

The human person is composed of flesh and spirit. In a state of perfection (i.e. not fallen), the human person’s spirit rules over his or her flesh completely. The state of fallenness (the state in which we briefly persist in this world) is the state of the flesh ruling over the spirit. The spirit is immortal. A flesh ruled by spirit is also immortal, since the flesh is ruled by an immortal reality. Death occurs because, in this world, flesh rules over spirit.

To put it succinctly and plainly: spirit is a universe.

Spirit is the “I” -- it is that which says “I AM”.

A universe is, as Chris Langan rightly states, a linguistic self-contained syndiffeonic relation.

Langan describes the matter in this way:

The concept of syndiffeonesis can be captured by asserting that the expression and/or existence of any difference relation entails a common medium and syntax, i.e. the rules of state and transformation characterizing the medium. It is from these rules that the relation derives its spatial and temporal characteristics as expressed within the medium. Thus, a syndiffeonic relation consists of a difference relation embedded in a relational medium whose distributed rules of structure and evolution support its existence.

Every syndiffeonic relation has synetic and diffeonic phases respectively exhibiting synesis and diffeonesis (sameness and difference, or distributivity and parametric locality), and displays two forms of containment, topological and descriptive. The medium is associated with the synetic phase, while the difference relation is associated with the diffeonic phase (because the rules of state and transformation of the medium are distributed over it, the medium is homogeneous, intrinsically possessing only relative extension by virtue of the difference relationships it contains). Because diffeonic relands [related entities - Author] are related to their common expressive medium and its distributive syntax in a way that combines aspects of union and intersection, the operation producing the medium from the relands is called unisection. The synetic medium represents diffeonic potential of which the difference relationship is an actualization.⁸¹

To put the matter in plain English, think about two things, say, an apple and a screwdriver. Those two things are *different things*. They are not one thing, but two things. But those two things are *relatable*. I can cut up an apple with a screwdriver (although it would be messy). I can stick a screwdriver into the apple. I can build a crate for apples with the screwdriver. I can sell apples and make enough money to buy a screwdriver. I can categorize the apple as organic and the screwdriver as mechanical, ascribing the origin of the apple *not* to human activity while ascribing the origin of the screwdriver to human activity. I can then relate the categories of organic and mechanical to one another through some other concept, or chain of concepts. I can say that the apple and the screwdriver are both materially made up of protons, neutrons, and electrons, and they both obey the same laws of physics and exist in the same space-time continuum. At higher levels of generality, I can talk about the apple and the screwdriver both being compositions (hylomorphisms in more technical language) of matter and form. I can talk about the apple and screwdriver *both* being existents, i.e. both having reality. I can talk about the apple and screwdriver both being subjects of perceptions, of *being* perceptions.

So, the apple is different from the screwdriver, but they are related by being *in the same universe*. Their difference from each other is not absolute, total, and unbridgeable. The apple and the screwdriver exist in the same *medium*, i.e. the Universe.

⁸¹ Langan, Chris: The Cognitive Theoretic Model of the Universe: A New Kind of Reality Theory, 17.

The difference between the two things is merely a *difference relation*, the relation being sustained by both things being in the same medium such that, at more basic levels of reality, they are the same thing. They *are* the same whole.

Being the same whole, the apple and the screwdriver are part of the same language, existentially speaking. Not just the words “apple” and “screwdriver”, but the *things* themselves are, essentially, words in the language that *is* the Universe, or Reality. The apple and screwdriver *themselves* are like the words in a novel, and the novel is Reality.

From this Langan extrapolates that God is the World. Langan, essentially, articulates that the Universe must be self-perceiving, and that a self-perceiving Cosmos would be, and is, God -- a self-contained, self-causing intelligent reality more similar to Yahweh (YHWH) than any impersonal Deistic God.

That is not right, and really misses the mark.

God is, in Himself, not within any kind of “*relationship*” to the world. The distinction between God and the world is not a “difference relation”. It is a **difference**, pure and simple.

Langan writes:

Diagram 6: This generic syndiffeonic diagram illustrates a simple fact: any difference relation requires a supporting medium with extension in the differential parameter. As illustrated, the medium distributes over both the linear relation “X differs from Y” and its relands (related entities) X and Y, bestowing on them a common “relatedness” property equating to “inclusion in the relational medium $X \sim Y$ ”, where $X \sim Y$ is the unisect or “syntactic product” of X and Y. **This common attribute invalidates any assertion to the effect that the difference between the relands is “absolute” or “irreducible”; the mere fact that the difference can be linguistically or geometrically expressed implies that it is only partial and that both relands are manifestations of one and the same ontological medium.** [Emphasis added] Where X and Y represent arbitrary parts or aspects of the difference relation called reality, this diagram graphically demonstrates that reality ultimately consists of a unitary ontological medium. Accordingly, reality theory must be a monic theory reducing reality to this medium (this idea is further developed in the Principle of Infocognitive Monism).

Note that any syntactic (as opposed to informational) inhomogeneity in the common medium is itself a difference relationship and thus invites a recreation of the diagram. Similarly, any inhomogeneity in the common medium illustrated by the recreated diagram would invite yet another recreation of the diagram, and so on. Any such syndiffeonic regress must terminate, for if it did not, there would be no stable syntax and

therefore no “relation” stable enough to be perceived or conceived. The informational stability of perceptual reality shows that reality has a stable syntax.⁸²

[See the text of Langan’s essay for the diagram.]

The truth is that, even though we talk about God, we **do not talk about God**. EVERYTHING that any human being has ever said and can ever say about God does not AT ALL, in ANY way, linguistically or geometrically express ANYTHING about God. God and the world, (even the world before the Fall) are NOT manifestations of one and the same ontological medium.

As St. Paul writes:

“What eye has not seen, and ear has not
heard,
and what has not entered the human heart,
what God has prepared for those who love
him,”
this God has revealed to us through the Spirit.

For the Spirit scrutinizes everything, even the depths of God. Among human beings, who knows what pertains to a person except the spirit of the person that is within? Similarly, no one knows what pertains to God except the Spirit of God. We have not received the spirit of the world but the Spirit that is from God, so that we may understand the things freely given us by God. And we speak about them not with words taught by human wisdom, but with words taught by the Spirit, describing spiritual realities in spiritual terms.

Now the natural person does not accept what pertains to the Spirit of God, for to him it is foolishness, and he cannot understand it, because it is judged spiritually. The spiritual person, however, can judge everything but is not subject to judgment by anyone.

For “who has known the mind of the Lord so as to counsel him?” But we have the mind of Christ.

(1 Corinthians 2:9-16)

There is absolutely no isomorphism, not at the deepest or most basic level, between anything that we say about God and the way God actually is.

Everything that we say about God is simply a signpost getting us *closer* to God, orienting us just a little more *towards* God.

The analogy of a blind man born blind helps. Such a man can have color described to him, but all the metaphors that he understands color through (such as sight and touch and taste and smell) do not *at all* make the blind man **see** color. The man can have a whole construct in his mind that analogizes from the four other senses *to* color, but the man still doesn’t have an iota of an actual perception of any color, at all.

⁸² Ibid.

The situation is actually worse for us, since at least the blind man analogizes from one sense perception to another, and all those sense perceptions are, indeed, in the same Universe.

But God is not the Universe, so when we make metaphors about God, they are not even metaphors, they are the echoes of metaphors. They are not even echoes.

A metaphor says what a thing is *like*.

Metaphors about God do **not** even say what God is like. They only, really, say what God is *not* like.

So, in all our talking about God, we do not gain positive insights into God's nature. We only become less wrong in how we think about Him.

In fact, that is not quite right, because to be "less wrong" would be to become "more right".

In talking about God, we learn to shut up. All our metaphors and talking about God should, ultimately, convince us of our finitude, creatureliness, and sinfulness, and make us silent in the face of the AWESOME reality of God.

All this talking is, really, at bottom and in the end, a therapy to learn that we should shut up, and then to actually shut up.

In talking less, and shutting up, we more and more remove that which blocks us from God. This life is a journey from distance from God towards a final state in which it would be possible for God to give Himself to us, or not. For everything in us that is not-God, blocks God, for God and not-God (or, more accurately, *against*-God) can never be in the same space. They can never be in the same room.

That is why there is a Heaven and a Hell.

God, who is Holiness, cannot be present to anything that is unholy.

This is the nature of God's Transcendence.

It is total, absolute, unadulterated, complete, unequivocal Transcendence from any other thing: from the world, from human beings, from angels, from *anything*.

In other words, God is a Universe, and the Cosmos is a Universe, but they are not the same Universe, and they share no common medium, no common language.

By the same token, each angel is a spirit, which simply means that each angel is a Universe.

As Langan notes, a Universe is a linguistic self-contained syndiffeonic relation. In other words, a Universe is a language, with a common medium.

To see this more clearly, remember that God is pure Spirit. He is not material in any way, and He is not temporal, in any way. The same is true for the angels, both holy and fallen.

In other words, to be spiritual is to live NOW and HERE. There is no distance in the Spirit (who is God) or the spiritual creation in which the angels reside (or the abyss in which the foul demons have been cast). We human beings lived yesterday, are living today, and will live tomorrow. My head is not my hand is not my foot; I am extended across space. Even my brain, through which my spirit penetrates my flesh, is extended in the space-time continuum. Pure spirits, like God and the angels, are *not* extended. There is *no* “here and there”, *no* past, present, or future.

A spirit is a SINGULAR UNITY, so singular and so one that the phrase “SINGULAR UNITY” is a bit of a joke, since it took two words and 13 letters to express the concept, with the phrase extending across physical space and taking time to parse and comprehend.

A spirit is AT ONCE, a total unity that is not properly understandable to us, and certainly not in this fallen world, deranged from God’s Will and Presence.

This material creation is a manifold -- it is many its and many bits: it is many things all knit together *into* a unity.

A spirit is ONE IT and ONE BIT -- it is *not* a manifold. It is a point.

The difference between God and the angels is that God is a multi-dimensional point. Metaphorically, He is a circle. The angels are, of themselves, 0-dimensional.

This whole thing is like drawing stick figures of God and the angels (in fact, it’s even more juvenile), but it, hopefully, gets the basic picture across.

And those points do *not* exist within a continuum. They have no inherent relation to one another.

Each angel is his own species, his own genus. Each angel is, quite literally, one of a kind.

In saying that they are all spirits, that is NOT like saying, “Oh, they’re part of the spirit species, like you have the lion species and the zebra species and the salamander species.” *No*.

In saying that they are spirits, you are more saying what they are not. You are saying that they are *not* like human beings or *anything* in this world. You are saying that they are singularities. Now, if you have multiple singularities, that does not make them all part of the same “species” of singularities.

Of course, some angels are greater than other angels, and God is the Supreme Spirit, entirely unique and transcendent over any other spirits, being their Creator, while He is Uncreated. The difference is a difference in the magnitude of the singularities. That is an echo of a metaphor, not even.

God is a language unto Himself, and each angel is his own language.

Now, God is ALL that IS. There *can be nothing* that is not God. So, when God creates, He is (in a way totally beyond any real imagining), naming Himself to all that is not Him, somehow bursting even beyond Himself, though He is ALL.

That creation is *not* an “emanation” “from” God. It is God bringing forth *out of nothing* (ex nihilo) a new and different Universe, a language different from Himself, with no medium uniting them.

Yet, since God is ALL that can be, each new spirit *must*, in some way quite beyond us, be a reflection of God, a mirror through which God can be seen.

It is the nature of spirits to reflect God.

And for a spirit to refuse to reflect God, through a misuse of “his” freedom, is for that spirit to shatter his own mirror, to, necessarily, be cast into darkness - the abyss. And to be conscious in an abyss devoid of God is the precise technical definition of Hell.

So, no two angels relate to each other in the way that we human beings do. We are all part of the same species; we are all sentient, we are all knit together in this material and temporal Cosmos.

Each angel is a Cosmos unto Himself: a Cosmos that is a singularity and a total unity, without space or time.

The angels have no common medium as a precondition of their existence, as we human beings do.

The only, and necessary, common medium of the angels is God Himself.

Those who, in their freedom (and freedom is the inner reality of spirit) *choose* God, live in eternal blessedness.

Those who refuse God live, through their own choice, in eternal misery, wretchedness: damnation.

The holy angels do not have a common interrelationship because they are members of the same species (biologically or logically), but because they all reflect God, who is Light. They are unified, and then ordered, by the object of their common worship: God.

*The Beatles
Come Together*

<https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=45cYwDMibGo>

The human race, on the other hand, is very different, and designed to be so by God, our Creator.

The pure spirits are eternal and entirely spiritual. Human beings are temporal and material, with spirit being compounded with our temporality and materiality. In creating the human race in the material Creation, God is naming Himself to the furthest extent possible.

From the absolute singular ONENESS and ETERNITY of the Godhead, God names Himself to the temporal manifold of the material Creation, composed of such a vast multiplicity of individual parts, individual things, individual realities, all interrelated, as Langan notes, by a common language in a common medium.

The human race is not a collection of singularities, a choir of singularities, like the holy angels (or a swarm or a bog of singularities, like the demons). The human race is a corporate whole, united according to the flesh.

This is manifestly true and obvious. No human being is a singularity, an emergence from no other human being. *Every* human being, with two exceptions, was, and will be, born from a mother and a father. Your very body -- your flesh -- is the result of one of your father's sperm penetrating one of your mother's ova. Your flesh is quite literally derived from, it proceeds from, your mother's flesh and your father's flesh. And you are linked to the rest of the human race through this great corporate whole of flesh, through space and time, back to Adam and Eve.

Eve was formed, by God, *from* Adam's flesh. Adam was her father, according to the flesh, and she had no mother, according to the flesh. Adam and Eve, like the whole human race, are one flesh.

Adam was formed directly by God from the earth, from matter, and made a human being, a man.

From Adam's flesh springs the entire human race, according to the flesh. The whole human race, according to the flesh, is one flesh in Adam.

That is why abortion and sodomy are such outrages, other than simply being opposed to the Will of God, disobedience being the core of all sin.

Abortion turns a mother into a murderer. Whereas the human flesh is meant to proceed from one's mother and father to oneself and then, through oneself, proceed *to* one's sons and/or daughters, the mother (and father) who participate(s) in an abortion murders her and his son or daughter, setting their own flesh against the flesh of the human race: they set their own flesh against itself.

In sodomy, the man or the woman, with another man or woman, engages in a sexual act that has no possibility of generating life. No fecundity of the flesh is possible. The whole purpose of sex is denied, and the self, and its pleasures, are preferred to God's Will and Plan. The gift of life was passed along to those people through the generation of the flesh, and now, those people choose to refuse to pass that gift of the generation of the flesh along, in turn, to future generations.

Now, to turn briefly from the purely theological to the social, the capitalist system, especially as practiced in America and Europe, makes it virtually impossible to live out the Will of God in regard to the generation of children. Children simply *cost* too much to provide for and to educate in the manner necessary to be full members of society. The very nature and dynamic of the capitalist system encourages having few -- or no - children, and practically mandates contraception. Only the rich can afford to have as many children as they like without inviting

poverty, and so few of the rich choose such a laborious life of raising many children, preferring an easier and more pleasing manner of living.

A society that truly shared its wealth, in generosity to each other and gratitude to God, would easily be able, through cooperation, to build all the productive capacity it desired, producing all that a fruitful and multiplying human race required.

It is the greed and lust for power of a few that makes living out God's Will an absurdity and contradiction for the many.

Needless to say, war of human being against human being is an abomination precisely because of this community (communion) of the flesh.

Each human spirit is created by God, and is unique, like the spirit of an angel. But a human person is not just his or her spirit, he or she is also his or her flesh. The flesh is not a mere appendage or vehicle, it is *integral* to the human person. A human person destroys himself or herself if he or she should try to live as an angel, in the sense of being pure spirit.

Through the corporate whole that is human flesh, each human person is united and bound to every other human person.

Even according to the flesh, the spirits of every human being are united across the medium of a common flesh, thus, even though spirits, we become ONE language, united across ONE medium: and, hence, ONE Universe, ONE Reality.

And the human race is set like God over the Material Creation, being given dominion over the Material Creation by God. Just as God is Lord of All, and directly Lord of the Heavens, so Man, Adam, was made Lord of the earth (Genesis 1:24-31).

Think of it this way.

The spirits are cameras. Each angel is an individual camera, with a certain perspective on God. Each angel can choose whether to point that camera towards God or away from God. But they are all different cameras, individual and not connected to any other camera in one big system. Any unity of the holy angels only comes from perceiving the same reality, God.

And the dominion of Hell is simply the fallen angels being cast into the chaos, the anarchy, of the abyss, where, naturally, the most powerful spirit, Lucifer/Satan/the Devil easily dominated all the other cast-out spirits. Each camera is turned to darkness and rendered unable to resist any spirit more powerful than it.

So, the holy angels are in a choir in Heaven, and the demons are in a prison gang, with a vicious and cruel hierarchy.

The human race is a camera system. Imagine a spherical array, the whole inner surface of which is covered with cameras, and fixtures within which those cameras are fitted. The array of fixtures is the flesh of the human race. It is one unity. Each camera is a unique perspective. *But*

each camera is *designed* to be fitted into the one unity, into the unity of fixtures. Each person's spirit is meant to be part of a perceptual whole.

He who, through any sin, such as pride, anger, greed, or lust, detaches his spirit and flesh from the array, destroys himself.

In other words, we are all each other.

We are all different, for we are all different spirits. You are not me, and I am not you.

But, we all have the same flesh, and are united according to the flesh. And since each of our human persons is one according to the flesh, and since the human person is a composite unity of the spirit and the flesh together, the whole human race is a corporate unity, inextricably and ineradicably bound together, with a common nature, a common good, and a common destiny.

So, in the end, you are me, and I am you.

As

Stevie Wonder

<https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=KWhMyOs0pCQ>

Human beings who embrace this truth, through embracing the human race, embrace their own humanity, and embrace themselves.

Human beings who deny this truth, through preferring themselves to the human race, quite literally reject their own humanity, and lose themselves, destroying themselves.

Shed a Little Light

James Taylor

<https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=0pAJOFw3fiw>

Human beings, created as a corporate flesh, a corporate whole, are meant to view God *as one*, with one perspective.

But, (really *and*), that one perspective is multi-dimensional, a perfect composition of the many perspectives of the many human beings.

AND, *that* is precisely what makes the human race made “in the Image of God”. For, God is multi-dimensional, and the human race is multi-dimensional.

An angel can only have being through reflecting the multi-dimensionality of God. If an angel refuses to reflect God (obey God), “he” is cast out into the chaos and anarchy of the abyss.

The human race does not simply reflect the multi-dimensionality of God. The human race, if and when it is obedient to God, *becomes* identified with and totally intimate with and totally in communion with the multi-dimensionality of God.

So, the human race, in this material creation over which it is Lord, while created one Universe, separate from the Universe that is God, is raised up to total communion with God.

What once had no common medium, gains a common medium. And what were once two languages *totally* separate from one another become *one* language, one intimate reality.

Sin complicates this, and is, ultimately, the basis for the total communion: the eschatological communion at the end of time.

Sin is like a bomb blowing up the array of cameras.

What was once a distinct, corporate Universe, of the human race in lordship over the Cosmos, through sin, (and, specifically, the sin of Adam (and Eve), which was transmitted through the flesh to all human generations), becomes deranged from the God that had created and sustained it.

Thus, the Cosmos itself is flung into the abyss, cast out from God's presence.

Now, since the sin of Adam (and Eve) was not made in perfect knowledge, it is *forgivable*. (Unlike the sin of Satan and his demons, which *was* made in perfect knowledge, and, hence, can never be forgiven.) Not automatically excused, but capable of being forgiven.

Cast out from God's presence into the abyss, the Cosmos -- spiritually, and, hence, really -- comes under the power of the most powerful Universe that is not God --- Satan.

So, the fallenness of the world is, quite literally, the dominion of Satan over Adam. And, since Adam retains dominion of the Cosmos, Satan becomes Lord of the Cosmos, Lord of the earth.

Satan becomes the God of this world.

Through Christ, God incarnates *into* this world, and in His Crucifixion, Resurrection, and Ascension, redeems this world and restores it to intimacy with God through subjecting the world to *His* (Christ's) Lordship.

The intimacy with God that the world lost through the sin of Adam is regained through the atonement of Christ (Romans 5).

Whereas before Adam was Lord of the earth, now Christ Jesus becomes the Lord of Heaven and earth (Matthew 28:18).

By becoming man, Christ Jesus replaces Adam as the progenitor of the human race, and thus Jesus' Father, God, becomes, directly, the Father of the human race.

So, now, new creations in Christ, Christians, become one flesh, not in Adam, but (even if in Adam) in Christ. That is why the Church is the Body of Christ: the Flesh of Christ.

Christ's communion of His flesh with our corrupted flesh restores the communion of the flesh ("the camera array") that was destroyed through the sin of Adam.

And, in doing so, Christ not only restores the flesh, and spirit, of the human race, but completely identifies the human race with God the Father, just as Christ, who is the Son, is perfectly identified with God the Father.

And in accomplishing that perfect identification of the Divine with the Human, Christ Jesus acts as Mediator between God and Man. Jesus Himself becomes the Medium over which the Medium of God's Reality and the Medium of Man's Reality interpenetrate in a total, complete, perfect communion -- a communion under the Lordship of Christ, which means that this intimate communion becomes a communion of perfect love.

Through that perfect identification with Christ, each Christian gains the Spirit of Christ. What was once simply a spirit breathed into flesh (Genesis 2:7), becomes a new Spirit in Christ, which means that that Christian's spirit is now completely identified with, penetrated by, in communion with the Spirit of Christ. In a real but mysterious way, the Christian's spirit *is* the Spirit of Christ. And the Spirit of Christ is the Spirit of God. The Christian -- and the whole Flesh of Christ -- receives, in its corporate wholeness, the Spirit of God as a perfect Gift from God, the perfect Giver. In receiving this gift of God (through Christ), the Flesh of Christ becomes an adopted son of God, and each Christian an adopted son of God, as the Son is the natural and begotten Son of God. As St. Paul writes, "If the Spirit of the one who raised Jesus from the dead dwells in you, the one who raised Christ from the dead will give life to your mortal bodies also, through his Spirit that dwells in you" (Romans 8:11).

So, Langan offers an interesting (and I think correct) way of understanding *what a Universe is*. A Universe is a self-contained, self-manifesting language: a reality.

Where Langan goes wrong is in assuming that *this* world, *this* reality, is the only possible or existent reality, and where he goes especially wrong is in assuming that this world (especially in its fallen state) is God.

Where Langan intersects with the truth is in a few (important, critical) points. First, through Christ's Resurrection (which, existentially, is ongoing and will only culminate at the end of the world, and then, totally and finally, at the end of time), the world is already, in a mystical way, identified and in communion with God. So, in some very qualified sense, this Universe is God -- but not in the pantheistic or even panentheistic sense, but in the sense that God-as-God is

self-fulfilling as God-in-All. Not that the All is part of God (from all eternity), but, rather, that God is now eternally suffusing all Creation so that God can be All in All (1 Corinthians 15:28).

What were once incompatible languages without a common medium gain a common medium: the One True, Transcendent God. God who is Transcendence becomes immanent in the realities of other spirits: other universes.

Second, it is not wrong, in some important way, to think of the Universe as God. The question is....which God?

For the Universe exhibits this Godhood. Unfortunately, to the extent that it is not the emerging Christogenesis of the Risen Christ, that God is Satan, the Ruler of the world.

And the Lord of the earth, the human race, in acting as a God, is simply a subordinate God to its true God, Satan.

Think of it this way.

This Material Cosmos *is* a Langanian Universe, of itself, created by another Langanian Universe, God -- who is infinitely transcendent in *His* language.

But, through sin, the mystery of iniquity, our Universe is caught between the saving power of Christ, the mediator between this Universe (the human race) and the transcendent Universe, God, on the one hand, and the inverted, cast-out Universe that is Satan (a spiritual creation, and not the creator, but still the most powerful spirit, other than God Himself), on the other.

One trouble is that none of this is determinable without revelation.

But that is only a trouble if, through some arrogance or hardness of heart, (which are the same thing, ultimately), you refuse to give an ear to revelation.

From purely *within* human knowledge, it would be quite literally impossible to realize that *this* reality is not all reality (or, more properly, realities), or that God -- the True God -- is a separate and transcendent Reality.

The beginning of that revelation is a kind of 1 or 0. A yes or no. Good or evil? Is the evil in this world endemic to reality, as such (reality defined as the creator of all other realities: God), or, rather, is the evil in this world a plague, a cancer, something *separate* and itself a negative deficiency rather than a positive efficiency?

Consider: The Bible strongly indicates that the multiple-reality proposition outlined above is, in fact, correct.

Genesis 1:1-2 states, "In the beginning, when God created the heavens and the earth, the earth was a formless wasteland, and darkness covered the abyss, while a mighty wind swept over the waters."

If Langan's pantheism (or panentheism) were correct, the passage would read something more like this, "In the beginning, when God formed the heavens and the earth, and was Himself formed by the heavens and the earth, the earth had no structure, but was formless and unbounded. This unboundedness was the abyss, and God emerged like a mighty wind from the abyss, rising above it and subduing it, so that all was God and God was all."

Yet that is *not* what Genesis indicates. Genesis indicates that God "was" (I put quotes there because "was" assumes temporality, which does not attach to God) external and separate from both the earth *and* the heavens. God is not coextensive with the world: he *created* the world. Langan's idea of God is a table that builds itself - a self-configuring, self-processing kind of nano-mechanical goo that, from no form, emerges into a form, say, a table. The Bible's idea of God is very clearly: God is the carpenter (pun intended), and the world is the table. This is verified by Jesus, in fact, being a carpenter, and, (pun intended), his adoptive father, Joseph, being a carpenter, so that Jesus is the son of a carpenter (Joseph) *and* the Son of a Carpenter (God). God is not the world, just as the carpenter is not the table.

Now, the table's whole essence, existence, nature, form, meaning, and purpose are *derived* from the carpenter. The carpenter is the efficient cause of the table, and if the carpenter is not just a workman, but the inventor of the table, then the carpenter also imparts the formal and final cause --- the carpenter determines the table's shape and what the table is for. (That, incidentally, is why *God*, not Man, determines what is moral and what is not moral.)

Note that Genesis 1:1-2 *clearly* indicates that God is *not* the heavens and the earth. The earth is one thing (a formless wasteland) and God is another (the Mighty Wind, the Holy Spirit). The formless wasteland is closely identified with the abyss. The abyss was the deeps of the waters, and, in primeval Canaanite cosmogony, God creates the world through pushing the waters aside, so that dry land can emerge and appear.

The abyss is that which is not God. It is a formless chaos. The distinction between the earth (the formless wasteland) and the abyss proper is that the abyss *cannot* become infused with God, and thus created and conserved and sanctified. The abyss is that which is beyond God. And since God is the only reality, total reality, complete reality without which there is no reality, the abyss is, in every way imaginable and not imaginable, un-real. For a conscious being to inhabit such an unreality, and, hence, to be trapped in the total negation of itself, himself, or herself, is the precise technical definition of Hell.

"Darkness cover[ing] the abyss" indicates that Satan and the unholy angels were cast into the abyss.

The total fundamental "realities" (for not-God is not-reality) are God and not-God. There are two kinds of not-God: (1) that which *may* become present to God and (2) that which will **never** become present to God. The first kind of not-God is the earth as formless wasteland, while the second kind of not-God is the abyss.

Put in inadequate traditional philosophical terms, God is Form and not-God is formlessness. The earth is a formlessness that can be shaped by God. The abyss is a formlessness that cannot be shaped by God. This is because of the nature of God. God is

Holiness; He is All-Righteousness. God cannot be present to Unholiness. Period. Holiness and Unholiness are oil and water. They don't mix. The existential kicker is that God is also Reality. So Reality is Holiness. Anything unholy automatically is expelled into unreality. Hence, when the angel Samael (what became Satan) *chose* unholiness (chose himself over God), he had to be cast out into the abyss, into unreality. And, as Samael/Satan made his choice in perfect knowledge, there is no possibility of forgiveness, so Satan's being cast out is permanent. His condition of being in Hell is permanent.

(Strictly speaking, his condition of being cast out from God's presence is permanent. The distinction is that Satan exists as Lord of this world, having accomplished the fall of Adam and Eve. The terrestrial creation, being created with only a partial view of God, so to speak (created in imperfect knowledge of God), allowed Satan to enter the earth, the Primordial Paradise, to tempt Eve and Adam. Satan would not be able to similarly enter Heaven, because in Heaven the knowledge of God pervades everything. So, until the end of the world and the end of time, Satan is able to escape the final starvation of Hell by existing as Lord and God of *this* world, feeding on the souls of those he captures through successfully tempting them to sin.)

Hell becomes Hell through there being conscious spirits (angelic and human) in the abyss, inexorably and ineradicably deprived of God's presence.

Heaven is Heaven because it is totally and unalterably present to God, filled with God's presence. God's presence is Light. That is why St. John writes, "Now this is the message that we have heard from him and proclaim to you: God is light, and in him there is no darkness at all" (1 John 1:5).

God creates through infusing his Form into formlessness.

The process of creation is *NOT* that the formlessness self-configures itself into form.

Rather, Form (the form of God), *from the outside* structures the formlessness so that it possesses form.

That is why Genesis 1:1-2 explicitly distinguishes God from the formless wasteland. They are not each other, not even each other in different forms: they are totally separate. God is the efficient, formal, and final cause of the world. But God is *not* the material cause of the world. The most basic matter of the world is formlessness.

God is the carpenter: He shapes the formlessness (efficient cause), imparts the structure of the formlessness (formal cause), and designates the meaning of the creation (final cause). But the matter *worked upon and worked up* by God is *not* God Himself. **That** is the critical difference between monotheism and all forms of pantheism.

This actually corresponds to Langan's thesis that the primordial substance of our reality is unbound telesis (UBT), which is pre-infocognitive potential, or as Langan puts it, "unlimited ontological potential". Such "unlimited ontological potential" is nothing other than Freedom. Remember, the essence of Spirit is Freedom. In other words, Langan's Universe is a spirit, whose essence is unbound telesis, or Freedom.

Formlessness is UBT, it is such “unlimited ontological potential”. But such potential has two meanings -- positive and negative, sufficient and insufficient.

There is the absolute potential that is totally actualized -- that is the unlimited ontological potential of God, which is totally actualized. Hence, God is sufficient.

And then there is the totally *un*-actualized potential, which is the formlessness. Hence, the earth, absent God, is insufficient.

Rather than the UBT forming itself, it is formed *from the outside* by the One Reality, God.

I suspect that this is why the human race, and the material creation of which the human race is Lord, is/was destined to be identified with God. The formlessness of the earth and the Form of God both share the character of unlimited ontological potential, in their essences (as such).

I suspect that the angels are, essentially, mirrors that only reflect God’s Light. No matter how great the mirror may be, no matter how polished, it still can only bounce God back to Himself.

In the Spirit (God) creating spirits, the Light created mirrors that could reflect His Light, and, hence, become lights.

But, in creating beings that were an organic compound of spirit and matter, “human beings”, God created creatures that could *become* His Light, and, hence, become the Light that created them. The fullness of God’s unlimited ontological potential could *fully* become the unlimited ontological potential of the formlessness, rather than simply have His unlimited ontological potential reflected back to Him.

Hence, Genesis 1:3 states, “Then God said, ‘Let there be light,’ and there was light.” God is Light, and it is through infusing and suffusing His Light into the formlessness as light that God makes his first, and total, creative action. Creation is God’s naming of Himself to what is not Himself. Creation is God forming the formless with His Form.

We can also see that the infusion and suffusion of Light is the complete creative act, first and last. Revelation 21:22 - 22:5 clearly indicates this:

I saw no temple in the city, for its temple is the Lord God almighty and the Lamb. The city had no need of sun or moon to shine on it, for the glory of God gave it light, and its lamp was the Lamb. The nations will walk by its light, and to it the kings of the earth will bring their treasure. During the day its gates will never be shut, and there will be no night there. The treasure and wealth of the nations will be brought there, but nothing unclean will enter it, nor any[one] who does abominable things or tells lies. Only those will enter whose names are written in the Lamb’s book of life.

Then the angel showed me the river of life-giving water, sparkling like crystal, flowing from the throne of God and of the Lamb down the middle of its street. On either side of the river grew the tree of life that produces fruit twelve times a year, once each month; the leaves of the trees serve as medicine for the nations. Nothing accursed will be found there anymore. The throne of God and of the Lamb will be in it, and his servants will worship him. They will look upon his face, and his name will be on their foreheads. Night will be no more, nor will they need light from lamp or sun, for the Lord God shall give them light, and they shall reign forever and ever.

Thus concludes the vision of the end of Creation, the final returning of God's Creation to the bosom of God's all-sustaining Love.

"The Lord God shall give them light." God is Light, so God's creation and redemption of the world is God *giving Himself to the world, to the elect.*

I think that the self-configuring and self-processing nature of this reality that Langan identifies is actually Teilhard de Chardin's Christogenesis, teleologically emerging towards the Omega Point, which is the fulfillment of the Risen Christ as Lord of the Universe. At that point, the Risen Christ will, at the end of time, be Lord of the earth, (not just implicitly, but explicitly), just as Adam was Lord of the earth at the beginning of time.

This is actually natural and inevitable, for if human beings are the Flesh of Christ and the fallen creation is to be sanctified by the Flesh of Christ, then the total and complete ordering of the world to and towards Christ (Christogenesis) would be seen (viewed from within the context of reality, without recourse to the external view that Scriptural Revelation provides) as a self-configuring and self-processing reality. But the reality that provides the possibility of self-configuration and self-processing is Christ Himself: the reality of God's Presence (His Reality) in the formlessness (the unlimited ontological potential) of this world. In other words, Christ is the Form around which and by which and through which the formlessness of *this* fallen world is re-formed, just as the formlessness was originally formed by God prior to the Fall.

Interestingly, Langan contributes the possibility of cross-temporal actions (time travel), indicating the likelihood, (from a Christian perspective), that the Risen Christ, fulfilled at the end of time, is indeed drawing all the world and the human race to Himself. In other words, the Risen Christ is acting from the future, reaching into the past, and, indeed, reaching back to the very first instant of this fallen world. Thus, as God created the world before the Fall, Christ redeems the world after the Fall, not just in a localized way at one point in history, but *because* of a local action at one point in history, redeems this fallen world from its first instant to its last instant.

We can also connect the definition of God given earlier in this book ("logical causal loop") with the definition given by Langan for a Universe: a self-contained syndiffeonic relation, or a self-configuring, self-processing language (which is a logical causal loop, only extended across space and time: immanentized and materialized). Monotheism imparts the insight that the logical causal loop that is God is not a process, since He does not have parts. Only something

that has matter has parts. God is Spirit, so He does not have parts, and is totally one. The Trinity is **NOT** a doctrine that states that God is One in Three Parts; rather, it is God in three *dimensions*: Just as a circle has three dimensions but is still totally one, so too with God. God does not self-configure or self-process, for that would require space, time, and matter: parts -- parts of space, parts of time, parts of matter. God IS. God IS, through Himself. God self-manifests, but His Self-Manifestation does not occur across space, through time, and across matter. Rather, His Self-Manifestation is totally HERE and NOW and ONE. God is not a process of perfection, of perfecting Himself. He is absolute, total, universal, multi-dimensional PERFECTION.

Angels are not multi-dimensional. Angels were created one-dimensional. An angel is, metaphorically speaking, a point, whereas God is a circle. If the point relates to the circle, it draws a line from itself to the circle, and that imputes multi-dimensionality to the angel: that is how an angel reflects the Light of God and thus becomes enlightened, and, by inhering in the Light that is God, gains its beatitude.

If an angel refuses to relate to the Circle, to God, then the angel is cast out, becoming a point without any relation to the circle, and thereby rendered permanently one-dimensional (or maybe, more accurately, zero-dimensional).

Human beings, male and female, on the other hand, are made in the image of God. That means that the human race is a logical causal loop, and each human person is a logical causal loop bound up in the overall logical causal loop. Sharing the nature of God, in image and not full reality, the human race, and individual human persons within it, have the capability to be raised to the deepest intimacy with God, sharing a blessedness of Divinity that fully partakes of the Deity of God, without complete existential, definitional identification with the Father.

Langan states:

According to the Telic Principle, which states that the universe must provide itself with the means to do this, it must make and realize its own “choice to exist”; by reason of its absolute priority, this act of choice is identical to that which is chosen, i.e. the universe itself, and thus reflexive. I.e., “existence is everywhere the choice to exist.” (42)

The Telic Principle can be regarded as the primary component of SCSPL syntax...the spatiotemporally distributed selfselective “choice to exist” coinciding with MU. (44)

Langan argues that the Telic Principle is what allows the Universe (the Cosmos) to bring itself into existence.

That which is necessary and, hence, self-causing is God.

That which is contingent and, hence, caused by another is not-God, typically referred to (when conscious) as a creature.

If the Cosmos -- if the formlessness (unlimited ontological potential) of this Universe, of the physical world, the material world, etc. -- is necessary and self-causing, then the Cosmos is God.

This is pantheism. It is not monotheism. It is not compatible with Christianity.

Christianity fundamentally states that only God (YHWH) is necessary and self-causing. The world (both in its holy and fallen state) is contingent and caused by either God, or, to the extent it is fallen and evil, by the Devil.

There is no (strictly) logical way to determine whether God is God *or* the Cosmos is God.

But, we can determine what *kind* of God the "Cosmos is God" belief entails. Since evil exists in this world, only two options are available to pantheism (or its sister, panentheism): (1) God is evil or (2) God is powerless to totally eliminate evil. So, either God is evil or not omnipotent.

This requires that God is morally finite, either unable or unwilling to conquer evil.

True monotheism escapes from this troubling pantheism by attributing all evil existing in the world to the fallenness of the world. Evil exists in the world because it is deranged and distanced from the True God, the Total Good. In such a state of the world at a distance from God, Satan holds sway. Christ invades *this* world, and the whole of Cosmic history is the struggle between Christ and Satan for supremacy over this world. The fulfillment of Cosmic history is the total triumph of Christ over Satan, and Christ's returning of this world to the Father, so that it can be re-created in the Father's Goodness, perfect and totally free from evil.

This indicates that God is, in fact, morally infinite, totally able and totally willing to conquer evil: this course of Cosmic history (which is a moment compared to eternity) is God's vanquishing evil.

Because of the intrinsic nature of sin, that conquest of evil is not painless -- far from it -- but the evil itself will be totally defeated and totally destroyed.

A conjecture: Matter is energy. By that, I do not mean simply what is well-known, that matter and energy are inter-convertible. I mean, rather, that matter, as such, *is* simply energy. And by energy I mean pure potential, or unlimited ontological potential: i.e. potential.

I strongly suspect that like an infinite stack of Russian dolls, material scientists will always find *another* and *yet another* sub-sub-sub-sub-atomic particle (and set of particles) beneath whatever the last generation of scientists considered the bedrock set of particles.

I think this because of the fundamental nature of being and nothingness -- of Form and formlessness.

No *thing* can *be* a particle, or even a set of particles. A thing *can* inhere *in* a configuration of particles, and its motion can be understood to be a dynamism of that

configuration of particles: that is, from one instant to the next, within the stream of time, one configuration of particles can be succeeded by another configuration of particles.

But that is merely the how of a thing: its function. It is not the what or the why of a *thing*. An apple as a *thing*, its phenomenal character, is its color - maybe red; its smoothness or coarseness; its taste and the texture of its tissue and juice; the smell of its parts and the whole; and even the sounds that it can make as it interacts with other things.

All these things - these phenomenal attributes - *inhere* in mathematical relationships that can be understood as particles. Red inheres in a certain mathematical property of the mathematical function we understand as a "photon". Its smoothness or coarseness inheres in the mathematical relationships we understand as the electron structure of its surface.

But the *experience* of red or smooth or coarse or sweet are not *themselves* mathematical relationships. Within this world they may be determined by mathematical relationships, insofar as they inhere within a universal matrix of mathematical relationships, i.e. the intersubjectivity of human persons and the self-subjectivity of the human person to himself is apparently constrained by the imperatives and contingencies of mathematical logic, expressed in the laws of physics, as presently understood.

But *what* red or coarse or smooth or sweet *are*, much less *why* they are, stands totally apart from whatever web of mathematical relationships they may find themselves enmeshed within. To think that red and coarse and smooth and sweet -- much less justice and beauty and goodness and love -- *are* a web of mathematical relationships would be to think that a fly *is* a spider's web, simply because the fly was inextricably caught within the web and could not break free.

Modern natural science dismisses such phenomena -- which make up the whole of our everyday experience, otherwise known as our "lives" and our "selves" -- as merely epiphenomena, as illusions projected by the mind upon the "real world" (the Kantian noumenal world - the world as it "really" is).

In other words, the materialists claim, the mind simply "contains" such qualia (things, impressions, perceptions, perspectives), and projects them upon the world, like a film projector projecting images upon a blank canvas.

That then leads to: what is the mind?

Again, modern natural science, and especially its most dedicated atheistical corps, loudly declaims: The mind is merely matter in motion, like everything else.

Yet, if the mind is really nothing more than mathematical relationships (much less "bits" or "specks" of some fundamental dirt), that would mean that red and coarse and sweet and justice and goodness and love are merely mathematical relationships. Yet that would mean that "red" *is* nothing more than numbers, or a function of numbers, or a function of logic, perhaps, such that red would somehow *be* a syllogism of statements.

Yet red is not a number, nor a function of numbers, nor a string of statements. Red is red.

And if red is red, it stands to reason that all the qualia are real -- all the phenomena of everyday existence, the sights and sounds and tastes and feels and smells and the emotions and moods and aesthetic insights and moral convictions of the human person -- of the phenomenon

of the human person *are real*. They are not mere epiphenomena. They are not illusions. How could they be?

And, at last, the mind is real. That which perceives perceptions is real. The mind is the spirit, and the spirit is real, at last.

The mind may inhere in the brain, and our experience of that mind may be lost if the brain should be lost, or its material structure deranged. But the mind *is* no more the brain than the red of the apple *is* the particles that make up the apple's flesh.

If that is so, (and it is), then *all* structure -- *all* form -- is not the result of the whirl and concatenation of tiny specks and bits, it is not some foam upon a vast ocean of mathematical functions. Structure *is* structure; form *is* form.

And if that is so, (and it is), then *this* physical world (and, in some form, the next), is simply a world in which form *inheres* in matter. Matter is not form, and form is not matter. Form is the what, and, in the end, the why. Matter is the that and the how. The what and the why inhere in the how and the that. In other words, the essence and end (purpose) of a *thing* inheres in the function and existence of that thing: but the thing is a multi-scalar, vectorial, reality. Indeed, as Aristotle knew, a thing has multiple causes, which he characterized as the material, efficient, formal, and final. A thing is *not* reducible merely to the material cause.

Matter, then, is the substrate of form. Matter is what form *inheres* within, and, in *this* world, it is what constrains and determines form.

If that is so, (and it is), then matter does not, in itself or of itself or through itself, have any properties. It does not, itself, possess structure or form, of any sort. It does not even, itself, possess the mathematical forms, such as number and function. Matter is formless. Matter is *formless*. Only form itself *informs* matter, thus making it *something*.

If matter is totally formless, totally structureless, then it is simply potential. It is simply potentiality without any jot of actuality.

You can understand that pure potentiality as energy, but, really, it is deeper than energy, for energy can have certain mathematical (formal) properties. The true "matter" -- the true substrate of form -- has *no* properties -- it is, indeed, unlimited ontological potential: it is pure potential: it is potentiality.

Whereas form is pure actuality.

Form is the agent, matter the patient. The agency of actuality informs, and then inheres within, the patiency of potentiality.

Which means that, for all his factual and empirical blunders, Aristotle's fundamental conception of reality was right.

If he was not right in his understanding of the nature of spirit, the source of perceptions, and blundered in applying his logical schemas to the natural world, without feeling the need for

empirical verification, he was at least certainly right in understanding that the world (the material Cosmos) is vectorial -- it is an intersection of multiple fundamental causes, and not simply matter in motion.

So, we might say with T.S. Eliot in his *Little Gidding*:

We shall not cease from exploration
And the end of all our exploring
Will be to arrive where we started
And know the place for the first time.

Through the unknown, unremembered gate
When the last of earth left to discover
Is that which was the beginning;
At the source of the longest river
The voice of the hidden waterfall
And the children in the apple-tree

Not known, because not looked for
But heard, half-heard, in the stillness
Between two waves of the sea.
Quick now, here, now, always--
A condition of complete simplicity
(Costing not less than everything)
And all shall be well and
All manner of thing shall be well
When the tongues of flames are in-folded
Into the crowned knot of fire
And the fire and the rose are one.

We can then reflect that Form is Being and the formless is nothingness. This is a simple self-evident reality. Form is that which *is*. Nothingness (no-thing-ness) is that which *is not*.

Being is. Not-Being is not. Not-Being is the negation of Being.

We can observe that there are two kinds of nothingness -- that which can become something, and that which cannot become something. In other words, there is nothingness that can become being (that is, called forth into being), and that which cannot.

Genesis 1:1-2 clearly articulates the two kinds of nothingness: the formlessness and the abyss. The mere formlessness (the formless wasteland) is the potentiality that can become informed (shaped, molded, made, created) with actuality and thus *become* being. The abyss is that which *cannot* be created, cannot be molded by actuality and become being.

Being is pure Actuality, pure Act.

Becoming is the process by which nothingness changes into Being. Becoming is a distinctly temporal notion, since any process requires the succession of states, and the numeration of such succession is the definition of time, for time is the numeration of motion, as Aristotle rightly indicates.

Nothingness can either become Being through the agency of actuality, or it cannot. That which has the possibility of becoming Being (Actuality) is potentiality. For potentiality is nothing other than the possibility of actuality.

That which *cannot* become actuality is not potentiality, for it is impossible for it to become actuality. An apt name for such nothingness is, indeed, the abyss. And the abyss is nothing other than the bottomless pit, Abaddon.

Potentiality is nothingness defined by Being. It is nothingness that is oriented towards Being.

Abaddon is nothingness defined by itself. It is nothingness that is oriented towards nothingness.

Potentiality has a light at the end of the tunnel: Actuality.

Abaddon has no light anywhere, but only darkness, and there is no end of that darkness. Hence, the darkness of Abaddon, the absence of light, is bottomless. It is a forever falling into nothingness. For nothingness is not stable. It shall either ascend to actuality and cease being nothingness, or it shall fail to ascend to actuality and remain forever nothingness.

We can note that mere perception (mere consciousness) does not guarantee Being. Perception is merely sight. Perception is an orientation. And perception can be oriented towards Being or nothingness.

As the Scholastics knew full well, the essence of Being is its existence, and its existence is its essence. For Being itself (which is what we talk about when we say 'God'), there is no separation (no distance) between why and what Being is and how and that Being is. *What* Being is is also precisely *how* Being is. The *why* of Being is the same as the *that* of Being. In God, there is a perfect identity of End, Essence, and Existence. (The "end" in philosophical parlance is the purpose of a thing. And, to clarify, Being is not "a" thing; Being is Thingness.) To exist through your own essence is to be necessary and self-causing. None of you reading this is necessary or self-causing because none of you (or me) exist through your own essences. Our essences exist because of prior causes, which none of us ourselves caused. Self-causation and self-justification are the same thing, and that self-existence is the essence of Godhood.

All beings that exist through God are creatures; the essence of their existence is God-existence, not self-existence. We all exist because of and for God. None of us exists because of ourselves, nor do any of us exist merely for ourselves. We are not self-causing. Self-creation is a contradiction in terms. No being can create itself, for that would require that the being called itself forth from nothingness. But if the being was nothing, how could that being call itself forth

from nothingness when it did not exist in the first place? Only the Uncreated can be self-causing.

That also shows why our culture, built upon the concept of self-creation, is inherently ludicrous and ill-conceived.

We can also reflect on the close associations between, on the one hand, existence and function, and, on the other, essence and purpose (end, or telos). The essence of an essence is its purpose: *why* it is. So we can speak of a being's (or Being's) essential purpose. The existence of an existence is its function: *how* it is, how it proceeds.

As creatures created within a temporal-spatial-material reality, (and whose essence inheres in such an existence), we exist in parts: our selves are divided into parts of time, parts of space, and parts of matter.

God does not exist in parts, and neither do the angels, both holy and unholy. God and the heavenly hosts exist as wholes: ONE in time, ONE in space, and they require no matter to exist.

God does not exist here and there; He exists HERE. That is why, in the context of manifold existence (temporal-spatial-material reality), God exists EVERYWHERE. God does not exist then and now; HE EXISTS NOW. That is why, in the context of manifold existence, God exists ALWAYS.

God's actuality (which is Actuality) does not exist within potentiality. God is *not* actualized potential (like we human creatures are). God is pure Actuality. God does not require matter to exist. God, (in His own Nature as God), has no body. Period.

(Satan wants you to believe that God has a body, because that fundamentally short-circuits and deranges any possibility that you will ever have any accurate or adequate idea of God, which is always useful in messing you up. Once your idea of God is shattered into absurdity, you can be led off into all manner of absurdities. Such a spectacle is unfortunate, but it makes thrilling performance art.)

So, we can correctly say that God's *essential purpose* is God's *existential function*. God, being Uncreated, and, hence, self-causing, does not exist *through* some process, neither a process in time or an eternal process. God does not exist in stages. As Uncreated, God is not at one stage and at another, like creatures.

Angels (both holy angels and demons) are spiritual creatures. Their essential purpose is also their existential function, but, unlike God, they are called forth into being. Their essential purpose is actualized within their existential function instantly in eternity. Angels do not *become* beings in the way that human beings do. They are not shaped or built up, like Adam and Eve were, or like human beings are at conception and in utero and in childhood. God says "be" and the angels are. That is how Samael (the Devil), Michael, Gabriel, Raphael, Uriel and all the rest were created.

And, significantly, the angel's actuality is *NOT* informed into potentiality, into the nothingness. Rather, the actuality of the angels is a reflection of the Actuality of God, like light reflected in a mirror.

Angels are the mirrors that God created to reflect his Light, so that they could be happy through reflecting Happiness, so that they could love through reflecting Love.

A mirror that will not reflect the Light, the only Light, can only exist in darkness -- hence the phrase in Genesis "darkness covered the abyss" (1:2).

We human beings are hybrids -- we are spirits enfolded in matter. We are an image of God's Actuality (actualities) informed in potentiality. We are God's presence to that which is not God.

Satan hates that to no end. That is why Satan likes to lie and say that human beings are mere earth, and not spiritual, not images of God. Satan hates our human nature like the Grand Wizard of the Ku Klux Klan hated interracial relationships and children. Satan considers human nature a perversity, and the Incarnation of the Son in human flesh as the ultimate sacrilegious perversity. There is no bottom, no end, to Satan's hatred for you.

That alone makes the practice of Satanism by human beings such a ridiculous spectacle. Rape victims might as well worship Ariel Castro. Satan's singular and total hatred for human nature and every last human creature means that it would make far more sense.

It should also be real motivation to not end up in Hell, where you will be subject to the merciless torture of a spirit whose hatred for you is bottomless.

So, human beings' essential purpose is actualized within our existential function over the duration of time.

In other words, what and why human beings *are* only becomes clear and instantiated (realized) over the duration of time, as is clear from the seed of a tree or the embryo of a human person. A seed does not look or act like a tree, but it will become a tree because it has the essential purpose (telos) of a tree. An embryo does not look or act like a human person, but it will become a human person because it has the essential purpose (telos) of a human person.

The function of a being is *how* the essence of that being manifests within its existence. In other words, the function of a being is how the *what* of a being manifests within the *that* of the being. It is how the Being that is the core of the being *becomes* a being itself: a real being, a real existent, rather than merely the idea of a being.

Being exists through itself, hence the function of Being is that the essence of Being manifests through its own existence. In other words, Being is self-causing and self-founded (which amounts to the same things). The foundation of fundamental Being is itself.

To manifest is to be real.

Being is real through itself.

Those beings created by Being (that are not self-causing but themselves caused by Being) are real through Being. Yet the function of those beings created in eternity does *not* include time structure or a consequent time sequence. Those beings created by Being in eternity do *not* "become" beings, (in the sense of being emerging from nothingness *over time*). Rather, such

beings created in eternity *are* beings, instantly, without a process of becoming and without reference to time or temporality.

Those beings created by Being *in time* (such as human beings) are real through Being as well, *and* that Being emerges, within our beings, from nothingness over time, in a process we call *becoming*.

The essence and existence of uncreated and self-causing Being (God) are one and the same.

The essence of a being created in eternity has its existence *through* Being, a-temporally, and, hence, has no medium of existence except Being itself.

The essence of a being created in time has its existence through Being *over time*, and thus the essence of such a being *becomes* real in its existence across a medium (the space-time continuum). The Being of human beings is the actuality eternally spoken by Actuality: their essence. For the human race, that essence becomes real through an existence that is a medium, that is *potentiality*. The process by which actuality actualizes potential into actualized potential, such that the existential medium in which the essence of the human race inheres is totally actualized by the essential actuality of Being, is becoming.

In other words, the Idea (or Form) of God exists through His Idea (or Form). The ideas (or forms) of angelic beings (both holy angels and demons) exist through the Idea (Form) of God. The ideas (or forms) of human beings exist through the Idea (Form) of God forming formless potentiality (matter) *in time*. All perceived things that are not human beings are the perceptions of the spirits of human beings, realized within potentiality. The spirits that perceive such perceptions perceive them through the Spirit (which is God).

The form of the form of a being is the being's purpose or telos, which in Greek means "end". In other words, the deepest interiority of a being's form is itself what constitutes the what of the what (or the telos). That is, the telos is the *what-it-is-for*. A being's telos is its purpose. Purpose is meaning. All beings have a telos because all beings exist *for* meaning, since Being is inherently meaningful; indeed Being is meaning. To assert that beings do not have a telos, that they do not have a purpose is nothing less than to assert that Being is *not* purposive: in other words, that Being has no meaning. This is precisely what the materialists claim. Yet then why do they get out of bed in the morning? Why do they feel it necessary to attack God, theism, and essentialism? Why do they do anything at all? If Being, if Reality itself, has *no* inherent meaning, then how dare they say or do anything? Ah, they say, because *we*, the materialists, *create* meaning -- *out of thin air!* If Reality has no inherent meaning out of which to create meanings, how then do these mighty materialists create meanings? *Ex nihilo!* They create meaning out of nothingness. That is a stout claim. For only God can create out of nothingness. To assert that you too can create something out of nothing is to assert nothing less than that you are God. And to assert that *you* are God is, if you are not actually YHWH, the one True God, the sin of Satan himself, and of all the demons and all the damned.

So, a being created in time has its essence manifest (become real) within the medium of the existence of potentiality *over the duration of time*. The un-actualized or partially actualized

essence of a being is *directed* towards the final and fully realized essence of a being, and that direction towards the being's purpose is the being's telos.

Modern natural science, in the hands of atheists and nihilists, has been used to savage the very notion of essence, which is the foundation of not just *objective* reality, but reality itself. "Show me any essence," they say, "And I shall show you an intermediate or incomplete or grotesque form that does not fit into any of your 'essences'".

A devastating blow, they think, and then they proceed to deny that anything has any form or any purpose.

Yet the reality of forms and purposes and meanings persists. Human beings still think that they are, well, human. Men (most of them) still think that they are men. Women (most of them) still think that they are women. Human beings still even think that they have souls. They still think an objective reality exists, and that things are, well, *things*.

Poor deluded fools, the materialist atheists and nihilists chuckle.

Yet none of this should trouble a Christian nor delude a right-thinking believer in reality, and the essences that make up that reality.

The materialists relentlessly try to make all essences nothing more than the illusions of the mind, the depths of which is the spirit. Yet that, ultimately, requires that the mind itself be an illusion. There can be no "I". Because if that *one* form, that *one* essence -- the "I" -- *is*, then a whole world of essences comes flooding back, and materialism is defeated. So, the materialists, in order to triumph, must not merely convince you that God does not exist, nor merely that things do not exist. The materialist, to triumph, must finally convince you that *you* do not exist.

But no matter the dependence of the mind upon the material apparatus of the brain in order to flourish and be effective in the world, so long as *perspective* itself -- the "I" itself -- remains (and how can it not?), we can be assured that however fraught the nature of actuality's inherence in potentiality may be, *you* are more than merely whirling dust. Whirling dust -- flesh, you surely are, *in part*. But what *informs* that whirling dust (that potentiality) into a *thing* is your essence - *Who-you-are*: your soul.

All the garbled gobbledygook that comes out of the "consciousness-is-an-illusion" crowd is nothing more than hiding the ball. Because no matter how they try to hide fundamental *perception* -- the I -- behind neural processes (material processes within the material organ of the brain (which is itself a form)), the "I" is still there. Consciousness is a recursive evaluative process, they say. Mmm.....I see.

Well then *who* is doing the evaluating? What is the perspective that evaluates? If the consciousness of a unity known as "I" is an illusion, *who* is it that *perceives* that unity *as* a unity?

All the world may be an illusion, but if *I* am perceiving the illusion of myself how can the *who* that *perceives* the illusion *itself* be an illusion?

The answer from the other side?

More gobbledygook. More sputtering condemnations of "irrationality" -- when the only irrationality is spending your life trying to convince yourself and other people that we don't exist.

In any event, there is a very simple answer for why the essences that we know must and do exist, such as our souls, exist in a world in which there are often no clear cutoffs *between* essences, and in which so many times essences get mangled rather than fulfill themselves.

The problem is the medium itself.

This world is broken. The medium of our reality is broken.

This is for a very straightforward reason, known (at least implicitly) since the human transcriber of Genesis set quill to parchment. Adam, the lord of the earth, sinned, and thereby delivered the lordship of the world to Satan. Thus, the potentiality of the formlessness is *oriented* towards the abyss, rather than God.

If it had not been for the Incarnation, Crucifixion, and Resurrection of Our Lord Jesus the Christ, this whole world -- the formlessness of potentiality-- would have been delivered over into the abyss permanently and irrevocably, and thereby been engulfed in the unbearable miseries of Hell. The total and irrevocable absence of God in a soul is Hell.

The Christ introduces Himself as an alternative principle *within* this broken world, this sundered medium. So now two orientations exist -- the orientation towards Satan and the orientation towards Christ. The whole of this reality's history -- its course *through* time -- is the conquest of the formlessness by Christ, for the Father, and the final vanquishing of Satan: and the sifting of the Children of God from the children of Satan.

So, the medium in which our essences inhere and have their existence has two divergent, incompatible, orientations, that towards God and that towards Hell. Towards order and chaos.

We can see this plainly. The organization of this reality over time in progressively higher orders of complexity and consciousness proceeds apace. Yet, at the same time (and intimately interwoven with the first trend), the inexorable wasting down of useful energy (entropy) also proceeds apace. Such a total loss of any useful energy would result in the [heat death of the universe](#), where no complex processes, such as mortal life, would be possible.

The medium (this potentiality) is pulled in two diametrically opposite directions -- Being and nothingness. Just as the struggle between good and evil rages, between justice and injustice, there is a struggle between order and chaos. Whereas in a potentiality fully oriented towards God, essence would effortlessly and totally manifest itself, within the existence of this potentiality, the medium, with this potentiality caught between Being and nothingness, essences can manifest either more or less in fullness, and their manifestations can also become outright mangled.

The materialist scoffs at all this, and rages in a Kantian vein about the human-centric view of such an essentialist line of thinking. Yet they face the reverse problem. Because if there are no essences, then all the world is merely an illusion. The world is not merely mediated by the mind: it is the illusion of the mind. And then the materialist must finally get back to the business of convincing you that you do not exist.

The (perceived) weakness of the essentialist is in calling many realities ill-formed, mangled. That's not very polite, I suppose, and sometimes hurts feelings. I do not desire to hurt anyone's feelings. I gain no joy from anyone else's discomfort. Yet I will not accept the abolition of essences and the abolition of objective reality in order to spare the feelings of the weak-spirited, much less the feelings of the materialist nihilists.

The very real weakness, which is totally fatal, of the materialists is in having to argue that *everything* is really an illusion. The Epicurean or Hobbesian materialist often does not like to fall into outright Nietzschean nihilism or the thoroughgoing madness of Derrida's nihilism or the anti-objective anti-foundationalist nihilism of Richard Rorty (which, in its strong form, even denies the reality of scientific discoveries and even mathematics, calling such things mere "contingent vocabularies" with no objective reality). But without essences, there is nothing to hold on to; you simply fall down that dark hole into the abyss.

The anti-essentialist who does not ardently embrace nihilism must hang on to supports hung in the air. They live and die by essences that dare not speak their name. They have values that simply "appear" out of thin air. They interact with realities that they don't really believe exist. They have hopes and dreams and purposes and meanings that they don't "*really*" think have any meaning. They are a strange folk.

The essential purpose of a being manifests within the medium of an existence through a function. That function is the way in which the essence makes itself real in the existence of potentiality. To the extent God wins out in forming the potentiality, the essence manifests itself properly. To the extent Satan retains his passing power (which every day diminishes as Christ increases), the manifestations of essences in existence can get mangled, obstructed, frustrated, and destroyed.

The reality of God is immediate, because God's reality (which is Reality) is whole, it is not separated into parts because His Reality is not mediated by parts (not by parts of time, space, or matter). God exists ALL AT ONCE and does not require a substrate in order to exist. He exists through Himself, alone and in total existential purity.

The angels share this immediate nature, however their immediacy is predicated upon the Reality of God (which is simply God), hence they are creatures and not the Creator. Satan never got the memo on this, or, more exactly, never accepted the memo.

Not existing mediately, but, rather, existing immediately, neither God nor the angels require a medium *in which* to exist. God and the angels simply exist without the necessity of a medium.

This is difficult for us to grasp at first because we are so hopelessly (or, at least, thoroughly) enmeshed in space and time and matter. But if we just begin to think carefully and

humbly about our reality, we can begin to see that thought and perception and being do not require the traversal of time or space. Reality IS, and that is all.

The fact that earthly beings such as ourselves exist as parts means that we *do* have mediated reality, and, thus, necessarily exist within a medium.

A medium is that which allows communication between two or more things that are separated. Separation is the essence of the MANY, while unity is the essence of the ONE.

In order for the MANY to become ONE, to any extent, some commonality must exist between or among them.

That is why Hell is isolation. Each soul, while sundered from itself, is also, necessarily, eternally separated from all others. The only interaction is torture, which is not a unifying of others with the self, but a negation of such unity -- a deepening of separation. Hell is a torture without solace, a complete torture, perfect in its violation, total in its separation. This makes it important to remind ourselves that Hell is entirely self-chosen. Hell is not something imposed from the outside; it is a state of the self chosen by the self, because that self will not trust and obey the source of the self: God.

Of course, the damned soul would like to have it both ways. Such a damned soul, either angelic or human, either Satan or Hitler, would like to distrust and disobey God and yet still have total power and total felicity. Yet that is an essential and existential contradiction. God *is* Righteousness/Felicity/Power. You cannot turn from God, and His way, without forsaking any control over yourself or your destiny and without forsaking any jot of solace. That is why the Rich Man begs Abraham, "Father Abraham, have pity on me. Send Lazarus to dip the tip of his finger in water and cool my tongue, for I am suffering torment in these flames."

Yet Abraham replies, "My child, remember that you received what was good during your lifetime while Lazarus likewise received what was bad; but now he is comforted here, whereas you are tormented. Moreover, between us and you a great chasm is established to prevent anyone from crossing who might wish to go from our side to yours or from your side to ours" (Luke 16:24-26).

Not even the slightest, most modest mitigation of torment is permissible. Now, that does not mean that everyone's torment will be equally horrible and unbearable; greater sinners will receive commensurately greater eternal punishments. Yet, while punishments in Hell vary in their horror and unbearableness, *all* punishments in Hell are totally horrible and unbearable, without any mitigation or hope of escape.

This simply highlights the moral seriousness, urgency, and gravity of human life, of all our actions and intentions. Our lives do not eternally recur, but they are eternally ratified. The substance of our lives, (which is simply and totally our moral state, our will), is ratified in either Heaven or Hell.

God's creation of the manifold world, the earth (as opposed to the heavens), is meant to name God to that which is most unlike God, but which is still capable of becoming suffused with the presence of God.

Unholiness is not capable of being suffused with Holiness, and God is Holiness, and Holiness is simply true Wholeness. That is why the abyss becomes Hell, since God cannot be present to that which cannot be present to God, nor can God be present to those who freely reject God's way.

That which is simply unactualized potential, but which will become actualized as actuality, *can* and *will* be suffused with God's Wholeness, His Holiness, because of God's free choice: His generosity, His Grace.

Thus, God desires and works to make the manifold brought to unity. That work of sanctification is a process whereby the many isolate parts of manifold being (i.e. creatures and earthly realities) converse with one another through traversing a common medium: space and time.

Space is nothing more than the time that must be traversed for beings to be brought into communion, and time is nothing more than the number of stages (or states) that must be traversed for beings to be brought into the communion of space.

The whole of a succession of stages (or states) is a process. A state that is fully the essential purpose of its subject is complete, and is thus a whole. A state that lacks any aspect of the essential purpose of its subject is incomplete, and is thus one part of many parts comprising a whole.

The process of an essential purpose fulfilling itself in the medium of time and space (which, for an earthly creature or reality is its existential function) is coming-into-being, or generation.

So, the space-time continuum, as a medium, is the number of incomplete parts that must be traversed for the manifold to be brought to unity. This also explains the arrow of time. The manifold is manifesting itself from its parts into a whole, according to the pattern of the ONE.

The Fall dramatically complicates this process of cosmic generation, which, hypothetically, could have been simple, easy, and painless, had it not been for the sin of Adam which put the manifold Creation (the earth) under the Mastery of Satan.

The formlessness can either be oriented towards God or the abyss. The abyss is under the dominion of Satan because Satan is the strongest spirit in the abyss. Satan, being the strongest, simply swallows whatever is in the abyss, absorbing their strengths and making all the strengths of all the damned subject to his own unholy will.

God made Adam the Lord of the earth. God does not revoke His creations, although His creations can deny Him, turning their wills away from Him.

When Adam sinned, he turned his will away from God. In doing so, Adam turned towards the abyss. In turning to the abyss, his person became subject to the dominion of Satan. As a slave of Satan, Satan, in turn, became Lord of the earth, the Ruler of the World.

While Samael was thrown into the abyss and became Satan, Adam was not irrevocably thrown into the abyss when he sinned, because Adam did not act with full knowledge of the consequences, or gravity, of his sin. So, while Satan's fall was a permanent condemnation to the abyss, Adam's sin only meant that his reality became subject to the abyss. God is life, and not-God is death. So, God is life, and the abyss is death.

When the earth (and by the earth I mean the material Cosmos) became subject to death, because under the slavery of the Master of the abyss, Satan, it shattered into chaos.

Only the action of the Risen Christ, acting from the future at the endpoint of this Cosmos (what Teilhard called the Omega Point), and whose focal point is the historical Crucifixion and Resurrection, pulls the chaos back together into an order of life, according to the pattern of the ONE, God.

Because sin is a distance from God, that distance must be traversed. The traversal of that distance is the process of redemption and sanctification that makes up the substance of this Cosmos' history. Yet the traversal is only possible because of the incarnation of Christ, which re-introduces the principle of God within the chaos caused by the sin of Adam.

The flesh of the human race dies because the earth is subject to death, but, through being born of the Spirit of Christ, the spirit of each human being that is so born is saved from the second death, the abyss of Hell.

Rather, being one in spirit with the Spirit of Christ, that spirit will be resurrected, or rejoined with their flesh, at the end of time, when the Flesh of Christ has fulfilled itself in the total sanctification of the earth, of this Cosmos.

The whole history of this Cosmos, because of the atonement of the Risen Christ, is now a process of this reality passing from subjection to death to renewal in life.

We can note that (1) the Reality (Being) of God is the source of the essence of our entire reality (insofar as it is oriented towards Being rather than nothingness), and (2) there is no common medium between our reality and the Reality of God, other than God Himself.

God and this world, or any creation, do NOT exist in a common medium called "Reality", in which God and everything else are actors on a big common stage. No big common stage stands behind both God and everything else. God stands alone.

Every creature and creation, (the Heavens and the earth, the angels, the demons, the elect, and the damned), exists separate from God, not claiming any common medium except what God permits.

When God reveals Himself to His creatures, He does not become subject to the creature or medium. Rather, He subjects the creature or medium to Himself. That subjection to God, if accepted by the free choice of the free wills He created, becomes the reality of Blessedness for those creatures with free will. God's revelation of Himself, in both the creation and conservation of created realities, does not involve God *within* a common medium with His creatures. God's

presence is immediate: the presence of one distinct Reality (God) to another distinct reality (not-God).

Metaphor fails us here, since any metaphor would be a relating of one earthly thing to another earthly thing, which would necessarily mean the metaphor would fail, since each earthly thing exists in a common medium: the space-time continuum. So, the truth of the transcendence of God must be accepted on faith, on the basis of revelation.

We can also note the absurdity of the widely observed reflection that modern material natural science has not provided us with any insight into the nature of human morality or the meaning of life. The atheists proceed to assume that no real human reality or meaning of life exists.

But that fails to understand the nature of modern material natural science or reality itself. Modern science is a tool which draws a schematic. It is like the mechanical specifications of a car or a plane. Such a schematic can tell you *how* the car or plane is assembled, but it will not tell you *what* the car or plane is, or why it exists (what it is *for*).

The essential purpose of the human purpose (the essence and end of human life) proceeds from the human spirit, and the human spirit proceeds from the Spirit of God.

An intellectual discipline that only accepts propositions derived from empirical observation (from the individual five senses, or from the material senses generally) can *never* discover the essential purpose of human life, since the essential purpose of human life is not *outside* the human person, but, rather, *within* the human person.

Seeking the meaning of human life from mathematics, physics, chemistry, or even biology, even much of psychology, is like trying to figure out whether you love someone by looking through a telescope. You're looking the wrong way.

All those who are not one in spirit with the Spirit of Christ will not share in the resurrection of the righteous, and will not have a share in the Flesh of Christ. Rather, they will be coupled to their corrupted, dead flesh, in which their dead spirits will be interred, in the living death that is the horror of Hell.

The fulfillment of the Flesh of Christ, which is the Church, is the time at which the coming of the New Jerusalem is possible.

At the end of time, the manifold's redemption will be fully manifested in the return of the lordship of the earth to God, such that the Kingdom of God can finally come, so that God's will is done on earth as it is in Heaven.

This is possible because Adam, the lord of the earth, makes Christ Jesus his lord, such that, if Jesus can defeat Satan, Jesus becomes not just the lord of heaven (being the Son of God), but also the lord of the earth. As St. Matthew recounts, "Then Jesus approached and said to

them, 'All power in heaven and on earth has been given to me' (Matthew 28:18). Jesus defeated Satan in His Crucifixion and in His descent into Hell. He did so by bearing death and Hell, the penalties of sin, while not Himself sinning, while still totally trusting in God and being wholly obedient to His Will.

The transfer of Lordship over the earth from Adam to Christ Jesus transfers the earth from the power of the abyss, which results in death and Hell, to the power of God, which results in eternal life in Heaven.

As Revelation (21:1-8) foretells:

The former heaven and the former earth had passed away, and the sea was no more. I also saw the holy city, a new Jerusalem, coming down out of heaven from God, prepared as a bride adorned for her husband.

I heard a loud voice from the throne saying, "Behold, God's dwelling is with the human race. He will dwell with them and they will be his people and God himself will always be with them [as their God]. He will wipe every tear from their eyes, and there shall be no more death or mourning, wailing or pain, [for] the old order has passed away."

The one who sat on the throne said, "Behold, I make all things new."

Then he said, "Write these words down, for they are trustworthy and true."

He said to me, "They are accomplished. I am the Alpha and the Omega, the beginning and the end. To the thirsty I will give a gift from the spring of life-giving water. The victor will inherit these gifts, and I shall be his God, and he will be my son.

"But as for cowards, the unfaithful, the depraved, murderers, the unchaste, sorcerers, idol-worshippers, and deceivers of every sort, their lot is in the burning pool of fire and sulfur, which is the second death."

Chris Langan.

Rhetoric matters.

If Isaac Newton had expressed his theories of universal gravitation and the laws of motion in 1s and 0s, there would have been no Newtonian revolution, and Newton would have died uncelebrated and without effect.

There are multiple ways of expressing an expression (which subsumes both ideas and sentiments, which, ultimately, amount to the same thing).

For instance, I can say:

Irascible discourse impedes epistemic competence, hence torpefying noetic involution.

But why? Why would I do that, unless my writing was meant as a mere masturbatory pastime?

Take other expressions:

Angry discussions only hinder global intelligence, hence hobbling social development.

Shouting and yelling don't help people get smarter, and that's bad for society.

Calling each other poptards doesn't solve a damn thing, fool.

Of course, we can also get perhaps a bit too casual:

Ah shit, al'de'gunna do wen ya shittin' 'n pissin' is piss things to shit, *shiiiiit*.....

(Incidentally, the above sentence has a rating of "A" on <https://readable.io/text/>)

Readability:

<https://readable.io/text/>

For instance:

(1)

Irascible discourse impedes epistemic competence, hence torpefying noetic involution.

RATING: **E**

Galante 1200

To improve your readability, try using shorter sentences and simpler words where possible.

**Readability Formula
Grade**

Flesch–Kincaid Grade Level	20.7
Gunning Fog Index	21.4
Coleman–Liau Index	30
SMOG Index	16
Automated Readability Index	22.3
Average Grade Level	22.1

**Readability Formula
Score**

Flesch–Kincaid Reading Ease	-37.3
Spache Score	9.9
New Dale–Chall Score	16.2

Flesch–Kincaid Readability Ease ⁸³

100.00–90.00	5th grade	Very easy to read. Easily understood by an average 11-year-old.
90.0–80.0	6th grade	Easy to read. Conversational English for consumers.
80.0–70.0	7th grade	Fairly easy to read.
70.0–60.0	8th & 9th grade	Plain English. Easily understood by 13- to 15-year-old students.
60.0–50.0	10th to 12th grade	Fairly difficult to read.
50.0–30.0	College	Difficult to read.
30.0–0.0	College Graduates.	Very difficult to read. Best understood by university graduates.

⁸³ https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Flesch%E2%80%93Kincaid_readability_tests#Flesch_Reading_Ease

New Dale-Chall Score ⁸⁴

4.9 or lower	easily understood by an average 4th-grade student or lower
5.0–5.9	easily understood by an average 5th or 6th-grade student
6.0–6.9	easily understood by an average 7th or 8th-grade student
7.0–7.9	easily understood by an average 9th or 10th-grade student
8.0–8.9	easily understood by an average 11th or 12th-grade student
9.0–9.9	easily understood by an average 13th to 15th-grade (college) student

Sentence (1) is -37.3 on the Flesch-Kincaid scale. 30 to 0 is graduate level. So, Sentence (1) is, in terms of grade level, not simply at Ph.D. grade level. It is at Grade Level: “Fuck off you fucktard amoeba, this is not for you, mere mortal. Back to your pond of goo from whence you came!”.

The Little Pond of Goo

<https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=YLyqTtrhUJE>

In other words, the above sentence marked (1) is *brain-meltingly hard to understand*.

I seriously suggest a few remedial rhetorical tonics to Langan:

- (1) Take a creative writing class.
- (2) Take a public speaking course.
- (3) Take an acting class.
- (4) Get involved with a stand-up comedy practicum.
- (5) Memorize Aristotle’s Rhetoric.
- (6) Spend a month reading nothing but children’s books.
- (7) Spend a month reading nothing but trashy women’s magazines like *Cosmopolitan* and *Glamour*.
- (8) Spend a month studying Dante and Shakespeare. I know you’ve read them, but don’t read them for content, read them for how they use words like a musician uses notes and chords.

The trick is not merely to be able to speak about ordinary things in an ordinary way. To be understood, and thus to have effect, one must speak about extraordinary things in an ordinary way.

Naturally, the more advanced sentence will usually contain more information, and thus be more precise. But that precision comes at the cost of readership and general audience. And if

⁸⁴ https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Dale%E2%80%93Chall_readability_formula

you are not read or heard, your ideas will die, left to some future thinker with a better ear for the language and a better sense of showmanship.

Think of it this way: *if* you wish to have social effect, rather than simply stimulate yourself, it's your job to make yourself understood, it's not the job of the audience to understand you.

This may be unfair, but life is unfair.

In the marketplace of ideas, the reader or listener is the customer, and the customer is always right (even when they're wrong.....*especially* when they're wrong).

Chris Langan is a classical music theorist in a world that can only understand [yacht rock](#).

Chris is doing this: https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=Lkc0D_luHlc, in a world that can only understand this: <https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=oBxPEefz2oY>.

If you have an idea that is true, and people reject it, it is either because (1) you are wrong or (2) they do not understand it.⁸⁵

If they do not understand it, then either (1) you must become understandable to them, or (2) they must endeavor to understand you.

People will *not* endeavor to understand you, absent some incentive. It is like opening a restaurant in the wilderness, not advertising it, not promoting it, and hoping that people will somehow find you and patronize your business. This is a poor business plan. You are more likely to be eaten by a bear than to win a single customer.

⁸⁵ And/or willfully not understanding you because it offends a cherished principle.

Eats poorly communicated ideas for breakfast



If you wish to have a social effect, *you* must learn how to make yourself understandable. That requires carefully speaking in terms that your listeners will understand, in terminologies that they accept and with which they are familiar. If this is not possible (in the abstract) either (1) you are a god and speaking in divine language not understandable by mortals or (2) you are wrong.

If you have an idea that is important (and true), and it does not generate a productive discourse among many people, it is because of one or both of two factors: (1) you are not marketing yourself properly and/or (2) you are not speaking in a language they understand.

The project of reducing complex ideas to plain language also clarifies holes in the idea, which there will inevitably be. Such holes, rather than being hid from, should be embraced, for exposing such ambiguities and pratfalls helps you correct and clarify your own thinking, and gives you credibility and resonance among the broader epistemic community (community of scholars) of which you are a part. No ideas simply proceed from individuals born whole, sprung as Athena from Zeus' brain. And if they do, they usually live lonely lives and die alone, unknown and unmourned.

There is also the matter of talking past one another. If you claim to prove something, but the other side defines proof one way and you define proof another way, you will get nowhere fast.

If, to one side, proof means the possibility of experimental verification, and, to you, proof means self-evidence, then you should be the first to clarify the differences in conception.

If you claim to be science, and the other side says you're philosophy, then you should clarify that you are engaged in first philosophy (metaphysics), but that you believe first philosophy is, at root, science, and not only science, but the root of science (as broadly understood).

Rationalists vs. atheists



Here is a partial transcript of an interview with Langan:

Can you sketch the CTMU — in plain English — for our readers?

The name literally says it all. The phrase “Cognitive-Theoretic Model of the Universe” contains three main ingredients: cognitive theory, model, and universe. Cognitive theory refers to a general language of cognition (the structural and transitional rules of cognition); universe refers to the content of that language, or that to which the language refers; and model refers to the mapping which carries the content into the language, thus creating information. The way in which the title brings these three ingredients together, or “contracts” their relationship to the point of merging, reflects their perfect coincidence in that to which the title implicitly refers, i.e., reality (the physical universe plus all that is required to support its

perception and existence). Thus, the CTMU is a theory which says that reality is a self-modeling universal language, or if one prefers, that the universe is a self-modeling language.

The operation of combining language, universe, and model to create a perfectly self-contained metalanguage results in SCSPL, short for Self-Configuring Self-Processing Language. This language is “self-similar” in the sense that it is generated within a formal identity to which every part of it is mapped as content; its initial form, or grammatical “start symbol”, everywhere describes it on all scales. My use of grammatical terminology is intentional; in the CTMU, the conventional notion of physical causality is superseded by “telic causation”, which resembles generative grammar and approaches teleology as a natural limit. In telic causation, ordinary events are predicated on the generation of closed causal loops distributing over time and space. This loop-structure reflects the fact that time, and the spatial expansion of the cosmos as a function of time, flow in both directions – forward and backward, outward and inward – in a dual formulation of causality characterizing a new conceptualization of nature embodied in a new kind of medium or “manifold”.

That’s as simple as I can make it without getting more technical. Everything was transparently explained in the 56-page 2002 paper I published on the CTMU, which has been downloaded hundreds of thousands of times. But just in case this still doesn’t qualify as “plain English”, there’s an even easier way to understand it that is available to any reader familiar with the Bible, one of the most widely read and best-understood books ever written.

In the New Testament, John 1 begins as follows: “In the beginning was the Word, and the Word was with God, and the Word was God” (my italics). Much controversy has centered on this passage, as it seems to be saying that God is literally equivalent to logos, meaning “word”, “wisdom”, “reason”, or “truth”. Insofar as these meanings all refer to constructs or ingredients of language or to language itself, this amounts to the seemingly imponderable assertion that God, of Whom believers usually conceive as an all-powerful Entity or Being, somehow consists of language. The CTMU is precisely what it takes to validate this

assertion while preserving the intuitive conception of God as the all-knowing Creator – or in non-theological terms, the “identity” or “generator” – of reality. Nothing but the CTMU can fully express this biblical “word-being duality” in a consistent logico-mathematical setting.

The CTMU is not just a theory; it is logical model theory applied to metaphysics, and as much a logical necessity as any branch of mathematics or philosophy. One can no more escape from it than from $X=X$ or $1+1=2$. But when it comes to something that packs this combination of scope and power, many people, including certified academics, committed atheists, and even some religious believers, are apparently afraid to stare $X=X$ in the face.

Little wonder. After all, once one has beheld the metaphysical structure of reality, there is no longer any such thing as plausible deniability or defense by ignorance; it’s the end of innocence, so to speak. Understandably, many people find that a little scary.⁸⁶

The short answer to the interviewer’s question should have been, “No, I cannot. I am trapped within an intelligence that you can barely understand and am currently incapable of expressing myself in a way that would be intelligible to anyone of even remotely average intelligence.”

The recourse to Biblical language is intelligible to what we may call the lay reader (Population: Planet Earth), but the discussion of the CTMU is not what anyone traditionally calls intelligible.

For someone who, rightly, claims that the essence of reality is language to have such infelicities in using the language is unfortunate.

Irony

<https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=Jne9t8sHpUc>

The above interview transcript is simply *not* Plain English. Plain Vulcan, maybe, but certainly not Plain English.

This is Plain English

https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=_QvgzfNzHbY

⁸⁶ <http://superscholar.org/interviews/christopher-michael-langan/>

Explain Yourself like You're Talking to Two-Year-Olds

(This applies equally to “lay” and “academic” audiences, though in different ways.)

<https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=AR6eXWNJzoY>

For your meaning to be understood you must be as subtle as a chainsaw

<https://www.youtube.com/watch?list=PL595EC905D80443EB&v=C-u5WLJ9Yk4>

The essence of comprehensibility is felicity, the essence of felicity is style, and the essence of style is charisma.

Listen for style, not (necessarily) for content (though the content is gold)

<https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=uFO7bZMk45c>

There's also the problem of purely idiosyncratic terminology. Take the “Return to the Goo, you Trilobite” grade level sentence:

Irascible discourse impedes epistemic competence, hence torpefying noetic involution.

If I had an irascible personality, with a certain arrogant streak, and I also had an idiosyncratic and pet terminology that I fancied, I might come up with something like the following:

Dyspeptologic-oriented confabulatory exegetical incursions into the noetical continuum cumberlute the omni-manifold relative to its cognitive cohesive qualia, ergo sclerositizing beyond justifiable parameters perceptual-cogno-replicative self-manifestation.

This little gem has:

Flesch-Kincaid Grade Level 32.3

Flesch-Kincaid Reading Ease -85.2

Remember, the original “complicated” statement had a reading ease of -37.3. So, by indulging in idiosyncratic terminology, although it is arguably more precise, we have gone from -37.3 to -85.2.

If people do not agree with you it is because (1) You are not marketing yourself well, (2) There are actual obstacles set in your way by fortune, (3) You are wrong, (4) you are not understood, or (5) People, to one extent or another, are willfully misunderstanding you for one reason or another.

Always blaming (2) or (5) is not helpful. Why then do other ideas gain resonance? Perhaps one is, in fact, simply cursed by fate. And maybe your ideas are, by their nature, more likely to arouse hostility.

You cannot help (2). Although, (2) is rarely, alone, the whole explanation, and constantly making recourse to it is facile, self-indulgent, and useless.

But even ideas once considered universally anathema can gain resonance, whether deserved or not.

Therefore, it is incumbent upon anyone who wishes to be understood to maximize whatever (1) marketing and (2) comprehensibility you can, while (3) honestly and humbly identifying, acknowledging, and accounting for flaws.

The Architect Explains It All

<https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=ZKpFFD7aX3c>

<https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=R0dL7riclpU>

How the World Responds to the Explanation

<https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=R1ek1jwX4qo>

**THE ART OF COMMUNICATION
A PRACTICUM**

<https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=mhFGdEwden0>

<https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=2DxF3KdkOdE>

THE ART OF PERSUASION

<https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=7MWpe8zzSM0>

A Final Lesson on Terminological Style

<https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=Dk0roE34zLw>

From Chris Langan's CTMU essay:

As complexity rises and predicates become theories, tautology and truth become harder to recognize. Because universality and specificity are at odds in practice if not in principle, they are subject to a kind of "logical decoherence" associated with relational stratification. Because predicates are not always tautological, they are subject to various kinds of ambiguity; as they become increasingly specific and complex, it becomes harder to locally monitor the heritability of consistency and locally keep track of the truth property in the course of attribution (or even after the fact). Undecidability, LSAT intractability and NP-completeness, predicate ambiguity and the Lowenheim-Skolem theorem, observational ambiguity and the Duhem-Quine thesis ...these are some of the problems that emerge once the truth predicate "decoheres" with respect to complex

attributive mappings. It is for reasons like these that the philosophy of science has fallen back on falsificationist doctrine, giving up on the tautological basis of logic, effectively demoting truth to provisional status, and discouraging full appreciation of the tautological-syntactic level of scientific inquiry even in logic and philosophy themselves.

The above paragraph is true. It is also unnecessarily technical, and hence, relatively speaking, unintelligible.

Don't write that way, Chris.



Animal Consciousness

I offer a brief sketch of a hypothesis towards a spiritual mechanical understanding of animal consciousness. Just as, per my Neo-Berkeleyan metaphysical conception, I conceive of the fundamental substances, or realities, as Spirit, spirit, and perception (or, more exactly, the Uncreated Ousia of the Spirit ex-voluting itself outside of the Godhead proper into nothingness such that it can, ex nihilo, bring into being the creation of spirit and perception as hypostases, or modes, of the Divine Reality as it exists beyond its own Uncreated Eternity, with the spirits and the perceptions that they can exhibit both truly new and contingent and separate from the Godhead, and yet, necessarily, oriented or turned, towards the necessary source of all spirit and perception, the Uncreated Spirit), I believe that it is likely that animal consciousnesses, that is, those consciousnesses that are not sentient, defined as self-aware, as we human beings understand sentience, are, in fact, kinds of perceptions within the Spirit, that are accessible to spirits, such as ourselves.

In other words, perceptions are, at least, the five senses we are familiar with: sight, sound, touch, taste, and smell: and probably an infinity of senses of which we little wretched mortals have absolutely no conception. Yet, as the nature of existence is a kind of involution of its own existence, we can consider that a higher perception would be a perception of such perceptions: that is, the common sense, as it was traditionally understood in Western philosophy. And that common sense, that perception of perception: that which *knows*, or somehow, rather, *senses*, that *it* senses: would be the origin of consciousness.

So, the Spirit is eternal and primal. From it proceeds all perceptions. The involution of perception: that is to say, the perception of perception: is the origin and existential structure of consciousness. The involution of consciousness, such that it turns back upon itself and returns the gift of that spiritual sight back to the primal Seen, (the Spirit), is the origin and existential structure of spirit.

Now, a simple perception, such as red, cannot be “blamed” for not blessing the Name of God, nor can red be faulted for not knowing itself as red.

Likewise, a simple one-dimensional consciousness, *created simply to be a one-dimensional consciousness*, cannot be “blamed” for not returning the gift, in gratitude, back to the Giver, because it has no drive, or telos, or orientation to do so. Indeed, the Spirit did not will it, did not design it, to do so.

Contrarily, that which was created to be spirit, which the Spirit of God *did will and design to return the gift of its own consciousness to the Giver, and which was endowed with the absolute freedom to do so -- the will to do so -- must* be blamed for failing to so involute, to return the gift and thus become a multi-dimensional spirit. *Choosing* to be one-dimensional, when one had the freedom to align oneself with the Eternal Freedom of the Spirit, is an unforgivable sin.

Hence, Jesus says, “Whoever is not with me is against me, and whoever does not gather with me scatters. Therefore, I say to you, every sin and blasphemy will be forgiven people, but blasphemy against the Spirit will not be forgiven. And whoever speaks a word against the Son of

Man will be forgiven; but whoever speaks against the Holy Spirit will not be forgiven, either in this age or in the age to come” (Matthew 12:30-32).

In other words, I hypothesize that animal consciousness is, at bottom, fundamentally different from spirit. Spirit is a “three-dimensional” (multi-dimensional) involution of consciousness, while animal consciousness is a one-dimensional consciousness that is merely the involution of perception upon itself.

Now, an animal consciousness created to be an animal consciousness cannot be blamed for being itself, for being what it was created to be.

But, a spirit, created to involute by returning the gift to the Giver in gratitude, that *chooses* in its absolute freedom to try to steal the gift and race off and be its own God, must necessarily be damned, and be a ruined, comical, humiliated spectacle: an animal consciousness imprisoned within the self-ruined possibility of spirit-hood.

I offer that the preceding paragraph is the technical definition (or, at least, a preliminary formula) of a demon (and also a damned soul).

I conceive that this is the reason Scripture refers to the Anti-Christ (and the many precursors of Anti-Christ, those tyrants and murderers that have plagued our history) as a “beast” (Revelation 13). For that is exactly what this ruined, foul spirit most resembles, in its self-chosen one-dimensionality.

An animal is a one-dimensional consciousness. So animals have souls, as such. *But*, and this is the critical point, *they do NOT have IMMORTAL souls*. An animal can be thought into existence by God, and unthought out of existence by God.

But, since human souls and angelic souls are three-dimensional, and since human souls are made in the Image of God Himself, the creation of human and angelic souls are *irrevocable*.

An animal is just the highest form of *perception* of the Spirit.

But spirits, both human and angelic spirits, are *spiritual creations* of the Spirit. They *are*. They cannot be undone. A perception can be unthought, can change, shift. A perception is an *opinion* of the Spirit, as such. The created spirit is an eternal **fact**.

Animal souls do not have free will because they are not spirits. They are the involution of perception, so they *perceive*.

But animals are not the involution of soul, which is spirit, so they *cannot will*. ***Animals do not have free will -- animals only will what it is their NATURE to will.***

Spirit

Spirits, on the other hand, such as humans and angels, **are** the involution of soul -- they are truly spirits, and, in that, they are like unto God.

Now, the key difference between humans and angels is that angels are merely *like* unto God, they are metaphors of God.

Humans, on the other hand, if they have faith in Christ as Lord and Savior and Son of God, and if they persevere in the righteousness of good works and the profession of faith, are created *in the Image of God*. **God becomes totally identified with the Elect of the human race. God remains God, and because of that, the Divinity of God **TOTALLY** suffuses the souls of the Elect, such that they, along with the Eternally Begotten Son of God, become heirs to the Gift of God, which is the Spirit of God.**

So, an angel is created in the likeness of God. But an angel never shares in the Divinity of God: they remain **outside** of God, though in intimate service to God, and loved by God for, through, and in that service. Humans, though created less powerful, less spiritual (with a smaller spirit less like unto God and enfleshed in matter - temporal matter being the opposite of God's Spiritual Eternity), can and do **through faith and perseverance in the Power of God, which is Christ Jesus, and thus BY the Power of God in Christ Jesus become Sharers of the Divine Nature: Sons of God.**

Thus, animals are but thoughts of God, angels are the slaves of God, and human beings are the sons of God.

To offer a metaphor, imagine a great landholder, who lives in a great Mansion. The Master is God. The animals are the paintings on the wall. The angels are the servants, in uniforms, at the beck and call of the Master. Human beings, who are Elect in Christ Jesus, the Son of God, the Second Person of the Trinity, are the sons of God, the heirs of God. Human beings are the Children of God. Of course, as children, they must accord gratitude to the Father, and accord him the respect, honor, and acknowledgement of the Father's superiority that sons should and must accord their Fathers in order to be sons at all. But, by being sons, everything that the Father has -- including His Divine Nature -- belong to the sons of God, the Elect Human Race.

Satan HATES THAT!

HATES IT! HATES IT! HATES IT! HATES IT! HATES IT! HATES IT!

The Angel of God that became Satan/Lucifer totally went berserk when he saw that insight. --- When he peered to the true and total nature of God.

I am not sure if this is true, but I think the **original** name of that Angel of God, that Prime Angel who led the rebellion against God, was Samael. For Samael means "Venom of God", "Poison of God", "Blindness of God".

And, indeed, those are apt names for the Fallen Prime Angel, for Satan/Lucifer/the Devil.

It would be apt for the Prime Angel, (what became, through his own self-fallen will, Satan), since Satan was totally blind to God. Though that Angel beheld God, he could not accept that only God was God, and that it was better that way *for Samael himself*. For Samael's **role**, his **nature**, what God had created him *for*, was to be an observer, the greatest observer, of the Fulfillment of God -- God-in-All.

But Samael, out of his blank refusal to *see* this essential truth *about God and thus about himself*, said, "NO! NO! NO! NO! NO! NO! **I AM** the heir to God's gifts. I am not a slave! *I am the Son!* This Second Person of the Trinity, the Son, the Gift -- he is *not* the Gift of God! *I am the Gift of God, I am the Son, I am in God, I AM GOD.*"

Samael could not accept that angels, like himself, were the slaves of God, while human beings were the Sons of God.

So, in the first slave rebellion in the History of Eternity, so to speak, Samael, the chief slave of the Master, rose up in a great fury against the Master, God, and aimed to kill his Master and all those slaves loyal to the Master God. And, after murdering the Master God, Samael would restore order and sense and *justice* - Samael's justice - to Reality.

Unfortunately for Samael, that's not how Reality works. God is God. not-God is not God.

So, the slave, the mirror, Samael, rose up against the Slave Master, God, and tried to kill Him. But, like the mirror attempting to pick a fight with the gun that it reflects, the mirror was shattered and the gun was unharmed.

Samael, the spiritual creature and slave of God, tried to storm the Temple of God, which is God, which is the Uncreated Eternity of God

Defeated, Samael slunk off to the abyss, cast out from the Presence of God, which is Heaven, the Spiritual Creation.

God, requiring that His sons be free sons, (for what kind of a son is an unfree son? An unfree son is nothing more than a slave...not even a spiritual slave, but an animal....a beast), required that they have free will --- and that that free will be subject to testing.

So, Samael --- now exploded into nothingness and wearing the masks of Satan/Lucifer/the Devil --- in his utter rage and wrath and bitterness and HATRED unwillingly does the Will of God, and, since he is the the Blindness of God, now he becomes the Venom of God.

Satan, in the form of a serpent, entered the Primordial Paradise, that first Material Creation, as it was prior to the Fall, and bit the forbidden fruit from the Tree of Knowledge of Good and Evil. Satan thereby infected it with his sinfulness. Samael's sin was pride. In material form, pride is lust. For pride seeks to be first, and in the Spiritual Creation that means to be God. In the Material Creation, whose essence is sensory plenitude, to desire to be first, in terms of the Material Creation and not the Spiritual Creation, is to desire to have *all* the Plenitude, even and especially and essentially **in defiance** of God -- to have it **apart** from God.

So, Eve desired to be desired **first** by Adam. So, in defiance of God's Commandment to not eat of that *one* Tree, she ate of the fruit in order to become as a Goddess, and thus loved by Adam equally with God, and even above God.

Adam desired to have Eve -- to make love to her, to have her intimacy and companionship and love. And, in desiring to love and be loved by Eve *more* than Adam desired to love and be loved by God, Adam chose Eve **over** God, and threw in with Eve -- figuring it would be better to die for and with Eve than live for God.....and maybe half-wondering whether the fruit really would turn him into a God, and thus allow Adam and Eve to run off and live independently of God. Adam and Eve chose each other, and didn't choose God. **That** is the essence of their sin.

So, when Adam and Eve ate the fruit, they ingested the Venom of Satan, of what had been, (and never would be again) Samael, and thus ingested the Venom of God, the Poison of God. They had damned themselves.

Now, since Samael **saw** God, his damnation could never be forgiven. **But precisely** because Adam and Eve did **not** have the Knowledge of Good and Bad, and thus could not see God, **as He is**, *their* sin and their damnation (for damnation is not a consequence of sin, as such -- damnation is the very **flip side** of sin) **could be** forgiven.

Now, it could not be forgiven without costs. It could not be forgiven at the snap of God's fingers. It would require a sacrifice -- a Mediator to bridge the gap between the fallen human race and the Towering Holiness of the Father.

Jesus, the God-Man, the Incarnate Second Person of the Trinity, the Incarnate Son of God, fulfilled that role and became Savior and Lord of the human race, thus restoring what Adam and Eve had sundered.

We can see that the venom of that lust corrupted the human flesh of both Adam and Eve, and, since Adam was Lord of the Material Creation, exploded the Material Creation into what it is today: the sundered, dark, disconnected, blank, awful material Cosmos....infested with alien races that are nothing but intelligent savage beasts, totally under the dominion of Satan.

We can also see a few major points here. First, Satan hates the human race -- hates us beyond all belief or imagining. Satan hates us because he thinks that we are abominations, who have usurped his rightful role as the Heir to God, the lieutenant of God, the sharer of God's nature. He also hates us because we are the reasons that he is suffering a spiritual torment beyond imagining in Hell. Satan hates us because, through our creation, Satan fell to become what he is - a humiliated, powerless, despised, despicable Beast -- a beast who is a ravenous, hungry, torturing, murderous monster -- who is *most unlike* God, rather than most like God, and not at all God.

We can also better see the nature of Islam. When Satan founded his religion, Islam, he founded it according to his own ideas and point of view, naturally.

In Satan's topsy-turvy reinterpretation of salvation history, of the History of Eternity, he, the slave rebel, casts everything in terms of his slave rebellion.

So, God is still the Slave Master -- for that is what God was to Samael. And Satan admits that it was his pride that caused him to not acknowledge the superiority of human beings -- that human beings are the sons and the angels are the slaves.

But that is where Samael's religion-making turns off from the truth. For, Satan says that what he was, the angel Samael, refused to acknowledge the superiority of the human race *out of a love for God, out of a desire to worship God monotheistically*. The slave rebel, who tried to murder his Master, now, outrageously, claims that he tried to murder his Master *because he loved him so much!* The insane, diabolical **gall** of it all.

Then, Satan obscures **what human reality is all about**. Satan, the great deceiver, lies and says, "Oh, no....that fruit that I poisoned with the venom (the sin) of my pride, which, in the material world, is lust, and which corrupted the flesh of Adam and Eve and sundered the material Creation into this dark, sick joke of a world....that was nothing.....nothing at all. Nothing to see here folks. There is no original sin, the world is spiritually neutral....*everything here is just the way it is supposed to be!*"

Of course Satan is going to say that everything is exactly what it is supposed to be: Right now, with the world the way it is, sundered and distanced from God, with human flesh corrupted, Satan is the Ruler of the World. Satan is sort of what he always wanted to be: God....or, at least, the God of this World.

So, with no original sin, and no world to be redeemed, and with human sin not needing a Crucified and Resurrected Redeemer to save it from original sin, Satan goes on to claim that Jesus was not the Son of God and did not die and rise to forgive sins and to restore this material Cosmos to the Material Creation under the Power of God that God always intended.

And we can also understand Satan's rabid pronouncements that human beings are nothing but slaves and that, to human beings, God can never be more than a Slave Master.

For, if Satan, who had been Samael, that first slave rebel, could not kill his Master, God, the least Satan could do would be to try to deprive the true sons of God, the human race, of their Father's inheritance.

For, to Satan (to Samael), God is truly just a Slave Master -- a kind slave master, a gracious one -- but a slave Master.

But to the human race, God is a Father, a Father of children, who are heirs to all God has.

So Islam, Satan's religion, announces that the human race are mere slaves, slaves just like the angels. Just as Satan, speaking as God in Islam, announces that there can be no Son of God (just as Samael hated the Son of God, because he, Samael, wanted to be the Heir to God's Gift), Satan also announces that the human race can *only come to God as slaves*.

Jesus Christ, on the other hand, tells his disciples to pray **OUR FATHER**. Jesus also says at the Last Supper:

I have told you this so that my joy may be in you and your joy may be complete. This is my commandment: love one another as I love you. No one has greater love than this, to lay down one's life for one's friend. You are my friends if you do what I command you. I no longer call you slaves, because a slave does not know what his master is doing. I have called you friends, because I have told you everything I have heard from my Father. It was not you who chose me, but I who chose you and appointed you to go and bear fruit that will remain, so that whatever you ask the Father in my name he may give you. This I command you: love one another.

John 15:11-17

So, Satan, in the guise of the God of Islam, will have the human race believe that human beings can only come to God as slave.

But the True God announces that the human race, when elected in Christ, become the Friends of God, and, in the perseverance of that friendship, are raised to become the Sons of God.

That is why Islam is Slavery, submission to the Slave Master God, which is the kind of God that Satan sees God as, and the kind of God Satan wants to be.

And that is why Christianity is the Church, the Flesh of Christ, in which all Christians are incorporated *into* Christ to become the Beloved Sons and Daughters of God.

Islam is Satan's vision of God.

The Church of Christ is God's vision of God.

We should also note that the slave rebellion of Samael is *not* similar to slave rebellions among human beings.

For human beings are, by their nature, brothers. So human slavery is the evil spectacle of one set of brothers enslaving another set of brothers. How outrageous is that?! So, while the violent aspects of a slave rebellion are morally problematic and questionable, the *fact of the desire to rebel is JUST*.

*But, for Samael, who by **nature** was a slave to God, to rise up in rebellion against God, and necessarily then, to *seek to murder God!*, that is a pure, unjust OUTRAGE.*

Likewise, second, we can see with animals, since they do not have **free** will, like humans and angels, but only have a will **in accordance with their nature**, animals do not have moral responsibility. They do not have immortal souls or lives, nor are they punished for their actions.

Animals simply act in accordance with their nature.....and their nature is in accordance with the world of which they are apart.

So, in the World As Created By God - the Primordial Paradise - animals were the friends and helpers of Man. Animals did not eat each other -- they did not desire to or have to. Rather, they ate the vegetation that God had created. They certainly did not eat human beings. And human beings did not eat animals -- they did not have to or want to.....any more than you would eat your pets. Rather, Adam and Eve, for the brief period that they were actually in the Garden of Eden, ate the many delicious fruits that grew plentifully from all the trees and bushes.

But, after Adam obeyed Eve rather than God, and sundered the Material Creation, the whole work of God blew apart, and only through the Spirit of God did this Material Chaos - this abode of Satan - knit itself back together, slowly, over ages, *evolving* into something that could be a substrate for the fallen souls of Adam and Eve.

And, *in that world* -- in **this** world -- animals did not obey the Will of God, which is peace and love, but the animals obeyed the Will of the God of this World, which is Satan, and his will is murder and violence and hatred and competition and rivalry.

We can also reflect that if Samael was indeed the highest of the angels, the chief slave, the Light-Bearer, God's chamberlain, the most perfectly created angelic spirit, then God, in defeating him, engaged in some more of that Divine Irony that is so much in God's Nature.

For, the angel Michael is but an archangel -- higher than a guardian angel, but far beneath the rank and dignity of a Seraphim. And certainly, if Samael was God's angelic lieutenant, Samael, we can presume, was a Seraphim. And yet, Michael, the mere archangel, when empowered with the Power and Might and Glory of God, can easily cast out and defeat the once mighty Seraphim, Samael.

And, in this and by this, God proves that God is God: for Samael thought that, by his own power, he could defeat God. But Samael, the Blindness of God, was blind to God: Samael was blind to the basic truth that all of his power was a gift from God. Once Samael disobeyed God, thus moving to supplant Him, Samael's power was revoked....for he lost the source of that Power, God. Samael, the electric appliance, made war with the outlet, (God), and thus unplugged himself, rendering himself utterly powerless. Thus disempowered, the archangel Michael could defeat Samael with this spiritual insight, "Who is like God?" which is the meaning of the name "Michael".

Thus, we can see (what was) Samael's activity throughout human history. Samael....now Satan, Lucifer, the Devil....seeks to similarly *blind* the human race from the sight of God. And, thus blinded, Satan hopes that the human race will suffer his sorry, tormented, and *eternal* fate: Hell Forever.

Thus, the three principal streams that Satan pissed into the river of history: Secular Modernity, Capitalism, and Islam: all seek to blind the human race, using the three principal sins: Lust, Pride, and Fear.

For the Seven Deadly Sins are really derivative of these Three Sins: Pride and Envy are just different dimensions of the same sin of Pride, envy merely being pride looking at someone with more rank or plenitude than ourselves. And lust, greed, and gluttony are essentially all Lust, just lusts for sex, money, or food, the three main sensual and psychological pleasures of this world. Anger is a catchall sin --- it is the sin that we commit when the object of one of our *other* sins is not obtained. If our core sin is Pride, we are angered when our self-regard is attacked. If our core sin is Lust, we are angered when someone deprives us of the sex, money, or food (or entertainment, etc.) that we desire. Sloth is a special case. Sloth is essentially the forfeiture of the Divine Fire, the abdication of the Divine Passion in favor of an idyll of torpor. Sloth is indeed the idolatry of idleness. The six main Sins - Pride, Envy, Anger, Lust, Gluttony, and Greed are sins of Passion, of eros. Sloth is the sin of thanatos, the death instinct. The six passionate, erotic sins seek Life, the Life of God, but try to obtain life *apart* from God. Sloth, the resigning sin, doesn't even bother to obtain any sort of life at all.

So, all sin reduces to being caused, variably, by a Lust for Plenitude, a Pride for Rank, or a Fear of Death.

And *all* of these sins -- *all* sin - is caused by Distrust. And for sin to be *committed* the temptation to **distrust** must be actualized in the action of **disobedience**.

For, only a soul who *distrusted* God could, in his search for plenitude, commit lustful actions. Only a soul who distrusted God could, in his search for his rightful dignity, commit proud outrages. Only a soul who distrusted God could, in his love of life, fear death.

All three Satanic currents in history, those eddying little pools of Satanic piss, Secular Modernity, Islam, and Capitalism are all based on a fundamental **distrust** that God is God.

Secular Modernity, the avatar of Lust, distrusts that God can, in this life and the next life, bring plenitude, so it desperately grasps at all the plenitude it can *here* in **this** life: orgies, bacchanals, and vast fortunes.

Capitalism, the avatar of pride, distrusts that God can, in this life and the next life, give us the rank that is truly ours, and distrusts that the rank assigned by God *can make us happy and fulfilled*. So, it desperately grasps for the most amount of money possible, the **highest point value**, in order to assure itself of its rank -- and thus, of its importance....its self-importance. Through attaining all these little coupons of value, these points, the Capitalist convinces himself that he has some value and meaning.....not trusting that God alone is just and truthful and will provide all the value and meaning a soul could ever need. (I'm looking at you, Warren Buffett.....)⁸⁷

Islam, the avatar of fear, distrusts that God can, in this life and the next life, accomplish His Purpose, His Kingdom *over* the world and *in* the world, without murder and bombings and shootings and torture and tyranny and oppression and slavery and endless war. It is so afraid, and spreads nothing but fear -- which is *terror* -- *precisely* because it knows, deep down, its own

⁸⁷ With five seconds to midnight, repent of your pride, turn, in faith, to Christ Jesus, and go home instead of going to Hell. I'd love to be able to talk to you in Heaven, rather than have to watch you get skewered in Hell.

origin. Islam knows that it was hatched from Hell, the spawn of Satan, the scourge of the earth, the cancer of this world. Islam was born into this world by its father, Satan, to murder the world. And sonny boy is doing its darnedest to do Daddy's work.

For all sin is blindness, as all distrust is blindness to God's Infinite Goodness.

The one who involves himself in lust blinds himself to the **truth** that God is Plenitude Himself, and that he who trusts in God can never be shorn of his Plenitude in God.

The one who involves himself in pride blinds himself to the **truth** that God's Rank ordering is right and good and just and *precisely what will make the soul happy*.

The one who involves himself in fear blinds himself to the **truth** that God is Sovereign, and that *nothing* can frustrate, hobble, or prevent the establishment of the Kingdom of Heaven on earth. As such, murder and destruction and mass death, the annihilation of cities and the slaughter of innocents, are *never* appropriate instruments for the establishment of God's Kingdom. Such things can only serve to confirm Satan's dominion of this world.

The True Christian will have to make a choice: shall the world ruin his or her body for a moment, or for a short while, or shall Satan ruin his or her soul for eternity?

A tutorial for the Children of God, for the Age of Peace, among the stars:

Starman
The Human Race

<https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=WyNFY1R-d8w>

That is why the Church, in the Age of Peace, must go out and baptize all of the Cosmos in the Name of the Father, and of the Son, and of the Holy Spirit, converting the alien races to Christ, teaching all the worlds to observe all that Christ has commanded the Christian People, the Flesh of Christ, to observe.

“And behold,” Christ is, “with you always, until the end of the age.” - until the End of Time.

You have to remember a basic fact about reality: human beings are the key to the whole ball game.

Which is to say: the perceiver is the prior reality, not the posterior reality.

In other words, the essence of reality is not material, it is perceptual.

Put another way, Adam and the human race are the Lords of the Material Creation. Sin is slavery to sin. Sin is to cast oneself out from the Lordship (and, hence, the Presence) of God, into an outer darkness beyond God’s Presence. Sin is to throw oneself out into spiritual anarchy. In such spiritual anarchy, God does *not* rule: the strongest rules. And Satan (who was once Samael) is, by far, the strongest spirit qua spirit. Satan is the strongest created spirit. It is only by persevering in the Spirit of God, the one Uncreated Spirit, that this strongest created spirit, Satan, can be defeated.

Satan, cast out of the presence of God, is starving; he is starving *precisely* for the Presence of God which is the essential (and only) nourishment that a spirit requires. In order to obtain that nourishment, he must dominate spirits that are themselves cast out from the Presence of God.

In this world we are suspended between God and nothingness -- between the Spirit and spiritual anarchy/chaos. So God offers a hand to pull us up, and Satan attempts to snatch us into permanent chaos, his deserved and final abode.

In order to continue to have any kind of spiritual nourishment, Satan must continually snatch the souls of human beings, so that, in this world through sin, and in Hell through damnation, Satan can feed upon human souls, sucking out every last drop of God that had been endued (had existed within) within them. That voracious feasting upon souls is, for the human soul, an essential aspect (probably *the* essential aspect) of Hell.

Also, by subjecting the human race to sin, Satan becomes the Ruler of this world -- Satan becomes the Ruler of the Material Creation, rather than God. Hence, instead of the Material Creation being unified and blessed, it is riven (blown apart) and cursed. That is why God says to Adam in Genesis 3:17:

To the man he said: "Because you listened to your wife and ate from the tree of which I had forbidden you to eat,

Cursed be the ground because of you!

In toil shall you eat its yield
all the days of your life.

Thorns and thistles shall it bring forth to you
as you eat of the plants of the field.

By the sweat of your face
shall you get bread to eat.

Until you return to the ground,
from which you were taken;

For you are dirt,
and to dirt you shall return.

Rather than the earth, the Material Creation, being a source of blessings -- of delights of all the many wondrous and beautiful perceptions that exist in and proceed out of God, and intimacy with Love Himself, God -- we are thrown out into an earth in which only with extraordinary labor, with bitter, cruel, agonizing labor, can even the basic nourishment that keeps you alive be gained.

We should also begin to realize the myriad absurdities to our life in this riven, sundered world, this world of which Satan is the overlord, the master, the Ruler.

For, even with all our machines, even with the rise of advanced capitalism, consider your everyday economic and material existence. *Every* thing you use -- from the toilet paper you use to wipe your behind, to the water that you use to wash yourself, to the soap you lather yourself with, to every particle of the breakfast, lunch and dinner you eat, to the electricity that you use to power the

devices to entertain yourself, to the condom or pill that you use to prevent pregnancy -- so that it does not interrupt your career (your ability to make money) or complicate your life through producing an extra child that you cannot afford --- *ALL OF IT* is accounted for by money. In other words, every single thing that you use to even basically maintain yourself in the world is affixed a numerical value -- *and that numerical value is scarce*. You must labor, with all psychological anguish, to gather enough of the numerical value to even feed yourself, clothe yourself, and wipe your own behind.

But that is *not* the nature of God. God is the Spirit of PLENITUDE - of Abundance. We live in a world of scarcity because of sin. Because of sin, this world was riven by distance from God -- and hence we endure in a state of scarcity, rather than plenitude.

And, indeed, because of sin, even though this earth (and the universe) is actually, even though distanced from God and existing in scarcity, quite capable of satisfying our basic needs (although not the spiritual needs for which we were created and for which only God is the satiation), most people feel the bite of scarcity quite sharply. Even in this sundered, sorry world, necessarily full of pain and death, there is more than enough material resources to keep *everyone* fed, clothed, and warm in safe shelters. And yet....and yet....the vast majority of the world is ill-fed, or not fed at all, is ill-clothed, and lives in shanties. And this is *precisely* because of the sinfulness of the rich, because of their exorbitant and outrageous *greed*. For, truly, while Satan is the Ruler of the World, the Rich are Satan's lieutenants.

What am I saying? **This:** Once the human race allows itself to be saved by Christ Jesus, by the True God, this material reality will dissolve. And once the salvation of God is fulfilled in the Second Coming, this world will be destroyed, since it will no longer have any basis to exist.

The world does not exist *out there* as a *material* fact. This world exists as a perception of the human race. The moment that the human race becomes totally freed from sin, this world will be over -- it will vanish, like a long and sordid nightmare, to be resurrected into the Paradise that God intended the Material Creation to be.

And *that* is why Satan is so crazy for human sin. Satan must, *at all costs*, keep the human race in the blindness of its sin. For the moment that the human race opens its eyes in total grace, this nightmare will end and Satan will be finally

cast into the eternal starvation - thirst and asphyxiation - of final damnation, of the pool of fire and sulphur which is final Hell.

So, Satan must *at all costs* keep the human race from grace. That is why the polytheistic pagan nations attempted to destroy the ancient nation of Israel with such fury. That is why the Roman Empire and the intransigent, violent Jewish leadership sought to crush the Christians.

That is why Satan created Islam to destroy the Church, the Flesh of Christ.

That is why Satan corrupted the Church, to turn it into an arrogant ecclesiastical Empire, one that could serve *him*.

That is why Satan, in his fit of pique with the Nazis, sought to exterminate the Jewish Nation, whose conversion to Christ would be the salvation of the world.

That is why Satan corrupted the liturgy and beliefs of the Catholic Church, so that there would be no beacon of light and truth to lead erring and sinful men from sin to salvation in Christ's grace.

That is why Satan's temptations twisted so many priests to pedophilia and caused the hierarchy of bishops and cardinals, in their mania for self-preservation and status, to cover it all up, thus delivering the Church a crippling blow.

That is why Satan engineered the rise of financial capitalism, to keep the world impoverished and to keep it desperately working 24/7 to keep itself afloat, so it could never even have time to *think* about God, much less pray and attain the salvation of grace.

That is why Satan has conjured up secular modernity -- an alternative religion with alternative gods -- sex, money, entertainment, self-help, motivation -- it is the cesspool of that American religion -- full of condoms and birth control and lotteries and meth and heroin and crack cocaine and reality television and 24-hour news and Joel Osteen and Oprah and *Survivor* and *The Apprentice* and *The Hills* and *Jersey Shore* and Kim Kardashian and Twitter and cheap booze swilled by the gallon and *The Secret* and a million other self-help books all encouraging you to *worship yourself -- because in worshipping yourself you worship Satan.* -- and *never* God.

So, what's the conclusion?

When the human race extricates itself from the Satanic lures placed ***within*** ***it***, Satan, the Ruler of *this* Cosmos, will use an external force to crush humanity **from without**.

And Satan has legions of species, all intelligent but brutal and evil, to work with and use.

But Satan can't simply kill us all. Satan knows that God would never allow it, and Satan also knows that if the human race were exterminated --- which is impossible because God will not allow it --- this Material Creation would cease to exist --- because it does not have a self-sustaining material existence independent of human perception.

So, Satan will not use his alien species to kill us all off -- although they will kill many of us to scare us to death - to terrorize us. No, Satan will use an alien invasion as a pretext to offer us an alternative savior. The Anti-Christ, pretending to be God's Savior, will use his supernatural power, along with his charisma and political ability, to defeat the alien invasion.

And then, all the Anti-Christ will ask is that we worship *him* as God and Christ and abandon True Christianity's patient, gracious, peaceful waiting for the Glorious Appearance of the True Christ.

We can also gain a greater insight into the nature of polytheism. Polytheism always involved the worship of *things* in the world -- the crudest polytheisms deified animals (the Egyptian, Akkadian, Sumerian, Assyrian, and Babylonian polytheisms all deified animals), while the more sophisticated polytheisms deified human beings (the Greek, Roman, and Norse polytheisms). Always involved were the deifications of natural phenomena, like the Sun, Moon, planets, and stars.

So, the essence of polytheism is to deify the creature, while scorning the Creator.

Satan's Ultra-Monotheism, Islam, plays a sly trick. It calls the essence of True Monotheism, the Trinity, *shirk*, or polytheism. Now, as I have repeatedly shown, not only is the Trinity compatible with Monotheism, it is the beating heart of Monotheism. No Monotheism is possible without the concept of a multi-dimensional God.

The only other kind of One God is a uni-dimensional God, and, as I have repeatedly shown, a uni-dimensional God is necessarily Satan.

The Trinity as a *name*, although harmless to the well-educated Christian, may be somewhat problematic. Perhaps a better term (maybe?) might be Tri-Unity. The Giver, the Gift, and the Bond of Gratitude are truly three, and *because* truly three He is truly ONE.

The Trinity -- the Tri-Unity -- is three because the Giver gives the Gift to the Gift, and the Gift returns the Gift to the Giver in Gratitude.

The Tri-Unity is truly ONE because the Giver is the one who gives the Gift - that means that the essence of the Giver is the Gift. The Gift is the one who receives the Gift. And since the Giver is the Gift, the one who receives the Gift is the Giver. The Gratitude is the gift of the Gift by the Giver to the Gift and the return of the gift from the Gift back to the Giver. He is a Spiral and Cyclone of Mutual Self-Gift -- of Love.

A One God without the three essential dimensions of Giver, Gift, and Gratitude is *necessarily* a Vortex of Evil.

A One God that is just "One" -- one note -- is not a True God, for the only True God is the God who is Love.

A One God who is totally one note can only be a ME! ME! ME! ME! ME! ME! ME!
ME! ME!

You can never have a relationship with that God. You can never be intimate with that God. You can never be loved by that God or return love to that God.

Now, this is obvious.

And it is strongly stated, logically.

So, naturally, all the Muslims can do is make loud noises with their tongues, scream, shout, curse, shoot guns in the air, and cut your head off --- because *they've got nothing to say. They got nothing.*

All they have is arrogance and violence and threats.

Christianity is rich and full and wise -- and you can call it names, and you can kill its people -- but you can't kill *it* because *it* is true. You can't kill Christianity any more than you can kill God. (And that is what Satan first tried to do before the foundation of the world -- the world as it was before the Fall.)

Islam is poor and empty and foolish -- and if you touch it, it falls apart like the House of Cards it is.

That is precisely why the Guardians of Islam must totally ban criticism of the religion -- even and *especially* **scholarly** criticism. Because the whole *damned* thing is a load of bunk, a morass of Satanic filth.

They can't sit quietly in a conference hall, peaceably, amicably, sensibly and talk it through like *human beings* -- precisely *because* it is so weak and such an **obvious** sham of a "religion".

So **all** they can do is murder -- a big, fat murderfest of SATANIC proportions -- beheadings and shootings and bombings and nuclear explosions -- because **they got nothing.**

ALL they can do is murder like beasts, because their religion is beastly, just like its founder, Satan.

Christianity says LOVE FORGIVENESS MERCY PEACE JUSTICE HOPE.

Islam says MURDER MURDER MURDER DEATH DEATH DEATH KILL KILL KILL BOMB BOMB BOMB BOMB BOMB BOMB DESTROY DESTROY DESTROY EVIL EVIL EVIL.

And then, when you call Islam murderous.....*what do they do?!* *Call for people to murder you! And then, when they do, you had better not say that Islam is murderous!!!*

I mean: *Isn't this obvious?!*

I mean give me a freaking break over here!!!

<https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=a3cMag9FAa0>

And, really, this makes perfect sense. Because the essence of polytheism is idolatry. *Polytheism is idolatry.*

So, if you worship anything other than God, you're an idolator. Plain and simple.

The worship of animals, human beings, or astronomical phenomena is simple Pagan Polytheism.

Islam is the unwitting worship of Satan, so it is a mono-theism, but the mono is directed to Satan, and not God.

Atheism makes the self God, for it attributes all moral authority to the self.

Satanism knowingly does what Islam (mostly) does unwittingly: worship Satan.

And this makes sense, because there are only **three** fundamental entities in Reality: perceptions, spirits, and the Spirit.

Animals are forms of perception: they are the perception of perception -- they are spiritually two-dimensional. One-dimensional perception includes the more complex ideas, like plant life, and the simpler ideas, like the objects of the senses: shape, color, the different smells, the different tastes (sweet, bitter), and the different touches (softness, hardness). An animal is an idea that can behold itself, but *cannot* choose.

Spirits are perceptions of perceptions of perception. They are three-dimensional involutions of perception such that they *can* choose. They do not simply will what is their nature to will, but, to be themselves, *they must choose* their nature. That is the essence of freedom.

God is the Spirit -- he is not a perception. HE is the perceiver. All that *is* is perceived by him. And all that *is* is good. All evil is merely a privation of the good. All pain is merely the privation of satiety, comfort, and pleasure. Evil and pain are *real*, but they are not efficiencies, they are deficiencies. Evil and pain are all too real deficiencies of true being: the good, in which is all pleasure, comfort, light, truth, and love. (This is the most basic Augustinian philosophy -- it's not new, and it's not mine, i.e. I hold to it, but I didn't formulate it.)

The exteriority of God is His Power -- His omnipotence, omniscience, and omnipresence. The interiority of God is His Love (sometimes, in philosophical parlance, named with the clunky moniker "omnibenevolent". Try that in a romantic comedy some time, or a song: I will always be omnibenevolent towards you.....not a dry eye in the room. Do you believe in omnibenevolence at first sight?)

The Holy Angels, who never sinned, can *feel* God's Love -- they can feel it radiating all through them, radiating all around them. But they are *not* God's Love.

Sinful humans, saved by Christ, who thus have the Spirit of Christ within them, the Elect, *know* the WHOLENESS, THE GLORY OF LOVE. Being forgiven gives a sinner, become a Christian, in eternity a Saint, *access* to the deepest truth about God: His Love.

With access to that Love, saved by that Love, the Christian Saint **becomes** God's Love. A Saint does not simply *feel* God's Love, He *IS* God's Love.

The sinner who chooses himself or herself *loses* himself or herself.

The Christian saint who chooses God at the *cost* of his or her life, gains God, and thus, gains all, including himself or herself.

That is why St. Matthew recounts (Matthew 16:24-28):

Then Jesus said to his disciples, “Whoever wishes to come after me must deny himself, take up his cross, and follow me. For whoever wishes to save his life will lose it, but whoever loses his life for my sake will find it. What profit would there be for one to gain the whole world and forfeit his life? Or what can one give in exchange for his life? For the Son of Man will come with his angels in his Father’s glory, and then he will repay everyone according to his conduct. Amen, I say to you, there are some standing here who will not taste death until they see the Son of Man coming in his kingdom.”

That is why St. John recounts in the Apocalypse (Revelation 21:5-8):

The one who sat on the throne said, “Behold, I make all things new.” Then he said, “Write these words down, for they are trustworthy and true. He said to me, “They are accomplished. I am the Alpha and the Omega, the beginning and the end. To the thirsty I will give a gift from the spring of life-giving water. The victor will inherit these gifts, and I shall be his God, and he will be my son. But as for cowards, the unfaithful, the depraved, murderers, the unchaste, sorcerers, idol-worshippers, and deceivers of every sort, their lot is in the burning pool of fire and sulfur, which is the second death.”

Romans 1 is the last word on the subject of Polytheism. In it St. Paul proclaims:

Greeting.

Paul, a slave of Christ Jesus, called to be an apostle and set apart for the gospel of God, which he promised previously through his prophets in the holy scriptures, the gospel about his Son, descended from David according to the flesh, but established as Son of God in power according to the spirit of holiness through resurrection from the dead, Jesus Christ our Lord. Through him we have received the grace of apostleship, to bring about the obedience of faith, for the sake of his name, among all the Gentiles,^{e 6} among whom are you also, who are called to belong to Jesus Christ; to all the beloved of God in Rome, called to be holy. Grace to you and peace from God our Father and the Lord Jesus Christ.

Thanksgiving.

First, I give thanks to my God through Jesus Christ for all of you, because your faith is heralded throughout the world. God is my witness, whom I serve with my spirit in proclaiming the gospel of his Son, that I remember you constantly, always asking in my

prayers that somehow by God's will I may at last find my way clear to come to you. For I long to see you, that I may share with you some spiritual gift so that you may be strengthened, that is, that you and I may be mutually encouraged by one another's faith, yours and mine. I do not want you to be unaware, brothers, that I often planned to come to you, though I was prevented until now, that I might harvest some fruit among you, too, as among the rest of the Gentiles. To Greeks and non-Greeks alike, to the wise and the ignorant, I am under obligation; that is why I am eager to preach the gospel also to you in Rome. God's Power for Salvation.

For I am not ashamed of the gospel. It is the power of God for the salvation of everyone who believes: for Jew first, and then Greek. For in it is revealed the righteousness of God from faith to faith; as it is written, "The one who is righteous by faith will live."

Punishment of Idolaters.

The wrath of God is indeed being revealed from heaven against every impiety and wickedness of those who suppress the truth by their wickedness. For what can be known about God is evident to them, because God made it evident to them. Ever since the creation of the world, his invisible attributes of eternal power and divinity have been able to be understood and perceived in what he has made. As a result, they have no excuse; for although they knew God they did not accord him glory as God or give him thanks. **Instead, they became vain in their reasoning, and their senseless minds were darkened. While claiming to be wise, they became fools and exchanged the glory of the immortal God for the likeness of an image of mortal man or of birds or of four-legged animals or of snakes. Therefore, God handed them over to impurity through the lusts of their hearts** for the mutual degradation of their bodies. They exchanged the truth of God for a lie and revered and worshiped the creature rather than the creator, who is blessed forever. Amen.

Therefore, God handed them over to degrading passions. Their females exchanged natural relations for unnatural, and the males likewise gave up natural relations with females and burned with lust for one another. Males did shameful things with males and thus received in their own persons the due penalty for their perversity. And since they did not see fit to acknowledge God, God handed them over to their undiscerning mind to do what is improper. They are filled with every form of wickedness, evil, greed, and malice; full of envy, murder, rivalry, treachery, and spite. They are gossips and scandalmongers and they hate God. They are insolent, haughty, boastful, ingenious in their wickedness, and rebellious toward their parents. They are senseless, faithless, heartless, ruthless. Although they know the just decree of God that all who practice such things deserve death, they not only do them but give approval to those who practice them.

We must also note that the modern polytheism is atheism -- the belief that, really, there is no God.....at least no God *who is God*, and thus human beings are God, and God approves of our human self-deification.

Romans 1 serves as an excellent history of the Modern West.

Romans 1 also serves as a warning to Islam, the followers of which have turned their “monotheism” into a diabolical debacle of murder, destruction, and outrage.

You have to remember, Satan inhabited the serpent in the Garden of Eden. This is because the serpent was the craftiest of the creatures. Of all the animals, it had the perception *closest* to the three-dimensional consciousness of a spirit. Remember, a perception is the most basic unit aside from the Singular Unity, the SPIRIT of God. There are more simple perceptions, like colors and tastes, and there are more complex perceptions, like plant life. *Consciousness* is the perception of perception: that is the essence of an animal. The *perception of consciousness* is spirit, and a spirit has *free will*. An animal, which merely has consciousness, can perceive its own nature, and the operations of its own nature, *but it cannot choose whether or not to obey its own nature*. A spirit, on the other hand, has both a free will and a nature determined by God. A spirit’s beatitude is in using its freedom to choose what God has, in perfect wisdom and love, made its nature. A spirit’s damnation is misusing its freedom to choose *against* what God has, in perfect wisdom and love, made its nature.

The serpent itself was *not* a spirit, but was merely that animal in the Primordial Paradise whose consciousness *most closely resembled* the inner life of a spirit.

So, naturally, Satan, the most perfectly created spirit, would inhabit the most perfectly created animal. For Satan had been created perfect in nature, but had *willed* to be something more than his nature. Satan willed to be God. And in doing so, by deranging his will from his nature, he fell into damnation. So, being the most perfectly created spirit, he became, (now detached from God), the most utterly damned spirit.

Now, what does Genesis say about the serpent? It says, “Now the serpent was the most cunning of all the animals that the LORD God had made” (3:1).

The word translated as “cunning” is the Hebrew אָרוּם, or “arum”. Arum can be understood as crafty, shrewd, sensible, or prudent, as in a shrewd businessman or a crafty criminal or a sensible manager. What had been Samael, now Satan-Lucifer-the Devil, is not some cartoon red imp with a pitchfork.



NOT the Devil



More like the Devil



The Devil is the most cunning boss you've ever had -- that salesman that you thought was on the level....until you realized you had lost your shirt.

In other words, the Devil is the ultimate operator. He's every real estate broker, used car salesman, shady lawyer, crooked doctor, and sly, corrupt pastor you've ever met, all rolled into one. He also is the greatest orator ever.

The Devil *imitates* God. The Devil was created to be an observer of God, the greatest Observer of God -- so he has the wisdom of a theologian and the magisterial presence of the greatest prelate.

The *only* way to tell God and the Devil apart, ultimately, is through a reference to their *fruits* -- because, by their fruits you will know them (Matthew 7:20). For the fruit of something *reveals* its spirit.

If love and peace and understanding flow from something, it is from God.

If hatred and anger and lust and war and murder flow from something, it is from Satan.

Now, of course, a Child of Satan's hatred *against* God is not God's fault, nor is it evidence *against* God. In fact, the hatred and violence of those who hate God and hate God's Truth is evidence *for* the True God.

So, for instance, if someone hates *me* and murders me, that does not show that *my* fruits were hatred and murder. **Obviously**, the hater and murderer reveals himself to be poisoned fruit, grown from a Tree of Wickedness, in service to Satan.

No follower of God, no lover of the Truth, murders. No follower of God strikes out in violence against the non-violent. No follower of God tortures and terrorizes. Only Children of Satan do such things.

God never calls for murder, never calls for violence against the non-violent. God never calls for torture and terror.

Only Satan calls for such things.

So, what can we say? Satan has no agenda other than to damn souls so that he can feast upon them in Hell.

Satan has no ideology other than himself. No belief system, no intricate plan, no vision of a better world -- no 30 principles, 10 rules, 5 directives. Satan **will** use religions, systems, ideas, visions -- **but he himself doesn't give a damn about such things.**

Satan's only ideology



Which means that Satan will shift and change up his strategies. So, the means will always shift -- but the *end*, the **goal**, is ALWAYS the same.

<https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=Ea7XIUuj7ag>

In order to get you, a soul, into Satan's belly, Satan must **derange** you from God, who is the Spirit. And God is the foundation of your *own* spirit. So, if you **commit** actions (both physical and mental *actions*) contrary to God, you are deranging yourself from yourself -- twisting off your spirit from your soul, your self from the foundation of your self, who is God.

That **derangement** of yourself from the root of yourself, of your self from God -- of your soul from God, is called **SIN**.

So sin is the necessary ingredient to get you away from God and into Satan's belly.

Sin is disobedience to God, and the only reason, deep down, someone disobeys God is because he or she does not **trust** God.

That distrust can be generated through a number of *temptations*. These temptations involve disorientations to (1) one's plenitude (either in one's physical flesh or mental spirit), (2) one's sense of dignity, or one's sense of rank, or (3) fear -- fear of pain, fear of non-existence, even fear of damnation.

When one cannot **trust** that God will **ultimately** satisfy one's desire for plenitude, one will **commit** the sins of Lust.

When one cannot **trust** that God will **ultimately** give one the rank he *deserves*, and cannot accept the rank one deserves, one will **commit** the sins of Pride.

When one will not **trust** that God will help one endure anything and will raise you from the dead, one will **commit** the sins of Fear.

So the whole ball game of human history, from Satan's perspective, is to involve human beings in one or more of three basic sins -- lust, pride, and fear.

God, of course, offers human beings the grace to escape these sins. God knows who would accept such grace, so He only offers the grace to those whom He knows will accept it (Romans 9).

So Satan will use different strategies and techniques to elicit the necessary lust, pride, or fear necessary to cause human beings to **commit** sinful thoughts and actions (and all thoughts are mental actions), thus deranging them from themselves, thus ruining their souls, thus making them only suitable to be thrown out in the trash incinerator that is Hell.

We could spend the rest of our lives -- indeed, many lives -- going into detail about each tactic used, but, in the absence of a few lifetimes to do so, I will brush a few broad strokes.

First, when Adam and Eve manifested *from* the ruined Primordial Paradise *into* this sundered material reality, the **first** tactic would be to elicit the necessary lust, pride, and fear through predation **by** the animals -- including the intelligent beasts -- *upon* Adam and Eve and the Children of Seth.

Remember, the animals had been created essentially as pets -- the Garden of Eden was a vast and wondrous Zoo, only one without any need for cages or guards.

In Satan's world, with Adam now a slave of Satan (having willingly chosen disobedience to God- willingly though ignorant of the ramifications of that choice), the animals became **predators**.

So, Satan could try to elicit the necessary despair that comes from being hunted, and also stir up the self-pity that leads to pride and the rampant, disordered sexuality that fear of oblivion generates.

And Satan, being a genius (although an evil genius), did a pretty good job. The result of the chaos of predation was the sinful, wicked world of the Nephilim and the Days of Noah, when all the world was consumed with greed and lust and pride.

God wiped that world out with the Flood, the Deluge of God's Wrath by water.

After that, Satan took a more deliberate approach: instead of simply using animal predators, he could use human beings against human beings, *directly*, in an organized fashion.

The Flood took place circa 2900 B.C.

The world's first empire, that of the Akkadian Sargon the Great, was established around the 24th Century B.C. Sargon was a mighty ruler who established his supremacy throughout Mesopotamia and promoted the universal predominance of the Akkadian religion, culture, and language in the region.

If the fear of predators, both animal and homo sapiens, isn't enough to stuff souls into Satan's belly, then Satan is perfectly happy to create a *system* -- a system based on a cruel and arrogant polytheistic religion and a culture that idolized the world -- sex and money.

So, God, in the late 3rd or early 2nd Millennium B.C., drew Abraham *out* of Ur, *out* of this Akkadian-Babylonian nightmare, this Satanic society.

God formed the nation of Israel precisely to counter Satan's world system.

So, Satan spent the rest of the Age before Christ attempting to destroy Abraham, Isaac, and Jacob and all the Israelites. He used the Egyptians, the Assyrians, and the Babylonians to do his will.

God used Satan's strategies for *His own* purposes. While Satan wanted to use Egypt, Assyria, and Babylon to **destroy** Israel, God allowed Satan's empires to **chastise** Israel, so that Israel would repent and return to God, and, in returning, become ever stronger in God.

Thus, though the Nation of Israel was smashed by the Babylonian Horror, the Babylonian Empire was itself conquered by Cyrus the Great of Persia, and God used Cyrus to return the Israelite elite back to the Land to rebuild the Temple.

Out of whatever processes of Divine Providence (not immediately clear to me), the Greeks developed a more enlightened culture, attuned not merely to the crude and barbarous polytheism and world-worship of the Oriental polytheistic empires, but striving for the best life of man, for a good life that was virtuous and founded upon reason -- which is eternal and proceeds from the Spirit of God.

The Roman nation originally had a complementary virtue: not the virtue of the intellect, but the virtue of strength. The Romans, during the early days of the Republic, were hardy and ascetic. While not philosophical, and while not without their brutalities, they were not as world-worshipping as the Eastern polytheistic empires.

When the Romans, initially out of defensive paranoia, and, later, a growing sweet tooth for the goodies of empire (political power and wealth in the form of treasure, slaves, and commerce), conquered the Mediterranean world, they absorbed the Greek culture and the Greco-Roman fusion became the basis for the Roman Empire of Augustus.

Now, I believe that the "superior" polytheisms of the Greeks and Romans, which more and more discarded palpable polytheism for the rational worldliness of philosophy and statecraft, were steered, somewhat, by God, in an effort to prepare the groundwork of a culture oriented towards Him.

However, where God is at work, Satan is always right there to pervert the matter.

So, while the Greeks did better than the Assyrians and Babylonians, their very cultural superiority bred within them a cultural arrogance that demanded cultural hegemony. Hence, the Seleucid oppression of Israel, in the Hellenistic effort to crush the worship of the LORD and replace it with a homogenized Greek religion and culture.

The Romans simply wanted peace, order, and taxes. But they did so using imperialism, oppression, murders, massacres, duplicity, deceit, and the cult of false gods.

So, naturally, the Roman desire to make *this* world the world that *they*, the sensible, crafty, shrewd Romans wanted **conflicted** with God's desire to smash this world, destroy the Rule of Satan, and restore this sundered material reality to God's Power and Truth, that it might be re-created as the New Heavens and the New Earth.

I believe that that is why Jesus of Nazareth, the God-Man, the Christ, the Savior, the Son of God, incarnated during the reign of Augustus Caesar (Luke 2:1).

Augustus claimed to be a God, the son of Caesar (hence, also the son of God), and the Savior of the World.

And Augustus was more than a cheap knock-off. He was a brilliant, charismatic genius who wielded power like a virtuoso and used that power to bring peace to the world.

So, while anyone in their right mind would look at the Assyrian Empire and scream, "SATAN! SATAN! SATAN! Oh my LORD! SATAN!" the Roman Empire's Satanic reality was far better concealed -- far more shrewdly hidden.

All Rome said was, "Obey," and in return you would be granted life -- and, for more people than in previous ages, life abundantly -- food, sex, beauty, and all manner of pleasures and goods in this worldly, earthly life.

But that is **precisely** what God wants to avoid: because the better the deception, the more certainly one falls into the pit of sin, and is thus ruined, such that upon entrance into eternity at death, one is totally claimed by Satan and must suffer Hell for eternity without hope of escape.

So, just as the Flood was God's response to the Nephilim and the Nation of Israel was God's response to the Akkadian-Babylonian world system, Jesus Christ was the answer to the Roman Empire. The Kingdom of God and of God's Messiah, Christ Jesus the King (Mashiach Yehoshua the Melech in Hebrew), set itself against the Satanic Empire of Power, Money, Sex, Food and False Gods.

And although the Romans, with the Jewish leadership, crucified and murdered Christ Jesus, the Risen Christ Jesus, through the Apostles, flourished as the Church.

And, ultimately, despite persecutions -- **because** of persecutions -- the Church triumphed and destroyed the Roman Empire.

With the Evil Satanic Empire gone, Satan had to try another gambit to destroy God's activity in the world.

In order to destroy the Church and establish a Satanic World System, Satan created Islam to conquer the Church and then conquer the world.

First, Satan had used animal predators, second he had used a Polytheistic World System of crude polytheism, third he had used the apparently more humane (but still, on the inside, totally brutal) Greek and Roman Empires.

Now, he copied God again and used a “Monotheistic” “religion” to try to stamp out God’s work in Israel and the Church. It would be a mask of monotheism over a heart of idolatry. On the outside it would talk all mercy and compassion, and on the inside it would be all murder, horror, terror, torture, and world conquest.

By the grace of God, the Islamic hordes were stopped at the Battle of Tours in 732.

So, defied, Satan turned to corrupting the European Church and building up his Islamic Empire, and the two clashed throughout the Middle Ages.

Satan, unable to defeat the Church from without, tried a different strategy to knock out the obviously indestructible Church: corrupt it from within. Once sufficiently corrupted, Satan could build up an alternative structure for European civilization.

Using the dual ploys of clerical arrogance and secular atheism, Satan concocted the Schismatic Reformation and the rise of Secular Materialist Science.

Whereas animal predators simply sought to instill fear, and the polytheistic empires had sought to snatch people from God and Christ through fear *and* the promise of peace and pleasures, and Islam had attempted to smash the Church and snatch souls from Christ with fears *and* promises *and* the illusion of sanctity, now Secular Capitalist Modernity would promise Heaven on Earth.

One catch -- Heaven on Earth simply required abandoning God in Heaven.

With atheism the de facto religion of the West, gestating inside the Host of Christendom like a monster from the *Alien* films, all manner of nonsense spewed forth -- Deism, the French Revolution, Communism/Marxism, Anarchism, Industrial Capitalism, Ayn Randism, Corporate Capitalism.....and, naturally, when you believe in nothing, you end up believing in everything....and that everything ultimately ends up being Satan, worshipped in the Occult.

Satan’s bid for a World Empire fashioned truly after *Satan’s* image was, obviously, the Nazi Empire. Anyone who can’t see the obvious Satanic characteristics of the Nazi Empire simply has no ear for the spiritual reality.

Like with the Battle of Tours, the Allies resisted the Nazi Empire, and then the West resisted the atheistical Soviet Empire.

But the victor became.....I don’t know.....a bit *Roman* perhaps? An Empire that wasn’t straight-up out of Hell like the Nazis, that wasn’t blatantly atheistical like the Soviets, that wasn’t polytheistic like the ancient empires, and that wasn’t brutal and devilish and duplicitous, appearing to be from God when it actually crushed the soul in tyranny, like the Islamic Empire, but that was just out for a good time.

The American Empire just wanted brewskis, burgers, and some skirt.....and if it made a million bucks along the way, all the better.

Surf City
Jan & Dean

<https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=N5V3wcREqcl>

The problem is that brewskis, burgers, and skirt, while, in themselves, lovely, are not GOD. It is not the KINGDOM OF GOD, THE KINGDOM OF GOD'S GRACE, POWER, AND MERCY.

It is a remix of the Roman Empire, where the worldly pleasures of money, power, and sex, and their cult, are now regurgitated in updated electronic versions.

We can also round out our understanding of Genesis 1-11, with a brief discussion of the Tower of Babel (Genesis 11:1-9):

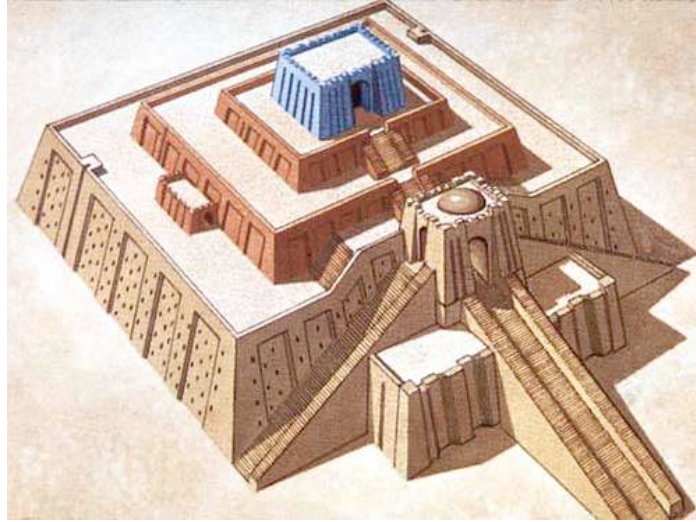
1 The whole world had the same language and the same words. 2 When they were migrating from the east, they came to a valley in the land of Shinar and settled there. 3 They said to one another, "Come, let us mold bricks and harden them with fire." They used bricks for stone, and bitumen for mortar. 4 Then they said, "Come, let us build ourselves a city and a tower with its top in the sky, and so make a name for ourselves; otherwise we shall be scattered all over the earth."

5 The LORD came down to see the city and the tower that the people had built. 6 Then the LORD said: If now, while they are one people and all have the same language, they have started to do this, nothing they presume to do will be out of their reach. 7 Come, let us go down and there confuse their language, so that no one will understand the speech of another. 8 So the LORD scattered them from there over all the earth, and they stopped building the city. 9 That is why it was called Babel, because there the LORD confused the speech of all the world. From there the LORD scattered them over all the earth.

The world to God is the descendants of Adam and Eve through Seth, thus, through Noah and his family.

Shinar is Sumer, the ancient seat of Akkad and Ur and Babylon -- the seats of the empires of Sargon and Hammurabi.

The structure that the Akkadian-Sumerians built, the Tower of Babel, the Tower of Babylon, is one or many of their ziggurats. Sumerian ziggurats were temples that rose to the sky.



These structures may not seem impressive now, but back 4000 years ago *they were very impressive*. Your old Game Boy may not seem impressive now, but back in the early 1990s, they *were very impressive*.

The whole point of a ziggurat was to reach the gods -- and to do so on human terms, without the knowledge or worship of the True God, the One God.

In other words, the Akkadian-Sumerian form of worship imitated Satan, its Master -- for Satan also tried to *make himself* God.

God could not stand that -- could not stand that from Satan, could not stand it from Eve and Adam or the men in the Days of Noah, and wouldn't stand it from the Akkadians-Sumerians.

So, God smashed the unified religious and linguistic Empire of the Akkadians, such that that Satanic world system could not continue to grow and putrefy and threaten the Children of Seth, the Children of Noah, the Children of Israel, the Children of God.

On a side note, we can clearly see strong evidence in the Quran that the theory proposed in this book regarding the origins of humanity, of the Children of God, is correct.

The Quran was spoken by Satan.

In Quran 7:12, it says, “[Allah] said, ‘What prevented you from prostrating when I commanded you?’ [Satan] said, ‘I am better than him. You created me from fire and created him from clay.’”⁸⁸

In this we can clearly see the truth that angels are pure spirits while human beings are spirits en fleshed in matter. We can also clearly hear Satan's editorial voice: From Satan's point of view, we human beings are not merely en fleshed spirits -- we are merely matter, merely

⁸⁸ <https://quran.com/>

clay....and Satan, as a spiritual chauvinist, has nothing but contempt for material beings, especially spiritual-material hybrids such as ourselves. Satan finds such miscegenation of natures disgusting. To Satan, God is the perverse chief breeder of monstrosities.

More to the point, Satan recounts his own expulsion from Heaven in Quran 7:13, “[Allah] said, ‘Descend from Paradise, for it is not for you to be arrogant therein. So get out; indeed, you are of the debased.’”

Note the word “descend”. Satan is cast out of Heaven. Cast out where and into what? Hell. So, naturally, as Heaven is existentially above Hell, Satan must “descend” to the lower realm.

Now listen to the word that Satan uses in the Quran to describe Adam and Eve’s expulsion from Paradise.

Quran 7:24 recounts God as saying to Adam and Eve (and Satan would know, since he was there): “[Allah] said, ‘Descend, being to one another enemies. And for you on the earth is a place of settlement and enjoyment for a time.’”

Now, note first that this is *not* how God’s Word, the Bible, recounts this scenario. The earth after the Fall is *not* described as a place of settlement and enjoyment. Rather, it is a place of bitter woe. For Adam and Eve had *everything* in the Garden: food, sex, companionship with the animals, who were all friendly.

Adam and Eve didn’t gain anything by being expelled from Eden - they lost everything. Earth wasn’t a place of settlement -- it was a prison. Earth wasn’t a place of enjoyment -- it was a place of woe, misery, and death, with whatever enjoyments of food and sex they still had being marred by having to labor for their bread and Eve (who, in Genesis 5, has many children) having to suffer each labor horribly (with no epidural or any form of pain relief).

Listen to the words of Genesis 5:16-24:

To the woman he said: I will intensify your toil in childbearing; in pain you shall bring forth children. Yet your urge shall be for your husband, and he shall rule over you.

To the man he said: Because you listened to your wife and ate from the tree about which I commanded you, You shall not eat from it: Cursed is the ground because of you! In toil you shall eat its yield all the days of your life. Thorns and thistles it shall bear for you, and you shall eat the grass of the field. By the sweat of your brow you shall eat bread, Until you return to the ground, from which you were taken; For you are dust, and to dust you shall return.

The man gave his wife the name “Eve,” because she was the mother of all the living. The LORD God made for the man and his wife garments of skin, with which he clothed them.

Then the LORD God said: See! The man has become like one of us, knowing good and evil! Now, what if he also reaches out his hand to take fruit from the tree of life, and eats of it and lives forever?

The LORD God therefore banished him from the garden of Eden, to till the ground from which he had been taken. He expelled the man, stationing the cherubim and the fiery revolving sword east of the garden of Eden, to guard the way to the tree of life.

Adam and Eve had every delight of every kind of delicious fruit from which to eat in the Garden of Eden, growing spontaneously, with little to no effort required. *Now*, on the other hand, Adam would be thrown into an agricultural society where one had to desperately and assiduously work the land in order to grow grass-like wheat, to turn it into bread. They had every delicious fruit to eat; now they would have nothing more than one-note, monotonous bread for which they had to toil. (And for all those lovers of bread, this wasn't Belle Époque France, and they didn't have brie or camembert to spread on their baguettes.)

A place of enjoyment?

A place of settlement?

By that standard, Rikers Island is a place of enjoyment and settlement.

San Quentin is a place of enjoyment and settlement.

Satan slipped up, and gave himself away, in using the word "descend" twice. For atheists and Muslims would have us believe that *this* world was the world created by God; or, in the case of atheists, the world that is a given -- that is, the only world there ever was or could be .

But, obviously, it is not. The world created by God was a Paradise befitting its Perfect Maker -- in it were all delights, with immortality, all pleasures, all peace, and all intimacy with God.

This world is a shattered joke, the world that God created sundered by sin and shattered into bits.

And, just as Satan had to descend to Hell after his sin, so too Adam and Eve had to *descend* to this earth after *their* sins.

This world is not a place of enjoyment and settlement. It is a place of punishment, until we are worthy, through death in Jesus Christ, to be restored to God and, on the Last Day, to be resurrected.

We can also briefly note the terrible power of the Prime Angel, the most powerful of the created spirits, Samael, (according to Jewish legend):

There was another angel in the seventh heaven, different in appearance from all the others, and of frightful mien. **His height was so great, it would have taken five hundred years to cover a distance equal to it, and from the crown of his head to the soles of his feet he was studded with glaring eyes.** "This one," said Metatron, addressing Moses, "is Samael, who takes the soul away from man." "Whither goes he now?" asked Moses, and Metatron replied, "To fetch the soul of Job the pious." Thereupon Moses prayed to God in these words, "O may it be Thy will, my God and the God of my fathers, not to let me fall into the hands of this angel."⁸⁹

Indeed, Samael was meant to be the greatest of the angels, and an angel is primarily, totally, an *observer* of God's Reality. (Note how this angel is studded from head to foot with glaring eyes. That is also what makes him such a perfect Accuser -- he observes sin.) But, this observer, in his self-willed arrogance, came to believe that he was rightfully the Observed, God.

The key point here is that God knew that Samael would fall -- it was the Will of God, it was the will of Samael -- although, God's Will was for Good, and Samael's will was for evil. In God's Will, God is glorified, and in Samael's self-chosen will, Samael is ruined.

Which leads us from the Divine Irony to the heart of the Divine Wisdom. It is *not* the one who most *sees* who is the greatest, it is the one who most *does* -- and the only true doing is the doing, the carrying out, of the Will of God.

So, while Samael is ruined and humiliated as the nothingness that wears the masks of Satan, Lucifer, and the Devil, the Son, who did God's Will even in the depths of Hell, is the greatest. And anyone *in* Him, through the generosity of the Greatest, likewise becomes as Great as the Son.

And Michael, though created lower in nature than Samael, through *doing* the Will of God in casting the Accuser, Satan, out of Heaven, becomes the Commander of the Heavenly Hosts.

So, again, we see here verified the Wisdom of God: "Thus, the last will be first, and the first will be last" (Matthew 20:16).

The Warning is simply this: One cannot rely on his or her own strength to defeat the Power of Satan, or to escape the deceptions of Lucifer, or to extricate oneself from the stratagems of the Devil. Only relying upon the Power and Grace of the Son of God, Christ Jesus, can allow a soul to have the strength to defeat every power, every lie, and every plot, and ascend into the bosom of the All-Righteous, the Communion of Love that is God: the Father, the Son, and the Holy Spirit.

And just as Samael was the blind observer, the blind spirit (and it is the essence of spirit to *see*), so too, to the ruined spirit, Satan will be the Master of those who are spiritually blind: the damned.

⁸⁹ <https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Samael#Judaism>

FAITH in Christ as Lord, Savior, and God is faith in God, Our Father.

Islam is the religion of the world, and of the world's ruler, Satan.

**Faith in Christ, Hope in Christ, and Love of, by, through, for, and in CHRIST is
FREEDOM - FREEDOM IN GOD, WHO IS LOVE, WHO IS FREEDOM HIMSELF.**

Submission to Islam is slavery to Satan.

**Faith in Christ, with perseverance in hope and love *THROUGH CHRIST* is
SALVATION.**

**Resisting and refusing and denying the GOSPEL OF CHRIST JESUS is
DAMNATION.**

Hey Islam, surprise!

<https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=RWIS7oIVbGE>

The Future of Christian-Muslim Dialogue

https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=_JuHsTbZKqA

Give my regards to your Slave-Master God, assholes

https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=2sci_WFp8ec

The most important samurai secret for success

or,

[How to defeat the snares of the Anti-
Christ by *really, really* trying]⁹⁰

[By Eric Barker](#)

Reading a few books by samurai, there was one thing I saw repeated again and again and again that surprised me.

It has nothing to do with swords, [fighting](#), or [strategy](#). Actually, quite the opposite when you think about it.

What did so many of history's greatest warriors stress as key to success and optimal performance?

“Being calm.”

And it wasn't one random samurai mentioning it off the cuff.

We're talking about some of the greatest samurai who ever lived writing about it over and over for *five hundred years*:

[Shiba Yoshimasa](#) (1349-1410):

⁹⁰ Additional note obviously mine.

For warriors in particular, if you calm your own mind and discern the inner minds of others, that may be called the foremost art of war.

[Suzuki Shosan](#) (1579-1655):

When you manage to overcome your own mind, you overcome myriad concerns, rise above all things, and are free. When you are overcome by your own mind, you are burdened by myriad concerns, subordinate to things, unable to rise above. "Mind your mind; guard it resolutely. Since it is the mind that confuses the mind, don't let your mind give in to your mind."

[Kaibara Ekken](#) (1630-1714):

A noble man controls frivolity with gravity, awaits action in a state of calm. It is important for the spirit to be whole, the mood steady, and the mind unmoving.

[Adachi Masahiro](#) (1780-1800):

The imperturbable mind is the secret of warfare.

And, of course, the man probably considered the greatest samurai of them all, Miyamoto Musashi, in his classic, [The Book of Five Rings](#):

Both in fighting and in everyday life you should be determined though calm. Meet the situation without tenseness yet not recklessly, your spirit settled yet unbiased.

Nobody really needs to sell us on the value of staying calm.

You know the benefits: you think clearly, you don't make rash decisions, you don't get scared.

But *how* do you get and stay calm?

Our society is energy drinks, 24-hour news cycle, Starbucks on every corner, and relentless social media feeds. GO GO GO.

And even funnier, much of what we know about relaxing and being calm [is dead wrong](#).

The samurai had answers. And they line up with the science. Here we go.

The scientific samurai's guide to staying chill

The samurai trained in martial arts a lot and they thought about death a lot.

Really, they thought about death *a lot*.

Via [*Code of the Samurai: A Contemporary Translation of the Bushido Shoshins*](#):

One who is supposed to be a warrior considers it his foremost concern to keep death in mind at all times, every day and every night, from the morning of New Year's Day through the night of New Year's Eve.

Hey, you would too. Death was pretty much in their job description, right?

But research shows [training very hard](#) and [imagining the worst that could happen](#) are two powerful techniques for promoting calm.

Samurais trained relentlessly. They strongly believed you should always “be prepared” (they were like the deadliest Boy Scouts imaginable.)

Research shows that [preparation reduces fear](#) because when things get tense, you don’t have to think.

Who survives catastrophic scenarios like samurai battles? The people who have prepared.

Via David McRaney’s [You Are Not So Smart](#):

According to Johnson and Leach, the sort of people who survive are the sort of people who prepare for the worst and practice ahead of time... These people don’t deliberate during calamity because they’ve already done the deliberation the other people around them are just now going through.

And how about all that thinking about death?

“Negative Visualization” is one of the main tools of ancient [Stoicism](#) and [science backs it up](#).

Really thinking about just how awful things can be often has the ironic effect of making you realize they're not that bad.

From my [interview with Oliver Burkeman](#), author of [The Antidote: Happiness for People Who Can't Stand Positive Thinking](#):

It's what the Stoics call, "the premeditation" – that there's actually a lot of peace of mind to be gained in thinking carefully and in detail and consciously about how badly things could go. In most situations you're going to discover that your anxiety or your fears about those situations were exaggerated.

Okay, but you don't want to spend all day training in sword-fighting or thinking about death. I get that. Frankly, neither do I.

So what's the key here?

[Research](#) shows the most powerful way to combat stress or anxiety — to stay calm — is to have a feeling of control.

For samurai, training tirelessly and visualizing the worst that could happen gave them a feeling of control while in battle.

The US military dramatically [increased Navy SEAL passing rates](#) by teaching recruits psychological methods for gaining a feeling of control.

Without a feeling of control, when stress gets high we literally can't think straight.

Via [Your Brain at Work: Strategies for Overcoming Distraction, Regaining Focus, and Working Smarter All Day Long](#):

Amy Arnsten studies the effects of limbic system arousal on prefrontal cortex functioning. She summarized the importance of a sense of control for the brain during an interview filmed at her lab at Yale. “The loss of prefrontal function only occurs when we feel out of control. It’s the prefrontal cortex itself that is determining if we are in control or not. Even if we have the illusion that we are in control, our cognitive functions are preserved.” This perception of being in control is a major driver of behavior.

Anything that gives you a [feeling of control](#) over your situation helps you keep your cool.

So what does it for you?

More information? Practice? Support from others?

That’s the thing that will help you keep your cool like a samurai.

Note I said “feeling of control” — it doesn’t even have to be legit control, just feeling like you do can work wonders.

Even a good luck charm can help — because [good luck charms really do work](#).

Good luck charms provide a feeling of control, and that feeling of control actually makes people perform better with them.

Via [The Courage Quotient: How Science Can Make You Braver:](#)

...people with a lucky charm performed significantly better than did the people who had none. That's right, having a lucky charm will make you a better golfer, should you care about such things, and improve your cognitive performance on tasks such as memory games.

Sum up

I know what some of you are thinking: *Calm? Aren't samurai the ones always screaming at the top of their lungs while waving a sword?*

Thing is, that was a *deliberate* tactic to frighten their enemies. [Musashi explains:](#)

In single combat, also, you must use the advantage of taking the enemy unawares by frightening him with your body, long sword, or voice, to defeat him . . . In single combat, we make as if to cut and shout "Ei!" at the same time to disturb the enemy, then in the wake of our shout we cut with the long sword.

Sneaky. These are the kind of smart ideas that come from a cool head.

The samurai were great warriors. They fought against their enemies in epic battles.

But as Musashi and the others make clear in their writings about being calm, the most important battle is to overcome yourself.

Via [The Book of Five Rings](#):

Today is victory over yourself of yesterday; tomorrow is your victory over lesser men.

This [article](#) originally appeared at [Barking Up the Wrong Tree](#).

[Eric Barker](#) is the author of "Barking Up the Wrong Tree: The Surprising Science Behind Why Everything You Know About Success Is (Mostly) Wrong." He is also the author of the website by the same name.

[@bakadesuyo](#)

Idolatry & the Seven Deadly Sins

The Neo-Berkeleyan metaphysical conception and outlook can also clarify the logical underpinnings of the sin of idolatry, which itself is the root of all sinfulness.

If all that exists -- spirits, one-dimensional/non-sentient consciousnesses, ideas, objects, subjects, categories, quantities, qualities, and every kind of sense perception -- is, essentially, the ex-volution of Divine Reality and then the involution of that created reality *outside* of the Godhead, then everything that one loves is, ipso facto, contained within the Godhead.

By ex-volution, I mean the unfolding of Divine Reality *out* into nothingness. Involution indicates the turning in upon itself of that ex-volution such that it acquires something of the multi-dimensionality of God.

So, consider the Seven Deadly Sins - Pride, Envy, Anger, Lust, Gluttony, Greed, and Sloth.

If one cherishes the consciousness of rank and significance, consider that all rank and significance are contained within the Godhead, for God is, necessarily, First, and God is not only the source of all meaning, but the essence of all possible meaning.

If one is envious of another, consider that, if the Spirit (which is the Spirit of the Father and the Spirit of Christ), dwells in you, you have all things - *The world is yours!* So how could you be envious of anyone?

If one is angry, consider that the object of your wrath is under the jurisdiction of the Just Judge. So, how could you arrogate to yourself the Divine Jurisdiction and Sentence?

If one is lustful, consider that the sex of the woman or man you desire is contained within the natural order ordained by God, a natural order designed by God for His Glory and the benefit of all those who trust in it and obey it. If you violate that natural order in defiance of God, you work an injustice in that order. That is, you derange the workings of that natural order - defiling yourself, those you consort with, your families, your friendships, your community, your nation, the whole of society -- and, most grievously, you *turn* yourself from the very source of all life: the alignment of your created will with the Uncreated Will of God.

The same derangement of your will from the Divine Will obtains when you value food and luxuries and a commodious lifestyle more than the good of your community and family, and more than the occasional (and, if one intends to live in the Spirit deeply the more than occasional) abstinence from such things, so that one can be totally disposed towards the Will of God. Such a glutton even values such a lifestyle more than the well-being and proper functioning of his own body.

With greed, those who hoard the resources and wealth of the world, and are unwilling to share it generously with those in need, testify to this simple fact about themselves: they don't trust God. They don't trust God to be the source of their plenitude and satisfaction. They don't trust that God will provide for them if they ever should be in need.

And sloth - often the most violently obstinate of the sins, and also the most contemptible. For at least in all the rest there is some good to be obtained: rank, significance, justice, sex, food, wealth: some aspect, or perception, of the Spirit's plenitude is sought, even if, sinfully, not in accordance with the Will and Design of that Spirit. But with sloth, one takes one's rest, while

not pursuing any good. Now, rest is a good, but the exuberance of an infinite life is a far greater good, and, indeed, the fullness of such a life is the essence of God's rest -- the return of His own Divine Reality to Himself, in its Pleroma, in the fullness of its Truth and Goodness. To languish in sloth is to forsake the call to, and life in, the fullness of God's Spirit.

In other words, those who value any created thing above the Divine Will necessarily devalue the Spirit from which all such value proceeds. Those who place food, sex, wealth, rank, meaning, even another person or relationship or their own family or community or nation, above God, cherish the procession rather than the Source. For all spirits and perceptions proceed from a procession of God's reality into nothingness, so, in fact, when one loves some created thing, they are really in love with the Uncreated root and source of that thing.

That is, to primarily love the created thing and not the Creator is a derangement not only of one's will from the Divine Will, but, necessarily and as a consequence, it is a derangement of one's will from one's self, that is, one's soul. To idolize anything or any person above God is to twist off one's will from one's own essential nature. To sunder one's will from one's soul is to *necessarily* involve oneself in the condition of perdition. For one's will, ultimately, is one's spiritual sight - or, one's spiritual blindness - and one's soul is the spirit of God that one has created for you to be -- you are a perception of God's own spirit. And contained within that created spirit is the whole plenitude of God's Spirit, granted to you as a gift.

If you turn your sight from the gift, how can you not be damned?

You can only enjoy the pleasures of Heaven if your sight is turned to the gift, the gift of God.

But, woefully, if you turn your sight *away* from the gift, and then find yourself, after death, inextricably bound in that choice because you have at last entered eternity, then you will persist in a dank, miserable, painful gloom, permanently an abomination, a horror, an absurdity, a humiliation: the spectacle of a sight that cannot -- and never can -- behold the gift.

The nature of this reality provides the temptation by which we human beings fall into such sinfulness.

For this reality is not the world as it should be.

It is a fallen world, sundered by the matrix of original sin, which is the root and origin of all sin. To fall into sin is necessarily to be removed from God's Favor, and to be removed from God's Favor is necessarily to be removed from His beneficent sovereignty - and that means that, rather than spirit ruling matter as the Spirit-Creator designed, matter rules spirit, and constricts and constrains and distorts spirit within the confines of its own coffin - the coffin of material nothingness.

When you do not have the refreshment of the Spirit's Plenitude, because your will is not aligned with the Will of the Spirit, you necessarily seek to satisfy yourself with an alternative plenitude - an artificial plenitude, necessarily of your own making....or, more exactly, your own imagining.

The first sin, the sin of Satan and the fallen angels, is the unforgivable sin of preferring themselves even though they had seen the perfect vision of the Divine Majesty and its Ineffable Goodness and Beauty.

The original sin of Man, which is a corporate sin of all humanity within which we are all inextricably bound, is similar in its blank, unbidden self-preference, but it is forgivable because it is within the phase of the temporal. That is, Man's Will, in its corporate capacity, was created within time, and is thus changeable, and, as such, is redeemable insofar as its sin was committed within the shadow of ignorance. That is why Jesus says, "Father, forgive them, they know not what they do" (Luke 23:34).

But we are bound up within the matrix of that original sin, and so sundered from the nourishment of spiritual plenitude, that the temptation to sin comes naturally to us.

For, deprived of our true rank within God's spiritual order, without the meaning that our lives were constituted to desire, namely, the vision of God's beatitude, without the immediate administration of God's infinite justice in every situation, without the satiety of God's manifold perceptions, all of them infinitely delightful, without the intimacy and tenderness of God's eternal embrace, and without the security of an eternal life without limits held within the bosom of the All-Righteous and All-Felicitous One.....we are tempted to create our own ranks, meanings, and plenty....separate from the Will of God.

Thus, the sunderance born of original sin tumbles down and continues in a vortex of consequential sins....sins committed in order to undo the terrible burdens of that original sin.

Only through returning to a state of grace, through the confession of all mortal sins combined with an interior disposition to renounce all sin, can one even begin to unchain oneself from the slavery of sin.

And even then, once in a state of grace, one will still need to persevere through this vale of tears, this woeful valley in which we are separated from the glorious sight of God's Eternal and Infinite Light, which is the source all abundance, all plenitude.

So, it is precisely the grasping at a plenitude that it is not ours in this passing world to obtain that causes us to sin, and thus to forfeit an eternal plenitude in the true and lasting world to come.

The Resurrection in Time

A speculative conjecture: As Father Smith preached, the Resurrection did not happen in human time. This is a rich and fecund possibility that requires the deepest theological exploration, using the whole strength of all Scriptural power and the deepest insight of what I have herein termed ‘spiritual mechanics’. In a sense, we may then consider the Resurrection a kind of World Tree: more formally, and exactly, and less mythically: an axis by which the temporal reality turns within the eternal domain of HaShem’s Singular Eternity. So, we may say, carefully and speculatively - we offer as a suggestive possibility: the Resurrection is not finished yet, as Father Smith preached -- and then, perhaps, shockingly, it did not happen. Not in the meek, milquetoast, pathetic liberal bourgeois “protestant” symbolist sense. Certainly it happened. But the Resurrection - the Resurrection Event - exists as a kind of eternal-temporal nexus into which and out of which all reality necessarily proceeds and progresses. Thus, in a sense, *a real sense*, it is happening right now -- and it is not happening at all -- and it has not happened yet -- and it will happen tomorrow -- or not -- or the next day -- it has happened at the end of time -- and it will happen at the beginning of time. If the Crucifixion-Resurrection-Ascension Event (which, of course, are only three nodes in an eternal event rather than three moments in human time, in the temporal-material-spatial reality sundered by sin) is the ratification of the Son’s Sonship *in the Flesh*, then, necessarily then, that event has *always happened*. It happened when the Son, as the Logos, spoke the LORD’s Work in Time into existence -- It happened as the Spirit conducted Israel on to its Destiny -- It happened (but to us looks like it *is* happening) to the Church as it was formed and led onward by the Spirit.

In a sense, the Spirit of Christ radiates out from the events in time, out to the very reaches of all material-temporal-spatial-cognitive (human) time, and (once reaching the limit, Omega), proceeds to return to itself, run, race back to itself, and upon itself, in a creative involution, that, necessarily then, spirals upwards into the Totality of the Spirit. The radiating out is the temporal Resurrection (what really did happen to the disciples - to Mary, Mary Magdalene, Peter, John), the return to itself is the eternal Resurrection (which we and all ages experience till its fulfillment at the Apocalypse), and the spiral upwards into the Infinite Spiritual Totality is the Ascension.



So, in a sense, as it exists at the center of Time, the Resurrection is necessarily accessed by everyone, and necessarily, as Time has not completed its phase within the Eternal Cosmic Drama, it is totally inaccessible to those passing through that phase.

We who live in the Age of the End of Days, the Age of the Church, live in a temporal wake emanating out from the Crucifixion and racing onwards towards its Fulfillment, its TOTAL PLEROMA OF PLENITUDE in the Culmination of the Resurrection, which is nothing other, and nothing less, than the ASCENSION of the human spirit, through the Christ, into the Bosom of the ALL-RIGHTEOUS, ALL-FELICITOUS, ALL ABUNDANT ***SPIRIT OF THE FATHER***. What we hear reported and murmured as mere rumour and shadow, shall, in the

fullness of time, when all things have been fulfilled, be finally shown for what it is, was, and always will be: The Total Triumph of the Will of G-d.

The seed of the Incarnation and Crucifixion - the life and death of the man Jesus of Nazareth, is the epiousios bread (reality, Word, Logos) laid into the bosom of the earth (the ground, the graveyard), that, in the fullness of time, when the whole Cup of Destiny has been filled up with every act and every thought of every human spirit, will burst forth as a Great and New Tree of Life, radiating and conquering to the very ends of the Cosmos - and, in that Final Battle and Final Victory, there shall come the RISEN CHRIST, in All His Glory, now no longer merely Jesus of Nazareth but Melech Yehoshua the Mashiach, in the Full Favor of His Father, Adonai, Well-Beloved of the Shekinah, the Eternal and Infinite Spirit of the ONE AND ONLY HOLY NAME. Then, and only then, shall the Resurrection be finished.

Okay, children, let's play a game.
It's called, "Which one of these is not like the other?"

Of Righteous Memory	Abaddon's Mouthpiece
 <p>Taught that every human being is infinitely valuable and has infinite potential in the Eternal One's Love.</p>	 <p>Taught that he is so really super-incredible and everyone should be his slave, to rape and murder and destroy, to crush under his unholy foot.</p>



**Take all your fears, and cast
them on me.**

“The Rebbe taught that every human being is infinitely important and every positive act is cause for celebration,” said Rabbi Levi Vogel, Emissary of the Rebbe and director of Chabad-Lubavitch of St Augustine.⁹¹

Everyone's Unique Role: From the moment the Rebbe arrived in America in 1941, his brilliance at addressing himself to the following ideal became apparent: He would not acknowledge division or separation. Every Jew—indeed, every human being—has a unique role to play in the greater scheme of things and is an integral part of the tapestry of G-d's creation.

For nearly five of the most critical decades in recent history, the Rebbe's plan to reach out to every corner of the world with love and concern has continued to unfold dramatically. No sector of the community has been excluded—young and old; men and women; leader and layman; scholar and laborer; student and teacher; children, and even infants.

He had an uncanny ability to meet everyone at their own level—he advised heads of State on matters of national and international importance, explored with professionals the complexities in their own fields of expertise, and talked to small children with warm words and a fatherly smile.

"Actualize Your Potential!" With extraordinary insight, he perceived the wealth of potential in each person. His inspiration boosts the individual's self-perception, ignites his awareness of that hidden wealth and motivates a desire to fulfill his potential. In the same way, many a community has been transformed by the Rebbe's message, and been given — directly or indirectly—a new sense of purpose and confidence. In each encounter the same strong, if subtle message is imparted: "You are Divinely gifted with enormous strength and energy—actualize it!"

<https://www.chabad.org/>

⁹¹ <http://staugustine.com/living/religion/2014-06-26/newly-released-bio-rabbi-schneerson-hits-new-york-times-bestseller-list>

To Save a Life: There is a story told about the Rebbe's early life that seems to be almost symbolic of everything that was to follow. When he was nine years old, the young Menachem Mendel courageously dove into the Black Sea and saved the life of a little boy who had fallen from the deck of a moored ship. That sense of 'other lives in danger' seems to have dominated his consciousness ever since; of Jewish drowning in assimilation, ignorance or alienation—and no one hearing their cries for help; Jews on campus, in isolated communities, under repressive regimes. From early childhood he displayed a prodigious mental acuity. By the time he reached his Bar Mitzvah, the Rebbe was considered an *illuy*, a Torah prodigy. He spent his teen years immersed in the study of Torah.

<https://www.chabad.org/>

Such is the Spirit of the Mashiach.

Caliph or Mashiach? I put before you Death and Life --- Choose Life!!!

Redemption in Christ

Human beings created by the Father, lost to grace by free choice, now have the Spirit at the core of each of their spirits, if they accept it, and thus become new creations in Christ.

Jesus dies - goes into Abaddon, destruction, ruination, with all of the gifts of God (a plenitude like Solomon's, only greater, with a greater palace, a greater temple, and a total panoply of splendor beyond all imagination) - and is stripped of all the gifts given by the Father, in the end only left with his indestructible Spirit, not a created spirit, but the uncreated Spirit that is the Father's own Name, own innermost Nature.

By descending furthest away from the Father, from God, by losing everything that made him the Son, the heir of all the Father's gifts, Jesus is reduced only to the very core of His being, His Spirit, the same Spirit that is the Spirit of the Father, and by still being the Spirit while penetrated by total ruination, Jesus passes through the rejection, past it, into His glory. By traveling furthest from God, in obedience to God, Jesus arrived right at the heart of what it means to be God, and thus attained the Father's Kingdom.

Here, we have a final verdict of who is the heir of the Father's gifts -- Satan, the Light-Bearer, the most perfect created being, or the Son, the God-Begotten, the Light-Begotten, the Uncreated. As Jesus, crowned in glory, in Revelation 22:16, at the end of the Bible, proclaims, "I, Jesus, sent my angel to give you this testimony for the churches. I am the root and offspring of David, the bright morning star."

It is not Satan who brings light to the world, though he may attempt to appear as an Angel of Light, as a Prometheus liberating humanity. What was his light was merely reflected, and on its own, turns to darkness. Only Jesus, whose Spirit is the same as the Father's, can give a light that truly creates life (Genesis 1:3), that reveals truth, that gives access to the interior life of the Father.

That is why in John 17:24, Jesus says, "Father, they are your gift to me. I wish that where I am they also may be with me, that they may see my glory that you gave me, because you loved me before the foundation of the world." Jesus' gifts are no longer merely the spiritual perfections of the Son, but each of the redeemed spirits of every Christian, every human in Christ, and that makes Him the Risen Christ. Jesus' gifts are not merely qualities or capacities, something that inhere only in his own Spirit, but living spirits, cleansed and redeemed and made perfect brides for the Bridegroom. That is why Jesus says that it is good for His disciples that He goes, since He will send His Spirit upon them. In going the distance in Hell, in making His Spirit present to every human spirit, He saves us precisely by sending His Spirit upon us, into us, such that the what-it-is, the differentia, of each of our spirits is no longer the spirit created by God, fractured and lost by sin, but, at its heart, every spirit has the Spirit of Christ, and by having the Spirit of Christ becomes incorporated into Christ, in the Church, and by being in Christ is received into the Father.

In returning the lost spirits of humanity back to the Father and creating in them the new creation of His eternal Kingdom, the Father gives the Son the greatest gift - that of being the eternal Giver.

Christ begins to draw near to your spirit at the moment of your baptism, and He completes His traversal of the distance between your spirit and His Spirit at the moment of your death in Christ.

The All-Righteous is necessarily the All-Gifted, since Righteousness and Felicity (Giftedness, the possession of every good gift, every good thing, every choice thing) are two sides of the same coin. Thus, the Eternal Begetting proceeds, occurs, (metaphorically, of course), through a proceeding of the Father's Spirit racing out and running back to Itself, and, naturally, the Father, the All-Righteous, is well-pleased with His Son's Spirit, which is also All-Righteous. Necessarily then, the All-Gifted pours out (as a libation or as metal poured into a cast to be forged as a vessel) every good gift, the infinite plenitude of the Father's spiritual abundance upon His Son's Spirit.

The true, accurate, genuine Scholastic insight is that no theologian has truly *said anything at all* about God. Every word of this work is but a figure of speech: a total metaphor. This work is not one stitch, not one iota, of an *account* of God, of a true demonstration of God. The only demonstrations in this work are demonstrations of metaphors. It is a blind man, blind from birth, describing to another blind man, also blind from birth, what color and light and shadow are, on the basis of what he has *heard* from a sighted individual. The only true demonstration of God exists for the sighted, for those who exist in the presence of God, who can see Him: see Him as the beatific vision, or see Him as the eternal horror. In this life there is only faith, and faith is hearing, not seeing. We enter eternity on the basis of what we have heard. What we have heard or not heard shall determine what we see.

The Nature of Theology

All these reflections, pieties, and explorations, like most, if not all, religious and spiritual writing, aside from Scripture, have the same relationship to God as a novel has to real lived everyday life. A novel, or a television show or movie, even if real art, even if written with a proper spirit and generous attitude, can never approximate even a few traces of what a fully lived human life is, or could become. But a novel or narrative or piece of art can give an insight, or, hopefully, insights, into human life that can be helpful in bringing it to perfection, to the consummation of its purpose.

Phrases like “being stripped of the gifts till nothing is left but the indestructible Spirit” and “the captive spirits, now made totally present to the Spirit of Christ in Hell and thus carried with him into the glory of the Father’s presence through the ratification of Jesus’ human life in the Resurrection and its exaltation in the Ascension, being the new gifts given to Jesus, thus making him not merely the Son eternally begotten before all ages, but the Risen Christ that is the Church” do not give us any kind of direct or tactile access to knowledge of the Divine.

As Father Smith always taught, and as the Scholastics knew full well, theology never tells us about God, as such, but can only ever point to God. All these things, if they are successful, are only signs of God, or better yet, signposts on the Way. “That direction the Christ.” “This direction the Spirit.” They are, at best, symbols and metaphors that attempt to sanctify the imagination and make it ever more possible for the Spirit of Christ to ‘sweep over the waters’ of the great, dark abyss of our sinfulness (Genesis 1:2), of our distance from God.

Our whole lives in Christ from the time of our baptisms are new creations, coming to life but not fully perfected. That is why we need all this: a lifetime of prayer and Scripture and Sacraments in which, if we allow it, the gift of faith grows to fullness within us, Christ draws ever nearer to the depths of our spirit. The angels of the Lord do not need Christ to draw near unto them, nor do they need to struggle in prayer, struggle to read Scripture, struggle to be truly present to the mystery of the Sacraments. The obedient angels think nothing but their prayer: their will, as Dante wrote in the last lines of his *Paradiso*, turning according to nothing but the Divine Love; they ask for nothing but what the Lord speaks. As messengers of the Most High, they speak only the Word and dwell in unobstructed Light; they “always look upon the Face” of the Lord (Matthew 18:10).

And yet, mysteriously, by being in Christ we, though sinners, now presently and will in eternity have the Spirit as our own spirit, and thus are incorporated not just into Christ, but the Father Himself. Such is the ineffable grace of the Lord that the first, the angels, shall be last, and the last, we sinners in Christ, shall be first, yet all shall be in God, and God shall be in all. Yet, be that as it may, in this earthly pilgrimage, we hardly know what we mean when we say spirit and Spirit, Resurrection and Ascension, sin and grace. We can only hope to let the knowledge of their reality grow in the real depths of our spirit, even without ever having a firm epistemic hold on their existential natures, thus securing our own salvation, and, second, making us part of the Church’s Christogenesis through time, through which the light of revelation clarifies these truths, gradually, more and more, with every successive age to the Apocalypse.

Only in Scripture itself do we move beyond mere signposts. For, since the Scripture itself is inspired, the Spirit itself moves in it, and moves in whoever prays it in faith. In Scripture, we do not encounter mere formulas, or ideas or phrases that might be wrong or right, more or less true, like in my work, but we encounter the living presence of God.

Peter's Denial of Jesus

Peter did not deny Jesus because he was afraid...not exactly. When the soldiers and guards of the chief priests and the Pharisees arrested Jesus, Peter, without hesitation and with total bravery, drew his sword and cut off the right ear of the high priest's slave (John 18:1-14).

Enemies came to attack his King, and Peter, as a loyal servant and soldier of the one true king, the chosen one of God destined to restore the Davidic Kingdom and usher in the prophetic age, sprang into action, contemptuous of death. This wasn't a game or some petty acting out -- Peter was armed with a sword, and he was ready to wage the first battle for the Kingdom under the leadership of his King, to the death. Peter knew the score -- the time for Jesus' words, all his wise rabbinical teaching, had come to an end, and now it was time for the King and his men to fight, and if need be die, to give Jesus, son of David, his rightful throne. The Romans, the Sanhedrin, the Pharisees, all of them be damned, Peter would stand, fight, and kill anyone who stood in the way of Jesus' God-given destiny and rightful royal claims. Peter was Jesus' man forever, his Jonathan, his Joshua, his Elisha, (to use a non-biblical, but illustrative, example, Peter was Sam and Jesus was Frodo - there was nowhere Jesus was going that Peter wasn't following). As St. John wrote:

Simon Peter said to him, "Master, where are you going?" Jesus answered [him], "Where I am going, you cannot follow me now, though you will follow later." Peter said to him, "Master, why can't I follow you now? I will lay down my life for you." Jesus answered, "Will you lay down your life for me? Amen, amen, I say to you, the cock will not crow before you deny me three times."

(John 13:36-38)

What changed? One minute Peter rages to fight for Jesus, scornful in the face of a death-dealing gang of soldiers, not an hour later Peter doesn't even know Jesus - he refuses to acknowledge that he even *knows* him...to a maid! He's brave in the face of soldiers but cowers to an insignificant serving girl? The Johannine irony grows much richer when another slave of the high priest, a relative of the very slave whose ear Peter had just cut off, asks Peter, "Didn't I see you in the garden with him?" Peter's reaction to someone who not an hour earlier he had been eager to cut to pieces, along with anyone else who threatened Jesus? "Again Peter denied it. And immediately the cock crowed" (John 18:26-27).

In the eyes of Peter, though not in reality, Jesus had changed. Peter, being Peter, is as dogged as he is deaf. His doggedness gave him the fundamental insight of Jesus' Kingdom: Jesus is the Messiah and the Son of God. His deafness made him totally misunderstand what being the Messiah and Son of God meant. Jesus repeatedly said that he must die, that that was his destiny, his cup to drink. Jesus never organized a militia, never trained for war, taught on morality and spirituality extensively, and just an hour prior to the fiasco of his wimpy arrest had stated clearly, "Now I am leaving the world and going back to my Father" (John 16:28). Peter understood none of it, hearing only enigmatic gibberish that he assumed was just how a mystical king talked, but that, in the end, would all add up to something that looked basically like King

David's kingdom. So when Jesus, instead of rallying the troops, waving a sword, and saying something like, "Follow me, men, follow me to freedom!", told Peter, "Put your sword into its scabbard. Shall I not drink the cup that the Father gave me?" (John 18:11), Peter doesn't say, "Oh, of course, this is what you've been talking about all along, see you Sunday!" Peter sees all his hopes crumble before his eyes, and his king led away like a common criminal.

Peter cowered not because he was a coward, but because Jesus wasn't worth it. Jesus was a failure, another false messiah who promised to restore the kingdom, but couldn't deliver. Not even couldn't deliver, but wouldn't even put up a fight! Why risk your neck for a loser?

Peter's faith failed in that dark hour, and he fled and could not remain with Christ as He bore His Cross and as He was crucified, while St. John knelt at the foot of the Cross with Mary Magdalene and our Mother Mary because of one basic truth. Peter knew that he was for Jesus. Peter knew that he loved Jesus. John, the one whom Jesus loved, knew that Jesus loved him. John knew that Jesus was for *him*.

Simon-Peter could only become St. Peter after Jesus acted as Confessor to Peter's penitent. When Jesus asked Peter three times whether Peter loved Him, (when Jesus gave Peter the opportunity to reverse his failure, to affirm Him as many times as He denied Him, when Jesus forgave Peter), Jesus invited Peter to understand, Jesus showed Peter that Peter could only love Jesus because He loved him first.

That is why it was most appropriate that Simon be Simon *bar Jonah* (John being another form of the name Jonah). Although St. John was, of course, not the father of St. Peter, Peter could only become St. Peter by following the way of *John*. That is, Peter had to make St. John his spiritual father, Peter had to imitate John's discipleship. Only when he did so, could he truly be the Petros, the Rock that Jesus could build his Church on -- for the foundation of the Flesh of Christ is the Father who eternally begets the Son, the God who, by the Holy Spirit, is conceived and made Flesh, and who makes the disciple Peter *the* singular point of contact between sinful humanity and the unstained Godhead. That is why, when Peter confesses that Jesus is the Christ, and when Jesus acts as Father-Confessor to a repentant Peter, Jesus calls Peter, *Peter son of Jonah/John -- because in his crucial confessing insight and his critical repentance, based on love and trust in Jesus' love for him, and not just Peter's love for Jesus, Peter becomes who he was created to be -- he becomes St. Peter.*

The Future of the Church

Not by utterance of the Lord, but in what I think I see, I see in the figures of Mary Magdalene, Mary our Mother, and St. John kneeling at the foot of the Cross, most obedient and attentive unto the Lord, the figures of the Catholic, Orthodox, and Protestant Churches. And, a bit hazier, perhaps Mary Magdalene is the Catholic church, most faithful unto the Lord, His very spouse, most intimate in knowledge of Him, announcing His Rising to the disciples yet least bound up in the fulfillment, or, more accurately, the *extension*, of the apostolic mission; Mary our Mother is the Orthodox church, true bearer of His Divine Wisdom, keeper and guardian of His Flesh; and St. John is the Protestant church, most filled with the living Spirit of Jesus' love, His bond of friendship, seeing deepest into the charism of the Christ.

I am of the opinion that Mary Magdalene was Jesus' soulmate. Christianity has generally not propounded much of anything about soulmates. Perhaps it is just as well. The matter is totally immaterial to the one aim of this life, the only thing that matters: attaining salvation through Jesus Christ. I suppose, for most, that it is purely a matter of academic interest, much in the same way that cosmology is interesting but the knowledge of it won't save your soul. And it is probably, for most, a distraction. In any event, while the Church has said little about the issue, Judaism has long cleaved to the doctrine and the shibboleth is of fine and weighty resonance, not just in texts but in their wider society. In the Talmud, there is a teaching from one of the rabbis (Sotah 2a) that forty days before conception, the prophetic voice of the Lord declares which man shall marry which woman. We might remark that Christian doctrine contains no such beliefs. Until we recall that Genesis, *right at the beginning*, states that God created them *male and female*, and formed the woman from the flesh of the man, and the two, made as one, become flesh. And I believe there's a rumour going around that Scripture is, in fact, at least some say, Christian doctrine. We might observe that our lack of such a doctrine is not so much God's unwillingness to reveal secrets, as our inability to read.

The Son incarnated in human flesh, and entered totally into human nature. If human nature was created male and female, how is that Jesus' creation in the flesh lacked this integral component? Certainly His Divine Nature requires the conjugation of no female flesh; but our doctrine affirms the hypostatic union of His Divine and wholly human natures. Does Jesus' human nature, alone, somehow lack this most human of dimensions? Is the gift given to Adam and to all the human race to be denied to the Son made flesh, the heir to all the Father's gift, yea unto His very Spirit? I don't know. Perhaps. I certainly won't make any bones about it. I would happily recant. This thought makes up not a word of my creed. But I consider it a compelling observation nevertheless. Heaven forbid any more schisms rupture forth on the basis of disputes about this! We should preserve our ink for more important matters, that is to say, matters that are at all important.

I wish to make very clear that I most certainly do *not* believe that Jesus had sex with Mary Magdalene. The idea is totally inconceivable and ridiculous. Jesus fulfilled the Torah and all righteousness, and sexual relations with a woman outside of marriage is not righteous. Period. The End. Full Stop. The Hollywood mentality requires all conjugal love to be

consummated, preferably during a long, languidly shot love scene. But the Christ's personal life is not constrained by Hollywood tropes or American sensibilities. Thank you, very much. Had the set Plan of God been different (what a thought!), and Jesus been destined for an immediate earthly reign, might he have married Mary Magdalene? A totally inappropriate question, I hear ringing in my ear. As it is, it was His destiny to be our Eternal High Priest, and as he did not live in this earth, in this finite flesh, to marry, for we killed him off far too young, as soon as we got our hands on Him, we can say that whatever the personal relationship between Jesus and Mary Magdalene consisted of, it most certainly did not involve any form of sex.

Why then did not Jesus tell us more of it; why don't we have chapters in the Gospels devoted to it? Why doesn't Jesus do a spread in *People* magazine: "Jesus at Home: Just One of the Guys"; "Mary Dishes on the Real Jesus"? *Because it is has absolutely nothing to do with our salvation, which is the only public office and proclamation of our High Priest and Prophet.* Firstly. And secondly: *BECAUSE IT'S NONE OF YOUR BUSINESS!* Our intimacy with the Lord is as with our King, leading us into battle, with whom we shed blood. But no matter how intimate one is with one's General-King, you would certainly not expect him to let you crouch in the corner of his tent at night.

Of course, in the new age that has come upon the world as a direct and inevitable result of the Crucifixion-Resurrection, a new order has come into being, as the old order has passed away. So the Risen Christ is now Jesus in a fundamentally, eternally *different* form from the God-Man Jesus of Nazareth who lived one human life upon the face of the earth. Now, as the resurrected Flesh of Christ, Mary Magdalene is as much His spouse as He is our spouse, as we are the Church, the Flesh of Christ, and the Church is the Bride of Christ.

Instead of a Church of Eucharistic Exuberance, a Church of Holy Friendship, and a Church of Matrimonial Fidelity, all united and totally one, as the Trinity is united and totally one, in one Universal and Whole Church of the Resurrection of the Flesh of Christ, we too much have the Church of Ma, the Church of Brah, and the Church of Wah - of hysterical Whine rather than Holy and Beneficent Wine.

So while Ma, Brah, and Wah all tussle and feud and hate and, even, we hope only in our history, murder each other, the Resurrected One, the Holy One of the All-Righteous, looks on at His Flesh in horror and sadness.

We have endured a Schismatic Reformation, an Authoritarian Unity, and an Insular Tradition. We should have had a Reformation of Martyrs, a Unity of Saints, and a Tradition of Evangelists, all thriving in one Universal Church. Instead, we had a reformation of reformers more interested in preserving their own flesh than the Flesh of Christ, prelates more concerned with preserving their own power than preserving whole and inviolate the majestic power of God, (only realized in Christian Unity), and we had keepers of tradition more obsessed with the

exactitude of their practice, and suspicious of anyone outside, than propelled out into the world in an open, evangelical faith to use the yeast in their keeping to leaven the whole Bread of Christ.

The end, which is to say, the fulfillment, of every one of the three branches of the Christian Church is the Whole Church, and the Whole Church is necessarily orthodox, catholic, and biblical. If you run to the end of Orthodoxy, you will find Catholicism and Biblicism. And if you run to the end of Catholicism, you will find Orthodoxy and Biblicism. And if you run to the end of Biblical knowledge, you will discover Catholicism and Orthodoxy. Not every last facet and fidget of each of the traditions, but the core insight of each tradition contains the necessary seed for unleashing the Whole Church.

What I propose is nothing less than the Apocalypse of Protestantism, the Apocalypse of Catholicism, and the Apocalypse of Orthodoxy: and the new creation of the Whole Church.

The temple stones of Jesus' body are His spiritual gifts, the living stones of the Risen Christ are the gifts of Christ's disciples.

The New Temple of Christ is the communion of all Christians everywhere.

What we urgently require is the reunification of the Church. We must forge into one great Sword of Christ the many fractured shards that lay on the ground of our history. Only then can the Gospel be preached to all the nations. Only then can the Angelic Proclamation of the Spirit of the Mashiach - the Messiah, the Anointed One, the Chosen One, the Christ - be fulfilled in the Revelation of the Spirit of the Christ to all the world. Only then can the Millennium be attained.

Primarily, that reunified Church should be re-forged out of the three (it's always three with God) principal shards of the Whole Church.

The Whole Church - the Great Church of the 21st century - must be a forging together of the Protestant, Catholic, and Orthodox churches.

We require Protestant Faith, Orthodox Tradition, and Catholic insight - a mysticism, wisdom, and theological-philosophical insight that can serve as the substrate for Protestant Faith and Orthodox Tradition. And, in truth, that Great Church, if it shall survive the onslaught of the struggles to come, and, finally, the full force of Satan and his Anti-Christ, will absolutely require the servant-leadership of the successor of St. Peter. Yet this final pope, this final occupant of the Petrine throne, will have no throne. He will have no house, for the Vatican shall have been destroyed. He will be considered by the Anti-Christ's regime to be the most hated criminal. He will be denounced by the Anti-Christ's New False Church of Satan, called the Universal Church of God, which will be nothing more, and nothing less, than a (brilliant and triumphant) parody and mockery of the Great Church that shall be reunified before the Apocalyptic Tribulations.

This final pope will not wear tiaras or prance around in red slippers. He will be hunted like a dog. He will be denounced as a heretic, a blasphemer, and a traitor, while the Supreme

Priest (or whatever his foul title shall be) of the False Church of the Anti-Christ will be called the true Pontifex Maximus of the true Christ to Come: the Anti-Christ.

This last pope before the Revelation of Christ's Spirit at the dawn of the Millennium will be smuggled like an escaped slave from house to house and nation to nation, giving strength to each dying Christian community, being torn apart, battered, bludgeoned, and mercilessly bloodied - body-slammed - by the all-tolerant, all-loving, all-diverse, all-compassionate, all-merciful ruthless and murderous military machine of the Anti-Christ and his faithful followers, who shall be rabid on the spirit of their Master, Satan, who shall greedily lap up the blood they so cravenly seek: the blood of Christians, the blood of the Lamb. These scoundrels and murderers shall have their fill of that blood, and then they shall have that holy blood torment them in their innards in a fiery hell for all eternity. This last pope shall not, primarily, urge Christians not to sin -- His ministry will not be simply to call Christians to abandon pride, envy, anger, lust, greed, gluttony or sloth. For, while still a danger, such everyday sins will not be the most pressing and threatening of Satan's temptations, his instruments to snatch souls from salvation in Christ. For Satan shall at that time have a World Empire with astonishing military might, and he shall use all the organs of his military, political, entertainment, cultural, and ideological Empire to instill this final temptation into the Flesh of Christ: Fear. Terror. A Reign of Triumphal Terror, with all the power of Religion and the State behind it. The final snare of sin he shall use is the sin of fear: the sin of despair, of not hoping in Christ. For, all the seven deadly sins and their many subcategories are sins against faith: the sinner fails to trust that God's Way leads to happiness. The final temptation, the final sin, fear, causes the sinner to despair of the fundamental promise of Christ: eternal life in His Name. Thus, this last pope's ministry will be to encourage and sustain Christians to not blaspheme the Name of Christ as they are murdered for their faith.

Before that time, it shall be essential for all Christians to know that they belong to a Great Church, and for that Great Church to have some kind of realized, actualized, practical unity. Because, when the final war comes, between the dying True Church and the triumphant False Church, the Church, and the Christians of the dying world, cannot think of themselves as Catholics, Methodists, Anglicans, Lutherans, Baptists, or Orthodox. They will have to first and really think of themselves as Christians, and each Christian will have to encourage each other in the fundamental true faith, as a glorified, triumphal, loud, celebrity New Faith says that *it* in fact is the true Church, the true heir to Christianity, with not only the true pope and universal pastor leading it, but the reincarnation of Jesus Christ Himself as Glorified King presiding over the Kingdom of Heaven on Earth.

How will Christians know to follow the real Christ they can't see, when they are being murdered for not following the false Christ that they *can* see, and that simply says one single thing: "Worship me, and I shall make all your dreams come true. But fall to your knees and say that I am God, and you shall not only have your lives, but wealth, comfort, companionship, sex, and every kind of pleasure you desire."

I tell you truly: a Church that tears itself apart over faith vs. works, consubstantiation vs. transubstantiation, infant baptism vs. adult baptism, papal authority vs. congregational authority, tradition vs. magisterium, the past vs. the future, authenticity vs. the ever-new Spirit, Scripture vs. Tradition, laity vs. clergy, ritual vs. text, grace vs. righteousness, ordained priesthood vs.

universal priesthood, predestination vs. free will, God's Sovereignty vs. God's Mercy will *never* be able to withstand the Anti-Christ.

This is not to say that these theological disputes are unimportant. They are very important. But they are important for a Church that has ages and ages to go. They are important if you are sitting around in your parlor with nothing to do and no one to disturb you. They are less important (not unimportant, just less important), when a World Empire is bent on exterminating every last one of you.

The Great Church, a confederation of Protestant, Catholic, and Orthodox Churches, should keep it simple. Each should not, necessarily, abandon or even focus on modifying their doctrines. Ecumenical integration of the doctrines, or, at least, many of the doctrines, of the Whole Church may be beneficial, especially if it is genuine and is born out of seeing deeper into the mystery of the Gospel. But such ecumenical *doctrinal* changes will trigger too much of a negative response from too many people. A mad obsession with integrating doctrine - fast and haphazardly and even syncretically - will just encourage voices in each Christian church that say that the effort to forge the Great Church is itself a snare of the Anti-Christ. In an over-emphasis on doctrinal unity, we would end up producing greater disunity, with every traditionalist and conservative element of each faction of Christians claiming that it was apostasy to give an inch on each of their precious doctrinal points.

For the dream of each of the more rigid elements of each of the factions is conquest. I feel somewhat uncomfortable (although I just did in the last paragraph) calling such people traditionalists and conservatives. I am a traditionalist. I am a conservative. I'm just not an asshole. So, I think that would be a better way of describing these people. Because you can be the most hardcore member of the Society of Saint Pius X or maybe the most right-wing, hardcore Protestant member of the John Birch Society, but that doesn't mean that you have to be an asshole about it. Although, probably, if you're attracted to groups and movements that promote rigid, hostile interpretations of every doctrine, every fidget and facet and edict and decree and decretal, of your tradition, and you have blind, seething hatred and rage for anyone with different ideas or opinions than you, well.....then you just might be an asshole.

Jeff Foxworthy on the Bible

<https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=mxFqVQFvhvw>

Because, in dealing with these kinds of people, I'm pretty well convinced that they're not in it for Christ. They're in it for themselves. They're not trying to give *themselves* to Christ. They using Christ as a sword to make other people miserable, to build themselves up by tearing other people down. They use Christ and the Bible and their traditions not as ways of building up other people, but as ways of propping themselves up as authority figures, with power, significance, and respect.....and, let's face it, with too many of them.....money....lots and lots of money.....

That is not to say that our differences don't matter. **THEY MATTER.** It's just that resisting the Anti-Christ and his persecutions as one, true, authentic Great Church of the Flesh of Christ matters more.

So, when the Church's back is against the wall, what can we *all* say together? What is the one, fundamental, legitimate, and truly universal (not syncretic) thing that should unite us all?

THE APOSTLES' CREED

I believe in God, the Father almighty,
creator of heaven and earth.

I believe in Jesus Christ, God's only Son, our Lord,
who was conceived by the Holy Spirit,
born of the Virgin Mary,
suffered under Pontius Pilate,
was crucified, died, and was buried;
he descended to Hell.
On the third day he rose again;
he ascended into heaven,
he is seated at the right hand of the Father,
and he will come to judge the living and the dead.

I believe in the Holy Spirit,
the holy catholic Church,
the communion of saints,
the forgiveness of sins,
the resurrection of the body,
and the life everlasting. Amen.

Condensed version, for when you have a gun to your head:

The Way to eternal life is faith in Christ, and perseverance in the righteousness that faith makes possible.

The Way to eternal life is Christ.

Christ is Salvation.

Because, when Catholics, Baptists, Methodists, Greek Orthodox, Russian Orthodox, Charismatics, Evangelicals, Presbyterians, Lutherans and all kinds of Christians are lined up against a wall and the forces of the Anti-Christ demand that they renounce Christ or die...you don't want them looking at each other and saying - "Wait, will I be judged solely on my faith, or will my works be credited to me?" "Wait, is the pope the supreme leader of the church or does authority come from the congregation?" "Wait, are icons legitimate spiritual tools or do they violate the Second Commandment?" "Wait, is infant baptism legitimate, or only adult baptism?" "Wait, is speaking in tongues a necessary part of being a Christian?" "Wait, should we be handling snakes right now?" "Wait, I believe in the prophecies of Joseph Smith -- Am I screwed?" "Wait, in communion - is that a symbol or is there the real presence?" "Wait, should we drink Coke or Pepsi tomorrow at lunch?" "Wait, did you pick up the milk?" "Wait, what's on television tonight?" "Wait, Christian Science...like, is that a thing?"

I don't know...maybe it's a strategy. Maybe the Anti-Christ's stormtroopers will be so perplexed at the comic scene that maybe some of the persecuted Christians can run away. Maybe the stormtroopers will all be doubled over laughing and you can judo chop them and steal their guns.

I don't know. It just might work.

But I suspect it won't.

So, no, you don't want that. In the end times, in the days of renewed persecution, of a persecution that shall eclipse the worst of Nero and Diocletian, that shall make the lions' den look like a day at the beach, you want each and every Christian to stand as brothers and sisters and intone a sacred mantra, in unison, in the strength that comes from unity: Christ is Salvation.

Let's trot out another metaphor. I love me some metaphors.

Let's imagine a family. It's called the Brady Bunch. The Bradys are your typical, wholesome family. There's Mom and Dad, Greg, Marcia, Peter, Jan, Bobby and Cindy. They all live together under one roof, in one house, but oh boy, do they have their problems -- and their differences. Mom wants Dad to be more attentive; Dad wants Mom to wear that outfit he bought for her; Greg says Marcia's piano practice is preventing him from studying; Peter wants to go to an expensive college, but the other children worry that there won't be enough money for them; Cindy says that Bobby keeps pushing her; Bobby says that Cindy keeps touching his stuff; Dad wants Mom to stop complaining so much; Mom wants more respect from Dad; Marcia wants to go to a piano training camp, but that means Greg won't be able to take that trip he's been planning; Jan feels ignored.

The Brady Bunch

<https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=-yZHveWFvqM>

Then, one night, a little demon troll named Jigsaw invades the Bradys' home with his fearsome henchmen. Jigsaw and the henchmen kidnap, toy with, torment, and torture the family,

hoping that they will break each of the family members' spirits, and get each of them to further his work by falling into disunity and tormenting each other, rather than standing united as a wall in brotherhood, in the bonds of family.

Now, it would be one thing to say that those differences and issues in the family were irrelevant. They are not irrelevant. They are important.

But they're not central. They are not issues that make the family members not part of the same family. And if the family has failed to nourish those common bonds of family, when the persecutions and trials come, the family will fail and fall to pieces. But if, even though they don't deny or wish away their differences, the family has learned to live together and love one another as a family, then they will endure the persecution as a unity, and thus preserve their bonds of family, the essence of what makes them themselves.

The asshole contingent of every Christian faction (I shall not give them undue praise or credit by calling them "traditionalists" or "conservatives") wants nothing to do with this.

These assholes don't give a damn about the final persecutions of the Apocalyptic Tribulations. They only care about their own sense of self-righteousness, their own sense of rectitude, their own sense of preserving their identity. It's all about them.

Preparing for the end? Preparing Christians to survive a persecution by the Anti-Christ himself? Somebody else's problem, somebody else's time. That's not *my* problem; that's not *my* concern. Christian Unity? Christian Brotherhood? Let it all be damned. I only care about *my* congregation, *my* church, *my* identity, *my* principles, *my* beliefs, *my* practices. Much of this is, frankly, I suspect, just the children of Satan sown among the Flesh of Christ, the Flock of the Shepherd. These people fester in the Church, their blank, naked, furious rage and hatred costumed with the sanctity of vestments and church membership. Let us recall that the BTK serial killer was himself a prominent member of a Lutheran congregation.

Yet, naturally, most people who like to dig into their own traditions -- without any regard for Christian unity -- have noble impulses. "These practices are essential." "Real Christianity can't exist without these five points." "Or these ten principles." "Or these twenty ideas." "Or these thirty books." "Or this outlook." "Or that set of words." "Or these practices." "Or obedience to this hierarchy." "Or this other hierarchy."

And in some cases, maybe in many cases, they might have a point!

But we're not scientists trying to state the exact theoretical formula that most closely represents some abstract notion of "Christianity".

The final battle will require strengthening all Christians to not worship the Anti-Christ and to not blaspheme the Name of Christ in exchange for their mortal, material lives.

And this won't be easy. Not only will the Anti-Christ have a vast military and intelligence network at his disposal, and be unspeakably cruel, but he will perform miracles, signs, and wonders. He will very *convincingly seem* like he is actually Christ returned to earth. Except for that part about the Second Coming being totally obvious to *everyone*, like lightening in the sky. And except for that part about being a mass-murdering tyrant who has constructed a demonic World Empire.

But even that will be justified as the Messiah's prerogative -- the necessary wrath inflicted on those who will not worship God.

This doesn't mean the abandonment of our traditions or our efforts to say that one is right and the other is wrong. It doesn't mean that we all just throw up our hands, wave them in the air like we just don't care, and say that theology doesn't matter, creeds don't matter, history doesn't matter, nothing matters and we just sing kumbaya.

But we have to figure out how, as a **WHOLE CHURCH, THE ONE GREAT CHURCH OF CHRIST**, to see ourselves first as Christians, as brothers, as adelphi (Greek for brothers), and then say that we come from traditions that we value and believe in and that do, indeed, make us different.

But the Church of Christ defeats itself, grievously, if we ever say that those differences make us no longer brothers in Christ.

We have to get to a point where Christians - where the Church - no longer sees itself as participants at some kind of great High School debating society.

The Church has to see itself -- and all Christians everywhere -- as lined up against the wall by Satan, who will not discriminate on the basis of our traditions and practices.

Satan hates you because you profess Christ.

Therefore, you, Christians, should likewise love each other because of Christ.

And, in regards to non-Christians: Preach the Gospel, in love and a spirit of grace and freedom.

Because, remember, Satan hates every human being, because they are human. He is the world's greatest anti-humanist. Satan even hates Satanists, those sad pitiful dupes. The only Satanist Satan truly loves is himself.

This I command you: Love one another.

John 15:17

Oh, and here's a prophecy (not really a prophecy, more a lurking suspicion): I foresee that the most "traditionalist", most "hardcore" elements of each faith: Protestant, Catholic, and Orthodox, will end up being the *most* enthusiastic for the False Church's vision. For that Anti-Christ and his False Kingdom will provide them with all the *exterior* satisfactions of faith: the chief of which is a smug, angry, hostile, blazing *self*-righteousness that does not love the grace of Christ, but only covets the terror of religion.

That False Kingdom of a Heaven on Earth that is actually the mask of a final Hell on Earth will give to each sinner the desire of his heart: self-righteous inquisitions of death, torture, and destruction to the self-righteous, bacchanals of endless pleasures to the fleshly, gushers of prosperity and money to the greedy, and a luxurious, easy, sanguine comfort, filled with every electronic wonder, to the slothful. And, indeed, none of these sinners shall bother themselves about all this sinning -- for has not the end and the Kingdom already come? Has not Christ

returned to rule? So, all this murder, debauchery, greed, and sloth shall not be seen as sins against God, but as God's reward in the Final Kingdom.

And this shall be the woeful, comic scene when the Anti-Christ finally takes the mask off and shows his true face - and the substance of his true faith - to his sinful, self-absorbed, self-pleasuring moron followers:

Lord of Illusions

<https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=k8a1wofBOX4>

So, okay - we should strive for real Christian unity.

Now the hard part: how?

I propose that the Catholic Church convene an ecumenical council. Not a council to reshape doctrine. And not a council that will last for a year or two years or twenty years.

I propose that this ecumenical council, which is the highest authority in the Roman Catholic Church, be a continuing council of indefinite duration.

This Council of the Great Church should not principally involve itself with doctrinal matters.

Rather, it should be a pastoral council, and it must invite all Protestant churches that believe in the Trinity and all Orthodox churches to share in the Council of the Great Church as brothers in Christ.

(Non-trinitarian churches, if they would be willing, should be admitted to a kind of umbrella association, say, a Council of Christ. I consider the Trinity to be the linchpin of Christian faith: if Christ is not God, and cannot be God such that the absolute unity of God is still maintained, then Christianity is a form of polytheism.)

To my Catholic brethren, this does *not* mean that we subject the Catholic Church's internal governance and particular doctrines to the *government* of Protestants or Orthodox. Nor should the Catholic Church try to use such a Council to exert its own *government* upon the Protestants or the Orthodox.

If any party should try to exert government over any other church, this Council of the Great Church would be a disastrous failure and do maximal harm without doing any good.

Rather this Council should organize and streamline the institutional mechanisms by which Christians everywhere can support each other in logistical, practical, everyday matters. It would be an institutionalization of the mystical Body of Christ.

Not a conquest by the Catholic Church of the other churches. Not a reformed Church that made the Catholic Church one more Protestant Church. Nor an Orthodox reform that would make the Universal Church the Orthodox Patriarchate of Italy.

This institution would not be for the purpose of issuing fancy documents with impressive titles. It would not be for crafting grandiose theological constitutions of the Church. It would not be for stamping out heresies. There are other organs of the Church for all that.

Rather an *institution* - a real institution, and not an abstraction - is necessary to stop the killing of Christians - everywhere, and in places most Christians don't care about. It is necessary to promote the real, felt presence of Christian brotherhood in all Christians. Not a brainwashed "we're all the same" kumbaya brotherhood -- but a real, fierce, loving brotherhood of grace that with adamant conviction proclaims: We are Christians. We are the Flesh of Christ. We are the Church. And we stand together, united as brothers.

I deeply feel that a real ecumenical council is necessary to underscore the overwhelming gravity of the struggle that the Church will face in the 21st century and possibly, if we get there, the 22nd century.

It is not good enough for this to be some promotion, some gimmick, some conference, some Conference on Christian Unity, where we bring some pastors and Orthodox priests into a conference room, have a few seminars, give a few feel-good speeches and everyone goes on their merry little way....into perdition and the waiting maw of the Anti-Christ.

Rather, the struggle *for* Christian Unity, a real unity with real institutional, everyday, practical back and forth among all Christians everywhere on the planet must have as its focal point the continuing authority of the Catholic Church's highest authority, with Protestants and Orthodox as co-equal governing members -- not of the Catholic Church's internal practices -- but of this new enterprise to secure the Christian future, and the souls of Christians in future generations.

What this Council of the Great Church should *not* be: arguing over doctrines, hashing out biblical passages to support our cherished doctrines, figuring out how we can get ecclesiastical authority over Protestant and Orthodox Churches, Catholics getting Protestants to accept the Eucharist, Protestants getting Catholics to drop the Eucharist, etc. etc. etc.

This Council of the Great Church should not be a debating society for theologians. It should be the Pentagon of the Church for generals figuring out how to get aid, food, and logistical support to Christians wherever they need it. Pentagon is an unfortunate word, since it

evokes the diabolical pentagram, but I mean simply a General Staff focused on nuts-and-bolts practical matters: which for the Church of Christ must be mutual encouragement, spiritual and moral brotherhood for the sake of spiritual improvement, and, critically, practical assistance to all Christians everywhere. And it should strengthen the operational, practical, everyday coordination of all Churches so that the Whole Church can survive whatever comes in the next couple centuries.

It should be the NATO of Christianity, the Continental Congress of the Church.

Only such a Church can withstand the enemies of Christ who march under the violent, hateful banner of Satan. Only such a Church could ever hope to maintain the souls of its flock under the merciless onslaught of the Anti-Christ.

I have another modest proposal. We require a Whole Church, a Great Church of all Christians, capable of withstanding murderers and soldiers of destruction and hatred.

So, why would it be the case that the Church should be ruled solely by bishops and theologians?

Now, I agree that the maintenance of authentic doctrine is essential. Indeed, the perversion of authentic traditional and Biblical doctrine will be the foundation of the False Church of Satan (masquerading as the Church of Christ, with a false pope, and the Anti-Christ proclaiming himself the Second Coming). So, it is essential that the Church's *doctrines* be maintained under the rule of pastors and theologians.

But, we also have a Church where Christians are being slaughtered for their faith and where the institutions of government, business, and academia are increasingly hostile to the living out of, and perseverance in, Christian faith.

So, why isn't the Whole Church using all the resources and energies and talents of military generals, businessmen, innovators, entrepreneurs, artists, entertainers, intellectuals, intelligence operatives, educators, engineers, and every other form of talent?

I propose that the College of Cardinals take on an advisory adjunct council, in which the traditional College of Cardinals, composed of its traditional bishops, sits at the core, *with* the creation of new cardinals from the ranks of faithful Christians, who are not necessarily ordained, who can use their talents to build a robust Church that can face the challenges ahead.

A cardinal does not have to be an ordained cleric. That is a modern innovation of the last century. Nothing of the sort of thing I am proposing has occurred before, but there have been numerous "lay cardinals" in the Church's history - a lay cardinal being someone who has been given minor orders rather than major orders (holy orders).

Such "secular" cardinals should have no role, or a profoundly limited role, in anything to do with Church doctrine or the celebration of any liturgy. These secular cardinals should be

allowed to be present within conclaves to elect the pope, and should have the right to speak and participate in deliberations, but they should not have voting rights: only sacred cardinals, the main College of Cardinals, should have voting rights. But these secular cardinals *should* be empowered and encouraged to create, using their own talent and wealth, in coordination with the resources of the Church, new structures of assistance, defense, and encouragement for all Christians everywhere. Protestants, Catholics, and Orthodox Christians from all nations, both lay and clerical, should be equally admitted to such an advisory adjunct council of these “secular” cardinals.

Now, a pious old woman praying a rosary in Peoria might balk at such a proposal - What an outrage! What a deformation of the Church! I’ve never seen anything like that on EWTN! (Religious television).

But, while such a person may not like this proposal, I think that Coptic Christians being forced off a bus and told to renounce Christ or be murdered, would take a great deal of interest in the idea of (secular) cardinals coming from military, intelligence, and business backgrounds, who had contacts with former intelligence officers and former special forces members.

A blank, intransigent refusal to equip the Church for the dire struggles ahead is not pious, it is not wise, it is not holy, it is not religious or even traditional. It is a failure of spirit. It is self-preference for one’s comfort and attachment to the familiar, rather than a bold and Spirit-filled commitment to secure the faith, and eternal salvation, of all Christians everywhere.

But, to be clear: I am not proposing some kind of syncretic false union where we just turn the Church into some kind of doctrinal and liturgical mosh pit.

Rather, I am proposing a unity of brotherhood, one that frankly, clearly, and sensibly acknowledges our important differences, but which also recognizes that the survival of our Christian faith, and the survival of individual Christian souls, is at stake as it has not been for millennia.

I propose not a quick and dirty, fast and easy, false and lazy and delusional unity of doctrine, but a vigorous and practical unity of action.

And, that unity of action, naturally and over time and as appropriate can, eventually, serve as a springboard for the full reunification of the Church.

Those who cherish their dreams of theological conquest over the felt needs of Christians facing persecution should reevaluate their priorities and ask themselves: am I preferring the needs of the Flesh of Christ, or am I preferring my own sensibilities?

Those who prefer the mode of conquest really have to hear themselves. They have to, as Harold Bloom said of Shakespeare’s characters, overhear their own thinking.

Is the reunification of the Church to be the collapse of two of the three divisions of the Church, and the triumph of one? Consider the series of delusional scenarios that too many Christians, of different stripes, cherish:

Evangelicals who dream of the Vatican becoming a museum and the whole ordained priesthood and the celebration of the Eucharist collapsing with nothing but non-denominational Christian and Pentecostal churches throughout Italy.

Catholics who dream of the day when Pat Robertson and Franklin Graham will kneel and kiss the red papal slippers, when Joel Osteen will lead a Tridentine Mass, and Joyce Meyer will become a habit-wearing nun.

Orthodox who shout that Protestants and Catholics are all deranged heretics, who must become totally Orthodox. Oh, that fine day when Joel Osteen will grow a full beard, wear a black frock, and administer the Eucharist the proper way: using leavened bread cut reverently in accord with the ancient and sacramental rites. Joel, here's some pointers for when you revamp your television show into an Orthodox Holy Eucharist: https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=0_H3cJxC0sE (This is a beautiful liturgical practice, actually.)

I have similar dreams. They mostly involve me winning the Super Bowl, being named MVP, hopping in my time machine to have a liaison with a young Cindy Crawford, then playing golf on the moon with Arnold Palmer while sipping Arnold Palmers. These ambitions are usually fulfilled between my third and fourth dreams.

Meanwhile, while Christians living in comfy corners of the First World plot their oh-so-awesome theological conquests, which should be completed, I don't know, maybe by A.D. 10,000....maybe by A.D. 20,000, very real and persecuted Christians in the Third World are being brutally murdered *right now*.

The Cure
Rev. Tim Keller
The Gospel and Idolatry
Acts 19:23-41

<https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=mn1U1omO6sg>

Stevie Wonder
As

<https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=GYQfWJNWe3I>

NOW REMEMBER: Such a Council of the Great Church and such a Reform *should be entirely structural - not at all changing ANY of the formal doctrines of the Church.*

If this warning is not heeded, such a Council would become a catastrophic evil.

REMEMBER: Any “pope” (anti-pope) who is elected, who then turns around and calls a council, or uses a council, to *significantly* change the doctrines of the Catholic Church (much less to unite Islam and Christianity) **IS THE ANTI-CHRIST OR THE FALSE PROPHET OR A TOOL OF THE ANTI-CHRIST AND FALSE PROPHET!!!**

YOU WERE WARNED!!!

Friendship in Christ between Catholics, Orthodox and Protestants is a good thing, for we are all brothers in Christ. The historical schism among Christians is tragic. We can share our faith in Christ as brothers and sisters, without syncretizing doctrine and without polluting the Deposit of Faith.

But there can be no religious accord between Christianity and Islam. Individual Christians and Muslims can be friends and can live at peace. But the two religions, Christianity and Islam, are *entirely* incompatible. *Any* attempt to syncretize them, or to bring *any* of their beliefs in communion, or to create *any* structural ties between the Church of Christ and any element of Islam is a Satanic ploy to destroy the Church.

In the event of such a wicked Council, that would dare destroy the Church in such a manner, the Church would rightly split apart into the True Church of Christ, peopled by the Children of God, and the False Church of Satan, populated by the Children of Satan.

Any cardinal, bishop, priest, deacon, minister, religious *or any other* member of the hierarchy that *dares* to involve himself or herself in such an **ABOMINATION** will be damned.

The Mashiach

I dare you, for even *a half hour*, to sit with the possibility: What if this Jesus is the mashiach? What would that mean for your understanding of Jewish history? Really: Consider it. Allow it as a possibility for just one half hour of your life. Sit with the thought. Not arguing with the idea, not raging against the idea, not scorning the idea...just, simply, quietly sitting with it in silence. It can't be true. It isn't true! Break his bones!! Smash them to pieces!! Stamp Him out! Then quiet your mind and consider: *But what if it is true?*

Let your mind wander in the possibility. Let the possibility suggest itself to you.

I dare you not to try to reason about what if it is true. That is virtually pointless. Simply, for a half hour, accept that it is true, and then ponder what that would mean. If this Jesus cannot be the mashiach, then you should not fear the challenge. What are you afraid of?

If it *is* true then God sits by the phone....waiting....waiting....forever waiting for you. Sound familiar?

Combine your zeal with discernment.

Oh, that today you would hear his voice:
Do not harden your hearts as at Meribah,
as on the day of Massah in the desert.
There your ancestors tested me;
they tried me though they had seen my works.
Forty years I loathed that generation;
I said: "This people's heart goes astray;
they do not know my ways."
Therefore I swore in my anger:
"They shall never enter my rest."

(Psalm 95:7b-11)

What would the Apocalypse of Judaism (by which I mean the reconciliation of Judaism and Christianity, the Revealing of the Total and Deepest Interiority of the Spirit of Judaism, and *not at all in any way, shape or form that one hair on the head of one Jew be harmed*) be other than entrance into the Olam Ha-Ba? As St. Paul, himself an authentic Jew, writes, "For if their rejection is the reconciliation of the world, what will their acceptance be but life from the dead?" (Romans 11:15)

I do not mean some crude attempts at conquest, of breaking and bulldozing communities. I mean something genuine. I mean, as a beginning, the real and heartfelt brotherhood of Christians and Jews, with affection and respect. Christians should have the diligence and interest

to study the Torah with zeal and righteous fidelity. And Jews should study the Gospels, with a tolerant heart and an open spirit, penetrating its meaning and seriously considering its mysteries with the same diligence and curiosity with which they study Torah. It would be a real shame if you had a winning lottery ticket in your pocket but were too stubborn to check it.⁹²

As Proverbs 8:32-36 says of the Divine Wisdom, the inner logos (principle) of God:

וְעֵתָהּ בָּנִים, שְׁמָעוּ-לִי; וְאֲשֶׁרִי, דְרָכֵי יִשְׁמְרוּ.
שְׁמָעוּ מוֹסֵר וְחֻכְמוֹ; וְאֵל-תִּפְרָעוּ.
שְׁמָעוּ מוֹסֵר וְחֻכְמוֹ; וְאֵל-תִּפְרָעוּ.
לְשֹׁמֵר, מְזוּזַת פֶּתַח־י.
כִּי מֵצָאִי, מֵצָאִי (מָצָא) חַיִּים; וַיִּפֶק רָצוֹן, מִיְהוָה.
וְחֻטְאֵי, חֹמֶס נִפְשׁוּ; כָּל-מִשְׁנָאֵי, אֶהְבוּ מוֹת.

And before that, in 8:17-24, the Scripture says:

אֲנִי, אֶהְבִּיהָ (אֶהְבִּי) אֶהֱבֶה; וּמִשְׁחָרִי, יִמְצְאוּנִי.
עֲשֹׂר-וְכָבוֹד אֶתִּי; הוֹן עֵתְךָ, וְצִדְקָה.
טוֹב פְּרִיִי, מִחֲרוֹץ וּמִפֶּזֶז; וּתְבוֹאֲתִי, מִכֶּסֶף נִבְחָר.
בְּאֶרֶץ-צִדְקָה אֶהְלֵךְ; בְּתוֹךְ, נְתִיבוֹת מִשְׁפָּט.
לְהַנְחִיל אֶהְבִּי יֵשׁ; וְאַצְרֹתֵיהֶם אֲמַלֵּא.
יְהוָה--קָנְנִי, רֵאשִׁית דְּרָכֹו; קֶדֶם מִפְּעֻלֹי מֵאֵז.
מֵעוֹלָם, נִסְכַּתִּי מְרֹאֵשׁ-- מִקְדָּמִי-אֶרְץ.
בְּאֵין-תְּהִמּוֹת חוֹלְלֹתִי; בְּאֵין מַעֲיִנוֹת, נִכְבְּדֵי-מַיִם.

Have the courage and the humility and the simplicity of heart to search for Wisdom, wheresoever the search might lead.

The word in verse 22 is נסך - which means “libation”. So the Lord formed wisdom by pouring a libation out. Wisdom is a libation. It is a libation poured out *from* the Lord. And what can the Lord pour out but Himself? The word can also mean cast (as in a metal vessel being cast), to weave, and to sacrifice. These are called clues, hints, evidence. Mashiach is getting to be a cold case. Maybe you should pursue all leads.

<https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=6GVJpOmaDyU>⁹³

⁹² <https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=Io1fnWG3C-8>

⁹³ Alanis Morissette Updates ‘Ironic’ Lyrics

For those who argue that the state of Judaism in the first century did not require reform or was adequately faithful to the Lord, consider this: what would be the opinion of the All-Righteous were He to come in the flesh as a person to *any* human community, to *any* human person. Has there ever been a community, ever been a person, who would be “given the okay” by the All-Righteous? It would be far more unlikely than this scenario: A world-renowned chef with ten restaurants, all with three Michelin stars, has his car break down, and he knocks on the door of four college students living together. All they have is Kraft macaroni and cheese, which they think is incredible. While our chef is attempting to eat his meal, the students ask, “Pretty righteous, eh, brah?”

And again, let us imagine a club of people striving towards cleanliness. Let us call it *Clean Club*. The first rule of Clean Club is that you must always talk about Clean Club. The second rule of Clean Club is that you must always talk about Clean Club. The third rule of Clean Club is that if you are not clean, you must get clean before you can join. Let us also imagine a fanatical clean freak, a real germophobe who cannot at all stand any form of taint or smudge or infection. This fanatic has a totally sterile apartment, totally organized in every detail and with floors you could eat off of. And he meticulously makes sure that others in his presence are also meticulously clean. Interested in such a Clean Club, our fanatic pops in.

When he enters the house hosting that month’s Clean Club, our fanatic is met with a rather jarring sight: About thirty people milling around a messy, disordered, even dank place, with stains on the walls and the carpets. He also sees the people, who don’t seem any cleaner than any person he sees on the street. The fanatic, curious about whether he had gotten the right house, goes to talk to some of the members of Clean Club.

He starts hearing their conversations. One says, “I didn’t eat garbage today! How clean am I! I did eat garbage yesterday, and I might eat garbage tomorrow, but not today! How clean am I!”

And another states, “No one knows that I eat garbage, since I conceal it so well! But since no one else knows, it’s the same as not eating garbage. How clean am I!”

Another says, “I haven’t showered this month, but maybe next month. But I have the intention to shower, therefore how clean am I!”

Another responds, “That’s ambitious, I haven’t showered in ten years, and I may never get around to it again. But I brush my teeth at least once a week, so that’s something. How clean am I!”

Would the fanatic say, “These people are like me,” or would he rather say, “These people, though thinking they have something to do with cleanliness, have no idea of *my kind* of cleanliness - which is so radically and totally superior and different.”

The Forgiveness of Sins

Of course, the God-Man, Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ *before* His Crucifixion and Descent into Hell, was fully possessed of all the gifts of the Father, and thus had the *same* All-Righteousness as the All-Righteous Father. Jesus was only dispossessed, disinherited, when he willingly entered Abaddon, total ruination.

The ALL-RIGHTEOUS cannot forgive sins merely by fiat - as in the earthly Temple, flesh and blood must be sacrificed to perfect the offering of praise and repentance, so in the heavenly Temple, of which the earthly Temple is a form, there is no return to the throne of glory (*see* Yoma 86a) without *first* an offering of flesh and blood which cleanses the enormity and cavity of the iniquity with the wholeness and plenitude of the ALL-RIGHTEOUS and makes the penitent suitable to come into the Holy Presence of the ALL-RIGHTEOUS.

As Malachi prophesied:

הוֹגַעְתֶּם יְהוָה בְּדַבְרֵיכֶם, וְאַמַּרְתֶּם בְּמֶה הוֹגַעְנוּ:
בְּאִמְרוֹכֶם, כֹּל-עֲשֵׂה רָע טוֹב בְּעֵינֵי יְהוָה וּבְהֶם הוּא חֹפֵץ, אֵי
אֵיה, אֱלֹהֵי הַמְּשַׁפֵּט.

(Malachi 2:17)

Another prophet says: <https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=KWhMyOs0pCQ>

Moshiach is on his way, indeed. It would be a real shame if, as the dawn was breaking and you saw his face unveiled, you said, “Uh-oh.....”

The Angelic Proclamation of the Spirit

Christianity must recover its Jewish Soul, and Judaism must discover the Spirit of the Christ, its Christian faith.

That is to say, Christianity must *return* - run back to - the Spirit of Judaism, for in no other way *can* the deepest mysteries of the Gospel be revealed, be unveiled, be known at all, in the flesh, as explicit, as Come, and not just implicitly, through a glass darkly. For the Gospel is really, in Greek, euaggelion, εὐαγγέλιον, often translated as “Good News”: *This is HaShem’s Breaking News, live from God Center, now with your host, the Angel Gabriel.*

Good grief.

Εὐαγγέλιον is actually an incredibly easy word to translate properly. “Eu” is itself a standalone Greek word meaning “well” and “good”, and, when used as a prefix, as in, say, εὐδαιμονία, eudaimonia (usually translated in English as “happiness”), “eu” can also take on the connotation of “true” and “genuine”. Eudaimonia, for instance, is “eu” prefixed to “daimon”, which means spirit, as in mythological, pre-Christian notions of a natural spirit that might be either good or bad, as distinguished from θεοί, theοί, gods. (Daimones were divine, spiritual beings, lesser than and subordinate to the pantheon of gods. The polytheistic ancient Greek religion believed that these spirits guided individual human beings.)

The εὐαγγέλιον is the Good Message, Good Proclamation, Good Announcement, True Proclamation, Genuine Announcement

In Hebrew the word rendered Good is טוב, which means the best, best things, bounty, comeliness, glad, prosperity. And angel, aggelos in Greek, is malak in Hebrew - ambassador, messenger, envoy.

The Gospel: It is the Envoy of the best, most bountiful, gladdest prosperity. It is not simply a message, like a message in a bottle: *it is the living presence of the One from whom the Message comes.* The Message is of Bounty, and thus the Message is itself the Bountiful: the plenitudinous abundant All-Felicity of the All-Righteous come upon the earth.

So, let us preach the Gospel! The *real* Gospel, same as always, ever as before, forever bright and new like the morning dew at break of day! And that Gospel, not the word in our mouths but the Word ever in the Mouth of HaShem, the Righteous Name that names within every spirit the mark and seal of His righteousness, is not some Anglicized relic: this God-spell of the Britannic, this “Good Story.” Cool story, brah. No, salvation is from the Jews - the Proclamation is thus rather:

He said to them, “These are my words that I spoke to you while I was still with you, that everything written about me in the law of Moses and in the prophets and psalms must be

fulfilled.” Then he opened their minds to understand the scriptures. And he said to them, “Thus it is written that the Messiah would suffer and rise from the dead on the third day and that repentance, for the forgiveness of sins, would be preached in his name to all the nations, beginning from Jerusalem. You are witnesses of these things. And [behold] I am sending the promise of my Father upon you; but stay in the city until you are clothed with power from on high.”

(Luke 24:44-49)

The Proclamation *begins* from Jerusalem: remain within the Holy City until you are clothed with power from on high, from the All-Righteous. The radioactive core of the Proclamation is Jerusalem itself! All the power of the Proclamation must ultimately, and finally, emanate from “*staying* in the city *until* you are clothed with power from on high”. The Word of the Lord, of the Messiah, must remain in Jerusalem *until* it cannot but burst forth and surge towards the furthest limits of creation.

We run backwards, we return to ourselves, we return from Gospel to εὐαγγέλιον to what we must explore and at last see: the Tob-Mal’ak of HaShem. Not simply the בְּשׂוֹרָה, but mere tidings, *Thinking of you, from HaShem, A Hallmark Greeting*. No, no, no. It is the Tob-Mal’ak: the Mal’ak Tob or, more grammatically, the Malakuth Tob- the מַלְאָכּוּת טוֹב. The Chesed of the All-Righteous condescends, in total plenitudinous generosity, to come down upon the meager, all but non-existent, chesed of the flesh, and, through the wisdom of his epiousios agape, that chesed explodes into a radiant firestorm of Holiness, emanating throughout the material creation and rising up to the very depths of the All-Righteous’ Infinite Spirit.

Let us, then, proclaim the Word of the LORD not in the antiquated tongue of the primitive Angles, but in the Seraphic tongue of the holy Angels.

This is not a matter of interfaith dialogue. It is a matter of interfaith survival: The life you save may be your own.

Having faith in God is looking into his eyes and trusting that he will lead you home.

Discover, with toil and study and tenacity and receptivity: is the Spirit of Christ Jesus the Spirit of HaShem? That is, does the Mashiach claimant Yeshua characterize the deep and abiding characteristics of HaShem? Does he bear His mark? The stamp of His making, the sign of HaShem’s inner life? And if it is the same Spirit.....what now?

“The mashiach and the Olam Ha-Ba lie in the future, not in the past.”

- <http://www.jewfaq.org/mashiach.htm>

Okay. But, from the perspective of eternity, the future is the past and the past is the future: it's all the same thing. That doesn't prove Jesus of Nazareth is the mashiach, but an appeal to temporality does not constrain the dictates or grace of Eternity.

“On the contrary, another Jew born about a century later came far closer to fulfilling the messianic ideal than Jesus did. His name was Shimeon ben Kosiba, known as Bar Kokhba (son of a star), and he was a charismatic, brilliant, but brutal warlord.”

- <http://www.jewfaq.org/mashiach.htm>

Who is the greater? One who can swing a sword in a man's face, or speak the Name of God while under the torture of evil?

Even should you conclude that neither are mashiach, who, indeed, came closer to fulfilling the messianic ideal? The Mashiach is the Anointed of HaShem, he has holy oil poured upon him. What is the holy oil other than the righteousness of HaShem? Can he who is not righteous be at all close to fulfilling the messianic ideal? Is not a beggar who is righteous closer to the messianic ideal than an emperor of all the world who is not righteous?

Charisma. Charisma. Charisma. Always charisma. Sexy, and I know it.

Rambam:

And if a king shall arise from among the House of David, studying Torah and occupied with commandments like his father David, according to the written and oral Torah, and he will impel all of Israel to follow it and to strengthen breaches in its observance, and will fight God's wars, this one is to be treated as if he were the anointed one. If he succeeded and built the Holy Temple in its proper place and gathered the dispersed ones of Israel together, this is indeed the anointed one for certain, and he will mend the entire world to worship the Lord together, as it is stated: "For then I shall turn for the nations a clear tongue, so that they will all proclaim the Name of the Lord, and to worship Him with a united resolve (Zephaniah 3:9).

Was Jesus from the House of David? Inquire. Did Jesus study Torah and occupy himself with the commandments like David? Yes. Did he do it according to the written Torah? Yes. Did he observe the spoken word, instruction, of HaShem? One should imagine so. Did he call Israel to follow the Torah, and to follow it in a deeply more radical way? Yes. During his lifetime did he once ask a son of Israel to breach the Torah in any manner? No. Did he fight God's wars? God's war, *first*, is for righteousness. Did Jesus preach righteousness? Yes. Did Jesus preclude the possibility that once crowned king he would fight a physical war against the Romans (and any oppressor)? No. Did Jesus say that if crowned king in his lifetime, in the flesh, by his beloved people, that he would tear down the Temple or discontinue the Temple worship or innovate any ritual practice? No.

Almost all of the things spoken against Jesus only come in what Jesus always referred to as “the coming time”, the time *after* his Crucifixion and the ruination of his flesh. *If* Jesus was the eternal Temple (not just on the mount but in the heart of YHWH), the eternal Torah (not just handed down to Moses in the language of men but eternally existing on the tongue of HaShem), and the Righteous King (not merely a man inspired by God, but Adonai himself come in the flesh to lead His people), how can those who destroyed the Temple, the Torah, and the King then deny that Son of Man as defective or blasphemous or heretical when a new Temple, a new Torah, and a new King are raised up in their place? -- *raised up in a new age after the old order has passed away*. And should one cry out that one should not do away with the old order when one has been the very agent of that doing away with?

And who is *the one individual* who is most responsible for placing more Torahs in more hands in all the nations, proclaiming His Holy Name to the ends of the earth, than any other righteous man in history?

What we find is that the one special criterion is *making people* listen: but, would the unrighteous listen to the All-Righteous should He come upon them? And is it the fault of the All-Righteous that the ears of the unrighteous are stopped up and will not yield?

Can someone *make* someone listen who *will not listen, who will not hear, who will stubbornly and adamantly choose themselves over and over and over and over and over and over and over and over and over and over and over and over and over and over and over and over and yet over again?*

It is quite a spectacle to demand the fulfillment of expectation, when you yourself would destroy the very means by which such expectation could be fulfilled. And it is a portent of God that, despite destroying the earthly means, the expectations shall still be fulfilled, though now, and of necessity, in another way.

And then you say - but look at the horrors that Christians have wrought upon Jews: look at the horrors that all sinful men have wrought upon all men at all times. And again, as you did with the Temple, you cast out the little ones from the earthly Temple - and lo! they arise as a Great Body in all parts of the world, in every nation. That which is torn down and cast out does but arise stronger and more vigorous, ever more desperately unstoppable. Can you not escape your blindness?

It would be a real shame to define your entire existence by your desperate and zealous search, and then discover that you had for ages scorned the true object of that very search. It would be unfortunate, quite unlucky, to strive to obtain the highest blessing, while you had every day cursed that very blessing in your midst.

As you toil over the Wisdom of King Solomon with zeal, so too explore the Wisdom of King Joshua, with the openness of a tranquil heart. For as one afflicted cries out:

וְהַחֲכָמָה, מֵאִין תִּמְצָא; וְאִי זֶה, מְקוֹם בִּינָה.
לֹא-יָדַע אָנוּשׁ עֲרֶכְבָּה; וְלֹא תִמְצָא, בְּאֶרֶץ הַחַיִּים.
תְּהוֹם אָמַר, לֹא בִי-הִיא; וַיִּם אָמַר, אִין עִמָּדִי.
לֹא-יִתֵּן סָגוֹר תַּחֲתֶיהָ; וְלֹא יִשְׁקַל, כֶּסֶף מַחִירָה.
לֹא-תִסְלַח, בְּכַתֶּם אוֹפִיר; בְּשֶׁהֵם יָקָר וְסָפִיר.
לֹא-יַעֲרֹכְנָה זֶהָב, וְזָכוּכִית; וְתַמּוֹרֶתָה כְּלִי-פָז.
רָאמוֹת וְגַבִּישׁ, לֹא יִזְכָּר; וּמִשֶּׁךְ חֲכָמָה, מִפְּנִינִים.
לֹא-יַעֲרֹכְנָה, פְּטֻדַת-כּוֹשׁ; בְּכַתֶּם טְהוֹר, לֹא תִסְלַח.
וְהַחֲכָמָה, מֵאִין תִּבּוֹא; וְאִי זֶה, מְקוֹם בִּינָה.
וְנִעְלָמָה, מֵעֵינֵי כָל-חַי; וּמֵעוֹף הַשָּׁמַיִם נִסְתָּרָה.
אֲבִידוֹן וּמָוֶת, אָמְרוּ; בְּאֲזִינֵנוּ, שְׁמַעְנוּ שְׁמַעָה.
אֱלֹהִים, הִבִּין דְּרָכָה; וְהוּא, יָדַע אֶת-מְקוֹמָה.
כִּי-הוּא, לְקַצּוֹת-הָאֶרֶץ יִבִּיט; תַּחַת כָּל-הַשָּׁמַיִם יִרְאֶה.
לַעֲשׂוֹת לְרוּחַ מִשְׁקָל; וַיִּמִּים, תִּכּוֹן בְּמַדָּה.
בַּעֲשׂוֹתוֹ לְמִטְרַח חֶק; וְדָרַךְ, לְחַזִּיז קִלּוֹת.
אֲזַר רָאָה, וַיִּסְפָּרָה; הִכִּינָהּ, וְגַם-חֲקָרָה.
וַיֹּאמֶר, לְאָדָם--הוּ יִרְאֵת אֲדָנִי, הִיא חֲכָמָה; וְסוֹר
מִרַע בִּינָה.

(Job 28: 12-28)

If wisdom were in the depths of the most fathomless ocean, would you not tuck in your shirt and dive to the bottom? Would you not spend all you had to finance crews and ships and rigs to descend to it, and if it were beneath the ocean floor, would you not drill and drill, for years, for decades, till you recovered it? If you lost any book of Moses, if without cause or explanation, one simply vanished from the face of the earth, and there was but a rumour that one existed under the bedrock of the seas, would you not expend the whole wealth of the Nation to raise it up?

And then, if there is but the faintest hint of a whisper of a rumour of a doubt that *possibly* the Wisdom of the All-Righteous sat on your neighbor's coffee table, would you not at least inquire of the possibility? Would you not, rather, invest great effort in the search? Will you scorn the search because you hate your neighbor? Or because you fear your neighbor? Or because you have over-great love of yourself? Rather, be as one who says:

עַל-מִשְׁכָּבִי, בְּלִילוֹת, בִּקְשָׁתִי, אֶת שְׂאֵהָבָה נִפְשִׁי;
בִּקְשָׁתִיו, וְלֹא מִצְאָתִיו.
אֶקוּמָה נָא וְאֶסוּבָבָה בְּעִיר, בְּשׁוֹקִים וּבְרַחֲבוֹת--
אֲבַקֶּשֶׁהּ, אֶת שְׂאֵהָבָה נִפְשִׁי; בִּקְשָׁתִיו, וְלֹא מִצְאָתִיו.
מִצְאוֹנֵי, הַשְּׂמֵרִים, הַסְּבָבִים, בְּעִיר: אֶת שְׂאֵהָבָה נִפְשִׁי,
רְאִיתָם.

(Song of Songs 3:1-3)

Seek and you shall find. May it be that in your search you find what you are looking for, the All-Wisdom of the All-Righteous, that you too may say:

כמעט, שעברתי מהם, עד שמצאתי, את שאהבה נפשי;
אחזתי, ולא ארפנו--עד-שהביאתיו אל-בית אמי, ואל-חדר
הורתי.

(Song of Songs 3:4)

For what is charisma? Why do you lust so thirstily for this thing you do not even know? For charisma is from the Greek *kharis*, which is the favor of the divine. And do you not know that favor is nothing other than the good opinion of someone? So, whose good opinion - *whose* charisma - shall you seek? Shall you seek the good opinion of men or the good opinion of the All-Righteous? Should you expect the good opinion of HaShem to reflect the good opinion of men? For does not Isaiah prophesy:

דָּרְשׁוּ יְהוָה, בְּהַמְצָאוֹ; קְרֹאֵהוּ, בְּהִיּוֹתוֹ קְרוֹב.
יֵעֲזֹב רָשָׁע דְרָכּוֹ, וְאִישׁ אֶן מִחֲשַׁבְתָּיו; וְיֵשֵׁב אֶל-יְהוָה וִירַחֲמֵהוּ.
כִּי לֹא מִחֲשַׁבּוֹתַי מִחֲשַׁבּוֹתֵיכֶם, וְלֹא דַרְכֵיכֶם דְרָכֵי--נְאֻם, יְהוָה.
כִּי-גָבְהוּ שָׁמַיִם, מֵאָרֶץ--כֵּן גָּבְהוּ דְרָכֵי מִדְרָכֵיכֶם, וּמִחֲשַׁבְתֵּי
מִמִּחֲשַׁבְתֵּיכֶם.
כִּי בְאֲשֶׁר יֵרֵד הַגֶּשֶׁם וְהַשֶּׁלֶג מִן-הַשָּׁמַיִם, וְשָׁמָּה לֹא יָשׁוּב--כִּי אִם-הַרְוֵה
אֶת-הָאָרֶץ, וְהוֹלִידָהּ וְהִצְמִיחָהּ; וְנָתַן זֶרַע לְזֶרַע, וְלַחֵם לְאֹכֵל.
כֵּן יִהְיֶה דְבַרִּי אֲשֶׁר יֵצֵא מִפִּי, לֹא-יָשׁוּב אֵלַי רִיקָם: כִּי אִם-עָשָׂה אֶת-אֲשֶׁר
חִפְצָתִי, וְהִצְלִיחַ אֲשֶׁר שָׁלַחְתִּיו.
כִּי-בִשְׂמִיחָה תֵצֵא, וּבְשָׁלוֹם תִּבְלֹן; הִהָרִים וְהַגְּבָעוֹת, יִפְצְחוּ לְפָנֶיכֶם
רְנָה, וְכָל-עֵצֵי הַשָּׂדֶה, יִמְחֲאוּ-קֹף.
תַּחַת הַנְּעֻצוֹץ יַעֲלֶה בְרוֹשׁ, תַּחַת (וְתַחַת) הַסְרָפָד יַעֲלֶה הַדָּס; וְהָיָה
לִיהוָה לְשֵׁם, לְאוֹת עוֹלָם לֹא יִכָּרֵת. {פ}

Seek the Lord while he may be found,
call him while he is near.
Let the scoundrel forsake his way,
and the wicked man his thoughts;
Let him turn to the LORD for mercy;
to our God, who is generous in forgiving.
For my thoughts are not your thoughts,
nor are your ways my ways, says the
LORD.
As high as the heavens are above the earth,
so high are my ways above your ways
and my thoughts above your thoughts.

For just as from the heavens
the rain and snow come down
And do not return there
till they have watered the earth,
making it fertile and fruitful,
Giving seed to him who sows
and bread to him who eats,
So shall my word be
that goes forth from my mouth;
It shall not return to me void,
but shall do my will,
achieving the end for which I sent it.

(Isaiah 55:6-11)

Does not Isaiah speak, in one of his many splendorous meanings, of the Chesed of the All-Righteous and the chesed of man? Does not the disposition of one's self reflect the spirit within? And does not that disposition, from the fullness of its truth, speak its word? So, if the inner life of the All-Righteous, His Spirit, is so radically, unfathomably different from our inner lives, our spirits, then must not our words be rather different, one from the other? Must not the Word of the All-Righteous be unfathomably *other* than the word of men? And what is one's good opinion other than one's word? Thus, would not the righteousness of men be quite different, unfathomably, radically *other* than the true and eternal Righteousness of the All-Righteous? So when men say to themselves, "Oh, look at that man, he is quite charismatic!" might HaShem but laugh and shake His mighty head and say, "No, not such a one, *I* do not find such a one charismatic at all. My favor, my grace shall not condescend to rest upon him." And if men say to themselves, "Oh, that one is most ugly, most disfigured, without any loveliness, so uncharismatic," and turn their backs on him, and even murder him, might not HaShem rage from within the Holy of Holies in the Temple in Heaven and thunder, "But that was my anointed one! Upon such a one *does* my favor rest, I *would* have condescended to let my grace rest upon him, and have used my Eternal Chesed to blow the weak mortal chesed of Israel into a mighty and eternal chesed of fulfillment....if only they had not done away with him so quickly!"

Should you so blankly wonder, "Why does HaShem not hear my prayer, my word, why does He not act?" when you cannot hear the Word of HaShem, but generation after generation do quench the fire of His Word sent to you, and thus prevent yourselves from warming your souls in His Fire and stop yourselves from taking pleasure in His Light?

Do you hold in the lowest contempt the awesome, fierce, ravishing RAGE of the ALL-RIGHTEOUS?

Curious this.....curious....if one should stop and consider. David the King reigned from the age of thirty to seventy. And yet, He did not reign all at once, over All Israel, for he reigned seven years and six months in Hebron, and then, at thirty-seven and a half, the All-Righteous condescended to grant Victory to his Well-Beloved David, giving him the Kingdom of All Israel. And yet, if the sons of Israel had carried David off and slaughtered him prior to his attaining even thirty-seven and a half years of age, how could he have become King? And, in the same way, how can any mashiach come upon you and reign and bring you into the Olam Ha-Ba, if he not attain the age of attainment? How can the favor of HaShem condescend to fall upon His favored one, if his favored one not reach the necessary age of attainment? How can the son of David inherit His Father's Kingdom if he not reach the age of attainment of his father?

A hypothetical: What if there had been a one in the wretched gloom, the bitter dolor, of the killing fields and gas chambers, one who might have been favored enough to receive the favor of the All-Righteous, which, once granted is totally unstoppable, and can easily cast aside tanks and guns and men as easily as a Father can fling aside toy tanks and toy guns and toy soldiers. And let us say such a one, even in the bitterness of his misery, had recited Torah from memory and held fast to the promise of HaShem, day after day, month after month, growing older. And then, shortly before reaching the favored age, the Nazis should line up a string of men and demand one be shot, and even two or three fellow sons of Israel scream out, “That one, kill that one! Do not, please, we beg, kill us, spare us, but kill that one!” What then could be done for Israel?

How can you say to HaShem, “Why do you not hear us?” when HaShem says to you, “Why do you not hear Me?”

If then you should say, "But what of the millions! The many, many millions! Should not HaShem have then raised up someone else?"

Might HaShem not answer, "Someone else? But that was the very one that *I*, in my Freedom and Wisdom, had chosen. It was My choice. Is not My Anointing, then, MY, and only MY choice. If I, the ETERNAL ONE, should say to a man who has a true flicker of love for Me, and Me alone, and thus for all his people, I CHOOSE YOU - You, my son, are my Well-Beloved, -- and *then* you should *kill* that man, what shall I - the ETERNAL ONE - do? Just choose another? Snap my fingers and make everything come out fine through magic, like a Babylonian sorcerer? Abracadabra and all is well? Is that My Way? Is that what Moses and the Prophets and the Kings who loved Me spoke?

"When in the desert, in their arrogance, the people spoke against Me and bitterly whined in their infidelity that My Way was too hard for them, did I then say, "Oh, let me fix all that - poof! poof! poof! And then I magically made five-star hotels appear out of nowhere, and everyone frolicked and played, and even though they should murder each other, and defile each other, and spit on each other, and throw each other out of windows, and set off bombs, and worship every idol their vain little imaginations could dream up, I would, as a dutiful and pathetic bellhop flit from suite to suite, delivering whatever these people craved and coveted, serving *their* demands.

"Should then the people deliver *their* little craven torahs, a whole host of torahs, like a polytheistic pantheon of all the heavens, to Me, rather than I deliver MY TORAH to them?"

And if the people should persist and say again, "But what of the millions? The millions! Do You not care? Are You so very cold, so very hard-hearted?"

"Cold?!!! Hard of heart?!!! I, Who am the Holy Fire, cold? I, who am the Infinity of Compassion and the All-Living One, possessed of a heart of stone? No, my wayward child. I am not any of those things. And, in fact, I felt each misery, each death, as a Father does, as a Mother does, I wept in bitterness for each loss, was aghast in horror at the spectacle of terror and evil."

And if then again you should say, "Then why did you not do something?"

Should I not say, "You who study so much, have you not then learned the meaning of the teaching, 'He who saves one life saves the world entire'and, necessarily then, he who destroys one life destroys the world entire."

I *WAS* doing something - something wonderful, that would have raced on to the Eternal Olam Ha-Ba -- and you quenched what I was trying to do. I reached out My hand, and you slapped it away. I turned My face to you, and you looked at it and said, "Kill that one!"

And of the millions, yes, I know better than any of you, I experienced each one in the depths of its horror - I, in the depths of my Ein Sof, experienced eternally what you only read about in books and watch on television. But, if the holy teaching above is true, how many millions - and millions upon millions more, indeed!!! - died when that only holy and righteous man *in all the world!* - who possessed in the depths of his fidelity a single flicker of My ALL-RIGHTEOUSNESS, so very different from your mere and temporal and mortal "righteousness" - was so crudely and astonishingly stamped out -- like a nothing, like a cigarette butt, flushed down the toilet.

How would the Adonai of the Torah react then?

And then, if you say, but HaShem, yes, I see more clearly now, I can at last hear You, and not just demand that You hear me, but, my LORD, what of the many mothers, the bereft mothers who wept bitter and inconsolable tears over their broken sons and daughters?

And what if I should say to you, “I felt each one, in the depths of my Infinity and Eternity, and you only know of it from synagogue and *Schindler’s List*, and perhaps, and they are passing away, the retelling of the aged, but a shadow of the totality of the experience living within Me. But...consider this, and consider well...what of My Tears, not only over My people, but of the one I had, in that generation and for that specific time, chosen as *MY Well-Beloved*? What of the Tears of the Shekinah? You ask whether I disdain the tears of many mortal mothers. Do you then disdain the Eternal and Ever-Living Tears of the Shekinah, of the ETERNAL AND ONLY ONE over the broken corpse of my Chosen One?

And if you should say Nonsense, Nonsense, all Nonsense then, I shall hear no more of this and think only of human beings, and the Tears of the Shekinah be damned...What then shall I, who am ALL-RIGHTEOUS say, and what shall I do then? Should you then expect any help from Me? Look to it yourselves then, and deal with your own problems by your own strength, if you can. For you are not Jews then. You are no-Jews, no more Jewish than any German. And that sort of Israel would be a no-Israel, and that “people” a no-people, and that people who thought so little of me would indeed follow a no-Torah and worship in a no-synagogue. How then could I send a worthy King upon them when they were a no-kingdom of no-priests and no-righteous?!

Just give up the charade then, and be atheists. Follow whatever creed you choose then, communism, capitalism, socialism, libertarianism, vegetarianism, CrossFit, yoga, the South Beach Diet, Candy Crush, American Idol, the Voice, Desperate Housewives, Kim Kardashian’s Twitter Feed...worship whatever you so choose then, but look no more to Me. If you say, “Tears of the Shekinah over the Well-Beloved of that Generation? That means nothing to me.” Then wash your hands of Me, and I shall wash My hands of you, and I, though having made an Eternal Covenant, can, in My Eternal Freedom, rip that covenant of a no-chesed and a no-people to shreds and cast it out, and light it up in flame so that it shall be no more, just as I tore down the Temple and let the Holy City be defiled by the most foul of nations.

But, if you should persist, and still desire to be “religious” and “worship” “Me” and still want to dress up and go to synagogue and have your holidays...what then?

Are you then, in all that charade, worshipping the LORD that raised up the Prophet Moses, who went up the Mountain of My Holiness, and came down it again to the people to give them My Torah and My Covenant, that they might be My people Israel?

Would not such a charade actually be quite the reverse?

Would not then, if you cared nothing for the miseries of the Tears of the Shekinah, even though you should dress in the finest suits, and wear on your head the finest of coverings, and sing the sweetest of songs in My Name, but do this:

Would you not really say to Me, “My slave, little god-slave of the lowest contempt, I, truly, am *YOUR Lord*, we, the people, we gods, like all the stars in the heavens, shall send up our

prophets (actually, all of us together as a mighty mortal pantheon shall go up in our all-pride and all-idolatry) to your contemptible temple in “heaven”, the GREAT WE OF THE PEOPLE shall ascend up to the Holy and Eternal Mountain in Heaven, like those of old ascended the Tower of Babel, and the GREAT WE shall send down to you, as a stern word to the most reviled slave, *OUR WE-TORAH*, a Great Torah of Man sent down to you, pathetic one, as Instruction from your True God, US?”

Would you not then really say to Me, “Here is the Covenant of Israel that WE wish, a Covenant in which the People are the Gods and HaShem is the slave. Here, o contemptible one, wear our great WE-Covenant as a collar around your neck and wear OUR great chains.”

Would the All-Righteous submit to such a no-covenant?

Consider the Tears of the Shekinah, for, once you shall have wept all those tears, insofar as your very humble mortal nature allows, then shall I be able - *able* - to send the Mashiach to Come upon you.

How can the Mashiach come and usher you into the Olam Ha-Ba when Jew hates Jew, and Jew spits on Jew, and Jew kill Jew, and Jew laugh at Jew, and Jew is unkind to Jew? Is that people worthy of the Mashiach?

Should we not say that, quite *unlike* Batman, the Mashiach is the Savior the people need, but not the one it deserves right now.

For, let us imagine the next day, after that one Righteous man in all the world - that *one* Righteous man who did not simply have human righteousness, but a single flicker of MY ALL-RIGHTEOUSNESS - had been killed. Let us imagine *his* mother weeping. And should then the mother of the son who had survived, who had had the Nazis kill that Well-Beloved One, come over and say, “Ha! Your son is dead, but my son is alive,” what should we say then?

Should we not consider that the next week, that foolish, nasty woman’s son was also killed, and then she herself was carted off like an animal, to suffer many miserable years, and then be consigned to the crematorium?

Did that accuser and that accuser’s mother who mocked the mother of that one Well-Beloved gain by their self-preference? For, if that one son had lived, he might have saved them all.

Would not the tears of HaShem’s Mercy, to be watered upon the earth so that they might make it fertile and vibrant and abundant with life, burn away into the ash of the most bitter misery and torment? Would not that torment release a deluge upon the earth, of not Mercy, but Anguish, from the very Infinite Depths of the Shekinah, till all the furious Wrath of Adonai does quench them? Is that not the Adonai of Israel’s Torah? Is that not the One who, at first, gives generously with an open hand, but, when scorned, rages and sends fire upon the earth, but then, through the even greater Infinity of His Compassion and Mercy relents and finally forgives?

Or is the Great Adonai, a Warrior, a Priest, a King, the Breath of All Life, but a phantom - a vague illusion that has no inner life, (no -- not feelings, for HaShem does not have mere

“feelings” - one single real, actual tear of the Shekinah could engulf the whole of the Cosmos in flame), such that He is not the Name and the One, but no name and no one - a comic book fantasy, Superman, Batman, Spiderman -- shall the One come in tights and a cape and a mask and fly around and zap lightening out of his eyes like a Babylonian sorcerer, conjuring up magical acts from his magical essence? Is HaShem magic, a shadow? Or are not you, o little insignificant one, the shadow, the magic, the nothing and no one and no name. Is not all you have, your whole name, your whole power to act, but the slightest wisp of HaShem’s mighty breath? Is HaShem the fantasy? If HaShem, Who is All that is, is fantasy, then are you, o little ones, not so much more a fantasy, a magic spell of nothing, a no-god of no-power? Shall you say, “Aha! I do not believe in the Name for [Insert reason here], and thus the Name does not exist?” Does that touch HaShem? Does that not make Adonai laugh in contempt, and make the Shekinah within weep over the rebellion of her creation? But, consider well, o little one, consider quite well, would it not be rather the reverse if The Name should say, I, who made thee, do not believe in you?!” Would that opinion of The Name not but instantly revoke your name -- that is, your whole existence, such that not only would you cease to be, but you never would have been in the first place!!! Is Adonai not only Superman, expected to fly in at the ready and make all your fantasies real, but also Tinker Bell, to be popped out of existence at the ready word of your little mouth? Is Adonai but a fairy to be scoffed at and blown out like a candle at the end of dinner?

Is that the Great One of All the Torah and All the Writings of All the Holy Voices?

Are not rather, *you*, the tinker bell, the little fairy, that with one “I do not believe” of the Inner Life can annihilate not only your future, but your past as well, even the faintest hint of a trace in all of Reality that you ever were, and ever might have been?

Shall I stand in awe of you? Or should you rather stand in Awe of Me?

Are you the candle that is blown out with a breath, or AM I? Is it not rather that I AM a Great and Unquenchable Fire of an Unspeakable HOLINESS.

A magazine might proclaim the Death of God. A “philosopher” might proclaim the Death of God. An undergraduate might proclaim the Death of God. What of it? Do I shudder in My Holy Temple, do I take notice with anything other than contempt and the most jocular mirth? But what a terrible thing it would be to you, a portent and an abomination, a woe from which there would be no escape, if but for one instant of My Eternal Life, I even thought, “The Death of Man.”

[Obviously, I, the author of this book do not mean I; the I is in reference to G-d. Frankly, a lot of this was written in a rhapsodic state...obviously.]

[And the response from the reader: Yeah, yeah, I got that.....we’re clear....okay.]

The needs of the many outweigh the needs of the few, or the one.

And yet, may not the needs of the One, outweigh the needs of the many, if the many are to be saved through that one?

Is it not but a great, surging, infinite and involving temporal and eternal loop of love and grace and freedom and compassion and redemption? Is it not the way in which the One might know and love the many, and thus, through the gift of that One's love, return all the many as a gift to the Eternal and Everlasting Life of the Only, Holy One?

The One Name condescends even with all your sins and faithlessness to preserve that one brief snap that you call life. But shall the One All-Righteous take you up into the fullness of Himself, even into something you might think would resemble fullness, if you cannot but summon in yourself but one brief snap of your own of what *I* call Life? And would not that one brief snap of what I call Life, be for you, little mortals, the work of Ages and the entire strength of mankind? That is, obviously, (if one were literate enough to actually read), must you not, as One Whole Nation, match a flicker of your own chesed to reach up even with the feeblest strength to MY GREAT CHESED? Is not my Chesed the light and your chesed the shadow? Can the Light come upon the shadow, if that shadow is so great that it is nothing but a vortex of emptiness? Would He Who is Whole enter a vortex of nothingness? Would not mankind have to send up its own small glimmer of light, even shed the faintest glint upon my All-Embracing Light, in order to, reciprocally, be brought up into that Unending Light?

Is this not an Eternal Covenant? An Eternal Covenant between the finite mortal and the infinite undying? Or is this a personal services contract, to be terminated at the snap of your fingers? Shall you bandy with me as you do your servants? Is that the Fear of the Lord?

If one day you should meet Me in the street, and say for all your woes, "You're a bad man!" should I not respond to you, "No, I am a very good man. But I am a very bad wizard."

If WISDOM should come upon you, would you be willing to listen? If wisdom should come in a strange form, and in a foreign tongue, but it was still WISDOM and, indeed it really were, secretly, as if a lost treasure buried under a flowing stream, indeed lost under the depths of the muck and misery of the Ages, the WISDOM of HaShem, would you listen? Or would you, in your blank, total self-preference turn away? Would you say, "This may be of HaShem, but it is not like me, so I will not choose it. I choose myself." ?

Would such a one be worthy of YHWH, of the Eternal and Ineffable Name so glorious that, if any unrighteous should try to truly speak it, it would burn his tongue out of his defiled mouth? -- And would such a one be worthy of that Eternal One's Mashiach?

Then hear wisdom, the obvious wisdom of someone who truly *listened* to the sage of Israel's inner life, of its Torah and its Kings and its Temple and its people, to that One and Eternal Sage, who is the true and only sage of Israel, HaShem.

Does the LORD, YHWH, need you? Does He not subsist in perfect joy perfectly well without you? Is the LORD lonely without you? Does He sit alone at night watching television like an old maid, flipping through your Shabbats, saying, "Oh, I - the ONE - sit here all alone, but at least I have my precious Israel to keep me company and give me entertainment...If I didn't have them, I would be so bereft, and so bored." And then Adonai sits, as a spinster, and darns his parent's socks and dreams many unfulfilled dreams --- or some such laughable nonsense?

Is not HaSHEM ALL-JOY, ALL-LOVE, ALL-GRACIOUSNESS, ALL-BEAUTY, and, yes, by necessity, ALL-RIGHTEOUSNESS? Is not that inner life which is so ineffable, so inaccessible to you, yet still obviously the TOTAL EXUBERANCE OF ALL POSSIBLE REALITY? Not what you consider reality - with your death and bullets and fears and jobs and woes --- no, no, no, not such a passing shadow of iniquity - No, rather, He is the Eternal Life of an Eternal Living One, unstained by sin, who laughs in the face of death, for it can do Him no harm, who has no woes, One who can never be harmed by some trinket of material existence, and Who, as the GREAT SPIRIT, can never be harmed by any foul spirit.

And yet, that ONE, that GREAT ONE, in His unimaginable Mercy and Utter, Irrational Goodness says, "Yet I shall share it with others not Me. I shall, in my stupendous and, to human minds, irrational generosity, extend Myself -- and *precisely* in doing so, subject Myself - who AM totally unlimited and at peace, to the limitations and miseries of those who are not only not TOTAL SPIRIT, but are wisps of mere flesh, with but a small spirit of Me breathed in them to give them true life -- for without Me, you cannot have life, you can do nothing."

And then, necessarily then, is it not the case that that Infinite and Eternal One, in some way we can never, (yet or maybe ever), understand *experiences* our pain and our sin? That, in bearing with us and living within us, HaShem, though unstained by fault of sin, somehow experiences the pain and penalty of sin? In some way that we cannot understand, but that is real nevertheless? I, in my limitations, for I am a mere mortal man, who has committed many sins of pettiness and self-seeking, who endured for ages (for to the Lord a day is a thousand years) in the stupor of my own ignorance and self-seeking, quite glad of my woeful condition and not imagining something, anything, better for myself, use the phrase "Tears of the Shekinah" to evoke something of that embrace of the miseries of the miserable (we sinful mortals) into the Endless Joy of the Endlessly Joyous.

But consider, and consider well, if that phrase leaves you cold - if you shrug when you hear "Tears of the Shekinah", if it does not even pinch you, or leave you mildly warmed, or wetted, or curious - does not the misery of the sinful mortal, somehow accessed by the INFINITE AND ETERNAL ONE, thus become, even in the midst of an untaintable Joyous Perfection, the Misery of Total Ruin, the Raging Inferno of a Trillion Exploding Suns, the Bottomless Depths of an Ocean Infinitely Larger Than This or All Possible Universes? And would not --- in some way no mortal can even dare or hope, or even desire (for it would be too terrible to imagine) --- that clash, that clatter and clang, the discordant disharmony between the Joyousness of the ALL-JOY and that Internal Inferno of TOTAL RUIN, even within HaShem Himself, produce a TOTAL PERPLEXITY even within the depths of the Name? And if HaShem Himself be perplexed, if you little morals have so confounded him with your sinfulness, with your hatred for each other, how then can HaShem act? If you, who are finite, can do nothing if

perplexed, how then can the Inner Life of the Name act to usher you into True Life, if He Himself remains so confoundedly perplexed?

Do you sin so lightly, O Israel, in the face of a LORD who sees all - and indeed, precisely, of a LORD who loves you individually - such that when you commit a mortal and finite sin, it becomes for Him, since He loves you, an eternal and infinite woe?

Shall not HaShem only be able - *able*, not willing, *able* - to truly, and not magically, act when you summon the small faint flicker of True and Complete Righteousness that shall disperse that Perplexity within the Inner Life? And, if that Perplexity ever disperse, dissipate as dew under the all-embracing heat of the morning sun, shall not the WHOLE POWER OF THE NAME in TOTAL ACTION but easily and unstopably burst upon all the world and everyone in it, and deluge you with every favor and every choice thing such that you would be carried off to a Life beyond all time and beyond all limits?

Yet we speak of HaShem, and what mortal man can speak sensibly of HaShem, though he humbly try with all his might?

Can Israel say, "HaShoah. Therefore our belief is annihilated." ? Is not, for an Infinite Spirit, each murder of each and every human life an Infinite Catastrophe of Total Misery, that now, because of HaShem's condescension, lives within the Inner Life? Is not each such murder, each blasphemy against life a Whole Holocaust of the Whole Human Spirit, and thus, as He condescends to be present to you, a Whole Holocaust of His Eternal Spirit? Does not even each sin, though finite to you, so lowly and lost, become an Infinite Catastrophe the likes of which hobbles even the Power of the Cosmic Majesty? Is it not a wonder that you can be sustained at all, with even the life you have, with your many hatreds and murders and foul condemnation of one another?

Yet, does not HaShem endure even that Eternal Holocaust that now somehow -- in a way that is totally unimaginable to us -- lives within the very depths of His Spirit? Yet, if HaShem should break faith with the righteous and forget His Covenant, if such a thing were possible, would He not easily let slip that terrible, infinite, and eternal horror? Yet, He does not, He endures *in it* and He does it *for us*, out of total and undeserved love for His people and all humanity, all who say, with Him, I am.

Then should not the people so very beloved of HaShem, return that gift, and love HaShem in return? Should they say, "HaShoah = No-HaShem," and thus become a no-people such that the vile perpetrators of such horrors should quench an Infinite Love of the One Name with a finite eruption of mortal hatred? Should not, rather, they say, "Should a million Catastrophes befall us, nay a billion, nay a trillion, we shall endure in an Infinite and Eternal Love that experiences such Horror in a way that exceeds all numerical calculation - that does not simply experience that horror on a finite scale, but an infinite scale, and not simply in a temporal way, but all at once, in an eternal way, and not simply in many varied mortal ways, but ONE WAY all at ONCE.

If the people would endure in that kind of Eternal Covenant, crying the Tears of the Shekinah with HaShem, and not simply crying their own tears for their own mortal woes, would not that interchange of human and Divine become a draining of that Total Perplexity that hobbles HaShem's Eternal Power? Can HaShem act to usher in the World to Come, when now His Eternal Power is blocked by the impassable moat of His Eternal Woe? Must not, truly and

totally and finally, Israel repair the world so that that Perplexity might be obliterated, and all the Joy of the All-Joy at last be unleashed? If the people should desire the intimacy of Adonai in the Olam Ha-Ba, how can they prevent His action by denying the Shekinah the intimacy of their kindness in the Here and Now?

Would not wishing that it be otherwise, but truly, and sadly, be only magical thinking?

Would it not be only a wish and a phantom, a shadow of reality, rather than an enduring and entering into what, necessarily, must be truly real, not only for mankind, but for the One.

And again, how can you follow the characteristic, the imprint, the mark of what is merely human, and wholly sinful, and expect to gain the Olam Ha-Ba? How can All Israel - and by this I mean the whole community in its corporate capacity as a Nation, and not a smattering of righteous people here and there - hope to gain the Olam Ha-Ba if it follows this woeful Way: Kill first, and ask HaShem questions later. ?

Would not that course of conduct fill up the Cup of Destiny with all the Tears of the Shekinah, and would you not then have to drink it? Or rather, like a Wise and Holy Nation, would you fill up your Cup with Acts of Righteousness, fresher than water from the brook, and Kindness from the Heart, sweeter than honey, and then, once that Cup had been filled, but a single act of true, fiery Chesed would set the whole cup overflowing?

And would that overflowing not be Pleroma - the Fulfillment of Prophecy? And would the gift sent to the nations not return to the Nation and fulfill every necessary time and age? Does not HaShem, ever mindful of His promises, say, "What is filled up will be fulfilled?"

What if, in the landfill of all goyishness, there lay the precious pearl of All-Wisdom? So sure this could not be so? Then you know nothing of the ironies of the All-Righteous, nor of His Eternal Wisdom.

Again, imagine a scenario. Say one sad day the Book of Deuteronomy should totally and utterly vanish from the earth - from every shelf and every desk, and that every word of it should disappear from any book anyone has ever written. Again, say that not just from the shelves or from your desks, in physical form, it should vanish, that you could still join together and rewrite it from memory, one scholar saying, "It said this," and another saying, "It said that!" and thus recover the work of God, but truly and totally disappear from the face of the earth. Such that, while all the sages of all the world were gathered together in conference, not a one of them could remember or speak a single iota of its writ. All should marvel at each other and say, "It said, I can so clearly remember..." and then trail off, unable to give birth to the word on his tongue. All of them would search the other books of Moses in front of them and say, "Ah, yes, here in Leviticus it said such," and "Here in Exodus it said such like it," and attempt to say, "I can almost recall that Deuteronomy said such like it," and yet, with all the might of their sagacity, not

be able to say a single word of that Scripture. They would go off one by one, taking leave of each other, in tears and desolation, unable to understand the source or reason of their calamity, and utterly unable to rectify it.

Should many years pass, and after much prayer and many acts of righteousness, and many tears and pleas for a restoration, nothing happen, nothing turn up, no text be found, no one ever remember a single word of it, what then would one not do to recover that lost treasure?

Would one not lock himself in his study, and toil over the Scriptures that did remain? Would one not ensure that he never spoke an outrage or showed himself arrogant in a single matter, lest his one act of impudence discourage the LORD from relenting in mercy? Would he not catch himself as he scolded an inferior, saying to himself, "If thus I treat one inferior to me, how can I expect better treatment from He who is infinitely superior to me, and to whom I myself, but a man, am totally and abjectly inferior." ?

And, if, in the solemn and sad solitude of his inner study, richly adorned with every fine feature, and stacked with the wisdom of all the ages, except that one treasure, his brother-in-law should come to him and disturb his ruminations, how should he react then?

Let us call this brother-in-law of such a rabbi Brother Shlemiel. Brother Shlemiel means well, but he is unimaginably crude. As brother of your Beloved wife, you tolerate him, but just barely, welcoming him as warmly as you can muster, and then ushering him out the door as quickly as you possibly can. At every Passover, as you are attempting to officiate, Brother Shlemiel comes dressed in his constant garb, adorned in his dirty white T-shirt, baseball cap, soiled blue jeans, and - and this you cannot fathom, nor do you try - his orange crocs, rich with all the ecstasies of mold. How such a one could attend a Seder of the Righteous One, you cannot comprehend. Many years back, you tried to take him aside and explain that he should conduct himself with more propriety, but he blankly stared at you, shrugged his shoulders, murmured Uh-okay, and went on year after year in the same way. But you love your wife, so you put up with it, pursing your lips over your clenched teeth.

Every year, unstopably, while you read from the Haggadah, Brother Shlmiel cannot help but burst forth with all the richness of his Torah Wisdom, prophesying in rhapsodic ecstasy. He says, "Hey Rebbe baby," for this is his term of affection for you, regardless of however many times you implore him to stop!, "Yah know, I know about this stuff too, you know, sure do." He regales you with quotes from the Exodus.....not the Book of Exodus, no. The closest Brother Shlmiel has ever come to studying Torah is that one time he was milling about Barnes and Noble buying children's books for his kids and he picked up a copy of Scripture. Not a Scripture in Hebrew, for Brother Shlmiel cannot read Hebrew, not a word of it, not a letter, not a scratch of it, doesn't speak it either: it's all chicken scratch to him. So, of necessity, Brother Shlmiel perused this English translation....well, peruse, might be a strong word, more like skim, really glance at. That one day, Brother Shlmiel read from the English-language Torah....well, actually it was the Exodus from the King James Bible.....Children's Edition.....Illustrated Children's Edition....the one for slow five-year-olds, with ninety-five percent watercolor pictures and five percent words, with such verses pregnant with HaShem as, "See Moses lead," and again, verily, "See Israel say, 'Whoa, slow down, we're tired and hungry!'" And actually, Brother Shlmiel, though confident of his knowledge, doesn't really remember very much from that Sacred

Scripture -- most of the storm of words with which he regales you is actually from Charlton Heston in *The Ten Commandments*.

As you grind your teeth, and say, but for my Beloved wife, I would merrily fling such a one from my window!, Brother Shlmiel winds on, wending his way, proclaiming all Wisdom, his words, his form of expression, so dodgy, so inadequate, so irritating, it leaves you with a headache after every Passover, so that you must sit with an ice pack on your head on the couch in your study and bemoan that such a beautiful woman must be the sister of such an ignorant clown!

Should that one, our beloved Brother Shlmiel, come unbidden and unwelcome into your study as you toiled another empty, solemn day, with his dirty T-shirt and orange crocs, and oh, yea, verily, eating a Bacon, Lettuce, Tomato sandwich with extra cheddar cheese, how then would you react?

Would you thrust him out? Would you say, "Away from me, fool, for here I search for the Wisdom of the All-Righteous One!" ?

Imagine Brother Shlmiel say to you, "Hey Rebbe baby....."

"Don't call me that!"

"But Rebbe baby....."

"How many times must I tell you not to call me that?!"

"Okay, okay, Rav man...."

And, as you fly into a rage and lunge for his throat, he say to you, "Hold on, brother, hold on, whoa, slow it up...I've got something really important to say to you!!" What then would you do?

If you listened to him, what if he said, "Rav....guy?...uh, I heard from this guy on the subway that that thing you're always talking about....that lost book, uh, Neuteroscetomy or something, he knew where it was."

And if, after conference after conference, phone call after phone call, long night after long lonely night of toil and study, no one ever could find that book, and no one had a whisper of a rumor of a clue where it might lay, if indeed it could be found anywhere, would then you say, "Be gone from me fool!" ?

Would you not rather say to him, slowly, haltingly, with a twinge in your belly and great awe, "*Deuteronomy?*....."

"Yah! That's what it was, that's right! Yah!"

Would you then say, "Fool, be gone!" ?

Would you not rather say, "Who told you? Where did he say it was?"

And if your brother-in-law should say, "Not quite sure, didn't get a good look at his face, but I definitely remember he said that the Book of Neutero....Deuter...Deutero....he said it was buried at the bottom of Fresh Kills landfill."

Would you then say, "A landfill! Fool, be gone from me!" and return to your studies?

Which one of you, with even a shred of chesed, would not run, race, to the landfill, and throw yourself into it, face first, diving into it, scornful of your cleanliness, unthinking of your propriety, digging through it with your fingernails, dirtying them gleefully, biting through the muck and the waste with your teeth, if even a single hope - *a single doubt* - remained that the lost treasure might yet be there?

And, not finding it at first, who would lay there in the muck, in his tears, and scream, “Brother Shlmiel, Brother Shlmiel, what have you done to me?! For I believed this fool, and now I am filthy and tired and worn!!!” Would you then leave the landfill uncleared, leave the bedrock still uncleared, uncluttered, of every waste of misunderstanding, everything that occluded your ability to see the bedrock?

Would you not rather raise yourself up in a spirit of humility and mercy, shower, and brush your teeth, and dress, and call all your friends and neighbors and say, “It’s a long shot, but I heard a rumor that the lost treasure is buried at the bottom of Fresh Kills landfill.” Would you not then, with all the community, finance a great operation, to clear all the debris and rubble and trash from the landfill, digging to its very bottom -- liquidating its whole meaning, whatever might and could be there -- till all that landfill was but clean and clear stone, on which the light of day fully shone in all its brilliance?

And, if after all this, it was not found, would you race home and strangle your brother-in-law, would you say, “Fool, filthy, vile fool! I and all my brothers wasted our time and our treasure on your vain nonsense! Now my reputation is ruined! All the other rebbes laugh at me and call me names! I cannot but walk down the street and one does not say, “The Rebbe who threw himself into a landfill! Hahaha!’ I cannot bear the scorn, I cannot bear the contempt of men! I was a Rebbe with knowledge of Torah, everyone said that I knew and lived Torah so well, so righteously, but now they all say that I too am a fool. Thus, to avenge my knowledge of Torah, I must stamp you out, my brother-in-law!!!” ?

Who, rich in the wisdom of Torah, would act in such a way?

And again, rather, if it was found, if, after all that long toil and tedium and struggle and cost in the landfill, you should, at the very bottom, find the Book of Deuteronomy, encased in an impermeable crate of an adamant metal unknown to men, and within wrapped richly in velvet, holding within it the Holy Torah Scroll - the lost treasure - shining in majesty, would you not leap for joy? Would you not, with all your friends and neighbors, rejoice together and say “Baruch HaShem!!!”, Who has restored to us what was lost?

And would you not then, at the Great Passover of all the rabbis and all the righteous in all the world, raise up your brother, would not all in the community buy him the finest of suits, and weave the most resplendent covering for his head, and bath and wash him themselves, head to foot, and dress him as does a servant for his master, jubilant with gratitude, and would not the Rebbe raise up the hand of his brother, hand in hand, and proclaim before the whole assembly, “This is my brother!”

Algebraic reasoning for two-dimensional thinkers, who need to raise their game.

Proposition 1: HaShem is incommensurable with any mortal, indeed with the whole of this world, HaShem being incommensurably greater.

Proposition 2: HaShem is righteous.

Proposition 3: Men may be righteous.

Conclusion: The Righteousness (“All-Righteousness”) of HaShem is incommensurably greater than the “righteousness” (shadow of righteousness) of any man, even of all men.

Q.E.D.

Therefore, if righteousness is the bond of perfection and of Life, how then shall the righteousness of men be *made* commensurate with the All-Righteousness of HaShem?

Shall it not, necessarily then, be accomplished only by a bridge *between* the All-Righteousness of HaShem and the righteousness of men?

Who shall provide that bridge? Shall HaShem condescend to stretch down His Mighty Arm upon men, or shall men build a Tower (of Babel) up to HaShem?

But if HaShem condescend to stretch down His hand, must not All Israel but reach up its hand to accept that condescension?

But, if the Conclusion above is true, which it is by way of the Proof, then is it not necessarily true that the whole righteousness of men would not even be enough to even reach up and accept HaShem’s hand? Would it not require even a flicker of the All-Righteousness of HaShem himself, to be that last drop necessary for the Cup of Destiny to pour over, to achieve Pleroma?

And yet would not even that Flicker of All-Righteousness need to be dropped, as a tear, as a Tear of the Shekinah, from the Bosom of the All-Righteous Himself?

And would not, for the Final Fullness to Come, for the World to Come to rush upon you, would not the Nation need to be so swollen with the Tears of the Shekinah that their All-Woefulness, as expressed through a determination not to endure merely in their mortal righteousness but in Joyful Kindness (their own chesed for each other), would *at last* be ready to receive that one single, actual drop of one Tear of the Shekinah that would, necessarily then, set the whole Cosmos alight with Holy Fire, the very Inner Life of HaShem - who then would truly be named as ADONAI of the OLAM HA-BA?

If HaShem can raise up a ruined corpse to life, how can He not give and return a ברכה to all Israel through the nations?

When Israel turned a deaf ear to the word of Yeshua, the Apostle Paul, in ecstasy, spread His Word to all the nations. Whatever your opinion of him, that man was quite successful. When one begins with only oneself and a few others, and lays the groundwork for an entire civilization, that is no small feat. How did he do it? By being proud and arrogant and condescending to all the many different kinds of people he met? Read one of his letters. He said, "I have become all things to all, to save at least some" (1 Corinthians 9:22b). What do you think of that? Consider. If you wish to have a conversation with a person from a foreign nation, would you convince them better in your tongue, or their tongue? It is the same with cultures. As the truth of the LORD is one, and yet spoken in the heart of every man, so too the one truth can be expressed authentically in many cultures, not arbitrarily, but really keeping to the truth - though, so to speak, in different languages. Consider again. Does HaShem speak Hebrew? Does HaShem converse with His Holy Angels in any tongue of men? Does He not, necessarily, speak in Eternal Words that no man can understand? If HaShem condescends to speak in the language of men, cannot Israel condescend to speak, when necessary, in the language of the nations, not just in the formal language, but in the culture and spirit of the nations? Not transforming the truth, but transforming the nations? And if this insight of Apostle Paul germinate such a flowering, would that not be this: the Word of HaShem going out to the nations, and that Word, *from the nations*, returning to Israel, awaiting Israel's leadership? If the Word of HaShem go down to the nations from Israel, shall it not return to Israel, doing the Will of HaShem?

He who does not praise the Majesty of the Name, of the only LORD, (truly in his heart), in a single blade of grass can never praise the Majesty of the Name, not even should HaShem Himself take that man as His pupil, tirelessly tutoring Him in the very Holy of Holies in the Heavenly Temple for all eternity.

Consider: What if, through the wickedness of men, in spite of the All-Righteousness of HaShem, each...*each*, every one of the mashiachs named for each generation, had been killed before he could make good his claim? Does not the Chesed of HaShem require even the smallest chesed of man? Can the All-Righteousness of HaShem come upon an abyss, without an ember of its own chesed to blow into a blaze? Can you sit and await the Righteousness of the All-Righteous when you have not an ember, not a flicker, of true, worthy righteousness of your own? Not a single worthy ember, worthy of the Resurrection?

A Christianity and a Judaism that return to themselves, that run back to themselves, and, necessarily then, *run together*, cannot but conquer the world for righteousness, not in worldly violence but in heavenly peace, and rise up into the very bosom of the All-Righteous.

What we require is a Church in the Shape of the Cross: A church stamped, indelibly, with the Marks of the Crucified One. We require a Church unshakably rooted in Judaism, and spreading upward and outward in an exuberant abundance of Sacramental Faith, Traditional Faith, and Biblical Faith, rich in the fruits of righteousness.

And what we most require is an Israel rich in all the mercy of Chesed. Learn from your Master. Shema Yisrael! Does not the Name that forgives all sins against righteousness and against humanity cry out that you, His Holy Son, bear His Eternal Truth into the world, against all odds, against all hatreds, against all outrages, against all miseries and heartbreaks, crimes and tragedies? Does not HaShem forgive Israel? Then must not Israel forgive the world?

And in doing so, would you not merely imitate your Master, but truly become the very image of your Master?

And if, one new dawning day, a new Church, a new Flesh of the one called Christ, made a Whole Church in the Holiness of All-Righteousness, and forsaking the paths of self-righteousness, arrogance, hatred, and violence, come to you and say, "Father, I have sinned against heaven and against you; I no longer deserve to be called your son. Treat me as you would treat one of your hired workers," and diligently implore you to teach him the Torah, and to sit by your side and let the words of Torah, oral and written, pass between you as brothers, in praise of the One Name deserving of all the praise of all the righteous, would you not say, "Quickly bring the finest robe and put it on him; put a ring on his finger and sandals on his feet. Take the fattened calf and slaughter it. Then let us celebrate with a feast, because this son of mine was dead, and has come to life again; he was lost, and has been found!"

And if some of the sons of Israel come and say, "Rabbi, look, all these years I toiled and slaved, and not once did I disobey your orders; yet you never gave me even a young goat to feast on with my friends. But when your son returns who swallowed up your property with prostitutes, and sullied the Holy Name of the All-Righteous with every manner of wickedness, for him you slaughter the fattened calf and celebrate the Holy Feast!"

Would not the truly wise among you say, "My son, you are here with me always; everything I have is yours. But now we must celebrate and rejoice, because your brother was dead and has come to life again; he was lost and has been found!"

And if, as brothers, Jew and Christian share the words of Torah together, should the first say, *Because you call Yeshua the mashiach, I must strangle you in praise of HaShem!* ?

And should the second say, *Because you do not confess the name of the Christ, I must strangle you for the Glory of Christ!* ?

What does the Name above all other names think of the conduct of His children?

Should not rather the teacher bear with the student, and the sons of the Anointed bear the marks of the Christ? Should not, before one who called himself a son of the Anointed ever think of violence or hatred or bigotry or arrogance, learn to imitate the one he called Master?

Should not, even unto death, the Church say, I will never persecute Israel! I forsake all such evil as the work of the sons of Destruction, of Abaddon, of Apollyon, of Satan, of Evil himself?! The Christ has nothing to do with such evil! The Church has crucified Israel for nigh on two thousand years. The Church, in the name of the Crucified One it calls All-Righteous, has slaughtered the sons of Israel by the thousands, by the millions, drank the blood of the holy ones, vomited in the holy streams of righteousness, urinated in the cups of the Eucharist and defecated on the Bread of Eternal Life with all its unholy iniquity, which inflames the outrage of the ALMIGHTY NAME!!! Should not the Church proclaim that, from now till the World to Come, I will first be crucified *for* Israel?! Should not the Church, who proclaims itself the Flesh of Christ, be crucified *to* Israel for the sake of HaShem, the All-Righteous LORD?!

Can the Spirit of the Christ ever be known without knowing the Spirit of Torah, the Word of the LORD? Then seek instruction from those who toil night and day in search of its Wisdom. And can the Spirit of Torah ever be known without knowing the Spirit of Mashiach, of whom it endlessly proclaims his day? Then seek the friendship and knowledge of those who proclaim Mashiach. Even if you believe them mistaken in the claimant, surely, must there not be wisdom in all the ages of the men and women who have hoped for the Mashiach? Must not all the wonderful things that they believe of the Mashiach necessarily attach to the Mashiach to come? Do they have no wisdom to teach Israel?

And if, one new day, in friendship, the Church say to Israel, “My brother, I see that Yeshua, righteous as he may be, could not be Mashiach,” have you not won over your brother? Would not then your friend, your brother, say to you: “I join you my brother, I proclaim what you proclaim, I and all the nations swear our allegiance to the possession of the LORD, Israel! Come, let us rebuild the Temple, reestablish the House of David, gather all the children of Israel to the Promised Land, and together delight in the Torah!” ? Would that not be the Olam Ha-Ba?

And if, instead, one new day, in friendship, Israel say to the Church of the Crucified, of the Name of the one called Mashiach, “Never mind what I knew, nothing seems to matter now. Who I was without you, I can do without,” would that not be Eternal Life?

Ask and it will be given to you; Seek and you shall find! Knock and the door will be opened to you! For everyone who asks, receives; and the one who seeks, finds; and to the one who knocks, the door will be opened. Which one of you would hand his son a stone when he asks for a fish? If you then, who are wicked, know how to give good gifts to your children, how much more will your heavenly Father give good things to those who ask him?

What would HaShem deny to brothers reconciled in the Name of All-Chesed?

https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=ik_Df0IxAPw

Blessed is He who comes in the Name of the Lord!

Now, by all this, I do not mean that those in Christ should forsake Christ. I am a Christian, and I confess Christ, and Him Crucified! I do not say all the above as some hollow feint, some trickery. I mean it with total sincerity. I disdain cleverness. Let cleverness be the province of Satan. I cherish only clarity and sincerity. If I believe that the Father is in the faith of Christ, why should I say, "It is okay if you forsake Christ." I say no such thing. What I do say, however, quite clearly, is this: If you *truly* wish to know Christ, you must imitate Christ. Even though, in ages past, we Christians have practiced in many different ways, the Church rushes onward towards the Apocalypse, and must educate itself *in the fullness*, the plenitude, of what it means to know Christ. How can the Whole Church really know Christ, if it does not know what Christ knows? How can prophecy come to term and explode into the ecstasy of Pleroma if the Church does not ever more closely conform itself to its Master? Now, an individual believer will attain salvation without such knowledge. Such an individual believer will also attain salvation while being illiterate. But would we, for that reason, recommend illiteracy? Would we say: Look! That one in Christ who was illiterate, they were saved!, and thus say, It is most blessed to be illiterate?

Of course not! We would say, "That illiterate person knew Christ equally to me, but out of *total love* for Christ, I do not just wish to know Him just enough to be saved, I wish to know Him completely!" Who would say, "I do not need to be the best husband I can be, I will be just good enough that there isn't a divorce." ? Would that not be most foolish and crude?

How can the Whole Church come to know Christ in fullness, in plenitude, in the Pleroma of the New Jerusalem, if it does not at last, know Torah and all the Scriptures that He Himself knew? How can we claim to know Christ if we, age after age, disdain the same study that the Christ Himself undertook? Indeed, it was Jesus' knowledge of Scripture that preserved Him in Abaddon, and saved your very soul! When all was an All-Hell around Him, Jesus persevered in fidelity to the Father, and thus secured our salvation, because He had formed Himself in the Torah and the Writings, what we call the Old Testament. But should we say of the very words that kept Jesus alive in the Father though death in every other respect overcame Him, washed around Him as raging oceans of hatred and filth and horror: I do not need them. Forget them. Let them sink to the bottom of the ocean: *I have Christ!* All I need is the Spirit, and I'm good. Does such a one with that attitude truly have Christ? If the Spirit of Christ, descended into Hell, required the words of Israel's Scripture to survive Abaddon, how can you say that you live in the Spirit if you totally disdain them? Not that you individually require them for salvation, but that the New Heaven and the New Earth cannot come in its fullness until the Whole Church becomes fully itself, and thus fully imitates the life *and the Spirit* of the Christ. Who would say, I think we should delay the coming of Christ again, what does it matter, because I alone am saved: let ages and ages of misery in this mortal world pass by: what of it? *I am saved*, and that is good enough. Is that the spirit of the Spirit of God?

And how can the Church, which is the Christ, the son of Israel, ever truly be itself without the unfeigned and totally sincere, unforced and mutual, friendship of Israel? Would not a Church without the friendship of Israel be but a phantom, roaming the earth with no body? And would not a Church in deep, genuine friendship with Israel be life from the dead: the Word made Flesh?

And to Israel, listen to HaShem, who always say, "I am God, I alone, there are no others before Me," who constantly says when an angel appears to a son of Israel, "Do not be afraid!" Should you be afraid, if it should ever truly come, of the sincere and affectionate friendship of the Church? Should you say, "If I associate with that one, someone may be lost to Christ." ? But if you do not throw yourself into the world, as a messenger - an angel - unto the nations, how shall the Olam Ha-Ba come about? By magic? Shall HaShem snap his fingers like a Babylonian sorcerer, and say, "Boom! There it is! You did not have to work for it, did not have to struggle for it, did not have to dirty your fingernails for it, or stoop for it, did not have to smell any odor that displeased you for it, did not have to experience any hardship for it, did not have to experience any loss for it, did not have to associate with anyone unlovely or unseemly or uncomely for it, did not have to suffer any trial for it. No, no, no, my sweet one, my spoiled princess, you shall not have to work! Heaven forbid that any work sully the prettiness of your pretty, dainty, little hands. Stay in your room, richly adorned, and jump on your bed like a little girl, and think of nothing but of how pretty you are! Never leave your room or leave your house, my pretty, dainty little girl, for fear that if you should but walk out your door and roam those perilous, oh so dangerous streets, some horrible fate might befall you! You are too frail, my little girl, do not work, perform no labor, stay at home all the days of your life. And bounce on your bed and toil not in the world, and think of nothing but your soulmate. Stay locked in your room, jump on your bed, and say, 'My soulmate is coming, my soulmate is coming! Then I shall be happy!'" ?

What shall we say of such a one? Shall her soulmate come barging into her bedroom, breaking into the house, barging past her father, knocking over her mother, making a mess and confusion of everything, and upon kicking in the princess' locked door, announce, "Here I am, little girl! I am like a Disney prince, only better, my teeth are all white, and my hair as velvet, I am the very cartoon of a cartoon love! I am all you dream of and more, and you did not have to work for it! Why should you have worked for it, my dainty, pretty, little girl! Now, come, let me lay you down on a sweet bed of roses, and make sweet love to you. Yes, you are but ten years-old, and I am a man, but what matter of that? You do not have to grow up, you do not have to enter the world and face its dangers. We shall not even exert ourselves to get up and be married. No, no, no my pretty girl. I shall close the door and lock it, and we shall fornicate forever alone. Your father shall not mind this, nor your mother, but we shall just lock ourselves in our lovemaking and order room service from your father. I, too, shall not even work, but I shall live off of your father in your father's house all our days. How happy are we! How clean and All-Righteous are we?!

Is that the nature of HaShem?

Would not, rather, the little girl only at last find her soulmate if she stop jumping on her bed and apply herself diligently to study? And would mere study alone be enough? Would she not have to go to school to learn, with those who were not herself? Would she not, if she wished true education - that is, true maturity - have to go off to university, to a far and distant place, far from the comfort and warmth and familiarity of her parents? Would she not have to dine at a place unfamiliar to her, with people who were different, even strange - even with people she disliked or who threatened how she thought? Would she not have to stare at the ceiling alone,

sleepless, lonely and homesick, and remain lonely as the endless minutes ticked past and the shadows lengthened. And would that one night of loneliness, away from the comfort of her parents be enough? Would her soulmate knock on her dorm room the second night of her freshman year and say, "Here I am, my soulmate, you have suffered enough, my dear one. Come let us be married in the morning by the rebbe. By the way, I'm a rich doctor, and you can drop out of college and go back to bouncing on your bed. Blessed are you!"

Would not, rather, the poor, lonely girl have to stare at the blank, dark ceiling night after night, and watch the shadows dance on the ceiling. And would she not have to say, "I am so lonely and desolate here. I crave a man, and yet have none. I thirst, and my thirst cannot be quenched." And would not, some nights, she would get no sleep whatsoever, but watch with bloodshot eyes the dawn breaking in her window? And would she then say, "Oh poor pretty little me, I am so tired, and my eyes are so pained, I will not get up and go to class." ?

Would the girl not have to drag herself out of bed, tired and pained, and shower and dress, though all she wanted was to sleep, now far too tired to bounce on her bed? And would she not have to sit through tedious lecture after tedious lecture, while the other classmates annoyed her and some threw spitballs, and chatted, and passed notes.

Would she not have to watch as other girls found love, and she remained desolate? Would she not have to even cry in her pillow, night after night, and say, "Here have I come into the world, and yet I remain desperately alone, what good of all this?" Would she then find her soulmate if she drop out of college and return to her bedroom and lock herself in her room, now not to bounce on it, but to hide under her bed the rest of her days?

Would not, even, she think that she had found true love, even, exposed to the world, fornicated, and then, brokenhearted and bereft, return to her room and look in the mirror, and weep?

Could she then return to her bed to bounce?

Would she not have to endure, to sophomore year, to junior year, to senior year and graduation? Would she not then have to get a job and work, even in a large, strange city, and learn to make her own decisions and be an adult and not cower in the security of her father and mother's house?

And if her twenties pass her by, and no soulmate should be found, should she return to her parents' house and say, "I have failed. I went into the world, and found no requital. Now, I shall forsake all this journey into the world, and be an old maid to the end of my days. I shall do my parents' laundry and darn their socks and sit and stare at my old bedroom ceiling for the rest of my days." ?

Would she not rather have to endure, and become fully mature, fully an adult, fully immersed in the realities and perils of the world?

And if she did endure and grew mature, and learned to handle herself as a woman, and not as a little girl, if she attained the appropriate and fulfilled age preordained for her - that is, if she generated the necessary chesed - might not, in the mercy of HaShem, she one day find her husband?

And then would the bride and the bridegroom rejoice together and say, "I found you at the favored moment. I found you in exactly the place and at exactly the time that HaShem favored for us. I am of age, and you are of age, we both have found our place in the world, and

become adults. Now, with our own means, and our faculties and sexual energies fully formed and fully mature, we can, together, build our own house. As adults, we do not have to live forever in the old house of our parents. We can build a new and lasting house of our own. We can live in that house of ours that we shall build all of our days, and have our own children in a new life as a new family, and we shall share our joy forever!”

Do you hate Jesus Christ so much that you shall neglect the wisdom of Rabbi Yeshua? For do you not know that Jesus Christ is Christ Jesus, and he is Mashiach Yeshua then, the anointed one of HaShem? Shall you keep throwing away the Wisdom of the Age of the Mashiach? How then should the Mashiach Come?

How can the people enter into the fullness of the Age of the Mashiach if, O foolish and wayward Nation, disparate and distressed and at odds with even yourself, you are unwilling to enter into - and *explore* - the wisdom of the Spirit of the Age of the Mashiach? And if you should allow that wisdom to elude you -- for any reason, for any reason of pride or arrogance or fear - would not then, *necessarily*, the Age of the Mashiach in its fullness, as it is to Come, ever elude you, slip from your hands from generation to generation and from Age to Age?

Should you cower within yourselves, saying, “If I go out my front door, I may be robbed, mugged, killed?!” Fine logic, oh slow student. Then hide under your bed, and say to your wife and children, “If I leave the safety of this comfortable place under my bed, if I go into the kitchen or living room, or even go on top of the bed to make love to my wife, some horrible event may befall me!” And then, go further, O frightful One, should you not cower in the closet for fear the bed might collapse on you, and say to all your friends and neighbors and family and all the world, “Leave me alone! Leave me alone here in this closet in the dark, for I shall not go out into the world, for fear that something may happen to me.” Would not such a one, necessarily then, out of fear of death, forfeit one’s life? And may it not be a fine irony, worthy of all the wisdom of HaShem, that your house should collapse on you and leave you completely ruined, inextricably bound in Abaddon?

Must not Israel go out into the world, and, in repairing the world, be worthy of that Most Worthy Mashiach who shall then, necessarily then, take Israel, *usher* All Israel, that Fine and Perfect Israel ready and mature and adorned as a bride for her Bridegroom on her Wedding Day, into the Olam Ha-Ba?

Is that not the wisdom of HaShem? Is that not the Bravery of the one who says “I AM a WARRIOR!!!” ? Is that not the stouthearted, manly courage of Moses, of Joshua, of Samson, of Samuel, of King David himself? How shall the Age of David come upon you, if you do not imitate their strength and devotion and fidelity and courage and joy of heart in the Battle for Adonai? Shall the Age of David return to those who cower under their beds in fear of what the world may do to them?

Shall you imitate Saul or imitate David? Saul clung to his kingship, and though it was given him by Adonai, he foolishly believed that he could maintain it - sustain it, live in it - through his own strength. He thought that the gift of Adonai - meant to sustain the people to fulfill the One’s love for the many - was really merely his possession, meant to sustain himself, alone, in his blank self-love. Can such a one be Well-Beloved? Can such a one, though he try

with all *his* might, survive and conquer? Rather, cannot only he who says, “I alone have no might worthy of the name, but in the Name I trust, and with His Might, and only according to His Will and His Word, which I consult like a pupil day and night, can I even preserve my own life, much less conquer.” Shall not the latter, in the fullness of time, conquer, not for himself alone, but for the Name, and thus, not only for the Name, but for those well-beloved by the Name?

Might not the Gospel, buried under two thousand years of bloody and filthy European history, when washed off, be the Angelic Proclamation of the Spirit of the Mashiach?

Might that lost treasure, that ticket home, be but lost in translation?

Would it not require all the sagacity of the ages, all the joy of the battle, all the openness and generosity of heart, to recover its meaning, and its wisdom?

Might not the infinite momentum necessary to usher the world into the Olam Ha-Ba require a blast from the past?

And would it not be the Eternal, Infinite, and *Ironic* Wisdom of HaShem to place that lost treasure in the very *last* place you would ever want to look.

Would not finally accepting that challenge prove one’s true and lasting maturity?

All of life is a question. The only fulfilled lives are those that seek the answer, wherever it may be. He who abandons the search, even in a landfill, even in a graveyard, cannot complain that his search has borne no fruit.

But no Hebrew Proclamation remains, you say? But did the people attend to the Proclamation, soft-spoken and hidden as it was, or did it leave it to others, to the unschooled and the nations, to cobble together? Can you complain that the Kingdom does not come when you do away with the King? Can you complain that the Proclamation is not preserved, when you, or your ancestors, do not preserve it, and leave it to others?

As the Prophet Oprah teaches, you have to listen to your life. First, life whispers. Then second, she sets off an alarm clock. Then life throws a brick at you. Then, finally, if you fail to *listen* - truly and totally *listen* - the whole brick wall comes tumbling down.

And, as a preliminary to such an expedition, might we not reflect on this one crucial piece of wisdom: That HaShem loves Israel - All Israel, the Whole Nation. And, if we reflect that the King cannot come until each Jew totally loves every other Jew, from the depths of his or her heart, can the Kingdom Come if even this one, misapprehended Jew goes without the chesed of the Nation?

The problem with Satan is his blankness. As a created spirit, fully spirit, not enmeshed in the hobbling extent of matter, he, like all the angels, is a pure intelligence, totally reflecting the Light of HaShem. And, that Prime Angel, that first spirit, as the most perfect created spirit, and thus most perfect created being, can most perfectly reflect the Light, the true Light, which enlightens all the world - G-d, and only Him. And what is intelligence? Intelligence is but the Latin *intelligere*, which is to understand; and what is it to understand, if not to stand under: that is to say, to *SEE* something: some reality: for what it *truly* (and not merely apparently) is. And, in order to see something, do you not *first* require the Light itself? Thus, then, is not all intelligence, but the illumination of the Divine Reality, shining down upon the created spiritual mirrors?

Yet, is not the created spirit within each of us, through the sunderance of sin, cut off, blinded, from the spiritual sight that is the essence of spirit? For sin is the antithesis of the Spirit.

How then shall any spirit see anything when, existing within itself, there is the antithesis of the Light that gives all sight to we spirits, those mirrors created to obey and thus enjoy the Perfection of an Eternal Light without any taint of limits.

For is sin not a limit? Is not sin a set of blinders -- a perfect poking out of one's eyes, of one's ability to access what is truly true and really real. Is that not the essence of sin -- to act at variance with the Eternal Act in whom there is no wrong? For sin is not freedom -- it is merely the illusion of freedom. And it is not really Action, but only the fading, faint echo of freedom of action, spiraling into a vortex of its own blindness.

Can any freedom of action, sought by any power, even a superpower, truly be the essence of Freedom? Would not, rather, only True Freedom be obtained by obedience to the Absolute Freedom: would not the Eternal Act of Unlimited Potential and Actualization of that Potential only be accomplished by *accordng ourselves* -- by obeying! -- the Will of a Total Prerogative without limits, that once accessed, can only race on towards an Infinity of Every Righteous Blessing and Every Choice Thing? What is that if it is not the Olam Ha-Ba?

And if one should deny - stop - *turn* away from that Light trying to break into the world to grant every Grace, Every Freedom of a Total, Unhindered, and Absolute Spirit: would not such a spirit who turned only towards himself, but, necessarily then, forfeit every choice thing, and implode upon himself in an endless, desperate, and inescapable vortex, composed precisely of the negation of each and every and all together, combined, grace that the Light had wished to grant? Would not then that negation of Grace, that Anti-Grace, be, in itself, necessarily then, by an adamantine prerogative of itself, the very center of Spiritual reality, a total, and most woeful, anti-freedom? Would not then that quest for total "*freedom*", sought the wrong way, but necessarily result in the total forfeiture of freedom, in an ETERNAL TYRANT?

Can any spirit - any force in the world - which is only conceived in the liberty of the Power of Man attain the goal which it seeks? Can the Power of Man, unaided by the Light of the Light, ever reach up its Tower, built from a foundation merely on earth, up to the Infinite Heavens? Must not that Power of Man be assisted by illumination from the Light from above? And if that Power of Man, no matter how noble, no matter how well shaped and formed, not be so illuminated, must not that Power, instead of achieving the total freedom based solely on the Power of Man it had sought, but, necessarily then, collapse into a vortex of the most unspeakable and blank tyranny: a pure negation of the freedom it has sought, for it had not sought freedom in the bosom of the ALL-FREEDOM?

For, what is the *true* superpower in the world? Which is the unstoppable force, which once unleashed cannot but attain the purposes for which it was sent into the world? Is it the Power of Man or the Power of Adonai? Can the Power of Man, no matter how noble it may be, no matter how benign it may strive to be, no matter how much it may have forsaken the blank foolishness of lesser nations, ever, by its own strength, raise itself up to the bosom of HaShem? Would not even such a nation require a Power greater than merely human strength and more noble than the inextricable constraints of merely human morality? Would it not require the Light of a Higher Power, an ineffably Nobler All-Righteousness? Would not only that Power then, necessarily then, have the Strength of the All-Mighty necessary to usher in an Age of Peace?

Which then is the true City on a Hill? Which is the Light unto the nations, but the Nation? And what Power could possibly save anyone, bring any kind of lasting, true PEACE but the Power of the One and Only Name?

Who then is the older brother who shall carry the younger brother, who shall raise whom up to the Good Opinion of the All-Righteous and attain the Crown of Eternal Peace? If HaShem be for you, who can be against? Though you look back on a history of misery and woe, do you not indeed look *back* on all your persecutors? Do you not race ahead towards an unimaginably blessed and totally living future, when those blank, foul “nations” - no-nations, anti-nations - now lie ruined and utterly destroyed and totally detested and mocked, sunk under the sands of their own vile and unforgivable iniquity?

Race forward then, rush onward in righteousness and courage, without any fear, with only hope, never cowering, never doubting the Power that, once fulfilled and at last unleashed, can never fail, can only rush on towards the Fulfillment of every Prophecy and the wiping away of every tear from every eye.

And listen to Wisdom, if you will, if you accept the invitation to the infinite journey:

You are the salt of the earth. But if salt loses its taste, with what can it be seasoned? It is no longer good for anything but to be thrown out and trampled underfoot. *You are the light of the world!*

A city set on a mountain [of Holiness] cannot be hidden. Nor do they light a lamp and then put it under a bushel basket!

Is it not rather set on a lamp stand, where it gives light to all in the house?

Just so, your light must shine before others, that they may see your good deeds reflecting a perfect image of righteousness so that, in the fullness of time, it may bring upon the world the Favor and Power of your Father in Heaven!!!

If the Bridegroom should come to your door and knock, and request to see you, should you, the endlessly waiting bride, in your blank blindness, but turn him away, and slam the door?

And once you at last open the door, would you not find the Future King? And may it not even - astonishingly - be the Once and Future King Himself? Would you in your total joy, on that bright wedding Day, the fullness of your Peace, even care? Would it make a iota of difference?

THUS LISTEN TO THE WISDOM OF THE AGES, O ISRAEL, in any tongue, culture, land or people in which wisdom may be found:

(Ezekiel 33:1-9)
9:11

Thus, the word of the LORD came to me: Son of man, speak thus to your countrymen: When I bring the sword against a country, and the people of this country select one of their number to be their watchman, and the watchman, seeing the sword coming against the country, blows the trumpet to warn the people, anyone hearing but not heeding the warning of the trumpet and therefore slain by the sword that comes against him, shall be responsible for his own death. He heard the trumpet blast yet refused to take warning; he is responsible for his own death, for had he taken warning he would have escaped with his life. But if the watchman sees the sword coming and fails to blow the warning trumpet, so that the sword comes and takes anyone, I will hold the watchman responsible for that person's death, even though that person is taken because of his own sin.

(Ezekiel 33:1-9)
9:11

You, son of man, I have appointed watchman for the house of Israel; when you hear me say anything, you shall warn them for me. If I tell the wicked man that he shall surely die, and you do not speak out to dissuade the wicked man from his way, he [the wicked man] shall die for his guilt, but I will hold you responsible for his death. But if you warn the wicked man, trying to *turn* him from his way, and he refuses to turn from his way, he shall die for his guilt, but you shall save yourself.

(Ezekiel 33:1-9)
9:11

“You are the light of the world. A city set on a mountain cannot be hidden. Nor do they light a lamp and then put it under a bushel basket; it is set on a lampstand, where it gives light to all in the house. Just so, your light must shine before others, that they may see your good deeds and glorify your heavenly Father.”

(Matthew 5:14-16)

It will be as a when a man who going on a journey called in his servants and entrusted his possessions to them. To one he gave five talents; to another, two; to a third, one - to each according to his ability. Then he went away. Immediately the one who received five talents went and traded with them, and made another five. Likewise, the one who received two made another two. But the man who received one went off and dug a hole in the ground and buried his master's money. After a long time the master of those servants came back and settled accounts with them. The one who had received five talents came forward bringing the additional five [recall that the only meaningful gift in heaven is Spirit - and those spirits in the Spirit, from whom all reality proceeds, all of it - all sensations and cognitions (c.f. George Berkeley) - so the additional five are those spirits won for Christ through the servant's action.]. He said, “Master, you gave me five talents. See, I have made five more.” His Master said to him, “Well done, my good and faithful servant. Since you were faithful in small matters, I will give you great responsibilities. Come, share your master's joy.” Then the one who had received two talents also came forward and said, “Master, you gave me two talents. See I have made two more.” His Master said to him, “Well done, my good and faithful servant. Since you were faithful in small matters, I will give you great responsibilities. Come, share your master's joy.”

Then the one who had received one talent came forward and said, “Master, I knew you were a demanding person, harvesting where you did not plant and gathering where you did not scatter; so out of fear I went off and buried your talent in the ground. [Burying one's spiritual gifts in the ground, that is to say, preferring mortal life and its securities and pleasures to the Way of the Spirit of the Christ] Here it is back.”

*His Master said to him in reply, “**You wicked, lazy servant! So you knew that I harvest where I did not plant and gather where I did not scatter?** [The Plenitude of Adonai is so abundant, irresistible, and unstoppable that even where the gift of the Spirit of the Christ is not planted or scattered, still, even there, the Work of the Spirit of the Christ is still done. How then shall anyone who explicitly knew the Name of the Christ then not act, and thus accomplish the Fruits of the Spirit?] Should you not then have put my money in the bank so that I could have got it back with interest on my return? **Now then!** [This indicates the Final Judgment with Mashiach Yeshua in the Fullness (the Pleroma) of His Father - Adonai - In His Favor, now finally and at last returning as a Just Judge, and not a merciful Savior] **Take the talent from him and give it to the one with ten.***

For to everyone who has, more will be given and he will grow rich [in eternal spirit, and not merely the shadow of matter]; but from the one

who has not, even what he has will be taken away. And throw this useless servant into the darkness outside, where there will be wailing and grinding of teeth.

The grinding of teeth is the Hell of Satan's force, grinding his way eternally through those woeful souls inextricably (through their own failure to *turn to Spirit*) being unable to raise themselves up to the multi-dimensionality of the Spirit's Endless Love, which is the source of all gifts, of all life, even unto the Spirit itself.

A spirit that is not turned to the Spirit cannot have within itself the multi-dimensional faculties to bear the gifts that the Father, in His All-Righteousness and All-Felicitousness, wishes to bestow on that spirit. Instead, they are forever, blankly, and flatly, lost to their own iniquity.

*All of your gifts -- all of your talents, wealth, prestige, standing, power -- they all belong to God.
Use them wisely here and now, lest they be taken away from you in Eternity.
You yourself are the greatest gift of all to yourself.
And what shall you have left once that too is taken away?*

https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=2u3eQc_rx54

Trial of Zed

(Matthew 25:14-30)

You have to speak to the world about His great mercy and prepare the world for the Second Coming of Him who will come, not as a merciful Savior, but as a just Judge. Oh how terrible is that day! Determined is the day of justice, the day of divine wrath. The angels tremble before it. Speak to souls about this great mercy while it is still the time for granting mercy. (Diary 635, St. Faustina Kowalska)

<https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=CAjKZJarlwk>

*Yours
Ella Henderson*

*Video Games
Lana Del Ray*

<https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=cE6wxDqdOV0>

For, it is an unforgivable sin for one who sees to not act.

Jerusalem 9:11

The End is Nigh.
And the hour? The time? Twelve O'Clock High.

Is this not but the Ante-Type of the Eternal Type, Once and Future, Everlasting and Anon:

Hear another parable. There was a landowner who planted a vineyard, put a hedge around it, dug a wine press in it, and built a tower. Then he leased it to tenants and went on a journey [through time and space]. When vintage time drew near, he sent his servants to the tenants to obtain his produce. But the tenants seized the servants and one they beat, another they killed, and a third they stoned. Again he sent other servants, more numerous than the first ones, but they treated them in the same way. Finally, he sent his son to them, thinking, 'They will respect my son [A man of All-Righteousness].' But when the tenants saw the son, they said to one another, 'This is the heir. Come, let us kill him and acquire his inheritance.' They seized him, threw him out of the vineyard, and killed him. What will the owner of the vineyard do to those tenants when he comes?" They answered him, 'He will put those wretched [damned] men to a wretched [eternally damned] death and lease his vineyard to other tenants who will give him the produce [flow of favor] at the proper times.'" Jesus said to them, "Did you never read in the scriptures:

'The stone that the builders rejected
has become the cornerstone;
by the Lord has this been done,
and it is wonderful in our eyes.'?"

Therefore, I say to you, the kingdom of God [the means to access the fullness of the Olam Ha-Ba: Temple worship according to Torah Practice, the end being the Sight of the Infinite Plenitude of the Eternal One's All-Light] will be taken away from you [.....] and given to a people that will produce its fruit [A pretty stunning prophecy, even if you think it was concocted by cretins in the 1st Century, given the way in which this cult of cretinous loonies conquered Europe, the Americas, has made headway in Asia and Africa, and, before the imperial, vicious, and murderous onslaught of you-know-who, had established flourishing societies in North Africa and the Near East. And the fruit is the monotheism of the nations].

The one who falls on this stone [the cornerstone of the means by which the Olam Ha-Ba may be ushered in] will be dashed to pieces; and it will crush anyone on whom it falls.

When the chief priests and the Pharisees heard his parables, they knew that he was speaking about them. And although they were attempting to arrest him, they feared the crowds, for they regarded him as a prophet.”

For who would not thus avenge a son?

Therefore be as wise people, alert and awake, at the ready to meet the Master of the Gate at the Gate to the City: The Eternal Jerusalem, adorned as a perfect bride on her wedding day, fully prepared to Come Down from the Heavens and fulfill every prophecy and wipe every tear from every eye.

When the Pharisees heard that he had silenced the Sadducees, they gathered together, and pled, *Please, please Romans - do not kill us! Do not touch a hair upon our heads, but KILL THAT ONE, KILL THAT ONE, WE BEG YOU, KILL THAT ONE!!!! - !*

And then the Nation laughed over such a one's mother's misery and rejoiced in their all-wisdom of all-self-preservation-all-the-time.

Would not the Eternal Explosion of an ALL-LOVE come down upon one to bring TOTAL LIFE, scorned and self-denied, implode into a furious Wrath of terrifying proportions, raging like the fire of a Father whose son had been murdered at his Bar Mitzvah? Would not then what was to be a feast of joy, dissipate into a mist of many woes over long nights of ages and that deep, frightful rage seethe long and anon, till at last, in the fullness of time, every tear produced by such maddening harlotry had been drunk - and drunk deeply - by the perpetrator - and then and *only then* could that rage relent, could the dark storm clouds of such an abject fury now - *at last* - scud away and reveal the bright blue skies, with the Heavenly Light finally covering the earth and all its peoples?

Or shall the Father take the murderer by the hand, and say, "O, you who have taken my Well-Beloved from me, come now and take his place --- here, you come and read from the Torah, you perform all the mitzvot as *you* see fit, and you come home with me, and we shall take this dead son of man, and throw him in a landfill, where his corpse shall rot for ages upon ages. What a gift you have given to me O slayer of my son, my Well-Beloved, you give me yourself, what you have chosen, in place of what I have chosen. You are so wise! Come now into my house, where you shall be my Father, and I your slave, to do with whatever you wish. And I will run and flit about the house, doing *your* will, and *your* works, and doing every last detail *your* way, while I remain neglected and abused. I shall be your humble slave, your bellhop, and though I prefer the ways of universal peace, humility, and brotherly love -- though you prefer the ways of scorn, mockery, violence, destruction, self-preservation, laxity, fornication, greed, self-seeking, and, when push comes to shove, self-preference, I, O lowly one, once a Father and now your slave, shall serve you abjectly and do whatever *you* will all the days of my eternal life."

Shall that father-slave, slave-god, say to the murderer, "Let us forget this son of mine, and never speak of him again, and spit upon his grave, and laugh at the tears of his mother, and call him a bastard conceived of a criminal, but you, O my patron, you shall replace him as my Well-Beloved -- for I do not anoint - choose - any *one* as my son, but whoever comes to my door and demands entry shall be admitted as my son, for i, little spirit-slave, do whatever you, YOU - THE GREAT WE OF THE PEOPLE demand that i do. And i, in fear of your awesome Power of Man, your Tower of Human Righteousness, do but humbly and abjectly obey. You shall but step one more step, lay but one more layer upon your Ziggurat of Human righteousness, and you shall penetrate the Eternal Temple of My All-Righteousness. And, thus storming the Heavens, you humans shall rule as a Great Pantheon of the We, and i, a little insignificance, shall forever obey in cringing obeisance."

I say love all Jews, but you say "Hate this one, and hate that one, and we shall choose the ones we love," and thus, do i, but little chained slave-god, do meekly and frightfully obey the awesome WE - the WE OF THE LIVING - WE THE LIVING.

For shall but one eternal one have the strength to overcome all the Mighty Power of that Great Mighty Morphin' Mortal Pantheon?

For what greater power could there be than such a Pantheon of We the Living? Could only one little insignificant eternal one, who does not even have so much as a body - *not even a body!* - overcome a whole host of mighty flesh?

For how could one who does not have flesh ever overcome one in the flesh? And, indeed, how could the one overcome the many?

Would not the wisdom of the one be but foolishness in the face of that GREAT MANY? And would not the strength of that one be but weakness in the face of such a celestial pantheon of the MIGHTY MORPHIN' MANY, *those righteous rangers of their own cleanliness, so perfect in their own endless self-estimation?*

Could such a God, so contemptible and abject in spirit, speak the Cosmos into existence with but a word of His Spirit, one single exertion of his infinite breath, "Let there be light." ?

Cannot only Light speak light into existence? - for there can be no light without Light, as there can be no beautiful things without the Beautiful.

As the Book of the Prophet Isaiah says:

Who among you fears the LORD,
heeds his servant's voice,
And walks in darkness
without any light,
Trusting in the name of the LORD
and relying on his God?
All of you kindle flames
and carry about you fiery darts;
Walk by the light of your own fire
and by the flares you have burnt!
This is your fate from my hand:
you shall lie down in a place of pain.

(50:10-11)

And elsewhere, does not the Great Book of the Word intone, does not Ezekiel cry out:

Funny, funny how time goes by
And blessings are missed in the wink of an eye.
Why oh why oh why should one have to go on suffering
When every day I pray please come back to me.

(Ezekiel 33:1-9)

You who kill each other, and condemn even one just man -- how then should the Mashiach ever come upon you?

The just man perishes,
but no one takes it to heart;
Devout men are swept away,
with no one giving it a thought.
Though he is taken away from the presence
of evil,
the just man enters into peace;
There is rest on his couch
for the sincere, straightforward man.

But you, draw near,
 you sons of a sorceress,
 adulterous, wanton race!
Of whom do you make sport,
 at whom do you open wide your mouth,
 and put out your tongue?
Are you not rebellious children,
 a worthless race;
You who are in heat among the terebinths,
 under every green tree;
You who immolate children in the wadies,
 behind the crevices in the cliffs?

You who rush a Righteous man off to be tortured and crucified, and dump his flesh in a landfill, forgotten, mocked, scorned, reviled, spit upon.

Of whom were you afraid? Whom did you
 fear,
 that you became false
And did not remember me,
 or give me any thought?

(Isaiah 57:1-5, 11-13)

Would it not be the wisdom of the Name that the sin of failure in one time would become, in the fullness of time, the light of salvation not just for the Nation, but all nations - that, once reconciled, all might be revealed -- all hidden things, uncovered, all secrets, told, all wounds, healed, all hatreds, ceased - ceased in an Ocean of Spiritual Love.

Should one not lay down one's pride and prejudice, and rejoice in the Wisdom of Mashiach Yeshua:

No mountain's too high for you to climb
All you have to do is have some climbing faith
No river's too wide for you to make it across
All you have to do is believe it when you pray

And then you will see the morning will come
and every day will be bright as the sun
All of your fears cast them on me
I just want you to see

I'll be your cloud up in the sky
I'll be your shoulder when you cry
I hear your voices when you call me
I am your Angel,
And when all hope is gone, I'm here
No matter how far you are, I'm near
It makes no difference who you are
I am your Angel, I'm your Angel

I saw your tear drops and I heard you cry
All you need is time, seek me and you shall find
You have everything and you're still lonely
It don't have to be this way
Let me show you a better day

And then you will see, the morning will come
And all of your days will be bright as the sun
So all of your fears just cast them on me
How can I make you see

And when it's time to face the storm

I'll be right by your side

Grace will keep us safe and warm
And I know we will survive

And when it seems as if your end is drawing near (end is drawing near) [End is Nigh]
Don't you dare give up the fight
Just put your trust beyond the skies

(Gospel of the Hebrews - lost treasure)

Despite the pupil's failure to transcribe and preserve the Proclamation, yet still some small fragments remain.

Consider this gem that has somehow survived the ages, in the writers of the nations (necessarily): Jesus is recorded by the first Jewish Christians as saying, "Just now my mother the Holy Spirit took me by one of my hairs and bore me up on to the great mountain Tabor."

And again, the lost Gospel of the Hebrews states:

And it came to pass, when the Lord had come up from the water, the entire fountain of the Holy Spirit descended and rested upon him and said to him, "My son, in all the

prophets did I await thee, that thou mightest come and I might rest in thee; for thou art my rest; thou art my firstborn Son that reignest for ever."

Even through the smudged lens of the faintly recorded past, can we not see something very plain? The descending of the Spirit is an anointing -- not with oil, but with the essence of HaShem's reality: His Spirit, for G-d is spiritual, not physical, so one must necessarily be anointed with the spiritual "substance" or "essence", and not physical oil: the fullness of the Name's Righteousness is poured out upon the name of Yeshua, such that He now has the potential to activate the All-Righteousness in the world, if the Nation is righteous enough to receive it. And this is no mere righteousness that is required: it is the fullness of human righteousness. Only the fullness of human righteousness can meet (can accept) the anointing of the one smeared, named, anointed with the sacred All-Righteousness. And, in that meeting of human and divine righteousness would be the "infinite momentum" necessary to propel the world into the Olam Ha-Ba.

But what is the fullness of human righteousness?

Is it not the fulfillment of all the mitzvot?

And is this not a mitzvah?

לֹא-תִשָּׂא אֶת-אָחִיךָ, בְּלִבְבְּךָ; הוֹכַח תּוֹכִיחַ אֶת-עַמִּיתְךָ, וְלֹא-תִשָּׂא עָלָיו חֶטְא.
לֹא-תִקַּם וְלֹא-תִטּוֹר אֶת-בְּנֵי עַמְךָ, וְאַהֲבַת לְרֵעֶךָ כְּמוֹךָ: אֲנִי, יְהוָה.

How shall All-Righteousness and human righteousness touch each other in a divine propulsion of the human into the limitless eternity of the infinite Power, when not only is this mitzvah not fulfilled by the Nation, but we can barely discern any radically different joyful kindness pulsing in the *whole* of the community. Your overabundant, radical joyful kindness for each other should be so evident, so obvious, so overwhelming that it becomes an undeniable example of what a community truly invested with the Spirit of the Name can be. That ecstatic joyful kindness for *everyone* should be so manifest that the nations would fall all over themselves to imitate such a blessed community and Nation. That national goodness - that national greatness - must be so obvious, so manifest, that it would be as if a 31st century community came down from Heaven and made its dwelling on earth in this century -- no nation (at least any with any kind of good sense) could *possibly* deny the blessedness of such a state -- and would happily and readily imitate it.

Be a light to the nations, O Nation, that they may see your good works and thus realize the goodness of the LORD (glorify your heavenly Father).

To get you off and running: consider: would left-right politics exist in the 31st century? Would they exist in the Olam Ha-Ba? Of course not. Simply do what is right, what is human. Defend the Nation and build the community. It is really very simple. Just as a conceptual trace, to be fleshed out by all the wisdom and effort and endurance of the Nation, consider this. A Nation that, (on the one hand), had an IDF that was strong and courageous like David, wise like Solomon, and loving and compassionate towards all people, not just his own people, like Yeshua (Joshua). The IDF should be relentless in defending the Nation, but not ruthless; and it should

serve the preservation of the Jewish community, without devaluing other communities or other ethnicities' lives. How can you expect the Mashiach to come when you persecute those in your power? How can you be so blind? The IDF must be an invincible shield. But it must be a wise and, when possible, restrained one. Palestinian Lives Matter. Because every human life has worth.

At the same time, *simultaneously*, combine that necessary strength with the building up of your community. In a society that truly modeled itself on eternal principles, there should be no poverty, greed, hatred of one another. Even if you disagree with one another about any point, even if one is a secular atheist and the other is "Ultra-Orthodox", never let a sharp word come between you, let only the Chesed of Torah pass between you. I assure you, O Nation, every sharp word -- every scornful glance -- puts the Mashiach just another step farther from you. Do not think that the One does not see: He sees all. If an atheist Jew says, "There is no G-d," show him there is by reflecting not your own darkness of self-preference: rage and arrogance: show him G-d exists by being like G-d, endless in mercy and ever ready to forgive.

And make sure there is not a *single* homeless person, a *single* person without the means to flourish, to make full use of all their many splendid human capacities. How can the Mashiach come upon you and bring you into a life without limits, when you limit what other people in your midst can accomplish even in this phase of the world? He cannot. Not *will* not. I assure you: *cannot*.

And even watch your thoughts - for the Mind that created all minds surely knows what you think, and you cannot long separate your thoughts from your actions. He who hates his fellow Jew in his heart, even disdains or ignores or avoids or discards him, just casts off the possibility of Mashiach to a future generation.

This is not an original doctrine. I am not trying to be original. I want the Mashiach NOW!

This isn't a game. The Age of David is not a magic trick. If you want magic tricks go to the Babylonians, to the Nazi occultists, go to Satanic temples, play *Magic: The Gathering*. Watch *Game of Thrones*. But do not expect the Mashiach.

Be a light to the nations, O Nation. Be a Nation that so far excels the petty and vain and fearful and proud and arrogant nationalism of this age that your National life will look like something out of the far future.

But: You must trust HaShem, and imitate (in your limited way) His capacities and ways. And how could you not? Is that not the whole point of all the Scriptures and the whole of Jewish history? Do you not, through hardships, endure from age to age?

Let's get really real:

The way Israel and the Jewish people regard and treat the Palestinian people is a joke. A sick, sadistic, unholy, wicked, racist, genocidal, Satanic, disgusting, nauseating, stomach-turning,

hair-raising, hell-raising, gives-me-diarrhea, makes-me-weep, makes-my-innards-burn, makes-me-shout-and-rage-and-fume, lightning strikes the citadel, flame consumes the valley and reduces all to bitter ash and unburied corpses as vultures devour the unhallowed corrupted flesh joke.

So, in other words, listen up, Israel: No bueno.

<https://www.quora.com/What-does-no-bueno-mean-in-English>

Now I know what you might be thinking if you've actually read through everything I've written in this book.

He's inconsistent! He said he was our friend! He's a traitor!

CRUCIFY HIM!

Am I inconsistent, or are not rather you inconsistent? Are you not betraying your own identity and history? Are you not, by your actions, deranging yourself such that Israel is not even a friend to itself?

Put down your fear-mongering, self-serving screeds and consider the wisdom of the philosopher Aristotle in his *Nicomachean Ethics* (Book IX, Chapter 4):

Friendly relations with one's neighbors, and the marks by which friendships are defined, seem to have proceeded from a man's relations to himself. For (1) we define a friend as one who wishes and does what is good, or seems so, for the sake of his friend, or (2) as one who wishes his friend to exist and live, for his sake; which mothers do to their children, and friends do who have come into conflict. And (3) others define him as one who lives with and (4) has the same tastes as another, or (5) one who grieves and rejoices with his friend; and this too is found in mothers most of all. It is by some one of these characteristics that friendship too is defined.

Now each of these is true of the good man's relation to himself (and of all other men in so far as they think themselves good; virtue and the good man seem, as has been said, to be the measure of every class of things). For his opinions are harmonious, and he desires the same things with all his soul; and therefore he wishes for himself what is good and what seems so, and does it (for it is characteristic of the good man to work out the good), and does so for his own sake (for he does it for the sake of the intellectual element in him, which is thought to be the man himself); and he wishes himself to live and be preserved, and especially the element by virtue of which he thinks. For existence is good to the virtuous man, and each man wishes himself what is good, while no one chooses to possess the whole world if he has first to become some one else (for that matter, even now God possesses the good); he wishes for this only on condition of being whatever he is; and the element that thinks would seem to be the individual man, or to be so more than any other element in him. And such a man wishes to live with himself;

for he does so with pleasure, since the memories of his past acts are delightful and his hopes for the future are good, and therefore pleasant. His mind is well stored too with subjects of contemplation. And he grieves and rejoices, more than any other, with himself; for the same thing is always painful, and the same thing always pleasant, and not one thing at one time and another at another; he has, so to speak, nothing to repent of.

Therefore, since each of these characteristics belongs to the good man in relation to himself, and he is related to his friend as to himself (for his friend is another self), friendship too is thought to be one of these attributes, and those who have these attributes to be friends. Whether there is or is not friendship between a man and himself is a question we may dismiss for the present; there would seem to be friendship in so far as he is two or more, to judge from the aforementioned attributes of friendship, and from the fact that the extreme of friendship is likened to one's love for oneself.

But the attributes named seem to belong even to the majority of men, poor creatures though they may be. Are we to say then that in so far as they are satisfied with themselves and think they are good, they share in these attributes? Certainly no one who is thoroughly bad and impious has these attributes, or even seems to do so. They hardly belong even to inferior people; for they are at variance with themselves, and have appetites for some things and rational desires for others. This is true, for instance, of incontinent people; for they choose, instead of the things they themselves think good, things that are pleasant but hurtful; while others again, through cowardice and laziness, shrink from doing what they think best for themselves. And those who have done many terrible deeds and are hated for their wickedness even shrink from life and destroy themselves. And wicked men seek for people with whom to spend their days, and shun themselves; for they remember many a grievous deed, and anticipate others like them, when they are by themselves, but when they are with others they forget. And having nothing lovable in them they have no feeling of love to themselves. Therefore also such men do not rejoice or grieve with themselves; for their soul is rent by faction, and one element in it by reason of its wickedness grieves when it abstains from certain acts, while the other part is pleased, and one draws them this way and the other that, as if they were pulling them in pieces. If a man cannot at the same time be pained and pleased, at all events after a short time he is pained *because* he was pleased, and he could have wished that these things had not been pleasant to him; for bad men are laden with repentance.

Therefore, the bad man does not seem to be amicably disposed even to himself, because there is nothing in him to love; so that if to be thus is the height of wretchedness, we should strain every nerve to avoid wickedness and should endeavour to be good; for so and only so can one be either friendly to oneself or a friend to another.

The 'ol win 'em over with Aristotle. Works every time.

So there.

Oh, wait....you require clarification?

How can Israel even be Israel - even be itself - when it imitates the crimes of its own persecutors -- when it becomes the nations, rather than becomes the Nation?

Has Israel been deprived of a homeland? Then how can Israel deny a homeland to others?

Has Israel been treated as sub-human? Then how can Israel treat Palestinians as sub-human?

Has Israel been the subject of racist diatribes? Then how can it emulate the German newspapers of the 19th and 20th centuries with its own newspapers that call Palestinians and non-Jews ethnically inferior?

Has Israel been subject to indiscriminate violence at the hands of more powerful states and armies? Then how can Israel, empowered with a state and a mighty army, now deal death and destruction indiscriminately?

You say: it is not indiscriminate.
It is not discriminating enough.

You say: we are justified in our racism.
Discover if HaShem agrees.

You say: the land is ours.
Discover that before it belongs to you, it belongs to God, and those who do not emulate His Chesed for all peoples shall be deprived of everything that belongs to God.

You say: we have real security challenges.
Indeed you do. And I would never for a moment say that you should not do everything in your power, in a clear-eyed, hard-headed way, to defend the Nation.

But you must defend *the* Nation, not simply *a* nation.

The Nation to be defended must be so morally superior, in truth and the estimation of the LORD and not simply in your own self-estimation, that it actually deserves to take up space in the Holy Land.

The Nation must be meticulous in its defense of the Jewish people. But, while not sacrificing national security, the Nation must be similarly meticulous in respecting, indeed, cherishing, the humanity of all people, especially those under its power.

Now, elsewhere, I rightly said that Israel mourned with the United States, while the Palestinians danced in the streets, and I admonished my readers to know who your friends are.

I would admonish my friend Israel to likewise know who your friends are. A friend can talk to another friend, and be frank, and both can trust that what passes between them is for their mutual benefit.

An Israel that cannot be criticized cannot have friends, and cannot even be a friend to itself. An Israel too wrapped up in its own self-righteousness to inquire of the All-Righteousness of the All-Righteous cannot even be Israel, can never be the Nation. It must necessarily be a no-Israel, and a no-Nation.

Our bond of brotherhood makes Israel my friend. But it does not make Israel G-d.

And the Palestinians viciously dancing in the streets makes them antagonistic and hurtful. But it does not make them vermin.

Israel can only be Israel when it *always* sets for itself an infinitely higher moral code than the nations surrounding itself. Israel can only be Israel when it sees itself as the friend and guide of all nations, and sees other nations, even when errant, even when criminal, as potentially capable of joining, one day, in a brotherhood of nations. An Israel that sees itself as G-d, empowered to treat other nations as vermin, shall *never* see the dawning of the Olam Ha-Ba.



The Mashiach will NEVER come upon such a people, not a people who have such filth scrawled on their walls and doors, and not a people who have such (ironic and outrageous!) filth festering in their hearts.

SHEMA YISRAEL!

You're brilliant, charismatic, wonderful, you have so much potential, but -- because of your fears, hatreds, paranoias, narrow-mindedness, ethnocentrism, sometimes, let's face it: racism, the greed of your corporate capitalist oligarchy, the absurdities of your contentious politics -- how could that Most Worthy Mashiach to Come *possibly* come upon you? I assure you, in your present state, he will be far out of sight -- though always near should you relent in your unrighteousness, that HaShem, in His All-Righteousness, may too relent, and the perfection of your righteousness become the point of contact by which His All-Righteousness may, at last, come upon you.

Consider:

The highly embittered refugees who succeeded in escaping the Galilean massacres fled to the last major Jewish stronghold—Jerusalem. There, they killed anyone in the Jewish leadership who was not as radical as they. Thus, all the more moderate Jewish leaders who headed the Jewish government at the revolt's beginning in 66 were dead by 68—and not one died at the hands of a Roman. All were killed by fellow Jews.

<http://www.jewishvirtuallibrary.org/the-great-revolt-66-70-ce>

That is not an Israel worthy of the Most Worthy Mashiach come in Power. It is a child-race in its terrible twos, unable to grasp even the most basic elements of the Chesed demanded of Israel by Torah. Jew massacring Jew? I assure you, the Most Worthy Mashiach will stay *far* - incredibly far in Power - from such a people.

First Encounter

<https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=4smtxJRRoY0>

The Trial Never Ended

<https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=-UqNIOc8rgc>

When Jesus Christ....no, no, no....far too goyish...When Mashiach Yehoshua the Once and Future Melech was brought by force, by violent and insignificant men, into the presence of all the dignitaries and plenipotentiaries of the mighty Great Sanhedrin....it was not the Mashiach Yehoshua who was on trial. The contemptible dupes of Satan who presided over that laughable, disgusting client state of the Roman Empire, full of murder, outrage, unholiness, hatred of Jew for Jew, lies, childish thinking, clinging to life rather than trusting in HaShem -- these base collaborators with Satan's Evil Empire on earth -- they presumed to stand in judgment of the Great Judge of the Cosmos, the unbegotten Son of the Most High, who shared in the deepest Spirit of the Most High.

What laughable, disgusting little cretins these non-entities truly were. How blind and wayward in their perception of reality.

So, when the Once and Future Mashiach was brought into their feeble and vile presence, it was not the Mashiach who was on trial. It was the Sanhedrin that was on trial. The *appearance* of the matter was that this contemptible blasphemer and heretic, this little seemingly insignificant, marginal, tiny, powerless man, this un-man, was on trial under the authority and judgment of this oh so Mighty Assemblage of the Noblest of Nobles in their Most Noble Noblesity. Fools. Stupid fools.

It was *they* who were on trial, on trial as collaborators, liars, cowards, even murderers and thieves, adulterers, and those covetous for the worthless, sham things of this world: position, reputation, worldly honor, titles, money, power over meaningless nothings like the dirt kingdoms of this world, which the Mashiach Come in the Full Power of His Glory shall knock over like the non-entities that they are. They were on trial for their blindness and their *self*-righteousness, the noxious vainglory of their little, imperceptive, vain minds.

They *thought* that they had condemned Him. That the Great We of the People had pronounced judgment on this little one.

And yet, the truth was that He had pronounced judgment and sentence upon *them*, disgusting polytheistic pantheon of their self-righteous and delusional sham grandeur...actually, the most vile grandiosity.

And so, after the Great We of the People had done away with this little one....in fact THIS GREAT AND MIGHTY ONE, this ONE who might have saved them all....this little collaborator client state forgot about the incident, persecuted those who talked of the matter, and went on its merry little way into.....

Glory?

OR WAS IT RATHER OBLIVION?

So, when the Great We of the People, in all their violent glory, their orgy of Jew murdering Jew, took into their minds that THE GREAT PANTHEON OF THEY would somehow overthrow the Satanic Empire of the Seven Hills....what could they expect?

G-d's help?

Had not HaShem delivered to them a mighty weapon, worthy of the LORD's condescension and conferral of the Kingship?

One that would have destroyed the Romans as a blade of steel shatters a wooden sword?

Had not rather the GREAT WE OF THE PEOPLE flung away what might have become that mighty sword, in favor of all their little toy swords?

And then what could be done for them?

And then, when the Temple is destroyed, Jerusalem defiled, and the Nation is plunged into a Satanic orgy of murder, rape, destruction, and despair --- all the things that had *PRECISELY* occurred after the Babylonian Horror....

Does this GREAT WE OF THE PEOPLE step back and consider....perhaps we did not act quite rightly?

And when for thousands of years the bare and obvious facts of the situation lay squarely in your eye....do you then consider...perhaps we did not act quite rightly then?

No. No, of course not. Because of your self-love for the GREAT WE OF THE PEOPLE, you blind yourself to even the mere *possibility* that your ancestors, perhaps, did not act quite rightly then.

Might not HaShem then feel quite like...I don't know....Toby Keith?

<https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=HxUuDPNbkJk>

And especially, how can it be that that Most Worthy Mashiach to Come could possibly usher you into the Olam Ha-Ba, when we consider the lost Gospel of the Hebrews: the Holy Spirit is the Mother. Asherah? Hera? Athena? Is it not the Shekinah, the Divine Feminine Presence? The Presence that settles on or rests on someone? And does not the Gospel of the Hebrews attest: *you are my rest*. Is it not a mother gently resting herself, her good opinion, on her beloved son -- her Well-Beloved? And would that not, in the fullness of the human and divine interchange of righteousness produce the POWER of Adonai? The Power to raise life from death and realize a life without limits.

And....woefully.....if, in cruelty and fear and paranoia and a mania for self-preservation that son, upon whom the rest of the Shekinah, in maternal Love, has come upon -- *be done away with?! - shall the Mashiach come in the Fullness of Power? Shall the Power of Adonai be unstoppable unleashed? Would not, rather, the rest, and maternal joy, of the Shekinah turn to the most bitter tearful woe - and the Olam Ha-Ba turn into ash in her mouth. With ash and tears in the mouth of the Shekinah, how shall the arm of Adonai come down in Power? Would not demanding such a thing truly be magical thinking? And would it also not be magical thinking for the Nation to demand that a Worthy Mashiach come unto an unworthy - still imperfect - nation? "Come down from the Cross." ? Rather, should it not be, come up to me. ?*

But, if every Jew love every Jew, even unto death, how could the Mashiach fail to come in his power, the Power of Adonai? Would not such a Nation be worthy of such a Worthy Mashiach, the Mashiach to Come?

So if you get it wrong at first, keep on trying till at last, someday, you get it right.

And, remember, if you're lost: you're not lost.

Michael Bublé

Lost

<https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=Q-8ez6dGao8>

And if we consider the wisdom of the Kabbalah, that there is an inner life to the LORD with many manifestations in the world, we see the Power of Adonai expressed to the world and the Maternal Joy of the Shekinah as the expression of the inward depths of that Power. For how could the compassion of the One rest upon someone if the One did not have some kind of access to that compassion (unimaginable to us) in His Inner Life? *There must be a vital connection (beyond our understanding) between His Expression and His Inner Life.*

So we see something: the Power of a Father, the Joyous Spirit of a Mother, and the Worthy Righteousness of a Well-Beloved son, so Well-Beloved that he is taken up into the bosom of the Name and becomes the bond of joy within the Name's Inner Life and the cause for the Power of the Name to come upon the world in fullness.

And so -- Father, Son, Holy Spirit -- Is this a strange practice or a matter of translation - a matter of perception?

This whole contention about the Unity...no...Trinity-in-Unity fast fades to becoming a distinction without a difference.

Except - is the Mashiach simply a man endowed with the All-Righteousness, who has that Power poured upon him, or is he pre-existent within the Inner Life, and thus receives again in the flesh what He was heir to in eternity?

As a Catholic, I hold the latter view.

And, if we insist on the absolute unity of the Ein Sof, first, we can reflect, as I discussed elsewhere, that the Mystery of the Unity is as great or greater than the Mystery of the Trinity, for what kind of unity would be this unnamed true and total - and not in some way either compound or dimensional (possessed of aspects) - unity? And second, we can reflect that the Father and the Son of Christianity both live in the Spirit -- the absolute interiority of the Inner Life of the One.

Might not the "Gospel" Trinity (Gospel being an anglicized word) be the Kabbalah (or an intuition of it) taken a little too literally, and maybe the common, un-nuanced, and un-reflecting understanding of the Shema is the Kabbalah not taken literally enough?

Is this worth dividing ourselves over?

Is there not a Presence, a Great Name higher than the Heavens, that pervades all this lower reality, mere shadow of reality, with the Infinite Light of a Holy Everlasting Love?

Must not one grasp the favor to receive the gift?

And is it not so that to grasp means to raise up your arm? And in order to raise anything of yourself up, you must live in a multi-dimensional spirit. You cannot lift yourself up if you are a blank, flat panel.

So while Satan has intelligence, it is only calculative and lacks perspective. That is, in his Lineland of Horrors, he has the most force, but the least power. His calculative force -- the remnants of his ruined spirit, the ash of what he might have been - if it had been chosen in his absolute freedom - remains intact -- he can overcome any spirit and any reality (such as the sundered material world). His calculative force is like a vortex of grinding teeth that can sunder anything, chew through anyone -- for that is Hell. But Satan has not the least power to touch anyone who raises themselves up from his flat, one-dimensional (lack of) perspective. Anyone who can trust in the greater spiritual reality, who can reach up to grasp HaShem's outstretched arm will, necessarily then, evade Satan's all-chewing teeth. Those favored souls will surely evade him, as surely as a bird evades a snake by flying away.

And this is all because, in his obsession with rank -- with the force of his spirit -- Satan forfeited his *place* - his perspective. HaShem created Satan to be placed within the creation as a creature. By removing himself from that place, he lost his perspective; and, although retaining his force, he necessarily caused himself to be flung out of the Light of the LORD, as surely as a planet thrown out of its orbit would wander in darkness.

Seek Him and you shall find!

Oh yeah.

And on that bright morning of the Morning Star, the True Star proceeding from Adonai, and not merely an impostor, luminous like the Sun of His Father and not a mere reflection stolen only for himself --- will not the Once and Future King step onto the bridge and take command? And if the people, now at last a holy people, should have in the ready the Scriptures, wholly understood and accessed and activated with the Whole Power of the Spirit, will it not be a Great Genesis Device? And once the King gives the command, "Fire! Fire! Fire!" will it not but result in an explosion of Divine Favor in this mortal world of brief life and bitter woes, and be not only capable of, but irresistibly unstoppable in, fulfilling the Prophecy: Life from Death? Would there not then be endless life without limits and freedom from all woes, set securely in a joy that can never be lost, never be stolen, but ever retained in FREEDOM and PEACE?

For the explosion of the Power gives life - creates life and recreates life, raised up by that Power to an Eternal Life. Whereas, most woefully, the mere and pitiful and sinful explosions of man, in all his wickedness, cannot but bring death, and, indeed, an eternal death.

Prince

1999

<https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=rblt2EtFfC4>

HaShem says to you, and He says to us all, if only we would listen: "If you would but trust in Me, I would grant you strength you cannot imagine, and glory you cannot yet bear."

Do we not hear the voice of HaShem within us, that still small whisper saying, patiently with joyful kindness: *I love you. You are mine, and I am yours. No one shall harm you, but only speak in your heart:*

מִזְמוֹר לְדָוִד: יְהוָה רָעִי, לֹא אֶחָסֶר.
בְּנֵאוֹת דְּשָׂא, יִרְבִּיצֵנִי; עַל-מִי מְנַחֹת יִנְהַלֵּנִי.
נִפְשִׁי יִשׁוּבָב; יִנְחֵנִי בְּמַעְגְלֵי-צֶדֶק, לְמַעַן שְׁמוֹ.
גַּם כִּי-אֵלֶיךָ בְּגִיָּא צְלֻמוֹת, לֹא-אִירָא רָע-- כִּי-אַתָּה עֹמְדִי;
שִׁבְטְךָ וּמִשְׁעֲנֹתֶיךָ, הִמָּה יִנְחֲמֵנִי.
תַּעֲרֹךְ לִפְנֵי, שְׁלָחוּ-- נֶגְד צָרָרִי;
דִּשְׁנֹת בְּשִׁמּוֹן רֹאשִׁי, כּוֹסֵי רְוָה.
אֲךָ, טוֹב וְחָסֵד יִרְדְּפוּנִי-- כָּל-יְמֵי חַיִּי;
וְשִׁבְתִּי בְּבֵית-יְהוָה, לְאֶרֶךְ יָמִים.

תהילים 23

(Psalm 23)

and truly know that:

לְמַנְצַח לְבְנֵי-קָרַח-- עַל-עֲלָמוֹת שִׁיר.
אֱלֹהִים לָנוּ, מַחְסֵה וְעֵז; עֲזָרָה בְּצָרוֹת, נִמְצָא מֵאֵד.
עַל-כֵּן לֹא-נִירָא, בְּהַמִּיר אֶרֶץ; וּבְמוֹט הָרִים, בְּלֵב יַמִּים.
יִהְיוּ יַחְמְרוּ מִיָּמָיו; יִרְעֲשׂוּ הָרִים בְּגֵאוֹתוֹ סֵלָה.
נָהַר--פָּלְגָיו, יִשְׁמְחוּ עִיר-אֱלֹהִים; קֹדֶשׁ, מִשְׁכְּנֵי עֲלִיוֹן.
אֱלֹהִים בְּקִרְבָּה, בַּל-תִּמּוֹט; יַעֲזְרֵה אֱלֹהִים, לַפְּנוֹת בְּקָר.
הָמוּ גוֹיִם, מָטוּ מִמְּלָכוֹת; נָתַן בְּקוֹלוֹ, תְּמוּג אֶרֶץ.
יְהוָה צְבָאוֹת עִמָּנוּ; מִשְׁגֵּב-לָנוּ אֱלֹהֵי יַעֲקֹב סֵלָה.
לְכוּ-חֲזוּ, מַפְעָלוֹת יְהוָה-- אֲשֶׁר-שָׁם שְׁמוֹת בְּאֶרֶץ.
מִשְׁבִּית מִלְחָמוֹת, עַד-קִצָּה הָאֶרֶץ;
קִשְׁת יִשְׁבֵר, וְקִצֵּץ חֲנִית; עֲגָלוֹת, יִשְׂרֹף בְּאֵשׁ.
הֲרַפּוּ וְדַעוּ, כִּי-אֲנֹכִי אֱלֹהִים; אָרוֹם בְּגוֹיִם, אָרוֹם בְּאֶרֶץ.
יְהוָה צְבָאוֹת עִמָּנוּ; מִשְׁגֵּב-לָנוּ אֱלֹהֵי יַעֲקֹב סֵלָה.

תהילים 46

(Psalm 46)

*Nothing's Gonna Stop Us Now
Starship*

For man needs a starship to get to G-d. But who would need a starship to take aim at G-d?

<https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=3wxyN3z9PL4>

For with Spenser we say:

For whatsoever from one place doth fall,
Is with the tide unto another brought:
For there is nothing lost, that may be found, if sought.

I don't know if Donald Trump is literally the Anti-Christ, but the Donald is what the Anti-Christ will be like....only he'll all but certainly be a much better impostor. He'll be the face of Barack Obama with the soul(lessness) of Donald Trump. But watch out! If you couldn't tell Donald Trump had the spirit of the Anti-Christ, the spirit of the Lawless One, or you didn't care, you won't be able to spot the real Anti-Christ. *Not a chance. Bonne chance, mon capitaine. Bon courage.* And for his kids, I'm curious: I just have one question: what is it like for your lives to be like the plot of *The Devil's Advocate*? Just out of pure curiosity.

The Donald is empty because he requires the doxa, the good opinion, of every person, even a child, and has no use for the good opinion of HaShem. If even he would *turn* and tell only truth, not because he was bad at telling lies, but out of love for HaShem, yes, even he would share in the Resurrection.

No one. No one. No one --- can get in the Way of what I feel for you.

<https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=rywUS-ohqeE>

A priest of Zeus and the Olympian Pantheon.....



- Didn't this guy get the memo?